

THE  
INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL  
OF  
PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

VOLUME XXXVIII  
1957



Bureau Ednl. Res. Research  
DAVID HALL KING COLLEGE  
Dated..... 1.9.70....  
Index. No. J 267.....



# THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

*and Bulletin of the*  
**INTERNATIONAL PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL ASSOCIATION**

FOUNDED BY ERNEST JONES

Editor  
**W. HOFFER**  
*London*

with the assistance of

**MARJORIE BRIERLEY**  
*Keswick*

**ROBERT P. KNIGHT**  
*Stockbridge*

**W. CLIFFORD M. SCOTT**  
*Montreal*

**CHARLES F. RYCROFT**  
*London*

In collaboration with

L. G. DE ALVAREZ DE TOLEDO, <i>Buenos Aires</i>	ANNA MAENCHEN, <i>San Francisco</i>
HARRY E. AUGUST, <i>Detroit</i>	DURVAL MARCONDES, <i>Sao Paulo</i>
CATHERINE L. BACON, <i>Philadelphia</i>	HENRY H. W. MILES, <i>New Orleans</i>
MORTON BARNETT, <i>Detroit</i>	JOHN A. P. MILLET, <i>New York</i>
WILLIAM G. BARRETT, <i>San Francisco</i>	SUHRIT C. MITRA, <i>Calcutta</i>
GRETE L. BIBRING, <i>Boston</i>	CARL MUELLER-BRAUNSCHWEIG, <i>Berlin</i>
M. MAURICE DUGAUTIEZ, <i>Brussels</i>	CESARE MUSATTI, <i>Milan</i>
RUDOLF EKSTEIN, <i>Topeka</i>	DOUGLAS NOBLE, <i>Washington</i>
FELICE M. EMERY, <i>New Haven</i>	LEO RANGELL, <i>Los Angeles</i>
PHYLLIS GREENACRE, <i>New York</i>	PHILIPP SARASIN, <i>Basle</i>
NILS HAAK, <i>Stockholm</i>	MARC SCHLUMBERGER, <i>Paris</i>
HEINZ HARTMANN, <i>New York</i>	LOUIS B. SHAPIRO, <i>Chicago</i>
ERNEST JONES, <i>London</i>	PAUL SLOANE, <i>Philadelphia</i>
HEISAKU KOSAWA, <i>Tokyo</i>	SARAH S. TOWER, <i>Baltimore</i>
NORMAN A. LEVY, <i>Beverly Hills</i>	CARLOS WHITING, <i>Santiago</i>
FABIO L. LOBO, <i>Rio de Janeiro</i>	D. W. WINNICOTT, <i>London</i>
SANDOR LORAND, <i>New York</i>	H. WINNIK, <i>Jerusalem</i>
M. MACKENZIE VAN DER NOORDAA, <i>Amsterdam</i>	ALFRED WINTERSTEIN, <i>Vienna</i>



VOLUME XXXVIII  
1957

PUBLISHED FOR  
THE INSTITUTE OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS  
BY

BAILLIÈRE, TINDALL & COX, LTD., 7 AND 8 HENRIETTA STREET  
COVENT GARDEN, LONDON, W.C.2

# CONTENTS OF VOLUME XXXVIII

## ORIGINAL PAPERS

	PAGE
EDWIN F. ALSTON: Psycho-Analytic Psychotherapy Conducted by Correspondence . . . . .	32
JACOB A. ARLOW: On Smugness . . . . .	1
F. R. BIENENFELD: Justice, Aggression and Eros . . .	419
W. R. BION: Differentiation of the Psychotic from the Non- Psychotic Personalities . . . . .	266
BRIAN BIRD: Feelings of Unreality . . . . .	256
GEORGE DEVEREUX: The Awarding of a Penis as Com- pensation for Rape. A Demonstration of the Clinical Relevance of the Psycho-Analytic Study of Cultural Data . . . . .	398
ANGEL GARMA: Oral-Digestive Superego Aggressions and Actual Conflicts in Peptic Ulcer Patients . . . .	73
ROY R. GRINKER: On Identification . . . . .	378
NILS HAAK: Comments on the Analytical Situation . .	183
MAX HAYMAN: Traumatic Elements in the Analysis of a Borderline Case . . . . .	9
ERNEST JONES: Pain . . . . .	255
MARIETTA KARPE and RICHARD KARPE: The Meaning of Barrie's 'Mary Rose' . . . . .	408
A. J. LEVIN: Oedipus and Samson, the Rejected Hero- Child . . . . .	105
MILTON LISTER: The Analysis of an Unconscious Beat- ing Fantasy in a Woman . . . . .	22
MARGARET LITTLE: 'R'—The Analyst's Total Re- sponse to his Patient's Needs . . . . .	240
SANDOR LORAND: Dream Interpretation in the Talmud (Babylonian and Graeco-Roman Period). . . . .	92
MARGARET MEAD: Changing Patterns of the Parent- Child Relations in an Urban Culture . . . . .	369
JAMES CLARK MOLONEY: The Precognitive Cultural Ingredients of Schizophrenia . . . . .	325
S. NACHT: Technical Remarks on the Handling of the Transference Neurosis . . . . .	196
SAMUEL NOVEY: A Re-Evaluation of Certain Aspects of the Theory of Instinctual Drives in the Light of Modern Ego Psychology . . . . .	137
SAMUEL NOVEY: Utilization of Social Institutions as a Defence Technique in the Neuroses . . . . .	82
MORTIMER OSTOW: The Erotic Instincts—A Contribu- tion to the Study of Instincts . . . . .	305
HEINRICH RACKER: Contribution to the Problem of Psycho-Pathological Stratification. . . . .	223
BERYL SANDFORD: Some Notes on a Dying Patient . .	158
JAQUES SCHNIER: The Tibetan Lamaist Ritual: Chöd .	402
HANNA SEGAL: Notes on Symbol Formation . . . . .	391
ISIDOR SILBERMANN: Two Types of Preoedipal Char- acter Disorders . . . . .	350



	PAGE
MELITTA SPERLING: The Psycho-Analytic Treatment of Ulcerative Colitis . . . . .	341
RICHARD F. STERBA: Oral Invasion and Self-Defence . . . . .	204
MAX M. STERN: The Ego Aspect of Transference . . . . .	146
ADRIAN STOKES: Listening to Clichés and Individual Words . . . . .	412
THOMAS S. SZÁSZ: On the Theory of Psycho-Analytic Treatment . . . . .	166
LAJOS SZÉKELY: On the Origin of Man and the Latency Period . . . . .	98
L. VESZY-WAGNER: An Irish Legend as Proof of Freud's Theory of Joint Parricide . . . . .	117
EDOARDO WEISS: A Comparative Study of Psycho-Analytical Ego Concepts . . . . .	209

## OBITUARY

CHARLES ANDERSON (Herbert Rosenfeld). . . . .	279
DENIS CARROLL (Edward Glover) . . . . .	277
ETHILDA BUDGETT-MEAKIN HERFORD (S. M. Payne) . . . . .	276
ISTVAN HOLLOS (Lajos Levy) . . . . .	281
LEO KAPLAN (Heinrich Meng) . . . . .	277
ERNST KRIS (Willi Hoffer) . . . . .	281, 359

## DISCUSSION

CHARLES BRENNER: Facts, Coincidence and the Psi Hypothesis . . . . .	51
DAVID BRUNSWICK: A Comment on E. Servadio's 'A Presumptive Telepathic-Precognitive Dream during Analysis' . . . . .	56
JULE EISENBUD: Comments on Dr. Brenner's 'Facts, Coincidence, and the Psi Hypothesis' . . . . .	54
EMILIO SERVADIO: Reply to Dr. David Brunswick's Comments . . . . .	57

## BOOK REVIEWS

HAROLD A. ABRAMSON (Ed.): Neuropharmacology. Transactions of the First Conference (E. Stengel) . . . . .	368
THE AMERICAN PSYCHIATRIC ASSOCIATION: Psychiatric Research Reports. Nos. 1 to 4 (E. Stengel) . . . . .	291
ZEVEDEI BARBU: Democracy and Dictatorship (A. Hyatt Williams) . . . . .	128
WILFRED BLOOMBERG (Ed.): Psychiatry, the Press and the Public . . . . .	368
GERALD CAPLAN (Ed.): Emotional Problems of Early Childhood (J. J. M. Jacobs) . . . . .	366
WILLIAM GRAHAM COLE: Sex in Christianity and Psycho-Analysis (H. J. Home) . . . . .	430
DISCUSSIONS ON CHILD DEVELOPMENT. Vols. I and II. The Proceedings of the First and Second Meetings of the World Health Organization Study Group on the Psychobiological Development of the Child. Geneva, 1953, and London, 1954 (W. H. Gillespie) . . . . .	365
HILDA DOOLITTLE ('H.D.'): Tribute to Freud (Ernest Jones) . . . . .	126
PAUL F. FARNSWORTH and QUINN McNEMAR (Eds.): Annual Review of Psychology (Joseph Sandler) . . . . .	432
SANDOR FERENCZI: Final Contributions to the Problems and Methods of Psycho-Analysis (Margaret Little) . . . . .	121

	PAGE
IAGO GALDSTON (Ed.): Society and Medicine. The New York Academy of Medicine Lectures to the Laity No. XVII (E. Stengel) . . .	291
AGOSTINO GEMELLI: Psycho-Analysis Today (Ernest Jones) . . .	126
EDWARD GLOVER: On the Early Development of the Mind (E. J. Anthony) . . .	428
W. GOLDFARB and M. M. DÖRSEN: Annotated Bibliography of Childhood Schizophrenia and Related Disorders (E. J. Anthony) . . .	286
MARTIN GROTHJAHN: Beyond Laughter (Anton Ehrenzweig) . . .	364
J. P. GUILFORD: Fundamental Statistics in Psychology and Education (Joseph Sandler) . . .	432
JEROME HIMELHOCH and SYLVIA FLEIS FAVA (Eds.): Sexual Behaviour in American Society. An Appraisal of the First Two Kinsey Reports (E. Stengel) . . .	368
J. P. HODIN: The Dilemma of Being Modern (Ernest Jones) . . .	126
ELLIOT JAQUES: Measurement of Responsibility. A Study of Work, Payment, and Individual Capacity (I. E. P. Menzies) . . .	288
ERNEST JONES: Sigmund Freud. Four Centenary Addresses (Marjorie Brierley) . . .	282
WERNER KEMPER: Der Traum und seine Be-Deutung (Oscar A. Friedmann) . . .	127
MELANIE KLEIN, PAULA HEIMANN and R. E. MONEY-KYRLE (Eds.): New Directions in Psycho-Analysis. The Significance of Infant Conflict in the Pattern of Adult Behaviour (Sandor Lorand) . . .	283
HENRY P. LAUGHLIN: The Neuroses in Clinical Practice (E. Stengel) . . .	365
SANDOR LORAND (Ed.): Perversions, Psychodynamics and Therapy (A. Hyatt Williams) . . .	432
BENJAMIN MALZBERG and EVERETT S. LEE: Migration and Mental Disease (E. Stengel) . . .	431
KARL MANNHEIM: Essays on the Sociology of Culture (A. Hyatt Williams) . . .	127
RUTH L. MONROE: Schools of Psychoanalytic Thought (Marjorie Brierley) . . .	123
HERMAN NUNBERG: Principles of Psychoanalysis; Their Application to the Neuroses (S. H. Foulkes) . . .	121
HERBERT PHILLIPPSON: The Object Relations Technique (Victor B. Kanter) . . .	430
H. L. PHILP: Freud and Religious Belief (Ernest Jones) . . .	125
J. PIAGET and B. INHELDER: The Child's Conception of Space (E. J. Anthony) . . .	289
OTTO POLLAK: Integrating Sociological and Psychoanalytic Concepts (E. J. Anthony) . . .	286
PAUL RADIN: The Trickster (Elliot Jaques) . . .	429
J. TUDOR REES and HARLEY V. USILL: They Stand Apart (A. Hyatt Williams) . . .	129
GEZA ROHEIM: Magic and Schizophrenia (H. S. Klein) . . .	367
B. SCHAFFNER: Group Processes. Transactions of the First Conference, September 1954 (E. Stengel) . . .	291
CHARLES SCHOEFFELD: God and Country (Israil Latif) . . .	288
MORRIS S. SCHWARTZ and EMMY LANNING SCHOCKLEY: The Nurse and the Mental Patient. A Study in Interpersonal Relations (J. L. Rowley) . . .	288
S. R. SLAVSON (Ed.): The Fields of Group Psychotherapy (S. H. Foulkes) . . .	290
LEONARD SMALL: Rorschach Location and Scoring Manual (Joseph Sandler) . . .	431
KENNETH SODDY (Ed.): Mental Health and Infant Development (M. Bavin) . . .	290
ERNEST STUMPER: Triebstruktur und Geisteskrankheit (E. Stengel) . . .	291
HARRY STACK SULLIVAN: Conceptions of Modern Psychiatry: the First William Alanson White Memorial Lectures (A. Limentani) . . .	367
P. M. SYMONDS: Dynamics of Psychotherapy. Vol. I. Principles (J. L. Rowley) . . .	285
W. H. THORPE: Learning and Instincts in Animals (Marjorie Brierley) . . .	363
DAVID WECHSLER: Die Messung der Intelligenz Erwachsener (E. Stengel) . . .	291



## ABSTRACTS

Bulletin d'Activités, Association des Psychanalystes de Belgique . . . . .	435
Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association (Thomas Freeman) . . . . .	133, 134, 298, 433
The Psychoanalytic Quarterly (John Klauber) . . . . .	130, 132, 434
The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child (Ruth Thomas). . . . .	292

CLINICAL ESSAY PRIZE . . . . .	362
--------------------------------	-----

## LETTER TO THE EDITOR

Concept of Probability and ESP (Leo Angelo Spiegel) . . . . .	438
---------------------------------------------------------------	-----

NEWS, NOTES AND COMMENTS . . . . .	300, 436
------------------------------------	----------

PUBLICATIONS RECEIVED . . . . .	439
---------------------------------	-----

112TH BULLETIN OF THE INTERNATIONAL  
PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL ASSOCIATION

Reports from the Component Societies . . . . .	58
------------------------------------------------	----

INTERNATIONAL PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL  
ASSOCIATION

Announcements . . . . .	136, 303
-------------------------	----------

INDEX TO VOLUME XXXVIII . . . . .	443
-----------------------------------	-----



# THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

Vol. XXXVIII

1957

Part 1

## ON SMUGNESS<sup>1</sup>

By

JACOB A. ARLOW, M.D., NEW YORK

Some degree of negative response is practically the universal reaction to smug people. To be characterized as smug is never considered a compliment. Such a characterization invariably denotes not only a sense of disapproval but a feeling of active dislike or hostility.

According to the *Oxford English Dictionary* the origin of the word 'smug' is obscure. Originally, its meaning related to neatness or primness in dress. Only during the past few centuries have the current connotations of offensive self-satisfaction, complacency, and self-righteousness become associated with the word. There is, furthermore, an additional, although hardly popular, sense in which the word appears in the literature, i.e., to steal or to grasp, a meaning which some think may be connected with the root of the word 'to smuggle'. In the course of this paper it will be demonstrated how these two very different meanings may be derived from a response to a typical situation in which the prototype of the smug person is regarded as a grasping thief.

The smug person is not actively aggressive or malicious toward others in his smugness. If anything, he tends to be withdrawn and self-contained, undemanding in regard to his environment, and above all, seeming to want or need very little from it. Why so complacently self-satisfied a person should evoke such hostility is not completely clear.

In the course of psycho-analytic practice, however, it is not uncommon to observe patients in whom a most intense hostility and violent hatred are provoked by an encounter with a smug person. The smug object of this outburst may be and often is a relative stranger of no particular

significance in the patient's life, a passing acquaintance from some casual social meeting. This fact serves only to accentuate the irrationality of the patient's response, a response whose intensity betrays all the indications of an exaggerated reaction. Both the irrationality and the exaggeration naturally lead to the suspicion of some unconscious determinant for such behaviour. The analysis of such attitudes, furthermore, should reveal not only the significance of the predisposition on the part of certain individuals to react so acutely to smugness (in others) but may perhaps afford some insight into the more common, milder responses felt by most people toward their smug fellows. The phrase 'smugness in others' is used advisedly, for it is by no means unusual for those very individuals who berate the complacently self-satisfied to learn to their chagrin that they themselves have been guilty of creating the impression of smugness in regard to themselves.

Listening to the descriptions which patients give of smug people and how they respond to them, we obtain a strikingly similar picture. Complacency, self-centredness and self-satisfaction are their most prominent attributes. The quality of self-righteousness holds a relatively secondary position, but an important one, especially for certain patients. The sense of self-containment which the smug person imparts is interpreted as a self-centred withdrawal of interest from other persons. The smug person is independent. He seems in need of no one. This element arouses envious fascination. But beyond that the smug person acts as if he were oblivious of his surroundings,

<sup>1</sup> Awarded the Clinical Essay Prize of the Institute of Psycho-Analysis, London, for 1955. For Notes and Bibliography, see end of paper.



even unaware of the people in the immediate vicinity, or aware of them only in a general, undistinguishing way. It is this aspect of the smug person which is most intolerable and infuriating to such patients. Their sense of self-esteem is offended; the blow to their narcissism is compounded with a sense of futile and injured rage. The mere presence of a smug person, they complain, is something they cannot endure. They feel in turn angry, inferior, insignificant, and frustrated. Nothing and no one, they say, can impress the smug person. His mind is closed; he cannot learn; he will not change. It is the universally expressed wish of these patients to puncture the barrier of complacent repose, to disturb the equilibrium of self-satisfaction—often by slapping the smug and vapid face, for of all the features of the smug person the facial expression seems to be the most irritating. His countenance is described as clothed with a look of cold, empty haughtiness, or the lips are said to be touched by a very faint, amused smile, as if the subject were enjoying some private communion of self-appreciation.

Several especially articulate patients distinguish between their reactions to the smug and to the conceited person. The latter they regard as a sort of fool, one who pretends to an unjustified exaggerated evaluation of himself, but is by no means convinced in this estimate. It is for this reason that the conceited person tries repeatedly to call the attention of others to his actual or imagined superiority. He needs witnesses to overcome his own doubts concerning his worthwhileness. Not so the smug person; he requires no external confirmation to ensure his sense of self-satisfaction. That is brought about by his own fiat. He enjoys himself publicly, unabashedly, and without concern for the judgement of others. In some instances this last point serves to differentiate the response to the smug from a consciously envious response to successful but generous or modest persons. Such individuals have the good taste, or, perhaps more accurately, are moved by their more highly developed sense of guilt to refrain from giving offence to others by ostentatious self-satisfaction which humiliates the less successful by treating them as if they did not exist. Such people have a regard for others' feelings.

The type of patient to whom the smug person is so sore a trial and the typical derivation of this attitude are illustrated by the following clinical excerpts:

#### Case 1:

Quite the opposite of the smug person delineated above was Mrs. A. She was an intensely unhappy married woman of 37, who, in spite of a fairly well-to-do economic position, felt poverty-stricken, deprived, and dissatisfied. Although she drove a brand-new convertible car, belonged to a fashionable country club, and sported an attractive French poodle, she identified herself with a rejected Negro child whom she had seen in a movie, a child who had been abandoned in the slums of Harlem. At the beginning of the analysis, which was undertaken for marital discord, social anxiety, and insomnia, her major preoccupation was 'Who snubs me? Whom do I snub?' Her devotion to social climbing was motivated by a need to overcome her social anxiety and strong feelings of social inferiority. For this reason she sought out the company, if not the friendship, of the successful, the famous, and the notorious. She worshipped the secular pantheon of celebrities, seeking to recover her self-esteem through identification with these latter-day demigods. It was indeed her secretly cherished dream that her analysis in one way or another would transform her into her ideal, a Greek goddess of unsurpassable beauty whom everyone would fall down and worship. Such a person would be perfectly poised, composed, and independent. Her love life was dominated by narcissistic object choices of men she thought to be cold, disdainful of others, and aloof.

Her difficulties stemmed from an insatiable oral greediness, which from earliest childhood disrupted her relationships. Her father was a bold, driving, sadistic, and successful man, who, though close to the age of 80, still dominated and humiliated his family, his relatives, and his business associates. The mother was described by the patient as very beautiful but self-centred and selfish. The patient herself was the seventh of eight children—the eldest a girl, then five boys.

When the patient was three years old a sister was born. Following the delivery the mother developed very serious complications which caused her to be hospitalized for many months. During this time the patient was in the charge of her older sister, who doted upon her but who was, nevertheless, an exacting parent substitute. Scarcely had the mother returned from hospital when this sister married and left with her husband for a distant city. This fresh disappointment coming so swiftly upon the heels of her disillusionment in regard to her mother was something which the patient could hardly overcome. Although at this point she turned to her father with furious demands to supply her with all she felt she needed, she continued to yearn for her sister and replaced the object of her affections, now lost in reality, with an identification. In her analysis it was possible to see innumerable ways in which she imitated and identified with her sister, but in her



dreams the object relationship, as it were, was restored. She saw herself repeatedly in the company of her sister (or sister substitute) who fed, dressed, and nursed her. From a strictly statistical point of view more than 75 per cent of the patient's dreams were concerned with feeding and being fed. Variations on this theme were connected with the ideas of sleeping and dying, probably because at the time of the analysis the patient's older sister was already dead. Her fear of poverty represented an unconscious fear of starving to death or of being abandoned, just as her unreasonable demandingness for position and narcissistic supplies reflected her insatiable hunger. For example, when she heard that her husband had been separated from the firm in which he held a partnership, she went to the local grocery and impulsively bought \$50-worth of canned food to be stored in the larder. Following this she became elated and, denying her deep-seated fear of starvation, began planning a series of elaborate and expensive dinner parties which she could ill afford.

To compound the insult the younger sister developed into a very beautiful child, the delight and pet of the entire family. Each year the patient celebrated the birth of this younger sibling by getting depressed. In connexion with one of these episodes the patient recalled that, as a child, she had hurled a cat out of a window and killed it. She unconsciously identified her adopted daughter with her younger sister, persistently making slips of the tongue in which she interchanged their names. Her attitude towards her daughter was a mixture of identification and ambivalence. When identified with her she could refuse her no demands, and no criticism directed at her daughter from whatever source would be countenanced. On the other hand, she would expect her daughter to epitomize in reality all the qualities which she herself prized. She was at the same time capable of extreme callousness and cruelty towards her daughter, compensating for this by various acts of ingratiation and self-punishment. From her husband she expected an all-giving mother-father image from whom she would passively receive various token substitutes for the breast-penis to help her achieve once more the golden age of her childhood, before the birth of her sister, when she enjoyed a sense of narcissistic fusion with the mother, a sense of complete passive gratification which admitted of no rival. The patient acted out the impulse to be breast-fed by unconsciously seducing her eight-year-old daughter to suck at her breast.

Mrs. A. experienced a violently rageful reaction when she met a smug but beautiful girl married to a wealthy man. She said, 'I was furious. I wanted to slap her face. I couldn't stand the looks of her. I know why I didn't like her; she was so smug, so self-satisfied, so pleased with herself—like the cat who had all the cream, licking her chops. She looked as delighted as though she had swallowed the whole world—maybe she did, because the world does not exist for her; nothing exists for her but the good

feeling she has for herself. She did not even notice me. I don't think she even knows that I exist. She doesn't need me; she doesn't need anyone. She made me feel so small, so insignificant. I felt like an outsider, so dissatisfied with myself. What a contrast between her and me! I am never satisfied; I am always hungry. It makes me think of the time when I was in my bedroom sulking while my mother was in the kitchen, busy feeding my younger sister. I was so furious, so envious.' (This memory consistently reappeared in the analysis in association with oral envy and rage over oral deprivation. The incident referred to had taken place when the patient was a little over 4 years of age, at a time when she combined her resentment at oral deprivation with her penis envy, blaming the frustrating mother for both.) The patient's associations then continued, 'It makes me think of the time when I first saw my mother and sister in the bed after my mother returned home from the hospital. How unhappy I felt when I saw my sister sleeping so quietly next to my mother, so peaceful, so at rest. I wanted to get into bed next to my mother and push my sister out. I was so hungry for my mother's love. That is the picture that always comes back to me at times like this.'

It is clear from this material that the patient's reaction to the smug person is based upon a very intense feeling of envy. The calm, self-satisfied repose of the smug person represented the fulfilment of the patient's own wishes, namely, to achieve the tension-free sense of satiety and to fall asleep at the mother's breast. The smug object of her hostility was unconsciously identified with the well-fed younger sister, satisfied and self-satisfied, now blissfully withdrawn into sleep after having nursed her fill at the mother's breast. The sense of withdrawal of cathexis from the external world is reflected in the patient's statement that for the smug person the world does not exist because she has swallowed it (2). To the patient, furthermore, the smug person represents a usurper, a younger sibling who has stolen her rightful place at the mother's breast. The outraged sense of injustice which the smug person stimulates is associated also with the need to inhibit the wish to push aside the usurping rival. This attitude becomes more explicit in the next case presentation.

#### Case 2:

Dr. K., a 43-year-old physician, suffering from a character neurosis, was chronically depressed, inhibited, and pessimistic. Since any emotional display was most unusual with him, it was all the more striking when he responded with violent rage to an encounter with a colleague whom he considered smug.

The patient's passive oral wishes had a complicated structure stemming from both pre-oedipal and oedipal conflicts. The father was ineffectual and rather unsuccessful, while the mother was an



active capable professional woman, apparently with a good deal of musical and artistic talent. To the patient the mother unconsciously represented a phallic woman, and in some of his fantasies intercourse between the parents consisted of the mother nursing the father as she had the younger sister.

An especially intense castration anxiety had regressively reactivated and accentuated oral conflicts, but for other reasons such material would inevitably have dominated the patient's productions. In the first place he had come to me after a number of years of what he considered an unsuccessful analysis with a woman therapist. Actually one of the patient's goals in treatment, which in his mind was associated with economic security, was beyond his therapist's capacity to fulfil. Secondly, during his course of treatment with me his mother was dying of cancer of the breast. Because he had administered a course of hormone injections to her some years before for menopausal symptoms the patient kept reproaching himself with the thought that in some way he was responsible for his mother's developing cancer.

After having been breast-fed for a year he had been weaned suddenly and precipitously in order that his mother might enter upon her professional studies. A devoted grandmother took care of him, but his reaction to weaning was, nevertheless, most severe. He lost his appetite, became constipated, would not sleep, and cried so piteously and so continuously that the distraught grandmother permitted him to suck at her dry breasts in order to quiet him. The patient thus had what Abraham characterizes as a 'primal depression' (3). No sooner had the mother completed her professional studies than a younger sister was born. The mother was particularly attached to this younger sister for several reasons, one being that this sister suffered from an hereditary form of deafness transmitted to her by the mother. The patient's lifelong complaint had been that his sister got everything and he got nothing. As he put it, 'No red carpet was ever rolled out for me. I always had to get in through the back door.' At a relatively late age he married a girl who was more or less picked for him by his mother, and whom he knew to have prospects of inheriting money from her parents. Towards his own two children the patient was extremely overprotective, living in constant dread lest they would fall out of the window. Professionally he was convinced that he would never succeed, and that with the first worsening of the economic situation he would lose his patients and have to face the danger of starvation.

The reaction to the smug colleague came about in the following way. During a period when the patient was feeling more than his usual concern about not having enough patients he felt that a colleague, Dr. X, was influencing the relatives of one of his patients to withdraw the patient from treatment with Dr. K. In reporting this incident my

patient became very furious, but did not think of doing anything about the situation. I pointed this out to him and suggested that he could get in touch with Dr. X in order to ascertain the true nature of his interest in this case. On the following day he returned and reported a fantasy which he said had filled him with a very positive feeling of satisfaction. He felt that both he and Dr. X were in analysis with me and that I was taking his part. 'For a change', he said, 'somebody is on my side against a greedy, grasping rival instead of the way it has always been—vice versa.' He then added, 'I have known Dr. X for some time. I cannot stand him because he is so smug.' In explanation of this remark the patient stated, 'He is selfish, egocentric, self-satisfied, greedy, and grasping. He never feels guilty; he doesn't consider that he does anything wrong. He is a snob. He makes you feel inferior and frustrated. He is like all smug people. You cannot influence them; you cannot teach them. They are close-minded. They are not gentle. It reminds me of another one of my colleagues who asked me what kind of music I liked. When I said I liked Dvořák he looked down his nose at me. He is the kind that likes fourteenth-century music played on obsolete instruments.'

The patient went on to say, 'Smugness is a disease. I never allow myself to be satisfied. There is a danger in being smug. I didn't show off my medals and decorations. I don't have an attitude of "Pull open your jacket and show off your fat belly with your Phi Beta Kappa key," but Dr. X is that way. He beat me to several jobs. He is the fair-haired boy and now he is sitting pretty. He has plenty of patients and he is eating off the fat of the land. When we were in the Navy we both took a course at the same hospital. He walked in and smugly displayed his service coat with the "fruit salad" (military slang for campaign ribbons) on it. Whenever there was a job open and we both tried for it he beat me to it. He got my place. I can't tilt at windmills. He has everything; I have nothing.'

The use of oral images, 'fat belly', 'fruit salad', 'living off the fat of the land', was pointed out to the patient. In response he stated, 'Yes, he reminds me of a stuffed fat baby drifting off to sleep. That is why you can't teach smug people anything. They are asleep but they don't know it—which reminds me: I got up early this morning; I could not sleep; something is wrong, I don't feel anxious, but . . . I'm always dissatisfied. I set goals high and I never reach them.'

The patient's associations then turned to gifts. A rich cousin of his had just had his home decorated most expensively through his father's generosity. This cousin as a boy had had hundreds of dollars worth of electric trains and track. The patient complained that his son had only a very small set of trains. An uncle in Florida gives his son thousands of dollars a year in gifts in order to avoid inheritance taxes. Now he gives gifts to his adopted grand-



children. The patient reported that he had had the thought, 'Why give the money to strangers or the government? Why not give it to his nephews or nieces? I wonder . . . am I in his will?' He began to berate his father-in-law for being so generous in his charitable contributions. He attacked professional solicitors for charity as racketeers who pocket the money for themselves. He gives to charity reluctantly, he said, because 'everyone takes from me, but who takes care of me?' He then recalled that his mother had recently received two beautiful ash trays as gifts and that he had had the thought that when she died she would leave these ash trays to his sister and not to him. Suddenly he checked himself and asked, 'Why all this talk about my hunger for gifts and what I want from my mother? Good heavens!' he exclaimed, 'to-day is my sister's birthday.'

Only with great reluctance did thoughts of his sister's birthday find expression. If she had never been born he would have had everything. He had sent her a birthday gift grudgingly. When he gave her husband a bottle of 'Black Label Schenley' he had the thought, 'Poison has a black label on it, too.' He added, 'This week I have been more liberal in prescribing drugs for my patients. I used to be afraid of prescribing drugs for fear of poisoning someone. I was also afraid that some patient would have an idiosyncrasy to a drug and die. Even aspirin would frighten me; the patient might develop tinnitus and deafness. My sister is deaf.'

Subsequent associations referred to his earliest recollection of his sister when she first came home from the hospital. He had to be quiet in order not to awaken the new baby. Upon seeing his mother nurse his sister he had apparently tried to suck her breast because he recalled an incident—obviously a screen memory—in which his mother's breast had been pumped of milk, the milk placed in a 'gravy boat' with a long spout from which he then proceeded to suck. He did not like the taste of the milk and as he spat it out his mother laughed at him. (It was indeed with the analysis of his reaction to smug people that the dramatic information about sucking his grandmother's dry breasts and other material relating to cannibalistic fantasies were first obtained.) He complained at the injustice of the favoured treatment which his sister had received, comparing her again with the smug Dr. X. Both were greedy, grasping, sated, and untroubled by feelings of guilt. He felt himself to be dissatisfied, hungry, and conscience-stricken.

To summarize the material: The fantasy that both he and Dr. X were in analysis with me and that I was favouring him and protecting his economic security was a wish-fulfilling transference fantasy marking the date of his sister's birth. I represented the mother, and the smug Dr. X was identified with his newborn younger sister. In the fantasy, however, the relationship is reversed. The patient is the favoured one, receiving the gifts. He is the newborn

child, happily asleep at the mother's breast. Since hunger and frustration are necessary concomitants of wakefulness, object-finding, and learning, it is clear why the smug person, identified as he is with the sated, sleeping nursling, is characterized as close-minded, unteachable, and not amenable to influence.

In this material, furthermore, the patient identifies the pangs of conscience with the pangs of hunger. For the smug person there is no tension between the ego and the superego, a state which may be compared with a sense of fusion between the sated nursling and his object. The loss of self-esteem which accompanies feelings of guilt may be genetically related to the sense of helplessness of the 'abandoned' child. Thus the inwardly perceived effects of the superego, which in certain respects behaves like an internal persecutor, may have as their prototype not only the unpleasant sensations stimulated by the faecal mass (4, 5, 6) but also the painful affects of hunger. One cannot feel smug and guilty at the same time.

The relationship between satiety, sleep, and smugness was explicitly stated by a young male patient, a 'borderline' case with severe oral conflicts characterized by insomnia, alcoholism, and sexual promiscuity. He was most intolerant of smug people, going out of his way wherever possible to upset their composure and to irritate them. One evening he discovered that his mother, a barbiturate and alcohol addict, had stolen from his cabinet a bottle of liquor which he prized. He became furious with her and, in recounting his reaction during the analytic session on the following day, said, 'I asked her if the liquor were mine, where she got it, why was she drunk. My words did not disturb her. She did not even hear me. She had that glassy stare, that smug, unseeing look of the self-satisfied drunk. This I could not stand. I began to scold her, shouted at her at the top of my lungs—no effect. She was asleep with her eyes open. This made me even more furious. "I will wake her up," I said, "even if I have to slap her face." I remember now where I saw that look before. It was on the face of a fellow who went to military school with me. I used to get food from home which I would save in a strong-box. Once I found that the strong-box had been forced open and the roast turkey which I had hidden was gone. I knew who had eaten it; I went after him and found him on the drill field. He looked so smug and so smart. He did not even notice me. I hauled off to sock him and I would have killed him if the gang hadn't stopped me.' The patient used to save his food in order to eat alone in a secret cave which he had found in the meadows near the boarding school. This solitary play represented an acting out of an intra-uterine fantasy which appealed to the patient who had enjoyed the special status of an only child until the age of eight when he was enrolled in the boarding school and was suddenly confronted with a multitude of boarding-school



siblings. Following Lewin's (7) idea about the relationship between satiety and sleep we may speculate that the state of self-contained smugness corresponds to a waking representation of sleep in which cathexes are practically completely withdrawn from the external world and reinvested in the subject's own self representations.

It is an inevitable experience for the analyst, in the course of therapy, to be accused sooner or later of being smug and complacent. Such an accusation comes rather characteristically from women with intense penis envy and strong oral dispositions. In the transference relationship of several patients of this type the analyst was identified with the evil mother, charged with depriving the little girl and frustrating her oral needs, a factor which Freud emphasized in his later studies of female sexuality. The smug possessor of the phallus is equated with the favoured child who has been generously and appropriately fed. Feelings of this kind not unusually emerge at the time of the menses. In the course of one session during her period a patient attacked the following individuals in turn for their smugness: the analyst, her husband, a very masculine girl friend who was an excellent athlete and much too fat, and a former patient who had completed her treatment and was now contentedly pregnant.

The patient had been weaned early because, at the age of four months, she had developed colic, food allergy, and eczema. It was many months before this condition could be brought under control. During this time she became sleepless and hungry and cried a great deal. In addition, in order to prevent scratching, her hands had been pinned to the bedclothes. These feelings of deprivation were combined with her hostility towards her mother during the phase of penis envy. She had wanted to have curly hair like her brother. Her mother had told her that if she ate lots of raw carrots the desired transformation would come about. She followed her mother's advice faithfully only to come to ultimate and bitter disappointment. In this patient's thinking the brother, the husband, the analyst, the woman athlete, and the former patient were all smug because they had a penis which they had acquired through being properly cared for and fed. She equated being castrated with being hungry, sleepless, and dissatisfied. On the other hand, being phallic and pregnant were the same as being sated, asleep, and smug. The self-contentment of pregnant women, incidentally, is, perhaps, the one situation in which the term 'smug' is used with a minimal sense of opprobrium. The relationship of the self-satisfied repose of the pregnant woman to fantasies of an oral nature is too well known to be expanded upon at this point. A necessary precondition for the enjoyment of this state by the pregnant woman is freedom from guilt over the oral fantasies involved. The investment of the superego with oral sadistic

drives is the link which connects the sense of painful self-judgement with the feeling of hunger.

Up to this point the material has been drawn almost exclusively from the violent reactions of envious patients to smug persons. How accurately does this model as projected by these patients reflect the mental state of smug people? It is difficult to answer this question because genuinely smug people, if such exist, do not as a rule come for analysis. There are, however, a number of situations which afford at least a partial or suggestive answer to this problem. To begin with, the state of being smug is only a temporary frame of mind usually evoked in a very definite context and serving various intrapsychic purposes as a result of a complicated genetic development. Occasionally patients do report experiences in which they felt smug or in which other people considered them so. It will also be recalled that earlier in this paper a number of the patients who reacted with such intensity to smug people were themselves accused on several occasions of being equally offensive in the same fashion.

The type of smugness which patients most often are prepared to ascribe to themselves is the sense of self-righteous complacency felt at the débâcle of some unfair, greedy, grasping competitor. The spectacle of fate punishing the guilty not only justified their own renunciations but was accompanied by a feeling of elevation of self-esteem from a sense of superego approval. A professional man reported that he felt smug on reading in the newspapers that two of his professional rivals had been apprehended perpetrating some illegal transactions. He stated that he disliked them both because they were smug. 'Now that they are in trouble, I can almost feel smug. I don't like smug people. They are selfish, grasping, without the gnawing sense of guilt. They do not realize their potential. They do not help others. They get their success the easy way.' One of the professional rivals was described as being condescending towards the patient; 'He has had more than his share of success. He got it illegally. I used to get furious if anyone were condescending towards me. For example, X was smug and very condescending towards me. He pushed me out of my position in the office. He studied my records and methods in order to supplant me.' Further associations indicated that these two dishonest professional rivals had been considered the 'white-headed boys'. Before a younger sister had been born the patient stated that he had been the white-headed boy. Subsequent associations revolved about the theme of sibling rivalry, nightmares which followed the birth of the younger sister and various methods which the patient had used to torture the young usurper.

Certain aspects of the mood of smugness resemble a quiet form of elation. This mood of quiet elation, this diminution of tension between ego and superego is often conceived of in terms of oral rewards. For elucidation of the oral component of elation we are



indebted to the observations of Lewin (8). Similar observations on the feeling of triumph were made by Fenichel (9) and Helene Deutsch (10). The woman patient mentioned above who had been told that her hair would grow curly like her brother's if she ate carrots demonstrated this connexion between smugness and triumph. After having got the better of a male competitor she reported that she felt very smug, no longer hungry or dissatisfied with herself, quietly complacent 'like the cat that ate the canary'. Because of her strong oral fixation almost every success which this patient experienced was felt in terms of oral gratification.

A coldly aloof, self-satisfied air of complacency may be used in a hostile and defensive fashion to humiliate competitors and to demonstrate one's invulnerability, indifference, and independence from potential love objects who have the power to rebuff, reject or humiliate. Such smugness imparts the hostile connotation 'I do not need anyone; anything I need I can find in myself.' The hostility intended by this type of smugness may not be conscious, but the attitude of being a completely self-satisfying and emotionally self-contained unit usually is. Such an assumed air of smugness often serves as a defence against painful feelings of social anxiety and inferiority in narcissistic patients. Two such patients had affected this pose by consciously exploiting what Olden (11) has called 'the fascinating effect of the narcissistic personality'. For the reasons already elucidated earlier in this paper they both despised and were extremely irritated by smug people. To one of these patients, nevertheless, it came as a shocking surprise that she had created the impression of smugness on several occasions when she actually was aware only of defensively withdrawing into herself because of her own anxiety. During such times this patient, the first one reported on in this paper, would become extremely hostile to her unresponsive and threatening environment and would entertain the fantasy that she was indeed the invulnerable and independent figure of a Greek goddess, the ideal to which she aspired. The second patient, an attractive model whose system of security was being undermined by her fading beauty, was constantly aware of the impression which she was creating and of the method which she used to create this impression. She was an 'as if' personality (12) who was completely dependent upon her environment for her own sense of self-esteem. When she entered a new social situation which she felt she could not master she knew that by standing off alone in some prominent position and acting like one aloof, distant, and self-absorbed she would inevitably arouse the interest and attention of a number of people. When such attention was not immediately forthcoming and the patient felt herself growing anxious she would imagine that she had a very long, full breast which she could put into her own mouth and suck. In this manner she could become completely and

happily detached from the unresponsive or unfriendly environment, and it was at such times that she imparted the impression of her smugness to observers. Another version of this fantasy of being a completely self-contained emotional unit appeared in a dream in which the patient saw her house tenanted by all the outstanding figures in the artistic, theatrical, literary, and entertainment worlds. While it is undoubtedly true that this type of smugness is the end-result of a complicated genetic development in which an air of hostile repudiation of dependence on the environment is outstanding, it nevertheless remains a fact that the capacity of such individuals to inflict pain on those who observe them through an assumed air of smugness is related to the narcissistic mortification which they thus inflict upon their observers and by the sense of envy which an air of self-containment is capable of arousing in most people.

Support for these conjectures comes from a recent study by L. Rangell (13) on the subject of 'Poise'. From clinical, neurological, and biological considerations he emphasized the rôle of the mouth and the peri-oral areas in clinging, supporting manoeuvres for the purpose of maintaining narcissistic and other forms of equilibrium. One of his patients, for example, could maintain or regain her social poise through the reassuring presence in her hand of a cocktail glass.

A comment on object relations and narcissism is pertinent at this point. The narcissistic type of object choice characterized almost all the patients reported on. Several of them were attracted only to smug people as love objects. A. Reich (14) has shown how the regressive reinstitution of this type of object choice may be used especially by women with problems of penis envy to fend off feelings of narcissistic mortification. The choice of object follows the prototype of the archaic infantile ego ideal, usually an omnipotent parental figure. While mortification at the advent of and the loss of love to a younger sibling were pre-eminent in this material, other forms of narcissistic mortification, viz., penis envy, frustrated oedipal wishes, etc., serve to reinstitute in a regressive fashion a fantasy of securing invulnerability from disappointment and humiliation through identification with the sated nursling. The material presented suggests that the model of omnipotence may be derived from the invulnerability to stimuli or to narcissistic mortification which the young child imagines to be the happy state of the sated, sleeping nursling.

#### CONCLUSION

Those who have known severe hunger and its later representations, i.e., absence of narcissistic supplies, most bitterly resent smug people. They find it most unjust that others should enjoy what they have had to renounce and can no longer experience. The ideal prototype of the



smug individual is fantasied as the well-fed nursling falling asleep at its mother's breast. Smugness represents oral satiety with incorporation of the good object. The object may be represented in current experience by fame, success, etc., but it is ultimately identified with the penis-breast and milk. Smugness implies a temporary diminution of tension between ego and superego plus a relatively large and transitory withdrawal of the cathexis invested in objects. The freedom from tension and withdrawal of object cathexis correspond to the state of affairs which may be assumed to hold for the infant happily asleep after feeding. In this respect, smugness is in the nature of a waking representation of sleep. (It probably differs from mania in the easy reversibility of the process of cathexis of self-representations back to cathexis of object representations.) The various attri-

butes ascribed to the smug person—his self-satisfaction, self-absorption, lack of awareness of the environment, the pleased look on his face and lips, the absence of guilt, his greediness and grasping, and his inability to learn—are derived from this situation. Hunger is the awakener, the source of frustration which directs the individual once again to the world of objects where the process of learning can develop. Guilt over oral greed interferes with the ability to be smug. Some negative reaction to smugness is present to some degree in everyone—to the extent that all human beings in some measure yearn for the tension-free sleep they enjoyed in their mothers' arms. It is an early and undoubtedly basic narcissistic mortification that the individual must awaken and know hunger while others seem to sleep their lives away in blissful satisfaction.

#### NOTES AND BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Presented in part at the Midwinter Meeting of the American Psychoanalytic Association in New York, 4 December, 1954. I am indebted to Dr. Annie Reich for her criticisms indicating points which needed clarification.

2. For the relationship between the process of decathexis and oral incorporation see ISAKOWER, OTTO, 'A Contribution to the Psychopathology of Phenomena Associated with Falling Asleep', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **19**, 1938, and ARLOW, JACOB, in *Psychotherapy with Schizophrenics*, ed. BRODY, E., and REDLICH, F. (New York: International Universities Press, 1952, p. 118.)

3. ABRAHAM, KARL (1924). 'A Short Study of the Development of the Libido, viewed in the Light of Mental Disorders,' in *Collected Papers*. (London: Hogarth, 1942.)

4. STAERCKE, AUGUST (1920). 'The Reversal of the Libido Sign in Delusions of Persecution,' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **1**.

5. VAN OPHUIJSEN, J. H. W. (1920). 'On the Origin of Feelings of Persecution,' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **1**.

6. ARLOW, JACOB (1949). 'Anal Sensations and Feelings of Persecution,' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, **18**.

7. LEWIN, BERTRAM D. (1949). 'Sleep, the Mouth, and the Dream Screen,' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, **18**.

8. LEWIN, BERTRAM D. *The Psychoanalysis of Elation*. (New York: Norton, 1950.)

9. FENICHEL, OTTO. 'Trophy and Triumph,' *Collected Papers, Second Series*. (New York: Norton, 1954.)

10. DEUTSCH, HELENE (1927). 'Über Zufriedenheit, Glück und Ekstase,' *Int. Z. Psychoanal.*, **13**.

11. OLDEN, CHRISTINE (1942). 'About the Fascinating Effect of the Narcissistic Personality,' *American Imago*, **2**.

12. DEUTSCH, HELENE (1942). 'Some Forms of Emotional Disturbance and their Relationship to Schizophrenia,' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, **9**.

13. RANGELL, LEO (1954). 'The Psychology of Poise,' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **35**.

14. REICH, ANNIE (1953). 'Narcissistic Object Choice in Women,' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, **1**.

# TRAUMATIC ELEMENTS IN THE ANALYSIS OF A BORDERLINE CASE<sup>1</sup>

By

MAX HAYMAN, M.D., BEVERLY HILLS, CALIFORNIA

Before going into the details of the case here considered, a few notes on trauma which can be kept in mind during the description will be useful. Although this presentation is primarily clinical, it will also be useful to provide at least a skeleton theoretical framework in which the traumatic neurosis can be placed.

Ordinarily the psychic apparatus maintains an equilibrium between external stimuli, tension within the organism, and discharge. When the influx of stimuli is so great and so rapid that it cannot be assimilated, we call the resulting condition a traumatic neurosis; when the discharge is severely blocked, we call it a psychoneurosis (4). We understand that these are relative concepts and that there is an inverse relationship between the quantity of stimulus and the amount of blockage necessary to precipitate a neurosis. What happens to the excess stimuli that cannot be assimilated? Freud (6) began the answer to this question and has done the basic work in such studies. His original observations on the method of mastering traumatic stimuli by repetition are fundamental. The change from passively experiencing stimuli to actively repeating them is an important step in mastering them. This occurs not just in those major events which we call traumatic situations, but in many minor crises occurring constantly in daily life, the trauma of which is often mastered by prior rehearsal and subsequent repetition. As we know, Freud went on from this mechanism of handling traumata to develop it into the principle of the repetition-compulsion which overrules or displaces the pleasure principle. Thus he finally evolved his concept of the death instinct; but here we are concerned only with the question of mastering intense stimuli.

With a sudden overwhelming stimulus the 'protective stimulus barrier' is destroyed, leaving the ego flooded with excitement which it is helpless to handle (3). The healthiest and

most economic method, other than appropriate discharge, is by a binding of the stimuli, and thus their neutralization. This, however, necessitates a change from the primary to the secondary process, which means that the ego must be sufficiently strong and highly developed to have this capacity to bind. It goes without saying, therefore, that traumata very early in life cannot be handled in this way. An early method is denial, in which stimuli are considered non-existent (5). This is a normal protective mechanism in earliest infancy, but if it persists, it results in a break from reality and becomes a mechanism of psychosis. The organism, in order to protect itself, may have to utilize inhibition of function, which after formation of the ego may be a general inhibition of ego functions, such as fainting, or more focal, such as inhibitions of movement, sight, or hearing. It may also remove itself as much as is feasible from contact with any stimuli. Regression, another primitive adaptive mechanism, is used when the weak or immature ego is confronted with excessive stimuli. Frequently, as a result, active methods of coping with reality are abandoned and oral receptive methods substituted. There may be an even deeper regression to an early narcissistic state. Where the stimuli also are too powerful for somatic discharge, the excess may be deflected internally into the vegetative nervous system.

Denial, regression, inhibition, and internal discharge are archaic methods of handling excessive stimuli, either external or internal. They are mechanisms based on the biological and physiological equipment of the infant, and are concerned with excitation and inhibition in the reflex pathways (17).

In psychoneuroses stimuli defended against are instinctual in type, having become dangerous by virtue of previous traumata, threats, and prohibitions. In the earliest phases instinctual stimuli may be handled by reversal into their

<sup>1</sup> Awarded the Clinical Essay Prize of the Institute of Psycho-Analysis, London, for 1955.



opposite, turning around on the self, projection and introjection as predominant mechanisms, but as the ego matures and strengthens, reaction formation, repression, conversion, character change, and sublimation become possible. With blockage of discharge a surge of instinct may become traumatic. The sudden withdrawal of the means of discharge, such as loss of an object, may also increase the level of tension to a traumatic degree. Glover (12, 14) has presented an essentially similar description of the function and development of the psychic apparatus.

In some respects, the position of repetition in the mastery of traumatic stimuli is unique. It is a primitive method, and we can observe the biological substratum in the reflex removal of irritants in the spinal frog, in the scratch reflex of animals, and in the various riddance reflexes; processes which may continue until success is attained or exhaustion supervenes. The maturing ego can, however, make active use of this method, resulting in highly organized behaviour patterns. It is an emergency discharge mechanism at any period of life, and is effective, in that it can discharge large quantities of energy, and is therefore of considerable economic value. Traumatic stimuli which cannot be assimilated by other methods become subject to mastery by repetition. If other appropriate mechanisms can be used when the emergency subsides, the repetitive method may be eliminated. Glover (13) has called this mechanism the first attempt of the organism at 'autoplastic psychotherapy'. He adds that 'unlike regression it seeks to master, not escape from dammed up energies'. There is a factor which may prevent elimination of the repetitive mechanism. The ego, by inhibitions such as denial and repression, may exclude part of itself in order to prevent the rest from being flooded with excitement. The biological substratum of this mechanism would be autonomy. With the continuing influx of both external and internal stimuli into this walled-off portion, the increase in tension would be expressed, sometimes explosively, without participation or control from the ego, in repetitions of fantasy, thought, and action; but we should distinguish between psychoneurotic repetitions in which a repressed tendency again and again seeks gratification and is each time prevented by defensive measures. This is a repetitive search for gratification which the superego and ego forbid, and must be differentiated from repetitions with the purpose

of mastering intense traumatic experiences. Traumatic stress, whether of a libidinal or aggressive nature, is handled by similar techniques, and it may often be observed that a single repetitive act will involve both instinctual elements.

I would like to remind you also of the clinical features of traumatic neuroses (16, 18, 20, 22):

1. There is fixation on the trauma although repression or denial is the rule.

2. Constriction of the ego with varying degrees of inhibition of ego functions.

3. Regression.

4. Autonomic discharges, episodes of anxiety and rage, and sometimes convulsions. These may be repetitive and be specifically determined by incidents of the trauma.

5. Dreams of a stereotyped perseverative kind which attempt to abreact and master the trauma. The dreams may mirror faithfully the original precipitating situation, and in our experiences in World War II we often noted that the dreams repeated each other, detail for detail. My material illustrates and confirms much that Ella Sharpe states in her book on dream analysis (21). She says, among other things, that unaltered dreams indicate actual events and definite experiences; that repetition in dreams and associations are the best evidence of actual experiences, and that much affect indicates a memory of a real event. My material demonstrates that many elements in the manifest content can be traced not only to reality factors but to the most meaningful and traumatic episodes.

#### REPORT OF CASE

Ann, a 45-year-old anaesthesiologist, entered treatment three years ago because of attacks of peptic ulcer for the preceding ten years. Her internist advised psychiatric therapy in addition to medical treatment. Her complaints on admission, in addition to the ulcer, were the strain in her work, poor relations with her superiors, her hatred towards her family, and her sensitivity to being unmarried. Not mentioned as a complaint was her frigidity. About 5' 4" in height, she is neat and trim in appearance, rather angular, dark-haired, walks firmly and purposively. Speech was brisk and clipped and words were not wasted.

The cast of characters in her story consists of the parents and eight siblings, five of whom survive:

Gwen, the mother, at first described as a warm, loving maternal person, later as a cold, harsh, physically weak, masochistic one, died at age 30 after giving birth to twins.

Honest John, the father, rigid, strict, occasionally



pleasant, often furious, full of self-sacrifice; never remarried because of faithfulness to the memory of his wife; admired by everyone, especially himself.

Bill, an older brother, eight years Ann's senior, tall, dark, and handsome; man-of-the-world type and a little psychopathic in early adulthood; left home, aged 25, after a bitter quarrel with his father; bought a new name for \$25 and became a seafarer.

Clara, an older sister, kind, motherly, but deserted the 13-year-old Ann.

Helen, another sister, pretty, popular, efficient; deserted the 15-year-old Ann.

Allan, another brother, two years older, football hero, also a seafarer, brooding, unpredictable; has an aura of unhappiness and suppressed violence.

Dora, five years younger than Ann, married just before Ann entered treatment; passive, neurotic, kindly.

Ellen, Dora's baby, now about three.

These are the living siblings, but more important perhaps have been the ones who died:

Flora, born when Ann was two, died when Ann was 3; of pneumonia after an accident in a flood.

Twins, one with a head injury; died two weeks after birth.

A view of the patient's life with the major events recorded will help to give a background structure on which the dynamics can be observed. The patient was born in a poor section of an Eastern American town where floods were frequent. At the age of five, a few months before her mother's death, sex incidents occurred in which a man 25 years of age put his penis between her legs from behind. She would threaten to stop co-operation unless given a nickel. This, at first, was all that she could recall. She spent her childhood from 5 to 13 in an orphanage in a town in another section of the State. She received occasional letters from Bill, a few gifts and two visits from her father. In her early description, her life here was quite uneventful and she called it the happiest period of her life. Most remarkable was almost complete amnesia for any event during this time, and there was no feeling of the atmosphere of the place until much later. It then became to her a 'daisy' and 'zombie' type of existence. However, he took an active part in games, was quite athletic, and excelled in several sports. Menarche began at the age of 12, and a year later Bill came to take her home to start the new phase of her life.

Prior to analysis she had looked on her adolescence as the most unhappy period of her life. Analysis succeeded in showing her still more unhappy periods. She gained tremendously in weight, reaching 190 pounds. She avoided men and men avoided her, and she had no dates at all. She felt, and indeed was, quite unattractive. She had contact, and then only in a superficial way, with just two girl friends. One by one, the rest of the family left home. Clara and Helen were married. Bill left under a cloud after having embezzled some money,

together with his uncle, who was sentenced to gaol. Allan left for college. Dora, the patient, and the father remained. By this time the family had moved to another house and the father had acquired a small neighbourhood store in a slum area. Here the patient helped out at the store and, after her sisters left, took over the responsibility of the household, as well as its drudgery. She finished high school at the age of 16 and remained at home until the age of 18, when she left for her pre-medical work. At this time she left the dirt, squalor and misery to Dora, as well as the father's love.

She lost her excess weight and began tentatively to go out with boys, although she was very much frightened. Her first sexual affair, entered into very deliberately so that she could control the excitement, occurred at the age of 22. On completion of her medical training she became an interne in the hospital in which her mother had died. During this period there were no outstanding events and she had only a few desultory affairs. She visited her sisters occasionally, and on one occasion when she was 28 her father was seriously injured in a car accident and finally died in hospital. The patient transported his body to the burial plot in her home town, and on the train, on a sudden urge, she invited and had a sexual experience with a stranger.

At the age of 32 she went into the Army, remaining there for five years. She found adjusting to authority unbearable, and it was during this time that she had a tempestuous affair with George. She was so close to having an orgasm at this time that she forsook intercourse entirely, and has had none since that time. Her ulcer, subsequently dated to age 19, became severe at this period, and she had intermittent attacks of great severity. Most of the clinical features of her neurosis began during this time. Depressed and miserable following her discharge from the Army, she went to a large eastern centre to study photography, an early interest of her father's. She soon gave this up and at the age of 39 she became an anaesthesiologist in a large hospital. She felt that the authoritarian régime of the Army was continued in this hospital, and her symptoms became progressively worse. She developed a very severe ulcer attack, and this finally, with a fear of malignancy, culminated in psycho-analytic treatment.

Psychotherapy with limited goals was the first intention. There was truly a massive amnesia for the first 13 years of her life, which seemed ominous, as well as an early and intense transference hatred. Furthermore, the sudden breaking off of treatment after four hours to visit her brother Bill for a period of six weeks suggested acting-out possibilities which might make treatment precarious. The patient was seen several times weekly at first, and gradually went into psycho-analytic therapy not so much as a preconceived plan but because the exigencies of the situation demanded it. Actually the ulcer pains were relieved in a few months, but pathological



character traits became more prominent and ego-dystonic, and myriads of new symptoms appeared. Furthermore, the development of a working transference relationship indicated the capacity for object relationship. When we had analysed some of her resistances to accepting more hours she came four times weekly and has continued this to date. She has had about 575 hours of treatment.

The patient's life was remarkably empty. It took her 2½ hours to get to her work and back, necessitating her getting up at 4.30 in the morning. Following her characteristically frugal evening meal, she would read for a while and go to sleep early in order to get up early. Her very few friends she saw rarely, without warmth or enthusiasm. An occasional play or concert and rare visits to her two sisters living in the city comprised her social life. There was infrequent correspondence with 'the family'. Her work was the most important thing in her life. Intensely serious about this, she had an excellent reputation among the nurses, doctors, and patients. When not under special tension she would carry on bantering conversations with the operating room team. This, however, could change in a moment and the patient could become bitter, sarcastic, hostile, and crushing. The others, including the doctors, were all rather afraid of her and it was well known that 'Ann always got her way'.

There was a multiplicity of symptoms with new ones or, more accurately, revivals of infantile ones appearing anew as repressions were released. Therefore, only a few of the 67 symptoms and pathological character traits can be described. Driven by her overwhelming fear, there was such a profusion of dreams, fantasies, symptoms, and screen memories that the picture was often chaotic, and appeared at times frankly psychotic. At such times no interpretation was possible, only a repeated reference to her fear. With the development of a satisfactory transference, the fear was sufficiently allayed for her to work productively.

I will now describe the course of the analysis primarily by means of the resistances. In the first few months the patient made desperate attempts to establish an oral dependent relationship with me. Anxiety was intense, approaching panic; she pleaded constantly for medication for her ulcer, the pains from which became extreme. She was very depressed at this time, had thoughts of suicide and threatened it; threatened me with perforation and hemorrhage from her ulcer, and finally threatened to kill me. On one occasion, over a week-end, I was persuaded to give her medication, with the result that her symptoms and acting out disappeared for a couple of days. She gradually settled down as her oral attitudes were interpreted and began to work with considerably less acting out. She then attempted to establish a relationship on an oedipal level, and at this time fantasies and memories relating to the father and, to a lesser degree, to her two brothers appeared. During this phase particularly,

a great deal of material relating to the death of the mother in childbirth was brought out, as well as a group of phobic symptoms, which included the following: fears of death; of cancer of the breasts, mouth, gastrointestinal tract and lungs. There were also over-determined fears of psychosis, of sex excitement and orgasm, as well as a group of hysterical conversion symptoms, including a burning sensation in the body, tingling in the legs, and a convulsive feeling with an aura of dizziness. She would smell the odour of orange blossoms with hallucinatory vividness. In response to the oedipal frustration she became hostile, aggressive, and irritable, and acted out transference feelings with people at work; a pronounced example, displacing her hatred to her superior and quitting her job to maintain contact with me. Interpretation of the oedipal desires led to an especially intense penis envy which had contributed to her character traits of jealousy, hostility and aggressiveness and to her masculine characteristics. In her fantasy, each younger sibling in turn was given the penis, but most important was Allan, the closest to her in age, with the physical evidence of this penis. During this phase hostility to me was extreme, and she struggled bitterly to determine who would be castrated and who the castrator. In this she repeated her struggle with George where the issue was: 'who would have the orgasm and be destroyed'. Along with the penis which she fantasied she obtained went the feeling of power and control, a determinant in her profession of anaesthesiologist. Sarcasm and a biting wit were used to frighten me and her fellow workers, a means which, for years, had kept her own family cowed and wary of her. She would try to stop up my interpretations by anger and would tease, insult, and revile me in order to get me angry. She called me 'crazy', 'careless', and 'incompetent', but at the same time was very fearful of me. If I moved in my chair, she would become tense, ready to get up and run. My position behind her was reminiscent of the sexual incident where the penis came from behind. Overtly hostile behaviour alternated with a more covert attitude of dull but vicious boredom, in which stubborn silences were prolonged and frequent. Often her reaction to punishment in the past had been grim silence, like the screen memory of the white-faced girl in the orphanage who was publicly accused and whose guilt was known to all. She could be hard on me since she felt she was my favourite patient and I was so eager to get her well. As we came close to identifying the actual seducer, she defied me to do so and postponed the recognition of memories and attitudes because there was no objective confirmation. At the same time, she assiduously avoided easily accessible information from her older siblings.

She had other defences. She tried to make herself indispensable to me by being a good patient, just as she felt she was indispensable to her father in her adolescence. She quoted poetry and classical



literature to impress me, as she had composed poetry to please her father. At the same time when she was ready for an insight, she would read psycho-analytic books and attribute the insight to her reading rather than to the analytic work.

Interpretation of the penis envy led to the ambivalent relationship to her mother. Thus, the next phase of the analysis was concerned with this area. In the transference I was predominantly the mother figure. Demands for love became urgent, and when this was interpreted, the invariable reaction was depression, suicidal preoccupation, and finally hostility. Intense oral desires were apparent, and it became obvious that she had little real object relationship except in terms of devouring or being devoured, along with defences against this. She needed people for praise and for relief of guilt. It was only with the working through of these oral factors that she could establish any relationship with her fellow workers and sisters and at last 'have some friends'. She began to realize her intense greediness, and the reaction formation to this in which she became a spendthrift character. This also served her masochistic needs. On several occasions, under the influence of her guilt feelings, she abstained from masturbation, and did so by identifying me with her disapproving mother. It was during this phase that marked regressive phenomena appeared with some of the key memories, including details of the sex incident, early sex play, hints of the primal scene, and the recollection of Flora's death.

The patient had a rigid attitude on the couch, sometimes with hands crossed on her chest. This had several determinants, one of which was an identification with her dead mother. Another was the complete inhibition of seductiveness with the fear that any free movement would be interpreted as seductive. She handled this unconscious desire to be seductive partly by projection, resulting in the conviction that I would try to seduce her. It was only with interpretations of this and the recollection of the precipitating events that she could permit any expression of these feelings. Other inhibitions also appeared, such as the avoidance of being well dressed and of being in a bright light. She avoided excitement such as surprises, even to surprising others by arranging her own birthday party.

During this phase of the analysis one of the most important fantasies was elicited. She had a fantasy of being pregnant, a fear that the baby would grow too large, and had an urgent need to terminate the pregnancy lest she be destroyed. This fantasy regressively was an oral impregnation, an intestinal pregnancy and an anal delivery. It resulted in constipation, enemas, and laxatives for twenty-five years. She had frequent cramps and was often confused whether this was uterine or intestinal. Often she would go through the motions of a fantasy birth on the couch. She was afraid that any mounting tension would eventually have to explode, at times in the form of murderous anger, at times as pro-

jectile speech, and at times as violent expulsion from the bowels. The interpretation of these factors resulted in a distinct surge of well-being.

Masochism as a resistance was ubiquitous and the most important characterological difficulty. She constantly put me in the position of the accuser, the criticizer, the insulter. She tried to make me give up the treatment to give her a masochistic triumph. Over and over again, she accused me of not helping her, of not caring, of making her feel badly with my interpretations and making her needlessly suffer. Every operative death was interpreted as a blow from fate and resulted in intense depression and self-blame. Sadistic and masochistic acting out occurred to a dangerous degree. She had several close calls in which she almost killed someone and got herself killed. Once she found herself driving on the freeway on the left-hand side of the road and almost killed a motor-cyclist coming from the opposite direction. Sadomasochistic fantasies were prominent during masturbation; for example, as a prostitute and dope addict she would suck the tongues of police agents until they weakened and collapsed. Fantasies and acting out in the area of moral masochism were pervasive. She acted the part of the Clod (from an early school play), the Ugly Duckling, Cinderella, and Christ. She would lend money where return was impossible. She would do the menial tasks at parties, and she would tease until she was punished, scolded, insulted, or even beaten. With consistent interpretation, she began to realize that she was 'wallowing in misery like a pig, enjoying crying and getting satisfaction in depression'. She vigorously defended her innocence against real or imagined blame. The guilt feeling for a long time compelled her to act out and was not consciously experienced. The numerous deaths in the family were important determinants of her guilt, and her mother's death, for example, gave the semblance of reality to the dire effects of hatred. We can clearly see, as partial determinants of her behaviour, the dying, suffering mother in the patient's ego, and the father conceived as cruel and hostile in the superego. A positive feeling to her father appeared as she became aware of her libidization of guilt.

A very interesting resistance was the manner of talking in the early sessions. She would skip from one topic to another, giving the highlights but not going into details. These to her were peaks and valleys. The peaks were nice, clean, and shining, and the valleys were damp, dark, and dirty; namely, the penis and vagina respectively. This was used as a method of defence and offence, and we shall find that it originated in the inquisition following discovery of the sex incident. She has made frequent use of this in confusing and bewildering friends and family, and has used it to avoid the recognition of guilt feelings both elsewhere and in the analysis. This originated as denial and had the accretion of the phallic significance later. Until this was inter-



preted the patient insisted that she was freely associating.

Appearing intermittently during the course of the analysis were feelings of unreality and depersonalization. Some marked paranoid trends also appeared. She was convinced that a woman was sitting in the closet listening to her while she spoke. She knew I was recording what she said on a dictaphone and the sounds of dialling meant the click of the machine. Periodically she maintained that I loved her. There were also hallucinations, probably of a hypnagogic variety, in which she heard her name called. She was not quite sure whether this was true or not. She was convinced of the validity of Rhine's work on thought transference. Her paranoid symptoms led to fantasies of her mother with a Mona Lisa smile, who, like a Charles Addams character, was driving her to a horrible destruction. When the underlying homosexual feelings were interpreted, she suffered great anxiety and depression.

Towards the latter part of the analysis the patient became rather dramatic. A flood of tears would signal an approaching vacation, a change from her earlier reaction to my absences which were repetitions of her mother's abandonment of her and resulted in intense depression. In her rôle of anaesthetist she became dramatically a Saviour of Life.

Rarely did the patient verbally agree with interpretations. Very frequently there was no immediate reaction and she would often carry on as if she had not even heard them. However, the reaction would come out in dreams the following session and in actions or insight two or three days later.

Narcissism of course was a marked feature of her illness. Her desire for omnipotence was indicated in her need to control, and her haughty and contemptuous attitude. She also projected this omnipotence on to me, and through passive dependent techniques was able to utilize this power for her protection. Thus I became indispensable to her and no substitutes could be accepted. Her feeling of omnipotence was expressed in her being able to 'kill and bring back to life' the patients whom she anaesthetized. This was an additional reason for the death of a patient being such a traumatic blow to her. She played God in the operating room till the surgeons came and then became their most important instrument. Her narcissism was regularly interpreted to her, but the most violent reaction came when she misunderstood my remark that she had 'a need to appear unattractive' to mean that she was unattractive. This was a strange misunderstanding, as if she meant to say: 'I am now ready to work through this problem.' For a full month the patient went through a period of great torment. She was successively, and sometimes simultaneously, furious, silent, despairing, and apathetic. To spite me she again gave herself enemas, masturbated frequently, and sometimes heard me 'laughing at'

her. She felt empty, hollow and haggard, and longed for me to touch her. I was cruel and heartless and she was repulsive. She began to spend long periods of time looking at herself in a mirror, especially her hair, repeating over and over: 'You're ugly, ugly, ugly, ugly.' 'Everything,' she said, 'is taken away from me; all I have is my body, and that is full of hate and ugliness.'

And yet, even in the midst of these violent storms, she could tell me indirectly not to break down; not to give her reassurance. Gradually she brought out the unconscious conception of herself underlying the most obvious fantasy of the Ugly Duckling: She was 'perfect, beautiful, had the finest hair, and her magic mirror reassured her that she was Nefertiti, the lovely Queen of the Egyptians.' This was also the image of her mother with whom she had been in a close narcissistic union. She relived at this time the intense affects which her apathy covered following the loss of her mother. With her ego well-nigh shattered by that loss, she had a further blow when she was sent to the orphanage. As she lived through this now, her hatred to me and her father again became intense. She acted out this hatred in her fury with other people, and in the transference by invective, abuse, and throwing an ashtray in my direction.

Finally improvement and resolution of this problem was heralded by a dream, in which she gives up the need for prestige by refusing to marry a neurosurgeon she had known. She then realized she could give up her work in anaesthesia, a new, strange, and wonderful thought to her. She was no longer bound to it. This was another turning-point of the analysis.

It is paradoxical that Ann's cruel and relentless superego condoned a certain humorous quality she had. I can mention here the story she told of the hospital which had music piped into its operation rooms. They were doing a lobotomy one day when it was suddenly realized that the music playing was the *Nutcracker Suite*. On another occasion she pinned to the wall of the operating room two identical anatomical plates of the head of a woman with the caption: 'Which twin has the Toni?' From these jokes came elaborations of fear of psychosis and the theme of the twins.

A word about the dreams of the patient, who was a prolific dreamer. At certain phases of the therapy they were used as a resistance, but this was interpreted as it arose. A great number of the fantasies and memories were elicited from the associations to the dreams. She would sometimes tell dreams over and over to many people. The first two dreams were given in the same session, and are described as follows: 'There was a street with many small houses. They were little dolls' houses. I was on my knees with my head inside and one arm in and one arm out. Also, at the same time I was very small and looking at them. I was enchanted with it.' The other dream showed her with George: 'We



were in a small compound with a high brick wall. His penis was stuck to me. We were standing and I was terrified that I might be seen.' The interpretation of these dreams will be obvious in the subsequent development of the material. The dreams were both numerous and repetitive, and this led to the final decision to discuss the traumatic element in the neurosis.

A word about the crucial part of the analysis, the memories which this patient revived. There were four main traumatic events in her infantile life: the death of her mother when she was 5 years and 9 months old; the sex incidents, the most important of which occurred at the age of 5 years and 3 months, in which she was discovered; the primal scenes, three of which occurred between the ages of 2½ and 5; and the death of her sister, Flora, when Ann was 3½. Some conscious memory was present regarding each one except the primal scene. The memories varied in their credibility to the patient. Many she was able to recall and had a subjective feeling regarding their accuracy. Others were recalled in a more vague way, and still others were merely reconstructed, but were dynamically valid in that they produced emotional changes, changes in the material, acting out, and finally further insight. Many memories were confirmed when she finally began to discuss these things with her siblings, and many received confirmation in the dreams. Innumerable fantasies were interposed between the actual incidents and the final symptoms or behaviour.

The most important and the most traumatic element was the death of the mother, but I will summarize very briefly the patient's relationship with the mother prior to the oedipal period. The birth of two younger sisters, with the presence of the already ensconced favourite, Allan, resulted in an intense jealousy and hatred. Her spitefulness, defiance, and rebellion brought on the mother's frequent anger and despair, and she would threaten the children, especially Ann, with dying. By this time the patient was aware of her lack of a penis and already had made a transition to a desire for a baby. Her masturbation had been corrected in a sarcastic manner. But the conscious feeling was one of love and tenderness from the mother, and the memories which persisted were: mother in a green dress looking lovingly down at her, being held in her mother's arms at the age of 4 when she had an ear infection, and snuggling in her mother's bed. In the early years the father was more pleasant and cheerful. She recalled memories of the dogs they had when she was 3 or 4, whom the father carelessly mistreated, but who loved the father and would jump up on his lap to be petted. This was expressed during the therapy by fantasies of intercourse with male dogs, often on her lap, both from the front and the rear. On one occasion she allowed the landlady's dog to lick her genitals.

At the death of her mother the patient is 5 years

and 9 months old. She has not yet started school, but all the other brothers and sisters have, except Dora, who is only one year old. The mother goes into a hospital; Dora goes to an aunt for care; and the patient is taken to the hospital daily by her father. Before the baby is born the patient thinks: now at last she will get the child she wants so desperately and lost before. The mother finally gives birth, has a very difficult labour, suffers a great deal, and the patient sees the misshapen head of one of the twins. She sits or stands quietly in the mother's room and sees and hears everything that goes on. She notices the mother's large breasts. She sees her mother get progressively worse. She hears the nurses, doctors, and visitors make various comments about her mother's condition. Mother is burning up with fever. Mother suffers so much. She sees the nurses remove the bloody rags. The mother vomits and a tube is inserted, and finally the mother requires oxygen, also through a tube. The mother's behaviour becomes strange; she calls out and her speech cannot be understood except for the names of the children. Many things impress the little girl. The room is full of flowers. It is spring and there are marigolds and orange blossoms. And now her mother's life ebbs away, but before the end there is a horrible shaking and gasping. A group gathers round the bed, but she cannot be revived. The patient too goes to the bed, but she cannot help, and only gets in the way. She tries desperately to hear and understand her mother at death, but cannot do so. It is all over now, and the patient goes to the front steps of the hospital and sits down in a frozen state. She does not feel and she does not cry. She notices a gnawing in her stomach, and she begins to gorge herself with food. There is no one to help her, so she puts on a new green dress, just a little awry. She is taken to her mother's funeral. She notes the position of her mother in death, and the coins that are put on the eyes of the dead. She goes through the same thing a week later when the twins, her twins, die. She asks herself over and over again: Is mother really dead? It's easier to believe that nothing has happened, that her mother is away for a while and will come back. Mother will be revived again—and here is the nucleus of her future work in anaesthesia, where people can die and be brought back to life. But she cannot deny the truth entirely, and somewhere in her mind she is aware that her mother died, that she was destroyed by the twins; that she died because of sex, and that her father was responsible. Mother had already warned her of sex and masturbation, and told Ann she would be the death of her; but still she keeps her doubt, and she can never say what her mother died of. She recalls an occurrence which she retroactively placed to the time before her mother's death. She would shout: 'What did your mother die of?' And from Humpty Louie, the tamale vendor, came back the call: 'Hot tamale', and this phrase with its double meaning is her



answer. In her state of apathy the patient does not wish to do anything, especially to see any dead bodies. She is pushed to this. This she must not miss. It is an event that occurs once in a lifetime, like a comet or a coronation.

Already we have the explanation of many phobias, conversion symptoms, fantasies and behaviour, and many of these memories formed the latent content of innumerable dreams. There were very many dreams in which boxes, representing coffins, were the main theme, and we can recall the patient's passion for collecting boxes which had to have something in them. Forty years later she wept bitterly when a plant died because it was too big for the box which contained it.

Two months later Allan and Ann go to the orphanage. Allan has a temper tantrum, but Ann is protected by her frozen state. Only occasionally would she sob into her pillow at the orphanage. She developed preoccupations dealing with the absence of a world or 'How would be the world be without her?' and she would wonder: 'Where do the birds go in the winter?', that is, where has mother gone? All through her orphanage life there was some feeling of unreality, and it represented a fantasy and an atonement. She knew she would one day be reunited with the king and queen who were her parents. The freezing was necessary at this time because the patient was overwhelmed with too much stimulation and struggled to block the perception of her mother's death. As we can see, she never recovered.

The patient had wanted her mother's death, and she wanted the twins. Consequent on this there was tremendous guilt which she expiated through the subsequent years. She also wished to retain her mother, and an introjection of her dying, pregnant, masochistic mother occurred, of far-reaching importance. All her life she felt that she would die at an early age and had the feeling she was living on borrowed time. She was not lacking in positive oedipal feelings towards her father. She had fantasies of having Dora as her and her father's child, of her father returning to her in the orphanage, and rescue fantasies of the President, her father, and Allan who became a representative of the father. In the transference she had fantasies of having twins by and for me, of having a child by me and dying immediately after. But the feeling was not just positive. As a killer of this woman, the father became a cruel and sadistic figure, and this formed the basis of the later conviction that men are sexual brutes and given to rape and violence. The patient showed the phenomenon of borrowed guilt; that is, guilt through identification with the father. This gratified her need for punishment and gave her a secondary libidinal gain. In her adolescence Ann consciously wished her father's death. She had the conviction that her mother's death must be expiated by either of the guilty parties, her father or herself. At the time of her father's

death she had the thought: 'Now father is dying and I am safe'. But two years later she was again expiating guilt in her anaesthesia, both for her mother and father.

The emotional reaction to the death of the parents reached its climax in one of the most dramatic sessions in my experience. In an hour of great agony for the patient she went through the detailed description of the horrible post-operative death of her chief surgeon, to whom she gave the anaesthetic. It became obvious that she was living through the deaths of her mother and father, and what she noticed was decided many years ago, detail for detail. She cried out in her despair as she noted the flowers, the oxygen by tube, the incoherent speech, and the convulsion before death. At the end of this hour she looked at herself—she had worn a short black dress with a bow at the neck and combed her hair like a little girl.

Ann was brought home from the orphanage by Bill, still in the frozen state, but with an underlying excitement that here she might find the realization of her fantasies, particularly find again her long-lost mother. Again she was cruelly disappointed, since both her older sisters were soon married and left home. Her mother's death was partly re-experienced in her adolescence. Her menstruation and the memory of the bloody rags at the orphanage took her back to the bloody dressings of her mother's illness. Their grocery woman's daughter died in childbirth, again confirming her belief that death must inevitably follow sex. For a brief period on her return she was able to draw a picture of intercourse, but following these events a wave of repression occurred and again she regressed to an oral state and to fantasies of pregnancy through tremendous eating. In her medical training some reparative processes began, and she lost her overweight, although she developed mild ulcer symptoms at that time. The dream of the little houses, recurrent since the age of 8, now becomes clear, as the baby too big for the uterus. The game Ann first played on Memorial Day, about the same age, has a similar meaning: she would bury, and then bring a doll part way out of the ground, over and over. Thus she represented both the birth of a child and the return of her mother, and tried to abreact the trauma.

Let us now reconstruct the second major traumatic incident in her infantile life. Sex play was stimulated by the crowded bathtub, the only one on the block, in which sexes were regularly mixed. In the major sex incident Bill, age 12½, inserted his penis between her legs or rectally, had an erection and some sort of orgasm. Allan, 7 years old, threatened exposure unless he had the same privilege. He was inept and somehow hurt the patient. She recalled the cold, wet, repulsive penis, Bill's soft and seductive voice, and the nickel she was given with which she bought peanuts. Ann, too, had been teasing and seductive and was resentful



and jealous when Bill played with her sisters. This incident went through several stages of screen memories. There was the dentist, whose name happened to be the same as a convicted child rapist, who put his hand on her genitals when she was eight. Behind this was the sex incident, with a neighbour as the seducer. Then she said her grandfather came up the stairs, and that he was the father of the seducer, which meant that her father was the culprit. Along with this thought came tremendous hostility against her father and me which almost wrecked the analysis. Then it was the mother of the seducer who interrupted the sex play, and finally the truth came out with much confirmation in dreams and associations. Bill was the seducer. When her mother discovered the sex play, she collapsed, and her father took over the inquisition. Her father tried to question Ann, but she babbled, jumped from one topic to another, was breathless, and could only repeat that it was Bill's and Allan's fault and that she was forced to do it.

More of the patient's behaviour can now be elucidated: the rigidity in body and movement became a character defence against seductiveness. Jumping from one topic to another became a characteristic method of speech. Bill was linked with her mother, and Allan with her father, and physical qualities and personality enhanced this link. She developed an extensive acting out system in order to keep these people apart. In future years she always found two men she would play off against each other, such as two internes in hospital or two assistants in the operating room. She skilfully inflamed one against the other so that they could not gang up on her. Informing on her brothers also had to be repeated over and over again. She would study a patient's chart prior to operation, find old physical defects and minor difficulties not rechecked. Her demand for clearances, blood studies, and re-examinations would delay operations, angering the senior surgeon who would express his anger to the junior for being remiss in his study. This effectively protected her from the feeling of guilt for having set father against son. She tried to convert the passive experience into an active one in fantasies of herself seducing children. Interpretation and acceptance of the acting out nature of her behaviour led to smooth and friendly relations with the surgeons.

Uncovering of this memory led to understanding of the rigidity, which freed Ann to become seductive to me. Interpretations of this seductiveness then brought recognition that penis envy led to the sexual incident. She would try to urinate like a boy and masturbate as if she had a penis. She wanted a penis from her mother but she also needed one to get her mother's love. This was expressed in her urgent desire for a Jaguar car, the money for which would come from her sister Clara, but she would also take her sister for a ride in it. When this was interpreted, her response was, 'I don't believe you for a minute but I know I won't get that Jaguar.'

She knew I would love her if she were only a boy. It was hard for the patient to accept, first that she had no penis, and second that she would not succeed in getting one. Maybe she had a penis inside her somewhere like 'frogs and snails and puppy-dogs' tails.' When all else failed her, the pinna of the ear became a penis to her. Homosexual fantasies and a half-hearted relationship with a homosexual girl began, as well as a contact with an older woman psychologist, an obvious mother figure. The expectation of a penis by mouth was interestingly illustrated in a dream of several young birds with mouths wide open, being fed pieces of dough to which was associated George's penis. Having a penis was the ability to control enuresis and, associated with this, emotion. Urination was equated with ejaculation in the vivid experience of horror and ecstasy in voiding with a full bladder. This was equated with the male orgasm, although at such times she had fantasies of embracing me. As treatment continued, she made attempts to give up the penis. In a humorous way, she attached a raisin lightly with collodion to her arm and asked the junior surgeon, equated with Allan, to remove it. It came off in his hand.

The anal aspect of the sex incident had a pre-history in that the patient received frequent enemas from her mother and frequent rectal temperatures were taken. A fantasy of love from her medical training days was an interne giving her an enema and then putting her to bed.

And now let us turn to the revived memories of the primal scene. This occurred at least three times between the ages of 2½ and 5. From a series of dreams and fantasies, this occurred in daylight or a well-lighted room and the patient was able to see, and to hear the noises. On one occasion she opened the door and looked in; on another occasion she looked through a keyhole. She saw the father handle the mother's genitals, which was followed by coitus. The patient was excited, curious, and frightened. Following the episode of the chief surgeon's death, she revived a clear memory of seeing parental coitus with the mother pregnant and on top. The vagina was seen as the rectum, and she made the interpretation of this scene as a sadomasochistic experience and made an identification with both participants. We can now understand the dreams of the patient joined to George by a penis. This, too, explains the conviction that the baby is destroyed by the father's penis in the mother's body. Sadistic and masochistic fantasies, originating in primal scenes, were fused with similar ones precipitated by the other two traumatic events: the sex incident and the death of her mother. As a result of these observations exhibitionism was thoroughly repressed. She now recalled observations of intercourse in animals which she had repressed until her adult years. She disliked lighted rooms, but from the age of eight masturbated with great satisfaction when thunder and lightning occurred. Numerous



fantasies appeared of children watching parents in intercourse, of exhibitions being put on in brothels, and of herself being observed performing intercourse. She recalled a memory, age 9, of lying on another girl, saying, 'You must struggle'.

The last of the traumatic events concerned Flora, born when the patient was two. Ann had already suffered by the mother's preference for Allan, and there was immediate hatred for this interloper who had stolen from her her meagre share of the mother's pallid love. There are hints of sexual investigations between herself and this sister, and she came to a temporary conclusion that this sister had the penis. A particularly extensive flood occurred when Flora was 1½ years old. Ann, Flora, and their mother were in a boat together, and Flora was either pushed or fell out. This was connected with a screen memory of a child falling or being pushed from a window. Whether the patient actually had a part in Flora's death is uncertain and perhaps even unlikely. What is certain is her terrific sense of guilt, and there is reason to believe that the patient jumped in after her, sustaining an injury to her leg. The screen memory of being in the hospital with a bad injury to the leg helped to control the feeling of guilt. Curiously, she became terribly angry when Clara mistakenly suggested that Flora's death occurred before the patient was born. Ann expiated her guilt for this by various methods. She befriended a cousin with the name Flora in various ways throughout the years. When Dora's girl, Ellen, was born, Ann immediately set her up as the little sister, Flora, and acted in an unusually kind and loving way. This accident contributed its share to the patient's fear of falling, diving, and flying. A long series of dreams involving floods ended up in terror and waking. In one dream she is on a ship and falls overboard. The water is black and deep. She floats in the air and finally ends up in a pleasant shallow swimming pool. In this way she tries to undo the death of Flora. As these interpretations were made, her amnesia gave way and she became extremely depressed. She brought out intense feelings of guilt about Flora, who finally died of pneumonia. Only then could the patient bring out her hatred and resentment against this sister, preceded by a dream in which two nurses began to fight as soon as the head of the department left. After this was interpreted and worked through, the memory of Flora became neutral and the nightmares of floods disappeared.

I must omit much fascinating material dealing with her oral attitudes which gave an oral-sadistic form to the Oedipus complex. The penis envy, too, had its antecedent in envy of the breast. The mechanisms of projection and introjection have already been noted. A curious example of the latter is concerned with the ulcer. As will be recalled, the patient's main obligation was to feed the father and thus placate him. Her sister, Helen, acting as a mother, taught her to cook and was a

buffer between herself and her devouring father. She attempted to resolve this by introjecting the father, but as the ulcer he still required feeding, and now with milk. Such hysterical elaborations were quite persistent until analytically interpreted, following which the patient showed clinical improvement. Also most remarkable was the relief of ulcer pains by masturbation (not that I would advise this as a cure for peptic ulcer!). Masturbation to this patient was most importantly an oral process. Fantasies were most frequently of an oral type, and she was several times horrified to discover that she was simultaneously masturbating and sucking her thumb. Repressive attitudes of the parents and traumata of lesser severity in earliest infancy, for example the method of weaning, not described in any detail, were important in paving the way for the devastating effect of the four major traumata.

The patient's course in therapy was one of progressive improvement. Her life, generally, has been much more normal. She has developed good relationships with her co-workers and her relationship with her family is completely reversed. She is now capable of enjoying them as well as their families. She has given up most of her pathological behaviour and fantasies regarding her sisters and mother surrogates, just as she has given up her mother's wedding ring which she returned to Clara. Since she had worked through her attitudes to the long dead Flora, she gets a great deal of pleasure in her niece, Ellen. The need for the analyst's love is not urgent now as it had been before, and therapy is no longer looked upon as a sadistic operation. There is considerable diminution of her guilt and masochism, and she feels 'much cleaner and sweeter' in the past year. She has experimented with 'giving up mother' and feels able to terminate the analysis now if this should be necessary, although she recognizes that she has further progress to make. She has achieved some prominence and recognition in her field, which in certain phases of her work also involves an acceptance of the maternal rôle.

Her attitude to deaths of patients has changed radically and has become quite rational. Her defence against seductiveness has been eliminated; she now dresses attractively, is more feminine, free and relaxed in her attitude. Preenatal fantasies have given place to genital ones. Fantasies of intercourse increase, while sadistic fantasies of sexually destroying men have disappeared.

In the anal area considerable progress has also been made. She no longer has painful bowel movements and luxuriates in them. The constipation, with its enemas and laxatives for twenty-five years, has disappeared. A rectal fissure, present for ten years, has also disappeared. An important development in the last eight months is a change in the type of orgasm in masturbation. This has become less sharp and shocklike. The clitoris has less sensitivity, and she has noticed an increase in vaginal sensation. This brings us to the main correction which has not



been accomplished; namely, her sexual life. The patient now gets invitations from men, but she has regularly turned them down. She is certain now that she can have orgasm because of the exclusive fantasies of normal intercourse and because of the vaginal sensation. However, as she says, she has not had the courage to test herself. Several writers (1, 2) have noted the difficulty in restoring genital sexuality where such a close connexion between death and sexuality has been established as in Ann's case, and it remains to the future to determine what further progress she will make in this field. In the meantime she is glad that 'she has something small and good and not big and showy'.

### DISCUSSION

Ordinarily the more mature mechanisms of defence are predominant over the more primitive, but in acute stresses, or where the system is already burdened by a heightened level of tension, the earlier mechanisms again come to the fore. This is clearly observable in Ann's case in each of the four major traumata where archaic mechanisms such as denial, regression, and repetitive discharges intermingle and interact with more advanced mechanisms such as repression and reaction formation.

The material inevitably directed attention to the traumatic aspects, and the repetitions of the traumata in the dreams were the most obvious evidence. Comparison of the manifest and latent content of the patient's dreams with the actual incidents showed that undistorted factors appeared in all. A box is such an element. This appeared in dreams very many times, and, in addition to this, it occurred in associations, in her hobby of collecting boxes and in transference references. The path through the latent dream thoughts led to the coffins in reality, and the uterus symbolically. The colour green appeared in numerous dreams, in clothes she wore, and was referred to over and over again. This came through to the latent dream thoughts which helped to make possible the revival of the trauma of her mother's death.

As will be recalled, her two brothers were the principals in the traumatic sex incident. A dream of this in slightly disguised form occurred on many occasions. In order to illustrate the almost identical repetitions, a few excerpts from these dreams are cited:

(1) Kubie, who was saying analysis was no good, and the therapist, were beating the patient with sticks;

(2) There are two younger men and a woman.

One of the men perfected a foolproof gas. They decide to commit group suicide but it fails;

(3) Two menacing Mexicans wanted the keys to her back and front doors;

(4) Two gangsters, one of whom jabs her with a black notebook which becomes a needle;

(5) Two doctors give a woman a treatment. They 'iron' the pelvis till the woman has a convulsion;

(6) The patient is in bed between two boys. She teases them, but they get serious and threatening.

In addition to this, there were innumerable references to two men conspiring against a woman, and an extensive acting-out procedure developed where she always had to have two men battling against each other; that is, keeping them apart with the aid of the father if necessary.

The evidence for the primal scene was obtained especially through dreams directly, and associations to them. Supplementing these were innumerable fantasies of observing intercourse or being observed. The last example concerns the death of Flora. The most important element here is the flood, and there were many dreams in which floods were involved. Each dream as it came up added its bit to the reconstruction of the incident which led to Flora's death.

I have mentioned some specific features occurring repetitively in dreams. Through the means of part for the whole these have taken on the representations of the original traumatic episode. The event, however, must often be laboriously reconstructed with enough memory traces revived until it is first of all meaningful to the therapist, and finally has an affective meaning for the patient. For example, the description of the mother's death was culled from perhaps eighty hours of therapeutic work. Once analysis resolved a specific problem, the repetitive dreams and other repetitions disappeared. It is assumed that otherwise they might continue indefinitely.

We have mentioned the inhibitions and constrictions of this patient's ego functions. By her hermit existence she avoided practically all types of stimuli. She used another means to avoid a traumatic state, whereby an important part of her ego was split off and partially blocked the perception and affect of her mother's death. A stimulus such as this, however, is a continuous and a gross one and cannot effectively be denied. Ann's frozen state is reminiscent of the apathetic



state of war neurotics much exposed to trauma (15).

Why did the patient not overcome the trauma? As we have seen, she made fruitless attempts all her life to abreact the traumatic situations. In infancy a protecting figure is necessary, however, for the person to try again; to repeat the traumatic experience actively and so overcome it. Otherwise, a traumatophobia is likely to develop and the traumatic experience may be walled off, which blocks the full re-experiencing of the traumatic state. My observations on the war neuroses, and others I believe will agree, indicated that intravenous pentothal for purposes of abreaction given indiscriminately without establishing rapport was of no therapeutic aid. An attachment to the doctor, or some other figure such as a buddy, a nurse, or a wife was necessary. Such patients have lost their protecting figure and are in a state of helplessness, and this figure must be temporarily supplied to them. Ann's exile to the orphanage removed the possibility of a strong loving person. The support of the transference during Ann's therapy made it possible for her to re-experience the early traumatic events. Ann herself was aware of the need for mastering traumatic tensions. She insisted that her brother-in-law drive immediately after the accident from which her father subsequently died. When a patient died at an operation, she would at once try to schedule another identical one. When she fell off a horse, she would promptly remount it and ride again.

Ann's dreams were less distorted than is usual in psycho-neuroses and symbolism was more clear and apparent. This reminds us of the dreams of borderline patients and overt psychotics which are so little disguised. Another patient of mine when under two years of age had his hands tied to prevent scratching. A very traumatic situation occurred when he got caught with his head in the pillow and almost suffocated. For twenty-six years now he has had a recurrent and undisguised dream of suffocation which awakens him in a panic. Sometimes he can hear himself say, 'Turn me over, Mother.' An example of another method of repetition and mastery which the patient used I observed in my own daughter, aged 3 at the

time. She had run out in the street, round her mother's car, and was scolded for this. That night she had a dream in which this car was on the sidewalk, all shabby (the car was a 'Chevvy'), its tyres were gone, its paint chipped off, its glass broken, and the doors hanging on the hinges. Immediately she awoke, she rushed to the window to look at the car, and constantly, all day, she told this dream to everyone who would listen. The next day she mentioned it two or three times, and after this it was apparently forgotten.

When traumatic situations in infancy have been severe and there is much internal vegetative discharge, patients not only become traumatophobic but they develop a fear of excitement from any source, including their own instinctual drives. This contributed to the patient's frigidity and fear of orgasm. The ego, always fearful of being overwhelmed, could not permit the increase of excitement preliminary to discharge. Fear of overstimulation also made her ward off interpretations.

Where a trauma is very intense, it is difficult to work out physically in dreams and fantasies, and action with its greater discharge of energy is necessary. This, I think, helps explain the frequent acting out instead of remembering which occurs in the traumatic neuroses.

The interrelations between the psychoneurotic elements and the traumatic elements may become very complex, but with the work of analysis they are often revealed strikingly distinct from each other. The repetitions of the traumatic elements persist into adult life with little elaboration, while the psychoneurotic elements have a rich and variegated development. The criteria for traumatic neurosis noted in the introduction seem to be present.

Trauma is universal, and it is likely that every psychoneurosis will show some of the elements of the traumatic neurosis. In any case, the affective recollection of traumatic events constitutes a large part of the goal of psychoanalysis, and by looking for the specifically traumatic elements we can find a direct path to the traumatic incidents, which began both the psychoneurosis and the traumatic neurosis accompanying it.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) BONAPARTE, MARIE. *Female Sexuality*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1953.)
- (2) DEUTSCH, H. (1930). 'The Significance of

Masochism in the Mental Life of Women.' *The Psychoanalytic Reader*, 1. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1948.)



(3) FENICHEL, O. 'The Concept of Trauma in Contemporary Psychoanalytic Theory.' *Coll. Papers*, 2nd Series. (New York: W. W. Norton, 1954.)

(4) — *The Psychoanalytic Theory of Neurosis*. (New York: Norton, 1945.)

(5) FREUD, ANNA. *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defense*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1946.)

(6) FREUD, S. *Beyond the Pleasure Principle*.

(7) — *A General Introduction to Psychoanalysis*.

(8) — *New Introductory Lectures on Psychoanalysis*.

(9) — *An Outline of Psychoanalysis*.

(10) — *The Problem of Anxiety*.

(11) — 'Recollection, Repetition, and Working Through.' *Coll. Papers*, 2.

(12) GLOVER, E. *Basic Mental Concepts*. (London: Imago Publ. Co., 1947.)

(13) — (1950). 'Functional Aspects of the Mental Apparatus.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 31.

(14) — *Psycho-Analysis and Child Psychiatry*. (London: Imago Publ. Co., 1953.)

(15) GREENSON, R. R. (1949). 'The Psychology of Apathy.' *Psa. Quart.*, 18.

(16) GRINKER, R. R., and SPIEGEL, J. P. *Men Under Stress*. (Philadelphia: Blakiston, 1945.)

(17) HARTMANN, H., KRIS, E., and LOEWENSTEIN, R. M. *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 2.

(18) KARDINER, A. *The Traumatic Neuroses of War*. (New York: Paul B. Hoeber, 1941.)

(19) — and SPIEGEL, E. *War Stress and Neurotic Illness*. (New York: Paul B. Hoeber, 1947.)

(20) RADO, S. (1942). 'Pathodynamics and Treatment of Traumatic War Neurosis (Traumatophobia).' *Psychosom. Med.*, 4.

(21) SHARPE, E. F. *Dream Analysis*. (London: Hogarth, 1937.)

(22) SIMMEL, E. 'War Neuroses.' In: *Psychoanalysis Today*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1944.)





# THE ANALYSIS OF AN UNCONSCIOUS BEATING FANTASY IN A WOMAN<sup>1</sup>

By

MILTON LESTER, M.D., BEVERLY HILLS, CALIFORNIA

## INTRODUCTION

In 'A Child Is Being Beaten' Freud (4) describes certain women in whom the oedipal sexual wish for the father is expressed in a succession of beating fantasies. In the earliest phase of the fantasy, the patient, as a young girl, imagines, usually following on the birth of a brother or sister, that her father is beating another child. The meaning of the first phase is: 'My father loves only me and not the other child, for he is beating it,' and this gratifies the girl's jealousy of her rival. This fantasy undergoes repression, and the sense of guilt causes its content to be reversed, so that the second phase says, 'My father is beating me'. Of the second fantasy, Freud says 'this being beaten is now a convergence of the sense of guilt and sexual love. It is not only the punishment for the forbidden genital relation, but also the regressive substitute for that relation. . . .' Yet this second phase 'is never remembered, it has never succeeded in becoming conscious. It is a construction of analysis, but it is no less a necessity on that account.' A third phase becomes a substitute for the second, makes its way into consciousness, and consists of the patient witnessing the beating of a boy by some authoritative man. This fantasy is accompanied by masturbation, and since the boy represents the girl herself, the satisfaction derived is masochistic.

Freud examined the material obtained by the analysis of these fantasies from several points of view. First, because his patients utilized the last phase of the fantasy for masochistic masturbatory release and indeed had no other sexual outlet, being virgins, according to a personal communication from Freud to Marie Bonaparte (2), he elucidated the relationship of perversions to the Oedipus complex. Second, from his finding that out of a sense of guilt the sadism of the first phase of the beating fantasy turned against the self in the second phase, he stated that masochism always originated

secondarily from sadism. (Later, however, in *Beyond the Pleasure Principle* (5) and *The Economic Problem of Masochism* (7), he revised his view and postulated a primary masochism.) Third, he sought the origin of the sense of guilt, and by assigning it to 'the agency in the mind which sets itself up as a critical conscience over against the rest of the ego', prepared the way for his later description of the superego in *The Ego and the Id* (6). Fourth, he used the material to refute Fliess' theory that the dominant sex of a person represses the mental representation of the subordinated sex into the unconscious, and Adler's theory that the 'masculine protest' of all individuals causes their feminine attitudes to be repressed. Instead, Freud proposed that what is repressed is whatever is unserviceable to, incompatible with, or harmful to new advances in the individual's development. Infantile sexuality falls in this category but works against repression and provides the motive force for symptom formation. Fifth, and most pertinent for the following presentation, Freud pointed out that the infantile perversion may not continue as a perversion into adult life but may exert its influence in other ways. In this connexion, he emphasized the paramount importance of the second, unconscious masochistic phase of the beating fantasy. The fantasy of being beaten may be expressed in the woman's character and enacted in life. Of this tendency, Freud says, 'People who harbour phantasies of this kind develop a special sensitiveness and irritability towards anyone whom they can include in the class of fathers. They are easily offended by a person of this kind, and in that way (to their own sorrow and cost) bring about the realization of the imagined situation of being beaten by their father.'

The patient whom I shall describe was under the influence of such an unconscious beating fantasy. It did not engender a conscious beating fantasy or a true perversion in adult life, but

<sup>1</sup> Awarded the Clinical Essay Prize for 1956 of the Institute of Psycho-Analysis, London.



analysis revealed how her adherence to it and her attempts to gratify her oedipal strivings by acting it out had deformed her character, distorted her dealings with others, and made an adult love relationship impossible.

#### HISTORY

The patient was a 28-year-old, single, career woman when she came for analysis at the beginning of 1952. Since then she has had over 600 hours of treatment. She sought help because of a painful feeling that life was passing her by. Most of her time, commonly up to sixteen hours a day, was spent at her job in the trade union field. Although she liked her work, she felt she had become merely a dreary drudge. Her current love affair was also unsatisfying. Her lover was a married man with two young children, and although he had been separated from his wife for several years, he seemed content to forgo a divorce. When he spent precious Sunday hours with his children, she felt she was of no importance to him, but bore her unhappiness in tearful silence because she wanted to be fair to the children. She longed for joy and happiness but felt enmeshed in circumstances that denied her these.

As far back as she could remember, she had always felt thus. She had only unhappy memories of her childhood. She was the second of four children, there being a brother one year older, a sister 6 years younger, and another brother 12 years younger. While she could recall her younger brother's birth, she remembered nothing of her sister's arrival or of the time preceding it. The setting of her recollections from the age of 6 was a small crowded apartment in a large Eastern American city during the depression. Although her father was a skilled tailor in the women's garment industry, work was irregular and the family was poor. She remembered herself as an overweight child with unattractive hair and clothes that her parents never tried to improve. She presented a dismal picture of her family life. Her mother was a dishevelled nagger, enslaved to housework, constantly complaining that she was overworked and unappreciated, and forever reproaching the patient for laziness and disobedience. There was continual bickering over the patient's neglect of household duties. She felt she was only resisting her mother's unfair coercion, but her mother claimed she was a bad, worthless, disloyal daughter. She told herself she had the right to refuse co-operation to a mean person like her mother, but the older woman's accusations made her acutely uncomfortable. She considered her father to be silent, cold, and indifferent to her, except when the mother informed him of her refusals to help. Then he would curse her insolence and hit her. Occasionally he would make a dress for her, but she wouldn't lower herself to accept anything from a tyrant who did not respect her natural rights. When he then became enraged at such sullenness, she felt he had

revealed his true attitude towards her. Her elder brother was a bully who snarled orders and beat her if she refused to comply. She tried only to ward him off or escape, but was helpless before his superior strength.

It seemed to her that from the earliest days she had been required to take care of the younger children. While other girls played, she supervised her sister and brother. She supposed that she resented the enormous amount of time she sacrificed, but no one could say she had ever harmed them. In fact, even as a very young child she had been the one to comfort her baby sister's tears while no one else bothered. She had never been able to bear seeing anyone hurt or in pain.

She repeatedly spoke of two particular situations to illustrate her treatment in the family. One referred to a ten-day period when her mother was at the hospital to deliver one of the younger children. Which one it was had never been clear to her. She had stayed home from school to shop, clean, and cook. Neighbours had called in to see how she was managing and always commended her thoroughness. But did her parents care? They had given no sign of gratitude, and she had felt crushed. The other situation referred to a scene repeated numerous times at the dinner table. Her mother would serve split-pea soup. The patient loathed this soup—wasn't it a person's right to dislike certain foods?—and would refuse to eat it. Then her father, ignoring her rights, would insist that she eat. She would again refuse. He would slap her, and she would run sobbing to the hall closet to sit on the floor in the dark, feeling abandoned, injured, and righteously defiant. These feelings pervaded her childhood. One of her few consolations was to glut herself on candies and pastries whenever possible. She knew this made her fat and unattractive, but the sweets soothed her wounded feelings.

By the age of 7 she felt she had to look outside the family for friendship. She attached herself to a slightly older girl in a way that was to be repeated several times with other girls and women in the following years and through a large part of analysis. At first she would feel devoted and utterly loyal and believe therefore that her friend could not possibly be interested in anyone else. When the other girl failed to break off with other chums, the patient felt hurt and would marvel that her friend was not even aware of the pain her fickleness caused. Soon she was certain that she was tolerated only if she agreed with the friend's every opinion, and so felt oppressed and stifled.

Concerning sex, she thought she had liberated herself from an intense sense of sinfulness, which she attributed to her parents' prudery and especially to her mother's veiled warnings about bad girls who fell under the influence of white slavers. In childhood she would stare at boys covertly, and because her thoughts dwelt on them as well as on her studies, she felt she attended school under false pretences.



She never had a boy friend openly because that would have been a confession of sexual desire that she feared to reveal to her mother. When she was about 12, her elder brother frequently stole to her bed at night and played with her vagina. She told herself that she acquiesced because she feared him, but knew that she wanted the pleasure. She had also masturbated with a strong feeling of wrongdoing.

During early adolescence, a period which included her younger brother's birth and her elder brother's sex play, she decided she must become an educated, worthwhile person who would achieve a noteworthy position and be independent of her sordid family.

She was an excellent student and had finished her first year of college when her father announced he could no longer help her because everything must go to pay her elder brother's way through a professional school. Hurt by such gross unfairness, she left home for Los Angeles. When the family settled there soon after and insisted that an unmarried girl should live with her parents, she refused to return.

Whenever she saw her parents, she was tense, formal, and taciturn. She visited their home only out of a sense of obligation to help her sister who, she had good reason to suspect, was becoming a sexual delinquent. She was tortured by a feeling that she was accountable for her sister's troubles and would have no peace unless she rescued her. Her younger brother was bright and ambitious, and she was his confidante. They were fond of each other, and she was not troubled about him.

Now that she was away from her oppressive parents, she wanted to obtain fair play, justice, and freedom of opinion for herself and others. She abhorred violence as unworthy of decent people. The least powerful person's rights should be defended and special privilege opposed. She became interested in trade unions and felt that their work embodied many of her sentiments.

In her early twenties she began clerical work for a small organization that did economic research for trade unions, presented lectures on current legislation to union members, and assisted in the preparation of labour disputes that were to be argued before an arbitrator. She educated herself in a particular aspect of labour law and became an authority in the field. Unions requested her to appear as their representative in arbitration cases. These were quasi-judicial proceedings that required skill in cross-examination of witnesses and in the development of evidence, abilities usually expected only of highly trained lawyers. She undertook this work, and her opponents were always expert attorneys. She soon established a reputation by winning difficult cases, and the demand for her services increased. But she received a clerk's wage for professional work ordinarily delegated to lawyers.

She regarded her job not merely as a livelihood, but as a mark of distinction and a credential of worthiness. She relied on it to show she was useful, intelligent, and generous. However, she was certain

that her colleagues tolerated nothing less than complete dedication to work. Therefore she felt compelled to give it precedence over all personal concerns. Were she to take time for a concert, or clothes shopping, or even cleaning her apartment, she feared condemnation as self-indulgent, insincere, and disloyal. Despite her conscientiousness, she expected her integrity to be questioned if she made the slightest mistake. She considered arduous work an inseparable part of her existence, but complained that it deprived her of all of life's pleasures.

After leaving her parents' home, she had several love affairs, all similar in pattern. She was always attracted to an older, married man. She would assure herself that his marriage must have been unhappy before she had ever met him. Soon after their sexual relations began, she would suspect that he was using her as easy solace for his marital discord. Convinced that she really meant little to him, she would become withdrawn and unresponsive to his overtures and sit silently before him with head averted and tears tumbling down her cheeks. He would become impatient and sharp, and she would feel stricken by his callousness. They would see each other less and less, and she would feel hurt and abandoned.

The affair at the time that she sought help was hastening towards such a termination. She was over-eating, and none of her more beautiful clothes fitted her. She was puzzled and ashamed that she always violated her diet just as she was regaining an attractive figure. She felt an ever-present, mounting discontent and could find no way to allay it. When confronted with a difficult problem at work, her policy was to seek objective consultation, and now she decided she must approach her personal problem the same way. So, overworked, overweight, and unhappy, she came for treatment.

#### THE ANALYSIS

From the beginning of analysis the patient felt that her present difficulties were related to her past life, but in a particular way. Her parents had hated her and had made brutally clear their opinion that she was worthless and bad. As a result, domineering persons found it easy to exploit her because she was now so anxious to avoid criticism. Pleasing others left little time for her own pleasures. She hoped treatment would toughen her to the harshness she was exposed to, and so leave her free to live more fully.

In almost every hour for the first six months she described someone's overbearing behaviour and her inability to cope with it. The woman who was her current intimate friend had ridiculed her seeking help and demanded that she develop enough backbone to handle problems by herself. A union official, disregarding her closely planned work schedule, had barged in without an appointment and compelled her to waste valuable time on a trivial matter. Her employer had insisted she deliver a



lecture when she was already giving every waking moment to preparing an important arbitration case. Because some unions had been remiss in paying their retainer fees and her organization's scheme had dropped, her salary had been suspended and she had been forced to borrow money to live on.

Her manner in relating these incidents was always the same. She was never indignant or angry, as often seemed appropriate. Instead, she would be silent for several moments while tears welled up in her eyes. She would avert her face and dab at her wet cheeks with a handkerchief. Then in a broken, choked voice she would reveal her latest humiliation, adding that when she was treated unfairly she only wanted to run away and cry in private. It was, she said, the same miserable feeling she had had as a child sitting in the dark closet after her father had hit her.

Yet throughout the time that she was depicting these tribulations, she was having experiences of quite a different kind. But these she referred to hastily and fleetingly. While visiting her woman friend, she imagined cleaving her skull with an axe. During nights spent with her lover, she sometimes feared she might unwittingly kill him in her sleep, and would awaken in a panic, gasping, 'Have I done it?' When a woman colleague went for surgery, she pictured the woman dying. She made early morning business appointments but would oversleep and keep her clients waiting.

Such thoughts and behaviour she regarded as horrible and alien to her nature. I repeatedly pointed out her destructive impulses and her guilt about them. I said that to deny these impulses and allay the guilt, she needed to arrange to feel like an innocent who suffered at the cruel hands of others. She replied that first of all she did not *want* to hurt anyone, and secondly, others *did* mistreat her and she surely was not responsible for their attitudes.

When she reported having had to accept a suspension of salary, I asked whether she would negotiate a trade union contract that required a worker to forgo his wages and go into debt if his employer became pinched for money. She was incredulous. Was I serious? Why, you couldn't ask a poor worker to subsidize his employer. By all logic and fairness, the employer should be the one to borrow money, if necessary, to pay his obligations. Yes, she could see my point, but she had never thought of her job this way. When anyone misused her, she just felt 'devastated, crumpled inside, helpless'. That was why she could not stand up for herself. And anyway, why should she have to ask for what was due to her? She should not have to remind others of her rights and needs. I then said that she seemed reluctant to change the conditions that hurt her. No, that was fantastic. She was sick of being stepped on. Maybe it was time she did something about it. A few days later she said that she had asserted her rights at a staff conference at work and had won not only restoration of her salary, but ex-

emption from lecturing and relief from some office chores. She was amazed to learn that everyone had assumed that she could manage financially, since she had not objected to the pay suspension. She was elated over these gains, but within a few days felt tense and uneasy and said it seemed wrong not to feel unhappy.

As hardships at work diminished, her behaviour in the hours became striking. She was silent for long periods, alternately wringing her hands and clutching the skin of her forehead. Cringing on the far side of the couch, she darted glances at me, her expression apprehensive, her eyes wide and pleading. She appeared to be in agony. I said she behaved as though she were a helpless victim and I a wanton torturer.

During the next few weeks she found herself wanting to injure various people and feeling intensely guilty. In each instance, she caught herself reversing the situation by constructing a fantasy in which the other person was vicious to her. She noticed that she had then experienced a pleasurable righteous indignation and relief. She had then realized, she said, that she did want to feel helpless and abused, and that she did not want to give up this feeling. It was 'like a protective blanket; it made everything all right'. She recognized how readily she had always found pretexts for invoking a feeling of being injured. If anyone spoke crisply to her, he was being rough and scornful. If a friend greeted her with insufficient enthusiasm, he was showing contempt. If a colleague demurred from her opinion, he was being dictatorial.

Now toward the end of the first year of analysis, in a session just before a week-end, I said that in the light of her need to feel mistreated and hurt, I wondered if her childhood had been as grim as she portrayed it, and whether she had played a rôle in making it so. She was sceptical. The idea seemed highly improbable to her. She had no doubts about how her parents had treated her. At the beginning of the following week, she appeared puzzled and tense. On the intervening Sunday she had felt an inexplicable urge to visit her parents' house. She had picked up the family picture album and turned the pages idly. Suddenly she had been startled by a photograph that seemed utterly new to her. There she was, a little girl of 5, beautifully dressed and with long blonde hair tied in ribbons. Her mother stood smiling down at her. As she described the picture, she burst into tears. 'It's unbelievable. How could I have forgotten those days? That was the happiest time of my life. I felt like a princess.' She recalled her parents' adoring approval of her childish preening and gay dancing. It had seemed to her that her mother and father, while fond of one another, each reserved his deepest affection for her, and she had considered herself the beloved centre of the family. Her thoughts turned repeatedly to a pleasant scene of her doting mother giving her hot buttered rolls and cocoa in a bright clean kitchen.



She felt that the sunny contentment of this scene epitomized those early years. With these recollections, she became fearful that her entire view of her life was being shaken. Had she built up a false picture of herself and her parents? She felt that she could not bear to change her attitudes towards them.

Her childhood was now separated clearly into two distinct periods: an earlier, happy one when she felt loved and secure, and a later, dismal one when she was antagonistic, provoked punishment, and felt hated by her parents. The question was, why had she changed?

The material of the next four months began to answer this question. She dreamed that an older woman stood barring her way and that suddenly a shower of water gushed from between this woman's legs. She then recalled that when she was 'very young', that is, 6, she had seen her pregnant mother's bag of waters break and run down her legs on to the floor, but remembered nothing of her own reaction. Then she dreamed that she was distraught because she had dropped a baby entrusted to her care and broken its leg. Her associations led to her baby-sitting jobs at the age of 12. With great guilt, she told of one baby she had deliberately pinched hard because she hated his parents, nominally for being slow in paying her. She thought of her own sister and younger brother and now felt glimmerings of her hatred of them as intruders in her paradise. She recalled a simple-minded uncle playing with her sexually as a child, and her never protesting. And she remembered regarding her mother as slovenly and not good enough for her father. The period of her taking care of the house while her mother was in the hospital began to emerge in a new light. Whereas it had been a prime example of her self-sacrificing and unappreciated suffering, now she remembered her joy in picturing herself as the mistress of the house. She had prepared her father's meals and clothes happily, and he had been proud of her. The night her mother had gone to the hospital, she had slept in her parents' bed. Her father had come home in the early morning hours and awakened her to report the baby's birth. She related that he had then climbed into bed with her, but immediately retracted this statement, saying she felt confused. 'Maybe he went to sleep with my older brother.' These events actually occurred at the time of her mother's last pregnancy with the younger brother when the patient was 12, but she had a persistent fantasy that she had taken care of the house and her father when her sister was born, although she was then only 6. I said that she no doubt had wanted to at that time as well.

She began to experience in the transference the feelings of that early time. First the defensive aspects appeared. She felt no active desires or demands. It was only that my aloofness and indifference hurt her, so that she had to bite her

quivering lip to keep from crying. She became pre-occupied with imagining how I would react were she to remain away from the sessions. Would I be angry, berate her, perhaps even strike her? She was indignant at the thought of such humiliating treatment from me, and yet felt fascinated by the idea that I might behave in that way. I said that only a person emotionally attached to her would be likely to be moved to such anger by her absence; perhaps what fascinated her was the intimacy implicit in being struck by me. She then dreamed that she was staunchly defending herself in a fight with an unknown man. He threw her on a couch, and she suddenly felt he would unjustly suspect her of wanting sex instead of a fight. As she related the dream she felt intensely guilty and said, 'When my father became angry and beat me I always felt I must keep it secret from everybody. I used to think I was ashamed of his behaviour, but I just realized that wasn't it. I was ashamed of myself. I *wanted* him to hit me.' Now she revealed that she wanted me to see no other patient. She felt that any time I gave to anyone else was taken from her. She was astonished at the reality of her possessiveness. For the first time, she realized that she wanted to be every friend's favourite and that, in her affairs with men, she relished winning over another woman. She reacted to this insight by spending hours in searching for a job for her sister and in doing the work of a woman subordinate whom she had permitted to become lax. Then she complained of feeling deprived by these impositions. I pointed out that she played the exploited, injured child to deny her competitive, destructive impulses toward women and her sexual interest in men.

At this point, about the sixteenth month of analysis, the material abruptly veered in another direction. She started to complain that men had a superior attitude towards women and wanted to relegate them to menial household chores. She was proud that she had risen above such tasks. She felt hurt by the derogatory manner of one particular lawyer opponent whom she described as 'arrogant, a whip-lash, a lord of the earth, powerful'. He was just like her elder brother. This brother was competent and respected, and she now realized that she wanted to be just like him. Her work, she felt, was a man's work, and she wanted to be impressive in it, like a man.

The transference, now centring on her feelings towards her elder brother, assumed a new character. Her silences returned, but were not of the former tearful, suffering kind. They now had a jaw-clenching, antagonistic quality, which I pointed out. She then admitted her feeling that to talk was to acknowledge my superiority, while silence was a way of proving her equality. She began coming to the sessions half an hour late and stated she wanted to show she didn't need my help. She dreamed that a man was being beaten by a gang while she stood by doing nothing and telling herself that she was



helpless against the men. Her associations revealed that she felt 'hypocritical' in the dream, that in a 'mocking way' she was saying, 'You really can't expect a weak woman to help you.' She recalled that in fighting with her brother she had wanted to seize his penis and crush it. And then she recognized that behind her mild and plaintive demeanour towards her lawyer opponent lay a fierce urge to claw, smash, and beat him to a pulp.

During one session, she unconsciously caressed an ear-ring while she talked. I called her attention to this. Her hand paused, and then she suddenly snatched both ear-rings off, hiding them in her palm. 'I don't want to show them to you. I never realized. I feel I've never really looked at them before. I'll never wear them again. My God, it's so obvious. I feel like I've been flying under false colours.' Then she held up an ear-ring. It was a pendant phallus with a small ball on each side. She left the session determined to repeat to herself, 'I have no penis', but what came out was, 'I have a penis'.

Now she seemed driven to function as a man. She stated that only her work was important to her and redoubled her attention to every detail of her cases. She wanted people to think of her as a perfect worker. At the same time, she disparaged herself as a woman. Of course other women were more attractive to men and more successful with them than she was. She neither expected nor cared to compare favourably with such women.

I said that by her immersion in work she seemed to be protesting that she had no interest in men; that she competed only as a boy, and that she renounced any claim to being a woman who competed with other women. She responded with the realization that until the birth of her sister she had felt beautiful and confident, and that only after that had she allowed herself to become fat. She further realized that only after the younger brother's birth had she felt convinced that no man would ever love her and become determined to win status by her intellect. She dreamed that her father was shouting abuse at her elder brother and handling him roughly. Her associations were that in reality her father was very proud of his scholarly son. She had envied her brother's position and tried to emulate his attainments. She said, 'I just had a horrible thought: I would like to see my father mistreat my brother; then I'd feel like the favourite.' Now she felt the truth of the interpretation that in her intense efforts to be a boy she was only taking a devious route to the goal of possessing her father.

The analysis was now at the end of its second year, and the material returned to the subject of her feminine strivings and their attendant anxieties. While sitting in the waiting room, she felt unhappy on hearing a high-pitched voice in my office and thought, 'He has chosen another woman.' When I pointed out that she felt betrayed, she recalled a new detail of the time she had managed the house in her mother's absence; that when her father had

announced the baby's birth, she had felt bitter towards him.

During the more frequent visits she was now making to her parents, her father often kissed her cheek, and each time she felt a surge of guilt towards her mother. She had the same reaction when a friend's husband embraced her affectionately. She had to assure herself that she was not responsible, but recognized she had wanted his attentions. About the same time, she was shocked to see her sister brazenly hug her father before their mother's eyes, and was certain that her mother felt excluded and hurt.

She revealed now that she and a man Roy, whom she had known for six months, were in love. Recently he had proposed marriage, and ever since then she had felt an amorphous dread and had avoided sexual relations with him. Soon the feeling crystallized into a fear that bodily harm would befall her. Then a terrifying dream occurred that clarified the situation. In it, a woman was about to have a baby. Her membranes ruptured and a pan was put under her. She was roughly handled. Someone forcibly put a hand into her uterus to tear something out. It was a bloody mess. The woman was mortally ill. As she related the dream she sobbed in anguish that the woman in it was herself, and she now knew that she had always feared a pregnancy would kill her. The reason for this expectation was also clear, she said. Anyone so brutal as to hate her infant sister and turn her mother into a careworn drudge deserved to die. She had been avoiding Roy because she didn't want him to arouse her desire to have children, a desire that would prove fatal.

After this partial insight into her wish to destroy her mother and sister, she felt hopeful, optimistic, and free of tension, but not for long. She had introduced Roy to her latest woman pal, Maggie. Soon she felt certain that he no longer loved her but was attracted to Maggie, and that Maggie, with cold-blooded, disloyal selfishness, was setting her cap at him. She said there was no actual evidence of this, yet she felt helplessly caught up in an inexorable process that would end only in their going away together and her being left abandoned and isolated. The hurt was unbearable. She could neither sleep nor work and cried incessantly. She could think of nothing but her impending loss of Roy. I reminded her that she had told me Maggie had never had much luck in getting a man. Yes, she replied, that was true. She felt incomparably better off than her friend. She was sure that Maggie must be full of longing and loneliness and very envious of her. 'Before I was sure of my attachment to Roy and while Maggie was the most important person to me, I was comfortable. But as I fell more in love with him and grew away from her, I became very uneasy.' She dreamed that Maggie was dancing in front of Roy to entice and excite him, while she stood by feeling bereft. Her associations led to recollections



of her own seductive dancing before her father when she was small and of childhood daydreams of becoming an entrancing ballerina. She added that although usually graceful, she was awkward and stiff when dancing with Roy. To dance well, she said, one had to be responsive to the man, able 'to blend and be as one with him'. She felt afraid to display such closeness to Roy. I said that she attributed to Maggie her own competitive feelings towards her mother, and that she felt guilty about winning Roy as she had felt guilty about wanting to win her father from her mother.

Within a few weeks she accepted Roy's proposal, and in a short time they married. She was astounded by her parents' expressions of love for her. They would not hear of her plans for a perfunctory, inconspicuous ceremony. Out of their meagre savings, they bought her a beautiful wedding dress and paid for a real celebration feast to which they insisted she invite all her friends as well as the family. At the wedding she was intensely moved by their glowing pride and affection.

In the first session after the honeymoon, she related another memory of the time she was mistress of the house in her mother's absence. She recalled feeling deposed and relegated to the status of a little girl when her mother had come home and taken over again. Throughout the honeymoon she had been depressed and plagued by the idea that she ought not to be a married woman. Now she wondered if this was because she had 'wanted to be the woman of the house, I mean the wife and bearer of children when I was a girl in my mother's home'. A dream led to confirmation of this idea. In it, her sister was in a cave where she should not have been, and her mother was dying of a growth in her uterus. She felt responsible. While telling this dream, she made a slip of the tongue, saying, 'My baby', instead of 'My sister'. She said, 'Everything points to my feelings at the time of my sister's birth. I can see the indications that I wanted to have the baby, that I didn't want my father to have anything to do with my mother. Even that I hoped she would die. But somehow I don't really know these things.'

But she now experienced in present-day life all that she denied knowing. She felt a chronic, implacable hatred of Maggie and frequently imagined beating her senseless. At the same time, she said that she knew now that these feelings had nothing to do with Maggie, and in fact she had lately felt afraid to be with her mother lest she 'inadvertently' hurt her. Her mother went to visit relatives, and the patient eagerly called her father to inquire how he and the children were managing, but recognized that she expected him to reprimand her 'for trying to be the mother of the family'. She noticed her own excitement and fear when she witnessed a friend's adolescent daughter behaving seductively towards him. And then she recalled that when her father had come to bed with her on the morning of her brother's birth she had felt great physical excitement.

With the recovery of this memory, she completely withdrew from sexual relations with Roy and began to overeat grossly. She spoke of wanting me to question and guide her and imagined herself a baby whose father led her gently by the hand. And she noticed herself seizing on Roy's most trivial remarks to feel unloved, cast out, and hurt by him. I interpreted these reactions as her saying, 'I'm a little girl interested only in food, not sex. I'm a baby who wants only guidance. I'm not a girl capable of winning a man. I'm only an unhappy child, despised and mistreated by my father.'

Sexual desire then returned in full force. Her pleasure in intercourse was greater than ever and she felt an active desire to have a baby. However, she now felt she should not talk about such things to me because I might find them embarrassing and shocking. She pictured me as leading a cloistered, ethereal life. When I said she preferred to consider me asexual, she thought of a teen-age neighbour boy who had been very upset to learn that Professor Einstein had a son because he had been sure that such great men were above sex.

She then began to report a series of difficulties at work and at home. She felt 'unable to understand' legal problems which formerly had been clear. She 'couldn't see ahead' to anticipate new developments during case argumentations. She had 'misconstrued the facts' in a political discussion with Roy, and he had chided her that she 'ought to know better'. She had been feeling anxious but found herself muttering doggedly, 'I won't think about it. It will go away.' I said that she wanted to deny her knowledge of the facts of sex. She soon recalled playmates telling her as a child how babies were made and her thinking, 'then he, and she, and everyone must be made that way'. For the first time she now remembered her mother's enlarged abdomen when she was pregnant with her sister and realized how completely she had ignored her mother's changed appearance. She had known that her father was implicated, but recognizing that he was in fact intimate with her mother had caused her to feel painfully betrayed. However, she had not long admitted to this knowledge, for, as she noted with amazement at her self-deception, 'I've never been able to think of my mother and father doing anything sexual. I always thought of my mother as utterly naive about sex.' When she and Roy had first rented an apartment, she had been sure her mother would be terribly embarrassed to see their bedroom.

Her motive for denying her parents' sexuality began to emerge. She admitted that whenever I took a vacation she felt a jealous rage at my wife and wanted to hurt her. With this admission, she became fearful that some disaster would befall her mother: a fatal accident would occur, or some minor illness would take a morbid turn.

She again fell into long silences and with limp fingers plucked weakly at the couch. She would



start to speak in a small voice only to say, 'I'm confused. I can't. I have to stop.' I said she presented herself as a child so weak as to be incapable of harming anyone and so frightened as to be spared blame. She agreed, saying she feared her feelings towards her mother and my wife. Then she remembered her secret fury when her mother had come home from the hospital with her newborn sister. Within a few days her sister had fallen seriously ill, apparently of an infected sinus of the neck, and had had to be returned to the hospital. She had been told the baby might die and felt herself to possess an appalling evil power. As she recalled these events, she felt the same horror as at that time. She said, 'This is why I've dreaded seeing sickness or suffering. I always felt to blame in some way.'

At this point she reported a pleasurable dream in which I proposed having sexual intercourse with her, but said she felt too ashamed to discuss it. She could only say, with the greatest reluctance, that the important feature of the dream was that I had taken the initiative. Before each session for the next several days, she found herself dwelling on the old idea that I was angry and brutal to her, and she would arrive for the appointment feeling morose, reproachful, and uncommunicative. She said, however, that the feeling of being mistreated by me lacked its former conviction and seemed rather contrived. Eagerly she suggested that perhaps she needed to feel abused to allay guilt for having dreamed of intercourse with me. But she still refused to amplify her sexual thoughts concerning me. She insisted tenaciously that the whole subject was forbidden and bad. To participate in any talk about sex, she said, was as improper as to permit her father to kiss her when she visited the family. I asked what was wrong with a father kissing his daughter. She was startled and bewildered. 'Well, when you put it that way, there's nothing wrong with it, I guess. Why, you're implying there is nothing sexual involved!' Her first reaction was relief, but soon she found, to her great surprise, that she was very angry as well. 'I keep wanting to say that his kisses certainly are sexual.' I then said that she wanted to believe that both her father and I had sexual intentions toward her. To express her own erotic desires would lead to the painful realization that they were not reciprocated, and she refused to accept this. She could not arrange for her father to love her sexually, but she could manage to feel beaten by him and so preserve an illusion of physical intimacy between them. At this she cried, 'It's better to be beaten than ignored.'

Following these interpretations she began to complain of feeling trapped in her marriage. She was dissatisfied and disappointed. How could she have been so blind to Roy's inadequacies? She regarded him as a stranger. She longed to go back to her childhood and live it over. She felt cheated of something essential. To have a child by Roy would be to sacrifice irrevocably all chance of getting the

best. The father of her child should be someone 'exceptional'. Then, shyly, she said that were it someone like me, she could feel satisfied. I said that she was still hoping that her father would give her a child, and that she seemed determined to remain available for him and accept no one else. She wept quietly, recalling her childhood feelings for her father. He had been unfaithful, but she would be loyal. She would never care for anyone else but him. Some day he would realize her worth and turn to her. 'But that can never be, can it? Oh, I feel so sad.'

Shortly after this, just past the 600th hour of analysis, she said that recently she had thought many times of the bitter scenes with her father over her refusal to eat her mother's soup. The real meaning of those incidents had dawned on her. 'It was a fight between my mother and me for my father. I was trying to get him to take my side, to say he loved only me. I wanted her to drop dead. You know, I really never gave up hope. It's true, but even a little while ago I couldn't have said it. I would have expected my tongue to be cut out.'

Here she summarized the elements of her conflict: the unrenounced desire for her father, the jealous destructiveness towards her mother, her guilt and her fear of retaliation. The relationship between these factors has become increasingly clear to her, and she appears to be attaining a new perspective of herself and her parents. For the first time she has begun to feel important in her own right and has been able to believe her husband loves her and to love him. She had a dream in which she returns a large, floppy pocket-book that she has taken from an older woman and eagerly seeks for her own trim, highly valued purse which has been misplaced. She interpreted this dream herself. The purses, she said, were female genitals, and that only as she has renounced the desire to destroy her mother's womanhood has she felt freer to develop and enjoy her own.

She feels much more relaxed with both parents. She sees them, not as tyrants, but as people who were not able to understand their children's passions because of their own emotional conflicts and who therefore resorted to moral censure to suppress disquieting attitudes. She has realized that they are both shy and timid and extremely appreciative of her interest and praise. They often seek her advice on family matters now and commend her wisdom and sensitivity. She now considers her elder brother not arrogant, but merely reserved, and acknowledges with admiration his loving patience towards his children. She no longer feels to blame for her sister's woes and has lost the need to save her.

One of the most impressive results of analysis to her has been the change in her feelings about work. Now it is a job that she does efficiently and decisively; not a task-master that she needs to appease. The need to expiate guilt and to seek the surreptitious pleasure of being the beaten girl having decreased, she no longer invites or assumes excessive



assignments but limits her efforts to ordinary work hours. Most important of all, she does not look to work to provide her greatest gratifications. While enjoying many intellectual interests, she longs for fulfilment as a wife and mother. This goal, so long feared and forsaken, now seems possible of achievement.

#### SUMMARY

The patient, as long as she was the younger of two children, felt that she was the beloved little princess of the family. Her self-centred contentment was bolstered by the illusion that both parents loved her more than they did each other. In this way, she postponed dealing with her oedipal conflict. But when she was 6 came the shattering evidence of an intimacy that excluded her. Her sister was born. She wanted to destroy mother and infant and have father to herself, but guilt, fear of retaliation, and the impossibility of attaining her aims caused these wishes to be repressed. Instead, she identified with her intended victims. She provoked attacks from her parents, became the harmless, innocent, injured girl, and in this way obtained, as Freud describes, both punishment and disguised libidinal excitation from her father. Regression to orality also occurred. By over-eating, she tried to obtain a substitute gratification for her frustrated genital urges. Obesity was a negation of her wish to be sexually attractive to her father and thus allayed guilt. At the same time, it probably expressed in oral terms a wish to be pregnant by him, but this has not been clearly established.

At 12, stimulated by her resurgent, pubertal sexuality, the mother's absence from home for the birth of the younger brother, and the father's sleeping in the same bed with her, her fantasy of replacing the mother revived, only to be frustrated again. The incestuous and destructive desires intensified in puberty were again transformed, as at the time of her sister's birth, into a need to be beaten. Now, however, the beating was not physical, as it had been in childhood, but psychical, and it was not administered by her father but by fate. She also elaborated an additional means of dealing with her oedipal mortification and guilt: she would become an intellectual boy, like her elder brother. By winning recognition in that way, she could assuage her injured self-esteem, deny competition with her mother, and still seek, in the guise of a boy, to win her father.

Her choice and manner of work were meant to show that she was both a bright boy who merited admiration, but was exploited, and a devoted sister who served others, protected the weak, assumed everyone's burdens, and sacrificed her own desires. With her intimate women friends she played the rôle of the loyal, obedient daughter betrayed by a cruel mother. With her lovers, she was the undemanding child, mistreated by an angry father.

In all these activities and relationships she felt

beaten by others. Feeling beaten fulfilled several functions. It was a demonstration that she was a passive victim and not an active attacker. It was a denial that she sought forbidden pleasures from her father. It was an avowal of weakness and non-competitiveness with her mother. It was a plea to be spared punishment since she had suffered already. But it was also an expression of her erotic attachment to her father and of her hope that he would gratify her. In feeling beaten she unconsciously insisted, 'My father does indeed have physical relations with me.' In her efforts to obtain this feeling by alloplastic involvement with persons in her environment, she resembled the 'acting-out personalities' described by Alexander (1) and Glover (8). By attributing her unhappiness to being beaten, she avoided seeing its true origin: that neither her father nor I had sexual intentions towards her. In this way, as Spiegel (9) describes in another connexion, she forestalled acknowledging the reality of her oedipal defeat and the necessity of relinquishing her oedipal attachments.

In analysis she sought to perpetuate the feeling of being beaten. When her own activity in arranging injury to herself was exposed, she began to experience her childhood sexual and destructive impulses. At that point she fell back on a second line of defence, as she had in puberty, by emphasizing her masculine strivings and minimizing the feminine. As this manoeuvre was analyzed, her oedipal desires, hopes, and fears emerged more fully, and she has had an opportunity to examine and resolve them, and make a new attempt at integration.

Freud thought that beating fantasies are more prevalent than is generally supposed, and Bonaparte regards them as even typical reactions of the young girl to her oedipal struggles. To some degree, the need to feel beaten and the pleasure in it persist in the woman's subsequent development. These tendencies, which assume pathological proportions in the masochistic perversion, can also contribute to various attributes, some negative, some positive, but all generally considered feminine. Among the former are the propensity to silent reproach, ready tears and martyred forbearance. Among the latter are willingness to bear hardship, generous devotion, and steadfastness in adversity. And even further away from pathology, these same tendencies, as Helene Deutsch (3) points out, may help prepare the way for that pleasure in sexual receptivity which is an essential trait of femininity in the normal woman.

#### A FOLLOW-UP NOTE

Since this paper was written, the patient has become pregnant. Although she feels pride



and happiness over this event, she has had an exacerbation of apprehension. This appears to arise from two sources. First, as a prospective mother she is again experiencing and examining her expectation of talion destruction for her oedipal hostility toward her mother's pregnancies. Second, reacting to the coming child as to a new brother or sister, her pre-oedipal fears of displacement and loss of love have been

reactivated. Feelings of being cheated, receiving less than her due, being abandoned, and longings for tender care, previously warded off with an attitude of defiant self-sufficiency, have come to the fore. With the working through of this material, the prospects appear good that she can arrive at the end of her pregnancy and of her analysis with a truer feeling of independence, a mother in her own right.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) ALEXANDER, F. (1930). 'The Neurotic Character', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 11.
- (2) BONAPARTE M. 'Essential Feminine Masochism', in *Female Sexuality*. (New York: Int. Universities Press, 1953.)
- (3) DEUTSCH, H. 'Feminine Masochism', in the *Psychology of Women*. (New York: Grune and Stratton, 1944.)
- (4) FREUD, S. (1919). *A Child Is Being Beaten*, *Standard Ed.*, 17.
- (5) — (1920). *Beyond the Pleasure Principle*, *Standard Ed.*, 18.
- (6) — (1923). *The Ego and the Id*, *Standard Ed.*, 19.
- (7) — (1924). 'The Economic Problem of Masochism', *Standard Ed.*, 19.
- (8) GLOVER, E. (1926). 'The Neurotic Character', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 7.
- (9) SPIEGEL, L. A. (1954). 'Acting Out and Defensive Instinctual Gratification', *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2.



# PSYCHO-ANALYTIC PSYCHOTHERAPY CONDUCTED BY CORRESPONDENCE<sup>1</sup>

## REPORT OF THERAPY WITH PATIENT HOSPITALIZED FOR TUBERCULOSIS

By

EDWIN F. ALSTON, M.D., SAN FRANCISCO, CALIFORNIA

About three years ago, special circumstances led me to undertake psychotherapy by correspondence with a patient who was then hospitalized for tuberculosis. This is a report of the experience that followed.

### THE LITERATURE

The use of writing as a means of communication in psychotherapy is not without precedent. Freud's correspondence with Fliess, his written associations to his own dreams and acts, formed an important part of his self-analysis. Freud's *Analysis of a Phobia in a Five Year Old Boy* was in part carried out by correspondence with the boy's father. A similar method is reported by Leo Rangell in 'Treatment of Nightmares in a Seven Year Old Boy.' E. Pickworth Farrow, in his *Psychoanalyze Yourself*, describes his attempt at self-analysis, in which, like Freud, he wrote down and analysed his own free associations. Because of his deafness, David Farber's patients have written their associations instead of speaking them, and Farber reports on his observations in 'Written Communication in Psychotherapy'.

Grotjahn in his Gimbel Lectures describes an exchange of letters with an adolescent girl during a year's interruption of analysis which began after the 112th hour because of absences of both patient and analyst. The patient initiated the correspondence and it continued without specific prearrangement. In his commentaries to the correspondence, Grotjahn states, he attempted 'to gain time with the patient, to support and encourage her, to keep her going, and to stay in contact'. At the end of a year, the patient returned for two hundred additional analytic hours.

From this experience Grotjahn decided that

'such letters can serve the purpose of keeping contact with the patient, and perhaps if done properly can continue the patient in the process of working and living through'; that 'such correspondence is limited in its usefulness, but has made it easier for my former patient to return later in treatment'. He believes that 'the letters did not play a great part in the later analysis. There was no evidence to consider them as building obstacles in the later progress of her analysis or in the formation of her transference neurosis'. He adds, 'In her associations later she stated that I was not much closer and not much more distant to her than when I was sitting in my office on my chair behind the couch during her analysis. I found this true in several other cases where interruption of analysis was indicated or unavoidable, and where correspondence would bridge the gap between the two different chapters in analysis before and after the interruption'.

At the end of the analysis, Grotjahn concluded: 'In terms of a transference neurosis, we may express the possible therapeutic value of such correspondence in a slightly different way. It is possible for a limited period of time to maintain by correspondence certain transference relationships. In such a transference relationship only general interpretations may be given. That means not at all that such interpretations must be shallow or banal. It depends upon the patient's resistance how much the patient can accept of such interpretation, and therein lies the great hindrance of correspondence, and the limitation of it. Resistances cannot be properly analysed by interpretations in letters. If the patient comes to the end of that period of willing working through which follows successful therapy, then the usefulness of letters will have

<sup>1</sup> This paper was considered for the Clinical Essay Prize for 1955 of the Institute of Psycho-Analysis, London. The judges found that owing to the nature of

the therapy the paper did not comply with the rules set out for the Prize. The judges recommended the paper for publication in this *Journal*.



reached an end. Such a period of working through can perhaps be deepened and prolonged and used as preparation for later work in the office.'

Added to these instances is the fact that psychiatrists at times may use writing or the telephone (Leon Saul) as a temporary means of communication or support. For instance, Freud wrote letters such as the famous note to the mother who was so concerned over her son's homosexuality. Karl Menninger lately expressed his general opinion that in quite a lot of experience he has had great conviction of improvement as a result of letters written to people.

None of the instances cited above, however, constitutes a deliberate attempt to do psycho-analytic psychotherapy directly with the patient by correspondence only, nor have I found any report on such a case. Therefore this report of psycho-analytic psychotherapy by correspondence should be of some interest.

#### INTRODUCTION TO CASE

From the voluminous material at hand after several years of daily correspondence between the patient and myself, I have selected those portions that deal with the patient's past history, current life situation, and initial attitudes towards the therapist, followed by three episodes of importance to the course of the therapy. The first reveals some important historical material, including the revival of repressed memories, and illustrates the patient's basic attitudes and response to therapy; the second concerns the patient's analysis of two dream elements that led to some understanding and partial relinquishment of a defensive regression; and the third points up other changes in the patient. Finally, I shall present excerpts from a series of letters we exchanged in order to illustrate the character of my interventions and the ways in which the patient responded specifically to these. This discussion, I hope, will show how such familiar phenomena of psycho-analytic therapy as transference, unconscious material, instinctual drives, defences, and so on, manifest themselves, though correspondence is the medium for communication; and will enable the reader to evaluate letter writing as a tool for a psycho-analytic type of therapy.

#### REFERRAL

The patient, Mary S., a married woman of 33, was referred by her physician, a specialist in diseases of the chest, who had treated her for several years for tuberculosis. He stated that Mary had had one lung removed because of tuberculosis and that she now had tuberculosis in the remaining lung. He stated that Mary's physical prognosis was very poor. He felt that her attitudes and conduct were dangerously interfering with her ability to cope with

the illness; that she was literally committing suicide; and that she was thereby making life intolerable for both herself and her husband. He expressed hope that psychotherapeutic aid might at least lower Mary's tensions.

#### INITIAL INTERVIEWS

When Mary was first seen in several office visits she was small and frail, weighing about 75 lb. Her voice was low and hoarse, suggesting a laryngeal lesion. A loud whistling sound came from her chest with every word and breath, and her respiration was obviously laboured. To hear what she said, one had to sit very close to her. She had brought with her a carefully written personal history, but emphasized only her hope that I would help her carry out her threats to leave home and live alone, although her mental and physical status made these plans obviously unrealistic.

My diagnostic impression was: a character disorder with oral traits predominating, associated with a marked tendency to somatization. The chances for effective psychotherapy seemed slight.

Shortly after these visits Mary had a haemorrhage from her remaining lung that required her immediate hospitalization. I saw her briefly twice at the hospital, and then discontinued further visits because the trips took too much time and the outlook for psychotherapy was poor. Thereupon Mary's husband, alarmed and desperate over her depression and suicidal behaviour, came and urged me not to give up, to do something.

Despite Mary's attitude when I had seen her, I had been struck by the personal history she had written and brought to the first interview. It showed a capacity for interest and understanding not otherwise observable in her behaviour. Psychiatric assistance, however, could not be given by face-to-face interview because office visits were impossible and the patient's voice too weak. The idea then occurred to me of trying to conduct psychotherapy by mail, if the patient were willing. Confronted with her moribund condition, there was nothing to lose and perhaps something to gain. In suggesting this course to her husband, I warned him that the procedure might be more disturbing than usual to the patient, and such disturbance harder to handle, without the safeguard of personal observation in the face-to-face interview. I also warned him of the possibility of unforeseen difficulties and risks. At his insistence, I consented to try the method if Mary agreed.

#### METHOD

Although Mary had initially expressed resentment over the referral and, as mentioned before, had then demanded that I help her in her wish for a separation from her husband, she agreed to this attempt at psychotherapy. I instructed her to write to me every day about anything that was of interest or concern to her. As the result of experience it



eventually became advisable to ask Mary to write at a specific time each day and to confine her work to one hour. Otherwise her choice of the time and the amount of writing provided an unnecessary basis of resistance.

I answered each letter. To begin with, I aimed at giving her a chance to ventilate her feelings about her illness, hospitalization, various doctors and nurses, and other people in her life, especially her husband. I tried only to encourage and support her.

One of Mary's very serious problems was obvious early in our work: her extreme dependence and her anger over lack of fulfilment of these needs; her resentment at the self-imposed limitations because of this dependence; and her resulting deep fear of retaliation and rejection—the reaction to these feelings of dependence and resentment. It was striking that every letter contained an apology for not doing well. In an effort to reduce some of the tension shown in these apologies to me and in fears about all her associates, at first I persistently pointed out to her how well she was doing in her work with me. I added that her repeated apologies anticipated criticisms which in fact I had neither made nor felt about her. In this way I tried to show her that just as she anticipated criticism that I had no intention of giving, so she may have anticipated criticism from others when none was given or meant. No doubt in some instances her defensive attitude, the result of anticipated criticism, in turn aroused actual criticism. We also made some effort to relate this anticipation of criticism and rejection to her earlier childhood-relationships, especially with her mother.

In contrast to her earlier opposition, Mary now turned enthusiastically to psychotherapy by correspondence. As the work progressed, a more psychoanalytic approach seemed possible, and this I continued. Later I shall present excerpts from our correspondence, to show this aspect of our work.

Our custom is for Mary to mail her letter, to which I reply, enclosing hers. She then returns her old letter with mine when she sends the next one. In this way, I have a file of all her letters and my replies; that is, a complete history of the correspondence.

At present, the work has continued for more than two years, with an interchange of five letters weekly, and a total of more than 800 letters written by patient and therapist.

#### COURSE IN THERAPY

Mary's first sixty letters, written over a period of about four months, chiefly concerned her current life situation, but also contributed other historical data besides the personal history she had brought to the first interview. In them some definite attitudes towards me as her therapist began to emerge.

#### HISTORY

The personal history summary which Mary brought to the first interview follows. It is worthy of note that the patient's formal education ended

with her graduation from high school and that, to my knowledge, she had no familiarity with psychiatric literature when she wrote this history.

'My mother was 7 years old when her mother died. She took over household duties, attended school, and helped her father who was partially lame. Her training was puritanical and superstitious. Aunts who guided her were narrow, bigoted, and unreasonably strict. At the age of 22 she married my father, then 32. It was the first and only marriage for both. I was the first child.

'I have vivid memories of toilet training accomplished by drastic measures and had feelings of horror at accidents.

'My favourite person was father. I loved going on hikes and fishing trips with him and was an eager listener to his stories of gay times as a young man. He welcomed me as an audience. Mother deplored this and was continually disgraced at father's behaviour and language. He gladly accepted her dominance of everything.

'My parents seldom displayed affection for each other or for their children. Full love was there, but the chief way of showing it was in working hard for us. Watching displays of affection between other children and parents was always embarrassing and considered silly. One exception and time of real comfort for me was during illnesses. My succession of ailments was almost uninterrupted. I never learned to approach my mother with personal troubles or confidences or give her any affection in a normal way. Away from home I brought ridicule on myself when visiting girl friends overnight and refusing to undress completely for night clothes.

'Repressed interest in my own body structure was reflected in childish pre-school drawings. Unable to explain them to mother, I was severely punished and paper and pencils were hidden away for a long period of time. They were favourite possessions and I was shamed repeatedly and filled with extreme feelings of guilt.

'My youngest sister provided an audience and outlet for experiments in exhibitionism which brought more punishment on myself. She was my opposite in all respects and I held feelings of resentment because of her favoured position with the family. I hated myself physically during adolescence. New clothing problems were torture. I tried to hide or wear heavy things. I hated even anklets and thin stockings.

'I developed a fanatical love for a woman school-teacher in the fourth grade, studied with a frenzy, worked on out-of-class projects, and earned straight A's as long as she was my teacher. I dreamed of this friend for years afterwards and the grades returned to low.

'The family maintained an embarrassed hush on all personal matters. I received instruction on menstruation with great emotional upset. Subsequent difficulty with periods was accompanied by such mental depression that medical help was



necessary to establish regular functioning. I hated all ideas of marriage, scorned all acquaintances who were married, and felt only disgust at any birth announcement. There were later friendships with boys, but all ordinary events and pleasures were overshadowed by my mother's suspicion. I was often accused of activities never occurring to my mind.

I considered my husband and his family ideal in all respects, enjoyed their company, but found long visits to them almost intolerable. I hated sleeping in their home and avoided it. I was unable to explain these feelings or understand them. They always treated me with loving kindness in spite of this. This family was strongly Catholic and influenced me in becoming a convert. I gave this my full cooperation although always feeling awkward in it, and miserable from my own mother's opposition. I was 18 and my husband 22 when married. The first night of our marriage was the most happy time ever experienced and was marked by absence of any sexual intercourse. Desire for this came later and had to be learned. Marriage was very happy in every respect. Liked children but dreaded experience of childbirth and put it off with financial excuses.

Dates: Married in 1939; tuberculosis in 1940, first child 1944, tuberculosis 1945, 1946. Spent remaining years fighting asthma and tuberculosis. Experienced one more pregnancy in 1950 which resulted in the death of the child and near death for myself.

I might add a few details that were brought out in the early correspondence. When, a year after her marriage, Mary was found to have tuberculosis, she was given the traditional bed-rest cure in her mother's home for nine months. After tuberculosis again developed within a year after the birth of her first child, she was in and out of tuberculosis hospitals numerous times. In most instances she left the hospital, protesting against the food, the medical treatment, the lack of diversion, and so on, often against medical advice. Likewise she frequently returned to the hospital at her own insistence, declaring she could not stand the conditions at home, especially her relationship with her husband Thomas. During the hospitalizations she had a number of operative procedures, including pneumonectomy, several thoracoplastic procedures, and the necessary revisions.

#### CURRENT LIFE SITUATION

During the first nine months of therapy Mary was in a hospital. After that time she lived at home and did not return to the hospital as a patient.

The three people about whom Mary has written the most and with whom she has felt greatly involved are Thomas, her husband; Dr. Collyer, an attending woman physician during some of her hospitalizations; and Ingrid, her daughter.

Years ago, Mary pleaded with Thomas, 'Love me like a mother'. Thomas responded by earning

enough to provide a living and to pay for Mary's numerous medical expenses, at the same time doing the domestic work when she was at home. Nevertheless all her early references to him bristled with indignation and anger. She accused him of being a hypocrite who concealed his selfishness and hostility, and said, 'I am in a position of waiting to get well enough so that I am no longer dependent on him or the hospital'. Or when he visited their daughter in a nearby boarding school, she was furious with him for being 'so selfish'. On the other hand, she would say, 'I know he doesn't hate me—and when I have believed this I have just been too miserable to think well'.

Among the numerous doctors with whom Mary 'cured' was a woman doctor who herself had had tuberculosis, Dr. Collyer. Until late in the correspondence, Mary constantly referred to this doctor in the most fantastic terms, reminiscent of her schoolgirl 'fanatical love' for the woman teacher. Even after she had not seen this doctor for some years, she still felt that the doctor was constantly concerned and thinking about her. For instance, hearing of the doctor's marriage, she reasoned that the doctor had had this rumour circulated in the hope of helping Mary to make a better marital adjustment. Mary kept wanting to be like Dr. Collyer and to work for her, and even took up the study of technical books on X-rays, anatomy, and pathology, and meantime she dreamed of buying a house large enough for the doctor to be able to live with her. She tried constantly to act as she felt the doctor wanted her to, and expressed overwhelming feelings of guilt, fear and anxiety at fancied failures, even though the doctor could not know about her behaviour. It is also interesting that the doctor's name duplicated that of the patient's favourite grandmother, and at the same time indicated her grandfather's occupation and the name of the town in which these grandparents lived. That is, paralleling the real names, for the doctor's name of Collyer, the grandparents, Colliers, lived in Collierville, and the grandfather worked as a coal miner. The patient herself tended to regard the doctor as the kind of mother she had never had.

Mary's daughter, who was 7 years old when Mary began therapy, was enrolled in a boarding school near Dr. Collyer's hospital. At the time, Mary resented having the child at home, but neither did she want to visit her at school nor to have her husband visit Ingrid. Early in therapy, Mary began writing to Ingrid, trying to help her with her problems in much the same way that I was attempting to work with Mary. Ingrid was to grow up like Dr. Collyer, and always do whatever the doctor wanted her to do, Mary felt, and once she wrote a note to Dr. Collyer in the form of a will that the physician should have Ingrid, if she, Mary, should die.

One might sum up Mary's attitude toward herself in the early correspondence somewhat as follows. No matter what subject she wrote about, or whether



she expressed love or hate, she always expressed feelings of intense embarrassment and of extreme apology. When her husband was kind to her, she called him hypocritical; she said, 'I would feel better if Thomas would be mean to me when I don't give him any affection'. Often she provoked him into restraining her, slapping her, or otherwise hurting her in his efforts to keep her from doing some such wholly irrational thing as walking out into the rain in her pyjamas. She left the hospital against advice on numerous occasions; she refused to consent to operations when it seemed she was risking her life to do so. She demanded and threatened to leave home or hospital and live by herself, when such a course was impossible. She tried to manoeuvre her husband into taking a lesser paying job for a doctor whom she herself wanted to work for; and she refused to move elsewhere or otherwise assist her husband even when the changes might have led to pay rises or promotions that would have benefited her quite as much as him, or more so.

#### EARLY ATTITUDES TOWARDS THE THERAPIST

In the initial person-to-person interviews Mary had demanded that I help her in her threats to leave her husband, but once the correspondence began a surprising change occurred. She began to display a desire to please in every way. To this end she worked hard and consistently at her writing, professed her love and desire to help and work for me. Instead of the thinly veiled accusations, in our interviews, that I was no help to her, Mary now constantly blamed and criticized herself for not co-operating, for not doing her work well enough. When she consciously withheld thoughts and information, she rationalized it by saying she might offend the therapist, or be misunderstood, or the material was too trivial or embarrassing. She constantly expressed fear of my disapproval.

What she did write about concerned her ailments and her difficulties with her husband. Interestingly, when I would ask her to go into her thoughts about such symptoms as her cough, allergic reactions, weakness of voice, or colds, she would detail them exhaustively, and then at the end announce that she no longer had the symptom. In this early period the patient began to read psycho-analytic literature, even subscribing to a journal. In addition to the correspondence with her daughter, which she modelled on our work, she undertook rather intensive therapy with a fellow-patient, and began to have fantasies of becoming my assistant.

These attitudes show Mary identifying with me in many ways that greatly resembled her identification with the woman doctor and that may have had great importance in her therapeutic work. They also suggest the character of her early relationship to her parents. Clearly, the woman doctor and I represented aggressors with whom she identified herself in her relationship to fellow-patients when she was

frightened of us. Second, the patient saw us as doctor-healers, and again there was evidence of her identification with us as healers. Again, the patient knew that Dr. Collyer had recovered from tuberculosis, and she found out that this was true of me also. Once she remarked that learning this had made it much easier for her to work with me because I could understand her. We were 'all in the same boat'. She also discovered that I had written several papers and parts of two books. She then began to look upon our work as a literary effort, more than once suggesting that it should be published. Often she would include verses which she wrote as a result of our work; for example:

Auntie Catalyst met an analyst,

Going to the fair.

Said the analyst to Auntie Catalyst,

'Let me show you there.'

Said Auntie Catalyst to the analyst,

'Your motives—are they many?'

Said the analyst to Auntie Catalyst,

'Indeed I haven't any.'

Finally, the patient identified with me as a reader. Reading was as much a part of our work as writing, and as noted above Mary extended her reading from the letters to psychiatric literature. While under the care of Dr. Collyer she had borrowed and read Gray's *Anatomy*.

In the hospital she often acted so as to exhaust herself and then suffered relapses; after such episodes she always apologized profusely, as if she had injured herself deliberately and had derived an illicit pleasure from so doing. She was extremely reticent whenever any sexual matter came out in the correspondence. If therapy was interrupted, she became extremely restless, and usually did something that resulted in an acute illness. She frequently described crying in reaction to our work, although the overt content of the material at the time hardly explained the crying. As she began to profess her love for me, she depreciated her husband more and more and evidently provoked him into hostile behaviour toward her at times.

Thus, Mary's relationship with me was placatory, self-depreciative, secretive, apologetic, embarrassed, reproachful. Her ambivalence was thinly disguised by the isolation of her positive and negative feelings, the former directed towards me and the woman doctor, the latter towards her husband. She tended always to identify with me in one or more of the roles as aggressor, healer, cured patient, writer, reader. And her attitudes towards me exactly duplicated those which she had previously held towards Dr. Collyer.

#### ELABORATION OF A THEME WITH RECOVERY AND RE-ENACTMENT OF EARLY MEMORIES

From her 62nd to her 133rd letter, a period of three months, a theme preoccupied Mary that led to her recollecting an early memory, while at the same



time her preoccupation with the theme and her reaction to the substantiated reconstruction served to re-enact the infantile experience in the transference neurosis, thereby demonstrating its existence and nature.

Mary began this exploration with the observation that evidently the onset of some of her physical complaints (usually involving the gastro-intestinal or respiratory tracts) seemed to be correlated with emotionally disturbing situations. In elaborating this theme, she became preoccupied with the bizarre eating habits of other adults and children, and responded with feelings of shock, horror, revulsion, disgust, and guilt. The interest with which she invested this whole topic is illustrated by her account of how a fellow-patient, a Negro woman, had formerly enjoyed eating a mixture of clay, baking powder and gunpowder.

'I have been thinking over about the clay, and recalling my feelings at the time my friend was telling me about the clay and the baking powder and gunpowder. You attribute my interest and sympathy with her to the fact that I must have had some kind of experience with clay which caused some sort of reaction in myself. I was not aware of this being the case, although your comments may apply to something else which I just remembered today. At the time of hearing this woman's story I was most interested and shocked at her story about gunpowder and its results. I felt that this would surely leave a lasting effect upon her, and knowing that baking powder has some similar ingredients, it might have added to her trouble which came later. The clay by comparison did not sound quite so harmful, but I was wishing that I knew something about all of these things. When people acquire a taste for something of this nature, I have always thought that their bodies must be lacking in some particular element which is not being supplied by the conventional diet.'

'I have never had any unusual eating habits, but I knew some people who did. When I was very small I had a playmate that I spent a lot of time with. After she moved away from our neighbourhood, my grandmother took me to her home to visit. The little girl was not present on this particular visit and we were with her mother in the living-room. At this time I heard a story of how little Marie was such a worry because she loved to eat laundry starch and the habit was so persistent that punishment did no good, and it was necessary to hide the box and to keep the child from eating the starch. It was the kind that comes in lumps. The idea sounded terrible to me. It must have made a deep impression upon me because I still remember this house that we visited, which side of the street it was on, and how the outside looked as well as the inside of the living-room. I was there only one time. I could not imagine how anyone could ever enjoy eating something like starch, and in large amounts. I can hardly stand the feel of magnesia in my mouth. I dislike anything that is not food.'

'In regard to the little girl who liked eating dirt, it seems to me to be another case like eating starch, but worse because of the filth and danger of disease from eating it. There is a certain amount of animal appetite in all of us, too, I believe, that can come to the fore when there are no inhibitions or other reasons for restraint. Perhaps when an individual eats dirt or clay or starch in the forms I have mentioned, they are being like a dog who eats grass, or cattle who like salt blocks, monkeys who dig salt grains from their fur and eat it. There are different sensations of pleasure that may be satisfied and there is some question about the actual necessity or need for it . . . why do pigs like to lie in mud or why do people like to smoke tobacco? In the case of cattle and salt blocks there is a recognized need for it. Perhaps there are other needs of animals and people that are not understood, and when some unusual behaviour shows up, it is not condoned because of its irregularity.'

'I have read that infants can do a good job of picking out a suitable diet for themselves if given a full choice of food and given enough days in which to eventually balance their choices. I believe if we could all grow up from infancy without ever hearing any derogatory remarks about anything, we wouldn't have the strong dislikes that we do for many things, and the bad reactions. I had a cousin who had an unusual craving for brown sugar, just like the child did for laundry starch . . . she always had bags of it and ate it by the handful . . . but no one thought that was disgraceful. I am sure that there are good reasons somewhere for these strange habits.'

Interwoven with her discussion of eating habits were related stories of Mary's cruelty to her little sister and to her cat.

'I have been trying to think of more things to go with the story of Marie and her home. Aside from the appearance of the house and the street, I cannot think of anything directly connected with this, but some other thoughts come to me. When I was about six or seven years old I told my sister to drink some perfume I found at the time, and she did. The feeling that this gave me has always been a vivid memory. The fact that I could so easily get her to do something as wrong as this. I don't know why I thought it was so terrible, but there was a terrible fascination in watching her take a sip of this perfume and wondering what would happen. I don't believe anything happened at all because I don't remember anything more about this. I never had any desire to do such a thing myself.'

'The memory made me think of another mean thing that I did one time to a cat. I had a piece of fish which the cat saw and smelled, and I was fascinated over how excited and eager the animal was to get the fish. It was ugly raw fish that my father had left in the cleaning scraps from his fishing. It seemed like an awful thing for any



creature to want, so I tantalized the cat to see how persistent it would be in reaching what it wanted. I spent a long time thinking up one arrangement after another, pitfalls, traps, passage way, and keeping the fish just far enough out of reach so that the cat was frustrated after following along with all my tricks. Eventually the animal went into a fit, and I was *really* fascinated and excited, watching that and feeling terribly guilty to think I had caused such a spectacle. This is all I remember of this. These memories made me start wondering why I had this cruel tendency, and one that seemed to be connected with eating or appetites.'

At first Mary denied memory of any eating problems of her own as a child and she was vague in recognizing any current aversions to food. As the above material was elaborated it became apparent that Mary did have current aversions to greasy foods and to various aromatic substances.

'I like all meat but not the fat; this part of it I can't stand. The feel of it is worse than the taste. I should say that the feel of greasy food in my mouth is a thing that is sickening to me and makes me want to squirm away and run. In eating rich soup that is not hot enough this has often been experienced when the fat rises to the top and consequently it feels the same way in my mouth . . . it is a terrible feeling. I get the same feeling from lipstick and from watching other people use it. The creamy foods in general I am not fond of, although if it has a tart taste as in jello or lemon pie I like it, and chocolate is all right because of the bitterness. . . . The taste and smell of alcohol is always sickening to me except in red wine. I cannot stand the smell or taste of cream of coconut as it comes in candy centres, but I like it in the hard crushed form. I always hate onions, especially the penetrating smell when they are cooking. I like butter because it is salted—not the unsalted. The most disagreeable thing beside the grease in my mouth is the feel of raw egg white. Pasty liver is very much disliked.

'Thomas has the habit of applying polish to his shoes with his fingers. I can hardly stand to watch it. I don't feel like this about handling other materials with my fingers. I don't mind using shoe polish, although I try to keep from breathing in any of the smell. This reminds me of the alcohol which is in hair preparations and other solvents and medicine you have to take at times. It always makes me wrinkle my nose and turn away. But I don't think anyone likes to breathe these things, or do they? I can't remember any eating problems from my childhood. I am extremely sensitive to all drugs and coffee. The cruel tendency comes out now in my playing and joking with people. I can elaborate on this if you wish.'

As work progressed, Mary could recall difficulties over food in her childhood, although she had previously denied having any. Throughout this period of correspondence her repeated references to

perfume, baking powder, baking soda, dirt, shoe polish, and grease were notable. Here was a group of traits including a morbid curiosity about eating habits, sadism, aversion to foods, and these traits were constantly mentioned in connexion with one another without any clearly recognizable link between them, and they were invested with a tremendous amount of energy, without demonstrable cause.

As this material was elaborated, and Mary became aware of food aversions and feeding difficulties, they seemed more and more to establish relationships between the various trends: her aversions to specific foods and aromatic substances corresponded with her gastro-intestinal and respiratory reactions to emotionally trying situations; her memories of cruelty involved the use of food and aromatic substances; the bizarre eating habits of others that so interested her paralleled her own problems over specific foods and aromatic substances.

Finally Mary described a memory which concerned her mother's advice to another woman on how to wean a child.

'These memories [of her treatment of the sister and the cat] made me start wondering why I had this cruel tendency, and one that seemed to be connected with eating or appetites. With this subject of cruelty on my mind, I remember the following experience which took place when I was in about the fourth or fifth grade in school. We had some friends who had a baby. The mother was trying to wean the baby from breast feeding and had discussed her problems with my mother. My mother advised her to put black shoe polish on her breast and make it disagreeable for the baby. I overheard them discussing the apparent success of this. I can't describe the shock and horror that I felt. Here the patient's writing became quite uneven with crossed-out words, etc.] Diabolical is the word I would use for these women now. Also today I have realized that it is likely that my mother did this same thing to me. My feelings about this are so violent, I could almost kill someone.'

Shortly after this, the patient wrote cautiously and fearfully to her mother to inquire about her weaning history. Her mother's reply confirmed her suspicions. She had used grease, turpentine, and pancake flour to wean Mary from the breast. Mary's reaction to this news was immediate and violent. She lost her voice, went to bed, and began to complain of abdominal pains, nausea, and vomiting. A fever and leukocytosis also developed and a diagnosis of acute appendicitis was made. Mary refused an appendectomy, demanding that the surgeon call me before she would even consider it. I went to the hospital to see her, and recommended surgery on grounds that appendicitis could not be ruled out, but she refused to consent, and stood firm, despite pressure from doctors, priests, and nurses. Fortunately, she recovered, as all signs



and symptoms soon disappeared. Her appetite then became hearty, and her preoccupation with bizarre eating habits and the related cruelty dropped out completely from her writing.

A week later she wrote:

'I am feeling well again. Yesterday and today Thomas brought some meals from home and I enjoyed them so much. He is going to do this more often. But I believe I may gain some weight now if I continue to enjoy eating as I am now. I had seemed to have my mind bittered up with some ugliness that I couldn't get rid of entirely before now.

'I was recently surprised to find a poem that I recognized as one that I found a long time ago and in a book I had forgotten, but this poem by A. E. Housman intrigued me so that I copied all of it and I have it now in my notebook. It is about the king, Mithridates, who died old, in spite of attempts of enemies to kill him by poisoning. He had so adapted and seasoned himself with all the bitter hardships that life could bring to him that he could not be conquered by any of the things that would have quickly destroyed those around him. When I first read this poem I didn't understand it as well as I do now.

There was a king reigned in the East;  
There, when kings will sit to feast,  
They get their fill before they think  
With poisoned meat and poisoned drink.  
He gathered all that springs to birth  
From the many-venomed earth;  
First a little, thence to more,  
He sampled all her killing store;  
And easy, smiling, seasoned sound,  
Sate the king when healths went round.  
They put arsenic in his meat  
And stared aghast to watch him eat;  
They poured strychnine in his cup  
And shook to see him drink it up;  
They shook, they stared as white's their shirt;  
Them it was the poison hurt.  
I tell the tale that I heard told.  
Mithridates, he died old.

'The author seems to feel sardonic about the world in general, and in his pessimistic philosophy is advising his friend to take heed of the lessons he can teach owing to his bitter experiences, and to acquire such a tough shield for his feelings that he will be able to endure the greatest hardships. Drowning one's trouble in ale is pleasant but not lasting. His advice to prepare for the very worst and so not be hurt when rough times come is reasonable enough, believing as he does that he must justify God's ways to man, and that the world is essentially a bad place. He seems to want to strike back at the Almighty. I would hate to have such a warped and hopeless outlook as this, or one that is so uninspiring, which is perhaps a better description. Considering this is such a big job to learn to meet life's problems in a confident way, it would seem

unnecessarily sad to have to do this in a spirit of vengeance, and in the belief that hardships are the will of God, and with man accepting no responsibilities at all for the state of the world. But I will have to admit that in some of my most difficult times, my thoughts have not been so free from beligerence—they ran something like—"Toss me another—I dare you just one more—let's see if I can get knocked out." I'm not sure whom I was addressing, just everything in general. I suppose this is why I enjoyed the story about King Mithridates.'

At this point I went on vacation. Thereupon Mary, against medical advice, left the hospital and went home and remained there from that time on. Within a month the correspondence was resumed.

The concurrence of the revived memories, the confirmation by her mother's letter, and Mary's physical complaints all suggested a relationship between these factors.

These early memories provide a model for a genetic explanation of the association of the various traits whose concurrence was noted above. On the basis of the weaning experience which Mary discovered (and which had a pattern that typified the mother's relationship to Mary), one would expect to see in Mary mistrust for others, with strong oral sadistic tendencies or defences against these traits. And this was clearly to be demonstrated in the transference neurosis. During this period of correspondence, the patient was obviously trying to please the therapist, but later correspondence showed that the apparently positive transference covered tremendously aggressive and suspicious attitudes towards the therapist. For example, Mary's active attempt to do psychotherapy with a fellow-patient was clearly an acting out of several fantasies at the same time: one of assisting me and the other of taking over my function as a therapist.

I believe that such identifications and other defences in the transference neurosis led Mary to recover the memories described. The lack of transference gratification resulted in a regression, along the lines suggested by the revived memory, which served the purpose of displacing her sadistic impulses from the therapist to the memory and at the same time enabled her acceptably to make further disguised demands on the transference relationship. This was shown, for instance, in her manoeuvring the therapist to pay her a hospital visit that certainly did not serve her ostensible request, because she still refused permission for the appendectomy. Her physical reaction, too, may have served the double purpose of a disguised reproach, and at the same time it amounted to turning inward the aggressive impulses that might otherwise have been directed towards the therapist. In connexion with the memory and a corresponding situation in the patient's transference reaction, Mary's attack of appendicitis seems to have been a true reliving of her earlier experience.



### A LONG PERIOD OF PREPARATION FOR THINGS TO COME

Following the recollection of her weaning experience, Mary began to eat more adequately, and for the first time for years she began to gain weight. Her attitude towards therapy began to change in the sense that she seemed to take a more spontaneous interest in analysing her dreams and examining her motivations.

Now her self-depreciative and self-destructive tendencies emerged clearly in the therapeutic situation as well as in her past and present life. She left the hospital against medical advice while I was away on vacation; she repeatedly asserted that she was going to stop writing; and she became extremely provocative toward Dr. Collyer, the woman doctor, to whom she made urgent telephone calls. In bitter arguments with her husband she would drive him into violent upheavals, and then become extremely remorseful and self-depreciative. She began to recognize: 'I would be in a bad condition if I couldn't occupy my time in writing or dreaming'; and she became intensely interested in 'how to determine when I am running away from myself'.

As these problems confronted her, the next two hundred letters dealt constantly with the demonstrably active part that she herself played in the development of her own misfortunes. Her self-destructive tendencies were reproaches and at the same time thinly disguised demands which left her weak and helpless. Examination of her behaviour and fantasies showed her that she was constantly trying to avoid feelings of helplessness by attempts at reversal in her fantasies and in some of her actions. Her libidinal and hostile impulses terrified her greatly, especially the fact that she felt both towards the one person as object. She attempted to handle this to some extent by directing her positive feelings towards those at a distance, namely toward Dr. Collyer and me, thus trying to avoid as much as possible the inevitable feelings of anger and frustration toward anyone with whom she had close contact, such as her husband or daughter. Whatever anger and frustration she did feel toward the woman doctor and me, she seemed to take out on her husband, but when the feelings became too intense she would act out in such a way as to try to get away from them. For instance, when her anger towards her husband rose to an intolerable pitch, she would start manoeuvring to get into a hospital, or would walk out of the house, or become extremely ill.

This constant juggling of her feelings and fantasies had to be examined time and again. For example, without apparent reason the patient's letters might show an extremely servile attitude towards the woman doctor, and intensified desires to take care of her, work for her, be like her. Simultaneously Mary would become extremely hostile towards her husband. Further examination of these feelings

might lead to such signs of extreme anxiety as wheezing, coughing, sleeplessness, changes in the drainage of her wounds, and dangers of urgent hospitalization. Next, would come her conclusions: that her husband had homosexual tendencies; that the woman doctor was homosexual; and that she herself was homosexual. Finally, it would emerge that she had been extremely suspicious or angry with me; and the whole series of reactions then seemed, at least in part, defensive manoeuvres against these feelings in the transference. It was necessary to show her how her fear of all these feelings led her into behaviour that harmed her.

Thus, exactly as her various impulses toward the woman doctor and her husband invariably led into fantasy, identifications, reversals, and destructive acting out, so the same series of events could be observed in the transference reactions. The patient described in her history great anxiety and attempts to suppress or avoid curiosity, exhibitionism, masturbation, cruelty; she related the need for such measures to her mother's intolerance and disapproval of the derivatives of these drives. Similar impulses now, especially towards the therapist, invariably evoked the same prohibitive measures which she assumed that I demanded. It was demonstrated to her that she herself constantly imposed these restrictions upon herself, and that she did so in accordance with her childhood conceptions about her mother's expectations.

### 'PINK-PIG—SHIP DREAM'

Exactly on the anniversary of the day correspondence had begun, the patient described a dream. First she spoke of her 'love':

'It makes me want to spend the rest of my life doing something to show my thanks. . . . In view of all this it is certainly annoying and frustrating to have my dream work play such tricks on me as it has been doing recently. We know that you have been represented by little boys and by the colour blue in my dreams. Now after puzzling over the colour pink in a couple of dreams, I see that this must be a new disguise for you. I feel that I have reached the ultimate in disguises when I dream that I came on the deck of a big ship and am introduced to a very nice-looking pig, one that is pink all over. Its legs are unusually handsome and longer than those of other pigs, and its nose is not the proper shape for this animal either and makes me think of Thomas's nose. After this I see a smaller pig in the distance, and it is grey and not outstanding in any way.'

At the end of the dream Mary described

'a small grey craft built differently from all the others. It seems to be built for speed and for some serious purpose, such as a battleship. It moves past everything else with such speed that I exclaim over it, because it seems impossible for any kind of a ship to move like this through the water. I wonder what



is making it work and if it has something other than ordinary engines. With its disappearance in the distance this dream is ended.'

In her associations about pink, Mary expressed considerable confusion as to which colour stood for her and which for me, pink or blue, finally concluding that pink stood for her. The fast-moving ship stood for her in her impatience to get somewhere, she felt, and the pig might also stand for her 'wanting to dominate everything'.

Several days later she added,

'I forgot to put down one detail of the ship dream. In the last part of it, the person with me was pointing to a special structure of some kind in the distance. The bottom of it was blocked from view, but I was told that there were really wheels on the bottom of it, in spite of the fact that it was just another ordinary-looking small boat or building which belonged there near the water or in it. I got the impression that it was important for some reason, or was something other than what it appeared to be. This sounds like something that you have said to me which I have been unable to see.'

There was no more mention of this dream at this time.

For another six months Mary's tendency to avoid situations which might cause her to feel helpless or inadequate or might arouse libidinal or hostile impulses was analysed, as well as her attempts at control when they did arise. There was also more emphasis on the action of these mechanisms as they appeared in therapy.

Suddenly, six months after the above dream (and exactly a year after her recovery of the weaning experience), Mary wrote:

'Yesterday I discovered a page in an autograph book which solves the mystery of the pigs in my dreams. While you were away [vacation] two such dreams occurred, and since the last one left me with no doubts that it stood for you, I could no longer rest without doing some work. I had to know why I would associate you with such a thing as a pig. You probably remember the old dream of my meeting the pink pig on board the ship. After all this time I see that it stood for you then, too. So the other day I decided that the explanation was in a verse that often ran through my head—although this verse was not a complete explanation. The words are "I love you little, I love you big, I love you like a little pig."

'In one of my recent dreams there was a mother pig lying on her side, and several babies who needed to be fed but were unable to nurse because the nipples of the mother had been heavily coated with something greasy, resembling vaseline. It seemed that my mother had done this and I was standing in her kitchen talking to her feeling so angry I could hardly talk—saying that she knew that was the

wrong thing to do, it was bad for the babies, and I was scolding her in the severest way. I felt so outraged as I looked at the pigs. They had no colour except perhaps grey, but the most outstanding thing about them was their strange appearance. The two or three little ones as well as the mother were like very delicate bodies of creatures not even well developed enough to be born. They were soft, not moving at all, had thin transparent skins, and were certainly a sad-looking sight. I picked up one little one to put it close to its mother, but it was no use. The possibility of nursing which they needed to keep them alive had been ruined (my mother may stand for you here, going on your recent vacation). My mother made no response at all in this dream, and that is all of it.'

The patient then described her reactions to my recent vacation—anger, disappointment, determination to terminate therapy. Her associations to the two dreams brought up her feelings of anger and disappointment at age 3½ when she saw her mother nurse her little sister; she then first developed trouble with a draining ear (it lasted for thirty years and stopped when she developed a draining chest), which gradually required her mother to turn all attention from baby sister to herself.

Another group of associations to pig began with 'three little pigs', included 'butchering', 'baby pig in a fire', 'suckling pigs', and closed with 'big bad wolf after little pigs'. She ended the letter with, 'I can't go on. I guess the last one is it. I'm sorry. I feel awful,' but her next few letters returned to the theme. The butchering idea led to thoughts that she would like to beat her father to a pulp, a dream of holding a big butcher knife over her head to frighten men away, and a conclusion that this is her attitude towards all men—that she wants to frighten them away.

After numerous other associations, she finally concluded that she had been afraid of being both a pig and a wolf.

'Thinking over such a parade of doings, all done with a disguise that looked innocent, or so I must have hoped . . . is enough to make me curl up and die now. Disguises, such as the little pig, which has been removed bit by bit recently and which has caused such terrible sadness and crying as I did it for you . . . because I felt that here I was losing you, because you could not possibly have any respect for me now or like me at all. I felt that there would be no more pleasure for me anywhere, with everything gone.'

Several days later she adds:

'In continuing with my work Friday, with the associations to the pig and the wolf, I only want to add that after my surprise over the discovery of this interpretation, or rather my embarrassment, I decided that I have no reason to feel disturbed and that this was probably what you were expecting. So I am glad it is cleared up now. Woof!'



Having uncovered this fear, the patient now seemed ready to continue the theme about men and boys which had started with her associations to pink pigs and wolves. In high school she had been called 'Woofus' and this name had appeared in the senior year-book under her favourite song, 'Comin' through the Rye'. When she at last recalled the words of the song she had once memorized, she became extremely mortified, declaring she had never been consciously aware of the meaning of the words.

'First I will tell you the line of the song. The last line is "Yet all the lads they smile on me, when comin' through the rye". I had remembered it with very little changing. You ask me to tell you what it means to me. The song in its entirety means something like this: If you happen to meet someone you like as you go along, and give them a little loving, what's the harm in that? Every girl claims her favourite boy, and in my case the choice seems to have been still unmade.'

Thus the 'pink-pig—ship' dream occurred after a long period of analysing Mary's self-destructive and self-restrictive tendencies in both her past and present life and in the therapeutic situation. At first the patient dismissed it with hardly an association, but six months later she took out one element, namely the pink pig, and exhaustively analysed the meaning of this dream symbol to her. In the process she revived some earlier memories and analysed the elements primarily in reference to me, the therapist. Two themes develop, one dealing with who is the pig, Mary or I, and the other with whom pink stands for, herself or me. Her associations finally led her to realize her fear that she was piggish, devouring, and demanding; the awareness of this fear brought some relief, and she could then take up the other theme, after first describing her anger, fear, and avoidance of men. Facing her fears that she might be a pig and a wolf apparently enabled her to face her interest and curiosity in men and boys, although still with considerable embarrassment.

It is interesting also to note that the manifest dream was presented in two parts. One contained the reference to 'pink pig'; the other, which she appended several days later, referred to the 'special structure' with the 'bottom blocked from view' and 'wheels on the bottom of it', said 'to be very important for some reason'. The second part was not mentioned again. It is obvious that the first part has oral features (pig) and phallic aspects (pink) as well. It is highly probable, *although we have no* associations from Mary, that the second part of the dream referring to underparts and wheels more clearly refers to phallic impulses. Considering that she omitted the second part in her initial report of the dream, we might assume a strong resistance to analysing phallic tendencies, which are acted out in forgetting. On that basis, her telling the first part and forgetting the more purely phallic aspect of the

dream parallels and indeed anticipates her associations to the first part of the dream, as they explore exhaustively the oral components (pig) and come to an embarrassed halt when thoughts of pink lead her to realize her curiosity and interest in men and boys. Thus she came twice to an impasse: once in her narration of the dream and once in her associations to it, and each time the obstacle involved phallic aspects. For Mary, this obstacle contained a dangerous subject.

#### A DANGEROUS SUBJECT

Although her associations to the pig-ship dream clearly showed Mary relating fears and feelings to me, my counterpart from the past was not so clear. Moreover, the theme of her interest in men and boys seemed much too threatening to Mary. As soon as she had brought it to the surface, she pushed it down and reverted to her old patterns of secretiveness, displacement of her feelings upon some distant figure like the woman doctor, self-disparagement, and so on.

Then she suddenly learned that Dr. Collyer had moved from the hospital where Mary had known her, and Mary reacted to this as a loss of contact that further disturbed her. The resulting defensive immobilization, accompanied by a clearly growing tension, flared up into an intense expression of anger and suspiciousness toward me. She accused me of having something to do with Dr. Collyer's moving and of concealing it; she denounced me bitterly for not answering personal questions. Her oculist maintained two separate offices, one in the same building where I had my office. She bitterly accused me of trying to shunt her from this office to the one some distance away. These expressions of anger and disappointment terrified Mary, and she began to take steps which could have led to her hospitalization. At the same time she visited the fellow-patient on whom she had tried out psychotherapy and arranged to begin treatment by correspondence. I interpreted these moves as attempts to reverse the doctor-patient relationship and thus gain control, and continued the interpretation of these defensive manoeuvres for several weeks.

Perhaps in response to my interpretations, Mary stopped trying to be hospitalized again and to do psychotherapy by correspondence with the other patient. She then reported a dream that took her several days to express:

'I have been worrying so much that I am tired out from it now and not capable of doing any very good thinking at all. All I want to know is how you are feeling and if you are all right. I have been like this since I wrote my angry letter to Dr. Collyer. I could do a lot of writing now describing a terrible dream from Saturday night. But it is only a record dream, like a tragic drama of what has happened. No direct harm came to me or to you in the dream, but everything else was blasted out of existence.'



This happened so close to us that my only thought was like a pleading cried out over and over and over again, like "no, please . . . not us, please . . . not here, please". It was like witnessing a bombing raid and being untouched while almost in the midst of it. That afternoon I had been thinking of how a child feels when his parents quarrel or ruin his home . . . no one but the child knows what the feeling is . . . it has to be experienced to know it. It is like any other great experience. True understanding of it is not reached by any amount of effort in mere observation. Now I know what the feeling is. This late in life I have learned this. . . . The thing I probably worry about is having bad thoughts run away with me. It is not that I think they are bad, except in the event that they do run away with me. But perhaps that is what I really wish for and so that is what I have to fear. . . . I had the miserable feeling of being torn in half . . . of feeling helpless to do anything about it. I couldn't do anything about it. Something had to happen, something done by someone else, something as terrible and shattering as was depicted in my dream from last Saturday night to bring about this change in me. Now there will never again be the worry and the fear and the torment from the impossible situation of loving and wanting and needing two different people at the same time . . . a grown-up child still needing its father and mother and unable to rest completely anywhere because as an adult such loyalties are hard to combine.'

Along with this report, Mary described physical collapse, fever, cough, changes in her chest drainage, and frantic visits to her chest physician. She continued:

'In that dream there seemed to be three people sitting on a tiny island and feeling the vast ocean stretched out before them. They were watching a beautiful sunset. This I think is one of the wonderful experiences which people who love each other can share together with such happiness. With the lowering of the sun all other colours in the sky were changing so that with each minute there was a whole new lovely picture to see. Two of the people in the dream seemed to be girls or women, and the other a man. Just as the sun sank below the horizon and it was time for the night . . . the day being completed . . . there was a terrible explosion heard, which shook even the onlooker (myself), standing in the background. Then in looking out into the ocean I could see some huge structures—fine-looking buildings, all spread out in the distance, and all partly completed. Then there were more explosions, one following another, and with each one I saw one of these structures crumble and disappear. This was terrifying to watch because with each one I felt that I might be the next one to be blasted away. Then I was aware of holding a small child in my arms while watching all this, and my fear was for both of us. The remaining details of this dream I have already

described in a previous letter to you. I believe I am one of the three on the island . . . you and Dr. Collyer being the other two people. Also I believe the onlooker represents me . . . accompanied by you. I put this dream down today in order to complete my writing about my relationship with two doctors as parents and how changes have come about, and how my present feelings can be explained. Now if I should go about grieving or exhibiting anger, indicating that I still want my mother and father, indicating that I resent any attempt to have either one or the other favoured (I have taken the liberty of considering myself as a child that is wanted, which is phantasy based on more phantasy) . . . if I therefore reveal my true feelings to anyone other than you, and if you reveal to anyone else any indication of some important changes in my feelings, there would automatically be something like this as I see it: "What has happened to Mary, and all her clammering for Dr. Collyer?"'

She went on to describe, in tones of mortal terror, her fears that everyone would conclude that her no longer 'clammering' for Dr. Collyer meant she had turned to me; and this would inevitably lead to my being ruined professionally because of Dr. Collyer's jealousy and envy.

Subsequent letters have concerned further associations to this dream; further expressions of great fear that this would all end disastrously for me; and finally a recollection of early feelings of devotion and fear toward her father, associated with dread of her mother's disapproval. She recalled that on a fishing trip her father threw a small snake into the fire, and she watched this with terror, feeling that if her father could do this to a helpless little snake, he could also do it to her.

I think that Mary's own words best express the meaning of this dream and its possible significance:

'The three people on the island might be my mother and father, with me, before my sister came. The explosions—with the complete shattering of everything which may have been my world—all this would be what I experienced upon finding that my mother had become a traitor to me—I did not expect nor want this new thing to happen. It came as a surprise. Now actually I remember some of the things in connexion with the discovery of my sister's arrival. But none of the memories are anything connected with the baby. I only remember that I can look back to a certain day, and upon this day I first knew I had a sister. I remember arriving from home after being away for some time—probably at my grandmother's. I came into the house. I believe I was happy and excited . . . things at home have always seemed new after I had been away awhile but I am pretty sure that my family had not moved into this place while I was away. Still I have the feeling of noticing everything as though this might be some affectionate greeting from my mother—I found her in the front room. She seemed very glad



to see me. It seems that she may even have hugged and kissed me. But I remember nothing else, except that I think I walked through the house—the rooms were in a row—with the kitchen last. In the kitchen I took special note of the cabinet—one with high glass doors. I remember the fancy paper pasted on them—exactly how it looked and which side of the kitchen it was on. In this cabinet my father always kept a sack of salted peanuts, upon which he helped himself from time to time. I had some too sometimes. Then I went outside to the back yard. This is all I remember.

'What could there be about this memory which causes it to remain and come to my mind as often as it has in the past—and usually when I think of my sister? Why would I pay attention to parts of the house at this time—not a single thing outstanding in any of this to explain its importance. And as for my sister, I do not have a single memory of her at all when she was a baby, or very young. But I definitely know what day it was that I came home and found out about her. I'm sure my mother would not have told me about her ahead of her arrival. My mother was not like this. But regardless of this it seems likely that her coming would have been a shock to my feelings, I having been the only child. I do know that when later I do have memories of my sister, they were memories of doing something mean to her. Such things that my hate for her must have been tremendous.' [Mary describes provoking her sister into mischief, telling on her, and then, when the parents were punishing her sister, standing in the background watching and listening.]

'If my jealousy caused a severe reaction in my childhood—one which made me feel that my mother no longer meant what she had meant to me before—then this would be like my experience with Dr. Collyer. There I felt that she had done something bad—something which changed my life—something that made me turn to you. I wonder if my looking at the cabinet and thinking of my father and his peanuts was a way of comforting myself at this early time? I wonder if this is when I began turning to him so exclusively? The woman with the child in the dream might stand for the time when I was her *only* one (or his).'

I would add to Mary's analysis only that the dream may also refer to the primal scene. Oedipal material, obviously coloured with oral attitudes, is rising to the fore.

#### AN INTERCHANGE OF LETTERS

The following excerpts from a series of letters illustrate both the character of some of the therapeutic interventions and the patient's reactions to them.

After the patient's terrifying dream of the three persons on an island, she began to express great terror that the therapist's work with her gravely endangered him. She wrote:

'I don't know whether this would be of much concern to Dr. Collyer or not. If I should be so foolish or perhaps so ungrateful as to treat her badly or in a different way, it would undoubtedly bring criticism upon you. If perchance some plans of hers would be upset there would be resentment. Since there are no such plans evident, especially in connexion with me, neither would any criticism or resentment be open or direct. There would only be incidents, all coincidence, just as everything else appears to be, and if something affected you unfavourably you would have no defence. Nevertheless, I would feel that I am the one who caused you to be hurt . . . I feel all right now and I don't feel so afraid any more. I feel that everything will be all right because I feel in control. I think this is a new feeling which I have never before had in my life. The fear and illness which it has caused was due to the amount of responsibility which was suddenly thrown upon me. It was too staggering for a while and I could only think of the consequences if I failed. You would indeed be hurt . . . there would be hurt everywhere but for you most of all . . . you ask in what ways. In almost every way that a person could possibly be hurt. You might as well be annihilated outright. This was too much for me to contemplate.'

My questions about what caused her to feel such alarm over my safety met with only vague, evasive answers. The patient was really struggling with fears arising out of a dim awareness of her own libidinal and aggressive impulses, and trying to overcome them by attributing them not to herself but to me. This helped temporarily to diminish her own fears and self-reproach, but aroused fears that I would be the victim, instead of her. She then tried to avoid the whole problem by changing the subject and consciously withholding some of her feelings and thoughts.

In this instance she wrote:

'Sometimes I purposely leave out comments which I would not be able to explain at the time because of wanting to cover so much—and I do not want you to misunderstand any of it.'

She goes on to say that if she puts down some of her thoughts I would get the erroneous impression that she was angry, and remarks 'so it may be better that I do edit'. She expresses further fear about my being in danger with respect to Dr. Collyer and concludes by remarking that she feels that it is time for her to stop her work, that it would be best for me to do so.

I replied:

'In this letter you give your rationalizations for weeding out and conclude, "So it may be better that I do edit". If you withhold information or description of feelings and thoughts in order to avoid "misunderstanding", how can we possibly come to an understanding of vital information that



we don't know? How can a jigsaw puzzle be put together when a lot of the pieces are held under the table? You are afraid that I will misunderstand, that I will think you are angry. If I should misunderstand or think you are angry, why should that cause you to be afraid and to avoid it at the expense of your therapy? With whom has misunderstanding and anger brought the pain which you anticipate from me? You still seem to fear that I am in some danger from Dr. Collyer, or that you are in some danger. What do you feel the danger is? How is it that you feel it would help me for you to stop your therapy? I wonder if there is a part of you that feels it might help *you* to stop?'

The patient responded by an extremely evasive introduction, talking about some ideas for educational films, etc. But finally at the end of her letter she commented on a fantasied visit to Dr. Collyer:

'The way I behave then is going to be extremely important to you. I expect to give honest answers, not show any sign of resentment about anything, and act as normal as possible. I can be very good at acting when I have had enough time to bury my feelings. Otherwise I might take off someone's head, and that would not be wise. As long as I can stay well enough to stay out of hospitals, I have nothing to fear. That is the one big way that I could be hurt, to land in the hospital and be forced to do some things that I don't want to do. Here I am relatively free and no one can touch me. But you are not so isolated. When the doctors hear that we are still working together and I appear to be contented, after saying that I wanted and needed so much from other doctors, it spells only one thing. I am getting all the satisfaction I need from you. Then the wheels will start turning if they have not already; and when one person wants to hurt another, they choose the thing that can hurt the most. Just as the most important thing to a patient is his medical care and hospital, the most important thing to most doctors is their practice. And here we are not dealing with ordinary grudges; even those are handled by Dr. Collyer with a relentless vengeance which I have been shocked to witness. When the attack was not on me I forgave it, but it implanted fear and caution in me. Now I must make you realize that we are dealing with a force that is unreasoning. It seeks no reward for itself other than the joy of vengeance. I *know* this. Every effort of yours to gain recognition will be surrounded by danger. It is *awful* for me to think about and I feel like holding my arms around you and telling you not to make a move. If you do believe me, I know this is going to create tension, but that is better than to not tell you. Imagine how I feel, being the cause of all this and of the other outlandish things that have taken place. We must accept it as a challenge and go ahead, but *what* an outlook! And it will not work for you to try to calm and mislead me with other questions. I am calm now,

and you need have no concern about that. I will keep trying to write as you wish.'

At this point I thought it might be helpful to structure the problem for the patient at some length:

'In your letter of January 10, as in the last few weeks, you have been expressing a tremendous fear and have attributed it to the possibility that I might be in danger as you saw it. I have been trying to understand this fear and these thoughts have come to me as a tentative explanation. I wonder how they strike you?

'We have been working during the last few months to understand your fears about having wishes and daydreams, and writing about them in our work. This finally resulted in the dream about you and two other people on the island and the terrible explosions, and after this you became very fearful of my safety. Now with the freeing up of the inhibitions to your thinking, your thoughts have turned more towards me and they have been expressed as wanting things from me, etc. They have been further expressed in the form of expressions of love or desire, as manifested by your speaking of love, sweets, kisses, etc., in your letters.

'Now with the emergence of some of these wishes, I wonder if there is a revival of old feelings that you are doing something wrong. You remember when you were going with Thomas, you felt signs of disapproval from your mother with what you described as veiled accusations about sexual activity, etc., although you described yourself as being innocent. Also it would seem that there might be something dangerous in having daydreams of loving or wanting, as suggested by your memory of your father's handling of the snake. If these thoughts have any validity, we might then speculate that in having thoughts about me, there is a fear that I might respond, and that you would then be in danger of criticism on the one hand, and on the other in danger of something from me.

'Carrying the analysis a little further, it would seem that the dreams and the fantasies that you are having about me now are bringing in their wake the same fears of criticism and danger that you felt in childhood, and because of the fear of criticism and danger, there is a need to prevent yourself from having such thoughts, not only with your father when you were a child, but with the boys when you were older, with all men, and now we see it in connexion with me. This time you visualize the danger as coming from Dr. Collyer. We have seen before that in many ways you have regarded Dr. Collyer as a substitute for your mother, and just as you felt criticism from your mother, you now expect the same from Dr. Collyer. But there is nothing that has been *done* that would warrant such criticism, nor do you need have any fear that you will be taken up on any of your thoughts and feelings that you express to me. I will not act upon them. That is understood.'



Mary's answer ignored this letter except for a couple of sentences:

'On the basis of your letter, I would have to decide that I have been mistaken on practically everything I have talked about regarding the doctor and her relationship to me, or that I must simply keep on remembering that you do not write about the things that you are actually thinking. . . . The only fear that I have had is of what you would really think of me in loving you and wanting you as I do and in writing the foolish things that I do. They are to cover up the serious things that I have not had the courage to say.'

I then pointed out that, aside from the above sentences, 'it would appear from your notes in this letter that you would prefer to ignore my letter speculating on your fear that I might act rather than analyse, that you would rather consider it as reassurance than explanatory. It would appear that you have a preference for not analysing these fears but rather a preference for accepting them at their face value.'

The patient replied with some notes in the same vein as her previous ones, but the same day wrote a second letter which she rushed off to me with a great sense of urgency:

'I have to tell you what is wrong. I can't stay like this any longer. To-night after mailing your letter I have felt so awful that I want to die. It is myself that I am feeling so afraid of. I feel so guilty it is horrible. . . . The misery and the doubt in my own strength has made me feel forced to get away from it by projecting it on to you—and now it has come out. . . . I am feeling sick and crying so much this evening for my cowardice that I would rather be dead than go on thinking about having done this to you. If you have thought well of me before, then you would not think so now. No one could take such criticism and such meanness as I have given you . . . my fear has not been about you but about me. I have been driven to such madness of desire for you that I must have looked for something to give it some ease. . . .

'I always have felt that you might be surely disgusted or chased away if I wrote the thoughts I was really having about myself. I had to try to pretend I was too "proper" or too "good" or too "exceptional" to have such wishes or to speak of them. When you have told me and told me I could write whatever I wanted to—yet I have not. I want to cheat. I want to do anything that makes me feel good—I would devise any kind of excuses if I could manage to love you directly.

'Right now I am taking up more additional time of yours—while you are being good enough to ask practically no pay. And all the time, deep inside of me, I am wishing and hoping and speculating and feeling like a criminal because of my intentions. I've told you about loving and wanting you but that is not the same as saying that I would go to

any length to have you. I have been doing just this. I will have to stop it now, or certainly tell you what I am doing—so you will not be so deceived. . . .

'It is so hard to say to one's doctor—even without facing him—that I want to break every rule that exists—I want to forget everything that is decent. To talk as though you would ever allow me to do this shows how insane I am. It brings me to the status of an animal, and for a person with so much pride, it *would* take a long time to admit what I am. Will talking about it change it? This is what you have taught would help. You have said to "look for the realization of *some* of your dreams—no one can realize *all* of them". Yet I do not listen or care—I want and behave as though it must be *all* of them—using no reasoning. I *have* to be sensible, somehow, but how? I don't want only part of them. I don't want substitutes. . . . Have you wasted all your time because of me and my failure to listen to you? I'm begging you to help me—and all it amounts to is asking you to take me away—desert my family—let me marry you—anything to love you more. Now I wonder if I haven't finally reached the point that *you* were bringing out several days ago. That letter would take care of anything I have said in this letter. "How I have nothing to fear because you would never respond to my feelings." This must mean that I either do not believe you—or else I am angry for your saying you would not respond.

'Now I can see what it is—I *am* angry. I knew it on the day that your letter made me feel so depressed. You *did* understand so well . . . and I have done so much to avoid agreeing with you.

'All that I need to tell you about are the feelings and thoughts that poured through my head after reading that letter. There was no stopping them—after awhile I managed to redirect their force so I didn't recognize them—but not in time for me to forget. . . . It was just like being forced to say to myself: "That settles that. Now it is finished. I can look for some new interests, since I feel deserted now." Then I called up friends. I felt detached and empty and lost. . . .

'I guess this is all now. I feel horrified at myself. I am managing to look at myself now but it is still so hard that it is just like having to look out at a landscape through a tiny little hole in a screen. To observe it more freely would be unbearable to the eyes. I wanted you to be just like me, to grab me, but I didn't want to be reminded that you wouldn't. . . .

I wrote to the patient:

'In your last letter you describe feelings of desire and love, and these feelings seem to you to be ones that no one would tolerate. Feeling this way, you attempt to avoid or prevent such feelings by skirting around them, focusing your attention on other subjects, etc. But having done this, you feel that you have deceived, and this causes you to feel guilty and



afraid of rejection, which is the very thing that you were trying to avoid. Under what circumstances, experiences, or with what feelings could you have developed such fear of wanting and loving? How was it that you developed this particular method of avoiding or preventing these feelings?'

The patient responded:

'Your letter asks where or how I developed the fear that acts to repress my feelings when I am experiencing such wishes as those expressed in my letter of January 19. You ask how it was that I developed this particular method of avoiding or preventing these feelings. By this time, in looking back at everything, I seem to find only one answer.

'Everything points to my mother, and my fear of her, and when these fears show up in my dreams they take the form of a train roaring towards me, or a cyclone, or explosions, or something of that nature, something so terrifying that it equals the fear that my mother put into me by her punishment. I have not written about any kind of punishment that would fully explain this, because I am unable to remember it. Only those punishments which were very unusual come out in my dreams. But I know whatever other restraint my mother would put upon me, she would certainly accompany it with a severe beating. I know enough of those and when they were administered to leave no question about their being given to me when she was most anxious to have me remember my wrongdoing. Her warning was always, "I'll blister you," or "I'll skin you alive." Afterwards—I could never enjoy freedom without guilty conscience, and if I let myself be punished in my thoughts the punishment would be appropriate to the things I was doing to bring it on.'

This exchange of letters, I believe, illustrates for the reader the nature of my interventions and the patient's responses. As the excerpts illustrate, my interpretations were interpretations of form primarily; when interpretations of content were made, these were quite general. This deliberate pattern was based on the considerations that there was a time interval between my making an interpretation and the patient's reading it; and so I could not always rely on being prepared to make specific content interpretations based upon a clear knowledge of the patient's thoughts and feelings, and to check myself by her immediate associations. Thus the patient herself was obliged to make her own content interpretations.

#### CURRENT STATUS OF TREATMENT

At the present time therapy continues along the lines outlined above. It consists of intensive working through in which the dynamics of Mary's behaviour and feelings in the transference neurosis and in other current situations are analysed and related to one another and to her past.

Much more needs to be understood about Mary's regression associated with the discovery of her illness with tuberculosis in 1940. To what extent and in what ways was this a function of the physical illness on the one hand and of psychic conflict coincident with her marriage on the other? As was noted earlier in this paper, Mary was very reticent in her references to masturbation, genital sexual feelings, and related fantasies. Thinly disguised associations to these topics, appearing now, are related to the transference neurosis and require further analysis.

Therapy is being continued by letter writing. I believe that Mary could now tolerate the physical and psychological strains of face-to-face therapy, and indeed she herself in recent letters suggested such a change. Notwithstanding these considerations Mary is making progress in treatment conducted by letter writing and I see no indications for change at the present time, especially when it would involve considerable time and financial problems. These difficulties would, I think, offset any advantages which the more direct face-to-face therapy would achieve at present.

Although much work remains to be done, Mary's very important gains so far, as detailed in the next two sections, show how much has been accomplished by letter writing.

#### OUTWARD CHANGES OCCURRING DURING THERAPY

Many changes took place in Mary's life during the first two years of therapy by letter writing. I do not attribute all these changes to therapy, but it may well have caused some and may help to explain others.

When Mary began therapy her physician considered her almost moribund; she had symptoms of coughing, wheezing, haemorrhage, insomnia, palpitations, anorexia, and inability to gain weight. She had a long record of leaving hospital or home against medical advice. Her actions constantly jeopardized her health. Her relationship with her husband was all but intolerable, and she refused to have anything to do with her daughter, literally evicting her and keeping her away from home.

By the end of two years of therapy she had been at home more than a year, and her acting out had considerably diminished. The sputum had become negative for tubercle bacilli. She had gained weight, and her voice improved noticeably. The coughing, wheezing, and other symptoms had decreased. She had become more understanding and tolerant of her husband. She enjoyed having her daughter at home during the recent Christmas vacation, and felt rather sad on the girl's return to boarding school. The patient had given up her unrealistic attachment to the woman doctor, and could regard the other doctors and her husband in a more matter-of-fact way, rather than as the ogres which she formerly needed to picture them as being.



## DISCUSSION

This paper has dealt with an experiment in psychotherapy by written correspondence. The patient had a serious organic disease, with physical disabilities requiring her hospitalization. Our correspondence revealed that by her own actions she was jeopardizing any chances for cure, perhaps to the point of endangering her life. She could hardly tolerate her husband, who from her own description appeared to be loyal, kind, and devoted. She could not stand her 7-year-old daughter. Her illusionary attachment to a woman doctor and fantasies about this woman helped to prevent her from adjusting herself more realistically to life. None of these observations made sense when viewed in isolation or in connexion with one another.

When the patient was enabled to explore her fantasies and her memories, it was disclosed that she had had similar experiences and attitudes in her past. Her lifelong series of ailments had begun, in particular, when she was about  $3\frac{1}{2}$ , the time of her sister's birth. She loathed her little sister, as she later loathed her daughter (and herself). She herself had played an important and seemingly irrational part in the development of her ailments. She had had, according to her own words, a fantastic attachment to a woman teacher, corresponding with her current attachment to her woman doctor. She had shown signs of cruelty in childhood towards her sister and pet cat in much the same way that she felt her mother treated her, and also as she treated herself, her husband, and her daughter. She had feared and distrusted her father, and felt that both her mother and father drove her to this feeling, which was now repeated toward the woman doctor and Thomas, her husband, the substitutes for her parents.

As therapy progressed, all of these childhood difficulties were expressed again and again, with the therapist substituted for now one person and now another. She greatly desired to please the therapist and feared destruction when she felt she had not pleased him. She conducted a raging battle with all her impulses, apparently in order to avoid displeasing the therapist. Her defences centred chiefly around identification, denial by fantasy, acting out, displacement, somatization, and regression. As these defences were analysed, some of the old fears recurred and then subsided, and new fears developed that required an intensification of her defensive processes. When these were analysed in their turn, it appeared that the patient had become fearful of her erotic fantasies about the therapist, and these fears could be traced back to the fantasies and associated fears that she had had toward her father and mother. Gradually she came to understand these fantasies; they no longer seemed to have the same dreadful meaning for her; some of the defences were dropped in therapy and to a less extent with her husband and child. The woman doctor was no longer required as a substitute for an angry mother, and regressions into illness seemed

less imperative. With this came a general improvement in her physical and social status.

Thus in psychotherapy by written correspondence it has been possible to uncover the patient's attitudes in the present and in the past. The patient developed the identical attitudes toward the therapist that she had described as having had towards mother, father, and sister in the past. As she experienced these in the transference neurosis, her memories of the past became more vivid, and previously forgotten experiences and fantasies were brought into consciousness, thereby making possible a more exhaustive understanding of the historical antecedents of her present illness.

In the transference neurosis, it was possible to identify her various defences and the impulses towards which they were directed. The most prominent impulses and those first uncovered seemed to be mainly oral in character. As the transference neurosis developed, it appeared that added to the oral fixations was a negative oedipal complex (e.g. as manifested in feelings for the woman doctor) and regressions to oral modes of action and reaction as defences against a positive oedipal complex. As these defences were analysed the patient's libidinal cathexes became more object-directed and some genital strivings became apparent in the transference neurosis. With the diminution of the counter-cathexis which she was expending in her defensive actions, the patient's physical health improved, as did her social relationships.

Thus it appears that the correspondence therapy brought to light genetic, dynamic, and economic factors; unconscious fantasies and memories became conscious; and some dynamic, economic, and structural changes occurred.

The excerpts from the interchanged letters are given to illustrate my technique and the patient's responsiveness to it. The above discussion has indicated some of the considerations that may account for the patient's reaction to psychotherapy; they are based on the assumption that she reacted to the interpretations and that psychic conflicts were reduced.

Other considerations, however, may have been of importance in her responses.

She apparently identified herself with the therapist as a healer, 'cured' tuberculosis patient, writer, reader. In this way, apparently, Mary found in her therapist a potent narcissistic object choice as well as an anaclitic one. In other words, here was a situation in which the therapist served the function of an ego-ideal and showed Mary that recovery was possible and how it could be achieved. Competition with this ego-ideal may have spurred Mary on to progress.

Furthermore, Mary had fantasies of uniqueness to the point of thinking that I would write a novel about her. This suggests her ideas of returning to a state of bliss like her happiness when there was no little sister. That is, she may have improved in



good measure as a result of her fantasy that she was the therapist's favourite and most interesting patient. Her compliance in writing (and her guilt) may have been a function of this feeling. Throughout her work she mentions wanting to do things for the therapist (producing). These ideas may refer to a pre-sister stage. Around the age of 3, children often do things for their parents, and not out of a wish for autonomous feeling. Her compliance may thus represent a restitutive effort and an attempt not to take responsibility for her own feelings. Her draining chest and her voice impairment may have had the same conflictual introjective and projective significance with respect to Dr. Collyer and me that the draining ear once had had with respect to her mother.

Conducting therapy by correspondence in this case presented both advantages and disadvantages. The chief difficulties centred around the necessary interval of delay between letters. Almost always, two or three days intervened between the patient's description of an affect-laden reaction and her receipt of my reply. Furthermore it was somewhat like working in the dark, in the sense that the patient's absence made it difficult for the therapist to pick up cues so important in therapy, such as facial grimaces, tone of voice, posture, attention, and to guide himself by the patient's associations. For these reasons treatment by letter writing is more subject to misunderstanding than is treatment by direct personal communication. In addition to these obstacles, therapy by letters encouraged the patient to think of herself as working before two audiences, comparable to what a patient in regular therapy might feel if he knew that his associations were being tape-recorded. Not only did Mary express hope that I would write a novel or biography about her, but the most casual inspection of her letters arouses the suspicion that they were written with an audience in mind besides the therapist, and from this source came her self-consciousness of creating something. There is another tendency, I think an inevitable one in correspondence therapy. In ordinary therapy thoughts and feelings are described by vocalization. Secondary elaboration is unavoidable in vocalization, but writing by its very nature, almost by definition, cannot fail to have a greater degree of secondary elaboration. Anyone who has had his spoken words recorded and then written out has been horrified by the relative lack of organization and coherence. In the instance of Mary's letters, there can be no doubt that her thoughts and feelings were subjected to great distortion, as shown by careful grammar, syntax, spelling, and organization.

I am sure that the patient did use all of these limitations in the service of resistance. Therefore I would agree with Grotjahn's statement:

'It depends upon the patient's resistance how much the patient can accept of such interpretation, and there lies the great hindrance of correspondence,

and the limitation of it.' Because of these considerations, I would also agree with Rangell, who supervised by correspondence the parental handling of a 7-year-old boy with nightmares. Rangell comments on the problems of correspondence therapy: 'It would be well to reaffirm the obvious dangers involved and the need for caution with regard to the method, long-distance correspondence, which of necessity had to be used in this particular clinical instance. It is indeed the rare situation in which circumstances would all conspire . . . to make this feasible . . . . In the more usual situations which we meet in our everyday practices, it would be unthinkable to consider carrying on through this thin and insecure line of contact.'

On the positive side of the account, therapy for this patient, at least for a considerable period, would have been impossible under other circumstances. Her serious illness and her weak voice precluded the possibility of the usual interview type of therapy. Putting aside these factors, I suspect that the usual type of psychotherapy would still have been impossible for Mary because of her extreme hostility and her overwhelming fear of it. Until recent months it was impossible for the patient to have any sort of person-to-person relationship without being overwhelmed by extreme hostility, guilt, fears of rejection, and masochistic acting out. Throughout the entire period of her therapy, Mary was able to maintain what she regarded as a fairly safe positive attitude with only two persons, the therapist and another physician with whom the patient had no current contact. This attitude of course served the purpose of covering up her underlying hostility and fears, but it also enabled her to maintain what was for her a necessary distance from the therapist while she was trying to face some of her problems.

As for the letter writing, it may well have other dynamic meanings. For instance, the patient was evidently fixated on a narcissistic level, with little object libido. She could invest a tremendous amount of libido in her writing. In any way it amounts to projecting herself upon the writing, a desirable choice when compared with the closer face-to-face therapy, where she might have felt far more acutely threatened with fantasies involving introjection of the therapist or damage to him by projection. For example, this oral sadism might have been expressed in fantasy, in terms of the danger from person-to-person interviews, of communicating tuberculosis to the therapist. These considerations may be important also in explaining the different attitudes the patient showed in her face-to-face interviews and in her writing.

One further consideration may have importance. Every psychiatrist and analyst has probably had the experience of a patient bringing written material about his history, dreams, feelings. Dynamically such presentations may be interpreted as gifts, although then are frequently interpreted as resist-



ance. But they may have another significance. In the child's early years, parents often prohibit by speech the child's spoken words and acts. During these early years the child has not learned to write, and therefore writing (or reading), without having been subjected to parental prohibitions in early childhood, is in some instances relatively free of superego restrictions. For instance, although Mary described severe punishments suffered for all types of behaviour, and although her history emphasized her mother's punishments for drawings, nevertheless she stated in her letters that her father always encouraged her artistic or graphic communications. Apparently her mother's admonitions against drawings did not apply to writing, for throughout childhood and adulthood her writing of poems and satirical character sketches earned the amusement and awed admiration of her entire family, including her mother, and it seems to have been the least inhibited of Mary's activities. These considerations, if valid, would help to explain the paradox of the patient's writing things that she resists saying; and this device might therefore in suitable cases have some broader application in psychotherapy and psycho-analysis.

For Mary, writing and reading had perhaps a special meaning. Throughout the later stages of her illness with tuberculosis, Mary showed not only self-destructive tendencies, but also a marked determination to survive. This I think is suggested by her actual survival, despite an extremely poor prognosis and several major operative procedures. In psychotherapy this determination manifested itself as a partial motivation, at least, for the intense efforts which she applied to her letter writing. The written word itself has a survival significance in the sense that it carries with it the meaning of immortality. That Mary felt this comes out in her letters, as in her remark: 'Take these miserable words of mine and publish them. That is all I am good for. That is all I live for.'

On the basis of one case I am reluctant to speculate about possible indications and contraindications for psychotherapy by correspondence. However, in Mary's case, several factors stood out in the decision to try this approach and in her responsiveness to it.

No other form of psychotherapy was physically possible because of her illness, hospitalization, voice impairment. Her initial lack of verbal communicativeness, mixed with resentment, and the character of her hostility would have severely hindered the close relationship of face-to-face therapy. Her determination to get well, the relative freedom from superego restrictions, in writing, the ability to libidinize her writing, its survival significance for her and the relative absence of other object cathexes, the free time and inclination to invest energy in her writing—these all contributed to help her respond to this type of psychotherapy. Perhaps the absence of any one condition might have brought a less successful result.

#### CONCLUSION

The use of letter writing as a means of communication in psycho-analytic psychotherapy presents many difficulties and limitations, and therefore letter writing is certainly not the method of choice in any case where person-to-person communication is possible. Nevertheless, the experience in this case suggests that a psycho-analytic type of psychotherapy can be accomplished, using correspondence as a medium; and that for some patients under certain circumstances it may have an advantage over the usual face-to-face interviews.

#### POSTSCRIPT

After this paper was submitted for publication, and early in the fifth year of therapy (which continued along the lines outlined in this paper), Mary died of congestive heart failure. An autopsy report indicated that 'she had a tuberculous empyema of the right chest with multiple tuberculous lesions scattered throughout her left chest. She had a Gaffky 10 sputum. Next to the pulmonary condition, the most marked thing found at the autopsy was a marked cor pulmonale due to the right ventricular strain imposed by her left pulmonary fibrosis.'

#### REFERENCES

- (1) *The Origins of Psychoanalysis*, Sigmund Freud's Letters to Wilhelm Fliess. (New York: Basic Books, 1954.)
- (2) FARBER, DAVID J. 'Written Communication in Psychotherapy', *Psychiatry*, 16, 1953.
- (3) FARROW, E. PICKWORTH. *Psychoanalyze Yourself, A Practical Method of Self Treatment*. (New York: International Universities Press, 1948.)
- (4) FREUD, S. (1909). *Analysis of a Phobia in a Five Year Old Boy*, *Standard Ed.*, 10.
- (5) GROTHJAHN, MARTIN. Jake Gimbel Lectures, Stanford University, 'Six Letters to an Analyst by an Adolescent Girl', 2 March, 1955.
- (6) Historical Notes: 'A Letter from Freud,' *Am. J. Psychiatry*, 107, 1951.
- (7) MENNINGER, KARL. Personal Communication.
- (8) RANGELL, LEO. 'Treatment of Nightmares in a Seven Year Old Boy.' In: *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, Vol. 5.



## DISCUSSION

### CONTENTS:

FACTS, COINCIDENCE, AND THE PSI HYPOTHESIS

by Charles Brenner

COMMENTS ON DR. BRENNER'S

'FACTS, COINCIDENCE, AND THE PSI HYPOTHESIS'

by Jule Eisenbud

A COMMENT ON E. SERVADIO'S

'A PRESUMPTIVE TELEPATHIC-PRECOGNITIVE DREAM DURING ANALYSIS'

by David Brunswick

REPLY TO DR. DAVID BRUNSWICK'S COMMENT

by Emilio Servadio

## FACTS, COINCIDENCE, AND THE PSI HYPOTHESIS

By

CHARLES BRENNER, M.D., NEW YORK

In the past decade there have been numerous articles recommending the usefulness and appropriateness of analysts' assuming that it is possible to have unconscious knowledge of future events (psi hypothesis). Some of these articles have appeared in reputable and widely circulated psycho-analytic journals. As yet no word has appeared in print to question this proposal that what used to be called 'occult' be adopted by psycho-analysts as part of their working armamentarium of scientific hypotheses. Lest this silence appear to express consent, it is proposed in the present article to discuss certain practical and methodological problems involved in the application of the psi hypothesis to psycho-analytic therapy and theory. As an example for discussion, a recent article (Eisenbud, 1955) has been chosen in which an account is given of a clinical experience with an analytic patient which its author considered to be an instance of unconscious foreknowledge. The author treated the incident as such in his therapeutic work with the patient and published it as a paradigm of the value or usefulness in analytic practice of assuming that such foreknowledge does exist.

As a preface to consideration of the validity of this proposal one may consider first of all on

what basis the author concluded that he was dealing with a psi phenomenon. In order to do this it will be necessary to review the pertinent facts on which his conclusion was based. These are as follows.

We are told that the patient awoke early one morning 'with a strange feeling of certainty that when he went out to the park he would somehow see a strange bird called the worm-eating warbler. He recalled nothing definite by way of dreams, and was not sure but that this feeling was not part of a dream he had had just as he awoke.' The patient was said to be 'a highly expert, semi-professional ornithologist and bird-watcher' whose knowledge of the habits of the bird in question 'almost excluded the possibility' that he would in fact see the bird in the park that day as he was so sure of doing. Nevertheless, the patient went to the park and within a few minutes did see the bird. Moreover, his observation was confirmed by fellow bird-watchers, as evidence that he did indeed see the bird he had expected to see.

The following facts concerning the bird's habits are adduced to explain why it was virtually impossible that the patient might expect to see a worm-eating warbler in Central Park, New York, on the morning when he did see it.



'... the worm-eating warbler, a very distinctive bird with well-known habits, was to be seen in New York's Central Park on only one or rarely two consecutive days a year as it stopped briefly during the course of its annual seasonal migration from South America to its nesting grounds in New Jersey. Some years it would not appear at all. Usually only one or at the most two of these birds would be reported seen on these days and then nothing more would be seen of them until the following year, when again several of the many bird-watchers who haunt the park would notify the Linnaean or the Audubon Society that it had been observed during its annual stopover in New York. What made it almost a certainty that the patient would not see the worm-eating warbler if he prowled about the park on this day is that its annual visit had been observed and duly reported by several bird-watchers almost two weeks before. Never had it been known to make a second visit during the season.'

On the basis of the facts in the above exposition the author assumed that his patient's expectant certainty that he would see the bird that morning was due to unconscious knowledge of a future event (psi phenomenon). The reasoning which led him to this conclusion may be summarized as follows.

1. The probability that a worm-eating warbler would appear in Central Park that morning was extremely remote: 'Never had it been known to make a second visit during the season.'

2. The probability of *that* patient feeling sure he would see the bird was also extremely remote, since as 'a highly expert, semi-professional ornithologist and bird-watcher', who was aware that the bird had been reported less than two weeks before, he *knew* how unlikely it was that the bird might appear in the park a second time.

3. The probability of 1 and 2 occurring *together* was consequently so remote as to make it implausible that they did so merely on the basis of chance.

4. Just such phenomena can be explained on a non-chance basis by the psi hypothesis, whose validity 'has been demonstrated over and over again under the most stringent laboratory conditions during the past eighty years of research in this field'.

5. Therefore the psi hypothesis is the most suitable explanation of the incident related by the patient.

This train of reasoning and the conclusion

based upon it may be questioned on two counts. The first count is factual, the second methodological.

As to the first count, the standard reference work for bird-watchers in the New York area is *Birds Around New York City: Where and When to Find Them*, by Allan D. Cruickshank, published in 1942 and sponsored jointly by the American Museum of Natural History and the Linnaean Society of New York. This book gives the following pertinent information concerning the 'Worm-eating Warbler: *Helmitheros vermivorus* (Gmelin)'.

The bird's breeding grounds are within 20 miles of Central Park, chiefly to the north, though it also breeds to the east and west of the city. It 'usually arrives on its breeding grounds in a marked wave between 10 and 15 May. A week later the peak of maximum abundance for the entire year is reached. . . . *Stragglers are passing through up to 6 June*' (italics mine). The fall migration begins before the last week in July and continues through September, but 'the southward movement is generally so light that it frequently goes undetected'.

According to Cruickshank, therefore, a bird-watcher in Central Park might expect to see a worm-eating warbler at any time during a period of 21-26 days after it had first been reported in the spring. In addition, he might see the bird on its southward passage at any time between 25 July and 30 September, although his chances of doing so would be distinctly less than in the spring. This is decidedly contradictory to the statements concerning the bird's habits which were given in Eisenbud's article and which formed the basis of his concluding that his patient's reported experience was an example of psi phenomena.

In view of this contradiction it was felt wise to confirm the accuracy of the information in the last two paragraphs by discussion with a competent authority. The one selected was John K. Terres, editor of *Audubon Magazine*, official publication of the National Audubon Society, whose offices are in New York City. The worm-eating warbler was no stranger to Mr. Terres, who promptly and unqualifiedly categorized as incorrect the sentence, 'Never had it been known to make a second visit during a season.' On the contrary, he explained that it might be seen in the park at any of the times indicated by Cruickshank.

If one refers now to the summary of Eisenbud's reasoning given above, it is apparent that



points 1, 2, and 3 are not consonant with fact. Just the contrary, indeed, for

- (a) the probability that a worm-eating warbler would appear in the park that morning was rather good, since it had first been seen less than two weeks before;
- (b) the probability that 'a highly expert, semi-professional . . . bird-watcher' would feel sure of seeing the bird was also rather good, since he presumably *knew* that the chances it would be there were fairly good;
- (c) the probability of (a) and (b) occurring together was consequently far from being as remote as the material reported by Eisenbud would have led one to believe.

The importance of checking facts hardly needs to be emphasized. This is a striking example of it. A five-minute telephone call to check the facts reported by the patient in this case would have made clear the unsuitability of this incident for the purpose to which it has been put in lecture and in print, and would in addition have led to a fuller and more accurate understanding of the analytic material. That is to say, assuming, as seems likely, that the patient knew of his analyst's interest in psi phenomena, the incident as reported by the patient, with all its misstatements, whether conscious or unconscious, must have included the expression of important transference wishes if it was not indeed primarily determined by them. For example, the wish to please his analyst, for whatever reasons, might well have been an important, unconscious motive in the patient's mind at the time of the incident which went undetected because of the failure to check facts and the assumption that the incident was an example of psi phenomena.

Now for the question of method. When should a coincidence of event with expectation or dream be considered a psi phenomenon and when a mere chance occurrence? Eisenbud suggests it should be considered the former when the probability of its having occurred by chance is ridiculously or implausibly low. The difficulties with this suggestion are several.

In the first place it is possible to calculate that very many events of everyday life are of an order of probability which must be expressed in numbers that are very small when compared with the numbers which are familiar from everyday use.

What is the probability that a given automobile license plate will be seen at a given intersection in downtown New York? The answer is that the probability coefficient would be very small, perhaps of the order of  $10^{-6}$ , a very small number indeed by some standards, but not at all small when compared with the probability of very many, perhaps most of the events of life which we unhesitatingly attribute to chance.

In the second place, it is difficult or impossible to calculate the probability of many events or coincidences by *any* known statistical method. The necessary norms or constants are unavailable. This is particularly and obviously true for *psychic* events like premonitions, a fact which is of special significance for the present discussion.

Indeed it should be apparent that if one insists to begin with on the correctness of the psi hypothesis, and if one consequently makes a habit of having premonitions and predictions about the future or encourages such a habit in one's patients, one will manage often enough to find coincidental facts to reinforce the belief in the hypothesis that one may mistakenly imagine he is *testing*. This is particularly true if one is at the same time ready to disregard whatever facts might dispute or contradict his already fixed conclusion.

In final summary one may repeat the following points.

1. In psycho-analysis, as in any science, facts which can be checked should be checked, particularly before publication in a highly regarded and influential journal with a wide circulation.

2. Useful consequences, e.g. therapeutic ones, may result from checking facts.

3. The application of the laws of probability to many aspects of experience is difficult or even impossible, as when the values of relevant norms and constants are unavailable.

4. By misapplying statistical laws one can make coincidences seem to prove very nearly whatever one wishes to believe, e.g. the psi hypothesis, particularly if one ignores or fails to elicit facts which would contradict such beliefs.

5. It remains to be demonstrated that there is any practical advantage to be gained from the application of the psi hypothesis in psycho-analytic therapy. Attention is called to an important disadvantage that ensued in a published example of such application.

#### REFERENCE

- EISENBUD, J. (1955). 'On the use of the psi hypothesis in psychoanalysis.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 36, 370-374.



## COMMENTS ON DR. BRENNER'S 'FACTS, COINCIDENCE, AND THE PSI HYPOTHESIS'

By

JULE EISENBUD, M.D., DENVER, COLORADO

Dr. Brenner has put me on the carpet for not having checked the facts concerning the frequency of appearance of the worm-eating warbler in New York's Central Park. As it happens, the precise data involved, as we shall see, are not too easy to get at. At all events, I was not quite as negligent in the matter as Dr. Brenner charges me with having been.

The episode described in my paper occurred in 1949 and was written up by me at the time almost exactly, save for the introductory and concluding remarks, as it was published. The particular circumstances responsible for the fact that, after some questioning of the patient, I relied on his knowledge and veracity for the details of my account are perhaps not too relevant here. However, before publication, after the lapse of several years, it did occur to me to check the data about the worm-eating warbler as given by my patient. Consulting the literature, I found that this was considered a rarely observed (and even more rarely heard) species, and that it was not even catalogued by name in several manuals describing birds commonly found in the north-eastern United States. I next wrote to the National Audubon Society in New York to request data on the actually recorded dates of appearance of the bird in Central Park. I was referred to an ornithologist of the American Museum of Natural History, but from this person I never received a reply to my inquiry. I finally placed my reliance on the description of the bird's habits given in *Birds of America*, T. Gilbert Pearson, Editor-in-Chief (Doubleday, 1936), a standard reference work in the field. 'The worm-eating warbler', it is there stated, 'is not so rare as it has been credited. . . . But the search for him has to be made in ravines and on dry forested hillsides where the undergrowth makes a convenient nesting site.' I did not gather from this that an individual was at all likely to come upon him during a casual stroll in Central Park, whose terrain hardly fits that given in the description of where the bird might turn up.

Now Dr. Brenner has come up with statements by recognized authorities from which he draws inferences which are in radical contradiction to the statements made by my patient concerning the rarity of the worm-eating warbler in New York's Central Park. On this basis he comes to sweeping conclusions as to the validity of my observations and my method.

First as to the facts. Dr. Brenner cites a statement by Cruickshank which, he claims, renders the facts as given by my patient grossly incorrect. But this statement, as is immediately verifiable, concerns the frequency of appearance of the worm-eating warbler in its *breeding* grounds, which are distributed over an area of several hundred square miles. According to every source I have consulted, this bird does *not* breed in New York's Central Park, an area of roughly one square mile. And says Cruickshank (*op. cit.*), 'Wherever the species does not breed in our region it is known only as an astonishingly rare transient visitant.'

Undoubtedly a designation of 'astonishingly rare transient' is still too broad for our purposes, since it does not provide a satisfactory estimate of the chances of a person observing the worm-eating warbler on any given day in Central Park. We should have to depend for this on precise records of the actual dates of the bird's observed appearance in Central Park over a period of years, as well as on data as to the number of specimens counted on every such occasion. Regrettably, Mr. Terres' reported statement—that the worm-eating warbler *might* (not *may*) be seen in Central Park on any of the dates indicated by Cruickshank as the times of the bird's appearance on its breeding grounds—is entirely too ambiguous to be of much use to us. Cruickshank himself does not give the data we want, but states merely that 'Away from the breeding grounds, even in the most favoured localities, a count of more than two on any one day is exceptional.' The assistant librarian of the National Audubon Society, to which I again wrote, was unable to find the records, published



or otherwise, which might help us, but supplied the quotations from Cruickshank given by me above. The only statement I am able to find, finally, relating to the probability of the worm-eating warbler turning up in Central Park on any given day is given by Griscom in *Bird-Hunting in Central Park* (Amer. Mus. Nat. Hist. Guide Leaflet No. 68). 'One can never tell', says this author, who merely lists our bird as appearing *almost* every year, 'just which ones of the rarer species will appear, or when.'

All in all, I think we may safely conclude that even though my patient, calling upon the empirical lore of Central Park's habitual bird-watchers, may, in a literal sense and in some minor degree, have overstated the case for the rarity of his bird (and this has yet to be substantially demonstrated) he was certainly not far off his mark as far as the fundamental point at issue is concerned. The probability would indeed appear to be quite remote that an individual wandering in an area of one square mile will chance upon one of perhaps two birds which *might* be there under favourable circumstances. In any case, in view of what (corrected) data we have, Dr. Brenner would appear to be pushing his authorities somewhat beyond maximum load, since we can hardly consider the chances of coming upon a worm-eating warbler during a stroll in Central Park on *any* day to be 'rather good', as he would have it. We may not infer from the proposition that one swallow does not make a summer the fact that two do.

However, let us suppose, for argument's sake, that there may be a somewhat greater warrant than was at first believed for the application to the events described of a particular normal hypothesis. (As Dr. Brenner quite correctly points out, it is impossible precisely to evaluate this with any known statistical method.) By no means would the warrant for the concurrent application of the psi hypothesis be eliminated or even, as far as that goes, appreciably reduced. By way of analogy, let us imagine that a man receives a message from an unknown source stating that a certain rare book can be found at a given book mart. The man goes to this place and within a few minutes comes upon the book in question. He feels extremely grateful to his unknown benefactor, since to the best of his belief there are only two copies of this book in existence. Later he learns that there are actually five—or ten, or twenty, it matters little. It would be quite wrong for him to conclude now that there was no relationship between the

message he had received and his discovery of the now only *comparatively* rare book.

The analogy to our case is entirely just if we accept, as I maintain the overall evidence justifies beyond any reasonable doubt, the independently established existence of what is defined as psi awareness in individuals. From here on it is simply a question of evaluating all pertinent data in order to find some basis for inclining toward one or the other of the hypotheses being considered. As is so often the case in situations of this sort, there may be no factor or factors which can crucially resolve the issue, and the hypothetical rôle of psi, as I stated in my paper, 'can perhaps never be decisively settled, what with the nature of the material and the circumstances of its development'.

But neither, for that matter, can the rôle of chance, contrary to Dr. Brenner's ostensible supposition, widely shared in principle by critics of psi and psycho-analysis alike, that when any loophole for chance can be demonstrated in an indeterminate probability situation, chance is *ipso facto* the explanation of choice for whatever is observed to occur.

Dr. Brenner, however, does not rely solely on the chance hypothesis. Employing a gambit which is again a favourite of critics of both psi and psycho-analysis, he offers in addition a 'normal' deterministic hypothesis to account for what took place on the theory, perhaps, that chance *plus* a thoroughly familiar and inoffensive hypothesis is an unbeatable combination. He suggests that the incident reported by the patient and subsequently by me may have been an expression of, 'if it was not indeed primarily determined by', important transference wishes, for example, the wish to please me. But surely, if there is such a thing as a latent psi capacity in individuals (and here, it must once again be pointed out, an independently tested and proved hypothesis to this effect is merely being applied to a specific set of events), a patient could just as easily please me, and at the same time have this pointed out to him, by genuinely utilizing this capacity as by going to great lengths, consciously or unconsciously, to make it appear falsely as if this were the case. It is clear, thus, that such a consideration cannot be used as a basis for evaluating the relative merits of the two hypotheses in the present situation.

'It is almost impossible', says Griscom (*loc. cit.*), 'to get something for nothing. Hunting rare warblers in Central Park is no exception to this rule. . . . The prizes come only to the



energetic and the persistent.' The whole point of the incident reported by me is that my patient awoke one morning with a heavily overdetermined need to prove to himself that one could indeed get something for nothing, that one could magically recapture the rapidly disappearing breast with the power of the wish, and without energy and persistence. Small gratification it would have been to him in these circumstances, it seems to me, to have resorted to the self-deception suggested by Dr. Brenner when, if he really believed that his chances of seeing the worm-eating warbler that morning were very remote (which, all sources considered, they apparently were) he could accomplish his miracle, if only symbolically, by unconsciously calling upon a latent capacity which is

theoretically an important life-preserver of the otherwise fairly helpless infant.

Finally as to Dr. Brenner's statement that, 'As yet no word has appeared in print to question the proposal that what used to be called "occult" be adopted by psycho-analysts as part of their working armamentarium of scientific hypotheses.' The fact is that the critical literature on the psi hypothesis as it may be applied in psycho-analytic work dates back almost a quarter of a century, has appeared in several psychiatric and psycho-analytic books and journals (including, not too long ago, this one) seems to be rapidly growing, and, at this stage, should hardly require, with or without field-glasses, too much energy and persistence and certainly no occult powers for its discovery.

## A COMMENT ON E. SERVADIO'S 'A PRESUMPTIVE TELEPATHIC-PRECOGNITIVE DREAM DURING ANALYSIS'

By

DAVID BRUNSWICK, Ph.D., LOS ANGELES

In connexion with E. Servadio's recent paper on 'A Presumptive Telepathic-Precognitive Dream During Analysis' (*Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 36, 1955), I wish to point out a possibility which Professor Servadio does not consider in his printed paper, whether or not he took it into account in reaching his conclusions.

I shall summarize a few facts in the situation under discussion. The patient was to have an analytic hour on the evening of 28 August. This appointment was cancelled by means of a message taken to the patient's flat by the maid of the analyst at five on the afternoon of the 28th. It is not stated that the patient did not see the maid, but it seems to be presumed that he did not. The dream in question is stated to have occurred in the night between 27 and 28 August, and that is how the patient must have reported it in the next following hour, which was on the evening of the 29th.

Now, judging only from what we have been told and not been told, there seems to be a clear possibility that the dream was actually dreamed in the night between the 28th and 29th, with a

falsification about the time (conscious or unconscious) on the part of the patient. If it was thus, the precognitive element disappears, since the maid delivered the message on the afternoon of the 28th.

Furthermore, there also seems to exist the possibility that the patient was at home when the maid came to his flat, that therefore he saw her and she delivered the message in person; and finally it is also possible that she imparted to him in a friendly, gossipy way some of the other information that appears in the dream. So, if some of these things were also so, some of the telepathic elements in the dream also vanish.

Now I do not for a moment want to claim that this is the way it was. I merely want to point out that Dr. Servadio did not consider these possibilities in his paper and so did not give factors or evidence to rule them out. I think this should be done, and all the alternative possibilities explored as thoroughly as possible in working in this startling and puzzling realm, which has impressed itself more or less upon many psycho-analysts.



## REPLY TO DR. DAVID BRUNSWICK'S COMMENT

By

EMILIO SERVADIO, ROME

Dr. Brunswick's remarks about the paper he quotes seem to me very pertinent. A careful student should always think of any possible way of ruling out supposed 'paranormal' factors in a given occurrence, and see whether the facts could be not interpreted in a 'normal' fashion. This is, of course, what I have constantly tried to do (my general attitude is apparent in the very title of my paper), although perhaps such endeavours can never reach 100 per cent evidence.

Regarding the first point raised by Dr. Brunswick I can only say that my patient (who was, as it will be remembered, an obsessional) was always extremely precise in his statements, and that his memory of details, even after a notable lapse of time, was astonishingly accurate. It seems therefore highly improbable—and this is all I can state—that he should have made such a major mistake about the night of his dream. I fully acknowledge that this is not a certainty in a mathematical or factual sense: it is only a very probable assumption as far as my knowledge of the case goes. In fact, I am still quite confident that no falsification of time did actually occur, although I obviously cannot prove it.

Dr. Brunswick, however, has certainly noticed that in my paper, my opinion regarding the possible precognitive elements in the case was particularly cautious, owing to the great difficulty of making assessments about any alleged

precognitive phenomenon. I wrote, in fact, that a couple of items in the occurrence *seemed* to me 'not fully understandable in purely "telepathic" terms', etc.—a wording which to some of my readers appeared almost deprecating.

About the second point of Dr. Brunswick's note I feel much more confident and tranquil. First of all, A. was an English-speaking patient, and my maid N. could not speak a word of English. Apart from this, she would have recoiled at the very idea of having any amount of conversational gossip with one of my patients—particularly with a non-Italian! As a matter of fact, I gave her a *written note*, by which I was informing my patient that his session was cancelled, and she simply handed over my letter to him. The only 'conversation' between the two could not possibly go beyond a couple of *buona sera*, followed by a curt nod on the part of the very restrained and aloof Mr. A. In this occurrence, my maid behaved only and exactly as the faithful carrier of a written message.

In my opinion, therefore, the *telepathic* value of the incident remains in full. I am—and was—less confident about its *precognitive* aspects, and I admit that Dr. Brunswick's remarks about such aspects are justified. I wish to thank him cordially for his interest in my paper, and for his friendly co-operation.



# 112TH BULLETIN OF THE INTERNATIONAL PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL ASSOCIATION

EDITED BY  
RUTH S. EISSLER, M.D., GENERAL SECRETARY

## REPORTS FROM THE COMPONENT SOCIETIES

<i>North America</i>	PAGE
American Psychoanalytic Association	58
<i>South America</i>	
Argentine Psychoanalytic Association	61
Brazilian Psychoanalytic Society (Sao Paulo)	62
Chilean Psychoanalytic Society	62
<i>Europe</i>	
Belgian Psycho-Analytical Society	62
British Psycho-Analytical Society	63
Dutch Psycho-Analytical Society	66
French Psycho-Analytical Society	66
German Psycho-Analytical Society	68
Italian Psycho-Analytical Society	69
Swedish Psycho-Analytical Society	70
Swiss Psycho-Analytical Society	70
Vienna Psycho-Analytical Society	70
<i>Asia</i>	
Indian Psycho-Analytical Society	71
Israel Psycho-Analytical Society	72
Sendai Psychoanalytic Society	72

### NORTH AMERICA

#### AMERICAN PSYCHOANALYTIC ASSOCIATION

36 West 44 Street, New York 36, N.Y.

I. *Officers* of the American Psychoanalytic Association, 1953-1955: Ives Hendrick, M.D. (*President*); Maxwell Gitelson, M.D. (*President-Elect*); Richard L. Frank, M.D. (*Secretary*); Robert T. Morse, M.D. (*Treasurer*). They were succeeded on 8 May, 1955, by the following *current officers*: Maxwell Gitelson, M.D. (*President*, 1955-1956); William G. Barrett, M.D. (*President-Elect*, 1955-1956); Douglas D. Bond, M.D. (*Secretary*, 1955-1957); Robert T. Morse, M.D. (*Treasurer*, 1955-1957).

II. *Members of the Executive Council*, 1954-1955: Ex-Officio Voting: Ives Hendrick, M.D. (*President*); Maxwell Gitelson, M.D. (*President-Elect*); Richard L. Frank, M.D. (*Secretary*); Robert T. Morse, M.D. (*Treasurer*); LeRoy M. A. Maeder, M.D. (*Ex-*

*Secretary*). Ex-Officio Non-Voting: M. Ralph Kaufman, M.D.; Robert P. Knight, M.D. Elected Councillors-at-Large: Grete L. Bibring, M.D. (1951-1955); Robert Waelder, Ph.D. (1952-1956); Emanuel Windholz, M.D. (1953-1957); Ralph R. Greenson, M.D. (1954-1958).

III. From May, 1953, to May, 1955, 124 new members were elected to active membership in the American Psychoanalytic Association. In May, 1954, Dr. Ernst Kris was unanimously elected to Honorary Membership. During the two-year period May, 1953-April, 1955, 17 members died.

IV. In May, 1954, three new Institutes were approved by the Board on Professional Standards: (1) Los Angeles Institute for Psychoanalysis; (2) Institute for Psychoanalytic Medicine of Southern California, and (3) Division of Psychoanalytic Education of the State University Medical Center at New York.

Also in May, 1954, the application of the Philadelphia Association for Psychoanalysis to sponsor



a Training Center at the Western Reserve University School of Medicine, Cleveland, Ohio, was approved for a provisional period of three years.

In May, 1955, Affiliate Society status was accorded to a group of members at present working in the Division of Psychoanalytic Education at the State University Medical Center at New York City (Brooklyn, N.Y.).

Also in May, 1955, the New Orleans Psychoanalytic Society was recognized as an Affiliate Society of the American Psychoanalytic Association.

As of May, 1955, the American Psychoanalytic Association numbers 14 Approved Training Institutes, 16 Affiliate Societies, and 3 Training Centers.

V. Miss Anna Freud delivered the Fourth Freud Anniversary Lecture on 'Psychoanalysis and Education' at the New York Academy of Medicine, 5 May, 1954. The following week-end she was one of the participants in a Scientific Program sponsored by the New York Psychoanalytic Institute. On 10 May, 1954, she was guest speaker at two sessions of the Philadelphia Association for Psychoanalysis. At the afternoon session for members and students, she spoke on 'Sources of Analytic Material' and led the discussion which followed; at the evening session, before a large audience of professionally qualified persons, she gave a lecture on 'Diagnosis and Assessment of Early Childhood Disturbances.'

VI. In May, 1955, the appointment of an Ad Hoc Committee to consider the question of a by-law on qualifications for foreign training was authorized by the Executive Council of the American Psychoanalytic Association.

VII. (1) The Macmillan Company is the authorized sales representative in the United States for the Freud Memorial Volumes, now in the process of publication.

(2) Dr. Leo H. Bartemeier represented the American Psychoanalytic Association at the recent unveiling of the statue of Sigmund Freud at the University of Vienna.

(3) The American Psychoanalytic Association will participate in the raising of funds to purchase the Freud home in London and convert it into a museum as a permanent memorial to Freud.

(4) The centenary of Sigmund Freud's birth will be celebrated at the Annual Meeting of the American Psychoanalytic Association to be held in Chicago 26-29 April, 1956.

Scientific Meetings: Future Meetings: 1955 Midwinter Meeting, 1-4 December, Roosevelt Hotel, New York City. 1956 Annual Meeting, 26-29 April, Hotel Morrison, Chicago.<sup>1</sup> 1956 Midwinter Meeting, 6-9 December, Roosevelt Hotel, New York City.

The 1953 Midwinter Meeting took place in New York City from Friday, 4 December, 1953, to

Sunday, 6 December, 1953. The 1954 Annual Meeting was held in St. Louis, Mo., from Friday, 30 April, 1954, to Sunday, 2 May, 1954. The 1954 Midwinter Meeting took place in New York City from Friday, 3 December, 1954, to Sunday, 5 December, 1954.

*1955 Annual Meeting, Atlantic City, N.J.*

*Friday, 6 May, 1955.*

SCIENTIFIC PAPERS AND BRIEF COMMUNICATIONS

Chairman: George S. Goldman, M.D. (New York).

*Morning Session:*

*Scientific Papers, Section I*

A. 'Narcissism, the Oral Triad and the Ego-ideal in Psychosomatic Disorders'. Joseph Kepecs, M.D. (Chicago). Discussant: Catherine L. Bacon, M.D. (Philadelphia). B. 'The Management of an Erotized Transference'. Ernest Rappaport, M.D. (Chicago). Discussant: Mabel B. Cohen, M.D. (Chevy Chase, Md.).

*Afternoon Session:*

*Brief Communications (with Discussion)*

Barbara Young, M.D. (Baltimore): 'Sleep during the Analysis of an Aggressive Man.' Alexander Grinstein, M.D. (Detroit): 'Comes the Knight in Shining Armor.' Philip Weissman, M.D. (New York): 'On Pregonal Compulsive Phenomena and the Repetition Compulsion.' Paula Elksch, Ph.D. (Philadelphia): 'The Psychological Significance of the Mirror.' Martin H. Orens, M.D. (New York): 'The Result of Termination of Analysis in a Depression.' Charles Brenner, M.D. (New York): 'A Reformulation of the Psychoanalytic Theory of Parapraxes.' Sanford Gifford, M.D. (Boston): 'Transient Disturbances in Perception: Two Psychoanalytic Observations.' William L. Peltz, M.D. (Philadelphia): 'Transference in Psychoanalytic Case Supervision.' David Kairys, M.D. (New York): 'Unconscious Mechanisms in a Patient with Hyperventilation Tetany.'

*Panel Discussion A.* 'Affects, Object Relations and Gastric Secretions.' Chairman: Lawrence Kubie, M.D. (New York). Reporter: George E. Gardner, M.D. (Boston). Presentation: 'The Study of an Infant with a Gastric Fistula.' George L. Engel, M.D., and Franz Reichsman, M.D. (Rochester, N.Y.). Participants: Therese Benedek, M.D. (Chicago), Sibylle Escalona, Ph.D. (New Haven), Roy Grinker, M.D. (Chicago), George Ham, M.D. (Chapel Hill), Sydney Margolin, M.D. (New York), I. Arthur Mirsky, M.D. (Pittsburgh), René Spitz, M.D. (New York), Thomas Szasz, M.D. (Bethesda).

Psychoanalytic Association go on record as being unwilling to hold its convention in any city where discriminatory practices will be encountered.

<sup>1</sup> The site of the 1956 Annual Meeting was changed from Dallas, Texas, to Chicago, Illinois, at the Annual Meeting in May, 1955, when the membership unanimously approved the resolution that the American



*Scientific Papers, Section II*

*Morning Session:* Chairman: Sarah Tower, M.D. (Baltimore). A. 'The Symbolic Meaning of the Corner.' Samuel Sperling, M.D. (Beverly Hills). Discussant: Morris W. Brody, M.D. (Philadelphia). B. 'Ambivalence.' Morris W. Brody, M.D. (Philadelphia). Discussant: Henry W. Brosin, M.D. (Pittsburgh). C. 'A Contribution to the Study of Instincts.' I. The Erotic Instinct. Mortimer Ostow, M.D. (New York). Discussant: Leonard Sillman, M.D. (New York).

*Afternoon Session:* Chairman: Helen V. McLean, M.D. (Chicago). D. 'The Concept of Resistance as a Narcissistic Defense.' Paul Sloane, M.D. (Philadelphia). Discussant: Jan Frank, M.D. (New York). E. 'The Ego and the Introjects.' III. Advanced Stages of Splitting in Schizophrenia. Gustav Bychowski, M.D. (New York). Discussant: Gregory Zilboorg, M.D. (New York). F. 'Dreams, Images and Perception' (Slides). Charles Fisher, M.D. (New York). Discussant: Ernst Kris, Ph.D.

*Saturday, 7 May, 1955.*

*Panel Discussion B (Members only).* 'Psychoanalytic Curricula—Principles and Structure.' Chairman: Lucia E. Tower, M.D. (Chicago). Reporter: Hans W. Loewald, M.D. (Baltimore). Presentation: 'The Teaching of Therapeutic Psychoanalysis.' Richard L. Frank, M.D. (New York). Participants: Francis McLaughlin, M.D. (Baltimore Psa. Inst.), Grete Bibring, M.D. (Boston Psa. Soc. & Inst., Inc.), John M. Murray, M.D. (Boston Psa. Soc. & Inst., Inc.), Helen V. McLean, M.D. (Chicago Inst. for Psa.), Henriette Klein, M.D. (Columbia Univ. Psa. Clinic), Paul Sloane, M.D. (Inst. of the Phila. Assn. for Psa.), Eugene Pumpian-Mindlin, M.D. (Inst. for Psa. Med. of So. Calif.), Carel Van der Heide, M.D. (Los Angeles Inst. for Psa.), Sara Bonnett, M.D. (New York Psa. Inst.), Otto Isakower, M.D. (New York Psa. Inst.), Morris Brody, M.D. (Philadelphia Psa. Inst.), Sylvan Keiser, M.D. (Psa. Inst. of State Univ. Med. Ctr., N.Y.), Emmy Sylvester, M.D. (San Francisco Psa. Inst.), Otto Fleischmann, Ph.D. (Topeka Inst. for Psa.), Rex Buxton, M.D. (Washington Psa. Inst.), Robert P. Knight, M.D. (Western New England Inst. for Psa.).

*Panel Discussion C.* 'The Dream in the Practice of Psychoanalysis.' Chairman: Sandor Lorand, M.D. (New York). Reporter: Leo Rangell, M.D. (Beverly Hills). Presentations: A. 'Dreams and Affects.' Samuel A. Guttman, M.D. (Princeton, N.J.). B. 'On "Reading" Manifest Dreams and other Unconscious Material.' Leon J. Saul, M.D. (Media, Pa.). C. 'Transference Phenomena in the Dream.' Edith Weigert, M.D. (Chevy Chase, Md.). Participants: Franz Alexander, M.D. (Chicago), Robert Fliess, M.D. (New York), Ives Hendrick, M.D. (Boston), Milton Miller, M.D. (Beverly Hills), Herman Nunberg, M.D. (New York), Richard

Sterba, M.D. (Grosse Pointe, Mich.), Elizabeth Zetzel, M.D. (Cambridge, Mass.).

*Panel Discussion D.* 'Re-evaluation of the Libido Theory.' Chairman: Robert Waelder, Ph.D. (Philadelphia). Reporter: Charles Brenner, M.D. (New York). Participants: Nathan W. Ackerman, M.D. (New York), Robert C. Bak, M.D. (New York), Frieda Fromm-Reichmann, M.D. (Rockville, Md.), Rudolph M. Loewenstein, M.D. (New York), Karl A. Menninger, M.D. (Topeka).

*Morning Presentation.* 'Psychoanalytic Instinct Theory and Social Psychiatry.' Alfred Stanton, M.D. (Wellesley Hills, Mass.).

*Afternoon Presentation.* 'Concepts of Therapy Derivative from the Libido Theory.' Norman Reider, M.D. (San Francisco).

*Panel Discussion E.*

*Morning Session only.* 'Factors in the Growth and Development of the Psychotherapist.' Chairman: Adelaide Johnson, M.D. (Rochester, Minn.). Reporter: John Spiegel, M.D. (Boston). Presentation: 'Factors Entering into the Development of a Psychotherapist.' O. Spurgeon English, M.D. (Philadelphia). Participants: Joseph C. Chassell, M.D. (Stockbridge, Mass.), Joan Fleming, M.D. (Chicago), Martin Grotjahn, M.D. (Beverly Hills), Alfred O. Ludwig, M.D. (Boston), Sydney Margolin, M.D. (New York), Herbert S. Ripley, M.D. (Seattle).

*Scientific Papers, Section III*

*Afternoon Session only:* Chairman: Maurits Katan, M.D. (Cleveland). 1. Studies in Schizophrenia. A. 'The Significance of Exogenous Traumata in the Genesis of Schizophrenia.' David Robinson, M.D. (Rochester, Minn.). B. 'Observations on Ego Functions in 35 Schizophrenic Patients.' Adelaide M. Johnson, M.D. (Rochester, Minn.). Discussant: James Mann, M.D. (Boston). 2. 'Transient Psychotic Episodes during Psychoanalysis.' May E. Romm, M.D. (Beverly Hills). Discussant: O. Spurgeon English, M.D. (Philadelphia). 3. 'Human Ego Functions in the Light of Animal Behavior.' Edith Weigert, M.D. (Chevy Chase, Md.).

*Scientific Papers, Section IV*

*Morning Session:* Chairman: Lewis L. Robbins, M.D. (Topeka). 1. 'On the Theory of Psychoanalytic Treatment.' Thomas Szasz, M.D. (Bethesda). Discussant: Victor Calef, M.D. (San Francisco). 2. 'The Marriage Bond.' Martin H. Stein, M.D. (New York). Discussant: Jacob A. Arlow, M.D. (New York). 3. 'Etiology of Prejudice.' Brian Bird, M.D. (Cleveland). Discussant: Sol W. Ginsburg, M.D. (New York).

*Afternoon Session:* Chairman: John A. P. Millet, M.D. (New York). 4. 'Informational Value of a Supervisor's Emotional Experiences.' Harold Searles, M.D. (Rockville, Md.). Discussant:



William Murphy, M.D. (Boston). 5. 'Problems in the Study of Changes during and after Psychoanalytic Treatment.' Henriette R. Klein, M.D. (New York). Discussant: Helen H. Tartakoff, M.D. (Cambridge, Mass.). 6. 'Therapeutic Results in Psychoanalytic Treatment without Fee.' Sandor Lorand, M.D. (New York). Discussant: Lawrence Kubie, M.D. (New York).

Sunday, 8 May, 1955.

*Scientific Session*—Central Fact-gathering Committee

Report 4—Comparative Data from 2,000 Initial and 500 Final Reports of Cases of Anxiety Neurosis, Homosexuality, Passive-Aggressive Character and Schizophrenia. With Slides. Chairman: Harry I. Weinstock, M.D. (Attendance limited to members of the Association and participating senior Candidates.)

Reports on Panels. Chairman: Rudolph Loewenstein, M.D. (New York) and Reporters for Panels A, B, C, D, and E.

*SOUTH AMERICA*

ARGENTINE PSYCHOANALYTIC ASSOCIATION

(Asociacion Psicoanalitica Argentina)

Anchorena 1357, Buenos Aires, Argentina

*Officers* (1955): Dr. Luisa G. de Alvarez de Toledo (*President*); Dr. David Liberman (*Secretary*); Dr. Mauricio Abadi (*Treasurer*); Dr. León Grinberg (*Publishing Director*); Dr. Enrique Pichon Riviere (*Director of Institute*).

*Training Committee*: Dr. Enrique Pichon Riviere (*Director*), Dr. Angel Garma, Dr. Arnaldo Rascovsky.

*Training Analysts*: Dr. Luisa G. de Alvarez de Toledo, Dr. Celes E. Cárcamo, Dr. Angel Garma, Dr. Marie Langer, Dr. Arminda A. de Pichon Riviere, Dr. Enrique Pichon Riviere, Dr. Enrique Racker, Dr. Arnaldo Rascovsky, Dr. Luis Rascovsky.

*Candidates in Training*: 21 conducting case work under supervision; 14 in preparatory analysis.

*Programme of Courses*:

*First Year*: Dr. Angel Garma: General Theory of Neuroses (25 seminars, 2 terms). Mrs. Matilde Rascovsky and Dr. León Grinberg: Instinctivity (26 seminars, 2 terms). Drs. Arminda A. de Pichon Riviere, Nora R. de Bisi, Alberto Tallaferro: Child Development (2 terms). Dr. Marie Langer: Introduction to Technique (27 seminars, 2 terms). Dr. Mauricio Abadi: Introduction to Psychoanalysis (36 seminars, 2 terms). Dr. Enrique Pichon Riviere: Technique Seminar (13 seminars, 1 term).

*Second Year*: Drs. Teodoro Schlossberg, Jorge Aniceto Figueras: Freud's Clinical Case Histories

(40 seminars, 2 terms). Mr. Willy Baranger: Dreams: Theory and Practice (23 seminars, 2 terms). Dr. David Liberman: Special Theory of Neuroses, Psychoses, Perversions and Characteropathies (26 seminars, 2 terms). Dr. Heinrich Racker: Collective Control of a Case (25 seminars, 2 terms). Elisabeth G. de Garma: Technique of Child Psychoanalysis (10 seminars, 1 term).

*Third Year*: Dr. Fidias Cesio: Freud's Remaining Writings (27 seminars, 2 terms). Dr. Arnaldo Rascovsky: Collective Control (26 seminars, 2 terms). Dr. Enrique Pichon Riviere: Theory of Technique (28 seminars, 2 terms). Drs. Arminda and Enrique Pichon Riviere, Emilio Rodrigue: Basic Writings of Melanie Klein and her School (31 seminars, 2 terms). Dr. León Grinberg: Applied Psychoanalysis (27 seminars, 2 terms). Dr. David Liberman: Special Theory of Neuroses, Psychoses, Perversions and Characteropathies (25 seminars, 2 terms).

*Child Analysis*: Mrs. Elisabeth G. de Garma: Technique Seminar (8 seminars, 1 term).

*Papers read in the Argentine Psychoanalytic Association*:

Dr. Fidias Cesio: 'Psychoanalytic Studies on the Theory of Spiritualism.'

Dr. Angel Garma: 'Vicissitudes of the Dream Screen and of the Isakower Phenomenon.'

Drs. Arminda A. de Pichon Riviere and Luisa G. de Alvarez de Toledo: 'Music and Musical Instruments.'

Dr. Arnaldo Rascovsky: 'On the Genesis and Evolution of Scopophilic Tendencies.'

Dr. Arminda A. de Pichon Riviere: 'Dentition, Walking and Talking in relation to the Depressive Position.'

Dr. Jorge E. Nöllman: 'Psychoanalytic Considerations on a Delirious System—the Electra Conflict in an Old Lady of 84.'

Dr. Hernando Pastrana Borero: 'Direct Expressions and Elaborations of Masturbatory Fantasies of an Adolescent Girl.'

Mrs. Genevieve T. de Racker: 'On a Specific Type of Anxiety.'

Dr. Salomón Resnik: 'Cotard's Syndrome and Depersonalization.'

Mrs. Madeleine Baranger: 'Illness Fantasy and Insight Development in a Child Analysis.'

Dr. Arnaldo Rascovsky: 'Clarifications of Inner Vision.'

Mr. Willy Baranger: 'Assimilation and Capsuling—Study of the Idealized Objects.'

Mrs. Madeleine Baranger: 'Expulsion and Sublimation, Management of the Internalized Objects (A Dream-Analysis).'

Dr. Diego García Reinoso: 'Construction of a Persecutory Reality.'

Dr. Fidias Cesio: 'A Case of Impotence.'

Dr. Fidias Cesio: 'Two Ulcer Patients.'

Dr. Aniceto Figueras: 'Psychoanalysis Applied to Medicine. Bases for the Integration of Medical



Thought through the Pluridimensional Approach in the Examination of Patients.'

Dr. Arnaldo Rascovsky: 'From Inner Object to Outer Object. Externalization and Internalization. Identification and Pseudo-identification.'

Dr. José Luis Gonzalez: 'Psychoanalytic Contributions to the Study of Colitis.'

Dr. Emilio Rodrigue: 'The Setting of Discovery.'

Dr. Jaime Tomás: 'An Aspect of the Maternal Super Ego and Analytic Evolution in a Character Neurosis.'

Dr. Guillermo Ferrari Hardoy: 'The Psychological Problem of Masturbation.'

Mrs. Genevieve T. de Racker: 'Aspects of the Psychoanalysis of a "Foreigner" (Contribution to the Study of Negative Therapeutic Reaction).'

Mrs. Mathilde Rascovsky: 'Fragment of the Analysis of a Surgeon.'

Mrs. Elisabeth G. de Garma: 'Reaction and Management of Parents in Child Analysis.'

*Symposium on Schizophrenia held at the Argentine Psychoanalytic Association:* Among the participants were: Drs. Arminda and Enrique Pichon Riviere, Dr. David Liberman, Dr. Emilio Rodrigue, Dr. Nelly Garcia Badaracco, Dr. Albert Tallafarro, Dr. Jorge Mom, Mrs. Marcelle Spira, Dr. León Grinberg, Dr. José Remus Araico, Dr. Diego García Reinoso, Dr. Salomon Resnik, Dr. Edgardo Rolla, Dr. José Luis Gonzalez, Dr. Mauricio Abadi, Dr. Alberto Fontana Lahitte, Dr. Fidias Cesio, Dr. Gino Amici di San Leo and Mr. Willy Baranger.

*Lecture-Course for Friends of the Argentine Psychoanalytic Association:*

Dr. Luisa G. de Alvarez de Toledo: 'History of Medical Psychology and Psychoanalysis.'

Dr. David Liberman: 'Practical Aspects of Psychoanalysis.'

Dr. Mauricio Abadi: 'Dreams and their Psychoanalytic Interpretation.'

Dr. Arnaldo Rascovsky: 'The Experience of a Sinister Story.'

Dr. Enrique Pichon Riviere: 'Poetic Creation in the Comte de Lautreamont.'

Dr. Angel Garma: 'The Duodenal Ulcer in the Hero of a Book.'

Dr. León Grinberg: 'Migraine in Some Characters in Literature and History.'

Dr. Marie Langer: 'On Some Psychological Aspects of Elizabeth the First of England and Other Women of Her Day.'

Dr. Celes E. Cárcamo: 'Magic Thought.'

*Other Activities:* Dr. Alberto Tallafarro delivered a course on 'Introduction to Psychoanalysis' for general practitioners.

## BRAZILIAN PSYCHOANALYTIC SOCIETY (SAO PAULO)

(*Sociedade Brasileira de Psicoanalise*)

No report of annual activities received.

## CHILEAN PSYCHOANALYTIC SOCIETY (*Sociedad Chilena de Psicoanalisa*)

Santo Domingo 444, Dep. 1, Santiago de Chile

*Officers:* Dr. Carlos Whiting (*President*); Dr. Ramón Ganzarain (*Secretary*); Dr. Erika Bondiek (*Business Secretary*).

In 1954 we had a total of 27 students, 17 of whom are medical, and 10 are lay students.

We have been improving our criteria for the selection of candidates, following basically the experience of Hanns Sachs communicated in his paper on the training analysis.

*Lectures and Seminars* at the Training Institute during 1953 and 1954:

*First Year Course:* Dr. Carlos Whiting: 'Introduction to Psychoanalysis.' Dr. Ramón Ganzarain: 'Introduction to the Technique.' Prof. Dr. Ignacio Matte: 'Mechanisms of Defense.' Dr. Erika Bondiek: Seminar on Dreams.

*Second Year Course:* Dr. Ramón Ganzarain and the members of the Training Committee: 'Special Theory of Neuroses.' Dr. Carlos Whiting and Dr. Ramón Ganzarain: Case Seminars.

*Third Year Course:* Prof. Dr. Ignacio Matte: 'Problems of Metapsychology.' Dr. Arturo Prat: 'Child Analysis.' Dr. Ramón Ganzarain: 'Psychoses.'

*Training Committee:* Drs. E. Bondiek, R. Ganzarain, I. Matte-Blanco, A. Prat, A. Segovia and C. Whiting.

## EUROPE

### BELGIAN PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY

(*Association des Psychanalystes de Belgique*)

118 rue Froissart, Brussels, Belgium

Au cours de l'année académique 1954/55, les travaux de training ont continué au rythme précédent. Les étudiants et les membres présentent des études de textes ou des observations cliniques se rapportant entr'autres à la psychothérapie des parents, aux difficultés rencontrées au commencement d'une analyse par les débutants, à l'Oedipe dans la névrose obsessionnelle, à la psychosomatique ou à l'étude des oeuvres d'Abraham. Un groupe de travail s'occupe exclusivement de cas cliniques discutés.

Des analystes étrangers nous apportent leur collaboration, par ordre chronologique, les Drs. Lebovici, Diatkine et de Saussure.

23 analyses didactiques sont en cours actuellement, 4 candidats sont en contrôle.

Parmi nos membres se sont inscrits 3 nouveaux candidats, un membre est passé au titre d'adhérent, 2 sont devenus membres titulaires.

Nous avons perdu un de nos membres honoraires, le Dr. Odier.



BRITISH PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY

63, New Cavendish Street, London, W.1

REPORT FOR THE YEAR 1953-54

During the academic year 1953-54, the Society has held seventeen Scientific Meetings, including the sixth Ernest Jones Lecture which was open to the public. This lecture was given by Ernst H. Gombrich, M.A., Ph.D., the subject being 'Psycho-Analysis and the History of Art.'

At the first Scientific Meeting of the year, which was held in October 1953, the Society welcomed Dr. David Rapaport from Stockbridge, Massachusetts, U.S.A.

*List of Scientific Meetings*

Dr. D. Rapaport: 'The Theoretical Structure of Present-day Ego-Psychology.'

Miss H. Sheehan-Dare: 'Homicide During a Schizophrenic Episode.'

Dr. W. H. Gillespie: 'The First International Conference on Para-Psychological Studies held in Utrecht in August.'

Mrs. H. Ries: 'A Character Analysis.'

Dr. C. Anderson: 'Movement, Stasis and Death in Psychic Life.'

The Rev. R. P. Casey: 'Unconscious Factors in Christian Liturgy.'

Dr. W. C. M. Scott: 'A New Hypothesis Concerning the Relationship of Libidinal and Aggressive Instincts.'

Dr. Susannah Davidson: 'Influence of Trauma on Character and Development of a Female Patient.'

Dr. C. F. Rycroft: 'Two Notes on Idealization, Illusion and Disillusion as Normal and Abnormal Psychological Processes.'

Dr. D. W. Winnicott: 'Meta-Psychological and Clinical Aspects of Regression within the Psycho-Analytical Set-up.'

Dr. J. M. Taylor: 'In Search of an Identity. Notes on the History of a Manic-depressive Delinquent.'

Dr. H. M. James: 'A Case of Fetishism.'

Dr. M. Balint: 'Fun Fairs, Thrills and Regression.'

Dr. K. Frank: 'A Case of Over-Indulgence.'

Miss P. H. M. King: 'A Patient's Use of Dissociated Fantasy Systems as a Defence Against Anxiety Arising During Separation.'

Dr. A. Davidson: 'The Analysis of a Delusion in a Chronic Paranoid Schizophrenic.'

*The Associate Members' Group.* The Associate Members' Group (Clinical Section, Chairman Dr. A. G. Thompson from June to December 1953, and Dr. S. T. Hayward from January to June 1954) held five meetings.

*1953-54 Membership.* Active Members 84; Associate Members 81; Total 165.

*The 18th International Psycho-Analytical Congress.* The Congress held from 26 to 30 July, 1953, at Bedford College, Regent's Park, was a scientific, social and financial success. The Society was host

to those attending the Congress at a Reception on 26 July. On 27 July the official Reception was tendered by the London County Council. On the day following the Congress the Royal Medico-Psychological Association arranged a special Course of Lectures by Drs. Bartemeier, Jones, Menninger and Zilboorg.

As the outcome of an informal meeting of members of European Training Committees held in London during the Congress, Drs. Gillespie and Winnicott were asked to become the nucleus of a European Committee whose aim would be in the first place to pool information about experience and methods of training in the various countries. As a preliminary, copies of the British Training Regulations, and where relevant translations into French or German, were sent to the training committees of the European societies and to the Israeli Society. We have received replies from all countries and details of training from four societies: Belgian, French, German and Vienna.

It is intended to circulate the results to all the societies concerned and invite their comments.

*Visitors.* During the year visitors from the following Societies attended Scientific Meetings: American, Argentinian, Australian, Brazilian, French, Hungarian, Indian, Israel, Swedish. Dr. Hans Aufreiter, Secretary of the Viennese Society, visited London in November and met most of the members of the Council and Training Committee.

*Obituary.* During the year we have suffered the loss by death of the following members: Dr. K. Stephen on 12 December, 1953, and Dr. D. N. Harcastle on 17 May, 1954. On 30 May, 1954, Dr. C. P. Oberndorf of New York, who had been associated with the Editorial Board of the Journal continuously since 1921, died.

*Branch Society and Sponsored Study Groups*

*The Australian Society of Psycho-Analysts*

*Melbourne Institute for Psycho-Analysis.* Dr. F. W. Graham reports:

The Australian Society held one meeting at which Dr. Clara Lazar Geroe was re-elected President and Dr. F. W. Graham was elected Secretary-Treasurer. Miss Ivy Bennett of Perth was elected to membership. A four-day conference was held.

*Sydney Institute for Psycho-Analysis.* Dr. A. Peto reports:

*Scientific Activities.* The following members of the Institute read papers at the Conference of the Society of Australian Psycho-Analysts held in Melbourne from 1-4 December, 1953: Dr. M. Hall, 'A Case of Obsessional Neurosis'; Mrs. J. Nield, 'Analysis of a 2½-year-old Child'; Dr. A. Peto, 'On Depersonalization'.

Dr. A. Peto was a faculty member and group leader of the Seminar on Mental Health in Childhood which was organized by the World Health Organization and by the Commonwealth of Australia, and held in Sydney from 10 to 27 August,



1953. He held two lectures: (1) Psychoanalytic Theory of Early Personality Development; (2) The Effects of Separation on Childhood.

*Teaching Activities* (Dr. A. Peto). Theoretical Seminar (fortnightly) for members and candidates of the Institute.

Study Group, consisting of members of the Institute and psychiatrists, and reviewing the current psychoanalytical and psychiatric literature. Number of participants: eleven.

Introductory Seminar in co-operation with the Institute of Child Health, University of Sydney, for pediatricians of the Teaching Hospitals. Number of participants: eleven.

#### *The Canadian Society of Psycho-Analysis*

Dr. A. W. MacLeod reports:

A. *Changes in Membership.* It is with great pleasure that the Society reports the election of Dr. Hans Aufreiter to active membership. Dr. Aufreiter has been granted permission to reside in Canada and has taken up his appointment at McGill University. Dr. Gottfriede Aufreiter, his wife, is expected to join him by the middle of July, 1954.

#### B. *Scientific Meetings*

Dr. Bruce Ruddick: 'Slips of the Tongue and Homosexuality.'

Dr. W. C. M. Scott, British Psycho-Analytical Society: 'On the Psychopathology of Disturbances in Time Perception.'

Mme. Francoise Boulanger: 'Study of an Hysterical Lesbian.'

All members participated: 'Problems of Psycho-analytic Technique.'

Dr. Charles Fischer, N.Y. Psychoanalytic Soc.: 'Preconscious and Archaic Modes of Perception in the Formation of Dreams.'

Dr. J. B. Boulanger: 'The Castration Complex in a Case of Male Homosexuality & Fetishism.'

Dr. J. P. Labrecque: 'On Transference & Counter-Transference.'

Dr. D. Lagache, French Psycho-Analytical Soc.: 'Aspects of Transference.'

C. *The Canadian Psychoanalytic Review.* The Canadian Group of Psycho-Analysts has arranged for the publication of its own journal which will carry in full, both in English and French, the text of each scientific paper delivered before the Society. The first issue of the Canadian Psychoanalytic Review will appear towards the end of July, 1954.

D. *Business Meeting.* At the Business Meeting held on 17 October, 1953, the Canadian Society of Psychoanalysts voted to change its name to the Canadian Psychoanalytic Society in preparation for incorporation in the Province of Quebec. The Members of the Society are Members or Associate Members of a Component Society of the International Psycho-Analytical Association. The names of the present Members of the Society are as follows: H. Aufreiter, Francoise Boulanger, J. B. Boulanger (pending election to the French Psycho-Analytic

Soc.), J. P. Labrecque, A. W. MacLeod (President), M. Prados, B. Ruddick (Secretary), E. Wittkower, T. Chentrier.

#### *Institute of Psycho-Analysis*

*Report of the Training Committee as at 30 June, 1954.*

*Meetings and Attendances.* The Training Committee held 14 ordinary meetings during the year: Dr. Scott (Chairman) 14; Dr. Heiman 14; Mrs. Hoffer 14; Dr. Lantos 14; Dr. Payne 14; Dr. Rycroft (Deputy Secretary) 14; Dr. Winnicott (Secretary) 13.

*Students in Training.* On 30 June, 1953, there were 60 students in training. Of these 18 finished their training during the year. The number of students in training on 30 June, 1953, was 67.

*Post-Graduate.* There are 26 students of child analysis: 8 started during the year of whom 2 are associate members and 6 are students. During the year Dr. M. James, Dr. L. Munro and Miss R. Thomas were qualified as child analysts.

*Guest Students.* During the year the following have attended as guest students from overseas: Dr. Guettler (Sweden); Dr. Linneman (Sweden); Dr. Mendes (Brazil).

#### *The Australian Society of Psycho-Analysts*

*Melbourne Institute for Psycho-Analysis.* During the year 1953-54 three students were in training and two students had one case each. (Report from Dr. Clara Lazar Geroe.)

*Sydney Institute of Psycho-Analysis.* Two students are under training at the Sydney Institute. One student (medical) has five adult patients, and one child patient. The other student (non-medical) continues her training in child analysis. (Report from Dr. Andrew Peto.)

#### REPORT FOR THE YEAR 1954-55

The British Psycho-Analytical Society has held eighteen Scientific Meetings during the academic year 1954-55.

The seventh Ernest Jones Lecture was held in March and was given by John Wisdom, Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, with the title 'The Logic of the Unconscious.' This lecture was open to the public.

#### *List of Scientific Meetings (1954-55)*

Dr. W. C. M. Scott: 'Progress in Psychology, Psychiatry, Psycho-Analysis and Psychiatric Social Work.'

Mrs. E. M. Rosenfeld: 'Notes on Infanticide.'

Dr. M. Balint: 'Funfairs, Thrills and Regression—Part II.'

Dr. B. Lantos: 'Comments on the Concept of Sublimation.'

Dr. J. L. Rowley: 'The Importuner.'

Mr. M. Masud R. Khan: 'Notes on Homosexual Episodes in a Male Patient.'



Dr. B. Lantos: 'On the Motivation of Human Relationships.'

Dr. H. Racker: 'On Music.'

Discussion on the *ad hoc* committee's Memorandum on Homosexuality.

Dr. Audrey Davidson: 'Some Aspects of the Analysis of a Depressive Patient.'

Dr. E. Rodrigue: 'Discovery in the Analytical Situation.'

Dr. M. Williams: 'Notes from the Analysis of a Scientist.'

Dr. C. F. Rycroft: 'Symbolism and its Relationship to the Primary and Secondary Processes.'

Mrs. B. Sandford: 'An Obsessional Man's Need to be "Kept"—Part II.'

Miss M. Bavin: 'A Case of Hysterical Bisexuality.'

Dr. A. H. Williams: 'Problems encountered in the Analysis of a Drug Addict.'

Dr. C. Anderson: 'Some Observations from the Analysis of a Horse-Fetishist.'

Dr. D. W. Winnicott: 'Withdrawal and Regression.'

The Clinical Essay Prize for the year 1954 has not been awarded as the papers submitted did not fulfil the requirements.

#### *Branch Societies and Sponsored Study Groups*

##### *The Australian Society of Psycho-Analysts*

*Officers elected for 1955: Chairman:* Dr. R. C. Winn. *Secretary:* Dr. A. Peto.

Dr. A. Peto reports:

The Society held its interstate conference on 'Problems of Technique' from 18-20 June, 1954, in Sydney. The following papers were read:

Dr. S. Fink: 'Patients who Complain' (Sydney).

Dr. C. L. Geroe: 'Acting Out' (Melbourne).

Dr. M. Hall: 'A Case of Schizophrenia' (Sydney).

Mrs. J. Nield: 'Enlightenment in Analysis' (Sydney).

Dr. A. Peto: 'Acting Out' (Sydney).

Dr. H. Southwood: 'A Case of Hysteria' (Adelaide).

Dr. R. Rothfield: 'Fetishism' (Melbourne).

Another interstate conference was held from 11-15 January, 1955, in Adelaide. The following papers were read:

Dr. C. L. Geroe: 'Development and Function of the Ego' (Melbourne).

Dr. M. Hall: 'Homosexuality and Schizophrenia' (Sydney).

Dr. A. Peto: 'A Theory of Play' (Sydney).

Dr. R. Rothfield: 'Problems of Technique' (Melbourne).

Dr. H. Southwood: 'Conversion Hysteria' (Adelaide).

Dr. R. C. Winn: 'Some Aspects of Manic Depression' (Sydney).

Mrs. J. Nield: 'Psychoanalysis of an Adolescent Girl' (Sydney).

Dr. F. W. Graham (Melbourne) and Dr. I. Bennett (Perth) contributed to the discussions.

*Sydney Institute for Psycho-Analysis.* Dr. A. Peto reports:

*Scientific Activities.* Apart from the activities mentioned in the report of the Society, Dr. A. Peto participated as a guest-speaker in a Symposium on Juvenile Delinquency, which was organized by the Australasian Association of Psychiatrists.

*Teaching Activities.* Theoretical Seminar for members and candidates of the Institute.

Study Group consisting of members of the Institute and psychiatrists.

Seminar in co-operation with the Institute of Child Health, University of Sydney, for pediatricians of the Teaching Hospitals.

It is regretted by all members of the British Psycho-Analytical Society that Dr. Clifford Scott was not able to remain President for the past year or to stand for the Presidency for the coming year. He had been offered and had accepted the position of Associate Professor in the University of Montreal, with the acknowledged aim of teaching psycho-analysis to students. Dr. Scott is the first psychoanalyst to hold a professorship to teach psychoanalysis in the Commonwealth.

Dr. Sylvia Payne replaced Dr. Scott as President in October, 1954.

The Freud Centenary Committee was elected this year by the Society.

In the course of the year the British Psycho-Analytical Society was asked to send a representative to give evidence to the British Medical Association Committee on Hypnotism. Dr. Bion kindly consented to do this and we owe him thanks for the valuable contribution which he made and the time and trouble involved.

We have welcomed visitors from the Indian Society, Heidelberg, San Francisco and Buenos Aires.

4 Members were elected during the year.

15 Associate Members were elected during the year.

3 Members from Budapest were transferred—Dr. and Mrs. Levy, and Miss C. Balkanyi.

The Canadian Psychoanalytic Society was incorporated on 5 January, 1955.

#### *Institute of Psycho-Analysis*

*Report of the Training Committee as at 27 May, 1955.*

*Meetings and Attendances.* The out-going Committee held one meeting. Twelve ordinary meetings were held during the year by the Training Committee:

Dr. Payne (*Chairman*); Dr. Heimann (*Joint Sec.*); Mrs. Hoffer (*Joint Sec.*); Dr. Lantos; Mr. Money-Kyrle; Dr. Pratt; Dr. Wride.

*Training Regulations.* The Training Regulations were revised in accordance with the Council's recommendation on 31 May, 1954.



*Financial Assistance to Students.* During the year new loans amounting to £200 have been granted to two students not previously in receipt of loans.

*Students in Training.* On 30 June, 1954, there were 67 students in training. Of these 10 finished their training during the year.

*List of Lectures and Seminars delivered during the Year ended 30 June, 1955*

*First Year Course:* Lectures on 'The Principles of Psycho-Analysis,' Dr. Hoffer.

*Seminars:* Dr. Bonnard, Dr. Rycroft; Miss Joseph, Dr. Lantos, Dr. Munro; Mr. Money-Kyrle, Miss Schwarz.

*Second Year Course.* Lectures on 'Clinical Psycho-Analysis': (a) Perversions and Related Character Disorders, Dr. Gillespie; (b) Neuroses, Dr. Foulkes; (c) Introduction to more recent developments, Dr. Rosenfeld.

Lectures on 'Child Analysis': Course A, Mrs. Bick, Mrs. Klein. Course B, Miss Hellman, Miss Schwarz.

*Seminars (Adult Case):* Dr. Munro, Mrs. Sandford. Course A, Dr. Heimann, Dr. Winnicott. Course B, Mrs. Hoffer.

*Third Year Course.* Lectures on 'Later Developments in Theory,' Dr. Balint, Dr. Payne, Dr. Rycroft, Dr. Winnicott.

Lectures on 'Melanie Klein's Contribution to Theory,' Dr. Segal.

Lectures on 'Psychoses,' Dr. Bion, Dr. Rosenfeld. Combined Course (A and B), Seminars, Dr. Bion, Mrs. Klein; Mrs. Rosenfeld; Dr. Hoffer, Dr. Lantos, Dr. Winnicott.

*Seminars:* Course A, Dr. Gillespie, Dr. Thorner; Dr. Heimann, Mrs. Klein. Course B, Miss Freud.

**DUTCH PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY**  
(*Nederlandse Vereniging Voor Psychoanalyse*)

J. W. Brouwersplein 21, Amsterdam Z

*Officers for the Year 1953-54:* Chairman: Dr. H. G. van der Waals; Secretary: Dr. E. Frijling-Schreuder; Treasurers: Dr. J. Spanjaard, Dr. M. C. Mackenzie-v. d. Noordaa, Mrs. B. C. van d. Stadt-Baas.

The Dutch Psycho-Analytical Society is divided into two sub-groups, the Amsterdam and The Hague groups, both having their own administration and organizing their own lectures and research work. A lively contact, however, exists between the groups.

*Scientific Research:* In co-operation with the Institute, a number of our members are studying the indications and possibilities of analytic therapy, whereas some members are engaged in psychosomatic research. Work on group therapy for students is being continued.

Dr. August Staercke, honorary member of the Dutch Psycho-Analytical Society, died on 16 September, 1954.

*Scientific Meetings*

Dr. L. Hornstra: 'Analysis of a Borderline Case.'

Dr. H. G. van der Waals: 'Remarks on the London Congress.'

Prof. A. Querido: 'The Psychological and Social Constellation of a number of Somatic Complaints.'

Film: 'A Two-year-old goes to the Hospital.'

Prof. Alexander: 'Principles of Psychosomatic Medicine.'

Dr. S. J. Vles: 'A Case of Kleptomania.'

Mrs. G. C. Querido-Nagtegaal: 'Anamneses of Ordinary People.'

*The Training Institute of the Dutch Psycho-Analytical Society*

Twenty-seven candidates were in training in 1954, three of whom were elected associate members of the Society in September, 1954.

During 1954-55 the theoretical lectures and seminars covered the following themes:

*First Year:* Introduction to Psychoanalysis; Freud's Theory of Dreams; Freud's Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality, Hysteria, Obsessional Neurosis.

*Second Year:* Technique; Perversions; The Oedipus- and Castration-Complex; Character Disturbances; Capita Selecta of Freud's Writing.

*Third Year:* Indications for Psychoanalytical Treatment; General Theory of Neurosis; Psychotherapy; Interplay of Neuroses of Parents and Children; Freud's Totem and Taboo; Development of Psychoanalysis during the Last Decades; Deviations from Psychoanalysis (Jung, Reik, Horney, Alexander).

A committee was appointed to revise the activities of the training committee. At the end of 1954 this committee suggested that the rules of the British Institute regarding training be adopted, except for some minor changes. This suggestion was accepted by the general meeting. The most important amendment has been the cancelling of the title of 'training analyst'.

*Training Committee:* R. le Coultre, R. Feith, Dr. Jeanne Lampl-de Groot, Dr. H. A. v. d. Starren (Secretary), Dr. H. G. van der Waals.

**FRENCH PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY**  
(*Société Psychanalytique de Paris*)

187, Rue Saint-Jacques, Paris V<sup>e</sup>

Le Bureau de la Société Psychanalytique de Paris est ainsi constitué pour l'année 1954: *Président:* Dr. Pierre Mâle; *Vice-Président:* Dr. Maurice Bouvet; *Membre-Assesseur:* Dr. Marc Schlumberger; *Secrétaire:* Dr. Pierre Marty; *Trésorier:* Dr. Jean Mallet.

*Activités Scientifiques:*

Exposé du Dr. Michel Fain sur 'Contribution à l'étude du voyeurisme.' Discussion.

Exposé du Dr. Bela Grunberger sur 'Esquisse



d'une théorie psychodynamique du masochisme.' Discussion.

Introduction par le Dr. S. Nacht d'un colloque sur 'Les critères de la fin du traitement psychanalytique.' Discussion.

Conclusions sur le colloque 'Les critères de la fin du traitement psychanalytique' et introduction d'un colloque sur: 'La technique de la fin du traitement psychanalytique.'

Discussion du colloque sur 'La technique de la fin du traitement psychanalytique.'

### *XVII<sup>e</sup> Conference des Psychanalystes de Langues Romanes*

(Paris, 11, 12 et 13 novembre 1954)  
160 Membres Inscrits.

#### *Rapports*

'Le Principe de sécurité' par M. F. Lechat de Bruxelles. Interventions du Dr. Winnicott, de Mme. Marie Bonaparte, du Prof. Servadio, des Drs. Nacht, Berge, Pasche, Cahen, Fain, Held.

'Indications et contre-indications de la psychanalyse' par les Drs. Nacht et Lebovici. Interventions de Mme. Marie Bonaparte, R. de Saussure, Melle Nicolas (de Nancy), des Drs. Bartoleschi, Held.

'Importance du rôle de la motricité dans la relation d'objet,' par les Drs. Marty et Fain. Interventions de Mme. Marie Bonaparte, des Drs. Nacht, Bouvet, Ajuriaguerra, Diatkine, Luquet.

#### *Liste des Membres de la Société Décédés depuis le mois de juillet 1953 :*

Docteur Georges Parcheminey, Président de la Société.

Docteur Charles Odier, Membre Associé de la Société.

Madame Boulanger, Membre Adhérent de la Société.

#### *Institut de Psychanalyse*

#### *Rapport d'Activité*

Durant l'année 1954, l'organisation de l'Institut de Psychanalyse a été aménagée et perfectionnée. La durée des cycles d'études a été augmentée et alignée à la durée de l'année scolaire—comportant trois trimestres allant d'octobre à juillet.

Rappelons que les études comportent 3 cycles d'études, chacun d'une année scolaire:

(1) le cycle A—théorique—auquel le candidat accède au terme de 12 mois pleins d'analyse personnelle. Il comporte des conférences et un séminaire de textes.

(2) le cycle B—clinique—comporte les conférences sur les grands syndromes psychanalytiques et un séminaire de clinique. Ce séminaire est caractérisé par la relation d'une analyse séance par séance, avec commentaires cliniques et théoriques. Il est assuré par un membre de la Commission de l'Enseignement.

(3) le cycle C—technique—comporte des conférences de technique psychanalytique et un séminaire sous la direction d'un membre de la Commission de

l'Enseignement. Ce séminaire est caractérisé par la relation de deux cas thérapeutiques faite par des membres adhérents. Le Directeur du séminaire provoque et oriente la discussion et assume les commentaires cliniques et techniques que nécessite le déroulement de la cure.

Le nombre total de candidats inscrits aux trois cycles est de 46. Certains, en raison de leur expérience et de leurs titres ont été autorisés à un cumul leur permettant une accélération de leurs études.

Par des conférences extraordinaires, l'Institut de Psychanalyse a pu établir une liaison avec des personnalités variées: économistes, médecins, criminologistes, psychanalystes étrangers de passage à Paris, etc. ont été invités à traiter un sujet présentant un point de contact avec notre discipline. Des échanges féconds ont pu être établis.

C'est en Juin 1954 qu'eut lieu l'inauguration officielle de l'Institut de Psychanalyse sous la présidence de Monsieur le Ministre de l'Education Nationale. La relation de cette cérémonie a été faite en son temps.

La présence de Dr. Ernest Jones, doyen des premiers compagnons de Freud fut pour tous un grand honneur et une joie profonde.

Un Centre de Consultations et de Traitements Psychanalytiques est adjoint à notre organisme d'enseignement. Il fonctionne de la manière suivante: Six médecins assurent les consultations quotidiennes de triage, 17 assurent le traitement psychanalytique de 37 malades. Cette activité se trouve déjà limitée par l'insuffisance des locaux.

Les ressources du Centre de Consultations et de Traitements Psychanalytiques sont de deux ordres: Les cotisations des membres titulaires et adhérents assurent le fonctionnement matériel du Centre. Une convention passée avec la Sécurité Sociale a pour conséquence le remboursement à 80% des actes de la cure psychanalytique sur la base d'un tarif d'autorité. Ces recettes permettent de donner une indemnité au médecin traitant.

Tel est brièvement esquissé le bilan des efforts poursuivis depuis la création de l'Institut de Psychanalyse. Les objectifs des années à venir sont: Le perfectionnement des études vers une orientation encore plus clinique et technique. La création d'un Centre de documentation, bibliothèque, fichier. L'extension des activités du Centre de Traitements, déjà insuffisant.

#### *Programme de L'enseignement*

du 1<sup>er</sup> Octobre 1954 au 30 Juin 1955

#### *Cycle A; Théorie Générale de la Psychanalyse:*

Introduction à l'enseignement psychanalytique (Dr. Benassy); Développement de l'enfant (Dr. Mâle); Conférences extraordinaires (Mme. M. Bonaparte); Théorie des rêves (Mme. M. Bonaparte); Etude psychanalytique de la sexualité chez la femme (Mme. M. Bonaparte); Etude psychanalytique de la sexualité chez l'homme (Dr. Cénac); Mécanismes de défense du Moi (Dr. Benassy);



Instincts et développement (Dr. Pasche); Etude des conflits à l'adolescence (Dr. Berge); Psychanalyse et délinquance juvénile (Dr. Lebovici).

*Séminaires de textes.* Séminaire consacré à l'étude de textes freudiens: 'L'homme aux loups' (Dr. Held).

*Cycle B; Clinique Psychanalytique:*

Les conférences seront groupées en 3 colloques trimestriels: Les Nevroses (Directeurs: Dr. Diatkine et Dr. Favreau); Les Psychoses (Directeurs: Dr. Pasche, Dr. Mallet et Dr. Renard); La Médecine psycho-somatique (Directeurs: Dr. Marty, Dr. Held, Dr. Fain).

*Séminaire de Clinique Psychanalytique* sous la direction du Dr. Bouvet.

*Séminaire de Textes Psychanalytiques.* Séminaire consacré à l'étude du Narcissisme (Dr. Pasche).

*Cycle C; Technique Psychanalytique:*

*Le cours théorique du Dr. Nacht*, avec la collaboration des Drs. Schlumberger, Mâle et Bouvet.

*Séminaire de technique psychanalytique* sous la direction du Dr. Nacht.

*Séminaire de Textes Psychanalytiques.* Textes de Ferenczi et de Mélanie Klein (Dr. Grunberger).

#### *La Psychanalyse des Enfants*

*4 colloques consacrés à des discussions théoriques:* Modes de début de la psychanalyse dite précoce (Dr. Lebovici—Mlle Doumic—Mlle Simon—Dr. Dell); Modes de début de la psychanalyse à la période de latence (Dr. Favreau—Dr. Soulé—Dr. Bensoussan); Modes de début de la psychanalyse des adolescents (Dr. Luquet—Dr. Boileau—Dr. Roumajon); Fin de la psychanalyse des enfants (Dr. Diatkine—Dr. Alby—Dr. Garcia Badarraco).

*Séminaires techniques* par Dr. Nguyen et Dr. Lebovici.

*Séminaires de cures contrôlées* (Drs. Lebovici—Diatkine—Favreau—Luquet).

#### GERMAN PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL ASSOCIATION

(*Deutsche Psychoanalytische Vereinigung*)

Berlin-Schmargendorf, Sulzaer Str. 3

*Vorstand; Vorsitzender und Sekretär (Ausland):* Dr. phil. Carl Müller-Braunschweig. *Mitglied des Vorstands:* Dr. med. Gerhard Scheunert. *Sekretär (Inland), Leiter des Unterrichtsausschusses:* Dr. med. Hans March.

#### *Bericht*

über die Tätigkeit der 'Deutschen Psychoanalytischen Vereinigung' und ihres 'Berliner Psychoanalytischen Instituts' über den Zeitraum von Mai 1953 bis Juni 1955.

Die Tätigkeit der Mitglieder der DPV musste sich in den jetzt bald 5 Jahren des Bestehens der Vereinigung in der Hauptsache auf die Ausbildung des Nachwuchses konzentrieren und musste die nicht

der Ausbildung dienende wissenschaftliche Tätigkeit dahinter zurückstellen.

Die durchschnittliche Zahl der Hörer und Ausbildungskandidaten der Kurse des 'Berliner Psychologischen Instituts' beträgt 10 bis 20.

#### *Neue Mitglieder*

Die neu gegründete 'Deutsche Psychoanalytische Vereinigung' besass bei ihrer Gründung 10 ordentliche Mitglieder und 1 ausserordentliches Mitglied. Gegenwärtig besteht die Vereinigung aus 10 ordentlichen und 5 ausserordentlichen Mitgliedern.

Von dem Anfangsbestand von 10 ordentlichen Mitgliedern haben wir am 9. April 1954, Frau Margarete Steinbach, die seit März 1951 in Madrid eine neue Gruppe von Psychoanalytikern ausgebildet hat, durch den Tod verloren. Herr Heilbrun ist der Wiener Psychoanalytischen Vereinigung beigetreten.

#### *Einführung einer Prüfung als Abschluss der Ausbildung*

Wir haben uns dazu entschlossen, den Abschluss der Ausbildung und damit die Aufnahme als Mitglied in die Vereinigung durch Einführung einer mündlichen Prüfung zu erweitern.

#### *Die Vorlesungsverzeichnisse 1953-1955 Winter Semester 1953/54*

Käte Dräger: Seminar zum Thema der Uebertragung und Gegenübertragung.

Hans March: Falldarstellungen an Hand gerichtl. Gutachten.

Carl Müller-Braunschweig: Freud und Kant.

Carl Müller-Braunschweig: Uebungen zum Schrifttum der theoretischen Psychoanalyse.

Gerhart Scheunert: Spezielle Neurosenlehre.

Carl Müller-Braunschweig u. A.: Technisches Seminar.

Marie-Louise Werner: Seminar über Freuds Schriften zur Technik.

Wolfgang Schoene (a. G.): Ueber die Anwendung der Psychoanalyse auf Probleme der Ethnologie und Soziologie.

#### *Sommer Semester 1954*

Carl Müller-Braunschweig: Uebungen zum Schrifttum der theoretischen Psychoanalyse.

Marie-Louise Werner: Die Bedeutung der kindlichen Erlebnisse und Phantasien für die Neurose des Erwachsenen—auf Grund der psa. Beobachtungen und Erfahrungen.

Gerhart Scheunert: Spezielle Neurosenlehre.

Wolfgang Schoene (a. G.): Ueber die Anwendung der Psychoanalyse auf Probleme der Ethnologie und Soziologie.

Carl Müller-Braunschweig und Hans March: Technisches Seminar.

Käte Dräger: Seminar über Theorie und Analyse des Widerstandes.



Gerhart Scheunert: Seminar über zeitgenössische psa. Literatur des Auslands.

*Sommer Semester 1954: Informatorische Vorlesungen*

Käte Dräger: Der Traum.

Hans March: Der Psychotherapeut.

Ingeborg Kath: Zur Psychopathologie des Alltagslebens.

Marie-Louise Werner: Die Bedeutung der Kindheitserlebnisse für die Neurose des Erwachsenen.

Carl Müller-Braunschweig: Die Rolle der Eigenanalyse (Lehranalyse) in der Ausbildung des Psychoanalytikers.

Gerhart Scheunert: Die Bedeutung des Vaters im Lichte der psa. Psychologie.

*Winter Semester 1954/55*

Carl Müller-Braunschweig: Übungen zur Analyse des Traumes.

Marie-Louise Werner: Theorie und Praxis der Kinderanalyse.

Gerhart Scheunert: Allgemeine Neurosenlehre.

Gerhart Scheunert: Seminar über zeitgenössische psa. Literatur des Auslands.

Wolfgang Schoene (a. G.): Seminar über die Problematik des Geschlechtscharakters.

Carl Müller-Braunschweig: Einführung in die Psychoanalyse.

Käte Dräger: Seminar über Theorie und Analyse des Widerstandes und der Uebertragung.

Carl Müller-Braunschweig und Hans March: Technisches Seminar.

*Sommer Semester 1955*

Carl Müller-Braunschweig: Übungen zum Schrifttum der theoretischen Psychoanalyse.

Marie-Louise Werner: Theorie und Praxis der Kinderanalyse.

Gerhart Scheunert: Allgemeine Neurosenlehre.

Gerhart Scheunert: Seminar über zeitgenössische psychoanalytische Literatur des Auslands.

Käte Dräger: Seminar über Freuds Krankengeschichten.

Carl Müller-Braunschweig: Einführung in die Psychoanalyse.

Horst-Eberhardt Richter: Technik der anamnестischen Exploration.

Carl Müller-Braunschweig und Hans March: Technisches Seminar.

**ITALIAN PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY**  
(*Società Psicoanalitica Italiana*)

Via delle Rose 3, Bologna, Italy

*Officers: President:* Prof. Cesare Musatti. *Vice-President:* Prof. Emilio Servadio. *Secretary:* Dr. Egon Molinari.

*Training Analysts:* Dr. C. Modigliani, Prof. C. Musatti, Prof. N. Perrotti, Prof. E. Servadio, Mrs. A. Tomasi di Palma.

*XVIe Conférence des Psychanalystes de Langues Romanes (XVIth Conference of the Psychoanalysts of Romance Languages).*

This Conference was organized by the Italian Psychoanalytic Society in co-operation with the Société Psychanalytique de Paris. It was held in Rome from 21-24 September, 1953. Several Italian, French, Belgian and South American analysts participated. Reports were presented by Prof. E. Servadio ('Function of Pre-oedipal Conflicts'), Drs. S. Lebovici and R. Diatkine ('Study of the Phantasms in the Child') and Dr. Pasche ('Anxiety and the Freudian Theory of Instincts'). A lecture, accompanied by a film, was given by Dr. R. Spitz of New York.

*Other Conferences*

The Italian Psychoanalytic Society was represented by some of its members at the International Congress of Psychotherapy (Zurich, 1954), at the 17th Conference of the Psychoanalysts of Romance Languages (Paris, 1954), and at the 10th Convention of Italian Psychologists (Chianciano, 1954).

*Conferences of Candidates*

Candidates in advanced training have convened twice to discuss special analytical problems: 'The Preconscious' and 'Counter-Transference'. Senior analysts attended sessions of both Conferences.

*Seminars*

Seminars on 'Dreams' (Prof. N. Perrotti), 'Perversions' (Prof. E. Servadio) and 'Clinical Psychoanalysis' (Prof. C. Musatti, Prof. N. Perrotti, Prof. E. Servadio) were held in Rome and Milan for candidates in training.

A Seminar on Child Analysis was held by Dr. S. Lebovici (by invitation).

*Candidates in Training*

By April, 1955, the Italian Psychoanalytic Society had 12 candidates undergoing personal analysis, and about 20 candidates in advanced training or doing control work.

*Bulletin*

An official Bulletin of the Italian Psychoanalytic Society was started in 1954.

*Lectures*

Several lectures on analytic subjects were given in Italian Universities and to learned societies by Prof. C. Musatti, Prof. E. Servadio and Prof. N. Perrotti. Prof. Servadio also lectured on several occasions on the Italian Radio.

Members of other Component Societies have visited the Italian Psychoanalytic Society, and some of them have given lectures or held short seminars. From the United States came Dr. D. Rapaport, Dr. L. Eidelberg, Dr. J. Eisenbud, Dr. S. Lorand, Dr. A. Maenchen, Mrs. L. Peller. From the United Kingdom, Dr. H. K. Thorner.



## SWEDISH PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY

(Svenska Psykoanalytiska Foreningen)

*Officers:* Nils Haak, M.D. (*Chairman*); Gosta Harding, M.D. (*Vice-Chairman*); Tore Ekman, lektor (*Secretary*); Erik Reinius, M.D. (*Treasurer*); Lajos Szekely, Ph.D. (*Librarian*).

## Vortraege

Dr. Højer-Pedersen: 'Psychoanalytische Gesichtspunkte zur Genese der Ulcuskrankheit.'

Therese Merzbach: 'Ein Fall von Transveritismus.'

Magister Ola Andersson: 'Einige Zuege in der fruehen wissenschaftlichen Entwicklung Freuds im Lichte seiner Korrespondenz mit Fliess.'

Dr. Torsten Sjovall: 'Ein psychosomatischer Fall.'

Fil. lic. Anna-Stina Rilton: 'Agieren als magische Abwehr bei einem zwangsneurotischen Mann.'

Dr. Lajos Szekely: 'Zur Entstehung der Latenzzeit.'

Dr. Nils Haak: 'Einige Gesichtspunkte zur Uebertragung.'

Magister Stefi Pedersen: 'Psychoanalyse eines Falles mit Obsessionen.'

Dr. Bjerg Hansen: 'Arztberuf und Neurose.'

## Seminarier

*Herbst 1954:* Klinisches Seminar (Ekman). Klinisches Seminar (Haak). Theoretisches Seminar (Lajos Szekely).

*Fruehling 1955:* Klinisches Seminar (Ekman). Klinisches Seminar (Haak). Theoretisches Seminar (Lajos Szekely).

Anzahl der Ausbildungskandidaten: 16, wovon 5 in der Sitzung vom 10 Juni 1955 ausserordentliche Mitglieder geworden sind.

## SWISS PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY

(Schweizerische Gesellschaft für Psychoanalyse)

*Officers:* *Präsident:* Dr. Philipp Sarasin. *Kassier:* Dr. H. Bänziger. *Aktuar:* Dr. Hans Zulliger. *1. Beisitzer:* Mlle M. Rambert. *2. Beisitzer:* Dr. Raymond de Saussure. *Bibliothekar:* Dr. Medard Boss.

## Sitzungen;

Vorstandssitzungen	1
Geschäftssitzungen	7
Wissenschaftliche Sitzungen	9

## Wissenschaftliche Arbeiten

Dr. h. c. Hans Zulliger: 'Blitzheilung.'

Dr. M. Emery: 'A propos d'une tranche d'analyse d'un homosexuel latent.'

Prof. Dr. E. Schneider: 'Inzestneigung und Inzestschranke in Leben, Neurose und Mythos.'

Mme. Germaine Guex: 'Sens du symptôme et de sa disparation dans un cas de colite ulcéreuse.'

Dr. med. A. Friedemann: 'Psychotherapeutische Grundhaltung und Gutachtertätigkeit.'

Dr. med. G. R. Reding: 'Un cas d'impuissance.'

Direktor Dr. med. A. Kielholz: 'Vom Kairos. Zum Problem der Kurpfuscherei.'

Madame M. Séchehaye: 'Analyse d'une nevrose traumatique chez une femme de 60 ans.'

Prof. Dr. med. E. Krapf: 'Ueber die Sprachwahl in der Psychoanalyse von Polyglotten durch Polyglotte.'

## VIENNA PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY

(Wiener Psychoanalytische Vereinigung)

*Jahresbericht 1954/55 für die Generalversammlung am 20. April 1955*

*Vorstand:* Dr. Alfred Winterstein (*Obmann*); Dr. Wilhelm Solms (*Sekretär*); Dr. Lambert Bolterauer (*Kassier*).

Das abgelaufene Vereinsjahr 1954/55 stand im Zeichen zweier Freud-Feiern. Am Vorabend der Enthüllung der Gedenktafel an Professor Freuds ehemaligem Wohnhaus, am 5. Mai 1954, hielt Obmann Dr. Winterstein in der Vereinigung vor geladenen Gästen einen Festvortrag über 'Die inneren Beziehungen des Menschen und Forschers Freud zu Goethe'. Anschliessend fand ein Bankett im Rathauskeller statt. Am 6. Mai wurde vormittags die Enthüllung der Gedenktafel vorgenommen. Nach Professor Dr. Ruemke (Utrecht), dem Präsidenten der World Federation for Mental Health und Initiator der Freud-Ehrung, Professor Dr. Hoff und dem Vertreter des Bürgermeisters der Stadt Wien sprach Obmann Dr. Winterstein.

In der zweiten Hälfte Mai übersiedelte Dr. Hans Aufreiter nach Montreal (Kanada), um in der Kanadischen Psychoanalytischen Gesellschaft als Lehranalytiker tätig zu sein. Frau Dr. Aufreiter folgte ihm Anfang Juli. Die durch das Ausscheiden Dr. Hans Aufreiters freigewordene Stelle im Lehrausschuss übernahm das Ersatzmitglied, Dr. Tea Genner-Erdheim.

Da die zur Ernennung als Lehranalytiker ursprünglich festgesetzten strengen Bedingungen von der seit längerer Zeit gepflegten Praxis inzwischen überholt wurden, erfolgte in der a. o. Generalversammlung vom 21. September eine Neuregelung. Sie besagt, dass der Lehrausschuss Mitglieder zu Lehranalytikern bestellen kann, die als ordentliche Mitglieder mindestens fünf Jahre klinische Erfahrung in der Psychoanalyse haben. Der Lehrausschuss behält sich das Recht vor, ausnahmsweise einen Analytiker mit weniger als fünf Jahren klinischer Erfahrung im Lehrplan zu beschäftigen, wenn seine Arbeit hohen Anforderungen entspricht und ein dringender Bedarf besteht. Bisher hatten nur Obmann Dr. Winterstein und Dr. Hans Aufreiter den Status eines Lehranalytikers. Es wurden nunmehr auch zu Lehranalytikern ernannt: Dr. Solms, Dozent Dr. Bolterauer und Frau Dr. Bolterauer, Dr. Genner-Erdheim, und Frau Dr. Aufreiter.

Am 4. Februar wurde die von Dr. Ernest Jones



gespendete Büste Professor Freuds im Arkadenhof der Universität Wien enthüllt. Die Kosten des Sockels waren von den Mitgliedern und Kandidaten der Vereinigung aufgebracht worden. Am Vorabend gab die Vereinigung zu Ehren der ausländischen Gäste (Prof. Dr. E. Krapf aus Buenos-Aires samt Frau und Dr. Leo Bartemeier aus U.S.A.) ein Bankett im Rathauskeller. Der eigentliche Festakt fand am Morgen des folgenden Tages im grossen Festsaal der Universität statt. Nach der Ansprache des Rektors, Prof. Dr. Johann Radon, des Dekans, Prof. Dr. Franz Brücke, Professor Hoffs, Professor Krapfs und Dr. Bartemeiers hielt Obmann Dr. Winterstein einen Vortrag über 'Leben und Wirken Freuds'. Zum Abschluss nahm der Rektor das Denkmal in den Ehrenschatz der Universität; auch die Vereinigung legte einen Kranz am Sockel nieder.

Am 11. Februar wurde Dr. Margarete Stepan zum a. o. Mitglied gewählt. Frau Dr. Stepan folgte einer Berufung durch die Weltgesundheitsorganisation nach Bangkok (Thailand), wo sie bei der Einrichtung einer Childguidance-Klinik mitwirken, als klinische Psychologin tätig sein und klinische Psychologen ausbilden soll.

Die Zahl der ordentlichen Mitglieder beträgt derzeit einschliesslich der im Ausland weilenden Mitglieder fünfzehn. Dr. Theon Spanudis wird auf Grund eines Beschlusses der Generalversammlung vom 27. April 1954 nicht mehr als Mitglied geführt.

Die Zahl der ausserordentlichen Mitglieder beläuft sich auf vier. Dr. Hans Hoff ist Ehrenmitglied. Ausbildungskandidaten: 15.

#### *Vorlesungen und Seminare Sommersemester 1954*

##### *Für Ausbildungskandidaten:*

Dr. Alfred Winterstein: Spezielle Neurosenlehre.  
Dozent Dr. Lambert Bolterauer: Freud Seminar.  
Dr. Hans Aufreiter: Kasuistisches Seminar.

##### *Im Rahmen der August-Aichhorn-Gesellschaft*

Dr. Erich Heilbrun: 'Einführung in die Psychoanalyse.'

Dr. Wilhelm Solms: 'Trunksucht bei Frauen'.

#### *Wintersemester 1954/55*

##### *Für Ausbildungskandidaten:*

Dr. Alfred Winterstein: 'Analytische Normalpsychologie'; 'Allgemeine Neurosenlehre'.  
Dozent Dr. Lambert Bolterauer: Freud Seminar.  
Dr. Tea Genner-Erdheim: Kasuistisches Seminar.

##### *Im Rahmen der August-Aichhorn-Gesellschaft*

Dr. Erich Heilbrun: 'Einführung in die Psychoanalyse'.

Dr. Alfred Winterstein: 'Zur Prophylaxe der Neurosen.'

Frau Rosa Dworschak: 'Die Pflegeeltern und ihre Probleme.'

## ASIA

### INDIAN PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY

14 Parsibagan Lane, Calcutta 9, India

#### *Report for 1954*

*Members and Associates.* The number of Members was 20 and the number of Associate Members was 25.

*Business Meetings.* The 32nd Annual Meeting was held on 23 March, 1954. The office-bearers, Council of the Society, Board of the Institute and various Committees were elected for the year 1954.

*Officers:* Dr. S. C. Mitra (*President*); Mr. T. C. Sinha (*Secretary*); Mr. M. K. Barua (*Librarian*); Mr. A. Datta (*Asst. Secretary*); Dr. D. N. Nandi (*Asst. Secretary*); Mrs. H. Gupta (*Asst. Librarian*).

*Council of the Society:* Mr. M. V. Amrith, Mr. M. K. Barua, Dr. N. De, Mr. H. P. Maiti, Dr. S. C. Mitra, and Mr. T. C. Sinha.

*Board of the Institute:* Dr. N. De, Mr. B. Desai, Mr. H. P. Maiti, Dr. S. C. Mitra, Dr. K. L. Shrimali and Mr. T. C. Sinha.

*Journal Committee:* Mr. M. V. Amrith, Dr. B. K. Bose, Dr. N. N. Chatterjee, Mr. A. Datta, Dr. N. De, Dr. A. K. Dev, Dr. S. C. Mitra, and Mr. T. C. Sinha.

*Scientific Meeting.* Dr. N. N. Chatterjee read a paper on 'Object Choice in Hysterical Women'.

*Social Activity.* The members of the Society met Mrs. Anna Maenchen, Ph.D., Vice-President of the San Francisco Psychoanalytic Institute, at a tea party given by the Society on 18 December, 1954. Dr. Maenchen and Dr. Rech were also present.

*Indian Psycho-Analytical Institute.* One candidate was admitted; number of candidates in training 8, two of whom were doing control work.

*Training and Control Analysts:* Dr. N. De, Dr. Edith Ludowyk-Gyomroi, Mr. H. P. Maiti, Dr. S. C. Mitra and Mr. T. C. Sinha.

*Training Analysts:* Mr. M. V. Amrith, Mr. R. M. Patel and Dr. K. L. Shrimali.

#### *33rd Annual General Meeting (29 March, 1955)*

The following office-bearers, members of the Council, Board of the Institute and various Committees were elected for the year 1955:

*Officers:* Dr. S. C. Mitra (*President*); Mr. T. C. Sinha (*Secretary*); Mr. M. K. Barua (*Librarian*); Mr. A. Datta (*Asst. Secretary*); Dr. D. N. Nandi (*Asst. Secretary*); Mrs. Hashi Gupta (*Asst. Librarian*).

*Council of the Society:* Mr. M. V. Amrith, Mr. M. K. Barua, Dr. N. De, Mr. H. P. Maiti, Dr. S. C. Mitra, and Mr. T. C. Sinha.

*Board of the Institute:* Mr. B. Desai, Dr. N. N. Chatterji, Dr. N. De, Mr. H. P. Maiti, Dr. S. C. Mitra, and Mr. T. C. Sinha.

*Journal Committee:* Mr. M. V. Amrith, Dr. B. K. Bose (*Asst. Editor*), Dr. N. N. Chatterjee, Mr. A. Datta, Dr. N. De (*Editor*), Dr. A. K. Dev, Dr. S. C. Mitra, C. V. Ramana and T. C. Sinha.



## ISRAEL PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY

*(Chewrah Psycho-Analitit B'Israel)**Report for the Period May, 1953-May, 1955*

In den letzten Jahren hat das Interesse an der Analyse und ihre Anerkennung in ganzen Lande erheblich zugenommen. Das kam zum Ausdruck in der Bitte an unsere Mitglieder um Mitarbeit an verschiedenen Behandlungen und Beratungsstellen und der intensiven Zusammenarbeit mit der Medical School der Hebraeischen Universitaet, Jerusalem. Drei unserer Kollegen: Dr. Gumbel, Professor Rothschild und Professor Winnik halten Vorlesungen und Seminare fuer die Medizinstudenten ab und beschaeftigen sich besonders mit der Ausbildung junger Psychiater. Die Zahl der Psychiater, die sich bei uns zur Ausbildung in der Psychoanalyse meldeten, ist sehr gestiegen. Diese erfreuliche Zunahme ist zum Teil zuzuschreiben der Entwicklung der Psychiatrischen Abteilung der Medical School der Hebraeischen Universitaet, zum Teil der Errichtung des 'Eitingon-Fonds', den Professor Milton Rosenbaum (Cincinnati) aus Beitraegen unserer amerikanischen Kollegen gesammelt hat. Dieser Fond gibt den von unserer Gesellschaft als Ausbildungskandidaten anerkannten Kollegen Anleihen zur Finanzierung ihrer Trainingsanalysen.

Es sind zur Zeit 16 Kandidaten in Ausbildung, darunter 3 Laien, die schon seit vielen Jahren mit der Vereinigung verbunden sind und in verschiedenen Institutionen mit Kindern und Jugendlichen arbeiten. Sie werden demnaechst als Mitglieder aufgenommen werden, mit der Verpflichtung, sich auf dieses Gebiet zu beschaerken.

Es besteht die Tendenz in steigendem Masse, nur Aerzte aufzunehmen, und die Formulierung entsprechender Statuten ist in Vorbereitung.

Ein wichtiges Ereignis fuer uns war die Ueber-siedlung des Instituts in neue Raeume in der Disraelistr. 13.

*Trainingskomitee:* bestehend aus Dr. Barag, Dr. Brandt, Dr. Gumbel, Frau Weiss-Statthagen, Prof. Winnik.

*Lehrberechtigung haben:* Dr. Barag, Dr. Brandt, Dr. Gruenspan, Dr. Gumbel, Dr. Lowtzky, Dr. Smiliansky, Prof. Winnik und Dr. Wulff.

Professor George Mohr (aus Chicago), der fuer ein Jahr als Direktor des Lasker-Centres, der Hadassah herkam, uebernahm waehrend dieser Zeit die Kontrolle der Kinderfaelle unserer Kandidaten.

Es wurden folgende Kurse und Seminare abgehalten: fuer Kandidaten:

*In Jerusalem:* Dr. Brandt: Gruppenbesprechungen laufender Behandlungen. Dr. Gumbel: Technisches Seminar. Prof. Winnik: Literaturseminar ueber Ich-Psychologie.

*In Tel-Aviv:* Dr. Wulff: Literaturseminar.

In allen Staedten wurde die Arbeit von Heilpädagogogen und 'case workers' kontrolliert.

*Wissenschaftliche Vortraege*

Dr. Bental: 'Pathogenitaet von Zwillingstum Schwestern.'

Dr. Kainer: 'Fall von Neurose und Perversion.'

Prof. Rosenbaum (als Gast): 'Die Wichtigkeit frueherer Erinnerungen in der Aufnahmebesprechung.'

Prof. Schur (Gast): 'Angst und Ich-Entwicklung.'

Dr. Silberman (Gast): 'Ich-Entwicklung.'

Dr. Haas: 'Analyse einer Depression.'

Dr. Zellermayer: 'Erfahrungen mit psychosomatischen Patienten im Krankenhaus.'

Dr. Lowtzky: 'Wirkliche und neurotische Aggression.'

Prof. Winnik: 'Eindruecke ueber die beiden analytischen Richtungen in England.'

Dr. Rothschild: 'Unechtheit und Unsicherheit des Selbst als Basis fuer psychische Erkrankung.'

Alice Weiss: 'Teil einer Kinderanalyse.'

Peller (Gast): 'Libido Stufen und Spielentwicklung.'

Dr. Maenchen (Gast): 'Einige Bemerkungen ueber die Psychologie des Analytikers.'

Dr. Peler: 'Neue Forschungsergebnisse in der Psychologie junger Kinder, gegruendet auf psychoanalytische Theorie.'

Dr. Wulff: 'Ich-Identifizierung und Triebleben.'

Von unseren Mitgliedern verstarb Dr. Idelson, Tel Aviv, am 19.10.1954.

SENDAI PSYCHOANALYTIC SOCIETY  
(JAPAN)

Heisaku Kosawa, M.D., was elected in July, 1954, to succeed the late Dr. Kiyoyasu Marui, as President of the Sendai Psycho-Analytical Society.

1. Activities of the Sendai Psychoanalytic Society since 1953:

(a) Academic: Lecture courses have been organized at the Hirosaki and the Hiroshima Universities on psychoanalysis, as part of the study of psychopathology.

(b) Training: Technical guidance has been given to members of the faculties.

2. Activities of the Psychoanalytic Research Institute (Tokyo):

(a) Academic: Monthly meeting: Lectures on basic theories; study of individual cases; publication of a monthly organ called Seishin Bunseki Kankyu (The Psycho-analytic Research).

(b) Educational: Six men (one from the Kyushu University and five from the Keio University) are under educational training.

(c) Other activities: There is a group for academic studies of psycho-analysis. Faculty members of the Kyushu and the Niigata Universities are its nucleus.



# THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

Vol. XXXVIII

1957

Part 2

## ORAL-DIGESTIVE SUPEREGO AGGRESSIONS AND ACTUAL CONFLICTS IN PEPTIC ULCER PATIENTS

By

ANGEL GARMA, BUENOS AIRES

In two articles published in this journal, after mentioning other theories, such as those of G. Draper, F. Alexander, R. W. Pickford, T. Szasz and G. F. Mahl, I developed my own theory about the genesis of peptic ulcers. Very concisely, it could be referred to as the theory of a bad internalized mother acting aggressively upon an individual in oral-digestive regression.<sup>1</sup>

This theory holds that when an individual is in partial oral-digestive regression because of the complications in his childhood instinctive evolution and happens to be living in a harmful environmental situation (a frequent example is love-dependence upon an aggressive person who does not satisfy sexually), then the internal aggressions of his representations of a bad internalized mother (maternal superego) against his ego and his id are intensified in him. Because of the oral-digestive regression in this individual, the aforementioned aggressions preferably take on unconscious oral-digestive aspects, such as sucking or biting ('re-morse', from 'mordere, mors'—to bite) the digestive tract. Besides, the representations of a bad internalized mother in his superego force this individual to the masochistic behaviour of provoking alimentary disorders and of ingesting indigestible or insufficient food. This food may harm him by itself or through the psychic cathexis he places upon it, or upon the alcohol or tobacco he consumes. All this, acting locally or through nervous and hormonal processes, may give rise in the stomach and duodenum to chlorhydropeptic hypersecretion, hyperperistalsis and muscular spasms, stasis

and vascular spasms, a decrease in the efficiency of the gastro-duodenal mucous barrier, lack of certain amino-acids and antacid hormones, and other organic disorders, that finally lead to peptic ulcer.

The intention of the present paper is to go deeper into the understanding of the oral-digestive internal aggressions of the representations of the bad internalized mother in ulcer-patients, and how they are reactivated by actual conflicts. Therefore I will first of all describe the pathogenesis of a typical case of gastric ulcer.

### Case 1

The patient is a 45-year-old man with an ulcer in the lesser curvature of the stomach, visible under X-rays. In situations of conflict, such as that brought on by the frigidity of his wife, he was inevitably afflicted with heartburn after meals, besides helping to bring it on by ingesting food difficult to digest or by smoking excessively.

His family had become bankrupt, and during all his childhood he was forced to depend upon some miserly relations. On the other hand his mother, although apparently very fond of him, was really much more interested in herself and her personal satisfaction and forced him to work for her.

The *pathogenesis* of his heartburn could be traced to the fact that the painful environmental circumstances he had had to accept acted against him just as if they were indigestible food he had had to swallow and which attacked his stomach. He said that what had caused his ulcer and kept it going was that he had 'had to swallow the rotten

<sup>1</sup> I use the term oral-digestive, more far-reaching than simply oral, because since Freud demonstrated that the instincts of the ego are also sexual instincts, everything that happens in the mouth, stomach, and intestine should

be included in the first stage of the libidinous organization, the finality of which is the assimilation of food. This inclusion is indispensable for the understanding of psychosomatic digestive disorders.



years' of his painful childhood, and that both then and now 'owing to his character, he had to swallow annoying things' in his environment. Not only that, but he himself, with his neurotic behaviour 'sought nails' which hurt his stomach inside.

This pathogenesis also came up in his dreams. Thus, one day he had heartburn because his wife reacted with frigidity during sexual intercourse. This reactivated conscious and unconscious memories of other frustrations and aggressions suffered previously, and subsequently he dreamed of 'two black wooden balls covered with snow'. His associations showed that the cold snow symbolized the frigidity of his wife, and that the black wooden balls stood for his wife's two 'cold' breasts behind which was the image of his mother's breasts considered bad because of her lack of affection towards him and also because of her aggressions. Finally, and connected with a recent ingestion of harmful food, the balls of his dream represented some bad-tasting hamburgers he had eaten in a restaurant on that day, which had harmed him by very reason of the painful situation with his wife at that time. This whole group of bad stimuli brought on chlorhydric hypersecretion and a great sensitivity of his stomach to digestive juices which he perceived as heartburn.

Hardly concealed by their manifest contents, in many other dreams typical masochistic regressive oral-digestive latent contents were found. They could be summarized as follows: 'I had to go and eat with my aunt, and this prevented me from joining my wife.' Joining his wife symbolized his genitality and well-being in life; on the other hand, having to eat with his aunt stood for his subjection to her and even more to his own mother. Owing to his oral-digestive regression, the patient felt forced to eat the food his mother and aunt gave him, which was sure to upset his stomach because of the unfavourable psychic cathexis he had put upon it. In other of his dreams the oral-digestive regression did not exist, and individuals representing his aunt and his mother appeared in them, castrating him genitally in a symbolic way.

The patient suffered the consequences of his oral-digestive masochistic reaction not only in his stomach, but also in another digestive organ—his mouth. When he started his psycho-analytical treatment, almost all his teeth were missing, and his false teeth were so ill-fitting that they produced the sensation of a strange, pernicious body in his mouth, suffocating him. The need of having to have his teeth extracted symbolized a genital castration. The castration, displaced to his mouth by an oral-digestive regression, was like the one he experienced when dreaming of his aunt. The troublesome set of teeth in his mouth was a symbolic representative of his annoying relatives, principally of his bad internalized mother who, he felt, was provoking his indigestion from his inside and also harming his digestive tract.

The patient experienced painful psychic situations as if they were harmful food attacking his stomach. He often favoured this displacement by eating food that was difficult to digest or by smoking excessively. In the first place, the really harmful food, or the food he imagined to be harmful, stood for the persons who at present behaved badly towards him, who in turn represented his aggressive, covetous aunt and, lastly, his own mother, above all in her bad behaviour during his childhood. In his psycho-analytical associations the bad mother was usually screened by his bad aunt, who was less difficult to criticize.

Psycho-analysing with greater detail his reaction to painful circumstances and also his subjection to his bad internalized mother who forced him to the ingestion of harmful food, it was found that he unconsciously felt he was being sucked, bitten, or pierced by his mother or her substitutes, who quite often were other relatives.

For instance, he could not stand the presence of people who ate greedily, chewing noisily and showing their teeth, because this made him feel as if they would devour him. Something similar happened in his dreams. In one of them some Indians, to whom he was chained, pursued him, and other persons representing him, with spears; later on the Indians changed into bats which circled around them as if they wanted to suck their blood. The Indians with spears symbolized his relatives who came from the north of the Argentine (where most of the population is Indian), but principally his aunt and his mother who were aggressive in a phallic way and who sucked as bats do, and to whom he felt chained by strong infantile bonds, symbolized by the chains of the dream.

The patient complained of spermatorrhoea when defecating or of losing a whitish liquid—which he believed was semen—with his urine. He also fancied it was blood his relatives drew out of him. In a certain way his aunt had actually taken blood from him, because he had had to give it for a transfusion after she underwent an operation. He did so urged on by his mother, who repeated continuously to him how grateful he ought to be; with this his mother referred indirectly to herself.

The submitting, harmful, and traumatic fixation of the patient towards his mother and her later substitutes (his aunt and his mother-in-law) also appeared in another of his dreams accompanied by pollution. (Dreams with pollution appeared in him when he had a genital excitation with masochistic contents). In one of them, he dreamed that in his aunt's house he touched the breasts of an old woman who was with a man, or that he rubbed his penis against her buttocks and so had a pollution. The old woman was his 'old woman', i.e. his mother, to whom he was masochistically fixated. That is why the pollution happened when he dreamed about her instead of dreaming of a more attractive woman. This was also indicated by the



fact that he dreamed of his aunt's house, i.e. he considered her a harmful maternal substitute.

The harmful fixation of the patient to these relatives made him accept their disagreeable behaviour which, owing to his oral-digestive regression, was for him like eating harmful food from these relatives, and suffering consequent digestive troubles. In view of this basic unconscious psychic situation it is logical that the patient consciously aimed at provoking the opposite attitude in his relatives, of giving him food that would not upset him, in order to feel better. This, of course, was a fantasy of only partial liberation, because even with good food the patient maintained a harmful oral-digestive fixation and neither solved his conflicts nor achieved adequate social or genital behaviour.

The patient satisfied his oral-digestive ambition of good food principally with his mother-in-law. For instance, following a quarrel he was often able to relieve his heartburn by eating, apparently with great pleasure, the meals she gave him; she thus once gave him fritters that were usually indigestible for him. On another occasion, when he was full of anxiety and had a stomach-ache because of the presence in his house of people he could not compete with, he felt better after doing something like having a good meal; he joined his wife in the kitchen whilst she prepared lunch. When the patient realized the meaning of all this, he stated that he had sought this food as someone who 'takes a sedative that stupefies'. When giving it to him, his relatives behaved towards him as if he were a child 'to whom one gives a disagreeable laxative hidden in tasty food'. For this reason he also liked strongly seasoned food, typical of the region from which his parents came and which harmed him digestively.

These unconscious contents of being sucked, bitten, pierced, deprived of good food, or forced to eat harmful food, alcohol, or tobacco by the internalized bad mother are found more often in psycho-analytical treatment of ulcer patients than in that of other neurotic or psychosomatic patients. They are also very frequent in pseudo-ulcer patients, that is to say, those who have ulcerous symptoms but no visible organic lesion. (See, for example, the case described on pages 63-71 of my book: *Génesis psicósomática y tratamiento de las úlceras gástricas y duodenales*, or case 4 in my paper: 'The Internalized Mother as Harmful Food in Peptic Ulcer Patients').

Moreover, it often happens that the aforementioned oral aggressions by the bad internalized mother are more easily visible in pseudo-ulcer patients than in ulcer cases. An important confirmation of this is the noteworthy study of J. L. Halliday on Thomas Carlyle, who for sixty years suffered from peptic ulcer pains without having an ulcer.

Halliday shows very clearly how Carlyle's digestive pains were provoked by his representations of a bad internalized mother who sucked and bit his digestive tract and forced him to eat food that did not agree with him digestively. According to Halliday, 'Carlyle had eaten and swallowed his mother . . . who was a bad thing within him, that tormented him constantly and that gave rise to the symptom of a nightmare in which "a rat would be gnawing my stomach"'. Carlyle 'was extremely frugal', depriving himself too much of good food. Besides, as he himself describes it, he ate harmful food; 'If I could stop taking medicines for three months I would feel perfectly right, but as I soak myself in castor-oil and other abominable things, I have to be weak and feeble.'

In spite of these aggressions of a bad internalized mother, pseudo-ulcer patients do not actually have an ulcer. Contrary to what one might suppose this does not seem to be due to a diminished intensity of their psychic conflicts, but more likely to a lower intensity of the repression of those conflicts. Consequently they are better able to defend themselves against them and, as is understandable, also from psychosomatic issues such as ulcers. In pseudo-ulcer patients, the repression of symptoms previous to the ulcer, for example pain, is also less than in ulcer patients. Owing to this repression the latter very often start an ulcer without any conscious digestive antecedents. Finally, in pseudo-ulcer patients there is often a decreased localization and exclusion to the digestive sphere of the aggressions of their superego, for in these cases it also extends on to other organs.

Similarly to those of any neurosis, the factors of peptic ulcer may be classified, somewhat arbitrarily, as predisposing and precipitating ones. I have described a harmful psychic constellation that, according to my experience, is very important, and frequently found to precipitate and reactivate peptic ulcers. This *precipitating factor*, which may also be called an *actual conflict* in ulcer patients, since it is this very factor that precipitates the ulcer through the reactivation of childhood conflicts, consists above all of a *love dependence upon and lack of genital satisfaction with a person*. To this is added an *excessively exacting professional activity*, which does not allow the patient a healthy emancipation from unpleasant psychic tension.

Sometimes the person on whom the patient



depends genitally is not aggressive but only frustrating; but a frustration is also an aggression for the unconscious, since the satisfaction of any instinct requires the adequate behaviour of the external object. Expressing this on the regressive oral-digestive level of ulcer patients, we may say that a mother who feeds her baby with inadequate food is as aggressive as another who undernourishes her child.

An example of this type of conflict and its influence upon the precipitation and pathogenesis of the ulcer is the following case of gastric ulcer.

## Case 2

The patient was a man about 40 years old. Among his family antecedents we find that one of his grandmothers had attacks of angina pectoris from which she eventually died, and that his father had gastric troubles.

He was a manifest homosexual with the typical background of parents who did not get on well together, who frustrated him, were aggressive towards him, constantly kept him at home, and feminized him in every way.

Owing to her work in the family business, his mother could not take care of him between his breast feeds, and left him in the hands of several successive nurses. As a boy his mother forbade him any affective manifestations towards her, telling him that it made his father feel jealous, and, on the other hand, forced him to pay a lot of attention to his father and obey him in everything in spite of the father's harshness with the child. The mother combed and dressed him in a girlish way and, as he had a beautiful face, he provoked the admiration of many women who sought to caress him. All this annoyed him intensely, because it emphasized his feminine trends.

His mother scolded him severely because of his masturbation and punished him physically if he referred to genital subjects. Even when he was 15 years old, when his mother beat him with a belt, he took it to be a punishment for his masturbation and not, as she intended, for his having played truant from school.

Several incidents during his childhood strengthened his castration fears; among them was an appendectomy when he was 7 years old and several infections on the scalp. His memories dating from before his operation included that of his father's not allowing him to play with toys and his habit of kicking him on the buttocks. Immediately after the operation he had nightmares about dogs that bit him.

He was forced by his father to work in the family business, and by both parents to accompany an older sister to parties and with her beaux; this forced him to an identification with her.

He felt a strong aversion for furs of certain

animals and for certain fruits, such as peaches, that have a downy skin and a kind of external incision; these things symbolized for him the feminine genitalia.

After puberty he started his homosexual activity with intense remorse. Connected with this is his memory of an acquaintance who threw himself into the sea from a cliff because of his homosexual anxiety. The patient saw him still alive, beaten against the rocks and pecked at by seagulls. He compared this scene to the attacks and aggressive words against homosexuals from people of his environment.

Principally during summer-time he had strong headaches, with sharp pains in one of his eyes, as if something were encrusted in the orbit and were bursting it, and with cold in the stomach and diarrhoea. These headaches started when he was 12 years old, one day when his parents obliged him to stay at home, painting the walls of a room. This was a screen memory for masturbation, which was symbolized by painting with a brush, i.e. a phallic symbol. His parents left him no option but to masturbate because they forbade heterosexual activity. He masturbated with unconscious phantasies of homosexual subjection to his father.

In his headaches the orbit with the eyebrows symbolized for him the vagina with the mons veneris and, regressively, the anus into which the father's penis entered, bursting it.

His headaches used to start when he was out in the cold, when he ate cold food, or when he caught cold. Cold unconsciously made him feel more castrated and subsequently more submitted to his father's aggressive penis in a homosexual and masochistic way. Hence his headaches were relieved when he applied heat and not cold, which is the usual means of obtaining relief.

*The genesis of peptic ulcer.* The patient's digestive troubles were a consequence of his unconscious regressive digestive wish for homosexual objects. As is always the case with homosexuals, he wanted not only to enjoy them but also to be genitally harmed by them, in a regressive digestive way. His ulcer was the final result of this behaviour.

There was a strong tendency in the patient towards the oral-digestive regression of his genital drives, and therefore his genital thoughts took on digestive aspects. For example, the aforementioned regression could be clearly noticed in his dreams. Thus, at a time when he was attempting to approach a woman, he dreamt that he had to sell wine in Formosa ('Formosa' is an Argentine province; its name is similar to 'hermosa' meaning 'beautiful'). In another of his dreams 'he had to go to a fishmonger's to sign an agreement with a woman and drink wine'; this meant the acceptance of the female sex and having heterosexual intercourse. In another of his dreams 'his mother forbade him to eat partridges', which meant the



prohibition of women and heterosexuality. In still another dream 'a friend, whose gatepost was bigger than his own, received sweetmeats he himself could not get': because his friend's penis was larger than his own, he could get women.

When he spoke of his digestive troubles, the patient was at the same time referring to his homosexuality. When he was 14, he felt very attracted towards a schoolmate, whom he kissed and embraced. At the age of 16 he sucked the penis of one of this boy's relatives. He reacted with a persistent bad taste in his mouth 'as of blood and metal' which he usually felt around the molar region.

The most important unconscious meaning of this symptom was that his homosexual behaviour castrated him, and the boy's penis, acting against his mouth like a sharp knife, wounded it until it bled. The bad taste was localized around his molars because these bite, and his feelings of remorse, as indicated by the etymology of this word, were sensations of being bitten from within.

This meaning came up repeatedly in his associations and dreams. Thus, in one of them, 'he went out of a black building where he was choking and was much annoyed at having to keep in his mouth some small hemispherically shaped stones with traces left by teeth on them'. The black building symbolized not only the belly of a bad mother, but also the anguishing, disagreeable and reprehensible homosexual activity towards which he was unconsciously compelled and which he could not renounce. The small hemispherically shaped stones stood primarily for the glans penis of his schoolmate and, more profoundly, for his mother's breasts as he perceived them, frustrating, aggressive, and injuring. They bit his mouth and also, as was later deduced, other regions of his digestive tract.

At the age of 18, for one year, he lived in a situation of intense love dependence; he acted passively in coitus, performed fellatio, and had strong fits of jealousy towards another man who treated him badly. As a consequence, the bad taste in his mouth grew so annoying that he tried to overcome it by continuously sucking peppermints. After some time, these sweets brought on sensations of cold in his stomach and finally gastric pains.

The patient felt very disgusted after this painful love affair and for the next ten years limited himself to masturbation. When he was 27, owing to excessive drinking and smoking with a friend, the bad taste in his mouth came back together with his gastric pains. He could not tolerate many kinds of food, and had diarrhoea up to five or six times a day. He also spat up some blood, which made him think he had become a victim of tuberculosis. In one of these drinking orgies he was able to have his only heterosexual intercourse with a woman who, only a few moments before, had been intimate with his friend.

He then decided to live with his mother because of his gastric disturbances. She fed him on cream and curdled milk. But as his mother did not have for him the meaning of a person who was good for his genitality, she could not endow the food she gave him with good qualities. He felt better only after he had left her and changed his job.

When he was 29, he felt attracted towards one of his employees and, while both were drunk, performed fellatio on him. As from the following day, his employee continued to carry out his duties faithfully but, constantly reproachful, did not talk to him, not even to greet him. This provoked such intense remorse in the patient that he became genitally impotent; it also gave rise anew to his gastric pains and to intolerance of some kinds of food, in this case bread and coffee.

Feeling very ill, he moved to another city, where his condition again improved. But he once more felt attracted towards one of his employees. As he remembered his painful previous experiences, his gastric disorders reappeared, even before genital approach.

One day he ate mutton, which he had never liked, just as he disliked his passive homosexual behaviour. After eating it, he had the sensation of something hard in his stomach—symbolizing a penis in his mouth—together with strong intestinal pains, diarrhoea, and a passing of red blood. On subsequent days, his digestive symptoms were those of a case of gastric ulcer, with pains and heartburn after his meals, and nausea, gastric spasms, and intolerance of any milk food.

In spite of these forebodings, he grew intimate with his employee, who was cruel to him, forced him to passive homosexual activities, and also made him feel jealous. With all this, his ulcerous troubles persisted and under X-rays one could already observe a niche in the lower part of the lesser curvature of his stomach.

*Pathogenesis of the ulcer.* The patient's ulcer was a consequence of the aggressions he received owing to his masochistic homosexual behaviour. These external aggressions, internalized and reinforced by his superego, were directed towards his stomach and also against the rest of his digestive tract by means of food, such as the aforementioned mutton, which the patient endowed with a psychic cathexis unfavourable for a good digestion.

The masochistic way in which the patient reacted went against his digestive tract because of his instinctive oral-digestive regression, which made him perceive his genital conflicts in the guise of digestive troubles. This regression dated from his earliest childhood; from the age of 4 or 5, he already remembers having been caught and scolded by some aunts—his mother's substitutes—because of sex play with other children; he had an intense sensation of cold in his stomach that must have been caused by vascular gastric spasms. The psychosomatic genesis of this reaction must be due to a



displacement onto his stomach of his fear of phallic castration. A confirmation of this interpretation was found in the simultaneity of similar reactions on the skin under analogous circumstances. Thus, whenever he looked at a peach that, as already pointed out, symbolized for him in an oral-digestive regression, the anguishing and castrating feminine genital organ, he shivered all over, got 'goose-flesh' and, just as on his skin, he felt cold in his stomach.

The pathogenesis of the patient's ulcer could be deduced during his psycho-analytical treatment from the facts above-mentioned, such as the bad taste of metal and blood in his mouth as if he were being wounded with a sharp metal knife after having sucked his schoolmate's penis, his intolerance of food that symbolized his unpleasant homosexuality, the masochistic ingestion of other food like the great amount of peppermints that finally harmed his stomach, or dreams such as that of the small stones in his mouth, standing for the frustrating maternal breasts which bit him from within.

There were also other data in connexion with his feeling that food was something aggressive in situations of genital conflict. For example, some kinds of food or drink, such as beer, agreed with him when he was in pleasant company; but on the other hand, when he had beer with a friend of the cruel lover of his youth, he had strong digestive disorders, above all if he had any external difficulties. So, on one occasion, after a bad business deal, he drank two glasses of milk, which unconsciously symbolized for him the two aggressive maternal breasts, and gave rise to intense gastric pains and diarrhoea. He smoked and drank coffee excessively in situations of masochistic subjection to men, whereupon these stimulants harmed him digestively. Once, when in a situation of this kind, he felt sick after eating strawberries. During the psycho-analytical session immediately after, he spoke of a film he had seen, in which a woman who was not allowed to eat 'hard food' because of her heart trouble was given raspberries to eat by her husband so that she might die. The woman represented him in his passive homosexuality, and the harmful raspberries the harsh treatment he received from his homosexual partners; hence the strawberries he had eaten had upon him the effect of poisoned food.

To sum up: As a consequence of his oral-digestive regression the patient experienced his actual conflict of a love-dependence upon an aggressive and genitally unsatisfactory person as a castration displaced on to the stomach and duodenum, as being bitten and pierced in the digestive tract, and as harmful food whose ingestion harms the digestive tract because it reactivates childhood situations of being ill-treated and, above all, badly breast fed and ill fed by his mother.

The precipitating factor of a love-dependence

on a person and lack of genital satisfaction with her does not often become apparent during the first psychic explorations of ulcer patients, because they try to appear, before themselves and others, to be having an apparently good and even exaggerated genital activity. A fellow investigator even expressed astonishment when I pointed out to him this precipitating factor of genital dissatisfaction, because in his experience of such patients he seemed to have observed the opposite; he had interviewed many, but had had only a few sessions with each of them. For instance, one of my cases made his ulcer and subsequent haematemesis depend on his 'sexual excesses'. But a deeper investigation showed that the cause of it all was just the opposite, namely having been abandoned by women with whom he was very much in love at an age when he already doubted his ability to succeed in love.

Alexander makes the ulcer depend on a repressed alimentary wish towards the mother, which in turn would be a regressive expression of another repressed wish to be loved by and live in dependence on her. In his view, this repressed alimentary wish would give rise to hypersecretion and nocturnal chlorhydropeptic secretion. When these are not neutralized by the desired food, which the future ulcer patient does not allow himself in his eagerness to pretend to be independent of his environment, they would end up by ulcerating the stomach or duodenum.

For Alexander, the oral-digestive aggressions of the bad internalized mother would only be a reactive consequence of the frustration of the alimentary wish, and not one of the factors, or only a very secondary one, in the genesis of ulcers.

Regarding this theory one may point out, above all, that for many gastro-enterologists the chlorhydropeptic secretion seems to be only a secondary factor in the genesis of the ulcer. So much so that it has been suggested that the medical adage 'without acid there is no ulcer' should be forgotten, the term 'peptic ulcer' discarded, since both lead to misunderstanding of the pathogenesis of the ulcer, and the ulcer should be called 'neurocirculatory', bearing in mind its more probable organic pathogenesis.

There are many ulcer patients, such as those with gastric ulcers, which according to autopsies are slightly more frequent than duodenal ulcers, who seldom show any increase in their chlorhydropeptic secretions. On the other hand, duodenal ulcer patients often have a continuous



increase of gastric acidity and a tendency to a continuous gastric secretion, above all during the night; but it also happens that their acidity and nocturnal hypersecretion continue after the ulcer has been cured, and that there is no change in their intensity previous to the patient's ulcer relapses. Usually there is no correlation between the intensity of their acidity and that of their symptoms, and the treatment of their hyperacidity does not give constant results in the evolution of their ulcer.

Neither do the theories on *ulcus* based upon chlorhydric acidity explain why the ulcers appear in circumscribed gastroduodenal areas or why they are exclusive, since the action of the acid would surely affect all the gastroduodenal mucosa, or at least harm this mucosa evenly in places where it acts with greater intensity.

Experimental ulcers also speak against the acid-peptic theories of ulcers. Even if, as an average, the duodenal ulcer patient has an acidity three times higher than that of a normal individual, this hyperacidity is only the fifth part of his maximum capacity for producing acid. From experience with animals it can be deduced that this hyperacidity is not by itself enough to produce an ulcer.

In the psycho-analytical treatment of ulcer patients, after a first psychic layer of apparent independence from the mother or her substitutes, one may find what Alexander points out, that is to say, the repressed wish to receive good food as a substitute for love. But this, in turn, is only a screening up or masking of another deeper psychic layer, which is more important in the genesis of ulcers, namely that of receiving bad food from the mother or her substitutes, the bad food being the digestive representative, imposed upon the patient by his oral-digestive regression and superego, of all kinds of aggressions against his instincts.

Like other ulcer or pseudo-ulcer patients, the aforementioned cases, and Halliday's study of Carlyle, do not seem to confirm Alexander's theory. According to them, we should be more inclined to think that the ulcer is not provoked by a wish for alimentary well-being, but by the by a wish for alimentary well-being, but by the opposite masochistic wish to 'swallow' the environment and childhood aggressions of the mother as if they were bad food. This has an unfavourable influence upon the assimilation of certain kinds of food or the patient's digestive functioning.

This is what the first ulcer patient described above realized when he felt that within him there

was an apparent wish for good food prepared by a relative, but that this was like seeking 'to swallow bad laxatives disguised in good food'. In other words, it was an apparently good pretext to continue subjected, in a regressive oral-digestive way, to all the familiar frustrations and aggressions against his instincts.

Among the oral-digestive aggressions of the bad internalized mother (maternal superego) against the digestive tract of ulcer or pseudo-ulcer patients are the prohibition of good food and the forcing of bad food upon them. These oral-digestive aggressions can frequently be observed in the manifest behaviour of these patients who, obeying these unconscious motivations, seek, or have sought, insufficient or bad nourishment and excessive drinking or smoking.

The attacks by being sucked, bitten or pierced, to which ulcer patients unconsciously feel they are exposed, can easily be perceived when they describe their symptoms. Thus it is common for them to complain of having something in their stomachs that bites like a wolf, gnaws like a rat, or pierces like a knife. The wolf, the rat, and the knife are images or symbols of a bad internalized mother. These fantasies are also found in pseudo-ulcer patients, thus showing that these sensations are not a consequence of an ulcerous organic lesion.

These last digestive aggressions of being sucked, gnawed, or pierced are strange, and also difficult to understand in their mechanism. They are carried out by the psychic complex of a bad internalized mother which influences the emotions of the individual and acts through the nervous and hormonal systems, thus provoking excessive tonic and peristaltic muscular gastroduodenal contractions, chemical chlorhydro-peptic actions, and vascular spasms and stasis in the gastro-duodenal walls. To this is added the traumatic action of bulky food not thoroughly chewed in the mouth; it acts traumatically upon the frail and engorged mucous membrane of the stomach of the patients in emotional stress.

That the stomach has activities like sucking and biting itself, although these activities are ascribed rather more to the mouth, will not sound so strange if we bear in mind that the stomach is the primitive organ and the mouth merely a specialized part of it. Both in ontogenesis and in phylogenesis the digestive tract was primitively the gastrula which, as the name indicates, is a stomach. In some animals this



primitive stomach has a mouth by which food enters and a cavity that digests it by mechanical and chemical action. With the development of the species the mouth has become independent of the stomach, taking upon itself the harsher mechanical function.

When considering the objection that it is hard to conceive how the psychic complex of a bad internalized mother performs activities against the stomach and the duodenum that are really carried out by the mouth, there comes to one's mind an expression commonly used when food is highly seasoned or tobacco too strong: we say that it 'bites' the tongue. Now highly seasoned food does not really bite either the tongue or the stomach, but it irritates the digestive tract chemically because of the spices used to season it and the chlorhydropeptic juice it forces the stomach to secrete. Why, then, do we say that it bites? Probably because when harmfully irritated, the sensations of the stomach are not perceived so clearly as those of the mouth, and the speaker uses terms pertaining to sensations in the mouth to express himself more clearly, though not correctly, because he is more conscious of his mouth than of his stomach. For the same reason, in Spanish one says that an acid 'corrodes' something, that is to say that it bites as rodents do, instead of saying that it 'digests' the object, which would be more exact.

It becomes more understandable that the ulcer patient feels himself bitten instead of digested, because these oral wishes are only a conscious and superficial expression of other more important deep and unconscious wishes, those of receiving, digesting, and assimilating milk and other foods in the gastro-intestinal tract. Bearing all these considerations in mind, we should translate from oral into gastro-intestinal language everything that the ulcer patients state. When, for example, they complain of pains as if from being bitten, we must suppose that their pains are of being digested or burned chemically.

If we continue reasoning thus and seeking always to express ourselves correctly, we should also have to say that the ulcer-producing aggressions of the psychic complex of a bad internalized mother would not be the oral aggressions of sucking, biting, or piercing the stomach or duodenum, but rather the corresponding gastro-duodenal aggressions of emptying these organs through hunger, of squeezing them with tonic and peristaltic contractions, of harming them with bulky food, or of digesting and burning them chemically. The last-

mentioned sensation is at times perceived consciously by the patient when he has heartburn.

Confirmation that these are the most profound aggressions of the psychic complex of a bad internalized mother can be found in children's stories or in narratives of primitive people, where the heroes, representing the children, are in peril of being digested within the stomach of real or fantastic beings. This is what happens to Pinocchio in the fish or to Jonah in the whale. Similarly, in narratives of heroes who battle against fire-spitting dragons, these monsters symbolize the mother whose spittle is capable of burning, i.e. her gastric and duodenal juices are capable of digesting the children who dare to oppose her.

The organic treatment of ulcers is of a symptomatic kind. Among others, Browning and Houseworth point out that the medical treatments do not cure ulcer patients, and that surgical ones, such as the brutal method of subtotal resection of the stomach, even though they cure the ulcer, do not modify the personality, and the patients subsequently have other and different symptoms, as annoying as those produced by the ulcer. Thus, one of my patients was cured of her ulcer by a gastro-enterostomy, but owing to her previous psychic conflicts she suffered later from arterial hypertension, and this was worse than her ulcer.

The treatments by diets based on milk, sops, and thick soups improve the ulcer patient's condition by treating him as though he were a child, in order to free him of his conflicts of adult genitality, which are those that force him to the oral-digestive regression in which he behaves masochistically.

The ulcer patient's hyperacidity is an attempt to overcome his conflicts in the oral-digestive regressive situation. It is brought on because he has to digest complicated food which his bad internalized mother forces and at the same time forbids him to eat, either because it represents genital or aggressive objects or because he has cathected it unfavourably in some other way. For this reason, the anti-acid treatment of the ulcer patient has the same meaning as making a neurotic individual refrain from masturbating or from carrying out inadequate aggressive activities against an environment that ill-treats him.

*The aetiological treatment for the ulcer patient is psycho-analysis, and the patients react well to it.* According to Alexander, ulcer patients often develop dependence on the analyst



during the treatment which hinders them from progressing, and he therefore suggests long intervals between the psycho-analytical sessions. My own experience is in accordance with that of the hospitals during World War II, when dealing with ulcer patients. It is pointed out that these patients often give up the treatment prematurely, when they have already achieved a certain com-

fort that allows them to continue their difficult struggle for life. This behaviour is a consequence of their coming from an environment that forces them to carry on with effort and instinctive suffering, and they unconsciously seek a repetition of this in the transference of their psycho-analytical treatment.

# BIBLIOGRAPHY

- ALEXANDER, F. (1934). 'The Influence of Psychologic Factors upon Gastro-intestinal Disturbances. A Symposium.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 3, 501.
- BROWNING, J. S., and HOUSEWORTH, J. M. (1953). 'Development of a New Symptom Following Medical and Surgical Treatment of Duodenal Ulcer.' *Psychosom. Med.*, 15, 328.
- DRAPER, G., and TOURAINE, G. A. (1932). 'The Men-environment Unit and Peptic Ulcer.' *Arch. Int. Med.*, 49, 615.
- GARMA, A. (1944). 'Psicogénesis de la úlcera péptica.' *Revista de Psicoanálisis*, 2, 53.
- (1950). 'On the Pathogenesis of Peptic Ulcer.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 31, 53.
- (1953). 'The Internalized Mother as Harmful in Peptic Ulcer Patients.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 34, 102.
- *Génesis psicósomática y tratamiento de las úlceras gástricas y duodenales.* (Buenos Aires: Editorial Nova, 1954.)
- HALLIDAY, J. L. *Mr. Carlyle, My Patient. A Psychosomatic Biography.* (New York: Grune and Stratton, 1950.)
- KLEIN, M. *The Psycho-Analysis of Children.* (London: Hogarth, 1949.)
- *Contributions to Psychoanalysis, 1921-1945.* (London: Hogarth, 1949.)
- LEVEY, H. B. (1934). 'Oral Trends and Oral Conflicts in a Case of Duodenal Ulcer.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 3, 574.
- MAHL, G. (1950). 'Anxiety, HCl Secretion and Peptic Ulcer Etiology.' *Psychosom. Med.*, 12, 158.
- (1949). 'Effect of Chronic Fear on the Gastric Secretion of HCl in Dogs.' *Psychosom. Med.*, 11, 30.
- MARGOLIN, S. G. (1951). 'The Behaviour of the Stomach during Psychoanalysis.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 20, 349.
- PICKFORD, R. W. (1948). 'Oral and Anal Tensions Associated with a Duodenal Ulcer.' *Psychoanal. Rev.*, 35, 1.
- (1952). 'Imitation and Avoidance of a Duodenal Ulcer.' *Psychoanal. Rev.*, 39, 53.
- SCHWARTZ, L. A. (1951). 'Psychodynamic Aspects of Peptic Ulcer.' *Samiksa*, 5, 169.
- STONE, L. (1947). 'Transference Sleep in a Neurosis with Duodenal Ulcer.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 28, 18.
- SZASZ, T. (1949). 'Factors in the Pathogenesis of Peptic Ulcer. Some Critical Comments on a Recent Article by George F. Mahl.' *Psychosom. Med.*, 11, 300.
- , LEVINE, E., KIRSNER, J. B., and PALMER, W. L. (1947). 'The Role of Hostility in the Pathogenesis of Peptic Ulcer: Theoretical Considerations with the Report of a Case.' *Psychosom. Med.*, 9, 331.

(Received 3 May, 1955)



# UTILIZATION OF SOCIAL INSTITUTIONS AS A DEFENCE TECHNIQUE IN THE NEUROSES

By

SAMUEL NOVEY, M.D., BALTIMORE

Utilization of social institutions as a technique of defence is a particularly thorny problem in the treatment of the neuroses. To the usual difficulties concomitant with analysing any defence are added the special problems of dealing with one into which has been incorporated a socially accepted institution. In this paper I am especially concerned with the specific utilization of social institutions by certain neurotic individuals in their attempt to ward off anxiety. I shall attempt to correlate the structure and function of the social institution with that of the individual, in so far as this seems pertinent to my major thesis. I shall then attempt to illustrate the use of a religious institution as a means of defence by an obsessional neurotic, and thereafter illustrate my opening remarks by a further examination of this institution.

A social institution may be defined as (11) 'any association, custom or relationship consciously approved by a society and organized and maintained through prescribed rules and agencies.' As may be seen from this definition, there is emphasis both on the consensus established by the group and on established rules for the perpetuation of the institution. We view the social institution as 'external reality', but in our dealings with our patients we also view it with respect to its symbolic intrapsychic value and anticipate that they will make varying use of it. As Hartmann so well puts it (7), 'Society is not a projection of unconscious phantasies, though it offers many possibilities for such projection, and their study reveals to us the influence of unconscious factors on man's attitude to society. We must accept social reality as a factor in its own right; certainly most analysts do not attempt to interpret human behaviour exclusively in terms of unconscious drives and phantasies. This "reality aspect" is an intricate topic and has manifold connotations; *we are quite aware that the same institutions can be used to canalize a great variety of tendencies.*' (Italics mine.)

I am of opinion that we are entitled to draw

certain cautious comparisons between the operational techniques of the social institution and those of its individual members because of the interplay between these. I believe that the social institution has special properties peculiar to it, and that in a sense, like its individual members, it has an organic character representing something more than the sum of its parts. It would not be germane to the major thesis of this paper, however, to consider further whether a group mind or other such phenomena exist. But with this in mind, and with due regard for the fact that this sphere of investigation is the realm of the sociologist rather than of the psychoanalyst, we are entitled, as psychoanalysts, to certain views regarding social institutions. Fenichel's comment is pertinent in this regard (3): 'Every mental phenomenon is explicable as a resultant of the interaction of biological structure and environmental influence. Social institutions act as determining environmental influences upon a given generation. The biological structure itself has evolved from the interplay of earlier structures and earlier experiences. But how did the social institutions themselves originate? Was it not, in the final analysis, through the attempts of human beings to satisfy their needs? This is undeniable. The relations between the individuals, however, became external realities comparatively independent of the individuals; they shaped the structure of the individuals who then through their behaviour again altered the institutions. This is a historically continuous process.' I realize that such teleological thinking is frowned upon by some modern anthropologists, who describe it as unscientific. They maintain that we should limit ourselves to the data immediately observable, and therefore to viewing the social organization as 'external reality' in so far as the individual members of the group are concerned without regard for the genetic and future evolutionary aspects of this 'historically continuous process'. While it is true that we are driven to the



formation of hypotheses if we deviate from this position, such formulations offer us the opportunity to explore the admitted interplay between the individual and the social institution to which the individual must certainly have been and is a significant contributor.

The inference may be drawn that the origins of social institutions depend on man's attempt to cope with his inner impulses and his external physical environment, and thus to attain some measure of security. It is clear that social institutions may deviate from their function, and, in effect display characteristics closely resembling the neuroses. I would question, however, whether this is a primary property of the social institution. I believe that we are warranted in assessing social institutions in terms of their inconsistent with full realization that, as in the individual, deviations in one or another direction may occur. This would establish the same frame of reference for the social institution, as a unit, as for its individual members.

Emotional disorders have in common the property of interfering with the interchange of feelings and ideas by the affected person with other individuals and groups. The process of interchange of such feelings and ideas is called communication. In psycho-analysis we have concerned ourselves with such disorders in communication to a marked degree. This is true both in the actual analytic situation and in the patient's individual relationships outside it. There have also been in psycho-analysis both more theoretical level, attempts to correlate both the impact of sociological forces on individuals and the impact and formative influence of individuals on the form and structure of social institutions.

There is a striking contrast between the social institution and the neurotic defensive system and so far as their impact on communication and hence on object relationships is concerned. In the former the intent is to canalize instinctual energies into sublimatory, group-approved activities, and thus to enhance object relationships. In the latter the reverse is true, and these energies tend to make for isolation, non-communication, and interference with object-related activities. In this respect one might equate the operation of the social institution with that of the non-neurotic or genital character. In the neuroses, a segment of the total social institution may be incorporated into the neurotic defensive system. In so far as this happens, the social institution, intended as it is to foster sublimation,

no longer serves this purpose, but is employed in the service of the non-sublimating neurotic pattern. To the degree that this occurs, it represents a defensive pattern particularly difficult to shatter, since by this manoeuvre the defence becomes rationalized by the neurotic as an expression of the social institution and accordingly assumes an investment of virtuosity and righteousness.

I shall now attempt to illustrate the incorporation of a social institution, in this instance a religious one, into a neurotic defensive system. This case lends itself particularly well to my purpose, since the religious group in question is a highly structured one, and since I have been faced with an equivalent problem in other patients, and I gather from other analysts that it is a fairly common problem in treatment in our cultural group.

The patient was a young man in his mid-twenties who complained of intense anxiety associated with a lump in his throat, abdominal tension, and sporadic attacks of diarrhoea. He was highly perfectionist and on entering treatment presented a familiar type of obsessional neurosis. I shall limit myself here to his defensive usage of religion, as this is my primary concern (9). In our first interview the patient told me of his religious problems along with certain historical data, his numerous entanglements with girl friends, and his many physical symptoms. He told me that he was a Catholic and had 'a strong conscience'; also that until recently he had never missed Mass, but that lately he had been 'slipping'. Of some interest as regards his religious preoccupation was also his compulsive wish to play the church organ. In this initial interview he described the difficulties he had had in arranging to do this, and attempted to enlist my help in gaining access to an organ.

Much time was spent during his first interviews in describing his numerous involved relations with girls, as an attempt, I think, to convince me of his potency. During his schooling prior to the fourth year of high school, he said, he had had little or no contact with girls, and was ill at ease with them. He attributed this to the fact that he had attended Catholic schools. He further said that he had had no sexual education and had had to find out 'the hard way'. He had 'discovered' about masturbation from a neighbourhood boy at the age of 15. This boy had masturbated in his presence and had induced him to do the same. He expressed some repulsion at the crudity of this, and then told me that he had thereafter begun to masturbate him-



self. On his return to school in the fall he had had 'some kind of a homosexual experience'. From 15 to 19 he had masturbated a lot and felt that it was wrong, and in fact he occasionally slipped and masturbated now, and then felt guilty about it.

I accepted these data as so much factual material and encouraged him to continue telling me about his experiences. I did not challenge his need to experience guilt. With this attitude, he spontaneously told me one day that shortly before seeing me he had been to see another psychiatrist at the school doctor's suggestion. He had told him about his masturbation, and the psychiatrist had said there was nothing wrong with masturbating, whereupon the patient felt that he could never return to 'anyone who contradicted the Church'. He stated that he had really not felt that anything was acutely wrong, though he had felt some guilt about his sexual experiences, until his experience with one of the Brothers at the high school he attended. One day he fooled around with another boy and was seen by the Brother, who said nothing about it, but the patient felt that he began 'playing father to me. He wanted to direct me away from homosexuality'. This feeling was based on the fact that the Brother became very interested in the patient's going to confession regularly. He would go to confession and state that he had 'sinned', but would never explain the specific character of his sinning with other boys. To this he added that he had seen a number of homosexuals in the Army and that he detested them; they made his blood boil. He went on to describe his fear of impotence as a result of masturbating. He informed me that in the Army he had made many sperm counts on himself; on occasion the result had been low, and he was worried. I commented on this in a factual way, that masturbation had no known physiological ill effects.

In his fifth interview he returned to the theme of the Church, introducing this by telling me that he had had diarrhoea for the past few days, and also 'heartburn', which he had never had before. He had been trying to get to church for the past week, and never succeeded. He was concerned because for the past two weeks his 'conscience' had not bothered him. In the Army his conscience bothered him about taking a little laboratory material, and more recently it did so especially about sexual intercourse and masturbation. He was concerned about losing his conscience, describing this as being unfaithful to the Church, and at the same time he was worried

because he feared 'rough handling' by the priests. He then said that several of his worries originated in the Church's teaching, but hastened to add that he was not denouncing the Church. He felt that one should be able to go to confession and be relieved of guilt, and was upset because he was not. He was uncertain whether this was due to a defect in the Church or a 'poor confession'.

In this period he continued to express a great deal of anxiety, telling me that on one occasion he felt that a man followed him part of the way home from my office and that on another he felt that people were staring at him all day. Despite this, however, he continued to enlarge on his past experiences, and in doing so described what he felt had been the punitive attitude taken by the Sisters at the private school he had attended. He told me of the difficulties he had had in taking part in aggressive sports, of his attempts to do so, and of the Sisters' ridicule of his attempts.

Towards the end of this early phase he showed considerable ambivalence in his relationship to me by expressing his feelings about 'Jews'. This occurred at a time when his anxiety was decreasing somewhat. It defined itself as a feeling of unity with the Jew, a member of a minority group as was he, a Catholic, and at the same time as a feeling that Jews would throw him out because he was a Catholic. Along with this he expressed his dislike of the Jewish boys at school because they 'chatter too much', but 'when they grow up they lose that'.

It seemed that whenever his anxiety in relation to me flared up, he would inform me that he was struggling with the idea of going to confession. This occurred in our twentieth hour, when he described a sense of greater closeness to 'the Jewish boy in the dormitory room next door to mine', his numerous disagreements with his father who felt he was always right, and then went on to protest against a school requirement that he report to the school doctor each week. He concluded this train of associations by telling me rather apologetically that he had wanted to go to confession, but it was impossible, he was too busy. He then added that he really needed to go to church to get strength to fight his sexual inclinations 'especially towards women'. For the first time I responded that he need not make excuses to me, that I was not the Church. He countered by telling me that he was torn between his 'normal impulses' and 'the Church'. I replied that he was here for us to see if I could help him get his troubles straightened out, that



he need not feel guilty in relation to me, that I wondered if he were not putting off a lot of guilt on the Church as he seemed to be doing on me, and that perhaps we could use our time better by trying to find out where this guilt really came from. He responded that if he relaxed he was apt to sin, and that he was afraid he would be punished by God; that he would be struck by a flash of lightning.

Thereafter followed several interviews in which he seemed to feel much less need to project his problems, talked in rather more human terms of his aspirations, of envying others, of his tendency to 'brag and make enemies', and reported that he had had an 'argument' with several other fellows about masturbation and found that he 'wasn't so bad after all'. In the next interview he again enlarged upon his anguish about the Church and its rules. He felt that if he fell into temptation it was his own fault and meant that he hadn't prayed enough. He then talked of his fear of confession, which he dated back to an incident that occurred in his sixth year, about the time of his first confession. He recalled that a woman had started to leave the confessional thinking that absolution had been given her, and was called back in a loud, gruff voice by the priest, who reprimanded her for leaving too soon. The patient then expressed great animosity towards the Brother who had caught him at homosexual play in high school and had been so insistent that he go to confession, stating that he had wanted to tell the Brother that it was none of his damned business.

At this point in treatment, the patient developed an increasing fear in his relationship with me. This took the form of an expression of his anti-Semitism in general and of his relations to a Jewish professor. He vacillated between numerous hostile comments about his parents, his father's unreasonableness, his mother's isolating herself and holding dad down, and an identification with his parents in a hostile world. This latter was concerned particularly with mother's maltreatment by her doctors.

It was at this time that he produced two important pieces of information. One was that he had been particularly interested in defecation since the age of 5 and used to defecate with a boy friend of his so that they could observe each other. He then informed me that 'rectal manipulations' by inserting foreign objects or by masturbating while his anus was distended with faeces was an intrinsic part of his masturbatory pattern. The other was the first emergence of

ideas that he might have a 'scrupulous conscience'. He told me that a priest had once told him that his conscience was over-working and that he wondered if his conscience were 'giving him the run-around'. I made extensive use of this henceforward, when he expressed intense guilt at violating what he looked upon as the Church's precepts, siding with the priest who had taken issue with his conscientiousness.

At this time I began to interpret his guilt as a technique for re-establishing himself in the good graces of his God-figures by punishing himself, and to define his masturbation as a response to anxiety. This was the first attempt to offer him something more than a moralistic basis for his symptoms, and he avidly accepted this idea. Shortly after this he correlated his passive aims with the Church by disclosing that the Church looked on the aggressor in sexual activities as the more sinful of the two. It was only some months later that he came to realize that his presumed passivity in his sexual activities was really a façade behind which he was being quite active, and this knowledge held for him a considerable gain of self-esteem.

Throughout these early months he had been much concerned about his school work. It eventually became clear that this followed a pattern. He would get very good grades in a subject, become anxious, and then for a time do poorly. He eventually correlated this by telling me that he felt that God was punishing him for his sins by pushing his pencil the wrong way. We then discovered that he would frequently put down the right answer and then become anxious and change it. I began to be much more open in my interpretations of his masochism and his need to ingratiate himself by displaying his humility and denying his capabilities. I now tended to define this as not being peculiarly related to the Church, and referred to the similar pattern in his relation with me and then with his parents.

His distorted religiosity now began to recede, and with it he freely expressed his fears of God and of dying in a state of mortal sin and going to the 'hot place'. I took occasion at this period to refer to his alternating use of me as a prohibitor like the Church and as a seducer equivalent to his own inner impulses of which he was afraid. He seemed to gain more insight into this particular use of the Church as he began to correlate it with his utilization of me and of his father, telling me 'I ask someone like father and hear something contradictory to the Church. I'm not able



to make decisions for myself, since when I did so in the past I've always been wrong. I know God doesn't shove my pencil the wrong way, but it's a deep-seated idea. I know I set you up like the Church, but I can't understand why.'

About five months after treatment began he produced the following: 'According to the Church, people who suffer on earth have a better chance to get to heaven.' He has thought many times that his suffering now might help, but he is mostly discouraged that this will work. He feels that if he makes a slip, he is inclined to 'go all the way'. He has got to be 'perfect or a son of a bitch'. He then said, 'I have the same feeling coming here as I do going to confession; I wonder whether it has to do with the unknown. It's hard to talk. I'm scared to death. It has to do with this "insertion business". If you don't give me hell for it, I tend to take for granted it's O.K. and do it for sex pleasure.' I referred again to my rôle as his physician, and suggested that we look further with the intent that he should develop a more adult sexual pattern. For the next few months the patient did not go to confession and seemed to work along fairly constructive lines in the direction of defining his dependence needs in relation to me and to his parents, and his own participation in avoiding more self-expression.

He then went to confession again and reported to me that it had not been a good confession. He had forgotten to tell the priest about talking back to his mother and father, and his anxiety was worse after confession than before. He said, 'The more I thought of it, the more sins I thought I had committed'. He then speculated that he was anxious because he came to me, and that if he stopped coming to me his anxiety would go away. Almost immediately after this, however, he presented his first frank statements of departure from his compulsive religiosity, telling me, 'My ideas have changed some, since the Church and I have pulled apart a bit. It's all right to have relations with a girl if you don't use liquor.' He expressed the feeling that his anxiety was not entirely due to the Church; there must be something else. In mid-September he made an impulsive trip to his Catholic grade school. He was well received there, and returned full of ambitious plans to increase his social and extra-curricular activities.

Some ten months after treatment began, his use of the Church as a problem in analysis ended. I date this from the time when he reported that, after debating the matter for some

time, he had had an interview with a priest he had recently met. The patient said that the priest had 'agreed with your diagnosis of my troubles'. The priest had said that he had a scrupulous conscience and that his masturbation was due to psychological things. The patient said, 'He advised me to get among people instead of isolating myself and praying.' The priest had said that it was important for him not to put himself 'in the way of sin', but since he was human, he would probably fall from time to time. He had advised him to pick a kindly priest for confession and not go to a 'Hell raiser'.

Though I have not mentioned it here, there was much actual reason for intense insecurity in his relations with his parents. As opposed to them, the Church offered him a fixed, reliable, not unkindly, socially acceptable authority which they denied him. As with his parents, he tended to buy his security at the price of his own sexual and aggressive strivings, and was constantly torn between his passive submissive trends and his inner necessity for giving more expression to his instinctual needs. At this phase of his treatment things had taken on a much more workable form, and his use of his religion as a defence had ceased.

The resolution of his neurotic utilization of the Church as a security measure did not, of course, solve his problems. It permitted him, however, to move a step nearer to recognizing and dealing with the dynamic factors which had made him ill and had inhibited his capacity for self-expression. Inasmuch as he then saw in me a source of security like the Church, we were in a somewhat better position to work out the complex inter-relationships that faced him relatively free of the Church's moralistic philosophy, which in a compulsive character of this kind lends itself to the most striking misuse which is neither to his own benefit nor to that of the Church. He continued to identify himself with the Church, but with a considerably less 'scrupulous conscience'.

A particular problem which I feel applies in this instance and is also commonly seen in other areas of analytic practice is the tendency on the part of the patient to reject with hostility the once favoured institution or individual. This tends to occur, as in this patient, as a kind of interim stage during the giving up of the institution or individual as a major source of security. It would seem that this hostile use of the institution is a further elaboration of the original problem which it is important for the therapist to be



aware of and to deal with, since it suggests that while the patient has given up much of his peculiarly obsessive use of the institution, he is not free as yet from a neurotic, potentially destructive tie to it. This seems to have been especially true in the patient now in question, since my orientation was not towards ridding him of his tie with a socially acceptable institution, but towards helping him to free himself from his neurotic use of it. It seems to me, in the light of this patient's position in our culture, that there is much to recommend a continuing more 'normal' use of the Church. Consistent with this, at the beginning of his second year of treatment, situations arose in which I responded to his trends toward a rejection of the Church by clarifying some of its more kindly and useful aspects.

There are a few points regarding my own position which I may not have sufficiently emphasized. The early use of my relationship to him as physician permitted me to define the physiological aspects of his masturbation symptoms without setting myself up in opposition to the Church. I felt that by reason of this differentiation in function of physician and Church I could establish myself as having a somewhat different quality, one more helpful to him. This could be based, not on any opposition to his religious trends, but on the fact that he was ill and came to me as a physician in the hope that I could free him from his illness.

In my early dealings with him I did not take issue with his urge to experience guilt. While there seems no question that he was carrying out a highly masochistic performance, yet the compensatory narcissistic gain was of major importance for him. It is my impression that to interrupt this masochistic pattern before the patient has attained sufficient narcissistic satisfactions by other means is to invite a degree of anxiety which he will deal with by terminating the treatment, or, in some instances, by psychosis. It is thus my impression that the 'need to experience guilt' was more or less specifically determined and was not in itself a diffuse disorganized anxiety response, but a defence against such a catastrophe.

When the patient turned to the Church for security, he found no solution, but only intensified his anxiety and hostility, since, from the masochistic position, he could experience the Church only as the parents who prohibited his instinctual needs and punished him for them through his guilt and its projections into the

outer world. He could thus not experience the tender, loving aspects of his relation to this authority. Since it was inevitable that some of his aggression should find discharge in connexion with the then threatening Church, it was possible for this to come about through the implied hostility and mockery of 'scrupulous conscience'. In this regard I may mention another of my patients who developed an intense religiosity during his pubertal period, and by means of it was able to give vent to the most extreme aggression towards his father under the guise of converting him to a more 'religious' life.

In view of the magnitude of this young man's fixation at a homosexual level, it is not surprising that there is a substantial correlation between his attitude towards 'God' and his attitude towards a forbidden yet desired sexual object. In his attitude towards 'God' there is visible the intensely ambivalent position one might anticipate. His love object was also intensely hated and feared, both through fear of punishment and through fear that his love would not be reciprocated, and he was in a constant state of dread. This, I believe, was reinforced by the particular nature of the impulse, a homosexual one, which was disguised in it.

To sum up, the technique I employed in dealing with this problem was essentially similar in character to the classic analysis of a distortion of this kind, namely by :

- (a) Initial refusal to play out the rôle of the priest, and maintaining my position as a therapist;
- (b) a refusal to establish myself in opposition to the Church;
- (c) an interpretation of his distorted use of the Church;
- (d) a gradual interpretation of the patient's efforts to transfer his neurotic use of the Church to me; and
- (e) a terminal interpretation of his attitude towards the Church as transferred from his earlier attitudes toward his family.

The factors of timing and dependence upon a developing rapport with the patient were probably of prime significance in the successful outcome of this particular problem in treatment.

I should like to deal briefly with this problem as seen by the Catholic Church in so far as it seems to throw further light on this patient's difficulty. The two fields on which I wish to comment are certain sects which broke off from the Church, and the Church's current attitude towards the obsessional.



Of the former, I may mention as an example, the heresy of Encratism (2). This heresy set itself against any indulgence in or enjoyment of natural pleasures. The current view holds that it is false to say that the Church ever taught that there were sins beyond her power of forgiveness. It is looked upon as an error on the part of the first Christians that they demanded even of the weakest the realization of the highest ideal. The Church seems at an early date to have mitigated this requirement, and it was in regard to sins of the flesh that the discipline was first relaxed. The Bishop of Rome decided that such sins could be remitted after a more or less extended period of penance.

In the Church's rejection of this heresy can be observed the efforts of a social institution to maintain its rules at a level at which conformity is possible. When social institutions set up a degree of rigidity which rivals that of the obsessional neurotic, and their punitive attitude denies to the individual members the fulfilment of instinctual needs to too marked a degree, they invite destruction. The Church seems to have anticipated this danger, and to have insisted on an appropriate modification of the rules, turning its censure in this instance on the excessively punitive and rigid tendencies rather than on their opposite. The successful social institution must constantly maintain such plasticity if its social utility is to survive.

As concerns the problem of the obsessional, I will quote from the book, *Priest and Penitent—A Discussion of Confession*, by John Carmel Heenan, D.D. (8). 'A person with a scrupulous conscience is unable to make a right decision either regarding the morality of an action which is only contemplated or regarding the morality of an action which has been accomplished. Scrupulous persons suffer from defective vision in the moral sphere. They cannot distinguish between what is important and what is of no significance. Their normal state of mind is one of torture and doubt. They are never happy in their actions and never satisfied in their considerations of past behaviour. To cure a person of scruples is one of the most difficult tasks which the confessor has to face. First of all, he must decide whether a person is really scrupulous, or whether he is actually unscrupulous and merely posing as one with a conscience which is over-tender. A truly scrupulous person will scarcely derive any benefit from this or any book on confession. The reason is that the scrupulous person is almost always intolerably proud. To a

moral cowardice which prevents him from bravely facing the issues, there is added an arrogance which refuses to accept priestly advice. The scrupulous person will never believe that the priest has understood his case. However often the confessor may repeat his assurance that the penitent has said all that is required, the latter will persist in the exposition of spiritual ailments. The priest may give his word that all responsibility in the sight of God devolves upon him, the Father Confessor. He will lay down stringent rules not only regarding a manner of living, but also regarding habits of prayer, self-examination and actual confession of sin. But the scrupulous penitent knows better than the Church and better than any confessor. Until he has learned the lesson of humility and learned to obey the confessor, he can have no peace of mind.'

I gather that there is a significant variation within Catholic circles as to the appropriate handling of scrupulosity, at least of a severe degree. By some it is felt to require the active collaboration of a psychiatrist and is looked upon as an emotional disorder (10). It would appear that in this instance the Church, and I should be willing to extend this to all social institutions, is constantly faced with the dilemma of dealing with individual members who are prone to misuse the institution in this obsessive manner, and such utilization is certainly commonly to be observed in the individual relationships of the obsessional neurotic.

The problem of obsessional acts as related to religious practices was, of course, early emphasized by Freud, who stressed the correlation of the obsessional practice as a private religion as opposed to religion as a group variety of obsessional practice. In the particular problem posed by this patient a fusion of these two themes seems to be presented. I feel that the peculiar use of religion in his case differed from the group phenomenon recognized as religion in so far as it tended to divorce him from the group rather than to integrate him with it. In his case the problem therefore presented itself of the push of his obsessional practices away from sublimatory use of formalized religion and the pull of his need to use the gregarious institution: both security measures, but oriented in different directions and to a marked degree mutually exclusive.

Freud, in his paper 'Obsessive Acts and Religious Practices' (5), emphasized certain points of difference between these two activities.



With regard to religion he postulated the lesser degree of individual variability, the public and communal nature of religious observance, and the differing instinctual origins of religious practice. The first and second points refer to the important element of communicability and socialization allowed by religion, the last marks an interesting departure on Freud's part. To quote: 'The structure of a religion seems also to be founded on the suppression or renunciation of certain instinctual trends; these trends are not, however, as in the neurosis, exclusively components of the sexual instinct, but are egoistic, anti-social instincts, though even these for the most part are not without a sexual element'.

Since that article was written there has been a shift in psycho-analytic thinking in the direction of assigning a far greater rôle to the aggressive instinct. Nevertheless, this differentiation seems still to be pertinent. Freud's examination of the origins of religion traces it to the primal horde and to the solution of the oedipal dilemma. In his consideration of it as a social institution, as a part of the reality with which our patients have to deal, he was inclined even at this early date to lay stress on aggression, seeing the mixture of libidinal and aggressive strivings as the reverse of that in obsessional neurosis.

Freud elaborates on the contribution of libidinal energy to the formation of groups at some length in his 'Postscript' to *Group Psychology and the Analysis of the Ego* (6). His thesis is that the inhibited sexual aim lends itself to the creation of social ties, while those sexual instincts which are not inhibited and are thus capable of complete satisfaction incur a loss of energy with each satisfaction which reduces the energy available for such ties. With the conclusion that directly sexual tendencies are unfavourable to the formation of groups, he makes some interesting specific references to the Catholic Church. 'In the great artificial groups, the Church and the Army, there is no room for woman as a sexual object. The love relation between men and women remains outside these organizations. Even where groups are formed which are composed of both men and women, the distinction between the sexes plays no part. There is scarcely any sense in asking whether the libido which keeps groups together is of a homosexual or of a heterosexual nature, for it is not differentiated according to the sexes, and particularly shows a complete disregard for the aims of the genital organization of the libido.'

'Even in a person who has in other respects

become absorbed in a group, the directly sexual tendencies preserve a little of his individual activity. If they become too strong, they disintegrate every group formation. The Catholic Church had the best of motives for recommending its followers to remain unmarried and for imposing celibacy upon its priests; but falling in love has driven even priests to leave the Church. In the same way love for women breaks through the group ties of race, of national separation, and of the social class system, and it thus produces important effects as a factor in civilization. It seems certain that homosexual love is far more compatible with group ties, even when it takes the shape of uninhibited sexual tendencies—a remarkable fact, the explanation of which might carry us far.'

The group character of the socially approved ritual seems to possess a quality for which I could find no equivalent in the ritual of the obsessive-neurotic. Evidently, as brought out by the practices of such a group as the Catholic Church, the group is at considerable pains to protect itself against individual deviations from the fixed ritual. The group defines what is to be carried out as established ritualistic practice, and condemns not only the delinquency of not carrying out the ritual, but also that of over-conscientiousness in carrying out the established pattern. It is in this latter regard that the group recognizes in its ritualistic performances the danger of the destructive spread of obsessive acts which is so crippling to the individual obsessive neurotic. I have been impressed with the considerable pains to which the group goes to countermand effectually this tendency to spread. This may throw some little light on the relative longevity and cohesiveness of certain ritualistic group practices as opposed to others. In this regard the Catholic Church has demonstrated a somewhat superior capacity, with its considerable skill both in demanding obedience to the ritualistic performances and its constant recognition of and dealing with the danger of the obsessive spread which would eventually destroy it. This argues a certain non-obsessive malleability in an otherwise highly structured group system as suggested in the above-mentioned concept of the 'scrupulous conscience' and the Encratite heresy.

The question arises whether it is possible to complete a psycho-analysis and have the patient retain his religious beliefs. This issue should be clearly differentiated from another, the scientific investigation of religion as a sociological pheno-



menon and as a systematized ritualistic performance full of cogent symbolism. This latter issue has to do with the justifiable privilege enjoyed by psycho-analysis, as a scientific discipline, of exploring religion as a manifestation of man's activities and using its conclusions to benefit mankind through its discoveries both in the broader sense and by means of their application in therapy. It would appear to me that it is quite another matter when the question is one of individual therapy and of what philosophy of life a patient adopts in order that we may consider analysis at an end. Even if it be proposed that religion is a mass neurosis of world-wide distribution, it is certainly doubtful whether we might reasonably look for cure in our patients in terms of non-participation in this ubiquitous activity. Freud in *The Future of an Illusion* (4) compares religion to a childhood neurosis and states that at some future undefined date man will emerge from it. In his very definition of our current cultural place he accepts the essential normality of this phenomenon and assumes our need to accept it as a legitimate frame of reference in current individual therapy.

If we suggest that religion represents a reasonable reaching out on man's part for a socially acceptable and integrative solution for his oedipal dilemma and his dependence needs, consistent with the current stage of human development, then no issue would be taken with his religious participation. While psycho-analysis does not particularly advocate passive compliance with social forces, it does not on the other hand advocate revolution against existing social institutions. In my opinion, therefore, the retention of religious beliefs and practice would not in itself warrant the conclusion that psycho-analysis had not been successfully completed. Brierley (1) takes a similar position, positing the potential sublimatory value of religion.

'It is important for the psychologist to become fully informed of the archaic-infantile content of dogma and ritual, but this should not lead him to overlook the provision made in ritual and prayer for the satisfaction of impulse and the recovery of otherwise lost instinctual energy in the be-

liever. It soon becomes apparent that Christianity caters not only for obsessional characters but also for a much greater variety of psychological types. As will be seen later, it can be argued that to a person of truly religious temperament his religion is a sublimation rather than a disease.'

The difference between her view and that of Freud is, however, more apparent than real, since sublimations must inevitably be established with due regard to the stage of man's development and thus for his social institutions at any given time.

Freud closes *The Future of an Illusion* (4A) with the statement, 'No, science is no illusion. But it would be an illusion to suppose that we could get anywhere else what it cannot give us.' This comment presumes that in the ultimate sense there is no substitute for 'knowledge'. While this may be true, it is unlikely, notwithstanding Freud's optimism, that at any conceivable future date sufficient knowledge will be available. Moreover, we cannot assume, in view of our present concept of man, that knowledge in and of itself will ever supply him with enough relief from anxiety to make it unnecessary for him to have illusions, or, as I prefer to call them (4), constructive delusions. Such illusions have the prospects of wider usefulness through structuring into social institutions.

To summarize, I should wish to emphasize again the thesis that the particular use of a social institution by the neurotic individual may be a problem in therapy and should not be confused with the aims of that institution itself. In this paper I have attempted to illustrate the manner in which the tenets of the social institution differ from the distorted use of them as a technique of defence by the individual neurotic. Issue is not taken here with the legitimate rôle that psycho-analytic research plays in the exploration of social institutions. I wish to stress, however, that such research is quite different from the study of the use of such institutions by the individual neurotic in psycho-analytic therapy. It is my hope that some light has been thrown on this critically important distinction.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) BRIERLEY, MARJORIE (1947). 'Psychoanalysis and Integrative Living.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 28, 71.  
 (2) *The Catholic Encyclopedia*. (New York: Gilmary Society, 1909; Encyclopedia Press Inc., pp. 412-413, 1913.)

- (3) FENICHEL, OTTO. *The Psychoanalytic Theory of the Neuroses*. (New York: Norton, 1945), p. 488.  
 (4) FREUD, SIGMUND. *The Future of an Illusion*. (New York: Liveright, 1949), Chap. X, p. 88.



- (4A) — *Ibid.*, p. 98.  
(4B) — *Ibid.*, pp. 48–49.  
(5) — ‘Obsessive Acts and Religious Procedures.’ *Collected Papers*, Vol. 2, 4th Ed. (London: Hogarth, 1946), pp. 25–36.  
(6) — *Group Psychology and the Analysis of the Ego*. (London: Hogarth, 1948), pp. 115 ff.  
(7) HARTMANN, HEINZ (1950). ‘The Application of Psychoanalytic Concepts to Social Science.’ *Psychoanal. Quart.*, **19**, 387–388.  
(8) HEENAN, JOHN CARMEL, D.D. *Priest and Penitent*. (New York: Sheed and Ward, 1938, pp. 181, 182.)  
(9) NOVEY, SAMUEL. ‘Some Philosophical Speculations About the Concept of the Genital Character.’ *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **36**, 88.  
(10) VAN DER VELDT, REV. JAMES H., O.F.M., Ph.D., and ODENWALD, ROBERT P., M.D., F.A.P.A. *Psychiatry and Catholicism*. (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1952), p. 343.  
(11) *Webster’s New International Dictionary of the English Language*, 2nd ed. (Springfield, Mass., Merriam, 1949.)

(Received 23 February, 1955)



# DREAM INTERPRETATION IN THE TALMUD

(BABYLONIAN AND GRAECO-ROMAN PERIOD)

By

SANDOR LORAND,<sup>1</sup> NEW YORK

In surveying the scientific literature on dreams Freud remarked on the attitude toward dreams which prevailed during classical antiquity: 'They took it as axiomatic that dreams were connected with the world of superhuman beings in whom they believed and that they were revelations from gods and daemons' (1). In the present study I wish to present the thinking of the Hebrews of that same period with regard to the meaning of dreams. Their attitudes and beliefs about the origin, meaning, and interpretation of dreams are embodied in the Babylonian Talmud, which was compiled during the period extending from 200 B.C. to about A.D. 300, which may be referred to as the Graeco-Roman Period.

The Talmud is a compilation of the contributions of over 2,000 scholars from various countries, principally Palestine and Babylon. These contributions date from 450 B.C. to about A.D. 500. The Talmud, containing some 6,000 folio pages, is divided into the Palestinian and the Babylonian Talmud. These two separate sets of books are referred to collectively as the Talmud. The Palestinian Talmud is the earlier; the Babylonian was compiled about 200 years later and is considerably larger than the Palestinian.

The Talmud consists of two parts: the Mishnah, containing the first codification of Jewish law since the Bible, and edited by the Patriarch Rabbi Jehuda about 200 B.C.; and the Gemara, which is a commentary on the Mishnah. The scholars of the Mishnah are called the teachers (Tannaim), and the scholars of the Gemara are known as the interpreters (Amoraim). From the literary point of view, the Talmud is composed of two main parts: the Halakah and the Haggadah. The Halakah deals with law. The Haggadah contains metaphysical, theological, philosophical, and historical material; in addition it contains a great deal on traditions, astronomy, mathematics, botany, medicine,

psychology, demonology, and dream interpretation.

According to Freud, Herophilus, the Greek physician who lived under the first Ptolemy, around 320 B.C., was the first to speak explicitly of dreams as deriving from wishes. Freud also refers to the Dream Book of Artemidorus of Daldis who lived in the second century A.D. Artemidorus' book he considers as the most complete study of dreams and dream-interpretation as practised in the Graeco-Roman period. In referring to the Hebrew sources of dream interpretations, Freud mentions the biblical dream of Joseph; no reference, however, is to be found in his writings to the extensive dream literature in the Talmud.

In preparing this study, a careful examination was made of the volumes of the Babylonian Talmud and the various extensive writings based on it, yielding no less than 217 references to dreams in the Talmudic literature. These references cover the Hebrew's thoughts about the origin of dreams, their purpose and meaning, wish-fulfilment in dreams, the relation of dreams to reality, the technique of dream interpretation, etc. (2). If assembled in a separate volume this Talmudic material would make a quite impressive Dream Book.

In writing on the origins of the dream theories of the Hebrews, one cannot omit the period of history preceding that of classical antiquity in which the Talmud originated. This pre-history of the Hebrews with its myths, religious beliefs, and customs entered into and influenced later formulations which finally found expression in the Talmud.

The pre-historical period of the Hebrews can be traced back to about 1000 B.C., when David conquered Jerusalem. With this conquest the Hebrews gave up their nomadic life and settled down among the Canaanites, Assyrians, Baby-

<sup>1</sup> Professor of Clinical Psychiatry. Director Division of Psycho-Analytic Education, State University of New York, College of Medicine.



Ionians, and Egyptians. The religious doctrines and mysticism as well as the social and cultural life of the surrounding peoples influenced the Hebrews' mode of life and customs. This influence, of course, extended also to their concept of dreams. They were particularly influenced by Babylonian customs and traditions, and by Greek and Roman culture.

The sages of the Talmudic period, who understood their people well, knew how to use this mystical material to shape Hebrew life. Dream interpretation was used by the sages and rabbis for that purpose; dreams were interpreted as having ethical and religious significance as well as prophesying the future, and thus were used to mould religious, social, and political behaviour and thought. Dreams became a source of guidance for the heads of the colleges in making decisions on moral and spiritual matters, and were used quite frequently in this manner. Teachers were able to appeal to the popular imagination through dream interpretations.

This dream literature in the Talmud clearly bears the marks of Babylonian, Greek, and Roman influence, as indicated earlier. Many passages in the Haggadah describe dialogues between the various leaders and princes of the Hebrews on the one hand, and the Caesars, Cleopatra, and Ptolemy on the other.

The Hebrew conceptions must also have influenced Artemidorus' ideas about dreams. In his wide travels, Artemidorus collected many ideas on the subject. He cites many dreams, along with their interpretations, which are similar to the Talmudic dream interpretations. The symbols which Artemidorus uses are identical with those which appear in Talmudic dreams, but their meaning and the interpretation of the symbols are frequently not identical.

In general, ancient peoples believed that dreams were sent by the gods to guide human beings in their decisions and actions. Moreover, they regarded dreams as either favourable or hostile manifestations. This belief was held by the Phoenicians, Egyptians, and especially by the Babylonians, with whom the Hebrews had so much contact, especially during the Diaspora, and from whose culture they borrowed so extensively. The Haggadah contains many references to the divine nature and prophetic significance of dreams, as well as to their wish-fulfilment aim. In addition, the Hebrews considered the antagonistic forces in the human mind to be a source of dreams. Among the supernatural powers which

may be the source of dreams, they included evil spirits, daemons, the returning dead, and the wandering soul (3).

The wandering soul was described as consisting of two parts—Ruach and Neshomo. Neshomo departs in sleep and travels all over the world. What it sees and experiences forms the content of the dream. Emissaries of the supernatural power may appear to the dreamer, the emissary being either an angel or a daemon. They appear to help, to warn or to punish. Sometimes a dead father will appear to his son in a dream to advise him in the solution of a difficult problem (4). Many examples of such dreams are cited in the Haggadah. Living persons may also appear in a dream for the above purposes, but in the literature they appear to do so less frequently.

Artemidorus also believed in the divine origin of dreams and considered daemons instrumental in their production. Socrates thought of dreams as originating from the gods, and thus ascribed a prophetic meaning to them.

The influence of Graeco-Roman dream concepts and theories is clearly shown in the Talmud in connection with the Hebrews' visits to dream oracles in cases of sickness, and also their indulgence in divining and probing dreams stimulated artificially. We find many instances of warnings and prohibitions against such practices on the part of the teachers and the heads of the various academies.

It was probably under pressure of the custom prevalent among the general population of imitating the Greeks and Romans that the Hebrews also visited the Temple of Aesculapius in order to practise incubation for provoking dreams, the purpose of which was the healing of the sick. The repeated warnings and prohibitions indicate that the artificial provoking of dreams was widely practised.

We find occasional expressions of opinion on the part of some Rabbis that dreams have no meaning. Rabbi Meir, for example, was of this opinion; Rabbi Nathan, on the other hand, believed that they do have meaning (5). Later, however, Talmudic sages completely accepted the idea that dreams have meaning and that they can be excited artificially, but it was strictly forbidden to use artificial means such as incubation (6).

We can ascertain two trends according to which the origin of dreams is explained in the Talmud: first, dreams have an *external* source—they come from higher powers, from God or



His angels (prophetic dreams), or from daemons (warning, threatening, and punishment dreams); second, they have an *internal* source: they have a psychological origin. Rabbi Jonathan expressed this as follows: 'The man is shown in the dream what he thinks in his heart' (7). There are references to dreams originating from mental activity, the inner powers of the sleeper. In this category the Talmud places dreams originating from the thoughts of the day, and cites as an example the case of Rabbi Joshua and the Emperor Hadrian. The Emperor asked the Rabbi, 'Of what shall I dream tonight?' Rabbi Joshua told him that he would dream of how the Persians would mishandle him. The Emperor Hadrian thought about this the whole day and did dream about it at night (8).

In ascribing the origin of the dream to the individual's inner powers, the Hebrew concept was and is that there is always a struggle in man's soul between two inclinations—the good, the higher ambitions (Yetzer Tob) and the impulses which are immoral and impure (called Yetzer Hara). This struggle finds expression in dreams.

The various references to dreams in the Talmud can be grouped under the following categories: the origin of dreams; the purpose of dreams; prophetic and wish-fulfilment dreams; nightmares and erotic dreams; punishment dreams, expiation, and changing bad dreams to good; and the technique of dream interpretation. In addition to these topics there are also discussions of the relation of the dream to reality, dreams without meaning, and the problem of not dreaming.

As to the purposes of dreams, the Talmud considered them important in influencing the life and behaviour of the individual. Mention is made, for example, of the importance a king's dream has, which will concern the whole world, i.e. the king's action as a result of the dream may have a great influence on the world situation. This has its parallel in Artemidorus' description of the importance of a ruler's dream. The Talmud further enumerates dreams with political content, which may have the effect of influencing politics; dreams which may influence an individual to change his religion; dreams which may make one remember important rulings and laws—for instance, the dream of Rab (9), who was reminded of a forgotten Halakals (Law) in his dream.

The Talmud attributed many meanings to a

dream, just as our present concept attributes several wish-fulfilment elements to the same dream. The general Talmudic opinion added to this the belief that no dream is ever fully realized, whether good or bad, because every dream contains both truth and untruth. The Talmud compares it to rye which does not exist without straw; in the same way, no dream exists without being partly worthless (10).

The dreams in which a wish is most likely to be fulfilled are the early morning dreams. This realization of the dream wish is especially emphasized in the relationship of dreams to sickness. Rabbi Abraham (11) enumerates the following bodily activities as good omens for recovery when they occur in sickness: sneezing, perspiration, sleeping, dreaming, and seminal emission. This is paralleled by Aristotle's contention that dreams show signs of what goes on inside the body; he cautions physicians to take careful account of their patients' dreams.

The belief that dreams foretell the future led people to try to produce dreams by means of incubation. These magical ways of producing dreams are given special attention in the Talmud. As mentioned above, the Rabbis preached against it, but it was practised nevertheless; as time went on, however, it became a partly approved practice. The Talmud mentions that Rabbi Jose, who lived during the reign of Diocletian, fasted eighty days in order to see the dead Rabbi Chiyya the Great, who finally appeared to him. The practice of incubation was due to the influence of the Romans and Greeks, who frequently consulted oracles of the dead. In the tractate *Sanhedrin* it is mentioned that one may sleep on the grave of a dead person so as to dream and receive some message from the dead (12). But sleeping on a grave was considered dangerous because of the evil spirits which hover over the graves (13). Artemidorus held a contrary belief, that one cannot ask the gods for a dream, nor can dreams be artificially produced. According to his theory only unexpected or unlooked-for dreams can be considered as of divine origin.

Another method of producing dreams, according to the Talmud, is to pray for good dreams or for the nullification or changing of bad dreams. Prayers against bad dreams were established by Rabbi Jona. Rabbi Jehuda's advice was to ask God for good dreams. He remarks that one should wish for three things which are of great importance: a good king, a good year, and a good dream. Before going to sleep one



prays for peaceful sleep and also asks not to be troubled by bad thoughts or bad dreams (14). One should pray for good dreams because dreams always deal with the future (15). This custom has survived up to the present. On the High Holy Days, when the *cohen* blesses the community during service, the community prays for the elimination, nullification, and changing of bad thoughts and dreams. In *Berakoth* (16) we read, 'If a dream spirit tells a man "Tomorrow you will die", he should not despair. Prayer and good deeds help.'

The custom of praying for dreams probably derived from the Babylonians, who had prayers for good dreams. The Greeks offered sacrifices for good dreams: they offered sacrifices of wine, etc., to Hermes in order not to have bad dreams.

Another mode of changing bad dreams to good was suggested by Rabbi Huna, according to whom a disturbing dream should be told to three persons, who then pronounce, 'It is good and will remain good. God will turn it into good.' Among the Greeks an individual told his bad dreams to the Sun, for the belief held by the Greeks was that the light breaks the bad spell and disperses the demons of darkness.

Rabbi Chisda believed that a bad dream is worse than being punished by beating. Good dreams were important because, as the Talmud puts it, good dreams were considered the cause of happy feelings. Whenever the Talmud refers to bad dreams it also refers to demons who appear in these dreams, and who torture the sleeper (17). The Talmud has many references to fights between human beings and demons, and these were looked upon as punishment and dreams. They frighten the dreamer, and the fright itself is a punishment. Dreams in which one is tortured by demons or evil spirits can be influenced by prayer and good deeds as well as by fasting (18). One may also pray to forget a dream (19), but the strongest antidote to bad dreams is fasting (20).

Nightmares the Talmud connects with sexual sensations and excitement. The demon who causes erotic dreams is described in the Talmud as hairy and resembling a goat (very much like the faun of the Romans). Another well-known demon who causes such erotic dreams is Lilith. The Talmud believes that she attacks those persons who sleep alone in the house (21). Lilith may take on a masculine or a feminine form. She appears in a female form when approaching men and in a male form when approaching women (22).

Lilith was probably taken over by the Hebrews from the Babylonians (23) ('Lilu' and 'Lilitu' in Assyrian and Babylonian). The Greeks knew her under the form of Empusae (forcers-in) = Incubus.

These demons torture the sleeper with erotic feelings, especially during afternoon sleep. The Rabbis of the Talmud made provisions for the dreamer of such erotic dreams so that he may not feel guilty. They declared that seminal emissions as a result of such dreams were not the responsibility of the dreamer. Rabbi Huna states, 'Even if the emission is connected with feelings of gratification, the dreamer is not responsible, because it was not real sexual intercourse.'

The symbols in the Talmudic dream interpretation correspond to the symbols which appear in the proverbs in Hebrew folklore and myths. A woman was symbolized in a dream by a house (24). The door of the house also symbolized a woman. A dream of Raba (25) is as follows: 'I saw the outer door of a house collapse.' Interpretation: a woman will die.

Teeth in a dream refer to members of the family (26). Birds in a dream refer to human beings, and may also function as sexual symbols. Pigeons in a dream always represent women; for example, a man tells a dream in which he saw a pigeon returning to his bed; interpretation: the man had intercourse with many women (27). The raven is usually a male sexual symbol. A dream is told in which someone sees a raven return to his wife's bed. Interpretation: the woman had sex relations with many men (28). Artemidorus also refers to the raven as a wrecker of marriages and a thief; this interpretation is suggested to him by the black colour of the raven and by the changing of his voice. The owl and the bat appear in the Talmud as bad omens because they are night birds and prey upon other birds. They were thought of as the embodiment of the spirits of the dead. The snake in the Talmud, however, was a good omen. This interpretation was shared by the Greeks and the Romans, for whom snakes were household gods. Artemidorus speaks of snakes as dangerous, but at times he considers them to be of good omen. The hen in the Talmud refers to fertility, suggested by her many eggs.

The various fruits and plants had symbolic sexual significance. A dream in which a man poured oil on an olive tree was interpreted to mean that he slept with his mother in the dream (29), a tree branching out representing the



woman, and the oil having its obvious significance. (This is one of many incest dreams mentioned in the Talmud.) Another dream is cited in which a man saw the shadow of a myrtle tree above him as he was lying under the tree. Interpretation: he slept with a woman in the dream, the woman on top and the man underneath. In general, the myrtle symbolized the engaged girl, because of its universal use for the bride at weddings. The grapevine also symbolized woman because of the vines pregnant with grapes, the grapes referring to the breasts.

Oedipal and incestuous dreams were well known and were correctly interpreted. A dream in which a man slept with his mother is interpreted euphemistically: 'You slept with rationality' (30). This interpretation attempts to spare the dreamer's embarrassment and possible sense of guilt. The interpretation refers to a Biblical verse which reads: 'Call rationality Mother.' In the same fashion, a dream in which a man sleeps with his sister was interpreted by citing the Biblical verse: 'Speak to wisdom—you are my sister.' The dream then would mean that the dreamer will be wise, just as in the first dream the dreamer will be rational.

He who dreams about sleeping with a married woman will have a share in the hereafter; this applies only if he does not know her and did not think of her in the evening. The interpretation refers to the belief that sexual intercourse constitutes a sixtieth part of the pleasures of Paradise. Artemidorus considered such dreams as of evil intent because they may lead to the breaking up of a marriage (31).

To be nude in the dream meant to be without sin, the nudity probably symbolizing the purity of the new-born baby. The moon always symbolized a woman, just as for the Romans the moon was feminine and the sun always represented a man.

A man came to Rabbi Ishmael and said: 'I dreamed that one of my eyes kissed the other eye.' The Rabbi replied: 'You should be dead; you slept with your sister' (32). According to Artemidorus also, the right eye symbolizes the son, brother, and father; the left eye symbolizes the daughter, sister, and mother.

Dreams with castration content are also mentioned in the Talmud, the loss of parts of the body—hands, legs, teeth, or hair. These were interpreted in a euphemistic way. The general interpretation was that a person afflicted by such a loss in his dreams would have an easier life. If one has no hands, one will not have to use one's

hands for work and struggle. If one loses a foot, he will ride on a horse or be carried about, which also will make his life easier.

The dream interpreters in the Talmud sometimes used anagrams or plays on words, and at times interpreted from the double meaning of a word. In order to find a meaning for a dream, a word was divided into parts, or the interpretation was taken from the sound of the word in the dream. Interpretation through play on words: Bar Qappara said to Rabbi Jehuda ha-Nasi (compiler of the Mishnah), 'In my dream I saw that my nose fell down.' Rabbi Jehuda answered, 'Violent anger was diverted from you.' 'Nose' in Hebrew, 'ap'—also means 'anger' (33).

Dreams may mean the opposite of their manifest content. Rabbi Chisda says: 'A bad dream is better than a good dream' (34).

The interpretation was always provided solely by the interpreter, and not through the dreamer's associated thoughts. Talmudic and ancient interpretation in general was based on the associations which the dream evoked in the interpreter's mind.

Aristotle in *De Divinatione per Somnum* states (as quoted by Freud): 'The best interpreter of dreams was the man who could best grasp similarities; . . . the most successful interpreter is the man who can detect the truth from the misshapen picture' (35).

The Talmud makes a distinction between good and bad interpreters, and mention is made of the great number of interpreters in the same community. *Berakoth* (36) notes that there were twenty-four dream interpreters in Jerusalem at one time, and Rabbi Bana stated that he visited all of them. He remarked, 'What one did not interpret to me the other did, and all interpretations were realized in the end.' The Talmud advises that the interpreter should be paid lest he be influenced in his interpretation.

The interpreter's rôle was important because his interpretation might have an important bearing on the subsequent actions of the dreamer in waking life.

The dream interpreter is advised by the Talmud to consider the dreamer's personality, his various life circumstances, his age, his occupation, economic circumstances, state of happiness or unhappiness, how troubled or relaxed he was at the time of dreaming, etc. The dream can then be interpreted from many angles and in different ways. For instance, the occupation of the



dreamer is important because the dream may be interpreted in relation to it (37). Naturally, the interpreter must be well versed in the various languages which the dreamer speaks, so that the idioms of those languages will be known to him.

The Rabbis advised that some dreams should not be interpreted at all, because they might contain some unfavourable predictions.

The outstanding characteristics of Talmudic

dream interpretation were to prophesy the future and to serve the wish-fulfilment function. Both contain much truth. As Freud said, ' . . . The ancient belief that dreams foretell the future is not wholly devoid of truth. By picturing our wishes as fulfilled, dreams are, after all, leading us into the future. But this future which the dreamer pictures as the present has been moulded by his indestructible wish into a perfect likeness of the past.'

#### NOTES AND REFERENCES

(1) FREUD, *Interpretation of Dreams*, Standard Ed., Vol. I, p. 2.

(2) Particularly valuable sources of reference are: the *Monumenta Talmudica*, and the five volumes of *En-Jacob*, which is a compilation of the Haggadah of the Babylonian Talmud, by Rabbi Jacob ibn Chabib.

(3) *Shabbath*, 152B; *Hagigah*, 5B; *Berakoth*, 55B.

(4) *Shabbath*, 11B.

(5) *Horayoth*, 13B.

(6) *Sanhedrin*, 65B.

(7) *Berakoth*, 55B.

(8) *Berakoth*, 56A.

(9) *Sanhedrin*, 81A; 82B.

(10) *Berakoth*, 55A.

(11) *Berakoth*, 57B.

(12) *Sanhedrin*, 65B; *Berakoth*, 18B.

(13) *Gittin*, 71; *Niddah*, 17A.

(14) *Berakoth*, 60B.

(15) *Berakoth*, 55.

(16) *Berakoth*, 10.

(17) *Shabbath*, 30B.

(18) *Berakoth*, 51 and 55.

(19) *Berakoth*, 55B.

(20) *Shabbath*, 11A.

(21) *Shabbath*, 151A.

(22) See also references *Gittin*, 68A, and *Pesachim*, 11B.

(23) For further reference: 'The Anathema of the Dead Mother', by S. LORAND, in *Psychoanalysis and Social Sciences*, Vol. I. (New York: Int. Univ. Press.)

(24) *Shabbath*, 118B.

(25) *Berakoth*, 56A.

(26) See: 'The Symbolism of Teeth in Dreams', by S. LORAND and S. FELDMAN, *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 1955, 36, Part 3.

(27) *Berakoth*, 56A.

(28) *Berakoth*, 56B.

(29) *Berakoth*, 56B.

(30) *Berakoth*, 57A.

(31) *Berakoth*, 57A.

(32) *Berakoth*, 56B.

(33) *Berakoth*, 56B.

(34) *Berakoth*, 55A.

(35) FREUD: *Interpretation of Dreams*, Standard Ed., Vol. I, p. 97.

(36) *Berakoth*, 55.

(37) *Berakoth*, 56.

(Received 10 January, 1955)



# ON THE ORIGIN OF MAN AND THE LATENCY PERIOD<sup>1</sup>

By

LAJOS SZÉKELY, STOCKHOLM

The latency period is a phase of human development which has in recent years become a much debated problem. While very contradictory views are expressed in psycho-analytic literature (1, 2, 4) as to its universal occurrence, the assumptions as to the course it takes are in close agreement.

Let us begin with a historical review of the theory of latency. In his *Three Essays* (7) Freud propounded the doctrine of *infantile sexuality* followed by the *latency period* until, finally, mature genital sexuality unfolds in puberty. He considered that these phases of development and their time sequence are determined biologically, i.e. by a hereditary tendency. The latency period is characterized by the relative regression of the manifestations of instinct. Strong intrapsychic barriers against infantile sexuality are erected in the form of shame, disgust, sense of guilt, and moral ideas. Later, the 'first flourishing period' (*Blüteperiode*)—evoked by the erogenic zone—was known as the phallic period, and also described, in view of the object-relations, as the Oedipus phase. During this phase, there occurs a far-reaching co-ordination of the partial impulses under the supremacy of the genitals, i.e. of the phallus, and all sexual drives are directed towards a single person (10). The attitude to the father is ambivalent, the object drive towards the mother affectionate: this is the content of the simple Oedipus complex in the boy (9). But the relations are much more complex since the simple Oedipus complex is found only very seldom, and in most cases the complete Oedipus complex has to be expected. Ambivalence of the emotions towards both parents is probably the rule.

The Oedipus complex is, however, destined to extinction; in the boy, it is shattered by the fear of castration; in the girl, its fate is somewhat different. Here *latency* sets in.

Freud had 'no doubt that the temporal and causal relations described between Oedipus com-

plex, sexual intimidation (the threat of castration), formation of the superego and advent of the latency period are of a typical kind' (11). Anna Freud supplemented this causal sequence by representing the significance of latency for the development of the ego. She says: 'While the sex drives remain latent (latency period), the ego assumes superiority, directs the actions of the child, establishes the reality principle and effects the first real adaptations to the exigencies of the outside world' (6). But even before the advent of actual latency, during the phallic period, many ego functions are already considerably developed and differentiated, among others the following: *postponement* of the discharge of instinctual energy in view of conflicts between instincts, the endurance of some *storing up* of libidinous and aggressive instinctual energy (tension tolerance), development of various defensive mechanisms. Though there are still many gaps in our knowledge of the specific connexions, there seems to be justification for the general conclusion that a definite differentiation of the ego, with its instinct-controlling, reality-testing, and synthetic activity, is a prerequisite in order for latency to occur at all.

As Lampl-de Groot (20) observes so aptly, '... the ego has actually', as early as the phallic phase, 'acquired a sense of reality, naturally in interplay with the instinctual development and under the influence of the environment. The ego has overcome magical thinking and the magical attitude towards the outer world to a considerable extent; it has developed its integrative powers, to such an extent that ambivalent attitudes are no longer directed towards one single object, but can be divided between father and mother; it has formed the necessary reactive and defensive mechanisms, which have transformed or warded off such instinctual tendencies as disturb the object-relationship.'

Thus we see, at the outset of the first phase of latency, between five-and-a-half and eight years,



an ego which is faced with new tasks qualitatively and quantitatively of a high order. (i) It wages a defensive war against the instinctual impulses. (ii) It is exposed to the threats of the newly established superego, which is at first still rigid and harsh, and, for the present, forms a foreign body in the personality (1). (iii) The ego has a great integrative task to perform. It must co-ordinate the sadistic, aggressive, sexual 'imagines' of the 'primal scene parents' with those of the moral authorities (parents), which prohibit the instinctual impulses (16). The de-sexualized and de-aggressivized parent-images become the nucleus of the ego-ideal. During the latency period, the first permanent character traits are formed. Freud's original formula may therefore be supplemented thus: *the temporal and causal relations between Oedipus complex, sexual deterrent, ego development, establishment of a superego, and advent of the latency period are typical.*

In Freud's conception, the latency period—let me emphasize this once again—is determined by biological-hereditary causes in human ontogenesis, in the same way as the ontogenetic sequence of the other phases of development of the libido, the oral, anal, and phallic periods and puberty. Recently, however, various writers have cast doubts upon the inevitable occurrence of latency (Buxbaum (2), Devereux (4)). According to them, the latency period is not such a definitely determined fundamental phase of psychosexual development as the others. Devereux attempts to prove by the example of the Mohave community that where the community in general, and the parents in particular, are gentle, tolerant, and free from the sense of guilt in their own sexual relations, a 'behavioural latency' does not occur, and the psychological processes characteristic of latency are reduced, qualitatively and quantitatively, to a minimum, though they are not completely absent. It is not denied, however, that here too the Oedipus complex and the primal scene have a traumatic effect, even if only to a moderate extent, and evoke the known attitudes and phantasies which usually accompany latency.

From the fact that the Oedipus complex and the fear of castration are universal, while the latency period is not, these authors conclude that the emergence of a latency period depends on the experiences during the oedipal period, and not on hereditary, palaeopsychological, or intrapsychic factors.

The occurrence of the latency period has, how-

ever, apart from its ontogenetic significance, also a phylogenetic aspect. Here too Freud has propounded a fundamental question. He has shown that the dichronous inception of sexual development, with a sexual latency period between, is specifically a human phenomenon, and it is questionable whether a corresponding period occurs among the higher animals (7). In later publications, Freud speaks still more plainly, postulating an inner connexion between the evolution of the latency period and the genesis of Man: '... the postponement, and the beginning twice over, of sexual life has much to do with the transition of humanity' (Freud (13), p. 121). Further: 'Here we come upon the fact that the onset of sexual life is diphasic, that it occurs in two waves; this is unknown except in man and evidently has an important bearing upon his genesis' (12).

The interest in the development of the human psyche from early animal stages, the attitude to the question whether there are transitions in development between man and animal, or whether, on the contrary, there are essential differences is, in this post-Darwinian age, still actual. As shown by a recent survey (22), differences in intelligence, symbolic function, and the dependence on the dominance of the instincts were cited as fundamental arguments, and interpreted sometimes as betokening essential differences, sometimes as differences of degree. But the only qualitatively new idea which Aristotle or the Fathers of the Church had not already mooted, is Freud's observation that the appearance of a sexual latency period is an exclusively human phenomenon. In any case, biology has not yet been able to answer in the affirmative Freud's question whether latency occurs in the higher animals. We may, therefore, assume 'that the formation of the latency period was the most essential phenomenon in decisively determining the difference between man and animal' (19).

Psycho-analysis, therefore, makes the *evolution of the latency period* the pivot of the question of Man's origin. There have been—so far as I know—three psycho-analysts who have made a biological investigation into the question of whether, and if so how, under the influence of what factors, the latency period emerged in the phylogenetic process of the genesis of man. The first was Ferenczi, who laid down the hypothesis that our ancestors must have lived in extremely favourable circumstances, and that this paradisaical existence was shattered by a stupendous



geological upheaval, the irruption of the glacial period. But for the danger which the ice-age brought with it, Man's development would have been arrested (5). In a very recent publication, Hans Lampl (19) supports Ferenczi's hypothesis, and supplements it by saying that the change occurred *via* the endocrine system. He maintains that the physical inhibition imposed by the danger from without modified the endocrine development, and that this, in turn, led to the emergence of the sexual latency period. He traces the development through the following stages :

1. Uninhibited primitive man;
2. Glacial period;
3. Man who has evolved inhibitions of instinctual drives;
4. Hormonal changes;
5. Latency period and development of present-day type of man.

This evolutionary hypothesis, which recalls Cuvier's 'catastrophe theory', has very significant gaps in it. (i) The fiction on which the hypothesis rests, to wit, the 'extremely favourable circumstances' of the pre-ice age, is borne out by no anthropological or zoological data. (ii) Nowadays, we expect of an evolutionary theory that it should indicate more specific connexions between the different changes. The origin of man in general and the latency period in particular are characterized by the evolution of the human ego organization, with its inherent hostility to instinct' (6), its capacity for equilibrating opposite instinctual tensions, of postponing discharge, of testing reality. It is not at all clear how an ice-age with its climatic conditions, bringing scarcity of food, could elicit just such psychical changes in the course of phylogenesis. But it is just these questions which an evolutionary hypothesis of the human latency period should tend to elucidate. Imre Hermann (14) differs from this view. He holds that '*the emergence of human latency may be traced to two elements: a psychosocial, rooted in the essence of the primate (dominance of the stronger); the other a biological, peculiar to the genus, which arrests the recapitulation of the phylogenetic periods of maturity and is connected in an intelligible manner with the formation of the super-ego.*'

Freud's view that there is an inner connexion between human latency and human genesis is one of those assumptions which has not since

been followed up, and is backed by no factual evidence. Hermann's theory of psychosocial elements rooted in the nature of the Primates is, in my judgement, correct, but it too needs empirical material for its support.

The purpose of the following remarks is to specify the psychosocial factors, in so far as this seems possible at present, on the basis of researches and hypotheses dealing with the life of the apes (Primates). These studies lead to the conclusion—if I may anticipate observations to be discussed later—that the special physiology of the sexual function and the social life of these animals create conditions such that individual variability in certain psychical functions has a special relation to sexual selection, i.e. to the possibility of propagating the species. These psychic functions—varying with the individual—are the following: (i) to postpone *for a long time* the discharge of instinctual energy; (ii) to dam up libidinous and aggressive tensions; (iii) to control the aggressive impulse; (iv) to equilibrate conflicting instinctual tensions, to endure the permanent conflict, and to act with prudence . . . 'the primates . . . differ from all other mammals, in that the particular type of social conflict is an ever-present element in the life of several species. We can infer that, in the setting of primate society, this conflict has a pronounced selective action on the breeding performance of individuals within the group, and thus will have evolutionary consequences of a very high order' (3).

In the following pages, the physiology and the social behaviour of the apes will be described, in order, finally, to indicate the evolutionary results of these relations on the development of the psychic functions described above and on the evolution of the human ego.

#### *Mating behaviour*

According to Zuckerman (26) there are three types of mating behaviour among mammals: (i) The male is potent at all times, and the female has several periods within the year. The reproductive cycle changes from anoestrus to oestrus, and the female is receptive to the male during the oestrus only. The animals mate when a male meets a female who is in oestrus. Mating is a relatively brief episode in relation to the life of the individual (e.g. rodents).

(ii) Mating depends on definite mating seasons, which begin and end almost simultaneously in the two sexes. The mating period is much shorter than the asexual interval. During



mating, the males fight (marine mammals, Ungulata).

(iii) The third type is characteristic of the anthropoid apes. The male is always potent, the female receptive, not only during oestrus, but throughout the cycle.

A further feature of this type is that the sexual attractiveness of the female is strongest when the mucous membranes of the outer genitals are swollen, and other anatomical changes occur. In the apes, this period of great attraction covers from a quarter to a third of the cycle; in the other mammals it is much shorter (about one-eighth). Among the apes who live in a community, the female usually mates only with a male with whom she is familiar and on friendly terms. Typically, these animals mate only when the female's genitals are swollen—including the time of ovulation. At other times, the male ignores the female sexually, or, if he approaches her, she usually repels him.

These diverse mating relations have far-reaching consequences for the frequency with which the males of a species are sexually stimulated—or, in other words, for the length of time spent in sexual excitement in proportion to the lifetime of the individual. The males are *sexually excited* when they are in a state of physiological readiness, and when they meet a female who is also in a physiological state of sexual attractiveness. The length of the period of attraction—in relation to the reproductive cycle—varies widely between the different species of mammals, as we have said before. No less variable is the chance that a male will meet such a female. It depends, among other things, on the number of females in proportion to that of the males, how densely the area is inhabited by the animals, and so forth. Among the animals who live in a community, the probability of such a meeting is, of course, greatest.

From the length of the period of sexual attraction and the chance of a meeting between the sexes, the length of time during which the individuals of the different species of mammals are sexually excited may be computed. Chance and Mead (3) have made such a calculation. It shows that the male apes living in a community spend about 80–90 per cent. of their lives under conditions of sexual excitement: those of other species of mammals, 20–24 per cent.

#### Social life

Their peculiar mating circumstances, their constant sexual excitement, set a distinctive

stamp on the ape community. From the abundant material which Chance and Mead have compiled on the basis of Zuckerman's and Carpenter's investigation in the wild, I will here select only what is relevant to our present theme.

I shall seek to show that, owing to the changed relation between mating behaviour and fertility in the female, the capacity of the subordinate male to postpone for a long time the discharge of instinctual impulses and to control instinctual conflicts is the prerequisite for his taking part—in a later phase of his life—in the propagation of the species. The control of the instinctual life—the libidinous and aggressive impulses—acquires thus an evolutionary significance, for in selection those males are favoured who excel in these respects.

In the ape community, sexual attractiveness forms the ultimate bond which unites the individuals. 'The emergence of this feature to prominence in their behaviour has created primate society' (3). According to Carpenter, this bond persists in the present-day species for long periods even without primary or overt sexual activity. If we bear in mind the facts retailed above, we are led to the assumption that something which recalls the human libidinous object-relations is already to be found at this phylogenetic stage.

The participation of the male in sexual activities, which comprise not only cohabitation but also 'courtship', preliminary love-play, and all manner of sporting with the female, is regulated in almost every species by the *dominance relation*. The main effect of dominance is that the immature males are excluded from access to the females. The male may take initiative in sexual and non-sexual sporting of every kind (unlike the other mammals) during every phase of the female's cycle. Enmity may, therefore, flare up at any time between the males. The males are, however, the more excited to sexual behaviour—and, *ceteris paribus*, to conflict—the more females in the attractive phase are present. In general, the longer the interval during which attractive females are at hand, the more pronounced are the sexual initiative and the aggressiveness of the males. The females have the most exciting effect on the males when their genital mucous membranes are most swollen; but even less attractive females, that is, those less swollen, can have a provocative effect, if several are together.

The manner in which the males assert their



dominance over the others varies from species to species. Most conspicuous is dominance in respect of the attractive females. The approach to one of these by a competing male is an occurrence which provokes the instantaneous intervention of the proprietor. On the other hand, sporting with an unattractive lady, even coitus, is tolerated in some species. The 'beauties', that is, the swollen ladies, are, in all species, the preserve of the dominating male.

In spite of this, an actual battle is much rarer than one might suppose. The conflicts occur within spatial distances. When a male shows himself in the neighbourhood of an attractive female—within a specific circle—the dominant male assumes a threatening attitude and his menacing gestures become the more violent the nearer the rival ape approaches the female. The expression and attitude of the proprietor usually suffice to cause the intruder to withdraw from the enticing but dangerous domain. In this way a dominant male can maintain his supremacy for long periods, without actually having to fight for it.

In some circumstances, however, it may come to a fight between the ruler and a young 'bachelor', whether because the younger ape can no longer endure the sexual tension or because the balance between the suppression by fear and the stimulation of aggressive impulses—the regular result of threats—in him is shifted. If the battle ends in his victory, as sometimes happens, the stability of the group is as a rule maintained, the only change being that the conqueror takes the place of the conquered. Sometimes general battles occur within the group when the dominant male is not forceful enough to repel immediately any approach to his females. Chance and Mead (3) make the following concluding statement: 'It is possible . . . to show that the social relations of mature males are regulated by the dominance of one male over another in all species of infra-human primates on which observations have been made in the world or in comparatively free-ranging conditions. This dominance is exerted by threat, which in many instances is directed by facial expression, but which may also be expressed in the body posture of the high-ranking males.'

The existence of relatively prolonged periods of stable relations within the group must, therefore, be ascribed to the dominant relations within it, and this implies in turn that *one animal is*

*suppressing his approach with respect to another.*<sup>2</sup>

We see, therefore, that the most decisive occurrences in the primal herd which Freud assumes and has transferred to the pre-history of Man, but which the anthropologists doubt (Kroeber, 1928, 1929), are real occurrences, even if—at least to-day—only at the infra-human stage.

After this survey of the sexual and social behaviour of the sub-human Primates, an attempt will be made to form some assumptions as to the *psychodynamics* underlying it. The sexual attractiveness of the female is counterbalanced by the threats of the more dominant male. Libidinous, object-directed impulses are thus inhibited by fear of another object. The sexual life of these organisms unfolds, and is obstructed in reaching its goal, within a triangular situation. Even after a male is fully mature, and has been so favoured as to become dominant, *his sexuality remains permanently within this triangle*. For the present, we cannot decide to designate this interplay of forces, which is analogous to the human Oedipus complex, as the Oedipus conflict of the sub-human Primates. But we certainly do not go too far in calling it *the animal preliminary stage of the Oedipus conflict*. The difference between the human Oedipus conflict and its sub-human preliminary stage lies in the different fates attending them: (i) the male ape remains his whole life long within this triangle; his whole sexual life is enacted within it, he must continually assert his dominance against his rivals. He never outgrows the triangle. The Oedipus conflict, which in Man is an *infantile* stage of development, represents, therefore, the human repetition of a *final* stage of animal development—if we regard the mature, and not the ageing, individual as the final stage of ontogenesis. (ii) There are no observed facts which point to the assumption that the triangle situation is in any way 'interiorized'. In order to check the object-libidinous impulses of a male, the spatial, visually perceptible presence of the dominant male is needed. We may supplement this statement by adding that all the modes of behaviour here described depend on the spatial distance from each other of the individuals within the triangle. For instance, the dominant male is quite willing to tolerate the spatial proximity of another male if the latter is far enough off from an attractive female. The psycho-

<sup>2</sup> My italics.



dynamic of this triangular situation is not so simple as at first appears. It is wrong to suppose that the inner psychic conflict consists in a struggle between object-libido and fear of the other, threatening male. The threat situation itself, as Tinbergen shows (24, 25), represents a compromise product between contrary instinctual urges: the aggressive tendency to attack the antagonist and the tendency to flee from him (fear).

The special *evolutionary significance of the behaviour of the young, not yet dominant male* depends upon three facts: (i) the progenitors of the species are the few dominant males, because they alone have access to the attractive or fertile females. The sexual play and coital intercourse of the subordinate, or younger, males with the females who are in dioestrus, have no procreative consequences. (ii) The extreme vulnerability of the young males. (iii) The fact that sexual maturity is reached long before the young male attains full stature and develops his physical strength. If, therefore, a young male is not quick enough in retreating from the dangerous area of the triangle, and so provokes the dominant male to attack him, his defeat is certain.

An unsuccessful battle with a dominant male has, however, grievous and fateful consequences for an immature male. Not only are his chances of getting the upper hand in later fights reduced, but his sexual potency is also jeopardized. '... the immature male primate is not only in danger of failing to reach a sufficient degree of dominance, but also of serious impairment of its mating behaviour ...' if its behaviour in the conflict is ineffective, and it cannot keep its aggressiveness under control (3).

A fact important from the analytical point of view is that the threat of castration and castration itself constitute, though not an anatomical, nevertheless a functional reality. Whoever prematurely tries conclusions with the dominant male risks the forfeiture of his potency.

We must now ask the question: How does a young male become dominant; what is the condition of his ever rising to this status? The answer is brief: if he can wait. If, after attaining puberty, he can avoid all conflict with a dominant male, if he can keep away from the attractive females, contenting himself perhaps with those less enticing who are in dioestrus, if he is able to give battle to a dominant male only once, and then to win. This means, however, that he waits until his physical strength is fully developed and he is full grown, and that he

chooses the opportune moment for battle, that is for challenging the ruler, for instance, when the latter is no longer in full possession of his powers.

In the Primate society, therefore, status and propagation are the prizes that go to those males who are most successful in controlling their libido directed towards the attractive females, those who can await the conflict with the dominant male, keeping their aggressiveness under control. 'This ability to withstand conflict arises out of the constant equilibrational component present in their movements within the society, their stances, postures and carriage, and the absence of fighting in their behaviour. This means that these animals possess ability to control aggressive responses under conflict.'

The widespread conception that, in the ape community, that male reaches the summit of the dominant hierarchy who strikes most brutally and utters the loudest cries (Révész, 21), is not warranted by the facts.

### Summary

Our problem was to ascertain the psychological factors operating in the life of the Primates which, in the process of Man's genesis, were able to lead to the evolution of the latency period. I think it has been possible to throw light on this question from one aspect, and to bring it nearer to our understanding. If sexual selection always favours so consistently those male individuals of a herd who best succeed in controlling their instinctual tensions under permanent conflict, and postponing the discharge of their instinctual impulses and their action until the fitting opportunity, who can best master their libido and their aggressiveness, it becomes intelligible, within the compass of the modern theory of evolution, that the descendants of this herd may develop an ego organization, with its inherent hostility to instinct.

But now it has fared with us as often in the history of research. We have sought the answer to one question, and we have found the answer to another. We were inquiring after the psychosocial factors rooted in the nature of the Primates, which lead to the evolution of human latency, and we found the factors which contribute to the evolution of the human ego organization. But the question of how the genesis of the ego is connected with the dichronous inception of sexual development must, for the present, remain open.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) BORNSTEIN, BERTA (1951). 'On Latency.' *Psa. Study of the Child*, 6, 279-285.
- (2) BUXBAUM, EDITH (1951). 'A Contribution to the Psychoanalytic Knowledge of the Latency Period.' *Amer. J. Ortho-Psychiatr.*, 21, 182-198.
- (3) CHANCE, M. R. A., and MEAD, A. P. (1953). 'Social Behaviour and Primate Evolution.' *Symp. Soc. Exp. Biol.*, 7, *Evolution*, 395-439.
- (4) DEVEREUX, GEORGE (1951). 'The Primal Scene and Juvenile Heterosexuality in Mohave Society.' *Psychoanalysis and Culture*, 90-107.
- (5) FERENCZI, S. (1925). *Thalassa: a Theory of Genitality*. (New York: The Psychoanalytic Library, No. 9.)
- (6) FREUD, ANNA (1936). *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence*. (London: Hogarth.)
- (7) FREUD, S. (1905). *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality*. Standard Ed. 7.
- (8) — (1913). *Totem and Tabu*. Standard Ed. 13.
- (9) — (1923A). *The Ego and the Id*. Standard Ed. 19.
- (10) — (1923B). *The Infantile Genital Organization of the Libido*. Standard Ed. 19.
- (11) — (1924). *The Dissolution of the Oedipus Complex*. Standard Ed. 19.
- (12) — (1938). *An Outline of Psycho-Analysis*. Standard Ed. 23.
- (13) — (1939). *Moses and Monotheism*. Standard Ed. 23.
- (14) HERMANN, I. (1941). 'Die sexuelle Latensperiode des menschlichen Kindes.' *Z. Kinderpsychiatrie*, 8.
- (15) — (1947). 'Supplement to the Theory of the Latency Period in Sexual Development.' *Paediatr. Danubia*, 2.
- (16) KANZEK, MARK (1952). 'Manic Depressive Psychoses with Paranoid Trends.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 33.
- (17) KROEBER, A. L. (1920). 'Totem and Tabu. An Ethnologic Psychoanalysis.' *The Nature of Culture*.
- (18) — (1939). 'Totem and Tabu in Retrospect.' *The Nature of Culture*.
- (19) LAMPL, HANS (1953). 'The Influence of Biological and Psychological Factors upon the Development of the Latency Period.' *Drives, Affects and Behaviour*. (New York: Int. Universities Press.)
- (20) LAMPL-DE GROOT, J. (1952). 'Re-evaluation of the Rôle of the Oedipus Complex.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 33.
- (21) RÉVÉSZ, G. (1930). 'Sozialpsychologische Beobachtungen an Affen.' *Z. Psycholog.*, 118.
- (22) — (1952). 'Grundprinzipien des menschlichen und tierischen Daseins.' *Psycholog. Forschung.*, 24.
- (23) RÖHEIM, G. (1950). *Psychoanalysis and Anthropology*. (New York.)
- (24) TINBERGEN, N. (1953a). *Social Behaviour in Animals*.
- (25) — (1953b). 'Fighting and Threat in Animals.' *New Biology*, 14.
- (26) ZUCKERMAN, S. (1932). *The Social Life of Monkeys and Apes*. (Cited from Chance and Mead.)

(Received 15 October, 1954)



# OEDIPUS AND SAMSON THE REJECTED HERO-CHILD

By

A. J. LEVIN, FRANKLIN, MICH.

In his book *Primitive Culture*, written over seventy-five years ago, Edward B. Tylor warned against the application of narrow interpretations to the exposure myths of Cyrus and of Romulus and Remus. What mythological investigation needs, urged Tylor, 'is breadth of knowledge and of handling'; for if we 'look properly into the matter, we find these stories are but specimens of a widespread mythic group, itself only a section of that far larger body of traditions in which exposed infants are saved to become national heroes' (1).

In *The Myth of the Birth of the Hero* (2) Rank applied some of the 'breadth of knowledge' which Freud's researches had made available in the theory and practice of psycho-analysis. Rank sensed the importance of the element of rejection in these myths, noticing that the hero invariably wandered from one country, in which he was not recognized, to another in which he became a hero. He nevertheless expanded upon the notion that these myths were purely magical and cultic in origin and did not have a significant relation to actual events (2). Freud, in turn, influenced by Rank's later researches, likewise attached a purely symbolic meaning to the myths and stressed the element of fantasy. He noted, amongst other things, that exposure was usually, though not always, [in a basket or box on a body of water, and concluded that the basket was the womb and the water the water at birth (3).

In 1948, in my paper *The Oedipus Myth in History and Psychiatry* (4) I examined the cultural aspects of the Oedipus and related myths and called attention to Freud's failure to take into account the details of Oedipus' traumatic exposure and early separation from his mother—an experience which could be expected to leave its mark on the life of an adult let alone that of a child. Lazarsfeld (4), *Did Oedipus Have an Oedipus Complex*, raised the same question.

My own researches (4) have uncovered some evidence that these exposure myths not only reveal an almost universal attitude of indifference and cruelty to children, but, what is more, a rationalization of this attitude into something of value. Thus it is maintained in these myths, and by their

propagation, that the act of exposure started the hero on his path of glory and the society on its road to greatness. The hero is usually presented as virtual originator or one of the originators of his culture. It is as if the myth said: 'There is good in exposure and suffering, for that is how Cyrus became great and Moses became the founder of a new religion and a people.' In more modern times the same idea appears in fairy tales such as *Cinderella* and *The Ugly Duckling*. Many institutions would also appear to have originated in the same manner through the action of adults who placed in the way of their progeny an additional and often enormous obstacle to survival. Indeed, there is evidence to support the view that trauma and terror (5) are culture makers if the physiological implications of behaviour are given their full weight.

According to Malinowski (6) the myth is a practical statement of 'primitive reality which still lives in present-day life', and supplies a 'retrospect pattern' of values, order and belief; there is a reliving of past experiences when the 'counterpart of the story is enacted'; the myth, studied alive, is 'not symbolic, but a direct expression of its subject matter'. To stop short at symbolic, cultic, or magical interpretation of these hero myths is, therefore, in effect to say that the human cognitive function is itself a *fait accompli*. Belief, however, is itself an expression of physiological experience which varies from time to time. Consequently belief is found in the dual rôle of fixing the facts, which are to be considered as existing in nature and society, and also as the channel for the diversion of arrested physiological experience through the exercise of the intellect and related functions as a way of life. The interpretative adventure here attempted has already produced some results which justify the notion that the origin and propagation of myths can be related, at least in many instances, to individual physiological experience.

The myths of Melkart, Hercules, Gilgamesh and Samson have previously been linked together by researchers. It is now suggested that the myths of Samson and Oedipus are related. However, the mere fact of their historical kinship interests us here only because of the further thesis that the two myths are also psychodynamically related and that their relationship is complementary—which serves



to illuminate also the nature of their respective cultural settings. This paper is not intended as a sortie into mythological speculation. It is rather an express attempt to evaluate the effect of different methods of infant and child exposure and rejection and thereafter to demonstrate how exposure and rejection leave their psychodynamic residues of cultural institutions, which are adopted by later generations as valued traditions. Thus a practical purpose of the hero myths was to make life more tolerable in an atmosphere of rejection. For early deprivation not only leaves its scars on the life of the child; the deprivors—parents and culture—then go on to condition the traumatized child to a rationalizing process which will convert the past harm into a present good. This process goes on interminably and deposits what I have chosen to call 'the cultural residues of rejection'—vast, unexplored deposits of institutions which began as individual distortions.

The story of Samson does not describe any actual physical abandonment. In the case of Oedipus there is an out-and-out physical abandonment when the three-day-old Oedipus is hung by his ankles on a mountain-side. *However, on a psychodynamic level there may be a rejection which is tantamount to abandonment even when the child is under the general surveillance of the mother.* In such a case, although great physical distance is not interposed between mother and child, there is nevertheless a physiological gap in the life of the child—and consequently a psychodynamic hiatus. For when the child is prematurely exposed to adult disciplines and restriction, exploitation of its individuality is already in process, and the atmosphere lacks the maternal climate which each infant requires after birth. The effect may, from a functional point of view, be as harmful as that of more obvious separation by physical exposure and physical harm. Proper mothering is not simply the child's due, it is a necessary condition for the development of adequate functional organization. 'Exposure' in the psychodynamic sense—which must include all physiological implications—may be the consequence of many different experiences which would have the direct effect of depriving the child of adequate mothering; such, for instance, as premature separation from the mother, swaddling, feeding disciplines, ritual practices and others. In the case of Samson, who was a Nazirite, there could have been an additional factor, one frequently stressed by Moloney, namely, the transference of the mother's anxiety to the child. The climate of anxiety appears clearly in the account of the circumstances attending Samson's birth (Judges xiii), where the angel not only instructs Manoah's unnamed wife with regard to her child's upbringing but also gives directions with regard to her own prenatal behaviour as conditions for giving birth to a hero-deliverer (7). It is made plain that the rearing of the child is to be **under masculine domination** so as to fulfil the **demands of a patriarchal culture.** *From the instant*

*of birth the child lives its life as belonging to an ideology—the mothering is secondary.*

The restrictions imposed on a Nazirite were more numerous than those outlined in the Book of Judges (see Numbers vi. 1–21). It can be inferred that, as the child became old enough to move about a little, he was forbidden access to part of the world about him. Thus the mother's attitude to the child would be determined by a constant effort to conform to outside commands with all the attendant anxieties for mother and child. As in the Oedipus myth we have here also a 'predestination'. Oedipus was doomed by the prophetic response of the Oracle of Apollo; Samson's life had to conform to all the commands of the angel who came to Manoah and his wife in a vision. Oedipus was prematurely 'adultified' (I have had to coin this word for want of another) because he had to make functional adjustments, to which no child could be forced without serious traumatic consequences. Samson was prematurely adultified because he did not have a proper mothering climate and was compelled to be the yielding object of an artificial atmosphere of patriarchal discipline at a tender age when no child can be expected to accept such a discipline or to make the required functional adjustments from choice.

Moloney has stressed the fact that under 'the aegis of culture, tensions are uniformly denied primitive expressions' (8). The spirit of the child, threatened by the adult, is broken so that he 'finds security in submissiveness' (9). The child, in any contact with the outside world, can 'either swell or shrink'; he can either move against the reality situation or he can subside and allow it to move against him (10). I would supplement this by adding, what I conceive to be of the utmost importance, namely that *while the child is shrinking from reality he is also moving against it but in a functionally distorted way.* To illustrate further by the physical space pattern, pressure at one spot leads to extension in another.

This functional distortion operated in one way with regard to Oedipus (11) and in substantially the reverse way in the case of Samson, suggesting ideological divergences in the two contexts. The essential psychodynamic differences in the two myths may be found in contrasting as nearly as possible the specific physiological distortions in each case. For it is now suggested that it is physiological accent or deprivation which largely directs in each instance the mode of activity of the adult hero. Indeed, it would be strange if it were not so, since it is now so well established that the surrounding circumstances materially affect the conditioning of animal and human. This should be all the more applicable in a context of physiological impairment. By viewing the mythological and institutional material in this way greater objectivity is obtained, since we are less apt to interpret it indigenously as derived from our native cultural fantasies. By



tracing ideas and institutions to their physiological sources, difficult though this may be, we are more likely to divest the ideologies of their supervening influence over our thoughts. Even when error occurs, as is to be expected, its range will be narrowed.

Let us compare the cultural settings of the two myths, bearing in mind all the time that we are looking out for physiological facts and their mythological and institutional correlatives.

Early Greek culture as typified by Athens (Western) exacted less compulsive ritual adherence than Eastern cultures. The externality of the Athenians went hand in hand with physiological freedoms. Freedom of speech (oral expression) was an ideal in a rather confused democracy where the very confusion was a part of the atmosphere of free expression. Loquacity, oratory, oracles and dialectical philosophy derived from verbal communications, may be considered as oral accents which were supplemented by other physiological freedoms. Their belief in the anthropomorphic gods was a dedication to free expression and action since the gods were in a continual state of conflict and flux. Here we may point out again that speech and imagery are themselves physiological expressions, so that we have here a rather definite physiological accent on speech and thought communication, but fortunately considerable freedom within the ambit of the selected functionality.

Another side of Greek culture emanated from Sparta, which was much under the domination of Eastern influences. There was much emphasis in Sparta on muscular prowess and physical courage, which would indicate physical freedom, but this was offset by the fact that soundness of body was incidental to self-control and social compulsion for the benefit of the State. The cultural ideal, despite its emphasis on motor expression, was one of containment. It should be noted that Oedipus was essentially a Spartan. He is not the physical hero of the Greeks, but rather the one who overcame obstacles, was successful because he 'used his head'. The intellect is an organizational function, and where it is overstressed one may assume that there has been overstimulation of a function which is principally auxiliary to survival rather than a usual or selected channel of expression. Crippled in infancy by his exposure, Oedipus had to call upon his intellectual resources to a greater extent than would be the case with the ordinary child. He became prematurely independent with resulting intensification of the non-motor functions. Mastery may be achieved by physical feats, but the struggle for mastery is mainly intellectual and often authoritarian. Oedipus, authoritarian struggle is culturally recorded in the story of how he overcame the Sphinx by answering the riddle. When Oedipus has bested the Sphinx 'intelligence has replaced force', as Bréal put it. Here, indeed, is the practical aspect of the myth, as it is also the practical problem of our own day.

How may man function as a less capable physiological being? Oedipus showed how intelligence can replace force even if the replacement is often delusive. For authoritarianism is not the actual equivalent of force. Nevertheless the ideas of omnipotence and force came to be understood interchangeably, since the omnipotent one is considered the strong one, even when his supremacy is obtained and held by underhanded and indirect (forceless) means. Oedipus came through the same functional shift which Lord Macaulay noticed in Dr. Johnson: 'Under the influence of his disease his senses became morbidly torpid and his imagination morbidly active' (12). Because Oedipus shrank in a physical way, as did Johnson, he extended in a mental direction.

Bearing this in mind we return to Samson. In the Eastern culture setting, from which the story is at least partly derived, religious legalism with all its compulsive features prevailed. While actual exposure of infants was quite common, so common as to lead to the use of it as a symbol of social and national rejection (Ezekiel xvi; Genesis xxi, the story of Ishmael), there was often exposure of a less obvious nature. Such was the exposure of infants and children in a procedural context usually designated as 'mental', although this word does not tell the whole story. The ritualized child was not only subjected to mothering deprivations, but his experience included many inhibitions of physiological expression, oral, verbal, visual, aural, visceral, glandular, sexual, various motor restraints and others. There was also actual laceration, as in circumcision. He was dedicated to the ideology from infancy. Although intellectual achievement was stressed culturally, there was no longer any inner psychological need for such a child to extend in the direction of mental effort and the development of related psychic controls. This aspect of his life had already been over-developed. With mental saturation, Samson's mode of functional expression would naturally tend, as already suggested, through trial and error towards physical and motor outlets. Fortunately for Samson political rivalry between Israel and Philistia offered opportunities for actual physical prowess. Samson's heroics are physical feats. With one exception, which will be noted, there is no record of his mental achievements. In both myths the hero's reactions are megalomaniac and authoritarian; Oedipus strives for political mastery through intelligence, Samson through physical domination. Although such a classification cannot be taken as hard and fast and there is in reality considerable fusion, the two different trends are clearly observable.

Symbolism, which is a phase of the intellectual process and is therefore only secondary in importance in reading cultural meanings, is itself the result of physiological accents. Rank and Freud did not go back far enough to the primary context which gave effect to the heroic symbols. Symbolism comes



down to us as collective thought; it cannot be understood until it is related to the psychodynamic experience which gave rise to its use. When this is done the symbolism may be read in much the same way as Egyptologists read the Rosetta stone. Otherwise obscure symbols begin to reveal the psychodynamic history of peoples as derived from the psychodynamic history of individuals. In other words, the methodology of the etymologists and philologists may be helpful in finding what we may call psychodynamic root identities, not only in words but also in other symbolic expressions. These in turn may prove to be valuable evidence of individual experience which is later reflected back to the ethnic group.

With this in mind we may examine some of the symbolism which links the two myths under discussion. Samson's name is such a link, for the name Samson derives from 'Shemesh' meaning 'little sun' or 'sun-like' in Hebrew and cognate languages. Taken with other evidence, Samson appears as the central figure in a solar myth. For the name Delilah points in the same direction. Its root is Lilah, which means night. The related words *lail* (calamity) and *dalol* (to become feeble) as in *dalilah* (languishing), contrast the sun as the origin of strength and darkness as the source of weakness. In the Theban solar myth the name of Laius, the father whom Oedipus kills, is suggestive of Lilah. (In a number of the hero-myths the rejected and exposed child was 'doomed to bring ruin on his parents'. John Fiske, *Myths and Myth Makers* (Boston, 1893), p. 198, referring to Muller.) While ultimate conclusions may rest with etymologists and philologists, the context must be considered, and it does suggest that Delilah and Laius could be traced to the same root meaning. Nor is the fact that one is male and the other female a disturbing factor, especially since in patriarchal cultures the woman is depicted as weak and incapable and even evil. In the Oedipus myth, Laius, symbol of darkness, marries Jocasta, and so Oedipus is born. The word Laius is derived from the same root as 'Leto' and 'Latmus' (13), and is the symbol of darkness. Bréal's analysis of the Oedipus myth of Greece (14) traces it back to Vedic origins and links it also with cognate myths, through which he relates the Sphinx to the Chimera, the Gorgon, the Hydra, and other figures. To Bréal also there is revealed man's struggle against darkness. But the really remarkable core of Bréal's account is his suggestion that the word 'Laius' is related to the Vedic *dasyu*, meaning enemy, and that the word 'Laius', by its relation to *dasyu*, as it changed meanings first signified *crowd* or *mass* (*foule*) and later 'people' and then 'nation', which he points out is a remarkable fact in the history of Greek civilization (15). What especially interests us here is that the real enemy mythologically is *culture*, which enslaves and renders day into night! This is well borne out also by the Hebrew word עֶבֶד *eved* (slave), the variants of which

are used to describe worship or ritual service to the deity, the idea being that man is a slave of the deity, who lays down the moral rules of conduct for the society. In this sense Samson, the Nazirite, would be a slave who tries to free himself from slavery by extending himself physically into space. The relationship between restraint and the idea of slavery is almost universal in ancient times, psychodynamically viewed. The exposure of Oedipus on the hillside is, according to Bréal, an emblem of the horizontal rays of the sun (16). The clouds, he suggests, are the young daughters of the Vedic account, who, while captive, are wives of the 'enemy', but upon deliverance become wives of the day (17). The proverbial expression 'Oedipus has killed the Sphinx' (18) indicates the burst of a cloud on the mountain when precipitated into rain. We see, then, that natural phenomena furnish a linkage in the myths, but that they are shot through with human connotations involving such institutions as marriage, kinship, polity and cultural restraints, which are considered as enslavements.

Ultimately all sun-myths must come back to an accent on the physiological function of seeing, which embraces the ever-present conflict between day and night. To the ancients it was a ubiquitous dichotomy. Thus, the rays of the sun and the hair of the head have been associated with serpentine myths, such as the Gorgon myth, on the ground that the rays of the sun resemble both serpentine forms and the hair. This idea would seem fantastic were there not ample proof to support it. That the serpent was a sun-god has long been known (19). Hercules, a counterpart of Samson, is a solar deity who, in early infancy, 'throttles the serpents of darkness' (20). The Pythoness gave forth the oracles of Apollo, the deity of radiance. The fact that the serpent also appears as a symbol of darkness would not alarm a researcher into these early myths. It is therefore a reasonable conclusion from the above that Samson's hair is the sun's rays, without which the sun loses its power to give light (21). That both Oedipus and Samson lose their sight is then an important point of concurrence between the two myths. Oedipus gouges out his eyes with his own hand or, according to Euripides' version, is blinded by his servants. Samson's eyes are put out by the Philistines. But what is more interesting in the divergences that have developed between the two myths is the fact that, in the Greek legend, darkness finally emerges as a man, whereas in the Samson legend darkness is a woman, just as in the Vedic legend the enslaved clouds are females.

The history of a legend may often reveal traces of psychodynamic experiences otherwise not apparent. For example, the remarkable Dr. Erasmus Darwin noted of the Egyptian Medusa that she is 'represented on ancient gems, with wings on her head, snaky hair, and a beautiful countenance, which appears intensely thinking, and was supposed to represent divine wisdom. The Grecian Medusa, on



Minerva's shield, as appears on other gems, has a countenance distorted with rage or pain, and is supposed to represent divine vengeance. This Medusa was one of the Gorgons, at first very beautiful and terrible to her enemies. Minerva turned her hair into snakes; and Perseus having cut off her head, fixed it on the shield of the goddess; the sight of which then petrifies the beholders' (22). Here again seeing is connected with a mother-figure whose cruel effect is to petrify the beholder. Note the ideological differences of culture preserved by the myths comparable to the differences already described as existing in the Oedipus and Samson contexts. Thus, the mother-figure in Greece is cruel (Jocasta was cruel to Oedipus), whereas the Egyptian Medusa, like Manoah's wife the mother of Samson, is allied to benign wisdom, which is as if to say that ideological deprivations are evidences of good motherhood.

If we heed Tylor's admonition, what may seem like mystery falls into the category of ordinary fact. The father and mother of the child do actually determine whether the new-born infant shall see or not. Indeed their neglect may, as is often the case, result in virtual murder of the child. But even short of killing, many factors in early infant-care bear upon the ability to see. The darkness which follows compulsion and exploitation by parents and culture is recorded in all these stories but not avowed. Both the Oedipus and the Samson myths therefore omit the parental and cultural causes of the darkness and both conversely warn the child that the *consequence of acts directed against culture* is blindness and ultimately death. As Bréal puts it: 'Une fois que la lumière du jour est obscurcie Oedipe meurt'—When the light of day is once obscured, Oedipus dies (23). But in the story he does not die until later. Samson dies forthwith.

Further adventure into etymology and philology seems to bear out the argument. All the following Hebrew and Chaldean words appear to be historically related not only by sound, root, symbolic application, or cultural history, but also psychodynamically.<sup>1</sup>

Some years ago I advanced the view that 'one may speak of a psychodynamic compact between an infant and its mother, which later extends to take in other members of the family group and society in general. The mother gives it food, love and security, and the child in return responds with acceptable behaviour commensurate with the amount of love it receives . . . for the individual the origins of precedent formation may come from a "breach" of the first emotional "compact"—"fundamental law" if one prefers to call it that. Such individuals, who later may come into power in society, spend the rest of their lives attempting to gain from the whole of

society what they have hungered for from their infancy, and employ the precedents of their infancy—which are but their emotional distortions—to achieve this delayed satisfaction.'<sup>2</sup>

שדה Sodeh—a breast; שדה Sodeh—a field (see Deuteronomy xxxii. 13); שודר Shodad—to lay waste, from which is derived שדה Shedah—a wife or mistress, and שדי Shaddai—omnipotent (God) or (Almighty). Note that שודר Shodad also means *plain* or *straight*, and that the plural שדים Shedim is spelt exactly like שדים—breasts (see Song of Songs, iv. 5). The relationship between שדה Sodeh—field and שודר Shodad—to lay waste and שדים Shodaim—breasts is rather clearly indicated. See especially Genesis, i. 25. שר Shed, a demon (Deuteronomy, xxxii. 17). The fact that the breasts and the fields are linguistically related is historical fact, since in the course of man's development the products of the field replace the milk of the breast. More puzzling perhaps is the fact that linguistically the *breasts* and *destruction* have a common origin. Eventually the word 'breast' comes to mean darkness and evil. Bréal and others, as already shown, have connected the female with darkness, i.e. the destruction of the day or light. Such a development of meaning would present a complete enigma were it not for the significant truth that a depriving mother actually injures the biological and physiological development of the child. Here as elsewhere mythology records individual psychodynamic experience and emphasizes individual values, but these are often obscured lest the rationalizing process in human relationships be pierced and the real disorganizing facts laid bare.

Another concurrence between the two myths already mentioned is that both Oedipus and Samson vanquish a beast. Oedipus indirectly overcomes a beast of mythical character, part human and part animal, which destroys itself. Samson's victim is all animal, a real lion that 'roared against him'. Furthermore Samson actually kills it; the beast does not throw itself over a cliff in a fit of frustration as did the Sphinx. Oedipus 'killed' the Sphinx with his mind by solving its riddle, but Samson kills the lion by physical force, so that in Samson's case we have a reversal of Bréal's comment—here force prevails over force. In the episode with the lion we have a first indication that Samson's training as a Nazirite would be functionally offset by powerful physical development. Hercules, another representative of the exposed hero figure, as a young man also killed a lion on Mt. Cithaeron. Ancient myths and religions would seem to vacillate between the idolization of force and the idolization of intelligence (24). Some degree of megalomaniac drive, as evidence of intellectual pre-emption, is detectable in all ancient myths and primitive heroics, though the

<sup>1</sup> Definitions are taken from B. Davidson's *Analytical Hebrew and Chaldean Lexicon* (London).

<sup>2</sup> A. J. Levin, 'Mr. Justice William Johnson and the

Common Incidents of Life', *Michigan Law Review*, 44, 1945, p. 262, in a discussion of the possible origin of the idea of the *social compact*.



psychiatric label must not be interpreted too strictly. Amongst primitive tribes the trickster (intelligence) often becomes a deity who combines force with low-grade intelligence as in the case of the Norse Loki. Such esteem for cleverness is also found throughout modern life.

The riddle episode is a further link between the two myths. In the Oedipus story the beast asks the riddle, which concerns the motor function of locomotion. It seems to say: 'How do you reconcile the impairment of man's motor functions with his intellectual supremacy?' The solution of the riddle, as in the case of Pandora's box, leads to disaster. Actually the symbol of the Sphinx represents the conflict of intellect (human head) and force (animal body)—an animal with full use of its four legs. In the case of Samson, however, we have an individual who has been subjected to ritual and intellectual culturization and is driven to express himself physically. Some time after he had killed the lion he found a swarm of bees and combs of honey in the carcase. With this picture in mind he addressed his riddle to the Philistines (Judges xiv. 14): 'Out of the eater came forth meat and out of the strong came forth sweetness.'<sup>3</sup> Here also, as in the riddle of the Sphinx, it is the supremacy of the intellect which is established. For, if the beast is suppressed, life will be sweet. The value of strength is in its conversion into regulation. The hero is the strong one who brings sweetness (what is socially acceptable) to his people—the bees. So that here again, as in the case of Oedipus, a child whose functionality has been directed by his parents becomes a hero and deliverer. The riddle would not have been answered had Samson not been betrayed by his Philistine wife (not Delilah, who appears later in the story). The betrayal of Delilah was a second betrayal by a woman. The meaning of this double betrayal is not clear, but it is significant that in each case a mother-figure was involved. The rest of the story of Samson is too well known to need repetition here. Samson tries to resist telling Delilah the secret of his strength until finally he tells her truthfully that the secret lies in the fact that he is a Nazirite; that is to say that his tremendous strength was culturally induced 'from his mother's womb'. The Philistines can now overcome him, and they put out his eyes. In the case of Oedipus blindness is self-inflicted when Oedipus is confronted by his 'crime'. There is no comparable 'crime' in the Samson story; in place of the 'crime' there is the 'betrayal'.

Some further similarities between the two stories remain to be noticed, and one essential difference.

After Samson had lost his sight 'the hair on his

head began to grow again after he was shaven' (Judges xvi. 22). This meant his strength would return. During a feast, at which he was to be exhibited, Samson said to the boy who led him, 'Suffer me that I may feel the pillars whereupon the house standeth that I may lean upon them.' Then, in a spirit of revenge for the loss of his eyes, he took the two middle pillars in his arms—those upon which the house stood—and he bowed with all his might, saying: 'Let me die with the Philistines.' The house fell on all who were in it.

Now in Sophocles' play *Oedipus the King*, Jocasta, on learning of her incestuous marriage, takes her life. Oedipus in distraction crashes against the folding doors and, forcing the bolts from the staples, hurls himself into her room, where he sees her hanging by the neck. It is then, with a terrible shriek, that he puts out his eyes. As in the case of Samson there is divine intervention. The scene where Oedipus crashes against the doors and wrenches out the bolts is not exactly parallel to the scene of Samson's death, but it is close enough to bring the two stories together. Foundations and pillars have from most ancient times stood for authority and divinity.<sup>4</sup> Such were the pillars of Hercules, a fact that again links Samson with Hercules. The word 'Adon', which in the Bible is used for foundation, is also used to describe the Deity—meaning Lord. Its well-known variant in the possessive is 'Adonai'. However, even apart from the correspondence of details, the overriding idea in these stories is that the individual must forever be resigned to the fact that he is *forced* by events to yield to authority—an idea which has prevailed to defeat freedom from the beginning of time.

In this connexion it is rewarding to pursue the etymological clues a little further. Wake suggests that the word 'Adam'—like other words containing the syllable 'ad'—is derived from 'ad', meaning father, while the word 'Eve' is derived from *Hevia*, which, in addition to its Arabic root meaning 'life', means a female serpent. If Eve was the serpent mother, then Adam was also the serpent father (25): 'In Adam and Eve, therefore, we may have a reference to the male and female principles . . . the term *Adam* (in Egyptian *Atum*) was formed by the combination of the primitive Akkad words *Ad*, father and *Dam*, mother. It would thus originally express a dual idea, agreeable to the statement in Genesis v. 2, that male and female were called "Adam"'. This agrees perfectly with the Persian tradition which made the first human beings androgynous. When the dual idea expressed in the name was forgotten, Adam became the Great

<sup>3</sup> Compare Plutarch who in his *Life of Cleomenes* (Dryden) writes that the Alexandrians gave Cleomenes the title of hero and son of gods 'till the philosophers satisfied them by saying that, as oxen breed bees, putrefying horses breed wasps, and beetles rise from the carcasses of dead asses, so the humours and juices of the marrow of a man's body, coagulating produce serpents. And

this the ancients observing, appropriated a serpent, rather than any other creature to heroes'.

<sup>4</sup> In an earlier incident Samson (Judges xvi 3) carries away the doors of the gates of the city and puts them on the top of the hill that was before Hebron. Raglan notes that the usual setting for a ritual drama is a doorway or gateway.



Father, the mother receiving the name of Eve (*hhavvah*), i.e. living or life, although Adam in the generic sense of "Mankind" denoted both male and female.<sup>5</sup> In this interplay of male and female, it is to be expected that the greatest pressures of rebellion would be against the father—or authoritative principle—but that this would be disguised. The tearing down of foundations or pillars indicates a protest against father domination, i.e. culture. The root *Ad* is also part of the word *Adon*<sup>6</sup> meaning foundation, to which the word *Din*, meaning law or mandate, is related. Wake seems to have missed this point. We may therefore reconstruct the situation in this way. Rebellion is against the father authority, but the 'blame' for this state of affairs would, under the taboos of masculine culture, be fixed upon 'the devils', 'sheddim' the 'shodaim'—the breasts. There the 'blame' belongs because of maternal rejection, although, as I have shown elsewhere, it was the male principle which was the beginning of cultural authority. If the Delilahs, the women, are in mythology the betrayers of men, then it is understandable why darkness is also derived from the female.

Another detail can be considered here, the shaving of Samson's hair. There is no equivalent of this in the Oedipus story, but a link is found in the myth of Hercules, to whom Oedipus is related as a sun-hero. Tylor says that the well-known modern interpretation of the myth of Heracles and Hesione is that of 'the Sun slaying Darkness'. One version of the story runs as follows: 'When the king Laomedon had bound his daughter Hesione to the rock, a sacrifice to Poseidon's destroying sea-monster, Heracles delivered the maiden, springing full-armed into the fish's gaping throat, and coming forth hairless after three days' hacking within' (26). While it would appear that Samson was overcome by darkness when his hair was shorn and that Hercules was victorious, it should be noted that both were hairless while 'contained'. Samson was hairless while imprisoned by the Philistines, Hercules while imprisoned in the monster. The period of containment was, in each case, a period of darkness (27).

A further similarity between the two myths, which is not very obvious, is the occurrence of a plague in both. The plague in the Oedipus myth is of divine origin and falls on Thebes after Oedipus has married Jocasta and has reigned some years. The Oracle advises that it will continue until the murderer of Laius is discovered. It is most significant that the 'crime' the Oracle complains of is not Oedipus' incestuous marriage but the failure to punish the murderer of Laius (darkness as the equivalent of culture). In the Samson story the plague is man-made, Samson ties torches to the tails of foxes and

releases them in the fields of standing corn belonging to the Philistines (Judges xxxi. 4 ff.) thus 'burning the shocks, also the standing corn, with vineyards and olives'. Now it is indeed remarkable that this practice of letting loose foxes with torches tied to their tails (28) was also, as I have discovered, the concluding event of the feast devoted to Ceres, Roman goddess of the tilled fields and counterpart of the Greek Demeter, who presided over the Greek 'mysteries'. This links the rite with the fertility festival of the Thesmophoria, celebrated in Greece by women.<sup>6</sup>

Samson's act of revenge was provoked by the treachery of the Philistines, who had given to another man the Philistine girl promised to him after using her to answer his riddle of the lion. In short, Samson was deprived of a wife (mother-figure) by the forces of darkness, the Philistine enemies (culture). His rage is directed towards all mothers, symbolized by Ceres and Demeter, who dare to substitute the products of the soil for the milk of the breasts. Samson destroys the Philistine cornfields (the breasts, *shodaim*) of the Philistine daughter-mother (Persephone-Demeter)<sup>7</sup> he could not enjoy.

In ancient mythology fields and plains were identified with the mother. The Greek goddess Demeter was goddess of fruits and agriculture. Myths, which appear to be derived from Demeter amongst other mother-deities, attach a literal meaning to the idea of 'mother-earth'. Thus, according to Frazer, the woman who binds the last sheaf of corn in West Prussia is the Corn-Mother and is symbolized as a woman in travail; the grandmother acts as midwife and a child is supposedly born; in North Germany the sheaf is called the 'Harvest-Child'. *Id.*, p. 406.

This is quite important since, according to the view of the writer, the biological mother has under conditions of culture abdicated her functions which have been taken over in a number of particulars by men who have supplied from 'mother-earth' what had been formerly supplied by the mother in the early stages of infancy and childhood. It is really the field and not the girl who gives birth to the symbolic child in the Germanic myths.)

In the incident of Samson's search for a Philistine wife we also have a hint of the theme of incest-avoidance. It is noteworthy, however, that the Samson story points not at the dangers of incest—if the term be used to include the collective cultural ideas of endogamy and exogamy—but rather the primitive idea of the danger of marrying outside the group. Taken with the fact already noted, that the Oracle denounced not Oedipus' incest but his parricide, we may fairly conclude that the Freudian explanation of the Oedipus myth in terms of an archetypic incest-taboo is essentially secondary (29).

<sup>5</sup> Compare also Adonis as a sun god and the Egyptian Aton or Atum as sun god.

<sup>6</sup> On the significance of the torch in Greek mythology as a light-giving source see C. G. Jung and C. Kerényi,

*Essays on a Science of Mythology*, pp. 154-5.  
<sup>7</sup> James G. Frazer, *The Golden Bough* (abridged ed., New York, 1925), p. 420 ff.



A final point in the Oedipus-Samson-Hercules myths, which must be considered, relates to Oedipus' name. There is no counterpart to the implications of this in the Samson myth except perhaps by remote reference. Oedipus means 'swollen foot', and derives from the injury which he received when hung by his ankles as an infant. The emphasis upon this injury in the very name of the hero must be psychodynamically related to the idea of physiological impairment and distortion, which reappears in the blinding. Without subscribing to Alfred Adler's 'organic deficiency' theory it can be said that Oedipus' lameness could well have something to do with his authoritarian omnipotence. It should, however, be noted that such an inferiority complex in the Adlerian sense is secondary and not basic, because such complexes arise only after there has been a physiological shift or 'choice' which deflects functionality to the organizational or mental function. The deflection could just as well be in another direction under different circumstances. If an individual is a totality of functions, then any expression, which is the result of arrest, deflection, impairment, or deficiency, may be considered as a distortion even though the channelling be through the mental function.

But at this point I want to suggest that the Oedipus and Samson myths point beyond mere mental transmutations to anthropological facts which have baffled mankind. They describe actual and practical historical occurrences of great importance, namely that man as a biological being has undergone delimiting changes—at least by comparison with other animals in his general class. One such change has been the sacrifice of greater speed and manoeuvrability in motor expression for greater emphasis on intellectually directed skill with the hands and on the application of so-called mental traits. Another is that speech and language communication have modified animal orality. These modifications, which biologically may be considered distortions, have placed a burden upon the organizational function hardly intended. Physical anthropology has been aware of such changes for some time (30). A change of this kind appears to be indicated with considerable emphasis in the riddle of the Sphinx, which Oedipus had to solve: 'What animal is it that has four feet in the morning, two at noon, and three at night?' To correlate this portion of the Oedipus myth with the story of Samson we shall have to make a wide detour.

The outstanding characteristic of the serpent which is both revolting to human beings and also a subject of admiration is its ability to move without legs upon its belly. It is an intellectual quality which is admired—the ability to attack without warning and to inflict mortal wounds with little exertion of force. This is preserved to our own day in the opprobrium attached to one who gains advantage by stealth and fraud—the word 'snake' is used to describe a low order of human being. Such psycho-

dynamic evaluations which have come down to us through the ages must be understood and given due weight. Primitive man was no doubt impressed by the serpent's ability to achieve important results against men and animals notwithstanding its comparative lack of motor equipment. There was reason to idealize this strength in apparent weakness since man's own limbs had diminished in efficiency. Man, so to speak, learned a lesson from the serpent, and herein may lie the reason why the serpent has been considered the embodiment of wisdom. For wisdom must be considered the end result of functional deflection, of impairment or distortion away from the norm of powerful motor function by means of limbs, mouth, and other physiological expressions. One may speak of wisdom here as *functional trial and error*. Moreover this serpentine 'fall from grace' is supported by biological data. There are still snakes existing which have vestigial projections on the sides of their bodies, which are the remains of limbs. In ancient times the snake was considered as once having had legs, that is as having once been functionally whole (31). Wake remarks: 'It is curious to note that, according to Rabbinical tradition, Cain was the son, not of Adam, but of the serpent spirit Asmodeus, who is the same as the Persian Ahriman, "the great serpent with two feet".' The idea that the snake lost its legs is clearly confirmed in Genesis: 'And the Lord said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life' (Genesis iii. 14).

There are numerous other examples of man's preoccupation with functional impairment and development. To mention a few: the centaur with the human head, the winged horse, the winged serpent of Mexican mythology (32), the myth of Icarus, the whole mythology of angels with wings. These are not meaningless mental images. Man's preoccupation with the idea of locomotion represents an effort sometimes to accept, sometimes to perfect an inadequate functional structure, and is, therefore, a record of the reaction to biological frustration, with which both the myths here considered deal. In the field of art, Michelangelo's huge human figures with enlarged musculature are psychodynamically related. Such an analysis will, it is hoped, dispel any notion that the serpent is exclusively a phallic symbol, although without doubt it is a phallic symbol also (33, 34). Preoccupation with the phallic function, like preoccupation with the motor function, is largely part of the trial and error of functional direction and selection. If the mind developed as a result of functional emphasis, there is no reason to doubt that the same process would occur with respect to the sexual organs and their functioning. This was in fact the view of Charles Darwin, who observed in *The Descent of Man* that the sexual function received special



emphasis because *man developed in intellect and retrograded in instincts* (35).

Any attempt to interpret mythology only in sexual terms must, in consequence, prove inadequate, however accurate it may be within limits. This is true of the Freudian interpretation of the Oedipus myth with its emphasis on an archetypic taboo against incest, notwithstanding its correctness in certain respects (36). A taboo, or any institution for that matter, is a cultural product, a phenomenon which somewhere along the line and often in the far distant past has derived from some early conditioning, in infancy, from exposure actual or ideological, from rejection, abandonment, traumatic injury, from the deprivation and deflection of function. As a secondary phenomenon incest cannot be used as a basic explanatory principle. For example, in considering the theme of exogamy in the Samson myth we may regard it as a variant of the incest taboo theme, but we cannot leave our explanation at that point. For exogamy represents also and more fundamentally an *aversion* for the mother as an object of sexual interest, and this would extend to include the group as a mother symbol, the aversion itself originating in the situation of rejection. It is therefore possible that the incest motif in the Oedipus myth, as in the other parallels, is an ideological turn essentially Greek and represents a return to endogamy during a period of stress and danger, a turning to the protecting helpmate mother such as Lazarsfeld suggests (37). Conversely, in the case of Samson his desire for a Philistine woman, expressed on two separate occasions in the face of group opposition, may represent a free expression of his aversion for the ideological indoctrination by his mother.

The meaning of 'culture' as here employed emphasizes the institutionalization of human behaviour by physiological expressions then individuals whose practical experiences become the residues of their activities which are acted upon by others. Often these are out-and-out traumatic experiences; at other times they are less obvious results of ideological pressures upon the person. We do not rely here on the notions of displacement or sublimation, since these assume what is to be tested; they presuppose a transmutation from the so-called instincts to the more desirable cultural values. Here we are concerned with tracing origins rather than measuring values.

The history of culture *wherever it is found* in primitive or civilized life is the story of arrest, impairment, or deterioration or overburdening of some organic function. Feet are no longer fleet, orality is inhibited and institutionalized, the sense of smell is diminished but becomes an instrument of aversion; and on the other hand the sexual function is greatly increased in influence, the ears are receptors of social directions and music, and the scope of visibility is immensely broadened. The vestigial functions are given great attention and social value as if to preserve what has been lost. Such is the case with athletics and dietary laws and other institutions. The intellect, which is really only the organizational function for a complex existence, is given a sort of separate identity as if it were independent. Such valuation is far out of proportion to the place of the intellect in the effort to make up deficiencies in other directions. It is the intellect which makes permanent irreversible values out of its own overburdened functions. Little wonder that disorders are so common.

The foregoing method of myth-interpretation demonstrates a procedure which gives proper effect to all that psycho-analysis has taught us about the developmental consequences of infant care. I have tried to show how the cultural residues of individual behaviour have left the record of their practical experiences, now obscured by centuries of rationalized interpretations. The universality of these myths attests to the overwhelming evidence of the intimate connexion between national origin and heroics and the atmosphere of rejection in which national welfare saw its beginnings. The theme is ubiquitous and provides a vast field for further investigations. Thus to Rank's, Bréal's and Taylor's list of exposed heroes we can add the British Lancelot, the Danish King Scyld (38), the heroine Semiramis, and many others. Lame Oedipus, lame Jacob, the lame gods of yet other mythologies and Achilles of the vulnerable heel can yield to this method of investigation an understanding of social processes in their primordial beginnings, as derived from individual behaviour, and enable us to appreciate the momentous consequences of our methods of infant and child care.

Myths may be fabrications but they are also psychodynamic evaluations and, therefore, records of primitive history. Myth-interpretation and history-interpretation are allied. But what is most important is to remember that all



cultural residues furnish ready-made channels of physiological expression by means of conformity and belief. The anthropological record is before all a physiological one. The products of intellectual pretension do not change this.

In the newer method here suggested two common denominators are looked for. First to meet the eye are the similarities of language, myth symbolism, and content in general, the actual record in which these are found. But this inquiry reveals only the residues of culture; important as this is, it is not enough. The second step must then be taken. These records of cultural communications must then be traced to their physiological origins until the emergence of the myth or institution as an individual experience or submission or acquiescence is detected. Here one must be on the alert for psychodynamic equivalents, since the psychodynamic uniformities and diversities of one group, period, or place may occur in another even though the specific event pattern is not repeated (39). This tracing of psychodynamic equivalents in the maze of anthropological facts is a challenge indeed. At this point an integrity of viewpoint is demanded so that partisanship

may be diminished. But the objectivity attained is worth the effort since one is able to deal with spans of time, divergences of race, geography, and deluding records. Something of the same thing is required as in the dream interpretation of an individual, whose whole life span may be dynamically reviewed by recognition of the equivalence between the facts recorded in the dream record and the physiological experience of the individual.

A brief example by way of further illustration may serve as a conclusion. It is well known that after a heart attack nature detours the blood to other arteries. Something of the same thing has always gone on in human history. The difficulty has been that the detours have in fact been paths of survival, so that in time people have come to think of the detours as the main roads. The heroics of Oedipus, Samson, and many other great leaders throughout civilization have been detours of individual survival for the most part rather gullibly adhered to by their followers. There are many such detours recorded in the history of mankind. That often they began in infancy makes it all the more difficult to analyse their course, but attempt it we must.

## REFERENCES

(1) EDWARD B. TYLOR, *Primitive Culture* (New York, 1877, 2nd Amer. ed.), Vol. 1, p. 281 ff. Neither Freud nor Rank mentions the work of Tylor. Bréal some years later also noticed the myth-pattern reported by Tylor. See MICHEL BRÉAL, *Mélanges de mythologie et de linguistique* (Paris, 1882), p. 182.

A collection and analysis of such myths including some not mentioned here will be found in Lord Raglan's *The Hero* in Chapter XVI. Raglan's theory of dramatic ritual origin of myths may be tenable but also is not basic.

A Rhineland variant of the exposure myth is the ordeal of exposure to prove legitimacy. HENRY LEA, *Superstition and Force* (Philadelphia, 1866), p. 189. The author refers to an anonymous Greek anthology.

As to the practice of exposure and infanticide in general see Article 'Infanticide', *Encyclopedia Britannica*, 12, 14th ed.; also WILLIAM GRAHAM SUMNER, *Folkways* (New York, 1940—published in 1906), Chap. 7, p. 308 ff.

(2) OTTO RANK, *The Myth of the Birth of the Hero* (English trans., New York, 1941); also RANK, *Beyond Psychology* (Posthumous, 1941), p. 93 ff.

(3) SIGMUND FREUD, *Moses and Monotheism* (New York, 1939), p. 7 ff.

(4) A. J. LEVIN, 'The Oedipus Myth in History and Psychiatry', *Psychiatry Magazine*, 2, 1948, p. 289.

See also earlier brief article by SOPHIE LAZARSFELD, 'Did Oedipus Have an Oedipus Complex?', *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, 14, April 1944, p. 226. The article calls attention to the 'many psychological facts left out by Freud'. It is significant that this article was not known to the writer of this paper and that the views of Lazarsfeld and of myself were arrived at independently.

(5) See comments on Freud's *Future of an Illusion* in A. J. LEVIN, 'The Fiction of the Death Instinct', *Psychiatric Quarterly*, 25, 1951, p. 257 ff. On evidence of panic in Freud's childhood see SUZANNE CASSIRER BERNFELD, 'Freud and Archaeology', *American Imago*, 8, 1951, p. 116 and elsewhere. The reference was furnished to me after the author had read 'The Fiction of the Death Instinct', in corroboration of the portion on Freud's childhood terrors.

(6) BRONISLAW MALINOWSKI, *Myth in Primitive Psychology* (London, 1926), pp. 123-124 and elsewhere.

(7) DR. DORAN, *Habits and Men* (London, 1854), p. 158, where the author recalls that the Puritan women wore green aprons while pregnant because this was presumed to be the colour of the apron worn by Eve. The Spartans, whose children were considered as born for the State, laid stress on the prenatal conduct of their women.

(8) JAMES CLARK MOLONEY, *The Magic Cloak*



- (1949), p. 243. See also the same author's 'Planned Infancy and the Paranoid Block to Human Progress', *American Imago*, 7, 3, p. 19.
- (9) *Ibid.*, p. 227.
- (10) *Ibid.*, p. 280.
- (11) *The Oedipus Myth in History and Psychiatry* (see note 4), p. 294.
- (12) T. B. MACAULAY, *The Life of Johnson*. There are numerous sayings and proverbs which record this same observation. Compare, for example, the saying of the poet Blake: 'The weak in courage is strong in cunning', from *The Prophetic Books*.
- (13) H. A. GUERBER, *Myths of Greece and Rome* (New York: American Book Co., 1893), p. 318.
- (14) BRÉAL, p. 173.
- (15) *Ibid.*, pp. 178-179.
- (16) GUERBER, p. 318.
- (17) BRÉAL, p. 180. 'A symbolism is sometimes suggested, with Cinderella representing the dawn, oppressed by the clouds of night (harsh relatives), finally rescued by the sun (the handsome prince "Apollo").' From *Bluebeard, Cinderella, and Other Tales*, by Charles Perrault, retold by Lloyd Smith, Little Blue Book No. 386, Haldeman-Julius Company, Girard, Kansas. See also JOHN FISKE, *Myths and Myth Makers* (Boston, 1893), p. 112. Herakles discussed at p. 117.
- (18) *Ibid.*, p. 175.
- (19) C. STANILAND WAKE, *Serpent Worship and Other Essays* (London: Redway, 1888), p. 98 and elsewhere.
- (20) GUERBER, p. 316. Sir John Lubbock thought the idea was acceptable for other reasons, hardly scientific. The 'one great charm' of the explanation of the sun-destroying darkness is that we thus get rid of 'some of the revolting features of ancient myths'. *Origin of Civilisation and Primitive Condition of Man* (London, 1875), p. 329.
- (21) I am informed by Dr. James Clark Moloney that some years ago the view was advanced in an article that the hair of Samson was to be considered as representing the rays of the sun. Such an article has not been located to date, though it no doubt exists.
- (22) From note to line 218 of the poem *The Botanic Garden*, Canto I, Part I.
- (23) BRÉAL, p. 182.
- (24) 'For bodily exercise profiteth little; but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.' (1 Tim. iv, 8.)
- (25) WAKE, pp. 101, 126, 127.
- (26) TYLOR, p. 339. Italics mine. I must disagree with Tylor who, without the benefit of modern psychodynamic researches, despaired of separating the solar and non-solar elements of the myth of Hercules. It is a task, he concluded, 'complicated with that all but hopeless difficulty which besets the student of myth the moment that the clue of direct communication with nature falls away.' *Ibid.*, Vol. ii, p. 294.
- (27) James Clark Moloney has called to my attention a Japanese counterpart of the Hercules myth and the association of strength with light and darkness. The Sun Goddess, angered by the rude behaviour of her younger brother, shuts herself into a celestial cave with a door of rock. The gods try to restore light by inducing her to come out. The God of Wisdom dances a comic dance outside the cave to attract her attention. She opens the rock gate enough to look through the crevice. 'At that instant Tazikarao-no-Kami, the God of Physical Strength, sprang forward, and removing the great rock entirely, succeeded in bringing the Goddess out.' (NYOZEKAN HASEGAWA, *Japanese National Character*, Board of Tourist Industry, Japanese Government Railways, 1942, p. 61).
- See Moloney's study of theophany and kenosis, (light phenomena) in 'Mother, God and Superego', *Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association*, 2, 1954, p. 120.
- (28) OVID, *Fasti*, 4, line 683.
- (29) GUHL and KOHNER, *The Life of the Greeks and Romans* (London, 1889), p. 191. The marriage with a stranger was considered illegitimate and the children could not have their birthright.
- (30) See article by WILTON M. KROGMAN, 'The Scars of Human Evolution', who points out that man's skeleton was originally designed for four legs which has led to definite imbalances and consequent heavier burdens on the two legs and other important functions. *Scientific American*, 185, p. 54 ff. (1951). As to cultural records of this struggle of man with his limitations as to movement see LEVIN, 'The Fiction of The Death Instinct', *Psychiatric Quarterly*, 25, 1951, p. 257 ff. (Discussion of Achilles' heel and of Jacob in the Old Testament who held on to Esau's heel.) See also EDWARD B. TYLOR, *Early History of Mankind*, Amer. ed. (1878), p. 369, for discussion of the lame gods in mythologies.
- (31) WAKE, p. 101. The lichenura or rosafusca has small flaps or spurlike projections on each side of the end of his body, 'the remains of once-functional hind limbs'. DORIS M. COCHRAN, 'Our Snake Friends and Foes', *National Geographic Magazine*, 106, 1954, p. 334, at p. 364.
- (32) *Encyclopedia Britannica*, article 'Central America', 14th ed., Vol. 5, p. 134.
- (33) J. G. FRAZER, *Folk-Lore in the Old Testament* (New York: Macmillan Co., 1927), p. 18 ff. See also FRAZER'S *Golden Bough, The Scapegoat* (London: Macmillan, 1913), p. 302 ff.; BRONISLAW MALINOWSKI, *Myth in Primitive Psychology* (London: Kegan Paul, 1926), p. 80 ff., especially at p. 83.
- (34) WAKE, p. 88. See also *Encyclopedia Britannica*, article 'Snakes', 14th ed., Vol. 20, p. 849 ff.
- (35) CHARLES DARWIN, *The Descent of Man* (New York: Hurst, 1894), p. 617. The whole chapter should be considered. In other editions this would be found in Chapter XX of Part III. See also LEVIN, MAINE, MCLENNAN and FREUD



*Psychiatry*, 1948, Vol. 11, pp. 180 and 186, where this observation of Darwin's is noted as of 'deep and far-reaching import'. On the subject of locomotion and the prevalence of four-legged locomotion in infants in Greece to-day see 'Quadruped Locomotion (Tetrapodisis) among Human Children', by SAVAS NITTIS, M.D., in *Journal of Michigan State Medical Society*, April 1929. The author refers to the Riddle of the Sphinx. See also ERWIN W. STRAUSS, M.D., 'The Upright Posture', *Psychiatric Quarterly*, 26, 1952, p. 259.

(36) LEVIN, *The Oedipus Myth in History and Psychiatry*, pp. 291-292.

(37) LAZARSFELD, p. 229.

(38) M. I. EBUTT, *Hero Myths and Legends of the British Race*, Amer. ed., 1910. King Scyld was exposed and became a hero. See also MALORY'S *Morte d'Arthur* for the story of Lancelot.

(39) A. J. LEVIN, 'Mr. Justice William Johnson and the Common Incidents of Life', *Michigan Law Review*, 44, 1944, pp. 64, 70, 289.

(Received 17 November, 1954)



## AN IRISH LEGEND AS PROOF OF FREUD'S THEORY OF JOINT PARRICIDE

By

L. VESZY-WAGNER, Ph.D., LONDON

Freud, in *Totem and Taboo* (2) says: 'I shall resist the temptation of pointing out these traces' (i.e. the elimination of the primal father by the company of his sons) 'in mythology, where they are not hard to find.' It is a pity he resisted, for they are, surprising as it is, harder to find than one would expect. Still, there exists a fair number of myths and sagas dealing with primeval parricide. Mythology, as a matter of fact, is almost brimming over with them. But in nearly all the cases there is only one son-hero who commits the deed individually, and, more often than not, against the consensus of all the others concerned, as shown in Otto Rank's painstaking work on the incest motive (6). The only example of plural guilt to which Freud refers is not conclusive, as it consists in the myth of Dionysos, who was not a father to the Titans who slew him, but a more or less destitute child. Admitted that the Titans similarly revolted in common against Zeus, the father (who had once been a destitute child not unlike Dionysos), this myth would nevertheless be unconvincing without further proof. On the one hand, there is no incestuous event attached and, on the other, it was Zeus and not the wretched brotherhood of revolting Titans—who, by the way, were not his sons—who won in the end. The wrath of the father in mythology very often turns against his children; but on the one hand, it affects daughters and sons equally, and on the other, the reduplication motive has also to be taken into account; which means that emphasis in myth, as in dreams, is expressed rather frequently by reduplication. The tale of the merchant, for instance, in the *Thousand and One Nights* (3), who attempts to kill simultaneously his two sons whom he accuses of theft (incidentally, this is the only tale mentioned in which there are two sons involved instead of one) seems to employ reduplication as a means

of emphasizing the wickedness of the father, like the consecutive infanticides committed by Uranos or Kronos in Greek mythology.

If, however, there are fewer instances of joint parricide to be found in mythology than Freud expected, this does not mean that his tenet has no bearing on social psychology, but simply that joint or group sin probably oppresses guilty social conscience more than individual sin can. The latter could always be argued away as an exceptional event, committed by an eccentric though heroic individual. So much so that even group sin would be telescoped into this single revolutionary hero—a process which is well known under the device of the scapegoat in other contexts. This would do its best to wipe out the traces of joint sin in myth through partial negation: admitting the fact of parricide but effacing the joint responsibility.

Yet we have to find at least some examples of true totem sin—namely joint responsibility for the sin—if Freud's thesis is to be taken as fully justified by mythology in its social aspect. Such examples will probably be found only in those mythologies which have been least tampered with and which have preserved to more than the usual degree their archaic and outspoken ferocity unadulterated by Christian or humanist censorship. They must be sought among peoples who have stuck obstinately to their heathen traditions, and preferably have also preserved their ancient tongue for the service of a pagan code, as Latin or Greek served the ecclesiastics.

These traits point imperatively to Celtic mythology, a rich yet so far insufficiently explored field for the purposes of analytic investigation, which would certainly yield many rewarding results if cultivated by anthropologists.

There is, as a matter of fact, a hint in *Totem and Taboo* itself which indicates the possibility



of discoveries in this domain, viz., that 'the ancient kings of Ireland were subject to a number of exceedingly strong restrictions'. This phenomenon, mentioned also by Hocart (4), unmistakably indicates that in Ireland the king—a sanctified derivate and perpetualized simulacrum of the primeval sire—revived and, so to speak, socially sublimated by the projection from the private into the public sphere, must as public dignitary have been treated in a highly ambivalent way. In other words, either the repression of the reminiscences of primal regicide must have worked somewhat inefficiently, the original impulse to parricide having been too strong, or special ethnic and historical circumstances must have prevented the old feud from fading away more smoothly.

Following this clue, we might well be able to trace an unusually long survival of the joint fraternal sin or its unconscious symbolic remembrance in myths through the symptomatic repetition, institutionalized in the customs regulating kingship.

One of the points indicating that these surmises would be well worth following up, and may prompt to further research is a finding which shows an exemplary neat specimen of parricidal myth, not only combined with clear-cut incestuous motives, but also relating to a company of brothers, who in this case do not seem to designate a merely reduplicating scheme as mentioned above.

The myth—or historical story—here alluded to, known as the story of Clothra or Clothru, is to be found in Keating's *History of Ireland* (5). Keating (1570–1644) held in deep respect all the old Irish historical stories he picked up and seems to have related them literally and without pragmatic criticism. It is this very circumstance which makes his chronicle the more valuable for us as a source of ancient mythological material. His translators and annotators, of course, scholars of the Victorian age, did their best to obfuscate the original sense wherever they did not find it sufficiently decent or decorous. It is a study in itself to follow the unconscious procedure of falsification, as it were, in the process of rationalization and embellishment of the texts. The story itself runs as follows.

King Eochu (or Eochaidh) Feidlech, son of Finn, had a daughter, Clothra, and three sons. The three brothers, called the three Finns or

Finnemhna, Bres, Nar, and Lothar, cohabited with Clothra on the night before the day on which they wanted to fight their father. Next day, however, the father defeated (and killed) them. Clothra had become pregnant simultaneously by all three of them, in consequence of which miraculous union the body of her son Lugaidh bore a red circle round his neck and one round his waist, thus dividing it into three parts each resembling one of the joint male parents.<sup>1</sup> Clothra later cohabited with Lugaidh also and they had a son called Crimthann Niadnar. Although it seems that Clothra had not been violated, it is uncertain whether she seduced her brothers in order to procure an heir to the Finns, as is held by Keating's sources, e.g. the Welsh *Mabinogion*, or, as Mauss (7) holds, because she wanted to weaken them before the battle for the sake of her father (which would point to the implication of an incestuous relationship between father and daughter) like the Maoris he mentions who try to make persons they want to destroy commit a crime the previous night in the belief that these will then consequently lose in the fight. This would also correspond with Frazer's view (1), according to which sexual intercourse is tabu for warriors lest they should sympathetically infect themselves with feminine weakness.

Both Feidlech and Lugaidh bear a strong resemblance in character to each other and to Oedipus. Feidlech is called 'the long sighing'; '... because he was for a long time addicted to sighing ... since his sons were slain by him in the battle of Drom-Criaidh', until he died. O'Mahony, annotating this passage, is of the opinion that 'Feidlech' does not mean 'long-sighing', but 'Watcher' or 'Vigilant'. He also disbelieves that Lugaidh's descriptive second name Riabh-n-derg (Reevenary: 'of the Red Circles') would denote his disgraceful origin. He does not give any reason for his disbelief. Lugaidh, very much like his grandfather Feidlech, had a strong tendency to melancholy: '... he ended by flinging himself upon his own sword; or, he died of grief for his children.' This passage makes it likely that there is a possible identity between the two figures.

Keating remarks, that, according to one version Lugaidh 'died of conceit he took of the death of his wife Dervorgil'. O'Mahony again steps into the breach by suggesting that Lugaidh

<sup>1</sup> Keating says: '... the upper part of Lugaidh's person bore a likeness to Nar; ... he resembled Bres

between the two circles and ... his lower extremities were like those of Lothar.'



probably died of grief 'about' her death. Now all this does not make sense (especially because Dervorgil does not play any part in the story), but it becomes clear at once if we establish the hypothesis that Feidlech and Lugaidh are but two aspects of the same mythological figure, who, like Oedipus, committed an abhorred crime, parricide and/or incest with his daughter and/or mother, for which he felt grief. The murder of sons could well represent the reverse process too; the interchange between the maternal and filial figures in Clothra already points in this direction. Feidlech/Lugaidh took conceit of the death of his slain sons/father(?) and/or of his committed incest against his daughter (denoted as wife).

O'Mahony, of course, does not believe that Clothra committed incest with Lugaidh; he cannot, however, efface Keating's naïve assertion. 'This fact', the latter says, 'is recorded in the following verse :

Lugaidh Riabh-n-derg, of fair Crimthann  
The father was, though yet his brother;  
And Clothra of the comely form  
To her own son was grandmother.'

This verse has a certain emotional resemblance to the riddle of the Sphinx; and must, in fact, originally have been a riddle itself. Riddles nearly always denote promiscuity, and condensations in dream and in folklore are but a symbolic expression of a promiscuous tendency. Further, monstrosities like the Sphinx show (in a stationary form) the dynamic process of mixing ('adulterating') together incongruent elements distributed over a period of time. This, in the sexual sphere, would mean incest, as this seems to be the form of mating which in primitive society is regarded as a mixing—a 'promiscuity'—of incongruent and therefore forbidden elements.<sup>2</sup>

Clothra in this light means incest itself: incest with father, incest with brother and son, it does not matter which.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, she does not feel guilt for the incest, as Feidlech-Lugaidh does, and it should not be forgotten that Jocasta likewise had no scruples. This means that there is either a less developed sense of guilt feelings

arising from the sphere of incestuous significance in the female sex (perhaps the more lenient maternal superego accounts for it), or a clever projection of the male oedipal ego, which had not felt restraint and had not as yet been restricted by the post-oedipal ego, into the woman, after the post-oedipal ego took over. This question, however, would lead us too far from our original problem.

It has to be noted that the collective name of the three Finns is also full of meaning. Finnemha means, according to Keating, 'not separate' or 'not single'. This makes it plain that they could not have been simple reduplications, but were meant originally to symbolize a group of joint sin-committers.<sup>4</sup>

Now the reason why it is of great interest to psycho-analysis to pay attention to this myth is its complex nature, which offers us both the motives of incest, Oedipus situation, (attempted) parricide, and, at the same time, the plurality accentuated by symbolism, of the committers. In the story of Conchobar—another and more famous Celtic hero—we find the same setting of incestuous brother and sister relation as in so many of the Greek, German, or other myths but without plurality. On the other hand, in tales like the Hindu story of the Pandu princess Draupadi and her brothers, the Pandavas, there is an element of plurality present; this, however, is only in connexion with the incest, and no revolt of the sons occurs, neither do we find traces of any parricidal endeavours.

The only element referred to in Freud's *Totem and Taboo* which is missing from the story of Clothra is that of the totem feast, for the occurrence of which it does not supply us with any clue. It cannot serve, therefore, as conclusive (or even as acceptable) proof in this one regard. It is, however, by no means impossible that a deeper delving into Keating's *History* or other kindred source might bring to light some indication which would serve as a guide in the right direction in respect of this feature also.

This lack in no way depreciates the value of this otherwise flawless mythological example as supporting evidence of one of Freud's sociological hypotheses.

<sup>2</sup> The question why exactly it has become forbidden does not enter into the scope of the question here dealt with. But forbidden things always assume later, with a 'petitio principii', the character of incongruent things.

<sup>3</sup> I do not think it at all impossible that the Oedipus myth may have had a previous (first) part, later lost.

in which Jocasta committed incest with her father instead of, or apart from, committing it with her son.

<sup>4</sup> 'O'Mahony again senses danger; he says that deriving this name from 'amhaen' "is a ridiculous pun", and Keating, needless to say, disapproves of the interpretation.'



## REFERENCES

- (1) FRAZER, J. G. *The Golden Bough*, Part II. 'Taboo and the Perils of the Soul.' (London: Macmillan, 1911.)
- (2) FREUD, S. *Totem and Taboo*. (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1950.)
- (3) GENNEP, A. VAN. *La formation des légendes*. (Paris, 1910.)
- (4) HOCART, A. M. *Kingship*. (London: Oxford Univ. Press, 1927.)
- (5) KEATING, G. *Foras Feasa ar Éirinn; the History of Ireland*, translated and annotated by J. O'Mahony. (New York, 1857.)
- (6) RANK, O. *Das Inzestmotiv in Sage und Dichtung*. (Leipzig: Deuticke, 1912.)
- (7) VENDRYES, M. 'Pourquoi la princesse Clothru s'est fait engrosser par ses frères?' (*L'Anthropologie*, Dec. 1922; May 1923.)

(Received 10 January, 1955)



## BOOK REVIEWS

*Principles of Psychoanalysis: Their Application to the Neuroses.* By Herman Nunberg. (New York: International Universities Press, 1955. Pp. 382. \$7.50.)

This book first appeared in German in 1932 as *Allgemeine Neurosenlehre* in the same year as Fenichel's *Spezielle Psychoanalytische Neurosenlehre*. The two books were thus complementary. Freud, in a foreword to Nunberg's book, declared it 'the most complete and accurate presentation we have at this time of a psycho-analytic theory of neurotic processes'. Thereafter Fenichel gave his book its new and final form, presenting the clinical subject-matter within a comprehensive theoretical framework under the title of *The Psychoanalytic Theory of Neurosis* (1945).

In the book under review the principles of psycho-analysis had always been in the centre, as exemplified in the neuroses. It has more particularly concentrated on the development of Freud's own thought and contributions, on which it is of the nature of a faithful commentary. More than that, it attempts to give a consistent account of this work up to date and to show that earlier and later views are but steps in the development of a systematic psychopathology of the neuroses. What Freud himself did in the third chapter of his *Introductory Lectures* (1917) is thus continued in this work.

Two new chapters have been added, one on 'The Dream' (Chap. II) and one on 'Character and Neurosis' (Chap. X). The former is by way of an introduction to the analytic concept of the Unconscious and to topographical and dynamic concepts. The latter includes an account of the libidinal types (erotic, compulsive, narcissistic).

In the comprehensive chapter on Instincts, the destructive instincts are treated as equal partners with the sexual instincts in accord with Freud's final formulations. This is one of the distinguishing features of this book, and is of considerable importance. Of particular interest is the paragraph on 'The Relation of the Destructive Instincts to the Phases of Libido Organisation' and on 'Development of Object Choice and Restriction of Aggression (Fusion of Instincts)'. The chapter on the Psychology of the Ego is lucid and original, in particular the paragraphs on 'Magic and Omnipotence', 'The Synthetic Function of the Ego' and 'The Feeling of Guilt'. Here again 'the eternal struggle between the life and death instincts' is for the first time adequately taken into a systematic account of psycho-analytic theory. Actual neuroses, anxiety, and the processes of defence

are treated extensively and systematically.

The process of illness, causation of neurosis, and the theoretical principles of psycho-analytic therapy are reviewed in special chapters.

The book is still in mutual, complementary relationship to Fenichel's. Fenichel's is the more encyclopaedic and the more complete; Nunberg's concentrates more exclusively on Freud, and its special merit is the full consideration given to the death instinct theory. Apart from Freud's own writings and those of Abraham, add the work of Ernest Jones, and you have the core of what is basic in psycho-analysis.

S. R. Foulkes.

*The Selected Papers of Sandor Ferenczi, M.D. Vol. III. Final Contributions to the Problems and Methods of Psycho-Analysis.* Edited by Michael Balint. Translated by Eric Mosbacher *et al.* (London: Hogarth Press and the Institute of Psycho-Analysis; New York: Basic Books, 1955. Pp. 447. 30s. or \$6.50.)

The English edition of this book is No. 48 of the International Psycho-Analytical Library. The American edition is Vol. III of the Selected Papers of Sandor Ferenczi. The texts are identical in every way (even the spelling) except that the American edition includes an introduction by Dr. Clara Thompson who, like Dr. Balint, was a pupil of Ferenczi and closely associated with him in his work. The print is slightly smaller in the English edition, which makes the layout a little more attractive, and the text is printed on better paper.

The Editor's note describes the papers as falling into three groups: (a) papers written after *Further Contributions to the Theory and Technique of Psycho-Analysis*, (b) posthumous papers, notes and fragments, and (c) papers which were omitted from *Further Contributions*. This volume completes the publication in book form in English of all Ferenczi's important papers. What has been omitted is of slight interest from the point of view of psycho-analysis except for the as yet unpublished correspondence with Freud and the scientific diary which he kept during the last year of his life.

There is a very comprehensive bibliography which 'enumerates in chronological order all Ferenczi's papers published in English, giving in each case the volume and page numbers where the paper may be found', and including references for the obituaries and appreciations of Ferenczi.

The index, equally comprehensive, also covers all books and papers by Ferenczi published in English.



The arrangement of the papers, etc., is chronological. The first group consists of thirteen completed and published papers, all of great interest. Three are concerned with Freud's importance for medicine and mental hygiene, one being an address to Freud on his seventieth birthday. One is entitled 'Gulliver Fantasies'. One is concerned with education, and is entitled 'The Adaptation of the Family to the Child'. The remainder are concerned with psycho-analytic technique: 'Organ Neuroses and their Treatment', 'Present-Day Problems in Psycho-Analysis', 'The Problem of the Termination of the Analysis', 'The Elasticity of Psycho-Analytic Technique', 'The Unwelcome Child and his Death Instinct', 'The Principles of Relaxation and Neocatharsis', 'Child-Analysis in the Analysis of Adults', and 'Confusion of Tongues between Adults and the Child'.

The posthumous papers are fully worked-out schemata for long papers, but are obviously not in what would have been their final form; they include papers on such topics as laughter, mathematics, epileptic fits. Although the papers were not completed they belong to the period before the publication of *Further Contributions*. The notes and fragments are day-to-day jottings on a very wide range of themes, many of which relate to analytic technique, and in particular to the clinical material with which Ferenczi was occupied at the time. The Birth of the Intellect, On Shock, The Technique of Silence, The Language of the Unconscious, Repetition in Analysis worse than Original Trauma, Fakirism, are the headings of a few of these.

The twenty-two papers in the third section are equally wide in their range of subject; all but five were written and published before *First Contributions*. They include 'Psycho-Analysis and Education', read at the first Congress of Psycho-analysts in 1908, and 'On the Organization of the Psycho-Analytic Movement', read at the second Congress when Ferenczi proposed the formation of an International Association of Psycho-analysts.

In the preface to *Further Contributions* Ferenczi wrote: 'It gives me great pleasure to lay my work once more before Anglo-Saxon readers, particularly because I have found that with their broad-mindedness they often strive to view such opinions as mine quite without prejudice, whereas elsewhere these are turned down *a limine* on account of their novelty or their boldness.'

Novelty and boldness are the right words—the ideas put forward in these papers read today with a freshness and a force that is lacking in much of the later writings on the same topics; and it is rather a reflection on those Anglo-Saxon readers that the work of collecting these papers together, translating and publishing them in English has waited until more than twenty years after the last paper was written, shortly before Ferenczi died in 1933, although they had been published in German in

1939 (*Bausteine*). We owe a great deal to Dr. Balint for his labour of love in the production of this book.

In his foreword to the Ferenczi number of this *Journal* Dr. Balint spoke of Ferenczi's jokes about himself as the 'enfant terrible' of psycho-analysis, and of his interest in the myth or dream of the 'wise baby'. He went on to say that Ferenczi was 'essentially a child all his life' and compared him with those mature adults, Freud and Abraham. Running through these papers is the sadness of that baby, wise before his time, who knew more than the adults, and yet for lack of further knowledge and experience could not substantiate his knowledge, convince the adults, or make his work fully effective.

Ferenczi died in 1933. Mrs. Klein's work began to be widely known and accepted during the last two years of his life, and in the preface to her book *The Psycho-Analysis of Children* she acknowledged her debt to him. Much that her work contains has been used and developed since then, especially by Winnicott and others, in ways that illuminate Ferenczi's later work, especially that on what he called 'relaxation and neo-catharsis'.

In his paper on this subject, and more clearly in the notes and fragments and the paper entitled 'Confusion of Tongues between Children and Adults' one finds his realization that many links are missing. His patients regress to infantile states—'trances'—he 'adopts' them, and then questions 'Yes—yet how to "disadopt"?' or 'But what happens in cases of helplessness or general hopelessness?'

He was able to identify with his patients to an unusual degree (hence his extremely sensitive understanding of clinical material) and also to remain separate from them (hence his capacity for critical evaluation of the material, and for making theoretical deductions). His main difficulty seems to have lain in the impossibility for him of being both identified and remaining separate at one and the same time. He equated hate with destructiveness, and love with creativity. Had he had more understanding of the paradox of ambivalence, where the loved and hated person are found to be the same, and had he been able to accept his own hate and use it, many of his discoveries would have stood through time as *his* discoveries; they would not have needed to be discovered afresh and on a broader basis by others. He could be compared with early workers in other fields, those who believed in blood transfusion, for example, and believed rightly, but knew nothing of blood-groups.

'Often I envy my patients', Dr. Thompson quotes his saying, 'I wish I could have had this kind of analysis', speaking of his 'relaxation' method. But to have helped him it would have needed at the very least someone standing at the farthest limits of what we know today. We can only guess what was the cost to Ferenczi of treating



patients as he did, when they were only a step or two behind him (or even sometimes in front), and dealing with the self-same problem as he needed to solve. Such was his personal tragedy.

Perhaps this inability to deal with paradox is the thing that was chiefly responsible for the measure of failure in both his life, his work, and his relationships. This volume as well as the earlier ones shows his failure to fuse his enthusiasms, his empiricism, and his subjectivity with his awareness of the need for caution and his objectiveness.

Ferenczi's work on education, on the relation of the child to the family, to the two parents in their relatedness to each other, the need of adults to adapt to children, his 'active technique' and his 'relaxation and neo-catharsis' are widely known. Less known, but of no less importance or interest, are his work on shock and its effects, splitting between psyche and soma, and the importance of body sensation and reactions in relation to memory—'Unpleasant memories remain reverberating somewhere in the body (and emotions)'—and again 'The memory remains fixed in the body, and only there can it be awakened'. These topics recur throughout his writings; they seem to be themes too which he could develop just so far, but never to a point where they could become really useful or convincing, even to himself. But reading his papers now, in the light of later work, there is a wealth that can enrich us and much to stimulate our ideas and our understanding of our patients.

Such a man is at once stimulating and disappointing. He went further than his colleagues in ways that they found unacceptable for unconscious reasons, and therefore could not follow. His ambivalence and unresolved conflicts could not but arouse ambivalence in those who worked with him. Perhaps these were inevitable consequences of the coming together of his personality and psychoanalysis in the early stages of its development.

Freud's words in his obituary are most fitting: 'Where the path he had chosen would have led him we do not know, since he could not follow it to its end.'

Margaret Little.

*Schools of Psychoanalytic Thought. An Exposition, Critique, and Attempt at Integration.* By Ruth L. Munroe. (New York: The Dryden Press, 1955. Pp. xvi + 670. \$7.50.)

This book was commissioned by the Dryden Press as one of its *Publications in Interpersonal Relations* to provide students, social workers, social scientists, etc., with accurate information and with help in forming an unbiased judgment among the clamorous, quarrelsomely different schools currently thought of as psychoanalytic. The choice of author was fortunate in all respects. Ruth L. Munroe is Professor of Clinical Psychology at the City College of New York, with some

fifteen years teaching experience behind her, and has a private practice of diagnostic testing for psychiatrists of many different schools together with consultation and guidance work. She is the wife of a practising psycho-analyst, Dr. Bela Mittelmann, and has herself some personal experience of both 'orthodox' and 'Horney' analysis. Thus, although she calls herself an 'outsider', her opportunities for acquiring information and making contact with workers in the differing 'schools' are unrivalled, and she has made the most of them. Each section of the book has been scrutinized by competent members of the 'school' concerned. The kind of précis-writing necessary in a book of this scope is never entirely satisfactory, but, judging by the treatment of 'Freud and the "Freudians"' (Part Two), the accounts given are sound and any errors are errors of inevitable omission rather than of commission. Her account of criticism received is significant: 'The few specialist readers who have read my account of schools other than their own seem to have two reactions: (1) My report of *their* school is good, so good that they become annoyed with me for not driving home the ideas they consider most important for any honest psychological science. If the report is this good, why can't it be still better—on *their* terms? (2) My account of the *other* schools is inaccurate, they say, because I read my own intelligence into them, with insufficient knowledge of their history and actual practice.' To which last her unanswerable reply is, 'It is the schools, not I, that have supplied the liberalizing intelligence of each presentation in some contrast to the narrow shibboleths by which they are often identified' (p. 19).

The book is divided into five Parts. Part One, 'An Overview', has a first chapter, 'An Approach to Psychoanalytic Thought', in which the author explains her own attitude to her task and the 'uniform broad outline of topics' according to which the 'schools' are presented, with the aid of terms which are 'neutral' to all of them. The five headings chosen are (1) 'The Terms of the Organism', the word 'terms' being 'intended to suggest a sense of the directions, conditions, and limits set by the organism'; (2) 'The Terms of the Milieu', of which the most important are the 'Social Factors in Personality Development'; (3) 'The Genetic Process', or how the emergence of personality is thought to come about; (4) 'The Dynamics of the Functioning Personality', ('What makes people tick?'); (5) 'Pathology and Treatment'. In the last the author has noted 'important differences in emphasis among the schools' but also 'extensive areas of overlap'. But, since 'the problem of treatment is essentially a medical problem', she suggests 'the chapters be considered more as information about what happens on the analytic couch than as material for judgment by readers who do not understand the treatment requirements of different types of mental disorder'.



The schools discussed are those which American 'outsiders' have heard most about, with references to key ideas associated with other analysts not reported *in extenso*. The major classification is into libido and non-libido schools. At first this savours rather of the 'narrow shibboleths' to which the author herself objects, but she explains that it was chosen for the practical reason that 'This was the topic about which the analysts seemed to be quarrelling in the most intransigent manner and on which my fellow "psychologists" seemed to become most heated . . . the fundamental problem that arises continually is the rôle of infantile sexuality in personality formation and in the unconscious dynamics of adult function' (pp. 15-16). Hence analysts like Kardiner and Alexander, who continue to stress the importance of sexual and aggressive factors, are classified as 'Freudian' irrespective of any modifications they wish to introduce into the 'libido theory'. The 'non-libido schools' all emphasize the 'self' as the 'primary factor in psycho-dynamics' although their definitions vary.

The second chapter of Part One introduces 'Basic Concepts of Psychoanalysis'. Four are held to be accepted by all 'schools', namely, 'psychological determinism, "the unconscious", goal-directedness, a genetic approach' (p. 68). A full account is given of the 'avenues of approach', the ways in which information is obtained about the unconscious, including an interesting section on the projective method of psychological testing, in which the author herself specializes.

Part Two examines 'Freud and the "Freudians"' according to the model noted above. Chapter Three, 'The Terms of the Organism', contains a section on Ego Psychology which gives a very clear description of modern work in this field stemming from Hartmann, Kris, *et al.* Chapter Four includes an interesting discussion of Kardiner's psychosocial approach and methodology and his concept of 'social homeostasis'. Chapter Five, 'The Genetic Process', includes a succinct account of the work of Melanie Klein.

Part Three contains five chapters dealing with the work of Adler, Horney, Fromm, and Sullivan according to the pattern outlined in Part One. The Horney, Fromm, and Sullivan sections are likely to be particularly useful to English and Continental readers who, as a rule, are less familiar with the details of their views than Americans, and incline to regard them as one loose group rather than as three distinct 'schools'.

Jung and Rank did not readily fit the author's topic model and so, in Part Four, a chapter is devoted to each in which an account is given of their essential views. In England, the Jungians have recently inaugurated a journal of their own, but both Jung and Rank have little clinical importance in the United States. The author says 'Although everyone knows their names and acknowledges

their influence, and although some of their concepts have become part of a very general vocabulary, there is comparatively little interest in the detailed development of their theoretical systems among professional psychological groups in the United States today except, for Rank, in the area of social work. Writers, artists, and historians would tell a different story, especially for Jung. . . . Adler . . . is given more discussion not because he is more important in himself but because his position is closer to major developments in America' (p. 17).

Throughout the book, critical comments, always stimulating though sometimes repetitive, are interspersed at suitable points; they are printed in smaller type and in double-column format to obviate any confusion with the factual descriptions of the main text. Each chapter is provided with an excellent summary. Part Five, 'Epilogue', reviews both the cardinal features of the 'schools' and the main arguments of the author's critical comments. Anyone familiar with the 'schools' who does not wish to read the whole book can form a good idea of the author's approach and conclusions by reading the 'Overview' and the 'Epilogue'. There is a selective Bibliography of the most important work of each author in English translation, and a useful Index.

The reviewer's impression is that the author has carried out a difficult task extremely well and has produced a book that could be read with advantage by members of all 'schools'. Its interest to analysts is not mainly in its provision of authentic information about different 'schools' but in the author's attempt to see through the current diversities of opinion to possible bases of future co-ordination. This attempt is the more valuable in that the author limits herself to a general perspective and to suggesting ways of thinking that might facilitate synthesis. Thus, she says of new terms she uses, 'They are not intended as the permanent pillars of a new inclusive theory to be substituted for the theories reported but rather as a temporary rephrasing such as may help us to envisage common problems within a common framework' (p. 21). Her suggestions and conclusions cannot be discussed adequately in a review and a few points only will be mentioned here. Her orientation is basically psycho-analytic but her approach is psychosocial. Though she considers the Freudian emphasis on infantile sexuality wholly justified and necessary, she wishes 'Freudians' would now pay more attention to non-sexual factors in development, and is inclined to regard modern ego-psychology as a step in this direction. Her over-all perspective is succinctly expressed as a 'view of systems'. In summary, it avers that scientific truth lies in the progressive recognition of dynamic systems of different types and degrees of inclusiveness. No such system is universal in the absolute sense. Many have a quality approaching universality because



they are deeply rooted either in the biological equipment of man or in fundamental necessities of social living. The nature of man (born helpless with a unique capacity for flexible learning) is such that integrative systems between the organism and its milieu (the individual and his society) are inevitably of supreme importance' (p. 601). This is entirely in accord with conceptions of progressive mental organization by the integration (or dissociation) of sub-systems. The author's point is that some important sub-systems tend to be neglected by all 'schools' and many concentrate too exclusively on one (the error of 'reductionism'). 'Freudian' theory is 'multidimensional': it gives room 'for learning new things with some *separateness* rather than as variations on a single theme' (p. 22). But concepts (such as Freud's 'structural concepts') that are initially flexible tend to become 'reified'. A factor hitherto neglected which the author has found to be of considerable import is the development of the 'self-image', itself a composite. The 'view of systems' allows scope for the integration of contributions from different 'schools', but the main plea throughout is for greater recognition by psychologists of 'the relative autonomy of the social groups and social trends *within which the individual functions*', i.e. for a greater degree of 'psychosocial integration'. The reviewer certainly agrees with the need for the development of an adequate psycho-sociology, such as could result from the co-operation of mutually enlightened psychologists and sociologists.

Marjorie Brierley.

*Freud and Religious Belief.* By the Reverend H. L. Philp, Ph.D. (London: Rockliff, 1956. Pp. 140, 18s.)

This book is the most completely adverse criticism possible of Freud's views on religion. Many such have already been published, but presumably the author considers that with Freud's prestige the harm his views might do in the religious field is such as to call for yet another counterblast. The book is well written and gives on the whole a very fair account of Freud's writings on the subject. These are then criticized in full detail.

Dr. Philp expresses great admiration for Freud as a man, for his honesty and courage, but he holds that everything Freud wrote on the subject of religion was woefully mistaken. He made no contribution whatever to the psychology of religion. His main stricture on Freud's writings in this field is that Freud had a totally wrong conception of what religion really is: he confounded religious beliefs with religion itself. 'If what Freud described as religion covers all that religion is, it ought to be destroyed.' This is a strong statement. The beliefs that Freud suggested might be illusory, i.e. brought about by the process of wish-fulfilment, were: the

belief in immortality; the belief in the existence of God, with the accompanying emotions of love, awe, and fear in relation to Him; and the Christian belief that a particular possibility had been offered men of salvation from their sins and sinful conscience. There were, it is true, other aspects of religion which Freud admitted to neglecting in *The Future of an Illusion*, but he made good this omission in his later writings. This temporary omission, however, seems hardly sufficient to warrant such an anathema.

Freud's conclusion that religion is an illusion Dr. Philp counters with the assertion that Freud's illusion was science. It is an attack concerning which Freud himself had a good deal to say, in his *New Introductory Lectures* and elsewhere.

The Totem book is dealt with at length, and Dr. Philp has no difficulty in finding anthropologists to quote who have expressed their incredulity about Freud's primal horde theory. Malinowski is fully quoted, but not my refutation of his conclusions. The close of this chapter runs: 'It is a fairy story, but if we believe his (Freud's) version of the origins of religion to be a fairy story, it follows that his basis for calling religion one has gone, and there is nothing in his argument left to answer'. So that is that.

It is, however, over *Moses and Monotheism* that Dr. Philp really lets himself go. The book is, of course, so full of debatable points and of hypothetical chronology which there seems no way to determine that it lends itself readily to the criticism of Biblical scholars. To begin with there are the opposing views about Akhenaton's monotheism. One school, to which Freud adhered, is full of admiration for his courage, his vision, and the loftiness of his ethical teaching, while another school sees in him a weak creature whose wife forced him to start a political schism of one set of priests against another. For the present argument it is advantageous to favour the latter view. A list of the suggested dates for the Exodus is given, all of which are incompatible with the idea of Moses being a *direct* adherent of Akhenaton, a possibility Freud had of course himself taken into account. Freud had asserted that the rite of circumcision was not peculiar to the Jews and had probably been acquired from Egypt. The first part is obviously true, but the second is more doubtful, since it is now known that the custom obtained among other Eastern nations. As for the murder of Moses, the statement is once more made that Sellin had later withdrawn his shocking suggestion, but none of the evidence available in Sellin's subsequent writings supports the truth of this statement. Freud's book is finally dismissed in the dictum: 'Facts of history, sound anthropology, convincing psychology in relation to the racial unconscious, evidence worthy of serious consideration or even solid argument—none of these is prominent in *Moses and Monotheism*'. One can only wonder why such a feeble blunderer



as Freud was worth the contradicting. How Dr. Philp must have yearned for a more doughty opponent.

The few psycho-analytical contributions in the book are not very happy. Freud's dream of the Pope being dead when the noise of the bells disturbed his sleep, a dream the infantile source of which is easy to divine, is interpreted as Freud's sleep being disturbed by his uneasy thoughts about religion, 'but for him the Pope had died long ago—perhaps when his nurse had been caught stealing'. That Freud learnt the latter fact only at the mature age of forty-five should surely have some relevance here. Then we are told that obsessional neurotics who forego their ritual cannot be compared with religious believers who do the same, since the latter may suffer pangs of conscience whereas the former are only aware of pathological anxiety—quite a different matter.

There are a few statements in the book that need direct contradiction. There is no truth at all in the assertion that 'For many years he had planned a vast work which would apply psycho-analytical theories to the whole of the Bible; *Moses and Monotheism* was the only part of it which he was able to complete'. Freud once read this story in a newspaper and was hugely amused by the fantastic supposition. Dr. Philp speaks of Freud's 'profoundly pessimistic nature'. Actually his nature was consistently cheerful, though he recognized that his sense of realism and his scepticism were often mistaken for pessimism. Then to accuse Freud of 'believing that he knew the nature of the limits of reality' is a strange thing to say of that humble student who was possessed with a sense of boundless unknown surrounding him.

Ernest Jones.

*Tribute to Freud.* By H. D. (New York: Stratford Press, 1956. Pp. 180. \$2.50.)

The author's initials, under which she commonly wrote, belong to an American poet, Hilda Doolittle, a poet of rare delicacy and distinction. She was analysed by Freud for some months in the years 1933-4, and they formed a friendship that lasted until his death. Nine charming letters of his, hitherto unpublished, form an appendix, and another one may be found in the text.

The book, with its appropriate title, is surely the most delightful and precious appreciation of Freud's personality that is ever likely to be written. Only a fine creative artist could have written it. It is like a lovely flower, and the crude pen of a scientist hesitates to profane it by attempting to describe it. I can only say that I envy anyone who has not yet read it, and that it will live as the most enchanting ornament of all the Freudian biographical literature.

Ernest Jones.

*Psycho-Analysis Today.* By Agostino Gemelli, M.D. (New York: P. J. Kenedy and Sons, 1955. Pp. 153.)

This misleading book, an English translation from the Italian, was written by one of the most distinguished Catholic intellectuals in Italy. He is among other things a priest, and the book is written from the standpoint of strict Roman Catholic orthodoxy. I call it misleading because it gives such a distorted picture of psycho-analysis that a practising analyst, familiar with his subject, would find it hard to recognize it as his own.

The first section of the book is entitled 'Freudian psychoanalysis', the second, considerably longer, deals with Jung's psychology, and the third is a comment on various pronouncements by the Pope. In the last we are taught how dangerous and impermissible it is to allow sexual thoughts to emerge from the unconscious into consciousness; they should be allowed to remain in their previous state, the therapist hoping for the best.

It is not worth while to comment on the numerous misstatements in the book. Even the simplest historical facts are wrongly stated. Thus Breuer is said to have accompanied Freud to Charcot's Clinic, where Janet was laying the foundations of what was later psycho-analysis! There is an instructive slip of the pen whereby we are told that 'Freud maintained that the child and the pre-adolescent boy are not without asexual manifestations' (p. 24).

Ernest Jones.

*The Dilemma of Being Modern.* By J. P. Hodin. (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1956. Pp. 271. 25s.)

The dilemma in question is the sickness of the world produced by the 'crisis caused by science'. The author, a distinguished art critic, expounds this theme from many points of view, but it is one that does not directly concern us here. But there is a beautifully written chapter, twenty-six pages long, entitled 'The Cultural Psychology of Sigmund Freud'. The theme is the same as that of Thomas Mann's famous essay written on the occasion of Freud's eightieth birthday, but this essay surpasses Mann's in its clarity and depth of understanding.

The author is principally concerned with the outlook on life and the nature of civilization which Freud so powerfully influenced, and I know of no better exposition of this fascinating theme. Many passages of the greatest interest could be quoted, but I will content myself here with one. Speaking of *The Future of an Illusion*, which Dr. Hodin calls 'a work comparable to Plato's *Dialogues* not solely by virtue of its formal quality', he writes: 'The single notes ring out as in a well co-ordinated orchestra: question and answer, theme and response in a symphonic whole. There grows up before us a new man who, freed from the shapes of



his own world of imagination, dares to take the step out of bloody chaos into a better future. Freud has not only freed his generation from a hypocritical sexual code, he has revealed to modern man the deep meaning in the old legend of Achilles, who was only vulnerable at the spot where his mother held him when she dipped him into the Styx. Freud is a mentor to those just taking the step from youth to manhood.'

Ernest Jones.

*Der Traum und seine Be-Deutung.* By Werner Kemper. (Hamburg: Rowohlt Taschenbuch, 1955. Pp. 220.)

Werner Kemper's *Der Traum und seine Be-Deutung* has appeared in Rowohlt's Deutsche Enzyklopädie, a series of pocket-books, which attempts to present scientific knowledge of today to the lay public. (L. S. Kubie's book *Psychoanalysis Without Secret* has appeared in the same series.)

Kemper gives a short introduction, summarizing attitudes towards the dream and its evaluation up to the time of the appearance of Freud's *Interpretation of Dreams* (1900) and describing the scientific climate at the turn of the century, Freud's scientific background, and how his hypothesis of the unconscious led to his first concepts of the dream.

The main part of the book consists of five chapters: Source of the Dream, Dreamwork, Function of the Dream, Content of the Dream (inner and outer reality), and the (so-called) Dream-Interpretation.

The technique of dream-interpretation is convincingly demonstrated throughout. The presentation of well-chosen dream material from Kemper's own work shows the skill of the analyst and the experienced hand of a teacher and writer. The reader is very often put into the position of almost foreseeing the next step and so experiencing to some extent the co-operation which develops between analyst and analysand, and how inner and out perception widens.

The author decides against a dogmatic presentation of psycho-analytic theory. He hopes to clarify and prepare the way for future agreement by comparing concepts of different schools of thought. This wish may have grown through many years of enforced co-operation, when the Institute in Berlin was a place of some tolerance in spite of Nazi rule; but one is surprised that a task of such magnitude should be attempted in a book written for the lay public.

Many conceptual details are discussed lucidly, but Kemper's eclectic approach leads the discerning reader—if not Kemper himself—into contradictions. To illustrate the point: On pages 116–17 Kemper says that Jung, Maeder and Schultz-Hencke's concept of the compensatory function of

the dream is akin to his own, which he formulates as follows (my translation): 'In the dream we try to regain our lost inner freedom by perceiving once more all the possibilities the interplaying forces of our life presented us with, but we try to avoid action to which we are compelled.' This view has much in common with that of Sully, cited by Freud (*C. W.*, IV, p. 60): 'When asleep we go back to the old ways of looking at things and of feeling about them, to impulses and activities which long ago dominated us'. Freud accepts this observation like many others, but continues (*C. P.*, V, p. 592): 'We have thus been able to find a place in our structure for the most various and contradictory findings of earlier writers, thanks to the novelty of our theory of dreams, which combines them, as it were, into a higher unity'.

Even if Freud's structural concept had received more emphasis, some of the contradictions in Kemper's book would not resolve themselves. On pages 194–5 Kemper argues Freud's point against Binswanger, Heidegger, Boss, etc., who wish to stress the manifest dream, which, in their opinion, Freud deprived of significance in favour of the latent dream-thought; he refers to Freud's reminder (*C. W.*, V, p. 506 note), that not the latent dream-thought, but the dream-work is the essence of the dream. Yet on page 119 Kemper accepts Maeder's view on the 'prospective purpose' of the dream, ignoring that in the very same footnote Freud argues against the 'notorious prospective purpose'. In a second footnote (*C. W.*, V, p. 579) Freud mentions Maeder and shows once more that thoughts during sleep are day residues in the pre-conscious of which unconscious wishes make use, but that the only function of the dream is the dream-work. Kemper's objection to Freud's term 'dream-thought' may have its root here.

Altogether one would have liked to see Freud's classical formulations quoted more fully, so that the reader might find the all-important source of our present-day knowledge.

The book manages to hold the interest of the reader over difficult passages. An extensive Bibliography is attached, arranged according to the language of the original.

For the German-speaking reader of this review it should be emphasized that the unusual spelling of 'Be-Deutung' is the author's, not the reviewer's choice.

Oscar A. Friedmann.

*Essays on the Sociology of Culture.* By Karl Mannheim. Edited by Ernest Manheim in co-operation with P. Kecskemeti. (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1956. Pp. ix + 253. 28s.)

This book consists of three essays written by Karl Mannheim in 1933, before he was forced by the Nazis to leave Germany. The first paper, 'Towards a Sociology of the Mind', consists of a



closely reasoned approach to the study of the Sociology of Culture. In the second two essays Mannheim uses the tools which he has forged so carefully in the first essay, and applies them to the task of elucidating the two main theses of which the remainder of the book consists, namely the historical rôles of the intelligentsia and the problem of democratization.

In the first essay Hegelian Philosophy is shorn of its unrealistic overtones, and is used to further the author's penetration into the study of mental processes and their significance in their own indigenous social context. This paper is difficult to comprehend, and in some ways it is better to read it both before and after reading the second and third essays. In this way its essential usefulness as a conceptual framework can be more fully appreciated.

In the second essay, 'The Problem of the Intelligentsia', the author begins by referring to the early outcropping of intelligentsia in certain cultural milieux. Both the frequency of such occurrences and the numbers involved have vastly increased in the past few centuries. Mannheim goes on to state that in his opinion a single human being becomes sociologically significant only through multiple involvement with various social groupings. The process of individuation takes place through the impact of conflicting social groups upon the person, the metamorphosis which thus ensues being analogous to that undergone by a metal when it is being tempered. Mannheim emphasizes the importance of the coffee house as a training ground for a somewhat different type of intelligentsia in the seventeenth century in Europe, but more especially in England, where the coffee house developed into an important social institution. In it the premium was on the spoken word, and thus a much greater flexibility and nimbleness of mind was engendered than was possible for those intellectual groups whose source of inspiration was confined to the written word. At one and the same time the members of an intelligentsia must be the spontaneous products of their own contemporary culture and also to some extent displaced persons from that culture. They differ from their fellows by their preoccupation with the study of themselves and other people and, being different, they epitomize the present age. Mannheim states that our epoch is one of growing self-awareness, and that it is not any fundamentally new faith which distinguishes it from other ages, but rather an increased consciousness and preoccupation with the study of ourselves. There has been a tendency, of course, for a broadening of the group of intelligentsia with the process of democratization, and this process itself has been aided by the heightened awareness on the part of the intelligentsia both of themselves and of the wider social environment.

The third essay, entitled 'The Democratization of Culture', deals very lucidly with the development of democracy. This process reduces the

vertical distance between various social groups and also broadens the basis of participation in government. There follows a fruitful welding of the practical and the theoretical aspects of living. The fact that equality of opportunity for the development of the self in its social context in a democracy should not be synonymous with the production of a featureless plateau of mediocrity is the main thesis of this essay.

In a final section the author makes the point that democracy is an outstandingly worthy objective, and that it can be attained only by accepting insecurity, adventure, and risk. On one side is the danger of chaos, and on the other the risk of a drab levelling-down process. The way ahead, however, is promising. By the indefatigable pursuit of Truth, the individual achieves a much more differentiated development of himself as an active participant in a broadly based and tolerant cultural environment.

A. Hyatt Williams.

*Democracy and Dictatorship.* By Zevedei Barbu. (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul; New York: Grove Press, 1956. Pp. vii + 275. 28s.)

A good deal of light is thrown by this book upon the psychology of Democracy and Dictatorship. The developmental or historical approach gives a convincing explanation of the structure of contemporary cultures in terms of human personality and character. Neither the predominant character of the people produces the culture nor the culture the main character type of the people, but the end-result is an interaction between the two.

The development of democracy in Western Europe is compared with and related to that first flowering of democracy in Ancient Greece. A comparison and contrast is made between the way in which democracy has been achieved in Britain and in France. The characteristics of the prevailing personality-type in a Democracy are explained as being the products of a cultural dualism. This dualism consists of a religious factor leading to the concept of the Ideal or Transcendental and a secular factor leading to an understanding of Immanence and Empiricism.

The outcome of freedom to develop under conditions of relative security has been a more integrated and differentiated personality characterized by flexibility, objectivity, and tolerance. Socially there is diversity with generally good reality sense, these qualities being the outcome of an easy balance between unconscious and conscious forces. *Pari passu* with this develops an internal controlling mechanism which limits the extent of personal freedom (in other words a tolerant but stable superego). With this clear differentiation of the boundaries of the individual, there is achieved a capacity for Group participation, but, when occasion demands it, also an ability to be relatively independent. The democratic character, therefore,



occurs where there is security to develop, whereas the totalitarian character, being the product of insecurity, is withered by regression.

Fascism develops when people have lost faith in a Transcendental Order and when faith in the Immanent Order is weak or absent. There is a return to a rather muddle-headed mysticism which helps the cohesiveness of such a regressive group, which projects its hatred and acts aggressively both towards non-members of the Group and towards other Groups. Ambivalence is intense, and usually there is a strict hierarchical 'pecking-order' with excessive submissiveness to superiors and ruthless domination of inferiors. The personality of Hitler is described in its paranoid aggressivity as the apotheosis of the Nazi-Fascist character.

Communism is said to arise in those periods and in those people in whom faith in a Transcendental Order of life has completely collapsed. There is a compelling need for order in life, order which is found in rigid ideological and social systems (it is not stated categorically, but it is implied that Communism arises only if the individuals of a group have not developed sufficient independence or integrity to be able to tolerate the loss of a transcendental belief without great trauma and chaos within themselves). Communist societies are characterized by suspiciousness, aggressiveness, compulsive activities, and completely exaggerated needs for identification with the Group. The need for belongingness is the operative dynamic. An attempt is made to explain Communism in terms of the personalities of Marx and Lenin, but with limited success. Of great importance, however, is the statement that a man is a Communist or Fascist long before he joins either of these parties.

This work deals in a most capable and scholarly manner with a subject which is at once difficult and important.

A. Hyatt Williams.

*They Stand Apart.* Edited by J. Tudor Rees and Harley V. Usill. (London: Heinemann, 1955. Pp. xii + 220. 21s.)

This book is a symposium about homosexuality, by workers in different fields, each of whom writes from his own particular standpoint. These different views are the outcome of the different ways in which the problem of homosexuality impinges upon workers trained according to those different disciplines. Sincerity of approach, and some perplexity, too, run through all the essays, which consider homosexuality in its relationship to the law, society, and to Christian morality, in that order.

Then follows a discourse upon the medical aspects of the problem, followed by an interesting section outlining the law as it relates to homosexuality in certain other Western European countries. This shows that there has been a gradual development of greater tolerance towards homosexuality between consenting adults, provided that such relationships do not outrage public decency. The seduction of young boys, however, is a much more knotty problem, and any easing of the stringency of the law has been curtailed because of anxiety lest the victim should be left dangerously unprotected. Medically the problem is complex, and the question arises as to whether or not all homosexuals are ill. Undoubtedly there are illnesses in which homosexuality may erupt as a symptom, and these illnesses have to be treated in their own right apart from the homosexuality. The problem in those facultative homosexuals who have the capacity to achieve heterosexual relationships is different from that in those who have not had even a flutter of heterosexuality. The rôles of uncovering the determinants of homosexuality and of supporting and strengthening conscious control over it are considered, but no fixed conclusion has been reached, nor could it have been in the present state of our knowledge. The section ends with an apposite quotation from the *Medical Press*: 'Those who lay down the law as regards sex seem to take it for granted that we know, in fact, what is normal and healthy, whereas we know only what is customary . . . we plead, therefore, for more research and for the recognition of the fact that the invert is not a villain to be punished but a patient to be studied—to our own ultimate advantage.' Despite such a very worthy statement, psychopathology in this book is not accorded due emphasis. It is somewhat ignored as the means whereby we may be able to understand this problem more thoroughly and eventually become capable of treating it more effectively. There is no mention of the relatively good prognosis which follows the uncovering of the determinant traumata in a certain class of homosexuals—namely those who repeatedly seduce young boys because they are themselves unconsciously impelled to repeat actively upon someone, in the image of themselves, that which they felt they had suffered passively at an equivalent age.

A symposium such as this cannot say everything, and I think it will achieve the worthy intention of the contributors by stimulating a large number of intelligent lay persons to think about the problems of homosexuality rather than to feel violently about them without thinking constructively at all.

A. Hyatt Williams.



## ABSTRACTS

### Contents:

*The Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 25, 1956, Nos. 1, 2, 3.

*Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association*, 4, 1956, Nos. 1, 2.

### THE PSYCHOANALYTIC QUARTERLY 25, 1956, No. I

Géza Róheim. 'The Individual, the Group and Mankind.'

Róheim maintains that the pattern of a culture correlates more with what might be expected of it from the rearing experiences to which its children are subjected than with the needs of reality. He cites numerous examples, for instance the hoarding of food among the Melanesians of Normanby Island, where food supplies of all sorts are abundant but the children are subjected to repetitive withdrawal of the nipple during suckling. He concludes that the id and the superego, not the ego, play the predominant rôle in culture formation. If this is true then culture is the result of the prolonged importance of infantile characteristics in man, and it is not, as the sociologists maintain, that man's prolonged infancy is necessary to fit him to his culture. In fact the prolonged infancy of man is biological in origin, an example of that slowing down of the rate of development which is a universal principle of evolution.

Gustav Bychowski. 'The Ego and the Introjects.'

This is a condensation of three papers delivered to the American Psychoanalytic Association. The first deals with 'The Origins and Precursors of Splitting'. In the conflict of oral dependency and the destructive rage which arises when the object does not comply, the result is often withdrawal of erotic energy and decathexis of the object. This is achieved by neutralizing the libido with the aggression which has not been permitted to achieve its aim. The aggressive energy further strengthens the counter-cathexis and isolation of the introjected object. At the same time some of the libido cathects substitute objects, which are thereby idealized, or rendered omnipotent, and which continue to be reached out for. This is the primary basis of cleavage, and it opens the possibility of further repetitions of the same mechanism. When the process is sufficiently advanced the split-off

primary identifications may seem to be non-existent both to the ego and to the observer. That such splitting is not always maintained, and that the introjects are readily projected, is easily understandable, since they also tend to retain some of their original instinctual charge, and there is therefore always the potentiality of restoring the original experiences and discharging some of the original cathexes. It is also understandable that such a transformation of relations within the ego and superego into relations between the ego and external objects has as its counterpart both libidinal and destructive acting out.

The second and third papers are concerned with the vicissitudes of such introjects, and their effect on the mental economy in 'The Construction of Male Homosexuality' and 'Advanced Stages of Splitting in Schizophrenia'.

Edward M. Litin, Mary E. Giffin, and Adelaide M. Johnson. 'Parental Influence in Unusual Sexual Behaviour in Children.'

This paper is along the lines of previous studies by Adelaide Johnson and her co-workers. She gives numerous examples of the influence in the development of unusual sexual symptoms and perversions of unconscious seduction and encouragement by the parents. Important aspects of her technique of combined therapy of parents and child are the separation of the child from the parents at the beginning of treatment if necessary, the refusal by the analyst to repeat the permissive attitude of the parents, and a long analysis for the significant parent which, by relieving the child of the seductive pressure, tends to shorten the child's treatment.

Otto E. Sperling. 'Psychodynamics of Group Perversions.'

Perversions can be induced in a group where a leader, usually with a spontaneous perversion, takes over the rôle of the superego. The possibility of the induction of a parasitic perverse superego depends on an original latent superego split in the members of the group, and there is therefore a continuum between induced and genuine perversions. In the spontaneous perversions superego influences are also of great importance. These emanate from the parents who unconsciously hold up the ideal of the perverse gratifications. The acceptance of this ideal is also favoured by the superego as a counter-phobic defence against castration fear. The therapy of induced perversions carries the better prognosis.



Geraldine Pederson-Krag. 'The Use of Metaphor in Analytic Thinking.'

The author analyses some of the types of metaphor used in analytic thinking. Many of them have the advantage of evoking feelings to clarify a subject which deals with feelings. However, when we try to delineate the psyche realistically we find ourselves aligned with the physicists and using their methods of thought as an illustrative model. This contrast draws attention to both the advantages and the limitations of the use of analogy in psychoanalytic thinking.

Henry I. Schneer. 'Psychodynamics of Tinnitus.'

It is suggested from the brief therapy of two cases that the primal scene may be associated with later auditory symptoms which bind anxiety, and substitute sounds which nevertheless retain their original significance. The first patient had a conscious recollection from early adolescence of an experience of hearing sounds which he attributed to parental coitus. For the second patient, the symptom was one of many conversion reactions, and may well have been partially induced by suggestion. (Author's Summary.)

Robert Seidenberg. 'The Dream of Exalted Parentage.'

The dream of having been born of noble or otherwise more important parentage connoted in one clinical instance not only the desire for the happier days when the parents were thought of as exalted human beings, as Freud suggested, but also served an integrative function of the ego in dealing with shame and helplessness from an unresolved oral fixation. After the point has been reached where these cravings can no longer be denied, they are rationalized by a fantasy of exalted birth which also sooner or later provides unlimited gratification. (Author's Summary.)

Alfred J. Siegman. 'The Psychological Economy of Déjà Raconté.'

With the aid of *déjà raconté* the ego of one patient could allow access to consciousness of material which had previously been overwhelming and therefore repressed. The trick of perceptual distortion aimed at reassuring him that the situation referred to had previously been mastered successfully. It is probable that *déjà raconté* is only evoked by material which is threatening to the ego. This theory would bring the explanation of *déjà raconté* into basic accord with Oberndorf's formulation of *déjà vu* as a reassurance to the subject that he is not entering a new field unconsciously associated with failure.

John Klauber.

# THE PSYCHOANALYTIC QUARTERLY 25, 1956, No. 2

Gregory Zilboorg. 'Freud's One Hundredth Anniversary.'

Nancy Procter-Gregg. 'Schopenhauer and Freud.'

Sigmund Freud. 'Four Unpublished Letters.'

This number is in part commemorative of Freud's centenary. Zilboorg's essay on the impossibility of evaluating Freud historically in our time, Miss Procter-Gregg's imaginary conversation between the shades of Freud and Schopenhauer in which they compare their views, and the four unpublished letters of Freud himself are not really suitable for scientific summary; they are for reading in the original.

Suzanne Reichard. 'A Re-Examination of "Studies in Hysteria".'

The five patients of the *Studies* do not form a homogeneous nosological group. The conversion symptoms of Anna O. and Emmy von N. dealt with hostile impulses and were pregenital in nature. There was little evidence of genitality and these patients were in fact schizophrenics. The symptoms of the other three expressed oedipal wishes towards the father. There were true hysterics and the prognosis differed accordingly.

Hysteria should not be used as a diagnostic term for patients with conversions who have regressed from the genital level. However, it is impracticable to define an illness in terms of a conflict in the unconscious because of the time necessary to elicit the evidence for the diagnosis. It is therefore suggested that such patients should be described in terms of the nature of their symptoms and the degree and type of ego-defect.

Franz Alexander. 'Two Forms of Regression and their Therapeutic Implications.'

Freud described two types of regression, one to a more successful type of adaptation in order to avoid a later conflict, the other to a traumatic situation, in order to achieve belated mastery. Though the problems involved are not new Alexander believes that the therapeutic implications of the two types have not been systematically presented.

Both are expressed in the transference. In practice they are usually mixed, but the preponderance of either must be assessed by comparing the transference manifestations with the life-history. The interpretations should express this evaluation by the analyst, since the patient will tend to dwell on the type of material for which the analyst shows interest. Thus if an evasive regression from the Oedipus complex is interpreted with the emphasis on the attempted solution of pregenital problems the patient will continue to dwell on these prob-



lems, exploiting them as a resistance. On the other hand a return to unsettled conflicts in order to master them runs parallel with the analyst's efforts, and here the analysis of the earlier problems will contribute to the solution of the later ones.

The author concludes that chronological depth is not necessarily pathogenic depth, and that it is fallacious to find one general formula valid for all cases.

Robert Fleiss. 'The Déjà Raconté. A Transference Delusion Concerning the Castration Complex.'

While the psychological content of *déjà raconté* and *déjà vu* are comparable their form is not. *Déjà vu*, like other states of alienation, is a sensation which does not disturb the cognitive functions. *Déjà raconté* on the other hand does, and must therefore be classed as a delusion. Fliess quotes several cases which seem to show that the specific anxieties which *déjà raconté* seeks to master concern the fear of incontinence following castration as a punishment for infantile masturbation. They are dealt with by an acute regression to the oral state in which the patient compensates himself by his possession, and incorporation, of the breast. The breast is projected upon the analyst in the form of a mouth, and this is why the symptom concerns two mouths (the patient's and the analyst's) and why the refusal of the analyst to join in the *folie à deux* so markedly breaks the patient's bond with him. *Déjà raconté*, as a 'second-time' experience, also permits active mastery of the trauma originally suffered passively.

Leon J. Saul, Thoburn R. Snyder and Edith Sheppard. 'On Earliest Memories.'

Whether true or fabricated, earliest memories must be regarded as being shaped by the same forces in the personality as shape dreams. They may be compared with day-residues, but, being less influenced by the reactions to daily life, they reveal the nuclear emotional constellations even more clearly. Every detail is significant. They are indispensable in the diagnostic interview.

Martin H. Stein. 'The Marriage Bond.'

Because of its ceremonial and legal character, the marriage bond is readily represented in special instances by fantasies of anatomical attachment. These primitive fantasies serve as defences against fear of separation and annihilation. It is not, however, necessarily claimed that such fantasies constitute the historical source of the social institution of marriage.

One common fantasy is 'my wife is my phallus', which the author demonstrates clinically in a group of men who maintained sado-masochistic marriages with surprising tenacity, and among whom the fantasy represented a modification of their original narcissism and a partial approach to object rela-

tions. Their fantasy is highly over-determined, drawing elements from all libidinal phases. The predominantly oral factors are presented, but a more complete report would include many anal, urethral, and phallic determinants. None the less the oedipal phase is of crucial importance. Thorough understanding of such fantasies is a prerequisite for the analytic solution of neurotic problems in married people.

John Klauber.

### THE PSYCHOANALYTIC QUARTERLY 25, 1956, No. 3

Catherine L. Bacon. 'The Rôle of Aggression in the Asthmatic Attack.'

One or both parents of asthmatics is usually a dominating person who makes the child feel guilty for 'defiant' excretory acts. Excretory fantasies then come to colour the whole later development of infantile sexuality, including the wish to grow up. These fantasies stimulate the excretory mucous membranes, and this in turn sensitizes the respiratory mucous membrane, just as physical stimulation of the excretory membranes stimulates respiration. The nascent excretory aggression arouses fears of excretory retaliation, but now upon the respiratory apparatus, which behaves as though it were really being assaulted with noxious substances.

Peter Hobart Knapp. 'Sensory Impressions in Dreams.'

This paper is partly statistical, partly interpretative. In general dreams are 'colourless, soundless, motionless, tasteless'; but when sensations do appear they appear in that order of frequency. The author includes an appendix on his method of scoring and assessment. These frequencies are consistent with the concept of a hierarchical structure in the organization of sensory experience, with a corresponding degree of availability in the sensory material. The reason for the absence of sensation in dreams is that sensation is loaded with affect and therefore promotes wakefulness. Sensation occurs in a dream as the harbinger of affect.

Ricardo H. Bisi. 'Dermatosis in a Case of Post-Partum Psychosis.'

A woman developed a severe facial acne and a severe psychotic regression after each of two pregnancies. During this time she injured her face by squeezing the pustules. Her symptoms are shown to have been motivated on all libidinal levels, with a turning against the self of the destructive impulses she felt against her mother and children. The receptive and excretory functions of the skin render it suitable for the expression of fantasies concerning the introjection and expulsion of objects, and their



operation is worked out in some detail with regard to these symptoms.

Edward Hitschmann. 'Freud Correspondence.'

Hitschmann's letter to Freud intended to be read on his sixtieth birthday, and Freud's characteristic reply.

Jule Eisenbud. 'Time and the Oedipus.'

This is another of the author's discussions of the use of the hypothesis of 'precognition' in psychoanalysis. As before (*Psychoanal. Quart.*, 1954) he treats later events resembling those in the manifest content of dreams as if they were day-residues, claiming added illumination of the patients' oedipal problems. The most neglected feature of the unresolved Oedipus complex is the patients' hopelessness about time, that is, about the distance in time which separates the child from the loved parent. The leaps across time which the author detects are motivated by the intense wish to catch up in time with the parents.

Leopold Bellak with M. Brewster Smith. 'An Experimental Exploration of the Psychoanalytic Process.'

Two patients' sessions were recorded for several months. Two analysts were asked to judge the material and two to predict future behaviour, according to a prescribed record-form. The results were then assessed statistically. A high degree of agreement was found among all the participants concerning the nature of the case. The ability to agree on the nature of short-range changes was not unequivocally demonstrated. None the less, in spite of the differences in conceptualization and focus of interest between the analysts, the overall agreement was impressive. The experimental procedure is discussed in detail, with its usefulness for the study and validation of specific hypotheses in psycho-analysis.

Peter A. Martin. 'Note on Inhibition of Scientific Productivity.'

The reasons advanced in one psycho-analytic society for the small number of papers read boiled down to the fear of criticism. This fear will reduce scientific productivity if it is experienced as a threat to castration. If an analyst is scientifically productive, on the other hand, this may be the sign that he is further resolving his castration anxiety.

John Klauber.

# JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN PSYCHO-ANALYTIC ASSOCIATION

4, 1956, No. 1

Charles Fisher. 'Dreams, Images, and Perceptions: A Study of Unconscious-Preconscious Relationships.'

In this paper Fisher describes his repetition of the tachistoscopic experiments of Allers and Teler (1924) with certain modifications of his own. Pictures were exposed to subjects for a period of ten milliseconds. In some of the experiments the subjects were presented with a word association test a few minutes later and in further experiments the test was not employed until some 72 hours after the exposure of the pictures. The subjects were asked to report and draw any images which might appear in their minds during the association test. Following the word association test the stimulus picture was gradually re-exposed at increasing time intervals until it was clearly perceived. The subjects of the experiments were male and female patients from the Department of Psychiatry at the Mount Sinai Hospital.

Five separate groups of experiments were conducted: the first to illustrate the appearance of preconscious percepts in image formation 72 hours after registration; the second to illustrate the process of condensation in image formation; the third to demonstrate how size and perspective relationships related to preconscious percepts are ignored in image formation; the fourth to illustrate the compulsive emergence of preconscious percepts during image formation; the fifth, to show the duplication or the multiplication of preconsciously perceived percepts in image formation.

The results confirm the findings of Allers and Teler that the memory images of preconsciously perceived parts of tachistoscopically exposed pictures subsequently appear in conscious images as can be observed during the word association test. Of particular interest was the observation of various degrees of compulsiveness which different subjects developed in making their drawings. The subject may intend to draw a horse's head in profile but find that the pencil draws a back view of the horse's head. Again the finding that the memory image of a preconscious percept can appear in a dream as long as 5-6 days after the original tachistoscopic exposure suggests that Freud's theory that a day residue cannot be older than 24 hours is possibly incorrect.

On the basis of these experiments Fisher suggests that the process of dream distortion commences in close temporal relationship to the laying down of the memory trace of the preconscious percept associated with the day residue experience. The unconscious wish and the primary process may invade and mould aspects of conscious imagery. Freud's belief that the division between the systems unconscious and preconscious was by no means a rigid one finds experimental support in Fisher's work.

Alexander Grinstein. 'The Dramatic Device: A Play within a Play.'

The dream within a dream is compared to the play within a play as it occurs in *Hamlet*, in *A Mid-*



*summer Night's Dream*, and in one of Shaw's plays. The dream within a dream generally deals with a reality event in the life of the dreamer which the dreamer wishes had never happened. The play within the play also deals with reality events as well as with psychic reality, including the conflicts and problems of the hero or whoever in the play represents an important facet of his personality. These conflicts which are distasteful to the ego are those with which the hero wishes he did not have to struggle. Like the dreamer he wishes they were not really so.

Earl A. Loomis. 'The Concurrent Presentation of a Rare Detail in the Dreams of Two Patients.'

On the one day two patients reported dreams of a goat and a goat-like creature with prominent scrotum and pendulous testes respectively. While thinking over the material the author realized that on the previous day he had heard from another patient a story to do with the castration of pigs. This had led to further associations which convinced him that the goat-scrotum theme had been present in his own unconscious. The problem was how the theme was conveyed to the patients. It suddenly occurred to him that both patients had attended a football game in which the Navy was a contender and that he had told the patients some days previously that he would not be returning to the Navy. A goat was the Navy team's mascot. The author was the goat.

Erik Homburger Erikson. 'The Problem of Ego Identity.'

This paper by Erikson is a comprehensive account of his concept of ego identity. It is very difficult to condense this long paper into a relatively short abstract without losing much of what the author wishes to convey. While this abstract can indicate some of the main headings a full appreciation of the article can only be gained by reading it in full. To obtain a total picture of ego identity it must be approached from a number of different angles. Erikson names three approaches—biographic, pathographic, and theoretical.

George Bernard Shaw is the subject chosen to illustrate the biographic method. The raw material which provides the genetic aspects comprises the impressions from daily life, observations of personality development in young children and observations on mildly disturbed young people. This material is used to demonstrate something of the genetics of identity. Erikson outlines a psychosocial programme of development which begins with the mechanisms of introjection and projection and leads to the later identifications of childhood. The end of adolescence is the time of an overt identity crisis. Identity formation neither begins nor ends with adolescence, but is a lifelong development. The individual has to find a means of inte-

grating the psychosexual with the psychosocial aspects on any given level of development. Crises occur when changes in the former demand readjustments to maintain integration with the latter. Identity appears as only one concept within a wider conception of the human life cycle which envisages childhood as a gradual unfolding of the personality through phase-specific psychosocial crises. A diagram illustrates the various stages of psychosocial development.

The pathographic aspect or clinical picture of identity diffusion is provided by a description of a syndrome to be observed in disturbed young people. The time of breakdown, the problem of intimacy *vis-à-vis* isolation, diffusion of time perspective, diffusion of industry, choice of negative identity, specific factors in family and childhood, are some of the subjects discussed in detail in this section of the paper. In the concluding chapter entitled 'Ego and Environment' identity formation is considered to have both a self aspect and an ego aspect. It is a part of the ego in the sense that it represents the ego's synthesizing function in meeting one of its frontiers, namely the actual social structure of the environment and the image of reality as transmitted to the child during successive childhood crises. Until the matter of ego versus self is sufficiently defined to permit a terminological decision Erikson has decided to use the term identity to suggest a social function of the ego, which results, in adolescence, in a relative psychological equilibrium essential to the tasks of young adulthood. A final subject of discussion is the relationship between identity and ideologies.

Thomas Freeman.

## JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN PSYCHO-ANALYTIC ASSOCIATION

4, 1956, No. 2

Thomas S. Szasz. 'On the Experiences of the Analyst in the Psycho-Analytic Situation: A Contribution to the Theory of Psycho-Analytic Treatment.'

The aim of this paper is to ascertain the nature of the analyst's experiences in the treatment situation. Emphasis is not laid upon the problem of undesirable counter-transference, but upon revealing the irreducible and unavoidable satisfactions which constitute the 'realistic' counterpart in the analyst of the experiences of the analysand. Szasz notes that while the literature abounds in references to those aspects of the analyst's behaviour which might impede the analytical work there are few which are relevant to the theme of this paper. He singles out papers by Sharpe (1930), (1947), Low (1935) and by A. and M. Balint (1939) which make a point of underlining the gratifications which the analyst derives from his work which are neither 'altruistic' nor based on counter-transference.



Szasz proceeds to detail the psychological satisfactions which the analyst obtains, beginning with those mentioned by Sharpe (1947). To these four which are not specific to psycho-analysis he adds a further four. First, the pleasure derived from doing useful work. Second, the pleasure derived from being needed. Third, the pleasure from the mastery of conflicts in human relationships through verbalization and mutual understanding. This is unique to psycho-analytic therapy. Fourth, pleasure derived from contact with the patient as a protection from loneliness. When these eight factors are considered as an entity many differences between analysis and other situations (such as that between parent and child and doctor and patient) become immediately apparent.

Considerable resistance exists against recognizing the satisfactions which the analyst obtains from his work. The source of this resistance is considered to be due to the universal phantasy of the 'ideal' adult who gives but does not have any needs in his own right. The 'psycho-economic' implications of this theory are described at length. The final section of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the principal reasons for the persistence of such 'psycho-economic' derivatives.

Lucia E. Tower. 'Counter-Transference.'

The phenomena described under the term counter-transference have received a number of varying interpretations. As a rule comments have been of a forbidding type, the implication being that the analyst is consciously able to control his own unconscious. The author suggests that the term counter-transference should be used only for those phenomena which are transferences of the analyst to the patient. These are inevitable and often desirable. Such unconscious interactions between analyst and patient are frequently of vital significance for the outcome of the analysis. Thinking on the subject of counter-transference has become irrational. On the one hand candidates for training are selected on account of their potential libidinal resources while on the other hand every detectable libidinal investment made by the analyst in the patient is cause for criticism. Erotic phantasy and erotic counter-transference are ubiquitous and presumably normal.

Tower advances the theory that in every intensive analysis there develops a counter-transference structure, perhaps even a 'neurosis' which is an inevitable counterpart of the transference neurosis. Such counter-transference structures play an important rôle in treatment. Their understanding by the analyst may be as important to the working through of the transference neurosis as is the intellectual understanding of counter-transference structures. The development of counter-transference structures in the analyst will occur gradually and insidiously over a long period of time. Even under ideal circumstances there are bound to be certain

drifts from the set course instituted by the analyst and changes in his understanding of the case. These are caused by unconscious responses in the analyst to hidden pressures and motivations from the patient and constitute the essence of the counter-transference structure.

The clinical material selected to illustrate the views described above comprises four patients who were in analysis for long periods.

Rene A. Spitz. 'Counter-Transference: Comments on its Varying Rôle in the Analytic Situation.'

Spitz considers it worthwhile to inquire whether the 'counter-transference neurosis' (such a concept being proposed by several authors) might not have its uses in treatment in the same way as the transference neurosis is utilized in analysis. On consideration Spitz feels that the effect upon the patient of the release of counter-transference affects would be undesirable. Under optimum conditions the analyst should achieve a counter-transference sufficiently sublimated to allow him brief periods of identification with the patient.

The psycho-analytic setting places the patient in an anaclitic situation. Spitz suggests that that rôle of the analyst be termed diatrophic, i.e. supporting. The diatrophic attitude is a facsimile of the identifications which the young child forms with the parental figures. While the reality aspects of the anaclitic relationship gradually recede and disappear during development the diatrophic attitude, beginning with an identification phantasy leads to a progressively closer contact with reality. In the analytic situation both anaclitic and diatrophic attitudes have to operate on the phantasy level: neither should be translated into action. The analyst not only has to face the danger of acting out the diatrophic attitude, but there is the temptation to succumb to the unconscious wish for an anaclitic relationship with the patient.

Much of the analyst's insight results from temporary ego-controlled identifications with the patient. If such ego-controlled regression is replaced by acting out, then the analyst loses his capacity for awareness of the derivatives of his own unconscious and cannot use them in therapy.

Jan Frank. 'Indications and Contraindications for the Application of the "Standard Technique".'

This paper reveals that a discussion of technical problems is inseparable from the consideration of certain aspects of ego psychology. The standard technique is hardly likely to help those patients whose personality is characterized by an essentially shallow ego organization—Frank calls them 'façade' personalities. For them the standard technique is an intolerable addition to their difficulties and proves valueless. Several case histories



are presented to show the problems involved in treatment and what can be achieved.

Allen Wheelis. 'Will and Psycho-Analysis.'

The gist of this paper is a re-examination of the concept of will in the light of psycho-analytic theory and practice. Current psycho-analytic theory underrates the rôle of will in bringing about therapeutic change. While the development of insight is an essential step along the road to mental health, alone it can achieve nothing. Will is necessary to translate insight into action. The author believes it wrong to assume that the unaided efforts of the psychoneurotic patient are always and necessarily ineffective. Much of psycho-analytic opposition to the concept of will derives not from ideas of the impotence of will but from its appearance as resistance. It must not be overlooked that the acquisition of insight may act as an obstacle to will and action.

A true appreciation of the rôle of will does not imply that the analyst should direct his attention towards anything other than the achievement of the maximum of understanding of his patient and the transmission of this understanding by interpretation. The paper ends by listing a number of positive implications once the value and rôle of will in treatment is recognized. There is a plea for discrimination on the part of the analyst when he is confronted with acts of will; not all actions should be criticized as 'acting out'. While some acts of

will must be described as resistance others can be adaptive and problem-solving.

R. Ekstein. 'A Clinical Note on the Therapeutic Use of a Quasi-Religious Experience.'

This is a case report on a 13-year-old girl diagnosed as a borderline schizophrenic. During much of the treatment the patient's mind was taken up with religious ideas and experiences. It transpired that this phenomenon was a defence against the developing transference. These transference manifestations were not interpreted directly, the therapist preferring to make his communications within the context which the child offered, whether this was a religious parable, medieval phantasy, or a frankly delusional experience. The patient responded to this approach and did not feel threatened by the transference. Much later in treatment was this need of the patient's for distance from the therapist brought to her attention.

K. R. Eissler. 'Some Comments on Psycho-Analysis and Dynamic Psychiatry.'

A brief communication whose purpose is to show that 'dynamic psychiatry' is not a psychology parallel or equivalent to psycho-analysis. The essentials as well as the finer facets of the psychic apparatus are beyond the scope of dynamic psychiatry, which, while using haphazardly psycho-analytic concepts, is a crude, common-sense psychology.

Thomas Freeman.

---

## INTERNATIONAL PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL ASSOCIATION 20TH INTERNATIONAL CONGRESS OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

The 20th International Congress of Psycho-Analysis will be held in Paris from 28th July to 1st August, 1957, under the auspices of the Société Psychanalytique de Paris. The Congress will meet at Maison de la Chimie, 28 rue Saint-Dominique, Paris 7e.

An announcement referring to Panels and Individual Papers was made in this JOURNAL, Vol. XXXVII, November-December 1956, Part 6, p. 509.

All communications regarding the Scientific Programme should be sent to the Chairman of the Programme Committee: Dr. Edward

Kronold, 17 East 60th Street, New York 28, N.Y., U.S.A.

REGISTRATION FORMS for the reception of all Congress participants by the Société Psychanalytique de Paris, on Sunday, 28th July, at 8 p.m. at Maison de la Chimie, 28 rue Saint-Dominique, can be obtained from: Dr. S. Nacht, Président du Comité d'organisation du XXe Congrès International de Psychanalyse, 187 rue Saint-Jacques, Paris 5e, France. All registrations should be received by the organizing committee before 30th April, 1957.



# THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

Vol. XXXVIII

1957

Parts 3/4

## A RE-EVALUATION OF CERTAIN ASPECTS OF THE THEORY OF INSTINCTUAL DRIVES IN THE LIGHT OF MODERN EGO PSYCHOLOGY

By

SAMUEL NOVEY, M.D., BALTIMORE,  
MARYLAND

In the evolutionary development of our theoretical position in psycho-analysis it would seem valid to explain the currently observed phenomena with the least possible deviation from our previously established and tested position. As regularly happens in any sphere of science, the interplay between theoretical concepts and experimental observations is such that one or the other may be the more advanced at any given time, and may hence contribute to the development of the less advanced phase. There is substantial evidence that our current theoretical concepts regarding instinctual drives are lagging behind clinical developments in ego psychology. This is not to say that all of the essentially useful formulations in this area of the past are any less useful today, but that, like any growing organisms, certain additional hypotheses may now be fruitfully employed. This was brought home to me quite forcibly by the recent increased use of the paradoxical term 'non-instinctual energy' in the attempt to describe energetic sources for certain fundamental ego operations neither libidinal nor aggressive in origin. If such energies exist, it is essential that a place be found for them in our theory of instinctual drives.

Throughout the development of psycho-analysis the theory of instincts has had, as its basis, the principle that it should embrace the psychic representation of all sources of inner needs or stimuli as opposed to external stimuli (7). With the development of ego psychology and the discovery of the organizing and synthesizing operations conducted by the ego, there is now a definitive need to include the energetic sources

of such operations within a theory of instincts. If this is done by postulating 'non-instinctual energy' in addition to sexual and aggressive energies in a greater or lesser degree of sublimation or neutralization, we are forced to discard the fundamental idea of an all-inclusive theory of instinctual energy. The purpose of this paper is to inquire whether it is necessary to discard is to inquire whether it is necessary to discard our former conceptual basis, or whether the newer ego functions may not be incorporated into instinct theory in a more economic fashion.

While I am anticipating my major thesis, I believe that it will make for greater understanding if I present my final position and then proceed to present the supporting evidence.

In view of the findings of ego-psychology which substantiate the existence of an undifferentiated id-ego, it is necessary to postulate a primary quantum of energy which is bound to, and is thus part of, this *Anlage* of the ego. This primary ego energy can be incorporated into our current theory of instincts in a consistent fashion if we call upon Freud's old concept of 'ego-instincts'. The former so-called 'ego-instincts' are, with Freud, best classified under Eros and are thus intimately a part of its exponent libido. Further, the 'self-preservative instincts' or 'ego-instincts' have a psychic instinctual as well as a 'biological representation'. Thus the proposition is that the energy with which the primitive ego is endowed and the energy of the 'self-preservative instincts' are essentially one and the same thing, and are thus, in fact, a part of our theory of instinctual drives.

In order to appreciate fully the current status of those aspects of instinct theory which concern



us here, it is necessary to examine the developmental origins of our theory. Without such a historical survey, it would not seem possible to appreciate fully the origins of the theory, the various additions and deletions from it, the possibilities of reconstituting certain aspects of it which seemed unproductive at some given time and, in general, to reappraise the validity of our present position in this area. Fortunately, in the writings of one man, Sigmund Freud, published between the years 1914 and 1949, there is the opportunity to demonstrate just such a developmental process. As I have perused the literature, I have been impressed by the numerous references to one or another phase of his development of instinct theory, but these references are often misleading since they are offered, as it were, divorced from his continuously developing frame of reference. Bibring's classic article (1), based upon a series of lectures delivered in 1934, is a monumental synthesis of the development of instinct theory up to that time, but the purpose seems to be to validate the then theoretical position. I have re-examined Freud's writings to see whether certain earlier hypotheses related to ego-instincts may not now be resynthesized in the light of our current knowledge. It is my intention to offer a developmental consideration of Freud's instinct theory and to follow it by some considerations of the works of others, which will perhaps be more clearly understood from the vantage-point we shall then have attained.

In his paper 'On Narcissism', (6) Freud formulated his libido theory, i.e. his theory of ego and sexual instincts. This was motivated by a futile attempt to conciliate two manifestly conflicting theses. On the one hand he was puzzled by the relationship of narcissism to auto-erotism and attempted to resolve this by assuming 'some new operation in the mind' in addition to auto-erotism (primary narcissism) in order that narcissism (secondary narcissism) might come into being. This was consistent with the view he then held of the ego as a crystallized outer portion of the id based upon its impact with reality and hence genetically of more recent origin than the id. The 'new operation' was the development of a functional ego itself. On the other hand he found it imperative to postulate a non-sexual energy pertaining to the ego instincts and inferring an ego of the same genetic age as the id. He did this instead of assuming a uniform mental energy for all mental operations. This was necessitated by his fear that the concept of libido then held and its specifically sexual

origins would become diluted unless some additional reservoir of energy were postulated. He was particularly uneasy about this point, but offered as arguments for this dichotomy the 'distinction between hunger and love' as well as certain 'biological considerations'. Both these depended upon the separation of self-preservative from race-preservative drives. Before completing these considerations he emphasized the tentative nature of this particular theory of instincts and promised to discard it if a more valuable theory was discovered.

Freud formalized his concept of the libido theory in the 1915 edition of the *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* (first published without this addition in 1905). This was based largely on the previously mentioned paper 'On Narcissism'. His special interest remained in the sphere of the transitions between ego-libido or narcissistic-libido and object-libido. He again posed the question how to distinguish ego-libido and 'the other forms of energy operating in the ego', but left it unanswered. The dilemma could not be further resolved as long as the only means of observing libido was in the transformations of the object libido. Little mention was made of what were described as 'nutritive processes', but his attention was primarily centred on the libido and its vicissitudes.

It may be seen from these considerations that Freud was bound to attempt some further development of his instinct theory, since he had placed himself on the horns of a dilemma in which he, for a time, found it impossible to alter his structural concepts of ego origins or of instincts. In 'Instincts and their Vicissitudes' (1915) (7) he again emphasized the tentative nature of his commitment to the dualism of ego-instincts and sexual instincts. From later developments it would appear that his philosophical commitment to a dualistic theory of instincts denied any departure from this particular dualism until he had found a suitable replacement for it.

In this same article he envisioned hate as an ego function and thus as subserving the ego-instincts. In this consideration of love and hate the beginnings of his later concept of aggression as a primal instinct are introduced into his theoretical system. These considerations clearly constituted the intermediary phase of the shift-over from libido and ego instincts to life and death instincts. At this point, libido and love and ego and aggression are correlated, depen-



dent on their association with the affective status of love and hate.

In the *Introduction to Psychoanalysis* (8), the continuing struggle went on, with Freud placing the libido in a more and more central position, certainly as regards psychopathology, but still plagued by the need to assign some substantial rôle to the ego instincts. His preoccupation with problems of pathogenesis as opposed to character development perhaps made for less concern with the 'ego-instincts' for the time being. In his lecture on narcissism in this series he did, however, attempt to consider ego 'interests', a function of the self-preservative instincts, as opposed to the libidinal investment of objects. He had none the less come increasingly to feel that disorders of libidinal investments were the primary source of emotional disorders. In these considerations Freud introduced, only to dismiss it, the concept of asexual libido. This was done under the pressure of what he envisioned as Jung's efforts to reduce the rôle of sexual libido in personality organization to a minor one. It was only considerably later, when the term libido came to be used by Freud as the exponent of Eros, that he accepted a far broader definition of libido.

Of special interest to my thesis are his considerations of ego 'interests'. He looked upon them as the representation of the energy of the ego and insisted that they be strictly separated from libido. The term libido as used in the more sense extant at that time referred to the more specifically sexual energy related to the bodily orifices. He, in fact, assigned a significant if secondary rôle to the ego-instincts in pathogenesis, and seemed to be anticipating some of the problems which are confronting us today in our current attempts further to appraise the rôle of the ego in this regard.

An additional source of pressure for further clarification of instinct theory arose in this same series of lectures. In so far as Freud chose to minimize the rôle of the ego instincts he was loth to assign to the ego the prime function of the effective component of anxiety. He attempted for the moment to resolve this by assigning the affective component of anxiety to the ego-libido and the executive function to the ego-instincts, but this was the precursor of a new theory of anxiety and a new consideration of the functions of the ego which was soon to come.

In 1920, in *Beyond the Pleasure Principle* (9), Freud finally rejected the theory of self-preservative versus sexual instincts and established a new

duality of life versus death instincts. In his formulation of this hypothesis he assumed that the ego instincts represented nothing more than a special case of the use of libido in the interests of self-preservation. He was unwilling, however, to make a final commitment as to the composition of the ego's total instinctual energy and expressed this in the following way.

'We suspect that there are in the ego other instincts than those of self-preservation; only we ought to be in a position to demonstrate them. Unfortunately so little progress has been made in the analysis of the ego that this proof becomes extraordinarily difficult of attainment. The libidinous instincts of the ego may indeed be conjoined in a special way with other ego-instincts of which we as yet know nothing. Before ever we had clearly recognized narcissism, the conjecture was already present in the minds of psycho-analysts that the "ego-instincts" had drawn libidinous components to themselves. But these are merely vague possibilities which our opponents will hardly take into account. It remains an awkward fact that analysis up to now has only put us in the position of demonstrating libidinous impulses. The conclusion that therefore there are no others is one to which we do not assent.'

The overall change in his concept of the basic duality into life, or libidinal, and death instincts represented not only a change of his structural theory of instinct, but also the abandonment of a theory based primarily on the *sources* of the instincts. Freud from now on talks of the more general philosophical *aims* of the instinct, towards life or towards death, anabolic or katabolic. He did not, however, then or at any time postulate psychic energy originating from inner stimuli of other than instinctual origin, and it seems to be the very intention of his entire metapsychology to account for all quanta of such psychic energy within a theory of instincts. This intention is more clearly evident in this new theory of instincts than in the earlier one.

In this new theoretical formulation, Freud was also strongly suspicious of the existence of instinctual energy in the ego related in some fashion to the death instinct and thus to aggressive energy. This was the logical outgrowth of his earlier considerations of hate as associated with the ego instincts and of the growing sense of the ego as the mediator as well as the executor between the instincts and reality. This association of the death instinct and the ego has resulted in certain current theoretical formulations (22) which will be considered later in this article.



In Freud's suggestion that there may be energy in the ego of other than libidinal origin, he unfortunately does not enter into any consideration of how one would fit further instincts into a dualistic schema. This represents one of the problems facing us today in any current attempt to revise the 'Theory of Instincts'. It is true, however, that the large group of psychoanalysts who have not accepted the concept of a death instinct or of an aggressive instinct have been functioning without such a dualistic concept, since for the most part they have given up Freud's earlier dualism of libido and ego-instinct also.

It should be especially noted that Freud's new concept of Eros or the instinct to bind together carried with it a far broader definition of its exponent libido. In the usage of the term 'libido' to define this energy in this new theoretical framework, it is used to include far more than what was commonly subsumed under the term libido or sexuality in psycho-analysis up to this time, and clearly includes the 'self-preservative instincts'. This has been a source of great misunderstanding, since there was an earlier period in which the sexual instinct, or the then concept of libido, was seen to include many activities among which were oral and anal ones. Freud encountered much resistance, largely outside of the psycho-analytic movement, to the incorporation of these activities into his theory of sexual development and of libido. The resistance to the present concept of Eros and the now even broader definition of libido is often confused with the earlier resistance to the original libido theory. The objections to the concept of Eros have been scarcely less vehement than was the earlier resistance, but this time the protests have come largely from within analytic circles themselves. It is possible that some of the tendency to confuse the first and second phases of the elaborations of libido theory are related to this resistance. As can be seen, this latter version of libido plays a considerable part in my theoretical formulation.

In 1933 the *New Introductory Lectures* (10) dismissed the concept of ego-instincts on the same basis as had been advanced in *Beyond the Pleasure Principle*, and reiterated the duality of Eros and Thanatos. This position is in striking contrast to that which he presented in his article 'Analysis Terminable and Interminable' (11) four years later. In that article there is the most radical departure from his earlier position which had envisioned the ego as a 'cortical' layer of

the id which had developed out of the id's contact with reality. It is this very position which precipitates us into the need to extend our conceptualization of instincts, since Freud posits an *Anlage* of the ego and infers special psychic instinctual energetic sources which relate to it.

After discussing modifications of the ego acquired during the defensive conflicts of early childhood, Freud says :

'We have no reason to dispute the existence and importance of primary congenital variations in the ego. A single fact is decisive, namely, that every individual selects only certain of the possible defensive mechanisms and invariably employs those which he has selected. This suggests that each individual ego is endowed from the beginning with its own peculiar dispositions and tendencies, though it is true that we cannot predicate their nature and conditioning factor. Moreover, we know that we must not exaggerate the difference between inherited and acquired characteristics into an antithesis: what was acquired by our ancestors is certainly an important part of what we inherit. When we speak of our "archaic heritage" we are generally thinking only of the id and we apparently assume that no ego is yet in existence at the beginning of the individual's life. But we must not overlook the fact that id and ego are originally one, and it does not imply a mystical over-valuation of heredity if we think it credible that, even before the ego exists, its subsequent lines of development, tendencies and reactions are already determined.'

And a bit later in the same article :

'When we recognize that the peculiarities of the ego which we detect in the form of resistances may be not only acquired in defensive conflicts but determined by heredity, the topographical differentiation between ego and id loses much of its value for our investigations.'

In his final work, the *Outline of Psychoanalysis* (12), Freud does not again refer to the 'inherited' characteristics of the ego, but seems to imply that the self-preservative functions come into being with the emergence of the ego. Where they or their precursors are prior to this time is not considered. During the course of these considerations Freud states :

'There can be no question of restricting one or the other of the basic instincts to a single region of the mind. They are necessarily present everywhere. We may picture an initial state of things by supposing that the whole available energy of Eros, to which we shall henceforward give the name of libido, is present in the as yet undifferentiated ego-id and serves to neutralize the destructive impulses



which are simultaneously present. (There is no term analogous to "libido" for describing the energy of the destructive instinct.) It becomes relatively easy for us to follow the later vicissitudes of the libido; but this is more difficult with the destructive instinct.'

As can be seen, the introduction of a concept of an 'undifferentiated ego-id' represents a far-reaching departure in our metapsychology. It brings with it the necessity to re-evaluate psychic economics and dynamics in a fashion consistent with this altered topography. This, of course, involves a redefinition of our theory of instincts.

In the same book he returns to the question of the self-preservative instincts and states:

'The first organ to make its appearance as an erotogenic zone and to make libidinal demands upon the mind is, from the time of birth onward, the mouth. To begin with, all mental activity is centred upon the task of providing satisfaction for the needs of that zone. In the first instance, of course, the latter serves the purposes of self-preservation by means of nourishment; but physiology should not be confused with psychology. The baby's obstinate persistence in sucking gives evidence at an early stage of a need for satisfaction which, although it originates from and is stimulated by the taking of nourishment, nevertheless seeks to obtain pleasure independently of nourishment and for that reason may and should be described as "sexual".'

In this quotation, Freud has introduced, but not further elaborated on, some considerations which seem to merge into the current phase of development of ego psychology and instinct theory. When he says that the mouth 'serves the purposes of self-preservation by means of nourishment, but physiology should not be confused with psychology', he seems to be presuming that these 'self-preservative' impulses have no mental representations. I should like to include the following two quotations from the same book in his consideration of dreams in which the desire to sleep and to eat seem both to have mental representation and to be capable of suppressing or stimulating motor activity as well:

'With the help of the unconscious every dream in the process of formation makes a demand upon the ego for the satisfaction of an instinct (if it originates from the id) or for the solution of a conflict, the removal of a doubt, or the making of a decision (if it originates from a residue of preconscious activity in waking life). *The sleeping ego is focused upon the wish to maintain sleep; it*

regards this demand as a disturbance and seeks to get rid of the disturbance. The ego achieves this by what appears to be an act of compliance: it meets the demand with what is in the circumstances the innocent fulfilment of a wish, and this disposes of the demand. This replacement of a demand by the fulfilment of a wish remains the essential function of dream-work.'

And:

'During his sleep a need for food stirs in the dreamer. He has a dream of a delicious meal and sleeps on. The choice, of course, was open to him of either waking up and eating something or of continuing his sleep. He decided in favour of the latter and satisfied his hunger by means of the dream; at all events for the time being—*since if his hunger had persisted he would have had to wake up nevertheless.*'

The wish to sleep or the need for food are represented mentally, and these needs stem out of our biological selves and meet all of the qualifications of an instinctual drive. This had been succinctly stated by Ernest Jones in his paper on 'Psychoanalysis and the Instincts' (15), wherein he discusses the development of Freud's theory of instincts and says:

'The sexual instinct is not at first a unit. It consists of various components, emanating from manifold organic sources. These components at first function quite independently of one another, each as it were blindly seeking for organic pleasure and satisfaction, and it is only later that they combine in the function of reproduction. They at first begin in conjunction with the activity of ego instincts, for instance hunger, with which they have a common source, aim, and object, and only gradually do they emancipate themselves from this association to achieve an existence of their own. An infant sucks in food before it sucks its thumb and long before it uses its lips for kissing.'

From this historical survey it is clear that Freud's theory of instincts coincides in time with that phase of the development of psycho-analysis which was primarily concerned with id psychology and only comparatively late in his career with ego psychology. In the late nineteen-twenties two papers were presented which indicate the direction which psycho-analysis was then taking. One of these was Wilhelm Reich's first article on 'Character Analysis' (21) and the other, Herman Nunberg's 'The Synthetic Functions of the Ego' (19); the latter article was presented at the International Psycho-analytical Congress in July 1929. These presentations



marked very real progress in the direction of establishing a more coherent ego psychology in psycho-analysis, the lack of which Freud had long deplored. This area of psychology was greatly incremented with the publishing of Anna Freud's book, *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence* (4) in 1937. From that time on, we are warranted in speaking of the sphere of ego psychology in psycho-analysis as being established on a firm basis. It should be noted how closely this coincided in time with Freud's last contributions to instinct theory, and we can see the beginning impact of modern ego psychology in Freud's last writings on this subject, as I have already pointed out.

There has been little attempt to correlate the findings of ego psychology with the theory of instincts in a formal sense, although here and there one finds suggestive comments in this regard. Thus Weiss states (23) :

'In the first place, by extending the scope of the libido to all the life drives, Freud observed his earlier distinction between the self-preservative (ego) and the race-preservative (sexual) drives. While, as he recognized, it is incorrect to exclude the ego from the operation of libido, a valid distinction can be made between ego strivings, with undisplaceable goals—hunger, for example—and the more elastic sexual urges; and in fact many clinical findings and characterological studies bear out Freud's previous statements.'

Simmel (22) was deeply concerned with the comparative neglect of the ego instincts in our present theory of instinct. In his construction, he fell back on the position Freud had held earlier (as has been discussed in this paper in connexion with my considerations of Freud's article on 'Instincts and their Vicissitudes'), and attempted to correlate the destructive energies not with the death instinct but as manifestations of an instinct of self-preservation. In order to do so, he had to translate hunger as an instinctual origin into an 'instinct to devour' and to introduce an 'ultimate aim' of 'self-preservation and self-development' for this instinct. This seems to be an evident confusion of variable activities associated with the same bodily zone. The association of destructive and libidinal activities with the same organic area by no means allows us the liberty to assume similar psychic aims or instinctual origins for them. I should rather view Simmel's paper not as a new theory of instinct, as he would have it, but as a skilful consideration of the relationships of

aggressivity and the death instinct with regard to their early manifestations in gastrointestinal activity.

The concept of an ego which has its own definitive energetic source subsumed under Eros would also put some of Fenichel's views into somewhat better focus. Fenichel (3) held that the instinctual conflict is a structural conflict as well. This is consistent with Freud's earlier views of sexual and ego instincts as opposing forces where the instinctual conflict had of necessity to be a structural conflict. It is not germane to the purposes of this paper to enter into further considerations of the conflicts between Eros and Thanatos (or libido and aggressive instincts) and between part components of those individual instincts.

The need for an economic theory of psychic energy origins and transformations in psycho-analysis has been present from very early days, and the formulations and hypotheses in these directions have represented a critical part of the framework which has made for the development of psycho-analysis. It is not clear in certain substantial contributions to ego psychology (13) why such ego operations cannot be integrated into a drive theory. This theory was after all intended to account for *all* the energetic aspects of the psychic human economy. If the evidence leads us to consider the ego aspect of the undifferentiated ego-id as having already been endowed with the quanta of energy, it would seem more appropriate to revise our theory of the economic distribution of drive energy in a topographical sense than to postulate energies of a non-instinctual sort. As one reads about primary autonomy of the ego (14, 20) the need to correlate this with Freud's instinct theory seems great indeed. The exponents of this view seem to have been forced into assuming ego characteristics which are conflict-free and antedate conflict. At the same time they are sufficiently bound by the concept of the ego as being born out of conflict to choose not to follow the seemingly inevitable next step and postulate a place for such autonomous ego energy in our theory of instincts.

Nacht's (16) objection to the concept of the primary autonomy of the ego as existing prior to conflict is met by assuming that the primitive ego has a definitive charge of instinctual energy. His valid objection to the postulated yet evanescent 'physiologic somatic aspects' of ego origin and development, as well as his objections to primary ego contributions to the processes of learning and maturation, are dealt with through the intro-



duction of primary ego instinctual energy into our theory of instincts.

In the very wordings of our modern definition of 'character', which is nearly identical with our concept of the ego, the distance we have gone from our old picture of the ego is startling. Thus to quote Fenichel (2) :

'The concept of character evidently has a broader scope than "modes of defence anchored in character". The ego not only protects the organism from external and internal stimuli by blocking its reactions. It also reacts. It sifts and organizes stimuli and impulses: it permits some of them to find expression directly, others in a somewhat altered form. The dynamic and economic organizations of its positive actions and the ways in which the ego combines its various tasks in order to find a satisfying solution, all of this goes to make up "character".'

Thus there are many character attitudes that cannot be called defences. But there are none that would be independent of instinctual conflicts . . .

The gradual introduction of the theory of 'character' coincides with an important shift in the technique of psycho-analysis. Its therapeutic scope broadened as a result of a greater awareness of both the defensive and the integrative activities of the ego. Psycho-analysis could no longer be content with the old picture of the neurosis as a product of an ego which represses instincts as a slavish response to the pressure of a malformed superego. While the superego still remained a major factor in the production of emotional disorders, disturbances of the ego itself were seen to play an increasingly significant part in them. The ego is an integral reacting component of the mental life and plays a major rôle in making up what we describe as 'character'. In the analysis of character disorders it is thus essential to appraise the integrative as well as the repressive aspects of ego operations and to deal with them in a therapeutic manner (17).

The analysis of character disorders has added a considerable impetus to the need for a re-appraisal of instinct theory, and I have considered some of the attempts which are being made to this end. Interestingly enough, the very development of ego psychology has raised questions in some quarters as to the validity and usefulness of *any* theory of instincts, of the particular choice of a dualistic theory of instincts, and of the choice of the death instinct as a part of the dualism. A brief consideration of these questions is appropriate here.

Much confusion has arisen within and outside

the field of psycho-analysis through attempts to establish the validity or lack of validity of instinct theory by correlating it with biological concepts in animals or man. The proposition that the infant is potentially capable of certain mental operations hardly needs defending. For purposes of *convenience and utility* we are given, in psycho-analysis, to conceptualize this energy as an instinctual drive and, in the most general terms, to conceive of it as having anabolic or katabolic directions. Much of the conflict as to the existence of instinctual drives has arisen over the Libido Theory. Whether or not this concept should prove *biologically* valid, its implications for *psychological* theory have been such as to warrant its continued use.

Some share of the heritage in psycho-analysis of attempting to base psychological theory on biological theory can be traced to Freud himself and to the intellectual atmosphere of the early twentieth century. In that period of intense development in science, it appeared that we would shortly bridge the gap between psychic process and chemical bodily process. While such a development has not occurred, it was in such a setting that Freud could develop his Libido Theory. This theory has survived and is still useful as a psychological theory, but there is no more to sustain the correlation of it and its presumed biological antecedents than there was when Freud wrote his paper 'On Narcissism' in 1914.

The time is past when the specifically sexual aspects of the theory of instincts would be the main source of resistance to it, at least in scientific circles. The current objections seem to arise from a distorted application of scientific methodology. The human being develops through the phase of infancy in a complex inter-relationship with other human beings. There would seem to be no question but that, whatever inborn drives of a physical or psychological nature there may be, the impact of other persons upon the infant will have great formative influence. This thesis has been repeatedly stressed in psycho-analysis, although it is often disregarded. It is valid to assume, however, that the environment must have some matrix within the infant, tending towards certain directions of development, upon which to exert its influence. The *psychological theory* of instinctual drives is essentially an attempt to define this matrix in a useful fashion with the intention of employing it as an investigative and therapeutic instrument.

Another problem area with regard to instinct



theory arises from the necessary evaluation of the relative advantage in psycho-analysis of a monistic, dualistic, or other theory of instincts. The advantage of a dualistic theory of instinct resides in the fact that it is the simplest one which allows for the possibility of conflict between instinctual drives. The concept of conflict between drives is of practical usefulness in psycho-analysis, and places the theory of instinctual drives into a framework consistent with the theories of opposing forces which we have found of such great value in our practical analytic work.

It is true that a theory of more than two instincts would have some advantage in that it would allow for a broader conceptualization of numerous part forces within the personality, but, in addition to being cumbersome, it has little to offer that the broad concepts of life and death instincts and their part operations do not offer already. Freud discovered long since that such a multiplicity of instincts would be necessary if one remained bound to the source of the instinct and thus adopted a relatively simplified theory based on the aim of the instinct. There is some reason to believe that modern science in general has found increasingly less utility in such dualistic concepts and has moved more and more towards a monistic and, at the same time, pluralistic philosophy. It is conceivable that this development can be more directly incorporated into psycho-analysis at some later time, but that does not seem to be true at present.

The theory of the death instinct or of an aggressive instinct has had a much more quizzical reception in psycho-analysis than has the theory of libido. Curiously enough, many of those who now adhere to the libido theory do so without significant awareness that they have long since parted company with Freud in a far broader area. In rejecting the death instinct they reject not only it but Freud's later broader conceptual framework of libido itself. This is not to say that such differences of view may not arise within a scientific discipline or that one or another group is inevitably in the right. It is well, however, that the total implications of such differences should be clearly brought out.

The theory of the death instinct has not only to do with setting up the inevitable negative corollary to the life instinct. Bound as we have been to a theory of ever-developing life process, we have attempted to explain all the cruel, destructive aspects of man's relations to himself and to other men as miscarriages of a natural

process rather than as a part of the natural process itself (18). Such destructive impulses make for an unflattering view of man and will be considered, in some quarters, as a pessimistic outlook. The evidence for them is ample if we choose to observe the available facts and develop our psychological theory, as Freud did eventually, from these facts. With the theory of the death instinct in mind, much of the theory of masochism still requires re-evaluation and much of our theory of somatic equivalents of psychic states might take on new meaning as expressions of such a drive.

Returning now to the question of the means of correlating our modern concept of the ego and of instincts, there is one further major problem to meet. That is the thesis that the ego is subservient to secondary process and to the reality principle and hence cannot be endowed with primary instinctual energy. This need present no great obstacle to its integration into the theory of instincts. According to the old theory, the id, from which the ego is held to have arisen *in toto*, is governed by primary process and the pleasure principle. This formulation implies, however, that the impact of reality on the id is such as to make for certain alterations in its cortical area and thus to create an ego. Thus in effect, there was always implied in the id the potential for secondary process and for subservience to the reality principle, and this has always been a part of psycho-analytic instinct theory. To propose a primary ego potential of energy, as seems implied in the concept of the autonomous ego, is only to formalize this concept.

If we are to assume an *Anlage* of the ego in the undifferentiated ego-id, we must assume it to be endowed with drive energy. The fact that the development of the ego is also dependent on the libido and on libidinal investments in objects does not alter our first premise about primary sources of energy related to the ego. To presume that such sources of energy arise from Eros is to place them within the broad philosophical framework of Freud's later theory of instincts. There is much to say for this, since it sustains the dualistic concept of instincts with which psycho-analysis has associated itself. This association of ego energy with Eros is, however, not to be confused with the older concept of libido as referring to sexual energy in the narrow sense, but uses it in the sense in which Freud employed it in his later writings already quoted; namely, as the energetic source related to Eros. In this frame of reference, then, 'non-instinctual energy' related



to the primitive energy of the ego would have its origins in Eros and would represent, in effect, libido—using the term in its widest sense. This alters our earlier position in that it assumes quanta of libido having a primal association with the ego aspects of the primitive ego-id, and that our old formula of investment of energy in the ego by the id alone is incorrect. This would not mediate against the thesis that later transfers of libidinal and aggressive energy from the id to the ego occur, but that these are not the only sources of ego-energetic investment.

Such a theory would go far to clarify the present state of confusion in our concepts of ego psychology and the instinctual origins of the ego without substantially violating our theory of instincts or our current ideas on ego-genesis and development. Such activities as the need to eat or to sleep, things which would fall under Freud's old concept of 'ego interests' and which have their psychological as well as their biological representation, would find a more fitting place in this altered theoretical framework. Whatever their relationships to sexual and aggressive energies might be, they would represent primitive activities related to this now recreated ego-instinctual source falling under

the aegis of the life instincts. This would help integrate the old dichotomy of oral activities as expressing the biopsychological need for food as well as the quite as necessary sexual-libidinal and aggressive aspects of oral activity.

This would reintroduce the concepts of sexual libido and ego libido both as variable aspects of Eros or the life instinct, and would assume a quantum of ego libido quite aside from the additional investments of the ego by sexual libido. Such ego libido would represent bound energy in the service of basic ego operations as we would consider the ego in its full synthesizing character.

In conclusion, I should wish to stress the primary relation of the synthesizing integrating properties of the ego to the primary ego-instinctual energy I have postulated. This is by no means to belittle the already established rôles of sexual libido and aggression in ego development. It seems clear that without their instinctual contributions to the ego the ego cannot develop, but I have attempted to establish on a firmer basis the substrate upon which they impinge. In the functioning individual we witness an ego whose energies derive from all the above-mentioned sources in variable degrees.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) BIBRING, EDWARD (1941). 'The Development and Problems of the Theory of the Instincts.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, **22**.
- (2) FENICHEL, OTTO. *The Psychoanalytic Theory of the Neuroses*. (New York: Norton, 1945, pp. 466-467.)
- (3) — (1938). 'Ego Disturbances and Their Treatment.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **19**, p. 421.
- (4) FREUD, ANNA. *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence*.
- (5) FREUD, SIGMUND (1905). *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality*. Standard Ed., **14**.
- (6) — (1914). 'On Narcissism: An Introduction.' Standard Ed., **14**.
- (7) — (1915). 'Instincts and Their Vicissitudes.' Standard Ed., **14**.
- (8) — *A General Introduction to Psychoanalysis*. (New York: Garden City Pub Co., 1943.)
- (9) — *Beyond the Pleasure Principle*. Standard Ed., **18**.
- (10) — *New Introductory Lectures on Psychoanalysis*. (New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1933.)
- (11) — 'Analysis Terminable and Interminable.' Standard Ed., **23**.
- (12) — *An Outline of Psychoanalysis*. (New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 1949.)
- (13) HARTMANN, HEINZ (1948). 'The Psychoanalytical Theory of Instinctual Drives.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, **17**.
- (14) — 'Mental Influences in Development of Ego and Id.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, **7**.
- (15) JONES, ERNEST (1935). 'Psychoanalysis and the Instincts.' *Papers on Psychoanalysis*. (London: Baillière, Tindall and Cox, 1948.)
- (16) NACHT, S. (1952). 'Discussion: The Mutual Influences in the Development of the Ego and the Id.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, **7**.
- (17) NOVEY, SAMUEL (1955). 'The Rôle of the Superego and Ego Ideal in Character Formation.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **36**.
- (18) — (1955). 'Some Philosophical Speculations about the Concept of the Genital Character.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **36**.
- (19) NUNBERG, HERMAN (1931). 'The Synthetic Function of the Ego.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **13**.
- (20) RAPAPORT, DAVID (1931). 'The Autonomy of the Ego.' *Bull. Menninger Clinic*, **15**.
- (21) REICH, WILHELM (1928). 'On Character Analysis.' *The Psychoanal. Reader*.
- (22) SIMMEL, ERNST (1944). 'Self-Preservation and the Death Instinct.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, **13**.
- (23) WEISS, EDOARDO. *Principles of Psycho-dynamics*. (New York: Grune and Stratton, 1950.)

(Received 7 July, 1955)



# THE EGO ASPECT OF TRANSFERENCE

By

MAX M. STERN, M.D., NEW YORK

This study intends to present the ego aspect of transference by stressing its function in the service of mastery of infantile traumata.<sup>1</sup> Using a biopsychological approach, as in my previous studies, it aims at tracing—though in a very simplified and telescopically condensed manner—its genetic development throughout the various phases of childhood and growth.

## TRANSFER AND TRANSFERENCE

To transfer means to convey from one person or place to another (Webster). In perception, for example, past experiences are transferred to actual sensory data on the basis of similarities.

The biological matrix of transference seems to be the conditioned response, which is considered by recent authors (25) to be the result of a traumatic situation. In the conditioned response (sometimes called anticipatory or symbolic behaviour) the reaction to a previous experience—in a situation of stress—is transferred to a perception symbolizing it. Conditioned behaviour seems to be a basic quality of organismic life in the service of self-preservation. In the mammals it is not restricted to cortical and thalamic levels, but seems to be a general property of the central nervous tissue (28).

New situations are always experienced in terms of previous experiences. Normally, however, this initial transfer from the past is superseded by a more precise and objective evaluation of the present; equation is followed by comparison and correction. The conditioned response, for example, finally becomes extinguished. No such correction seems to take place in the transference phenomena which we know from psycho-analytic psychology; here the individual's responses remain fixated to past situations. Transference can be defined as a fixation to a previous situation displaced on to a substitute object which symbolizes the previous experience. We recall Freud's formulation that the patient

repeats previous responses because he sees in his analyst the return of a figure out of his childhood (13). The strength of this fixation, which Ferenczi called transference addiction, appears the most striking factor in transference.

To what is the patient fixated in transference and what are the dynamics of this fixation? Is everything repeated in transference that the patient had ever learned or forgotten, as Glover (15) thinks? Or are only traumatic situations repeated, as Silverberg (34) states, denying the existence of fixation to erotic infantile wishes, which we usually call positive transference? Freud referred the repetition in transference to repressed fragments of the Oedipus complex and the traumatic events which accompanied its passing. The repetition of infantile libidinal impulses in transference is so apparent that originally the term transference was used to connote libidinal attachment. It is understandable, therefore, that most authors follow Anna Freud (6) in her definition of transference as a fixation to infantile libidinal impulses and defences against them.

As to the dynamics, Freud explained transference as the manifestation of the repetition compulsion, that is of 'the tendency innate in living organic matter impelling it towards the reinstatement of an earlier condition', which is called a general characteristic of the instinctive (9). In discussing the repetition compulsion, Freud gave considerable weight to its connexion with trauma. The repetition has to bind the excessive amounts of excitation that broke through in the trauma; it strives for reparative mastery of trauma. Ultimately the repetition compulsion is conceived of as an attempt to overcome the primal trauma—namely the perturbation intrinsic to the irruption of life—by restoring the previous primordial, inanimate unity; it is an attempt at restitution of the pre-traumatic situation.

It is well known that psycho-analysis started

<sup>1</sup> Considerations of space preclude a review of the important contributions made by Ferenczi, Anna Freud, Fenichel, Nunberg, Sterba, Silverberg, Macalpine,

Lagache, Lorand, Greenacre, Fraiberg, Kut, Meerloo, and many others. A survey of the literature may be found in Orr, 1954.



with the definition of neurosis as a fixation to trauma. In its evolution, the interest shifted from accidental traumata from outside to typical developmentally determined processes. Many recent investigations, however, indicate a re-awakening of analytic interest in trauma (especially Greenacre, Ribble, Mahler, Escalona, Fraiberg, Garma, Stern and others). It is not always remembered that up to the time of his last publications Freud himself maintained the trauma theory to its full extent in the definition of basic psychological phenomena. As late as 1939, he traced *transference*, as well as *defence* and *neurosis*, back to actually experienced *traumata*: 'The impressions we experienced at an early age and forgot later, to which I have ascribed such great importance for the aetiology of the neuroses, are called traumata. . . . The effects of the trauma are twofold, positive and negative. The former are endeavours to revive the trauma, to remember the forgotten experience, or, better still, to make it real—to live through once more a repetition of it. . . . These endeavours are summed up in the terms 'fixation to the trauma' and 'repetition compulsion'. . . . The negative reactions pursue the opposite aim; here nothing is to be remembered or repeated of the forgotten traumata. They may be grouped together as *defensive reactions*. . . . The symptoms of the neurosis proper constitute a compromise to which both the positive and negative effects of the trauma contribute' (8).

#### DEFINITION OF TRAUMA

The main difficulty of the trauma theory seems to be the vagueness in the application of the term 'trauma' to mental processes. In general we call trauma any occurrence resulting in a more or less lasting damage to the ability for self-preservation. In several papers I have tried to clarify the psychological terms 'trauma' and 'defence' by correlating analytic concepts with recent findings in physiology. I paralleled Freud's definition of trauma as a breakthrough of the *stimulus barrier*, that is, as a result of overstimulation, with Selye's (33) theory of the general adaptation syndrome, in which the life process is seen in terms of trauma and trauma defence. According to Selye, any situation of stress leads to disorganization, namely a transitory failure of vital functions (physiological shock); it is immediately counteracted in internal regulative processes of endocrine and nervous character which restore the homeostatic balance (countershock). Therefore I defined *primary*

*trauma* as a physiological condition characterized by a failure of internal homeostatic regulation in a situation of stress. Its prototype would be the well-known physiological shock reaction which can be elicited by psychic as well as by organic overstimulation. The relation between physiological and psychic phenomena would be expressed in a simplified way by a biopsychological rule, according to which mental phenomena could be conceived of as a sum of reverberating anticipatory processes, containing repetitions of previous situations including their physiological corollaries. The stronger the needs which elicit the anticipatory processes, the stronger the somatic responses. Psychic trauma would then be any experience which elicits anticipatory repetition of previous primary traumata. Any threat of such repetition automatically triggers off external autoplasmic responses which through their physiological effect offset the homeostatic failure. These responses I have termed *primary defences*. They are mobilized by an increase of tension which signals trauma, that is, failure of homeostasis. Essential among the primary defences are hyperkinesis (the basis for aggression) and, even more important for our purpose, perceptory defences, such as hallucination (the basis for fantasy activity), either positive or negative (repression). The somatic effect of these primary defences is felt as relief from tension. For example, we know that the hallucination of drinking water results in a change of kidney secretion. The somatic relief provided by hallucination explains the gratification we derive from fantasy activity and symbolic thinking and acting, as it also occurs in transference. Primary defences seem to be the precursors of psychic defences.

*Psychic trauma* would be the experience of extensive failure of defences which elicits the feeling of failure and utter helplessness. Through perpetuation in recall and anticipation it may effect a lasting change in the psychic organization. In specific cases psychic trauma may deteriorate into primary trauma (shock). The attempts to ward off traumata—psychic and physiological—we would attribute to the function of mastery, the attempts to reverse the *damaging* effect of experienced traumata, in reality or in *fantasy*, to the function of reparative mastery. We may conceive of the *human* mental apparatus as a grandiose extension of the processes that safeguard homeostatic equilibrium and the survival of the individual (Stern, 1951).



## NORMAL TRAUMATA

The definition of primary trauma and defence advanced above brings into correlation various psychological and physiological facts. Observations in children have demonstrated that physiological primary traumata actually occur in the development of any normal child. They are particularly observable in the post-natal period, i.e. the phase of traumatic vulnerability which extends well into the second year. What of them becomes manifest is often only the primary defences against them, such as hyperkinesis (affecto-motor-storm, 26) and hypersensitivity, symptoms which characterize a state of excitation. Deeper disturbances are manifested by increased (morbid) primary defensive reactions, such as states of agitation and catatonoid (or better cataleptoid) states, revealing the occurrence of morbid trauma.

These formulations correspond to Freud's view that 'an experience acquires its traumatic character only in consequence of a quantitative element—that is to say if the experience evokes unusual pathological reactions'. The morbid primary defences represent precisely those 'unusual reactions to the experiences and demands that apply to everyone', which, according to him, characterize the life history of the neurotic (8). Neurosis would thus be the consequence not of normal traumata but of their morbidity.

## TRAUMA AND TRANSFERENCE

The thesis I wish to present contends that the infantile traumata are instrumental in creating transference. On the one hand, they give rise to libidinal dependence which persists throughout the individual's life; on the other, they lead to a premature development of the mental apparatus, especially of symbolic thinking. Libidinal dependence necessitates transference to a substitute object in the case of separation from the object. Symbolic thinking provides the condition for the effectiveness of such transference.

I would like to elaborate this in greater detail. We understand that early traumatic deprivations may inaugurate an extensive development of tension reducing hallucinatory fantasy activity. Besides the gratification of such biological needs as hunger, thirst, etc., the infant in his hallucinatory fantasies anticipates above all the libidinal gratification previously supplied by the mother. We know that, especially at that age, trauma elicits sexual excitation, resulting in libidinization of body functions and zones (oral, anal, etc.) which

are in the centre of the mother-child care. Through traumatic shock-like experiences the need for libidinal gratification becomes acute. It has been observed that somatic signs of a traumatic condition, together with the erection often produced by it in male babies, disappeared when the baby was stroked by the mother. At this phase, libidinal gratification extended by the mother—mothering—through its somatic effect, provides relief from threatening trauma. Mothering (social symbiosis, Mahler, 26) via hallucinatory recall, seems to reproduce in the child the homeostatic balance of prenatal, symbiotic existence. We know that the consequences of prolonged lack or loss of mothering are marasmus and hospitalism, chronic shock-like conditions in terms of Selye's concept (36). Elsewhere I have correlated the phases of the libidinal deprivation syndrome—states of agitation, cataleptoid reaction (infantile depression) and marasmus—with the specific defensive phases in Selye's general adaptation syndrome (Stern 1951). This parallelism has been confirmed by Spitz (37). Obviously, libidinal mothering, through its protective effect, imparts to infantile sexuality the function of defence against trauma. The fateful amalgamation of libidinal gratification and protection against trauma has here its starting-point. The insatiability of infantile libidinal wishes seems to derive from their defensive quality.

Growing maturation (reliability of homeostasis) makes possible tolerance of tension, so important for the child's ego development, and his formation of object relation. The diminishing urgency of immediate gratification of needs due to maturation permits of anticipatory gratification, which is further enhanced by traumatic occurrences. Both influence the development from the object as part of the 'milieu interne' to the psychological object (Hoffer, 20) from the need-satisfying object to object constancy (Hartmann *et al.*, 19). Transfer from partial objects (breast) to whole objects (mother), oscillation between identification, introjection, and projection of the libidinized body image are instrumental in this process. The identification with the object—in itself the result of a traumatic loss of the object—seems to act as defence against the fluctuation of body feelings occurring in the primary trauma (18). The rôle of trauma in the formation of the ego and the object relation has been stressed by Hartmann *et al.* (19), Glover (16) and Hoffer (20). In the case of deprivation, auto-erotic activities



fostered by traumatic libidinization replace the libidinal gratification by the mother. It is significant that this auto-erotic activity occurs regularly in greater frequency during the period of oral frustration (37). It seems that ego formation, object relation and transference are simultaneous processes developing under the impact of trauma in a circular way, the one reinforcing the other. The libidinized body with accentuated erogenous zones may become a kind of primary object (20), leading, via identification, to a cathexis of corresponding libidinous zones of the mother.

#### OBJECT FORMATION AND LIBIDINAL DEPENDENCE

The protection through libidinal gratification provided by the love object creates libidinal dependence which henceforth persists to a greater or lesser extent throughout life. 'The biological factor creates the need to be loved, which will accompany the child through the rest of its life' (11). The term *libidinal dependence* refers to anticipation of the protection through libidinal gratification by the love object; it engenders the protective as well as the pleasure aspect of the mother-child relationship. One of my patients, feeling the need to urinate during the session, remembered having been held by his mother while urinating, and commented: 'Urinating while being held by the mother—that is the ultimate protection. It is like a woman being carried over the threshold.' Another patient says, 'To be loved is bread and butter; it is money in the bank.'

Libidinal dependence replaces the hallucinatory need-gratification of the very first period; it balances the threat of trauma ever present in the child's first period. Libidinal dependence may have different aspects corresponding to specific developmental phases, i.e. to the specific instinctual wishes constituting the libidinal mother-child relationship, as well as to the specific modes of ego function which prevail in a specific phase. In the anal phase, e.g. libidinal dependence refers to the fact that the frightening anal pressure—which possibly revives previous traumatic situations—and its relief through defecation as well as the sexualized anal sensation are experienced (through projection and introjection) as deriving from the mother. Interference through toilet training consequently causes specific anxiety (anal anxiety), eliciting specific anal-sadistic defences. Libidinal dependence at that phase is ambivalent by nature; both the

threat of traumatic states and the protection against them are experienced as 'originating in the mother. A patient reports: 'I have violent associations to my mother's breast; a strong hate against you and mother. *I clutch at my mother's feet, holding on for dear life; without her I could not function.*'

I believe that the protective aspects of the mother-child relation which the term 'libidinal dependence' denotes, deserves to be given greater stress in our theory. We know that the most intense fears are most often derived not from real, external dangers, but from those which originate from the threat of loss of love. Soldiers in battle prefer death to exposing themselves to loss of love. There are relations to the concept of clinging (Bak) and social symbiosis (Mahler, 26). Mahler has described regression to the symbiotic mother-child relation in symbiotic infantile psychosis, the disturbance of which through the maturation processes creates panicky reactions (27).

#### DEPENDENCE AND TRANSFERENCE

Frustration of dependence needs, i.e. separation from the object, as we have seen, means trauma. Transference is a necessary concomitant of infantile dependence. Using the relief effect of the innate mechanism of the conditioned anticipatory response, libidinal dependence is, in the case of frustration, transferred to a substitute object symbolizing the dependence object. After an interval of 'extreme distress, attachment is transferred to a substitute object' (7). Transference originates in trauma; through providing temporary relief from tension, it serves the purpose of self-preservation. Together with innate preformed responses, transference is instrumental in the formation of extra-maternal object relations with living as well as inanimate objects. A general and rather diffuse transferability will be replaced by more specific transference relations when, through maturation of the ego, the child gradually develops the ability to retain libidinal cathexis to specific love objects. Excessive frustration, however, may result in a regression to indiscriminate transferability, reflecting a regression to early phases of object formation. This is borne out by the behaviour of psychopathic children and psychotics who show extreme transferability, as well as clinging. Transference phenomena in different developmental phases deserve closer investigation. They correspond to the specific return of the libidinal dependence at that phase.



The foregoing considerations permit us to offer a tentative definition of *the fixation in transference as a fixation to the protective anxiety-reducing effect of libidinal dependence in situations of stress*. The fateful amalgamation in libidinal dependence of libidinal gratification and defence against trauma, as already mentioned, points to a dual aspect of transference. The expectations of libidinal gratification would explain the affective nature of the transference relationship.

However, the question remains: Why does such fixation to traumata persist after the danger is past, i.e. when the traumatic conditions of the early infantile period no longer prevail? Furthermore, this definition would not explain the preponderance of oedipal material in transference of the adults. And finally, is the nature of transference in the adult different from infantile transference?

#### OEDIPAL TRAUMA AND TRANSFERENCE

We have the impression that the experience which causes the fixation in transference to become permanent, and which later gives the transference of the adult its specific character, is the traumata of a later period, especially those represented by the infantile sleep disturbances centring around pavor nocturnus.

In the period of growing anticipation, ego-formation and object relation, there appear, together with manifestations of anxiety and increasing auto-erotic activity, a number of typical and ubiquitous traumatic responses. We mention fits, temper tantrums, and breath-holding spells, reaching a point of panic, catastrophic reactions (Goldstein) which result from overstimulation mostly due to uncontrollable rage. These reactions, which are common occurrences in otherwise normal babies, have been somewhat neglected in psycho-analytic literature (17).

But far more important is the traumatic impact which must be ascribed to anxiety attacks during sleep, nightmares and night terrors, all of which I would group under the heading of pavor nocturnus. Pediatricians and those who do research in child development have come to regard the disturbances at night which range in intensity from a brief waking to profound disturbances as typical for the developmental stage (5, 35). Gesell in his *Behaviour Profiles*, based on large-scale studies of infants and small children at the Yale Clinic, includes night-walking and sleep-disturbances as one of the developmental features of the period from 15 to 30 months. He

states: 'Many of these disturbances are progressive and within a few months achieve the proportion of a major illness which dominates the young child's entire mental life' (14).

Elsewhere I have defined pavor nocturnus as an anxiety dream in which there is progressive paralysis in face of a threatening danger. Somatically it corresponds to a cataleptoid (catatonoid) state with transitory paralysis of vital functions, especially of motility. In the fully developed attack the paralysis may culminate in the inability to awaken. Pathognomic for the fully developed pavor nocturnus is the final awakening with a cry. The observable objective symptoms vary from slight defensive movements in sleep, groaning, awakening with fear, to the most extreme expression of fright and terror, with screaming, confusion, and hallucination. The pavor nocturnus attacks are often overlooked by the parents. Often the children lie awake in anxiety for many hours but do not dare to disturb their parents' sleep (35, 40).

Pavor nocturnus must be regarded as a failure of the wish-fulfilment of the dream. We assume that in the infant, as a consequence of his relative somatic vulnerability, the fantasy activity in the dream leads to somatic overstimulation. Any overstimulation during the day may find discharge in various ways: fits of aggression, games, defensive manoeuvres, and other ways. However, the conditions prevailing in sleep, viz., the elimination of motility discharge, the change of autonomous excitability, and the short-circuit between fantasy activity and autoplasmic body function (cf. wet dreams, enuresis), result in overstimulation creating traumatic anxiety attacks. They correspond precisely to Freud's definition of trauma as a failure of the inner stimulus barrier; they demonstrate how 'instinctual demands may operate as traumata from within' (13). It is interesting that Ferenczi's description (4) of the infantile trauma—gained from his clinical experiences—parallels precisely the cataleptoid state, which I have described the pavor nocturnus to be.

The somatic paralysis is the most striking symptom of pavor nocturnus. It means failure of defence in a situation of mortal danger, and is psychologically experienced as utter helplessness. The somatic paralysis of circulation, respiration, etc., is felt in the dream as vanishing, dying, choking, being chased, eaten up, destroyed by earthquakes, fire, etc., as being helplessly overwhelmed by all kinds of deadly dangers. Often the sensations are externalized and experienced



as emanating from threatening anxiety figures (ghosts, giants, witches, burglars), menacing animals (bulls, horses), which most often symbolize parental figures.

The concept that ascribes far-reaching traumatic impact to experiences during the sleeping state seems at first startling, since it attributes as great a traumatic impact to the child's nightly dream life as to the wealth of frustrations and conflicts which govern his waking life and whose indelible marks endure in his character formation and symptoms. Yet, many reasons compel us to this assumption. (i) For the child, at least until the age of five, there is but small distinction between external reality and the dream world; the latter with its fairies, ghosts, giants, monsters, etc., is real to him, exciting as well as menacing. (ii) Through their connexion with primary physiological trauma, the dream fantasies acquire an uncanny quality which enhances the perturbing differences between these nocturnal events and daytime life. (iii) There are scarcely any daytime experiences so fraught with fear and terror as is pavor nocturnus. Often, clinging in despair to the mother, the child cannot be calmed for hours; sometimes he will linger in a state of confusion with hallucinations for days afterwards; the visible after-effects—insomnia, phobia—may continue for months or even for years. (iv) Through repression they achieve a lasting effect throughout life.

The far-reaching influence of the early infantile pavor nocturnus attack on the genesis of neurosis has been shown elsewhere (40); it is especially conspicuous in the clinical material presented by child analysts (see *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*).

The objection has often been raised that pavor nocturnus is not itself a trauma, but merely the reflection of traumatic experiences sustained in the waking state. This argument loses its pertinence with the recognition that *above and beyond what happened on the preceding day, the pavor nocturnus constitutes an autonomous trauma* for the child. The daily experiential factors, such as frustration, rejection, aggression, anxieties, traumata by no means lose their central importance; but they gain their specific uncanny quality through their revival in anxiety dreams. The repression they engender through their connexion with trauma renders them inaccessible to integration; by the same token, they become effective throughout life. They reappear in the child's play, in neurotic symptoms, and in transference. Although the literature on infantile

neurosis reveals a wealth of material substantiating the effects of infantile pavor nocturnus, there exists a tendency to minimize their impact, probably due to a retrograde projection of the adult's ability to cope with these nocturnal incidents. In his book ten years ago, Fenichel devoted only five lines to pavor nocturnus. Often even the ubiquity of pavor nocturnus is denied. In contrast to that denial, the findings of many child analysts and pediatricians confirm that night terrors are common occurrences in childhood. Jersild, Markey and Jersild (22) conducted a systematic study of the dreams of 400 children: 90 per cent had bad dreams, i.e. dreams of being chased, kidnapped, falling, suffering physical injuries from fire, etc. Louise Despert (2) investigated 190 dreams collected from a group of 43 children, two to five years of age. The dreams were predominantly anxiety dreams. 'The very young child most frequently dreams of being bitten, devoured and chased. What he experiences is an intense fear of being destroyed in a very specific way. He never reports, for instance, being hit, kicked or scratched, all hostile manifestations which the child might have experienced personally. 'Two-year-olds who, when questioned about their dreams, stated: "chase me" . . . "bite me" . . . "eat me up". What they report is a frightful experience occurring during their sleep. . . . Similar statements were reported to have been made at night when they had awakened in terror.' She concludes that the earliest dreams of children represent a threat to the psychobiological unity of the individual.

As to the aetiology of pavor nocturnus, some observers have found causative factors in recent traumatic experiences, such as injuries, operations; others in anxieties arising from the anal conflicts. Some stress the rôle of aggression. The views of Freud and Jones who regard sexual excitation as the main cause have been confirmed over and over again through clinical observation and analysis of pavor nocturnus dreams; it is reflected in old myths and legends (Incubus, Lilith, etc., 23).

How can we explain the connexion between infantile sexual excitation and pavor nocturnus? In previous papers I have advanced the idea that the irrational anxiety attached to sexuality originates not only in external vicissitudes, but in concurrence with the latter in the specific biological constellation of early childhood; namely, in the discrepancy between the immaturity of the somatic sexual apparatus and the premature



psychosexual development, a result of the early infantile traumatic climate with its excessive libidization. Sexual arousal which is not matched by the ability for adequate orgasmic discharge, reproduces the economic constellation of the post-natal traumata; it results in traumatic conditions, that is, in *pavor nocturnus* attacks. Freud states that 'the early contact with the demands of sexuality has the same effect upon the ego as the premature contact with the environment' (9). On the basis of child observation, we may date this early contact with sexuality to the beginning of the second year, i.e. the phase of relative physiological immaturity and shock sensitivity.

I would like to stress that I do not intend to give a résumé of the complicated vicissitudes of the child's sexual development which, stretching over a number of years, in its details, still seems to be obscure. I intend to elucidate one aspect essential for the dynamics of transference, and that is the interaction between trauma and maturation. We know that there is an extensive overlapping and co-existence of the different developmental phases. Traumata in the pre-genital period may result in premature or over-extensive genitalization (17). Traumata in the phallic phase during which manifestations of preceding periods continue with passive as well as active direction, may reinforce still existing pre-genital strivings, or may lead to full regression to pre-genital organization involving ego development and object relationship. We have to consider the effects of the constant interaction between the child's daytime and nocturnal experiences, traumatogenic as well as traumatolytic. In another paper I have hinted at the possibility of an alternation between progressive and regressive phases due to traumatic interferences. All this occurs against the background of progressing maturation, during which the more passive pre-oedipal trends are abandoned and the dual pre-oedipal mother-child symbiosis is gradually replaced by the more active strivings of the triangular oedipal situation. It seems to me that analytic treatment mirrors this alternation between daytime experience and dream, progression and regression, while the patient slowly progresses to maturation.

There seem to be two critical stages of *pavor nocturnus*: one at the beginning of the phallic phase, the other at the height of the oedipal conflict, the latter leading to a new peak of nocturnal anxiety attacks which signifies the decline of the oedipal phase.

We ascribe the passing of the oedipal complex to castration threats and primal scene trauma which Freud calls 'the central experience of the child' (8). Now, neither experience elicits immediate overt signs of a traumatic condition, which we expect to accompany 'the breakthrough of the stimulus barrier.' This may explain why some analysts reject altogether the traumatic character of the oedipal experiences. However, these experiences seem to acquire their traumatic effect to a great extent through their connexion with the nocturnal disturbances. As clinical material shows, reminiscences of the primal scene are always accompanied by the signs of primary trauma described in earlier publications. Therefore, we assume the primal scene trauma to be rather a *pavor nocturnus* elaborating the primal scene than the experience itself. In an analogous way, the castration anxiety which exists in both sexes seems to originate less in daytime experiences which we usually consider causative (such as the view of female genitals, castration threats, etc.), than in their nocturnal elaboration in which the vanishing of the body is displaced on to the stimulated genitals. This is illustrated by Freud's interpretation of the wolf-man dream which at the same time demonstrates the relation between *pavor nocturnus* and infantile neurosis (10).

The neurosis of the wolf-man started with a *pavor nocturnus* at his fourth birthday. He awoke from an anxiety dream with a cry. Freud writes: 'The patient related the dream at a very early stage of the analysis and very soon came to share my conviction that the causes of his infantile neurosis lay concealed behind it.'

In the dream, the strength of his sexual wishes revived the long-forgotten traces in his memory of the scene which was able to show him what sexual satisfaction from his father was like, namely castration; and the result was terror. According to Freud, this dream gave the development of this child its decisive turn. It caused the failure to reach the genital level.

The dream at the age of 4 was, according to Freud, an elaboration of the observation of intercourse at the age of 1½ years. However, we may speculate that the experience at 1½, which was repeated at 4, was rather a *pavor nocturnus* elaborating the witnessing of intercourse than this experience itself.

As to the influence of *pavor nocturnus* on infantile neurosis, there seems to be a relationship between specific forms of *pavor nocturnus* and specific mental disturbances (35).



I would repeat that these formulations do not reduce the importance of all the factors considered influential in the child's development. The nocturnal trauma is one additional factor, albeit an important one. The daytime experiences in turn influence the traumatic climate, either weakening or fortifying the irrational inner threat. The stronger and more reliable the positive object relations, the better is the child able to integrate the traumata. However, this capacity is limited by the oedipal frustration, which consists not only in the inevitable external rejection, but in the increasing interference of sexual excitation with internal traumata. Through *pavor nocturnus* the libidinal dependence of the oedipal period acquires its conflicting triple aspect of gratification, threat, and protection.

The traumatic failure of the oedipal dependence initiates the period of latency which is characterized by the internalization of trauma and defence, by repression and attempts at reparative mastery. The prohibiting superego falls heir to the oedipal dependence, reflecting its gratifying, threatening, and protective aspects. The transference manifestations of the latency period are seen in the growing involvement with social institutions, such as school, groups, etc., preparing a gradual breaking away from the parents as the sole objects of dependence (Bernfeld, Buxbaum, Redl, Zulliger, *et al.*; see 1).

#### PUBERTY AND DEPENDENCE

Dependence is the biological signum of childhood. By reaching the phase of final genital organization, puberty is supposed to end the period of infantile dependence and consequently the need for transference. However, the upsurge of libido at puberty, disrupting the fragile balance of the latency period, not only reactivates the traumatic threat of the oedipal period, but represents an actual traumatic threat in itself. It seems premature as the libidinal thrust leading to the oedipal conflict. Whether justified or not, the general consensus is that uninhibited sexual activity at puberty—intercourse as well as child-bearing—is physically and morally damaging. The pubertal situation, therefore, on its own merits, repeats the traumatic constellation of the oedipal phase, albeit in an attenuated way; on the other hand, the newly acquired capacity for adequate orgasmic discharge, together with the relative social sanction of sexual relationship and the rapidly growing capacity for mastery of the reality, induces anticipation of the individual's

independence and maturity. The outcome of this conflict depends upon quantitative factors. Normally the revived traumata become integrated in terms of adaptation to the changed reality situation (learning); partly they undergo renewed repression. In the neurotic, owing to the morbidity of the revived trauma, both integration and new repression prove deficient. We remember Freud's definition of neurosis as a conflict between repression of the trauma and attempts at its belated mastery, which, in fantasies or acted out, aim at a restitution of the pre-traumatic situation or at an active repetition of the trauma. Because of repression, these attempts are transferred to substitute objects.

The following examples illustrate the attempts at reparative repetition of the oedipal trauma in transference:

i. A patient who suffered from sleep-walking used to interrupt his associations every ten minutes by a stereotyped 'I have to urinate'. His over-possessive and seductive mother had changed his napkins 'every ten minutes' (she does the same with her grandson now). In his sleep-walking—as his wife reported—after having tossed, groaning moaning in his sleep, the patient used to jump out of bed in a panic and run into the kitchen for milk and cake. In previous years he first ran into the bathroom and urinated. 'I have to urinate' meant among other determinations the transference on to the analyst of an unconscious wish to be held and fondled at the penis by the threatening, overpowering mother, the gratification of which, however, meant trauma and castration (*pavor nocturnus*). At the same time it was an attempt to escape from the danger. The wish aimed at a repetition of the trauma and at a defence against it. Once he said, 'When you opened the door of the waiting room, I felt you are the devil looking down at me. There is nobody in the wide world of whom I am more afraid than of my mother. She is a monster. I feel beaten by you; you reject me; *in terms of the demands I make, I must be rejected*. I want to be loved like a little boy. I am afraid of you as a monster—the monster at night being pushed out of bed—just being a lump of flesh in a basket—you hovering over me like a bogey-man. I am afraid of you. *I make the analytical sessions into nightmares.*'

ii. A female patient associates: 'You and my father are like shadows. When you would look at me, I would feel as if I were being *paralysed*. There is something about your eyes which gives me a defenceless feeling like with my father and looking into your eyes is being overpowered. *But I have to look at you and at father as I looked at the giants in the closet*. As a child I had bad dreams about giants. I remember having tried to get out of the



crib because of bad dreams. I saw giants with big clubs. I could not sleep. *I used to keep my eyes on the closet so that the giants could not get out. I had fantasies of monkeys' paws, of men flying through the air, like in my nightmares. I feel that you belong to the men who fly through the air.*' (Scotophilia as defence against trauma.)

The pleas of Freud's patient not to be eaten up, expressed in looking at the pendulum-clock, belong in the same category.

iii. Another patient, associating to his impulses to suck the analyst's penis, stated: 'I feel it difficult to breathe now. I feel rotten. I am afraid to be like mother. I think of my mother sucking at father's penis, biting it, like a cigar (primal scene). My wish to suck your penis is like mother's biting. I think of my fears at night; that a drunkard would come from the bar downstairs into my room (pavor nocturnus). I have a fantasy that my mother is inside me, choking me; like ants, crawling inside my intestines; as if you would crawl inside of me. Your interpretations are crawling into my brain like a spoon taking my brain piece by piece. I have thought of it a couple of times: *analysis is your crawling inside of me. Not being able to breathe is the feeling of having my mother in my chest, having a growing tumour in my chest.*' The analytical situation became a repetition of the primal scene trauma (i.e. a pavor nocturnus, in which the patient identified with his mother).

#### DEFINITION OF TRANSFERENCE

*We therefore like to define transference as a displaced attempt at reparative mastery of normally occurring infantile traumata, i.e. of the traumatic failure of the oedipal dependence and that of earlier dependence needs revived by it. Because of the function of libidinal gratification as defence against trauma, this reparative mastery is conceived as gratification of unfulfilled libidinal wishes.* Transference is a structured, complex pattern which must be understood in terms of specific phases of libidinal dependence. It is ambivalent by nature. We have to differentiate between the latent transference pattern (transference readiness: Nunberg) and the specific partial aspect of actual manifest transference elicited by a specific situation. Transference provides for the discharge of tensions stemming from unresolved traumata, i.e. of tensions attached to situations which, because of their traumatic character, have become subject to repression. Undoubtedly there exists also fixation to pleasurable experiences (pleasure principle) which presses for repetition. But the demonic compulsion to repeat, with the dis-

regard for reality which is characteristic of transference, can be explained only by the imperative need for self-preservation. The infantile drives receive their insatiable quality—and in neurotics their pathogenic strength—through their function as defence against trauma.

That in transference libidinal gratification is sought because of its protective function is illustrated by the statement of a homosexual patient: 'Getting help from you is like sucking your penis; sucking is pleading for help, reaching out; desperate craving for help. Words do not help. I want something else than words, magic help.'

The dual aspect of transference mirrors the dual motivation of human behaviour; the striving for pleasure and the warding off of trauma in order to survive, a differentiation at which Freud (9) pointed.

There is a similarity between the definition of transference and that of neurosis. Actually, transference is one of the general aspects of neurotic behaviour (Ferenczi). Freud spoke of neurosis in terms of transference neurosis. Therefore it is not limited to the analytic situation. It is activated by any appropriate external or internal stimuli symbolizing the original traumatic situation. Any libidinal stimulation will stir up wishes for protection; any dependence, wishes for libidinal gratification. Yet reality-syntonic and transference attitudes exist side by side, revealing a split of ego. For example, the neurotic reacts to a physician or judge in terms of his real functions and at the same time as if he were the father.

The strength and the character of transference are determined by the quality of the underlying traumata. The more morbid the underlying anxiety, the more imperatively does the need for reparative mastery prevail over the urge to master the present reality, the more is the reality-syntonic attitude overruled by transference. In his personal relationship, the psychotic seems to react predominantly via transference. His withdrawal too is transference, namely a repetition of his defences against extreme infantile vulnerability.

#### NORMAL TRANSFERENCE

It must be admitted that transference also influences to a certain extent the behaviour of the so-called normal person. Actually, his transference behaviour differs from that of the neurotic only in degree. This normal transference originates not only in the early infantile traumata, but also in the fact that owing to the incompatibility



of orgasm and controlling ego function, sexual gratification carries a somewhat traumatic meaning even to the normal adult (orgasm: *la petite mort*). Cultural taboos reinforce this effect. Hence, oedipal dependence persists even in the normal person. His transference need is used up in the group formations of society and its institutions: family, state, church, political parties, etc. It is symbolized in such expressions as 'Fatherland', 'Mother Church', 'God the Father', 'Brotherhood', etc. In this case the unrealistic quality of transference is offset by its usefulness in human relations and by the realistic protection which society and its institutions afford. This transference is complemented by its counterpart, the parental attitude, in which—while giving—the provider identifies with the receiving child. It is a fascinating question whether human society could exist at all without some of the illusion transference provides. Yet human relationship is not based on transference alone. It includes autonomous responses to specific signs, which could be classified as 'autonomous behaviour'. That the analyst's attitude is a break with a fundamental requisite of social relationship creates a number of problems.

#### CLINICAL TRANSFERENCE

The analytic situation does not create transference as such, but it is especially designed to foster and uncover it. Clinical transference, as we may call the transference in the clinical situation, is a response to the specific stimuli of the treatment situation. The patient enters the transference the very moment he enters the office. The tacit promises of cure which the treatment situation implies, and which the patient unconsciously conceives as fulfilment of all unresolved, unsatisfied wishes, together with the concomitants of the analytic situation (recumbent position, etc.), makes overt specific parts of the transference pattern. The inevitable frustration of the patient's expectation, together with the upsurge of traumatic reminiscences in analysis, remobilize the infantile conflicts and create the so-called transference neurosis. In the latter, the manifest aspects of the transference complex are replaced by the unfolding of the latent transference manifestations relating to earlier phases of libidinal dependence.

Positive and negative transference, however, do not refer to a specific part of the transference pattern; rather, they seem to be technical terms, referring to the emotional colouring of the

actual relationship between patient and doctor. They include transferred emotions, as well as emotional responses to transference phenomena. Positive transference may accompany the expectation of wish-fulfilment and protection; negative transference the revival of earlier deprivation and traumata. However, the positive transference deriving from submissive denial of hostility is wholly different from that accompanying passionate libidinal wishes.

#### PROBLEMS AND TECHNIQUE

The theory here presented implies to some degree a shift of emphasis in the concept of transference and defence. The prevailing concept of transference as a repetition of oedipal instincts is replaced by a more holistic one which, stressing the libidinal as well as the protective aspects, describes transference in terms of the specific phases of libidinal dependence. This may bring into sharper focus the goal of our therapeutic efforts. We may distinguish two different techniques with regard to transference: the one, which provides gratification of the transferred dependence wishes, carries a magic undoing of oedipal trauma; it may permit some awareness of irrational attitudes and may be used for encouragement to new corrective experiences, which are assumed to lead to a reconditioning. The analytical technique aims at maturation of the infantile components of the patient's personality through dissolution of transference. This can be achieved only through the integration of infantile traumata. Repressed infantile drives gain access to the conscious only in the degree in which the repressed traumata connected with it are integrated, i.e. have been made obsolete by a new living through. That the goal of the analytical therapy has always been the integration of infantile trauma is demonstrated in our case histories, beginning with that of the wolfman, when Freud states that the repetition of the primal scene became the condition for his recovery (10), up to a recent publication (21) which reports that 'the tide turned at last' when 'the primal scene could be worked through in transference'. We know that here is the basic difficulty: the primary trauma seems to be the 'bedrock' which we meet in our efforts. 'The earliest experiences of childhood are no longer obtainable as such, they are replaced in analysis by "transference" and "dreams"' (10). What we meet in the clinical material are the derivatives of the traumata in symptoms, screen memories, dreams, and fantasies. Their traumatic



relevance can be ascertained through the specific signs of primary trauma which I have described in another paper (Stern, 1951). The analytical treatment is a revival in transference of the child's incessant attempts at overcoming the infantile trauma. This is especially obvious in child analysis. In the analysis of the adult we succeed in a piecemeal integration of the infantile traumata through interpretation of the 'surface', which presents the whole gamut of defences against their induced repetition. Thus we achieve a maturation of the libidinal organization. Progress in therapy is determined by the ability of the ego to cope with the re-emerging traumatic threats (mobilization of anxiety). This ability varies widely with the differences in structure of the neuroses, morbidity of the underlying trauma, ego strength, actual life situation, etc.

The hypothesis presented may induce some

variations in the usual technique. Dramatic short cuts—such as Ferenczi attempted through letting the patient relive the trauma in a state of trance—cannot be expected. Maturation is bound to a time factor which cannot be eliminated.

#### SUMMARY

Transference is an attempt at reparative mastery of the traumatic failure of the infantile dependence displaced to substitute objects. The fixation in transference can be defined as fixation to the anxiety-reducing effect of libidinal dependence; the latter refers to the protective function of libidinal gratification in the early infantile relations. The amalgamation in libidinal dependence of gratification and defence against trauma points to a dual aspect of transference.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) BUXBAUM, EDITH. 'Transference and Group Formation in Children and Adolescents.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 1945, 1.
- (2) DESPERT, LOUISE J. 'Dreams and Children.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 1949, 3/4.
- (3) FERENCZI, SANDOR. *Introjection and Transference*. (Boston: Gorham, 1916.)
- (4) — (1934). 'Gedanken über das Trauma.' *Int. Z. f. Psychoanal.*, 20.
- (5) FRAIBERG, SELMA (1950). 'On the Sleep Disturbances of Early Childhood.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 5.
- (6) FREUD, ANNA. *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence*. (London: Hogarth, 1948.)
- (7) — (1952). 'The mutual Influences in the Development of Ego and Id.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 7.
- (8) FREUD, SIGMUND. *Moses and Monotheism*. (New York: Knopf, 1939.)
- (9) — (1920). 'Beyond the Pleasure Principle.' *Standard Ed.*, 18.
- (10) — (1918). 'From the History of an Infantile Neurosis.' *Standard Ed.*, 17.
- (11) — (1926). 'Inhibition, Symptoms and Anxiety.' *Standard Ed.*, 20.
- (12) — (1912). 'The Dynamics of Transference.' *Standard Ed.*, 12.
- (13) — (1938). *An Outline of Psychoanalysis*. (New York: Norton, 1949.)
- (14) GESELL, A. *Infant and Child in the Culture of Today*. (New York: Harper, 1943.)
- (15) GLOVER, E. (1928). 'Lectures on Technique in Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 9.
- (16) — (1947). 'Basic Mental Concepts.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 16.
- (17) GREENACRE, PHYLLIS. *Trauma, Growth, and Personality*. (New York: Norton, 1952.)
- (18) — (1953). 'Certain Relationships Between Fetishism and the Faulty Development of the Body Image.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 8.
- (19) HARTMANN, HEINZ, et al. (1947). 'Comments on the Formation of Psychic Structure.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 2.
- (20) HOFFER, WILLIE (1952). 'The Mutual Influences in the Development of Ego and Id. Earliest Stages.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 7.
- (21) JACOBSON, EDITH (1954). 'Transference Problems in the Psychoanalytic Treatment of Severely Depressive Patients.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2.
- (22) JERSILD, MARKEY, and JERSILD. *Children's Fears, Dreams, Wishes, Day-dreams, and Likes*. (Teacher's College, 1933.)
- (23) JONES, ERNEST. *On the Nightmare*. (London: Hogarth, 1931.)
- (24) KLEIN, MELANIE. *Die Psychoanalyse des Kindes*. (Vienna: Int. Psychoanal. Verlag, 1932.)
- (25) LIDELL, HOWARD S. *The Rôle of Vigilance in the Development of Animal Neurosis in Anxiety*. (New York: Grune and Stratton, 1950.)
- (26) MAHLER, MARGARET S. (1952). 'On Child Psychosis and Schizophrenia.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 7.
- (27) MAHLER, S. and ELKISCH, P. (1953). 'Some Observations on Disturbances of the Ego in a Case of Infantile Psychosis.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 8.
- (28) MASSERMAN, JULES H. *Behavior and Neurosis*. (Chicago: Univers. of Chicago Press, 1943.)
- (29) MEERLOO, J. and COLEMAN, M. (1951). 'The Transference Function.' *Psychoanal. Rev.*, 38.



- (30) NUNBERG, HERMAN (1951). 'Transference and Reality.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **32**.
- (31) ORR, DOUGLAS W. (1954). 'Transference and Countertransference.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, **2**.
- (32) RIBBLE, MARGARET A. (1939). 'Disorganizing Factors of Infant Personality.' *J. Nerv. and Mental D.*, **90**.
- (33) SELYE, HANS. *Stress*. (Montreal: Acta, Inc., 1950.)
- (34) SILVERBERG, W. V. (1948). 'The Concept of Transference.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, **17**.
- (35) SPERLING, MELITTA. *Pavor Nocturnus*. To be published.
- (36) SPITZ, RENÉ (1945). 'Hospitalism.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, **1**.
- (37) — 'Infantile Depression and the General Adaptation Syndrome.' In *Depression*, ed. Hoch and Zubin. (New York: Grune and Stratton, 1954.)
- (38) STERN, MAX M. (1951). 'Anxiety, Trauma and Shock.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, **20**.
- (39) — (1951). 'Pavor Nocturnus.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **32**.
- (40) — (1953). 'Trauma and Symptom Formation.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **34**.

(Received 20 June, 1955.)



# SOME NOTES ON A DYING PATIENT

By

BERYL SANDFORD, LONDON

A few years ago I wrote a paper about an obsessional man who needed to be 'kept' (5). The paper dealt with certain aspects of the first four years of his analysis, leading up to his first tentative attempts to earn his living—the only attempts (except for some months during the war) for sixteen years. This paper is the sequel.

Fairly early on in his analysis I formed the opinion that this man's development would inevitably follow one of two lines: he would either become a business magnate, and probably local mayor, or he would end in a mental hospital. He did end in a hospital, though not a mental hospital. After achieving his heart's desire as the highly successful owner-manager of a hardware store for nearly a year he developed cancer of the lung and died.

I am writing this paper because his death and the manner of it seem to me to raise a whole host of queries to which as yet we have no answer. It would, I think, be better if I tell my story first and put my queries afterwards, and I will therefore try to give a brief sketch of his case up to the time of the outbreak of his physical illness, stressing in particular the aspects which are pertinent to my theme. I will then describe in more detail the last few sessions which I had with him shortly before he died.

Mr. A. came to me for analysis in 1946 with a severe neurosis of such long standing that it seemed to have become part of his total personality. It was very doubtful whether analysis could do much for a chronic case of this type. To give all his symptoms would take up far too much time, and I have already described them in the first paper ('An Obsessional Man's Need to be Kept'). Suffice it to say that, when he first came to me, he was a very ill man mentally, suffering not only from every type of obsessional ritual—continuous handwashing, etc.—but also from delusions of a paranoid nature. When he started analysis, he was spending his time shut up in his bedroom, leaving it only to come to

analysis. His wife had to accompany him to the clinic where I was treating him and, owing to his many agoraphobic obsessional fears, the journey (actually about three-quarters of an hour) took several hours to accomplish. Added to this he had delusions of having starved the world, and refused to read a newspaper or to listen to the wireless for fear of hearing himself publicly branded as the man who had destroyed humanity.

Mr. A. was aged 37 when he started treatment. He was the picture of health and was, in fact, being continually irritated by doctors slapping him on the back and telling him that if everyone was as fit as he was doctors would go out of business. This he found particularly annoying when he was applying for sickness benefit. He appeared to be as well physically as he was ill mentally. As I wrote in my last paper, 'Everything about him, both mental and physical, seemed to give the impression of being a little larger than life', and he always talked—and indeed behaved—as though acting in Victorian melodrama.

He was the youngest of three children, the two elder being twins, brother and sister. His mother, who, before she married, was a children's nurse, resembled him very much in character and shared many of his symptoms; his father, who was a builder, suffered from tuberculosis and died of a coronary thrombosis when Mr. A. was 30.

Mr. A.'s education had been limited to a primary school where he made no mark at all, not because he lacked intelligence by any means, but because he was a severely disturbed child.

He had been married ten years when he started analysis, but was childless. At that time he and his wife, who had varicose ulcers, were living on sickness benefit, which in 1946 was very meagre indeed. It was therefore agreed that he should be treated for nothing until times were better, but, as I remarked in my previous

<sup>1</sup> Paper read before the British Psycho-Analytical Society on 4 May, 1955.



paper, 'It soon became apparent that he was unconsciously using Machiavellian methods to make sure that times did *not* get better.'

Except for the period when she was suffering from varicose ulcers, his wife had always kept him, by going to out work as a secretary. She not only earned the money, but also fell in with all his obsessional needs. She washed things over and over again for him; she acquiesced in accumulating what he called 'pockets of resistance' in the house, that is to say, great heaps and cupboardfuls of so-called contaminated objects which must not be touched; she stood about with him in the street in all weathers when he dared not move for fear of killing people; she walked back and forth with him when he feared he had dropped 'dangerous deadly things' in the road; and she agreed to all the complicated rituals necessary before and after sexual intercourse.

During the first two years of his analysis he was intensely hostile most of the time; he flung insults at me, mocked me, shouted me down, and seemed to be doing his best to be as hateful as possible. He continually tried to control me omnipotently and seemed to need to surround himself with persecutors in order to prove that he could control them. The working through of his many oral, anal, and urethral phantasies of destroying his mother's inside and all that was therein brought a considerable reduction in his obsessional symptoms and, as might be expected, a temporary increase in his paranoid anxieties. He also developed manic reactions which were for a time very disquieting.

In 1948 his sickness benefit was raised to 26/- per week, and he clung to it tenaciously since it represented the 'good breast' that must always be at his beck and call. If it was a day late, his anxiety was intense because he feared he had emptied the 'good breast' and was being punished. The Ministry of Pensions—in fact all officials in Government departments—were to him persecuting figures and at one time this fear became delusional and he really believed they were plotting against him.

At the end of three years there was considerable improvement in every way. He no longer needed to be continually washing his hands and he had reduced the number of rituals necessary before and after intercourse; he had cleared up some of the 'pockets of resistance' in his house and was able to get out and about with ease with his wife and to a limited extent by himself. One symptom, however, was never reduced in

intensity, and that was that he could not allow his mother to come into his house for fear of contaminating her. When he started treatment no-one at all was allowed in the house, but by the end of the third year of analysis he did allow his brother and some friends to enter freely. But although he longed to invite his mother in, he found this utterly impossible. He visited her frequently and would meet her any time and anywhere except at his own home. The house was himself and the 'good mother' must be kept outside and away from the 'bad mother' whom he kept inside him in an attempt to control her and keep the external mother ideal. It is of interest that at one time during his boyhood, and even since, he had felt compelled to eat things which appeared to him to be dirty or damaged, leaving, as he put it, the 'good things outside'. And his mother would punish him when he was naughty by herself refusing to eat anything until he was 'good again'. There appears to have been much unconscious collusion between them, in the same way as there was between him and his wife.

At the end of four years of analysis he was still not earning any money, but he was now working very hard in a voluntary capacity, making a name for himself on the local town council, and proving himself to be a man of quite exceptional ability and an excellent public speaker. A recurring theme now began to reveal itself very plainly, a theme of the greatest importance and one which dominated his whole life. This theme or pattern is best described by saying it was like a line which rises steadily for a time and then drops down suddenly and is lost.

I will quote some examples of this. While working hard as organizer of a charity fête he remarked to me, 'I shall resign from the committee when the fête is successfully over—I shall just pack up and fade out'. Later, when telling me about how he won a sports trophy when he was 13, he described how he had jumped the high jump and then collapsed on landing and had lain there unable to move, though there was nothing physically wrong with him. He also described how, after being cheered for winning the trophy, he ran to his mother and, to quote his own words, 'blotted himself out' and clung to her. Though he rarely dreamed, he did have two dreams both of which are on this theme. The first dream in 1947 was: 'I came up, up, up to the treatment room and then went down, down, down and sank in a sort of a faint at the bottom of the stairs.' The second dream, a



year later, was: 'I was climbing up a sand-dune, very high up, and then I sank down, down, down and was blotted out in some quicksands.' From his associations the first dream was linked with his oedipal anxieties and represented his fear of being castrated following an erection and orgasm, by a terrifying father-figure almost invariably imagined hidden inside his mother. The second dream—in which there is a play on my name—seemed to show not so much a castration as a union with a mother-figure, and this symbolic union with a mother-figure has had to be repeated over and over again all through his life. And inasmuch as he unconsciously imagined that his mother had incorporated his father, this represented a union with both parents.

A question which he had continually asked his mother since early childhood was, in his own words: 'When will I be hung?' Being hanged meant to him 'the big drop into oblivion', and gradually began to be understood not only as a fear but also as a wish—the wish to be blotted out in his mother. In a sense he may be said to have been going through a phase of 'blotting out' when he first came to me for analysis; he was spending all his time shut in his room refusing to hear or see and, as far as possible, not moving, speaking, or eating.

It was not until he had had four years of analysis that he first made some tentative attempts to make money. He then started to earn small sums as an insurance agent, but still did not dare to pay me anything for his analysis since paying me meant forcing bad anal stuff into me. Later on, however, he took to bringing me fruit which he had grown himself in his own garden, and during the early summer of 1951 he brought me some every Friday—one week gooseberries, then red currants, then black currants, and then strawberries. I have never seen such perfect fruit. He must have spent hours picking, washing, and sorting it. There was never a bad one in the baskets, not even among the currants, and he brought me about 5 lb. at a time. Many phantasies of omnipotently and magically feeding his mother with ideal food, in a desperate attempt to repair the damage he always feared he had done to her, had to be worked through, and this era of fruit-giving, which was accompanied by much depression, ushered in a new phase. He began to think seriously about getting paid work and he set about trying to get a job in real earnest. He was obviously unfitted to work in a firm with

strangers, because, although he had improved considerably, he would still be compelled to resort to many obsessional acts and to be over-conscientious and meticulous in a way which would be extremely trying for those with whom he worked.

His chance came when a shop nearly opposite his house became empty and to let. Here he could be sole owner of the shop with the help of his wife, who, as I have said, played so completely into his obsessional scheme of things. It took him many months to come to his final decision to embark on this venture and, at long last, to renounce his 26/- a week sickness benefit, the 'good breast' which it seemed at one time he would never be able to give up. After months of obsessional haggling over the rent and arguing endlessly over repairs, alterations, and what not, he raised a mortgage on his house, borrowed some money from his brother, and took the premises. His idea was to run a hardware business with a good deal of stress on the selling of paraffin. He set to work with the most amazing efficiency, stocking his shop with every conceivable type of ironmongery.

He had now been in analysis for seven years coming five days a week, but if he was to run his shop successfully it was not going to be possible to continue coming five days a week, since his shop and his home were outside London. It was therefore decided that while getting his shop going, he would stop coming regularly but would come as often as he could on early closing day and later resume regular sessions when the business was established.

The shop was opened in March 1953 and the analysis remained in abeyance for a few weeks while Mr. A. was getting things organized. He phoned on one or two occasions to tell me how things were getting on—and to make sure that I was still alive—and then before I went away for my summer holiday he was able to come three times a week for a while. He now proudly paid ten shillings a session. He was happy in this work, which was what he had always wanted to do, and he was happy that his wife no longer had to go out to work to keep him. But he was over-working and sitting up half the night doing his accounts. Difficulty in getting to bed before two or three in the morning had always been a symptom, and one in which his wife participated. It was very overdetermined. On the one hand, he felt he must keep awake in order to control his parents. When young he would lie awake at night listening to make sure they were not dead.



On the other hand, we came to see that sleep meant to him being swallowed up by his mother and he was torn between his fear of being blotted out in her and losing his identity, and his wish for this complete fusion with her.

He soon had an assistant working in the shop with his wife. This was a woman friend of theirs. He was very fond of this woman, explaining to me that she was interested in psychology and that he could talk to her about his own difficulties and help her with hers. Having this friend in the shop with whom he could 'talk psychology' was amongst other things one of the ways in which he tried to cope with his feelings of deprivation over the reduced number of sessions.

By the autumn of 1953, the business was beginning to pay—and to pay well. He told me that he was running his shop on what he called 'the long-term policy of the slow build-up', adding, 'but you mustn't think the shop will flop. It won't'. Now that things were really getting under way, he foresaw that in the spring he would be able to resume regular analytic sessions, and this was the tacit agreement when I saw him on 23 December, 1953. He obviously still needed analytic help, but he seemed to be coping quite well, and I would like to stress emphatically that there were no unusual or disquieting features revealed in the sessions we had at that time. There were the usual grumbles and the usual imagined persecution of hidden enemies (in this case the new Woolworths which had just opened near him). There was also the usual guilt—and the usual grumbles—about his woman friend who was identified with me and on whom he was apt to work out his transference feelings. It was the familiar pattern. Physically he looked a little tired, as well he might with all the work he was doing, but he seemed quite well.

On 3 February, five weeks later, Mr. A. phoned me and asked whether he could come and see me. This was rather sooner than he had anticipated resuming regular analysis, but he said he suddenly felt he wanted to come. There was something urgent in his manner, and I made an appointment to see him on the evening of the following day.

I was so impressed with this session that the moment he left I wrote down as much as I could while it was still fresh in my mind, and I think I can best convey it by quoting these notes.

I did not make a full note of all my interpretations, but merely indicated their general

trend. He mentioned his surname frequently in the session, and I will give him the pseudonym of 'Amos'.

The notes start: 'He bounded upstairs in front of me—what a hefty chap he is', and then continue, 'He was a bit vague about why he'd come. The shop was doing well—very well. In spite of competition. Two big ironmongers had opened nearby, but he'd held his own. The shop wouldn't flop. He said he saw to it that his shop always had everything people wanted, no matter what they asked for. He had got a slogan now to write across the shop front—"Amos has got it"—and whatever it was he would see to it that he had got it. He had been riding all over the town buying all sorts of unusual things so that he could supply whatever was demanded of him. "Amos has got it." And he was going to spread now. He said he was negotiating for a second shop and hoped to spread further and further, all over the country. He kept repeating, "Amos has got it." He now had two assistants and a delivery van and a man to drive it. He arrived tonight in the delivery van. His woman friend was still working in the shop. He had no need to feel guilty about this as he loved his wife and couldn't do without her. He just wanted to make this woman friend happy. He felt she was happy—happy as a sand-boy. In fact last week he paid her a bonus of ten shillings. (Here I pointed out that he paid me ten shillings so that I was the sand-boy he wanted to make happy. The shop was the perfect breast—the hardwearing breast—which supplied everything.) He asked me anxiously whether I had been having any more of my bad colds and told me that I shouldn't smoke so much. Said he was always worried about me having bad colds and smoking. Said he had been doing his best to keep everyone warm during the recent cold spell and had supplied paraffin to the bungalows and caravans in the neighbourhood. He had been trudging knee-deep through the snow with huge drums of paraffin under each arm delivering it to the caravans. Said, "You know, I *am* a strong chap." He let people bring their cans and he rationed it out. He had sold 600 gallons a week during the cold spell, when the snow was so deep. During this period he kept open till 9 o'clock for people to fetch their cans—of course, he asked the police whether this was in order and the police had said, "Go ahead, old man." He wouldn't dream of breaking the law. The police couldn't have been kinder. He said he wanted everyone to be happy and satisfied.



(I pointed out that he was keeping me good, keeping me warm and seeing I did not get destroyed by cold, smoke, etc., etc.). He said the income-tax man had written asking whether he could help and advise him with the accounts; a very nice letter indeed. But A. had to laugh at the idea of needing help with his accounts. He was up half the night doing accounts. They were perfect. He knew he ought to get to bed earlier and intended to do so now that he'd got the business going and his accounts in first-class order. They were taking as much as £200 a week these days. He said that he'd soon be able to stop the drudgery and get his second shop going and teach the others to run the business without him. It was a good business. He'd soon be the manager of two shops. "Amos has got it." Paraffin was dangerous stuff. But there couldn't be a fire in the shop because all the paraffin was kept in special containers in a special cement room. He couldn't bear to think of a fire starting because if it did it would spread and spread and spread. But he was sure the shop was all right. The shop wouldn't flop and it contained everything anyone could want. (I said that the shop was the good part of himself, the part which could supply everything and which was safe from danger, and he had split it off from another part of himself, a part where he feared the fire would spread and spread.) He repeated, "Yes, the shop's all right, the *shop* won't flop—but there are still some 'pockets of resistance' in the *house*."

This finishes my notes, but I had added a short and rather facetious postscript. I wrote: 'There must be something very wrong with A. if he starts being nice about the income-tax man', and I added, 'All his persecutors seem to be internalized. Goodness knows what horrors are going on inside him!'

As it happened, this footnote was only too correct—there were indeed horrors going on inside him. But I admit that I did not think then of the possibility of cancer. What I feared after this session was that he was heading for a psychotic breakdown, and I was very glad that he was coming back to have regular sessions, starting in four days' time. It was not only the manic nature of the analytic material that was disquieting—the whole atmosphere of the session was quite unlike any of the sessions we had had before, even during the turbulent time in 1948 and 1949 when on several occasions I feared he might have to go to a mental hospital, either with a paranoid breakdown or a violent attack of mania.

The day before he was due for his next session, his wife phoned to tell me that he was ill; he had 'fibrositis in his shoulders and bronchitis', and the doctor had ordered him to stay in bed for a few days. Five days later his wife phoned again to say that the illness appeared to be more serious than was at first thought; Mr. A. now had pneumonia. This phone call was followed closely by another; she now told me that he had 'an abscess on his lung' and was in a chest hospital, but was soon to be moved to another hospital to have deep X-ray treatment, since massive doses of penicillin had produced no results. I asked Mrs. A. whether her husband would care to see me, and she eagerly said yes. She had, in fact, already asked the hospital if I might come, and I was given *carte blanche* by the hospital authorities to come when and as often as I could. I could not take full advantage of this kind offer because both hospitals were quite a long way outside London, but I greatly appreciated the way in which I was at all times welcomed and supplied with information.

When I arrived at the hospital on my first visit I was greeted by the ward sister, who confirmed my worst fears by saying, 'Of course, you know that it is cancer of the lung.' She said they were at their wits' end to know what to do to ease his anxiety. No matter how often they told him he had not got cancer, he repeated his question—'Have I got it?'—over and over again. The sister, a charming and intuitive woman, was very worried about this, but the orders were that he must on no account be told the truth.

I must admit that I entered that ward feeling more than a little apprehensive and wondering how I could best help him. He was right in the middle of a busy ward; it was not visiting time, so I was all the more conspicuous; patients were being washed; one was moaning; one was vomiting; outside there was a big stadium in which a football match was being played to the accompaniment of deafening cheers. But the moment I sat down beside Mr. A., the place became for *him* my consulting room and the fact that he had become quite oblivious to his surroundings helped me to be oblivious too. His first words were: 'Thank God you've come. They mean to be very kind here, they couldn't be kinder. They tell me all sorts of things—but they don't understand. But *you* understand, don't you?' I said, 'Yes, I understand—and what you want me to understand is what is



going on inside you—all the destruction that is going on inside you.' He smiled with relief and said yes.

I stayed with him for fifty minutes; he talked and I did my best to interpret. He was very breathless and found it difficult to speak above a whisper. Now and then he just lay there panting. He had not yet had any X-ray treatment and was, needless to say, dreading this. He not only felt it as an attack but also as a hideous impingement, and it became clear that he regarded his cancer as an agent for the destruction of the bad persecuting things inside him and he resented any attempt to destroy that agent.

He told me that he found it quite impossible to eat anything, especially the delicacies which his wife brought him. I told him that he feared that his wife would be destroyed inside him by the process of destruction which he felt going on within him. During the whole of this visit he did not mention the word cancer and neither did I.

He spent two more days at this hospital before being moved to another for his X-ray treatment. During these two days he ate much better, stopped asking whether he had got cancer, managed to get up and walk around a little and occupied himself mostly with helping another patient cope with a deep depression, apparently with great success. I had had a talk with the ward sister which she seemed to find helpful. I was sorry that he had to be moved, and so was the sister, who said, 'I wish they wouldn't give him deep X-ray. He is the sort who dies under it', intuitively understanding his persecutory anxiety and paranoid fears.

I saw him a week later after he had had some deep X-ray. He was very distressed about leaving the other hospital, saying that the last two days there had been happy because Sister understood him. Here he feared that no one understood him. They were very kind indeed, but they kept telling him that there was nothing serious about the matter with him and that he would soon be well. And he suddenly shot the question at me, 'Am I very ill indeed?' I said, 'Yes, you always do things in a big way, don't you?' He smiled, thought a minute, and then said, 'I like that because it means that I can do good things in a big way, too.' And he talked of the shop which his wife was managing to carry on successfully in his absence.

He then showed me both his hands, saying, 'They are quite dead', and adding, 'but no-one

else knows this.' It was his *left* lung which was the one under treatment, and he laid stress on the fact that his right hand felt as dead as his left hand. He spoke mysteriously, and I was reminded of a session we had at the time of the King's death. Mr. A. had become very importantly secretive, as he was given to doing on occasions, and had remarked (as though no one else had thought of it), 'I wouldn't want it known, so please don't repeat it outside the treatment room, but I personally am sure that the King died of a coronary thrombosis and cancer of the lung'. And I remember saying to him that the secret he was telling me about was the secret of his own inside. When he told me about his 'dead hands' I did wonder whether he was telling me that his right lung was affected as well as the left. However, I was told that according to the many X-rays taken it was apparently still sound.

The next time I saw Mr. A., about a week later, all hope of achieving anything by means of deep X-ray was gone and it was now being given to him merely as a palliative. This was told to me by the doctor in charge of the ward whom I saw before I went in to see Mr. A. The doctor said he was very glad I had come as Mr. A. was so much easier to nurse after I had been there and reacted much better to sedation. The question of sedation was quite a problem, because Mr. A. would manage to stay awake even after maximum doses of powerful sedatives. On the evenings immediately following my visits, however, he had gone to sleep without difficulty. Another problem which was bothering both the doctor and the nursing staff at the moment was a urethral symptom: he was insisting on drinking quarts of water and urinating continually and then complaining that he had not passed enough urine and must have more and more water to drink. They had tested his urine several times but could find nothing abnormal. The doctor, realizing that this was a neurotic symptom, asked me if I could do something about it as it was exhausting Mr. A. and giving the nurses a great deal of anxiety and extra work. They were doing their best to understand and help him in every way, and I cannot speak too highly of the patience and compassion shown by all the hospital staff for this very difficult patient.

Mr. A. was in a rather comatose state most of the time while I was with him, and he kept slipping into unconsciousness and returning to say, 'Ah, you have come back. You always



come back.' He kept repeating, 'The shop is good. Have you seen my shop? You must go and see my shop. It has got everything in it.' I said he was telling me that I was the good breast which always came back and he was offering me his hardware shop, his good 'hardwaring' breast, which supplied everything good and which never wore out. A little later he mentioned the water-drinking and urinating, and asked me why he did this. I said I thought he was busy washing all the 'bad' out of his inside and trying to make everything inside him as 'good' as the good shop outside him. He wanted everything to be ideal both inside and out. He said, 'Yes, that's right'. I heard afterwards that after this visit he completely gave up this obsessional water-drinking and urinating, and appeared happy and serene.

I promised to come and see him the following Monday, four days later, but he died on the Sunday. The day after the funeral his wife told me the story of the final days. On the evening before he died, while she was visiting him, he suddenly sat up and said, 'The miracle has happened. All is now goodness.' Next day, which was Easter Sunday, his wife, his mother, and his brother came to see him. He was smiling and talking happily, and was surprised to see his mother was crying and said, 'Doesn't she know about the miracle?' His wife had brought him a plate of chicken, 'a nice piece of breast' which she said she had arranged 'ever so prettily on a dish'. He looked at it and said, 'What a lovely white breast. I would like some.' His wife put her arm round him and started to feed him and at the second mouthful he fell back, dead.

The cause of death on his certificate was: (1) Coronary thrombosis; (2) cancer of the bronchus.

The hospital had not been able to come to a conclusion about the extent of the damage to the lung while he was alive, and asked to be allowed to do a post-mortem. Mrs. A. read me the letter telling of the result. They said that the result surprised them. The extent of the damage was far greater than they had suspected. Not only was the left lung, which they were treating, completely destroyed, but the right one, which they thought was sound, was to a considerable extent destroyed as well. The letter ended by saying that it was amazing that he could have gone on living for so long.

Naturally, after an experience of this sort, one cannot help asking whether one could have done

more, and whether one could have prevented the fatal outcome. Questions abound. Did he have to have a fatal illness to ward off a psychosis? Can cancer be psychogenic or psychologically motivated? If so, why did he choose cancer and not tuberculosis in identification with his father? Does a physical predisposition come in here, and had he always, as it were, the seeds of cancer dormant within him ready to be used by him when needed?

Be that as it may, the interplay between his physical sensations and his phantasies seems clear both in the session I have quoted and also in the incident of the 'two dead hands'. In the session he was, in my opinion, unconsciously telling me that he knew he had a cancer inside him which would 'spread and spread', and with regard to the hands he seems to have been telling me that unconsciously he knew that his right lung was diseased as well as the left one.

With regard to the manner of his death, this was characteristic of him; as I said earlier, he always talked and even behaved as though acting in Victorian melodrama. Obviously the material I have given can be interpreted in various ways. His death while eating 'the good white breast' can be seen as his final destruction by a bad internal devouring mother. But it seems to me that this is only one aspect of what was happening. Obviously, one of his difficulties had always been his inability to cope with his ambivalence in a mature way, and his solution seems to have been to split himself, and his mother, into two—the external good, hardwaring, all-supplying breast and the internal bad, cancer breast. When he felt that the destruction was complete within, he could say, 'All is now goodness', and become one with the ideal mother.

In this connexion I would like to quote from two rather different authors: Charles Dickens and Bertram Lewin.

Dickens (1), writing of a boy who is dying of consumption, says, 'There is a dread disease in which the struggle between soul and body is so gradual, quiet and solemn, and the result so sure, that day by day, and grain by grain, the mortal part wastes and withers away, so that the spirit grows light and sanguine with its lightening load and, feeling immortality at hand, deems it but a new term of mortal life. . . .'

Lewin (4) writes: '... the breast is often condensed psychologically with a super-ego, a deathless one with which the ego identifies itself, so that it can participate in its immortality. Along with the active devouring fantasies goes



the sense of yielding to the deathless figure, relaxing into it, and ultimately joining it in sleep or in a sleeplike state.'

Lewin also writes: 'In the desired sleep state related to ecstasy, we meet the quality of immortality, the unending heavenly bliss. . . . Union with the immortal super-ego forms a prominent feature and the sense of immortality is a function of the fusion.'

It seems to me that this question of ecstasy, sleep and the libidinization of death was an important factor in Mr. A.'s need to be blotted out in a perfect union with an ideal mother. This need seems to be connected with very early phantasies of swallowing the breast and at the same time being engulfed by it. Mr. A. had many phantasies of this type, all suggesting the extent of the symbiotic relationship with his mother. His relationship with his wife was, I think, an echo of this early relationship. In my opinion, he was always answering his wife's unconscious demands that he be the helpless ill one, in the same way that he had always answered his mother's unconscious demands that he deal with her depression and her guilt for her. As I mentioned earlier, he always felt compelled to eat dirty, damaged things, and his mother demanded that he be 'good' in order that she might eat. Having his cancer was, I think, for him equivalent to eating the dirty, damaged thing, destroying it and making all good inside. In this way he destroyed the 'bad' which his mother projected into him and made himself into the 'good' thing which his mother could devour with safety.

It is of interest that his father always

appeared as a rather nebulous figure, forever hidden inside the powerful devouring mother. In his death he identified with this father and became one with him inside the mother.

I think that it might have helped considerably had Mr. A.'s wife been able to have some analysis, either at the same time as her husband or, perhaps better still, to have had some before he started his. Be that as it may, I will make so bold as to say that if Mr. A. had been brought to me when he was a child of about three, the first thing I would have done would have been to analyse his mother, since, in my opinion, treatment of the child alone would probably have been completely obstructed by the mother who seems to have had so great a need to obtain vicarious gratification from her child.

Before I end this paper, I would like very briefly to bring my story up to date.

Mr. A.'s prophecy has proved correct; the shop did *not* flop. It is being carried on very successfully by his widow with the help of the woman friend. Only the other day, Mrs. A. said to me, 'The shop really is a good going concern. We are selling 400 gallons of paraffin a week—paraffin is the life-blood of the business.'

In the home, she has gradually cleared away all the 'pockets of resistance', though she found this difficult to do at first. An internalized Mr. A. was forever forbidding her to touch those contaminated objects.

And Mr. A.'s mother, so long banished from the house during her son's lifetime, moved in there on the day of his funeral and has lived there almost continuously ever since.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) DICKENS, CHARLES. *Nicholas Nickleby*.
- (2) FREUD, SIGMUND (1922). *Beyond the Pleasure Principle*. Standard Ed., 18.
- (3) LAFORGUE, RENÉ (1933). 'The Family Neurosis.' In *Clinical Aspects of Psycho-Analysis*. (Hogarth Press.)
- (4) LEWIN, BERTRAM (1950). *The Psycho-Analysis of Elation*. (Hogarth Press.)
- (5) SANDFORD, BERYL (1952). 'An Obsessional Man's Need to be Kept', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 33.

(Received 15 May, 1955.)



# ON THE THEORY OF PSYCHO-ANALYTIC TREATMENT \*

By

THOMAS S. SZASZ, M.D., SYRACUSE, NEW YORK \*\*

'I only want to feel assured that the therapy does not destroy the science.' S. FREUD (31).  
'We are today anxiously aware that the power to change is not always necessarily good.'  
J. ROBERT OPPENHEIMER (62).

## I

### SCIENCE AND PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

'Psycho-analysis is not, in my opinion, in a position to create a *Weltanschauung* of its own. It has no need to do so, for it is a branch of science, and can subscribe to the scientific *Weltanschauung*.' S. FREUD (29).

The problem of the nature of psychotherapy has occupied a position of central importance throughout the history of psycho-analysis. Nevertheless, the concepts upon which our theory of therapy rests—whatever the technique, goal and name of the psychotherapy might be—remain essentially limited to those developed during the first few decades of our science. Accordingly, certain concepts and terms are used by different workers to describe different, sometimes even diametrically opposite, ideas and experiences. This state of affairs is undesirable for a number of reasons. It may lead to misunderstanding among analysts; it may confuse and retard the development of the earnest student; and it may lead to repetitious restatements of theoretical positions and therapeutic orientations by various 'schools' of analysis without such interchange bringing about modifications in the respective workers' existing orientations.

To the extent that the foregoing shortcomings exist, psycho-analysis fails to live up to the basic requirements of a scientific discipline. For it is not enough to maintain that one is in search of 'truth' to qualify for the adjective 'scientific'. The requirements of science include 'agreements' among colleagues about fundamental concepts, adherence to certain well-defined methods of investigation and observation, and

the unambiguous communication of such observations to others so that they may share in the new experiences either by repeating the observations themselves or through empathy. Further, a test of whether or not the foregoing criteria are in operation may be found in the effectiveness and rapidity with which the reports of workers concerning new observations are 'accepted'. Acceptance in this context does not signify agreement regarding the validity of the new findings. It does mean, however, that the observations have been 'listened to', and it follows that they will be either accepted as correct or the nature of the error will be rapidly demonstrated. The new finding is thus either integrated into old knowledge, or drops out of sight. Scientific work is then ready to proceed onward in its relentless and endless journey towards the achievement of fuller and better understanding.

Mathematics and modern physics supply our best models for such a concept of science (50). Indeed, our concepts of the nature of science probably derive from our knowledge of how these disciplines operate (13). Psycho-analysis deserves to be considered a science, since it fulfils several of its requirements: it has given us certain well-defined concepts and has furnished us with a method of investigation and observation. This is well known, and few would doubt that psycho-analysis has broadened the scope as well as the depth of our understanding of human feeling, thought, and action. Its greatest weakness, it seems to me, lies in the fact that in psycho-analysis we do not seem to have been able to formulate our work and our concepts in such a way as to command the rapid 'test of adequacy' which characterizes other sciences.

\* Presented in part at the Annual Meeting of the American Psychoanalytic Association in Atlantic City, New Jersey, 7 May, 1955. Figures in brackets refer to the Bibliography; superior figures to the Notes, which

precede the Bibliography.

\*\* Professor, Department of Psychiatry, State University of New York, Upstate Medical Centre, Syracuse, New York.



This has serious consequences, in that conflicting opinions, largely derived from different methods of observation, continue to exist side by side. Furthermore, they all tend to use the same words and thus threaten us—if the trend continues—with an avalanche of misunderstanding which could easily put a halt to further advance in our field along the lines now familiar to us.

The purpose of this paper is to re-examine some of the fundamental concepts underlying the theory of psycho-analysis as a method of therapy in the hope of identifying some of the factors responsible for the foregoing difficulties. I will devote particular attention to the theoretical implications of technical rules and to the concept of the 'aim' of psychotherapy.

## II

### 'TREATMENT' OR 'UNDERSTANDING'?

'The history of science is science itself; the history of the individual, the individual.'

GOETHE (41).

'... the history of science assumes a new importance. It becomes, not the history of one among several branches of human knowledge, but the essential clue to the process by which man achieves his self-transformation from the animal to the human kingdom.'

B. FARRINGTON (20).

Psycho-analytic treatment is discussed so much and is written about so widely that detailed references to previous works seem unnecessary. Moreover, even the most cursory review of the literature on therapy would be so lengthy and complex that, within the confines of a single essay, its presentation would surely drown out any new emphasis or point of view that one might wish to make.<sup>1</sup>

An accurate description of the therapeutic technique of psycho-analysis is one way in which the problem of therapy may be approached. This means, in simple terms, that we try to ascertain exactly what the analyst and the patient do and say in the analytical situation. One could immediately object and point to the words 'analytical situation' as referring to something indistinct. What is the analytical situation? In order to answer this question, it must be viewed in an historical perspective. In the beginning Freud described the manner in which he worked—that is, the ways in which he tried to observe, understand, and influence his patients—as *the psycho-analytic method*. In this sense, as a primary definition, it was not further reducible to other experiences, and it was

particularly meaningful by virtue of its points of difference from hypnosis and catharsis. The latter methods aimed at symptom-removal, as the logical goal of the contemporary physician. This was how the physician was supposed to 'help' his patient.

One of the decisive steps in the development of psycho-analysis must surely be attributed to the fact that Freud quickly realized that perhaps, after all was said and done, with the use of hypnosis and catharsis the patient was not 'really helped' at all. He then turned his attention to trying to understand better the nature of the patient's productions. The goal of helping the patient became subsidiary to the goal of scientific understanding. Some people might object to such an interpretation of the events. However, we know that Freud was not principally interested in being a physician and in 'curing patients', and that he was passionately devoted to the pursuit of increasing his own grasp of understanding in numerous areas of thought (9, 51).

I would like to interrupt my presentation to comment briefly on this matter of 'helping people'. This seems indicated since in our day and age there is once again a tendency to emphasize, with almost moralistic fervour, that the primary aim of the physician and the analyst is to help his patient. Thus *the intent to help*—sometimes sincerely experienced, sometimes only officially avowed—usurps the place of asking such questions as: 'I must help the patient—to do what?' and, 'If I so help him, what price will he (and I) pay for it?' (Cf. 18).

In Freud's day, though, much more than in our times, it was perfectly legitimate to be interested in trying to understand the world about us without any practical gains necessarily deriving from such ventures. Indeed, the men Freud admired most—Galileo, Copernicus, Darwin—and his own teachers in Vienna, were characterized by this spirit of 'pure science'.

The spirit of this endeavour is, of course, not gone. It is only muted, and particularly so in psychiatry. Recently, J. Robert Oppenheimer has called our attention to the importance of this psychological fact concerning 'progress' in the following words: '... we also know how little of the deep knowledge which has altered the face of the world, which has changed—and increasingly and ever more profoundly—must change—man's view of the world, resulted from a quest for practical ends or an interest in exercising the power that knowledge gives. For



most of us, in most of those moments when we were most free of corruption, it has been the beauty of the world of nature and the strange and compelling harmony of its order that has sustained, inspirited, and led us' (62, p. 97).

I believe the foregoing considerations are most important, since it is often maintained that psycho-analytic technique has evolved gradually and in such a way that its modifications have been steadily oriented to the goal of 'What is best for the patient?' It is added that Freud was, after all, a physician and he was for ever trying to perfect his ways of healing sick people. I personally think such a view may be nothing short of a sentimental rewriting of the history of psycho-analysis. And I know that many analysts share my view regarding this point.<sup>2</sup>

What is the relevance of these comments to the nature of psycho-analytic technique? Simply this: that in so far as the emphasis in analysis shifted from 'treatment' (in the narrow sense) to efforts to understand ever more about the patient, the requirements expected of the method changed accordingly. The main requirement now became—as in other branches of science—that the method be helpful in eliciting as much useful information as possible and that it do not 'contaminate' what is observed any more than necessary. The making of constructions and interpretations may thus be looked upon as the investigative tool, while many other features of the analytic arrangement (e.g. the reclining position, free association, etc.) serve to ensure the clarity (and depth) of the field of observation. All this has been said before. What I wish to emphasize in this connexion is the importance of Freud's scientific attitude on the evolution of this whole matter and the difference between the notions of 'trying to help a sick person' and 'trying to bring order and harmony' to the phenomena and relationships where there was none before. I will return to this point later.

### III

#### SOME IMPLICATIONS OF RESTRICTING PSYCHO-ANALYTIC TREATMENT TO THE 'ANALYTIC SITUATION'

'The possibility of analytic influence rests upon quite definite preconditions which can be summed up under the term "analytic situation"; it requires the development of certain psychical structures and a particular attitude to the analyst.' S. FREUD (33).

Perhaps the origin of the rules by which psycho-analysis is conducted accounts in large

part for the widespread feeling which has developed among analysts regarding their restrictive nature. In other words, it was Freud himself who defined analysis as a procedure which can be applied only to some patients and under certain circumstances. He excluded many psychiatric conditions of adults as well as children from the domain of psycho-analysis in the restricted sense (i.e. the 'analytic situation').

It is my contention that this provided a challenge for others to enlarge and to adapt 'psycho-analysis' so that it would include progressively broader areas of human behaviour. In this tendency analysts have acted as others do who believe they are 'in the right'. The pressure of nationalism demanding ever-larger territorial dominance or the ambition of religion to convert more people to the 'faith' are analogous phenomena. As psychologists, we should remind ourselves that these pressures usually originate from an underlying feeling of doubt about one's 'rightfulness'; the vigour with which the 'movement' is spread drowns out this voice of uncertainty. I dwell on this point, because in this phenomenon once again I see a discrepancy between the scientific attitude and some aspects of psycho-analysis. A scientific method is characterized, among other things, by a high degree of tolerance of neighbouring areas of problems and of knowledge in which work proceeds by essentially different methods. Witness the coexistence of mathematics and physics or of optics and organic chemistry. Mathematical physics, which at present is regarded as the most 'lofty' of the natural sciences, does not insist on calling all these fields simply 'physics'. The clarification achieved by using different words for different activities is a useful one, although it remains true that, to use our example, both optics and organic chemistry are reducible to mathematical physics with regard to basic theoretical principles. A useful distinction is made, however, on the basis of different methods of investigation and observation.

The situation in modern psycho-analysis, unfortunately, is just the opposite. We use the fact that certain underlying theoretical concepts (in the mind of the psychiatrist) are 'psycho-analytic' to designate widely varying *methods of investigation and observation* by one and the same word. Freud himself contributed to this ambiguity. While at times he emphasized that psycho-analysis is restricted to the 'psycho-analytic situation' (by which he clearly delimited



it to Eissler's primary model technique), in other instances he used the word 'psycho-analysis' to denote other, wholly dissimilar, situations. Other analysts have added greatly to this widened usage of the term. It must be emphasized that this tendency was, and probably continues to be, motivated by the prestige-value attached to the term 'psycho-analysis'.

We should also recall that Freud spoke of psycho-analysis not only as a science but also as a 'movement'. Many of the issues which I am now considering, and which were ably discussed by others in connexion with the differences between psycho-analysis and dynamic psychiatry (37, 64, 65, 67, 68), could thus be regarded as the price which psycho-analysis (as a science) is paying for its conquest over psychiatry.

For the sake of economy of expression, I will use the word 'psycho-analysis' in the subsequent paragraphs to designate the 'primary model technique of psycho-analysis' (18). If other procedures are meant, they will be so described.

As I have tried to show, if we regard psycho-analysis as being 'limited' to certain conditions, or better, to persons possessing a certain kind and sufficient degree of ego-development, *ipso facto* we bring about a situation in which it behoves us to modify the technique. This may then lead to notions such as the technique being thought of as 'routinized' or 'rigid' and therefore undesirable. This is simply the result of a false point of view regarding the scientific function of such rules. Let us take an example, by the way of an analogy. Clocks, scales, and by the way of an analogy. Clocks, scales, and measuring sticks were the chief methods of investigation and frames of reference for observation in classical mechanics. No physicist would think of describing the methods of Newtonian physics as 'rigid'. The physicist simply concludes that certain phenomena cannot be described within this theoretical framework. But then, no framework promises to explain everything. By the same token, it must be noted that new methods and concepts are always added to the old ones and *do not supersede them* (62). Certainly the failure of an investigative tool and observational method in a new area cannot be used as evidence against its adequacy in the old one. Moreover, to push this analogy further, it is not so much the failure of the method in some areas that justifies deviations from it, but rather the *creating of new, more suitable methods of inquiry*. Accordingly, new methods of psychotherapy—in so far

as they are to be compared to psycho-analysis as a method of understanding (science)—must be evaluated on some basis other than that of 'therapeutic success'. Since this criterion is never mentioned, it illustrates further the insufficient differentiation in our work between psycho-analysis as a scientific discipline (wherein the only criterion of 'success' is the explicatory power of the theory), and psycho-analysis as 'applied science' (wherein its effectiveness may be measured by the power to bring about change, by economic gain, or by prestige).

#### IV

#### THE CHESS MODEL OF THE PSYCHO-ANALYTIC SITUATION:

##### I. THE NATURE AND FUNCTION OF RULES

'The scientific way of thinking has a further characteristic. The concepts which it uses to build up its coherent systems are not expressing emotions. For the scientist, there is only "being", but no wishing, no valuing, no good, no evil; no goal.' A. EINSTEIN (15).

The emphasis on the restrictiveness of rules is responsible for another misunderstanding about psycho-analysis. I have in mind the notion that according to the 'primary model technique' of analysis, the behaviour of the therapist is closely prescribed; it is as though he were bound to lose most of his spontaneity and individuality, and sometimes he is even seen as a sort of disembodied carrier of the rules.

The reasons for the development of these and other similar notions need not concern us here. We may recall that Freud compared psycho-analysis to a game of chess, and that he used this analogy in one of his early attempts to explain psycho-analytic technique (28). Let us see what other inferences we might draw from the analogy between chess and the primary model technique.

Chess, like other games, has a given set of rules. These determine how the game must be played, and at the same time constitute the very definition of the game's *identity*. When it is stated that the rules determine *how* the game is to be played, it might appear that this is a 'restriction', and that not too many possibilities remain for expressing originality and skill. To what extent this is true depends upon the entire nature of the game. A game of draughts, for example, is less complex and more constricted and constricting than a game of chess.

This brings us to the crux of the matter. If



our focus is on the rules which govern chess play, we may get the idea of *something that is limited*. After all, only a few figures are involved, and these can be moved only in a few predetermined ways. Yet, when we play chess, we discover that the number of possibilities within the set rules is truly staggering. Moreover, with greater proficiency, the freedom within the rules actually increases, inasmuch as one becomes capable of an ever-increasing variety of ways of 'playing'. We use the term 'freedom', accordingly, to designate the multiplicity of opportunities available to a person in a given situation. This will depend not only on the rules, but also on what the person 'brings to the game' within himself.

Several aspects of psycho-analytic treatment, using interpretations as the sole technical device, are very similar to the state of affairs encountered in chess.

1. Chess is restricted to those who know how to play the game. This excludes those who, by reason of intellectual or cultural circumstances, 'prefer' other games, and particularly those who feel it is too complicated and too taxing on the inner resources of the player. Analysis, similarly, requires a relatively well-developed ego and a certain kind of ('scientific') orientation to problems of living. (More will be said about this later.) Children and those with ego-deformations are excluded from analysis, or are handicapped at benefiting from it.

2. Chess can be described in terms of a set of rules which, in their elementary components, do not appear very complicated. The same is true of analysis, which is usually characterized by the rules (concepts) of 'the analytic situation', transference, analysis of the transference, resistance, and the making of constructions and interpretations. This may give the impression, especially to the uninitiated, of a rather limited sort of situation. In this connexion the legend of the invention of chess may be recalled. According to what is thought to be the oldest and most widely disseminated of these legends, the philosopher who invented the game in ancient India was offered by the queen any reward for his great gift to humanity that he desired. He merely asked that he be given some corn, the amount to be calculated by placing one grain on the first square and doubling the number successively on each of the sixty-four squares. At first glance this may appear to be an excessively modest request—as it did to the queen in the story—but on actual

calculation it turns out to be a very large number.<sup>3</sup>

3. The latitude within the rules, in chess as well as in analysis, is determined by what the participants bring to the situation. The fact that some patients 'need' forms of treatment other than analysis does not detract from its value to those who can utilize it any more than does the fact that many people enjoy games other than chess detracts from the latter.

4. While the rules of chess are set and predetermined, the game proceeds in such a way that each player *influences the other continuously*. Thus the same player plays differently against different opponents even though he may have a persistent 'style' of his own. Further, for a game to be conducted in a masterly fashion, it is necessary that both players be very good; a master cannot play well against a beginner. These considerations apply strikingly to the primary model technique of psycho-analysis. The patient's productions and behaviour are thus one of the determinants of the analyst's interpretation, and the latter will influence the patient's next 'step' in analysis, and so on (36, 56). Some patients can be analysed more easily and more rapidly than others, and this phenomenon depends largely on the patient being attuned (even prior to analysis) to the task of utilizing interpretations (understanding) as a method (rule) for conducting the 'game of living'.

5. The notions of 'rigidity' and 'flexibility' are not relevant to the rules of chess (or of other games) since, if we propose to play chess, we take for granted that the players (and those who might wish to follow the game) all agree to abide by the rules as a matter of *convention*.<sup>4</sup> This does not mean that one cannot legitimately ask, 'What would happen if we were to play the game by other rules?' However, the pursuit of this question must be kept as clearly separate as possible from the problems encountered in playing chess, or else hopeless confusion will result. The same considerations apply to the scientific method in general, and to psycho-analysis in particular.

6. In all situations characterized by rules—such as scientific methods, games, or psycho-analysis—the rules structure the situation, but the participants determine the complexity and richness which may develop therein. It follows therefore that when one is faced with difficulties of 'growing' within a given structure, one may readily turn to another set of (easier) rules.



This could easily represent a regression, such as turning from chess to draughts. It could also be a valid shift necessitated by the object of study. The latter case would invariably be characterized, however, not by any simplification of rules, but rather by a change to another set of equally complex or even more stringent rules than those that are being abandoned (e.g. the change from auction bridge to contract bridge; or the shift in analysis from using interpretations focused solely on the transference [Strachey, 74] to a recognition of both transference and counter-transference).

7. The final goal of most games as well as that of science are *given* and are not a matter of choice for the participants. In chess, for example, the final goal is for either player to checkmate the other or to play to a draw. I will now try to show that a similar state of affairs obtains in psycho-analysis. The notion of choosing different therapeutic aims for different patients is, in the context of psycho-analysis, meaningless.

## V

### THE CHESS MODEL OF THE PSYCHO-ANALYTIC SITUATION:

#### II. THE COMPLEMENTARY NATURE OF RULES (PRINCIPLES OF CONDUCT) AND AIMS

'The scientific method would not have led anywhere, it would not even have been born without a passionate striving for clear understanding. Perfection of means and confusion of goals seem, in my opinion, to characterize our age. If we desire sincerely and passionately the safety, the welfare and the free development of the talents of all men, we shall not be in want of the means to approach such a state. Even if only a small part of mankind strive for such goals, their superiority will prove itself in the long run.' A. EINSTEIN (14).

The question, 'What is the aim of psycho-analysis?' has received considerable attention in the psycho-analytic literature. The interlocking nature of the aim and of the technique is generally appreciated. Balint (4) has emphasized the ways in which both the aims and techniques of analysis have changed in the past and apparently continue to change through the present.

Currently there is considerable agreement among analysts regarding the aim of therapy when this is formulated in general terms, such as 'emotional maturation' or 'unhindered personality development'.<sup>5</sup> At the same time, there is widespread disagreement on specific

points, such as whether one should aim at 'structural change', 'interpersonal harmony', 'good communication' or 'successful adaptation to the environment', etc.

Clearly, the problem of the aim of psycho-analysis is a weighty one. It may confuse us particularly in so far as it may touch on the age-old philosophical question of 'What is the purpose of life?' In view of these considerations, it might be helpful if, instead of offering goals of our own, we were first to examine precisely what we mean when we speak of the goal of psycho-analysis.

We have little difficulty in understanding the meaning of the word 'aim' in everyday speech. For example, in a situation such as that of a marksman aiming a gun at a target, we speak of hitting the target as being the aim. But even here we might ask *whose* aim this is. There are at least two answers to this question. (i) We could say that it is the *marksman's aim* to hit the target; (ii) we could also say that the notion of hitting the target is set, i.e. predetermined. The marksman simply makes this goal, *given by the situation*, his own and experiences it as *his goal*.

Let us examine another example, closer to the problem of therapy. A patient is suffering from pneumonia. We give him penicillin. Our aim, in this case, is to restore him to a state free from infection.

The crucial issue in both these situations, and in other similar instances, is the matter of *choice*. It is assumed that the marksman has a choice as to whether he wishes to hit the centre of the target or whether to shoot in some other direction. Assuming that he selects the first alternative, he may then be more or less successful in achieving his desired end (aim, goal, purpose). Similarly, it is assumed that the physician has a choice between giving the patient penicillin, not giving it, or even doing something that is directly harmful. These considerations form the focus of discussions on problems such as euthanasia and the application of medical procedures to politically determined 'aims'. In other words, *the concept of a specific aim has real meaning only in a context of choice*. If there is no choice, then there is no 'aim' in the sense in which the word is used in the foregoing examples.

In so far as this applies to a therapeutic situation it has further implications. The notion of *aim* here is meaningful only if its referent is the patient or something about the patient. I can illustrate this as follows. We have a patient



suffering from an hysterical conversion. In such a case, we might discuss the aim of the treatment in terms of whether we should remove or otherwise alter the symptom, or whether we should try to effect some change in the underlying character-structure. All these ideas about aim refer, as was noted, to the patient. Their logical corollary is that there is a choice on the part of the therapist, who is potentially free to *decide* to pursue one aim or another and to select a course of action accordingly (67). The choice among various goals presupposes that the nature of the interaction between patient and therapist is essentially 'free', i.e. not governed by any rules.

Suppose, however, that instead of focusing attention on the patient, we centre our interest on the technique of the procedure employed (i.e. on the nature of the interaction). If we are skilful at this, and so desire, it is possible to describe the technique—or, in other words, to furnish a set of rules—which will meet every possible contingency.<sup>6</sup> Now we recognize that this is precisely what we mean when we speak of a *set of rules* by which a game must be played. This takes us back to the analogy between psycho-analysis and chess. Let us, therefore, ask 'What is the *aim* of chess?' This question is to a large extent meaningless, since the aim of the game is inherent in its rules, albeit this is not explicitly stated. However, unless we *understand* and *agree* (and assume) that the aim of the game is for one side to checkmate the other, the rules would be senseless. The rules of the game and its aim are thus *complementary concepts* (11). Neither one alone, no matter how clearly specified, can *adequately* describe and impart its proper identity to the game.

Let us apply similar considerations to psycho-analysis as a method of treatment. I believe we are justified in reaching the following conclusions. The more accurately and unambiguously we describe a process in terms of the operations which go into it, the more rigidly will these operations determine the final outcome of this process. If this analysis of the problem at hand is valid—and accepted—it follows that the notion of *what the aim* of a particular process should be will be meaningless in direct proportion to the predetermined (unalterable) set of rules (operations) by which the process must be carried out. Accordingly, given a certain set of rules for the technique of psycho-analysis, we shall have to ask not what the analyst's or the patient's aims or aspirations are, but what *aim*

may have been 'built into' the therapeutic procedure by its very operations. I propose to discuss this question presently.

Before doing so, however, I wish to show that my foregoing thesis, namely, that a comprehensive definition of rules usually embodies within itself certain consequences, which are often thought of as '*aims*', does not rest solely on the analogy with chess. As a matter of fact, the whole new technology of 'purposeful machines' illustrates this thesis. Modern missiles which 'seek out' their targets are called 'purposeful' by virtue of anthropomorphic considerations. One could well say that they are 'more' purposeful to the layman, who does not know how they work, than to the mathematician and engineer who build these machines and to whom they may not seem purposeful at all, but simply 'built that way. . . .'. The construction of the machine predetermines its 'purpose'.<sup>7</sup>

Anatol Rapoport (69) has recently described with great lucidity that the notion of ethical judgements—such as the question, 'What is good?'—is meaningful only if we have a *choice*. If there is no choice, if the outcome of a set of events is determined with reasonable rigidity, then it is meaningless to entertain such a question as 'Is this outcome good or bad?' Similarly, we should conclude that we can speak about the purpose, aim, or goal of a set of actions if, and only if, the nature of the actions is not clearly determined and restricted to certain possibilities (or, if we are ignorant of these rules, which is perhaps the same thing). Or, to put it differently, the more we are free to vary what we do, the more variable the outcome of our actions will be and, accordingly, the more shall we be able to conceive of having a *choice* among these diverse 'aims'. (It seems likely that from the point of view of scientific method, this problem may ultimately disappear into the realization that freedom of aims is a *measure of our ignorance* of the rules by which the alleged aims are achieved.)<sup>8</sup>

## VI

### THE MEDICAL MODEL OF PSYCHO-ANALYTIC TREATMENT

'I have assumed, that is to say, that psycho-analysis is not a specialized branch of medicine. I cannot see how it is possible to dispute this.'

S. FREUD (31).

'It is a waste of time to force comparisons where they do not exist and constitute an obstacle to our special branch of knowledge.'

THEOPHRASTUS (20).<sup>9</sup>



When we consider the question, 'What is the goal of psycho-analytic treatment?' we are confronted by the whole problem of the influence of medicine on psycho-analysis. That psycho-analysis as a method of therapy was modelled on the pattern of medical treatment is familiar to us all. The implications of these influences are far-reaching and amply deserve a separate study. A detailed consideration of this topic will have to be omitted, since this would carry us too far afield from our chief interest in this paper, which is the nature of the psycho-analytic process and its resultant effects. The constructive influences of medicine on psycho-analysis are generally appreciated. I will take these for granted and will say no more about them. My comments will be restricted to those aspects of the medical model of analysis which seem to obscure and to hinder our thinking about our work.

Many analytic concepts have been borrowed from medicine. Noteworthy are the notions of 'illness' and 'treatment'. These terms are generally regarded as very useful. Particularly is this true for the concept of 'mental illness'. Sometimes it is even thought that when a patient (or other physician) realizes, or 'accepts' (as we sometimes say), that a disability is due to 'mental illness', half the battle of psychiatry is won. I believe much too little attention has been paid to how these concepts may cause us difficulties in scientific work (12).

There is general agreement among analysts on the following two propositions.

1. The primary model technique of analysis requires that the analysand should possess a relatively mature, strong, and unmodified ego. If he is not so constituted, he cannot enter meaningfully into the analytic situation. (This could be compared to the patient having to know the 'language' by means of which communication takes place in this situation. 'Language' here denotes not only linguistic language, but also language used in the sense of symbolic logic (i.e. the idiom of a science) [69, 70].

2. The aim of the 'treatment' is, among other things, to bring about those conditions which favour the fullest development of the ego's potential capabilities. In other words, the aim of the treatment is to permit 'unhindered growth'.

Ambiguities arise from the following sources.  
(i) How can we speak of 'treatment', 'improvement' and 'cure' if we start out with 'material' which is, according to our own criteria, relatively

good? (ii) How can we evaluate 'results' if the criterion by which we assess *therapeutic change* (outside of the patient's behaviour in the analytic situation) is the *patient's own (potential) development*?

These considerations are, of course, hardly novel. However, while analysts may have long realized these ambiguities, our theory and terminology thus far have not developed to clarify these issues. It is my impression that these ambiguities will be difficult, if not impossible, to resolve so long as the medical model of treatment governs our thinking. In medicine, illness denotes a condition existing in a person which is (usually) absent in others considered 'well' (e.g. an infection, a fracture, a tumour, etc.). Treatment and cure are aimed at re-establishing the disease-free model of normality and are usually completely devoid of any implications of 'growth' (i.e. being more complex, more mature, more learned, than prior to illness). In psychiatry, the notions of 'adaptation' and 'social adjustment' are similar to the foregoing model of 'health'. Thus, in so far as psychotherapy aims at social (including interpersonal) adjustment, the analogy with medicine may be valid and helpful. However, since psycho-analysis tends towards bringing about progressive *differentiation*, the analogy with medical treatment clearly fails, and if persisted in, becomes misleading (45, 49).

The foregoing considerations clarify the apparent paradox contained in the following two propositions, which are subscribed to by most analysts at the present time.

(i) The patient is 'sick'. This follows from his being 'treated' (by psycho-analysis), his being called 'patient', his 'improvement' and his 'cure'.

(ii) The patient is healthy. This follows from his having a relatively well developed ego so that he can enter into the analytic situation and can utilize the relationship for 'learning', in the widest sense of that term.

The first proposition clearly derives from the medical model of analysis as 'treatment', from the analyst being a physician, the patient having 'symptoms', and many other aspects of the situation. The second proposition, on the other hand, derives from the fact that while the patient is not as 'well' as he could be, or perhaps as he was at some previous time, he is nevertheless both actually and potentially 'healthier' than most of the population in which he lives. The apparent contradiction of these propositions is



greatly favoured by the medically derived terms, 'sickness', 'treatment', etc. A comparison of the analytic situation with that prevailing in *education* is in this respect more pertinent, since in the latter sphere also those who are most strongly *oriented to education* seek it, rather than those who are most ignorant.<sup>10</sup>

The concept of 'ignorance' would thus take the place of the concept of 'illness' as the factor which can be most meaningfully related to the analysand's state, with regard to both his orientation to himself and to a comparison between himself and others. When we speak of ignorance, however, we must distinguish sharply between two fundamentally different categories.

(i) We say that A is 'ignorant' if he does not know something that B or C know.

(ii) We also speak of 'ignorance' if A *wants* to know something, that is, whenever A asks himself a question. In this sense of the term, the concept of ignorance has nothing to do with whether anyone else knows what A wants to know or not; nor, indeed, with whether the question is meaningful for anyone else.

Further consideration of this subject is not germane to our present topic. Suffice it to say that the differences between these two concepts of 'ignorance' are of far-reaching importance. The first notion of ignorance is situational or relative to others. In this, it is similar to the medical concept of illness. The second notion of ignorance, however, relates to one's own development and is more closely allied to the motives activating the person who is seeking, and is suitable for, analysis. The age-old saying about the wise and learned man becoming more humble about his 'ignorance' refers to 'not knowing' of the second type only. The confusion and misuse of these concepts is often employed as an argument and weapon against man's aspirations along scientific lines.<sup>11</sup>

There is another aspect of the concept of 'treatment' which is particularly misleading when it is applied to psycho-analysis. The term 'treatment' is generally used to denote the activity of but *one* person (or system) in an interactional process. For example, we speak of surgical treatment or penicillin treatment; we also speak of 'treating' certain inanimate substances with chemicals, etc. The conceptual model in these situations is that A does something to B. B's response, or activity, in the situation is kept out of focus; whatever it may be, it does not alter the fact of the 'treatment'. Thus,

irrespective of the patient's co-operation, antagonism, recovery, or death, surgical treatment remains surgical treatment. This concept is patently false when used for the psycho-analytic situation. Here, the notion of 'treatment' presupposes certain activities on the parts of both A and B in an interactional process. Accordingly, no matter what the analyst does—however much he may wish to conduct an analysis—if the analysand's behaviour does not meet specified requirements psycho-analytic treatment will not take place. I realize that the foregoing considerations are familiar to analysts. Repetition may be justified, however, on the grounds that this matter has the profoundest bearing on the nature of the psycho-analytic process and on the so-called evaluation of its results (8, 10, 39, 40, 60). Moreover, it seems to me inevitable that the notion of 'treatment', modelled after the traditional doctor-patient relationship, should provide a persistent source of confusion about one of the most essential features of the analytic situation.

The exact nature of the (inner) psychological activity of the analyst, of the physician, and of others in their respective work-functions requires much further study. As analysts we know that action in work is an important function for the human ego (46, 55). We also know that the psychological processes involved in the conduct of analysis—on the part of the analyst—are significantly different from those processes which characterize the work of the specialist in internal medicine or surgery. Yet we hardly even have tentative formulations regarding these *finesses* of ego-functions. I think we should take as our starting-point the important difference between *new creation* (the search for order) and the *application* of scientific discoveries (the exercise of 'knowledge'). The discovery of penicillin or of other novel biological agents illustrates the process of new creation (in the medical sphere), whereas the activity of the physician who administers these agents to the sick patient with pneumonia illustrates the phenomenon of application. This distinction is particularly meaningful for the problem of psycho-analytic treatment, since, it seems to me, analysis proper can never be (nor can it ever become) a process of application. Each analytic situation requires an interest and effort in a *new creation* on the part of the analyst (as well as of the patient). I have suggested elsewhere (76) that development to a higher level of psychological complexity of both analysand and analyst is a requisite of



success for every analysis. By the same token, 'psychotherapy' (as application of knowledge gained elsewhere) may become progressively less 'scientific' (in the sense of science constituting a source of new knowledge). This of course does *not* mean that such therapy will not be 'effective'. Perhaps it will be more effective than anything that we know today, just as the giving of antibiotics is effective, irrespective of the state of mind of the physician who prescribes them. It is not my intention, in suggesting the foregoing distinction between science as new creation on the one hand, and its application (technology, 'therapy') on the other, to exalt the former and to depreciate the latter. Instead, I hope this distinction will be viewed as an explanatory notion which might help us to understand the many different ways in which human beings can affect each other.

## VII

### THE SCIENTIFIC ATTITUDE: THE COVERT AIM OF PSYCHO-ANALYTIC TREATMENT

'Religion, superstition, fantastic Biblical world-history, were not demolished by "dis-coveries"; they were *outgrown* by the European mind. Again the individual life shows in microcosm the pattern of human evolution: the tendency to intellectual growth, in persons as in races, from dreamlike fantasy to realistic thinking.' S. LANGER (54).

'For science can only ascertain what *is*, but not what should be, and outside of its domain value judgements of all kinds remain necessary. Religion, on the other hand, deals only with evaluations of human thought and action; it cannot justifiably speak of facts and relationships between facts.' A. EINSTEIN (17).

We are now ready to consider the question, 'What is the final goal of psycho-analytic treatment?' It was implied in our earlier discussion that this final goal may not be a matter of choice for either analyst or patient, but may be inherent in the rules of the process.

To clarify this problem, we must distinguish between intermediary goals and a final goal. Although this is a simple differentiation and is familiar to us from the analysis of other processes it has not been generally applied to psycho-analysis. Gitelson has tried to define the essential difference between psycho-analysis and dynamic psychotherapy in terms of a distinction between intermediary and final goals. He pinpoints the problem we are considering in the following way:

'One of the as yet unsolved problems of psycho-analysis is concerned with the essential nature of psycho-analytic cure. It is not insight; it is not the recall of infantile memories; it is not catharsis or abreaction; it is not the relationship of the analyst. Still, it is all of these in some synthesis which it has not yet been possible to formulate explicitly. Somehow, in a successful analysis the patient matures as a total personality. Somehow, a developmental process which has been halted or sidetracked, resumes its course. It is as though the person, re-experiencing his past in the transference, finds in the new conditions a second chance and "redevelops" while he is reliving' (37, p. 285).

Gitelson then compares the therapeutic situation to a chemical reaction which tends toward a final state of dynamic equilibrium with many intermediate reactions on the way to this end-state. Psycho-analysis is oriented toward attaining the final end-point in the interaction, whereas dynamic psychotherapy settles on 'any point of stability' as an end point. According to Gitelson the psycho-analytic 'end point' is reached with the resolution of the transference neurosis.

While I am in partial agreement with this analogy because of its lucidity and explanatory power, I suggest that we should regard the resolution of the transference neurosis itself as an intermediate rather than a final goal. My reasons for this, briefly stated, are the following.

The formal end of the analysis means that there is a dissolution of the analytic situation. Yet, there is general agreement that, in a broader sense of the concept of analysis, this is not the 'end' of the process. The analysand continues to undergo ego-transformations; he changes. It seems to me that the notion of 'the final goal of analysis' should tell us something about this state. A comparison with education suggests itself. A student may be evaluated in one of two ways. In school, his performance is judged by examinations, including a 'final examination' (this may be compared to the resolution of the transference neurosis). The 'final goal' of the educational process, however, is also to prepare the student for life (profession, etc.) after leaving school. Thus, he can also be judged on the basis of his later performance. This may be (and in fact is) a more difficult task, since the frame of reference of 'good performance' is no longer clearly defined (social success, money, wisdom, happiness, etc.).

The existence of this double orientation, to the process in the situation and afterwards, must



be kept in mind constantly in attempting to 'evaluate results'. Furthermore, the greater ease with which rational judgements can be arrived at within the 'situation' (in school, in analysis) has favoured definitions based on concepts anchored in the frame of reference of analytic treatment. Accordingly, we have such concepts as the resolution of the transference neurosis, the working through of paranoid and depressive anxieties (52), the new beginning (6, 7) the corrective emotional experience (3) and others. *These concepts have all been designated as constituting the 'goal' of the treatment; they have all been formulated in terms of technical manoeuvres.* While I am not passing judgement on the adequacy of these concepts, I would like to call attention to the following shortcomings inherent in them. First, as mentioned, these notions are formulated in such a way that their relevance is restricted to the analytic situation. This has an advantage in terms of scientific clarity as long as the person is in analysis. But by the same token, it becomes a source of confusion when he is not. Secondly, most of these concepts (except for that of the 'new beginning') have an implication of *finality*. Unfortunately this connotation is attached even to the most useful of the views which have been mentioned, namely, to the resolution of the transference-neurosis. Since there is general agreement that there is something inherently *unending* about analysis as a process (not as a situation), would it not be helpful if the final goal of treatment were formulated so that it were to be consistent with this viewpoint?

In accord with the foregoing considerations, I believe that the final goal of analysis should be stated neither in the frame of reference of technique, nor in that of social or interpersonal adaptation, but rather in general terms which pertain to the person's (ego's) orientation to his past and present inner life (objects) as well as to his outside life experiences. How can we describe this final state and do justice to all the requirements mentioned? The answer to this question may be found in Freud's writings, although he did not formulate it as explicitly as I will state it now. According to this view the final goal of psycho-analytic treatment is the establishment of a never-ending, ever-deepening *scientific attitude* in the patient towards those segments of his life which constitute the sphere of psycho-analysis. The sphere of analysis (in this sense) consists of man's life history, his internal objects, and his ever-changing life experiences.

A few explanatory comments are probably in order. It must be remembered that a definition of the final goal of analysis, as stated above, does *not* supersede the several intermediary goals, described by Freud and others. Rather, the concept of the final goal must be *added* to some of our previous concepts in order to arrive at a more comprehensive theoretical synthesis of what constitutes analytic treatment.

One might also ask, 'What exactly is meant by the term "scientific attitude"?'. A thorough examination of this question seems to me an absolute necessity for further progress in our field (77). For the present it will suffice to say that I refer to the same phenomenon which was described by Wälder (78) as the *ability to differentiate between the possible and the real*. The same concept is also taken up by Eissler (18). It is of interest to note that this *psychological feature* of the scientific attitude has long been recognized by mathematicians and physicists. Oppenheimer has put it as follows: 'Thus, to the irritation of many, the assertions of science tend to keep away from the use of words like "real" and "ultimate"' (62, p. 6). Apparently, man has found it far easier to take such a detached view of his physical environment than of his 'object-environment'. At least this appears to be a logical inference which can be drawn from the longer history and far greater explanatory power of the physical sciences than of the psychological sciences.

It remains for me to demonstrate how the final goal of analysis is inherent in the technique of the therapy (as this was suggested in the comparison with chess). This task can be combined with another, namely, to show that Freud's view of the final goal of analysis was essentially the same as that suggested in this paper.

The realization that some of the events observed during the course of analysis were determined by the procedure itself could not come until the procedure was held relatively constant. Macalpine (57) recently described with great precision how the so-called classical technique leads to regression in the patient's ego-orientation and is in itself partly responsible for bringing about the transference-neurosis. What seems most valuable in Macalpine's paper is not so much the novelty of her observations, but rather their clear ordering according to a deterministic scheme. She called attention, however, only to how the analytic technique determines what in chess is called the middle portion of the 'game'. I would like to pursue



this further in relation to the end of the analysis.

In connexion with discussions of termination and the aim of analysis, Freud made various statements in different contexts. As I commented earlier, throughout his life he based many of his ideas about psycho-analytic treatment on a rather steady parallelism with treatment in various branches of medicine. Whenever Freud freed himself from the medical model of psycho-analysis, he used the *model of scientific work*. He assumed that the patient, or a part of him, was interested from the very beginning in undertaking a scientific exploration of his own personality. Like other scientific work, this would lead wherever the evidence carried one. Its aim was 'truth':

'Finally, we must not forget that the relationship between analyst and patient is based on a love of truth, that is, on the acknowledgement of reality, and that it precludes any kind of sham or deception' (26, pp. 351-352).

And, again, in 'Constructions in Analysis', he wrote:

'... we conduct ourselves upon the model of a familiar figure in one of Nestroy's farces—the man-servant who has a single answer on his lips to every question or objection: "All will become clear in the course of future developments"' (27, p. 367).

In other words, while it is well known that Freud's chief interest was a 'scientific' one, it is generally assumed that *in addition* he was also interested in *another process*, and that this consisted of 'helping the patient'. One of my aims in this essay is to show that there are not two separate processes, but that 'helping the patient' evolved into the goal of the patient's adopting a progressively more scientific attitude towards himself and his relationships with others. Indeed, in one passage Freud asserts quite passionately that to use psycho-analysis for any other aim would serve an 'ulterior purpose' (34, p. 402).<sup>12</sup>

The view that the ultimate 'aim' of psycho-analytic treatment is a scientific attitude in the patient toward himself and his relationships with others is, of course, not at variance with a formulation of therapy in terms of analysis of the transference and 'corrections' of current relationships coloured by distortions based on childhood experiences. The latter conceptions refer, in part, to the *actual operations* (13) which lead, under favourable circumstances and in varying degrees, to the scientific attitude; and,

in part, these conceptions also refer to phenomena which are the *results* (or manifestations) of the development of a scientific attitude in the patient (i.e. the relative 'objectivation' of relationships previously more heavily coloured by 'transferences'). The two descriptions are complementary and not mutually exclusive.

Several interesting inferences may be drawn from the thesis that the final goal of analysis is to bring about a scientific attitude (with respect to certain segments of life) in the patient, and that this goal is inherent in the technique of analysis and is not a matter of choice for either analyst or patient. I want to comment briefly on two topics only, namely, on the alleged differences between therapeutic and training analysis and on the problem of the termination of analysis. Acceptance of the thesis set forth in this paper leads to certain conclusions regarding both of these issues.

It is generally asserted by analysts that there is no difference in principle between therapeutic and training analysis (44, 66). At the same time, however, it is maintained that it is more difficult to conduct the analysis of a potential analyst properly than that of a lay person. I realize that this is a complex matter and one with which I have had no actual experience except in the rôle of the analysand.<sup>13</sup> It seems to me, however, that the difference between these two phenomena rests on a *social distinction*, that is to say, on whether the analysand proposes to earn his livelihood by the practice of analysis or through other means. Viewed in the framework of analytic theory, not only should there be no difference between the two processes, but indeed, if the trainee is *properly selected*, he should be more, not less, amenable to analysis than the majority of lay persons.<sup>14</sup> The criteria for 'proper selection' are inherent in the concept of the primary model technique: the potential candidate must have an essentially unmodified ego so that he can participate with benefit in the analytic situation (38). In addition to this, I would add that it might be helpful if he had a *scientific interest* in how man lives, with himself and with others.<sup>15</sup> Both of these criteria are, in actual fact, quite independent of some of those features of the potential analyst on which much current emphasis is placed. In other words, competent medical training, good social adjustment, and an interest in general psychiatry and in treating people can all be present in candidates with or without the necessary ego structure and scientific orientation mentioned



above. Obviously, selection, treatment, and evaluation of results would all have to be carried out *within the same theoretical framework* if the inferences made from one of these processes is to be relevant to the others.

With regard to the termination of analysis, we know that ideally the analytic process never ends. Instead, it should set in motion ego transformations of a continuing character (48, 78). In this respect the parallel with science is particularly apt and striking. Science is never finished; it is infinite. In our present age we have even become sophisticated enough to learn that it is not meaningful to ask where science leads. We must be satisfied with the answer that it leads to ever-greater understanding of, and mastery over, man's environment (physical and human).<sup>16</sup> We have learned gradually to conceive of science along the pattern of the infinite series of mathematics. Man's first major scientific abstraction—the concept of integers (numbers)—has paved the way for such an idea, however greatly this may differ from our biological destiny, which is so emphatically finite. In view of this, it might be more appropriate if we were to regard the analytic process as interminable not because of a defect either on the part of the patient or on the part of our technique, but instead were to regard this fact as a

feature indicative of the particular ancestry of our technique. For this notion to be meaningful, however, it will probably be necessary to establish more clear-cut distinctions (and appropriate words with which to designate them) between medical treatments and psycho-analysis. Perhaps the two expressions—the psycho-analytic situation and psycho-analytic influence—first used by Freud (33) himself, would be of value in this direction. The first of these is in fairly general use. The expression 'psycho-analytic influence' would seem preferable to the term 'treatment' for two basic reasons. The first of these was described earlier: it relates to the fact that the word 'treatment' ordinarily refers to the activity of but one person in a situation or interaction with another person (or persons); whereas in psycho-analysis, the proper meaning of 'treatment' depends upon the activity of both analyst and analysand and, accordingly, in this context it refers to a process which *includes* and abstracts the activities of the participants in it. Secondly, 'influence' is a neutral term, free of the value judgements invariably connected with the notion of healing. Adoption of the expression 'psycho-analytic influence', in preference to 'treatment', would be consistent with the scientific spirit which was responsible for the origin of psycho-analysis.

#### NOTES

<sup>1</sup> References to works most relevant to the thesis presented in this paper are given in the bibliography. See particularly Nos. 6, 18, 26, 43, 48, 63, 71.

<sup>2</sup> We have, of course, Freud's own views on this matter to draw on. He wrote: 'It is argued that psycho-analysis was after all discovered by a physician in the course of his efforts to assist his patients. But that is clearly neither here nor there. . . . After forty-one years of medical activity, my self-knowledge tells me that I have never really been a doctor in the proper sense. . . . In my youth I felt an overpowering need to understand something of the riddles of the world in which we live and perhaps even to contribute something to their solution' (31, pp. 207–208). Naturally, it is not necessary to subscribe to an 'either-or' reasoning concerning the foregoing two motivations (i.e. therapeutic intent and scientific interest); the two may, and obviously frequently do, coexist. Perhaps this overdetermined motivation in Freud himself was one source for the many different statements which he had made on the subject of psycho-analytic treatment, some emphasizing and others minimizing the issue of 'treatment' (e.g. 29, pp. 207–208 and p. 238).

<sup>3</sup> According to Murray (58), this quantity of corn would cover England to a uniform depth of 38.4 feet. It may be noted that the various legends regarding the origin of chess offer a fascinating subject for psycho-analytic study. Most of the legends portray the game as a sublimated and humane outlet for the pleasures which important men (rulers) derived from defeating their adversaries in warfare. The therapeutic value of the

game is quite apparent in these stories. Furthermore the therapeutic effect of the game is such that it is of benefit not only to the players themselves but also to all those persons over whom they have control (i.e. the rulers and their people).

<sup>4</sup> These considerations are put forward to clarify what seems to me a persistent misunderstanding arising out of the use of the term 'flexibility' in the psycho-analytic literature. This word has come to be used synonymously with 'proper therapy' and with the notion of 'treatment' so conducted that the therapist *understands* the patient. Conversely, fixity of rules tends to have the connotation of 'misunderstanding' between therapist and patient. Actually, this situation arose, without much doubt, from attempts to apply the unmodified analytic technique to individuals for whom it is not suitable; it then certainly leads to misunderstanding and 'faulty communication'. But that is to be expected, and is in essence no different from the persistent misunderstandings in numerous other areas of human contact where people with different experiences speak to each other in different symbolic languages (24). However, it is precisely because of this state of affairs that the creation and consistent use of explicit rules actually *facilitates* understanding, rather than hinders it, provided that the rules of conduct are 'understandable' and usable by the prospective participants in the particular situation (e.g. games, slang, scientific techniques and their respective idioms, etc.). This shows, perhaps from a slightly different point of view, what has been emphasized repeatedly by analysts, namely, the value of the analytic situation for effectively



demonstrating (understanding) parataxic distortions which, under other, less clearly defined circumstances, escape everyone's notice.

<sup>6</sup> It is not unimportant to be aware of the danger inherent in the use of such idealistic terms, since when we speak of 'maturity' and 'development' we obviously make it impossible for anyone to negate or disagree with these propositions without his being *ipso facto* 'wrong'. This state of affairs characterizes ethical beliefs rather than scientific propositions. Accordingly, the possibility to disagree reasonably and safely must be inherent in any formulation if it is to merit its inclusion in the domain of science rather than that of religion or politics.

<sup>7</sup> This is achieved partly by limiting what can happen and partly by a definition of rules in an abstract rather than concrete manner. In other words, the rules provide guidance as to conduct according to certain 'principles', rather than furnishing itemized commands of 'do this', 'do not do that'. This is an important matter, as is shown by the current misunderstandings as to what constitute the 'rules' of analysis. The difference between concrete and relatively more abstract 'direction' may be easily pictured by the following example. If we wish to tell someone how to get from place A to place B, we can: (i) Give him a set of directions, which read something like this. 'Out on street X, right here, left there, three blocks down the street on the left side. . . . etc.'; or, (ii) we can send him a map showing the location of A and B as well as the roads, bus lines, and important places which help one to identify one's position in strange surroundings. Specific 'commands' as to where to turn, what mode of transportation to take, and so forth, must be *abstracted* from this map by the traveller himself, and be *abstracted* from this map by the traveller himself, and must, so to speak, be given to himself. The concept of the 'primary model technique' of analysis is a map. How many times a week a patient is seen is a direction. The two are not on the same level of concepts and cannot be 'compared' (cf. Knight, 53; Reichenbach, 70).

<sup>8</sup> This consideration has important bearings on Freud's statement about the treatment of children, criminals, and others not amenable to the unmodified technique, having the same *purpose* as that of analysis (33). Such a view may be no more than a *wish* and, if so, would have to be dispensed with as a basis for scientific work. The importance of this matter rests on the fact that a wide variety of techniques of human interaction are today labelled psycho-analytic precisely on the basis of their alleged aspiration to the same goals as those of psycho-analysis.

<sup>9</sup> The foregoing comments must not be interpreted as being essentially an attack on the concept of 'free will'. This concept is only partly amenable to logical analysis and partly it refers to a psychological phenomenon, a 'state of mind', which requires explanation along different lines. We cannot pursue this matter further in this connexion (cf. Knight, 53; Wälder, 78).

<sup>10</sup> Pupil and successor of Aristotle. Theophrastus (373-287 B.C.) is said to be the founder of the science of botany, having focused his attention on the differences between plants and animals at a time when others stressed those features which these two categories had in common in contrast to inanimate objects (20).

<sup>11</sup> This line of thought is consistent with the results of a recent survey of the American Psychoanalytic Association regarding the social, professional and economic background of patients undergoing treatment by members of the Association and by advanced students in accredited Institutes. The survey showed a diversity of diagnostic categories and a reasonable diversity of economic status among the patients. The most striking common denominator among the patients appeared to be, at least to me, that most of them were professional men and women, and students; that is to say, they were persons who were all characterized, irrespective of personal differences, by an orientation to life based on

thinking and understanding (at least more so than the population at large).

<sup>12</sup> It is possible to stress either man's aspirations for rational, progressively more complex understanding, or his regressive striving toward denial, confusion, and belief. Freud emphasized both. However, in relation to analytic treatment he seemed often to have leaned toward a greater emphasis on the regressive component of the dualism. Thus, Freud 'is alleged to have said, however we try to treat the patient, he wants to treat himself with transferences' (Gill, 35). While this is often true for everyone, and always true for some patients, there are many others who *want* to be treated by interpretation alone. Since psycho-analysis has focused principally on the patient's 'resistances', this important fact has either been overlooked or has not received much attention. In addition to one's clinical experience with such persons, the most obvious theoretical argument in support of the importance of many persons' wish and readiness to be treated by the primary model technique could be said to lie in the very development and existence of this concept and technique. After all, are we not justified in regarding all such human achievements as reflecting corresponding 'needs'?

<sup>13</sup> Compare this with the scientific position according to which 'pure science' aims only at discovering ever more about how nature works. In so far as this knowledge is applied in order to gain some practical advantage in daily living, it is considered no longer 'pure science' but 'technology'. Perhaps the devaluation of applied science derives from the deeply felt appreciation of the potential dangers inherent in it. Certainly, Freud's emphasis on the need to protect the patient from the influence of the analyst's 'personality' reflects this awareness in the sphere of the science of human interaction. In the following passage, for example, Freud explicitly disowns any specific therapeutic goal which might be set for the patient in the name of analysis. (So-called 'practical' solutions for problems of living are always derived from implicit philosophical orientations about human values, professions, marriage, child-raising, etc.) 'Our honoured friend, J. J. Putnam, . . . must forgive us if we cannot accept his proposal either, namely, that psycho-analysis should place itself in the service of a particular philosophical outlook on the world and should urge this upon the patient in order to ennoble him. I would say that after all this is only tyranny even though disguised by the most honourable motives' (34, p. 399). Clearly, the only legitimate goal in Freud's mind was that of discovering and imparting knowledge and understanding to the patient. Greenacre has recently re-emphasized this important point. She states: 'Freud emphasized that his own interest in the "living truth, in his case his original interest in the "living pathology" of the patient, was the greatest therapeutic safeguard to the patient; and this seems to me so basic and so sound that I think we should consider it in setting up or planning to set up any system involving a review of results of treatment. It seems to be so simply true as to be elusive, that the worker whose goal is the essential verity of his scientific work may in some instances take unnecessary detours of exploration, but by and large will contribute most to the science and to his patients' (43).

<sup>14</sup> My thoughts on this matter thus derive from (therapeutic) analytic work with psychiatrists, physicians, other professional people and students who were more or less familiar with psycho-analysis and who had varying inclinations towards scientific work, and from reading and thinking about the nature of human interaction. 'We now realize, with special clarity', said Einstein, 'how much in error are those theorists who believe that the theory comes inductively from experience. Even the great Newton could not free himself from this error ("Hypotheses non fingo")' (16, p. 72).



<sup>14</sup> If the analyst plays any rôle in the life of the analysand other than that inherent in the analytic situation (primary model technique)—to that extent his influence on the analysand (and *vice versa*) will rest on processes other than those of psycho-analysis (science). The fact that the training analyst often does play such a non-analytic rôle (e.g. determining the trainee's progress and acceptance as an analyst) has been held by many as the chief complicating factor of these analyses. I think a consistent application of the principles inherent in the primary model technique necessitates that we recognize such 'real-life' situations for what they are; that is to say, they are not 'analytic', which, however, does not mean that they are necessarily 'bad'. At this point *value-judgements* enter into the situation, for the solution of which scientific considerations may be of little or no value. Here again an analogy with physics presents itself. The analytic situation proper might be compared to creative work in physics, such as the work leading to the availability of explosives or nuclear energy. The so-called 'real-life' interactions between analyst and trainee (or the whole matter of selection), on the other hand, may be compared to the physicist's participation in social and political 'real-life' matters, such as how to use (or not use) nuclear energy.

<sup>15</sup> Cf. A. Einstein: 'But science can only be created by

those who are thoroughly imbued with the aspiration towards truth and understanding' (17, p. 26).

<sup>16</sup> A further remark on the complementarity of ultimate and intermediate aims in science (and in analysis) must be made here. We say that the final goal of science is ever-increasing understanding, and potential alteration, of the observed. This statement, although valid and commanding wide agreement, is so general that it is of little value in telling us anything specific about a particular branch of science. Thus we cannot dispense with the specific, operational descriptions of nuclear physics, or organic chemistry. In these fields we describe our aims by notions such as wishing to find out about the mass and electrical charge of elementary particles, or aiming at the discovery of the structure and synthesis of complex molecules. Similarly, in analysis, the notion of the 'scientific attitude' as an ultimate goal of the process cannot take the place of such explanatory concepts as the resolution of the transference-neurosis. Clearly, both the value and shortcoming of the concept of 'understanding' derives from its being abstracted out of a specific situation (analysis, special branches of natural science). But only in this way can we achieve the necessary psychic distance from our work which enables us to be 'scientific' in relation to the very activity in which we are engaged.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) ALEXANDER, F. (1954). 'Psychoanalysis and Psychotherapy.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 722.
- (2) — (1954). 'Some Quantitative Aspects of Psychoanalytic Technique.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 685.
- (3) — and FRENCH, T. M. *Psychoanalytic Therapy*. (New York: Ronald Press, 1946.)
- (4) BALINT, M. 'Changing Therapeutical Aims and Techniques of Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 31.
- (5) — 'The Final Goal of Psycho-analytic Treatment.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 17.
- (6) — 'New Beginning and the Paranoid and the Depressive Syndromes.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 33.
- (7) — 'On the Termination of Analysis.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 31.
- (8) BERGLER, E. 'Symposium on the Theory of the Therapeutic Results of Psychoanalysis.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 18.
- (9) BERNFELD, S. 'Sigmund Freud, M.D., 1882–1885.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 32.
- (10) BIBRING, E. 'Symposium on the Theory of the Therapeutic Results of Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 18.
- (11) BOHR, N. (1937). 'Causality and Complementarity.' *Phil. of Science*, 4, 289.
- (12) BOWMAN, K. M., and ROSE, M. (1954). 'Do our Medical Colleagues Know What to Expect from Psychotherapy?' *Amer. J. Psychiat.*, 111, 401.
- (13) BRIDGMAN, P. W. (1954). 'Science and Common Sense.' *Scientific Monthly*, 79, 32.
- (14) EINSTEIN, A. (1941). 'The Common Language of Science.' In A. Einstein: *Out of My Later Years*. (New York: Philosophical Library, 1950.) Pp. 111–113.
- (15) — (1950). 'The Laws of Science and the Laws of Ethics.' In A. Einstein: *Out of My Later Years*. Pp. 114–115.
- (16) — (1936). *Physics and Reality*. In A. Einstein: *Out of My Later Years*. Pp. 59–79.
- (17) — (1941). 'Science and Religion.' In A. Einstein: *Out of My Later Years*. Pp. 21–30.
- (18) EISSLER, K. R. (1953). 'The Effect of the Structure of the Ego on Psychoanalytic Technique.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 1, 104.
- (19) — 'Remarks on the Psycho-analysis of Schizophrenia.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 32.
- (20) FARRINGTON, B. *Greek Science*. (Harmondsworth, Penguin, 1953.)
- (21) FENICHEL, O. (1935). 'Psychoanalytic method.' In *The Collected Papers of Otto Fenichel*, First series. (New York: Norton, 1953). Pp. 318–330.
- (22) — *The Psychoanalytic Theory of Neurosis*. (New York: Norton, 1945.)
- (23) — 'Symposium on the Theory of the Therapeutic Results of Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 18.
- (24) FERENCZI, S. (1932). 'Confusion of Tongues between the Adult and the Child.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 30.
- (25) FREUD, A. (1954). 'The Widening Scope of Indications for Psychoanalysis.' Discussion. *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 607.
- (26) FREUD, S. (1937). 'Analysis Terminable and Interminable.' *Coll. Papers*, 5.
- (27) — (1937). 'Constructions in Analysis.' *Coll. Papers*, 5.
- (28) — (1913). 'Further Recommendations in the Technique of Psycho-analysis.' *Coll. Papers*, 2.
- (29) — (1932). *New Introductory Lectures on Psycho-Analysis*. (New York: W. W. Norton, 1933.)



- (30) — *The Origins of Psycho-Analysis* (1887-1902). (New York: Basic Books, 1954).
- (31) — (1927). 'Postscript to a Discussion on Lay Analysis.' *Coll. Papers*, 5.
- (32) — (1922). 'Psycho-analysis.' *Coll. Papers*, 5.
- (33) — (1925). 'Psycho-analysis and Delinquency.' Preface to Aichhorn's *Wayward Youth*. *Coll. Papers*, 5.
- (34) — (1919). 'Turnings in the Ways of Psycho-analytic Therapy.' *Coll. Papers*, 2.
- (35) GILL, M. M. (1954). 'Psychoanalysis and Exploratory Psychotherapy.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 771.
- (36) GITELSON, M. 'The Emotional Position of the Analyst in the Psycho-analytic Situation.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 33.
- (37) — (1951). 'Psychoanalysis and Dynamic Psychiatry.' *Arch. Neurol. & Psychiat.*, 66.
- (38) — (1954). 'Therapeutic Problems in the Analysis of the "Normal" Candidate.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 35.
- (39) GLOVER, E. 'Symposium on the Theory of the Therapeutic Results of Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 18.
- (40) — 'Therapeutic Criteria of Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 35.
- (41) GOETHE, J. W. VON. *Mineralogy and Geology*. Cited from Morley, C., and Everett, L. D. (Editors): *Bartlett's Familiar Quotations*, 12th ed. (Boston: Little, Brown, 1951.) p. 1172.
- (42) GREENACRE, P. (1954). 'The Role of Transference: Practical Considerations in Relation to Psychoanalytic Therapy.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 671.
- (43) — 'Symposium on the Evaluation of Therapeutic Results.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 29.
- (44) GROTIJAHN, M. 'About the Relation between Psycho-analytic Training and Psycho-analytic Therapy.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 35.
- (45) HARTMANN, H. M. 'Psycho-analysis and the Concept of Health.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 20.
- (46) HENDRICK, I. (1943). 'Work and the Pleasure Principle.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 12, 311.
- (47) HOFFER, W. 'Defensive Process and Defensive Organization: Their Place in Psycho-analytic Technique.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 35.
- (48) — 'Three Psychological Criteria for the Termination of Treatment.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 31.
- (49) HOLLITSCHER, W. 'On the Concepts of Psychological Health and Illness.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 24.
- (50) HOLTON, G. (1953). 'On the Duality and Growth of Physical Science.' *American Scientist*, 41, 89.
- (51) JONES, E. *The Life and Work of Sigmund Freud*. Vol. I. (London: Hogarth, 1953.)
- (52) KLEIN, M. 'On the Criteria for the Termination of a Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 31.
- (53) KNIGHT, R. P. (1946). 'Determinism, "Freedom" and Psychotherapy.' *Psychiatry*, 9, 251.
- (54) LANGER, S. K. (1942). *Philosophy in a New Key*. (New York: Mentor Books, 1953.)
- (55) LANTOS, B. 'Work and the Instincts.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 24.
- (56) LITTLE, M. 'Counter-transference and the Patient's Response to it.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 32.
- (57) MACALPINE, I. (1950). 'The Development of the Transference.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 19, 501.
- (58) MURRAY, H. J. R. *A History of Chess*. (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1913.)
- (59) NUNBERG, H. 'Symposium on the Theory of the Therapeutic Results of Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 18.
- (60) OBERNDORF, C. 'Results of Psycho-analytic Therapy.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 24.
- (61) — 'Symposium on the Evaluation of Therapeutic Results.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 29.
- (62) OPPENHEIMER, J. R. *Science and the Common Understanding*. (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1953.)
- (63) ORR, D. W. (1954). 'Transference and Countertransference: A Historical Survey.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 621.
- (64) Panel Report, Midwinter Meeting, 1952. 'The Traditional Psychoanalytic Technique and its Variations.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 1, 526, 1953.
- (65) Panel Report, Midwinter Meeting, 1952. 'The Essentials of Psychotherapy as Viewed by the Psychoanalyst.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 1, 550, 1953.
- (66) Panel Report, Annual Meeting, 1953. 'Training and Therapeutic Analysis.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 175, 1954.
- (67) Panel Report, Midwinter Meeting, 1953. 'Psychoanalysis and Psychotherapy: Dynamic Criteria for Treatment Choice.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 347, 1954.
- (68) RANGELL, L. (1954). 'Similarities and Differences between Psychoanalysis and Dynamic Psychotherapy.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 734.
- (69) RAPOPORT, A. *Operational Philosophy*. (New York: Harper, 1954.)
- (70) REICHENBACH, H. *Elements of Symbolic Logic*. (New York: Macmillan Co., 1947.)
- (71) SEARL, M. N. 'Some Queries on Principles of Technique.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 17.
- (72) STERBA, R. 'The Fate of the Ego in Analytic Therapy.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 15.
- (73) STONE, L. (1954). 'The Widening Scope of Indications for Psychoanalysis.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 567.
- (74) STRACHEY, J. 'On the Nature of the Therapeutic Action of Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 15.
- (75) — 'Symposium on the Theory of the Therapeutic Results of Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 18.



(76) SZASZ, T. S. 'Entropy, Organisation and the Problem of the Economy of Human Relationships.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 36.

(77) WADDINGTON, C. H. *The Scientific Attitude*. (West Drayton: Penguin, 1948.)

(78) WÄLDER, R. 'The Problem of Freedom in Psycho-analysis and the Problem of Reality-Testing.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 17.

(79) WEIGERT, E. 'Counter-transference and Self-analysis of the Psycho-analyst.' *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 35.

(80) — (1954). 'The Importance of Flexibility in Psychoanalytic Technique.' *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 702.

(Received 30 August, 1955.)



# COMMENTS ON THE ANALYTICAL SITUATION<sup>1</sup>

By

NILS HAAK, STOCKHOLM

By the word 'comments' in the title I wish to emphasize that I make no claim whatsoever to describe the analytical situation as a whole. Instead, I have selected certain features in this situation which during the course of years have seemed to me practically and therapeutically significant. I shall also refer to opinions expressed in the literature which I consider to be of value and which coincide with my own experience. Although the aspects which I intend to deal with are on the whole generally known or have been described previously, yet it has been my experience that several colleagues overlook or are unable to utilize the significance and the practical scope of a number of phenomena which as a matter of routine should be the subject of careful analytical treatment. If this is neglected, as is not unusual, the analytical results reached are often inferior to what would otherwise have been the case.

Several of the aspects to which I shall later refer have impressed themselves upon me, *inter alia*, during analyses of a number of cases which had been treated previously by one or several other analysts; also as a result of the fact that during the last couple of years I have controlled a relatively large number of analytic cases.

The ordinary analytical situation is as follows: a person who is suffering from difficulties, which are considered to be wholly or to a great extent of a psychological nature and which it is not or has not been possible to overcome in a simpler manner, consults a psycho-analyst, with whom he must not have any personal relations, and who holds out the prospect of the desired help. It is presupposed that the person in question—the analytical patient—can and will submit to a certain routine which forms an essential part of the therapeutic system to which the helper adheres and in which he is considered an expert, namely classical Freudian psycho-analysis. Traditionally this routine involves the patient's visiting the analyst regularly at the latter's place

of consultation at least four, preferably five, sometimes six times per week at hours previously agreed, and that for this attention the patient himself pays the analyst for the pre-arranged consultations, which generally last for 50 minutes each. Furthermore the patient should, if he can, lie on his back on a couch with the analyst sitting out of sight behind him. The analyst should do nothing during the consultation except listen to the patient with free floating attention or inattention, as Jekels (21) puts it; he should also learn 'to listen with his third ear' (32) and on rare occasions permit himself to speak with his 'second mouth' (25), but in general and above all should devote his attention to interpretations of the patient's material, or preparations therefor. All other psychotherapeutic activities are undesirable; in any case they should be regarded only as emergency measures (parameters) (7). The analyst's attentive and dispassionate study of transference and counter-transference forms the basis of the analytical interpretations. These effects regularly occur in the artificial and unreal situation (34; 18, p. 684) which is deliberately created so that the play of forces may begin which is the prerequisite for a successful psycho-analysis and in which the re-activation of the infantile conflicts is a *conditio sine qua non*. There are some legitimate (7) and far too many illegitimate exceptions to this ordinary analytical situation.

## *Veiled Transference*

The basis of the analytical interpretations is thus the study of transference and counter-transference manifestations, which regularly occur in the artificial, analytical situation, and whose systematic and penetrating study is the essential in psycho-analytical treatment as compared with other psychotherapeutic systems.

Sometimes we hear that, although so many months of an analysis have passed, no transference has yet begun, or that the patient shows

<sup>1</sup> A revised version of a paper read before the Swedish Psycho-analytical Society on 3 March, 1955, and the

Danish Psycho-analytical Study-Group at the Psychiatric Clinic, Copenhagen, on 14 May, 1955.



no signs of it whatsoever. It is also not uncommon for patients, who have read or heard about the transference phenomena, to ask themselves or the analyst with surprise why they have not yet experienced any transference. (By 'transference' I mean here that the analyst becomes the object of feelings and thoughts of an irrational nature which are related to the patient's infantile situation.) It might be replied that the transference was already there; the patient brought it with him from the moment he entered the consulting room for the first time (22, p. 338). Actually a kind of preliminary transference was formed even when the patient began planning to be analysed by a particular analyst. On several occasions I myself have obtained evidence that the transference from the future analytic patient was already in full play during the first telephone conversation. This idea, that transference has not yet started, either implies that the patient still has too great resistance against the transference becoming conscious, or resists its disclosure to the analyst, or that the latter has not yet succeeded in coming to grips with the transference. These views also apply at later stages in analyses in which considerable transference material has already been revealed, but certain sectors of the transference are still veiled.

As Glover (17, 113-115, 136) points out, activity and in any case great attention on the analyst's part is often called for to detect the transference, which may conceal itself in or behind seemingly unimportant incidents in the analysis, most frequently of an obviously realistic nature.

One can lose many situations of significance for the analysis if one allows such material to slip through one's fingers. Exactly in the same way as a student in histology, one must learn to distinguish the vague structures in the analytical microscope, *inter alia* by improving one's counter-transference instrument (30), whose sensitiveness has probably not yet been sufficiently recognized. I have seen how my candidates, whom I have systematically trained to observe these veiled transference reactions, not least by training their own counter-transference instruments, have been able successfully to carry through their patients' analyses, despite their lack of experience, in many cases where I myself at the beginning of my career would have groped wholly in the dark owing to the fact that these aspects were not then available. When one has once really learned to see these veiled trans-

ference reactions, one can obtain examples of them daily.

The following are some specimens of what I mean by veiled transference.

(i) When I returned to my practice in Stockholm after a few days' absence to visit Dr. Zilboorg's seminars in Copenhagen, a candidate who knew the object of my journey asked what kind of a time I had had in Copenhagen. I did not take the question at its face value, but treated it analytically. After a number of resistance manoeuvres he admitted that he hoped I had had a dull time; this as a revenge for the fact that I had abandoned him. At that moment of the analysis he was in a sensitive, infantile son-father relationship to me and had experienced the short interruption in his analysis as a frustration.

(ii) Another analysand would not let me finish my sentences, but always had to interrupt me before I had said my say. It took quite a long time before I got down to solving the question. This proved that the interruption of my speech was a defence against his fear of being influenced by me, according to the principle: 'Attack is the best form of defence.' In a deeper sense, to be influenced by me meant in a feminine way to be made pregnant by my thoughts. Thus it was a question here of defence against his passive, feminine transference to me.

A powerful 'manly' handshake, upright position, and determined stride may have the same background.

(iii) At a fairly late stage in an analysis of a female patient, I pointed out to her that she shook my hand very limply when we met. (I always shake hands with my patients when they enter and leave the consulting room, a habit common in Sweden.) It eventually came out that she was afraid that I would press her hand if she pressed mine first. Her father did so. Further associations and elaborations showed that behind her anxiety that I would press her hand was a desire to be exposed to a sexual, sadistic attack by me—a father-transference against which she thus defended herself.

(iv) Another female patient had a cold. During the consultation she asked if I intended to refrain from my habit of shaking hands with her when she left. What was the real object of the question? It was that if I did not offer her my hand when saying good-bye, I was afraid of being infected, and was thus cowardly and weak like her father. Here we have a case of a veiled father-transference, hidden behind an apparently realistic triviality in the contact between the analyst and the patient.

(v) On arrival in the consulting room, a male neurotic patient found on the analytic couch a red pencil, which the preceding male patient had dropped from his pocket. After some attempts to suppress his ideas, he put into words the following fantasy: I had tried to rape the preceding patient homosexually, and during the struggle with him the



pencil had fallen out of his pocket. He had intended, however, to use this pencil to write a report about my indecent behaviour which would later be handed in to the authorities. In the Swedish Psycho-analytical Society on 3 March, 1955, this example in particular gave some of those present an opportunity to discuss the following possibilities: that it could be a question of extracting artificially deep material from the obliging patient, of provoking from the passive patient an obliging attitude towards the analyst's need to dramatize the analysis. This view seems to me to support what I said in my introduction: 'It has been my experience that several colleagues overlook or are unable to utilize the significance and the practical scope of a number of phenomena which as a matter of routine should be the subject of careful analytical treatment.' His fantasy was over-determined: firstly a projection of his own passive, feminine wishes; at another level an expression of his oedipal aggression. The previous day the patient's wife had spoken of me with approval, and now he felt a need to cause my ruin.

(vi) A female patient thought she had observed that I had to sit with my legs apart and lean back in the analytic chair, also that I walked with my legs wide apart. After obstinate resistance the patient disclosed a fantasy which she had had for a long time: I had such a gigantic penis that I was compelled to keep my legs apart in this way. Most men had a small penis, but I had a penis as gigantic as her father's, and one must be torn to pieces by such a penis. Her entire fantasy was accompanied by a horror-filled desire.

(vii) Contrary to habit I advised a male candidate to read a special article in the *Dagens Nyheter* (an important Swedish newspaper) for a certain purpose. After a few days the analysand returned and asked whether it really was in the *Dagens Nyheter* that the article had appeared. He had looked for it, but had been unable to find it. I felt in my counter-transference that a problem was hidden here, and made further inquiry. Eventually it came out that the patient was convinced that I had confused newspapers; it was surely in the *Stockholms-Tidningen* papers; that the article had been published. But the fact of that the article had been published, had now begun to matter was that I, his analyst, had now begun to understand that I was incapable of remembering which newspaper it was. This was a case of father-transference, a need on the part of the patient, who was becoming more and more released from his passive attachment to me, to defeat and eliminate me—the formerly terrifying father-image.

(viii) Shortly after the analysand—a candidate—had lain down on the couch, for once he produced a throat tablet and began to suck it. It was felt in the counter-transference as an aggressive gesture against me. I pointed out to him that he was sucking a tablet. His first reaction was to say that it was only natural that he was sucking a throat tablet, as he

had a cough. [He staked here on the reality-component which, according to Alexander, is a typical rationalization: to choose from a collection of mixed motives to explain a mode of conduct that which is most acceptable to the ego. This renders possible a repression of other ego-alien motives (1).] Then the analysand got angry and attacked me because I wanted to deprive him of a pleasure, which was all the more unjust, he said, as I myself sat lapping up mineral water behind him. I was silent. After a while he realized the unrealistic nature of the attack and recalled that I had only pointed out that he had been sucking the tablet and not forbidden him to do so. Thereafter his entire present transference situation was unveiled, thanks to the tablet; the analysand was now in a serious ambivalence conflict with me, he was competing with me in knowledge and proficiency, he thought sometimes that he was better and more able than I. On the other hand, he was now and then seized by considerable insecurity; he must, for example, consult me about his patients. Superficially his oedipal competition with me was reflected (he had imagined a few days before that I was going to meet his wife at a concert and have an adventure with her); at a deeper level in this reaction his negative oedipus complex appeared, which was his central conflict, namely his passive, feminine, masochistic fixation to me as a father imago and his need to revolt against this attitude. To suck a tablet, as his analyst sometimes did, meant that he himself was an analyst, an adult, independent; it also meant defying me by withdrawing from me in the analytical situation. Also from a conventional point of view, it was an impolite gesture towards me. On the other hand sucking the tablet was an infantile, oral comfort and defence against anxiety; furthermore it was a provocation to me so that I should feel offended and in revenge press him down in a masochistic position, one desired by his infantile, neurotic ego. Finally, his conduct also implied an element of testing the analyst, to which I will refer later. If I had not staked on my relatively weak counter-transference reaction, the whole of this important part of his transference neurosis would not have been ventilated in a manner so pregnant and convincing to him. If I had also suppressed my irritation with the patient on this and other occasions, it might have had an unfortunate influence on my more constant counter-transference attitude towards him.

I have tried to find a formula which would cover the phenomena I have now exemplified and which I will call *veiled transference*. It would read: it is here a question of an infiltration of unconscious tendencies—transference tendencies—in the narrow realistic contact surface between the analyst and the analysand.

Such phenomena occur practically every hour. When one has once become aware of them, there



are no major difficulties in learning to reveal them, which can often bring the analysis a decisive step forward. On the other hand, ignoring them leads the analysis into an unfruitful stage. It is certainly important to time these interpretations carefully and adequately.

Several cases have come to my knowledge in which, for various reasons, such veiled transference fantasies of essential importance have not been revealed by previous analysts. Some of these reactions can be called *pseudo-realistic transference reactions*. In these cases one must not be caught by the patient's occasionally very clever rationalizations. These can always be produced, and they are sometimes very insidious. (Remember Alexander's definition of rationalization.)

Glover (17, pp. 127, 133) points out that patients always lay counter-transference traps for us for unconscious defence purposes; they always try to allocate to us one of the parts in the infantile dramas they need to enact. I would add: the important thing is that certain patients are extremely clever in allocating to us such parts. They provoke us in the most subtle manner. A number of patients have an almost uncanny ability, with a sixth sense, to divine our weak points and to attack them with great effectiveness. Others are specialists in driving us into a mutual, affective involvement, a kind of confused web of transference and counter-transference which Alexander (2, pp. 690-691) has compared with a *folie à deux*: as soon as the consulting room has been warmed up by the patient's emotional reactions in the transference neurosis, the analyst will easily react in accordance with his own unsolved attitudes and personal peculiarities; in unexperienced analysts one will meet strong, easily observed reactions; in trained analysts more subtle ones, because of a well-developed defence system. As a rule, however, the patient observes his analyst's neurotic reactions, and, if the situation is not cleared up, one can get what Greenacre (18, p. 683) calls a *contamination of the transference*. It may occur that 'the patient automatically does not dare to think of certain things, which he unconsciously feels would cause him to be unacceptable to his analyst. Such deletions from the analysis only turn up on re-analysis or in a negative transference reaction which crops up after the termination of an analysis.' Such a contamination of the transference can easily occur if the analyst deviates from the narrow path of neutrality.

### *The Analyst's 'Human Feelings'*

It is for this reason that all talk about maintaining 'human', 'natural' relations with the analysand (8, p. 74) causes me to raise my eyebrows. Freud himself (12) was very sceptical: 'I cannot recommend my colleagues emphatically enough to take as a model in psychoanalytic treatment the surgeon who *puts aside all his own feelings, including those of human sympathy*. . . . ' *This coldness in feeling* in the analyst brings the greatest advantage to both persons involved. . . . ' (my italics). Whether 'human' relations mean slackness, lack of control over the counter-transference, an acting out of an uncontrolled need to be the kind mother, the forgiving, helpful father (31), or whether the 'human' attitude involves an effort to bribe or appease the patient so as to prevent him from releasing his unpleasant aggressions against us, or if it is some kind of reaction-formation or defence against our own aggressions; in any case there can be much trash concealed behind this need to deviate from analytic neutrality, which is fully noticeable to the patient's unconscious, even if made in a subtle manner. This does not mean of course that one need be stiff and formal or maintain any kind of compulsive ritual. But, on the other hand, it does mean a very strict observance and a continuous control of one's own counter-transference attitude (36). In this respect I believe—and not only believe, I know—that many offences are committed, and have been committed, really detrimental to the analytic work. A pronounced friendliness towards the patient can, especially if it reaches a somewhat warmer temperature, have deleterious results; it can for instance definitely lock an analysand's aggressive inhibitions. A former patient of the late Dr. S., a specialist on aggression, has told me that it was impossible to get angry with the kind, sick old lady, however much she invited it. Another case: a former analysand of Fenichel, who himself in his technique book propagates for and points out the importance of 'humanity' in association with his patients (8, p. 74), has said that she was never able to tell Fenichel what she thought about his looks. Telling him so might have made him unhappy. I suppose all of us could contribute similar examples. We must therefore constantly be on guard to avoid such deletions from the transference material of our patients.



*The Emotional Stress on the Analyst*

The strong emotional stress which the transference may often imply also for the trained analyst should not be underestimated. The myth of the analyst's peculiar, exceptional, psychic harmony must be referred to the realms of fiction. There is no reason to believe or assume that analysts are better armed against emotional stress than other persons of a similar professional status, rather the contrary (17, pp. 4-5, 88-90, 92). Hendrick, for example, says that the treatment of the transference-neurosis distinguishes clearly between the well-trained and the untrained and 'it tests the skill of the best' (19). It must be remembered that the patient always takes his own re-enactments in the transference-situation at face value (17, p. 89). Few of the parts which the analyst is given by the patient satisfy the former's narcissistic needs. The analyst cannot entirely avoid taking the situation personally. He must try to endure all the repugnant and painful ideas which the patients project on him and which may strongly oppose his ego-ideals. He should not be oversensitive to this material, but neither can he be immune to it. Immunity implies a defence attitude. Refractory cases in particular, or cases with long-term negative and dull transference periods, can be a hard blow to the analyst's narcissistic, omnipotence need, which has perhaps not been sufficiently analysed (17, pp. 89-92). The integrity of the analyst can be put to hard tests here. 'Nothing is easier for the conscious ego of the analyst than to suppress, and for his unconscious ego, to repress, the antagonism aroused by the patient's defences.' There may be an inclination to allow difficult interpretations to pass by, to gloss over the interpretations of negative transferences. The silence may be an expression of an aggressive counter-attack against the patient (17, p. 98). It is particularly trying if we do not receive any assistance from the patient's mature ego in our interpretations of his infantile acting out.

Glover (17, p. 106) says that 'the analyst's own difficulties may be effectively concealed by the fact that he is a psycho-analyst.' 'At least some prospective analysts are attracted to the science by this intellectual shelter from inner difficulties.' Some candidates never pass further than their transference-neurosis; they conceal a negative attitude towards the analysis and the analyst and hide their resistance. This can be a serious difficulty for them in their analytic work.

'Nothing is more devastating to the work of analytic groups than the existence of a hierarchy of post-analytic transferences. . . . There will be 'a tangle of residual transferences . . . leaving the members in a state of concealed ambivalence to each other', says Glover (17, p. 107). Not always so concealed, one is inclined to comment!

*The Patient's Magical Demands*

I wish now to transfer to another important component in the analytical situation, namely, what in Vienna was once called *der Genesungswille*, the will to recovery. Here Nunberg has made some lasting contributions (26, 27, 28). The line of thought is that the doctor is given an omnipotent part; he becomes priest, sorcerer, god. Nunberg mentions Simmel's evidence that the doctor has his own subjective needs which correspond to the part the patient gives him. The unconscious needs of the doctor and the patient, in our case the analyst and the analysand, coincide. The sick patient needs magic protection, and the analyst needs to give it him. Now, in addition to this, there is something extra in the analytical situation, which strengthens the patient's regressive tendencies and which has been excellently described by Macalpine (24). In this respect I will particularly indicate the couch.

To make a small digression to the couch, whose dynamic meaning I do not believe has been sufficiently valued, I consider that it, together with free association, is one of Freud's brilliant discoveries. The traditional conception of the importance of the couch, which is quoted for instance in Fenichel's book on technique (8, p. 23) and which Freud (13, p. 354) created, indicates the muscular relaxation, the patient's better concentration on his thought-content, etc. These I regard as less important aspects than the powerful regressive factor which the couch involves. Lying down implies, on the one hand, being a child, on the other being sick, helpless, defenceless, female, passive. Furthermore, the most important means of contact with the outer world, namely the visual object-relation, is broken off as the analyst sits behind the patient. The contact is exclusively maintained through hearing, and this stimulates infantile fantasies. All this has a strongly affective meaning, the dynamic character of which can be revealed, if for some reason the regression should go too deeply. At least in three cases I have, as a technical stratagem when the patient's ego was



about to lose control completely and be submerged with chaotic and unruly id-impulses, immediately advised the patient to leave the analytic couch and sit on a chair opposite me at my desk. In all three cases the effect was striking. It was another and entirely reasonable person I had to deal with, no longer the troublesome child that I had just before with much difficulty tried to help. By making the patient sit up, a major part of the regression was instantly removed. My cases concerned obviously neurotic patients. I have observed the same phenomenon in some analyses, which I supervised. These were almost 'border-line cases', which were continually threatened by too deep regressions on the analytic couch. (After completing this paper I found that Worden has had the same experience. Cf. Frederic G. Worden: 'A Problem in Psychoanalytic Technique', *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 3, 1955, p. 269.)

We now return to the magic expectations, which Nunberg considers an essential part of the 'will to recovery'. The strong regression, which takes place in the analytical situation, and which is really a necessary condition to enable this situation to arise, is promoted by a number of factors, not least the couch. The regression actualizes in the patient the early stages in his ego-development, described by Ferenczi (9), in which the magico-religious world picture is predominant. It is a phase which arises after the first animistic phase, when the child or the man ascribes all power to himself. In the second phase, omnipotence has been relinquished to the gods or the parents, but not completely. Something is left, namely the ability to influence the powers and to direct these according to one's personal wishes. Even Ferenczi realized that the neurotic regressed not only libidinally, but also in respect of his ego-mechanisms. Nunberg, too, emphasizes the same regression in the ego which occurs in neurosis, amounting to the demand by the patient that his wishes and expectations be fulfilled in a magical manner. The omnipotence and omniscience of the parents are the result of the projection of infantile megalomania. On the other hand the parents are in reality powerful, just as the doctor or the analyst also are powerful, because of their knowledge. This reality makes it easier for the patient to transfer his own omnipotence fantasies to the doctor. Nunberg stresses how tempting it is for the doctor to allow himself to be placed in the part of a god-like, omnipotent person

which has been given him by the patient. To be allowed to play this part is in many cases one of the most important determinants for the choice of the medical or analytical professions (see Simmel). Thus the relationship between doctor and patient, and patient and doctor, becomes mutually satisfactory.

However, it is a fact that the patient by recovery means something different from the doctor, namely to have an assortment of his wishes, impulses, expectations, hopes, etc., satisfied. Even Freud (14) pointed out that when the transference began to operate the need of recovery, the rational element, lost importance while the transference became the predominating interest. Nunberg also points out that the rational will to recovery is very weak and scarcely dynamically active in comparison with the infantile need to have the magic demands realized.

There are also other aspects to the patient's demands on the treatment, which have been particularly pointed out by Bergler (4, pp. 22-24). There are, says he, one conscious reason and four unconscious ones. The first, the conscious one, is obvious: the patient suffers, he is helpless and wants help. The second one is that which Nunberg emphasizes: a fulfilment of the unconscious infantile wishes. The patient is exasperated when the analyst utilizes the transference as a means of destroying just these infantile wishes. In addition, says Bergler, the patient expects the analysis to stabilize his neurotic balance. He does not at all wish to get rid of his neurosis; he wishes to keep it, but he wants help to eliminate his guilt-feelings or, if he is a masochist, the surplus of his guilt feelings.

When the analyst says that the neurosis must be destroyed, the patient's third aim is: 'My neurosis must be improved.' By this he means that he wants to reduce or eliminate his guilt feelings and strengthen his internal defence mechanisms. This is also emphasized by Fenichel (8, p. 26). So far Bergler.

The magic expectations in the analysis are intimately related to the patient's projection of his archaic omnipotent parent-imagos on the analyst (35). If we take the frequency and strength of these magic demands of our patients seriously we can draw a number of conclusions of technical and practical importance, which in my opinion have not been sufficiently stressed in the literature. My conclusions are based on rather extensive material which I am not going to report except by a few examples taken as an



illustration of what I intend to say. First, I wish to begin with a general orientation of the set of problems connected with the magic expectations.

We have here a question not only of a wish, but of powerfully charged demands by the patient on the analyst, to represent the longed-for omnipotent magical figure. This implies that the analyst must not be an ordinary human being. It is often demanded of him that he should live in secluded sanctity. It is doubtful whether he eats or has secretions; whether he may drive a car or in any respect occupy himself with ordinary human activities. One of my patients was so shocked and disappointed when she was informed that I owned a car that she was on the point of breaking off her analysis. Having a car did not correspond to her ascetic, infantile ego-ideal which she projected on me.

It can be dangerous to look at the analyst. Many patients dare neither look at their analyst nor at his consulting room until perhaps after one year of analysis. If the patient should happen to see his analyst out of doors without being prepared for it, he may have an attack of anxiety. Compare this with the emphasis in certain religions on the danger of seeing the Holy One. One is blinded by the light surrounding God, etc. The patient demands that the analyst should also demonstrate his omnipotence outside the consulting room: he must be brilliant in debate; all must be silenced by his utterances; if he writes an article for a newspaper it must impress everyone. In some cases he must write, for instance, to defend the analysis so that all further criticism is immediately stopped. The analyst must not be interested in money, films, light music, beautiful women, dancing, sport, etc. (In some cases the demands may change to a totally different key. The analyst must then be the greatest of all Don Juans, he must have the most luxurious of cars, etc.). Furthermore, the analyst must be famous. It is indeed deplorable if he is not a professor. He must live in a fine house; in some rare instances just the contrary; then there must be something very obscure and queer about him. At one period I wore a dark-blue velvet jacket, and it scored a great success, but by and by there was an epidemic of velvet jackets among my male patients, so I considered it best to stop wearing it. Wearing slippers is no offence; on the contrary it is among the privileges of a worn-person. Long hair, unpressed trousers, a worn-out coat, etc., can increase the magic aura. Myths are created about the analyst: he lies on

his couch practising Yoga exercises between the consultation hours, he is awake nearly all night busying himself with scientific research, and, at the same time, treating twelve to fourteen patients every day. Also the analytic occupation as such, and the legends which are spun around it, naturally contribute to the formation of highly-placed magical expectations.

*Serious complications can arise if the analyst himself is influenced by the demands and expectations of the patient, if the patient's omnipotence fantasies coincide with his own unsolved ones.* A candidate (student in training) reacted with anxiety when his patient criticized his humble consulting room. This was a result of the analyst's own insufficiently treated omnipotence-demands. As stated before, here the choice of profession is often involved as a determining factor.

In many cases the patient has the idea that the longed-for magic help will not be given unless certain conditions are fulfilled, for instance, unless a sacrifice of some kind is made. Here we can compare with the religious demands of fasting, suffering, 'walking in the vale of tears', 'those who humble themselves shall be exalted', the parable of the needle's eye. There is a great preparedness for such tendencies in primitive thinking, which is actualized under analysis. Among the conditions which must be fulfilled in order to get the benefit of magic help we can mention the following: to sacrifice three to four hours a day for one's analysis, to make long and often difficult journeys to it, to pay a high fee. A cheap analysis is of little or no value. Sometimes it can be a question of more fantastic things: one patient (neurotic!) once offered to walk barefoot to India to induce me to give her at last the long coveted, but so far absent, magic help. The patient can indulge in fantasies of giving the analyst a great gift after the analysis, possibly everything he possesses. He can offer to take a high degree of some kind to please the analyst; another possibility is to appeal to the analyst's need of love, which can lead women to make sexual invitations and men to some pseudo-positive attitude of admiration. Men can more or less obscurely offer their wives or mistresses to the analyst. 'Nice patients' can belong to this category.

One way of persuading or forcing the analyst to release his magic powers over the patient is to display during the analytic hours an intense or long-lasting mental suffering which is the subject of continual nagging. This is a clinically



important type. For some reason, unknown to the patient, the analyst is not yet willing to give the magic help; there are some unsatisfied conditions which the patient has not yet been able to detect. For this reason the attitude of suffering must be maintained. It appears as if there were some definite quantity which has not yet been fulfilled. I believe that a great deal of the masochistic wailing during the analytic hours can be explained thus. (The possibility of its being a case of testing, provocation, attempts to castrate the analyst, etc., is another matter.) In none of the cases mentioned here does the patient doubt the magic power of the analyst, but he has not yet been able to influence him in the right way. The patient can be driven to more or less dramatic breakdowns in order to influence the analyst to release the magic help; for instance, suicidal attempts or hysterical attacks.

To some patients the most important method of getting the benefit of the magic help is a meticulous, pedantic adherence to the fundamental rule. This can lead to peculiar and sometimes not easily discovered deformations of free association. The analyst either receives veritable floods of chaotic material or it may be a question of a pedantic filigree-work, in which every thread in the analyst's curtain, so to speak, must be accounted for as it comes into view. When the patient adheres to the fundamental rule in this manner, he has the opportunity of placing the whole responsibility for the progress and result of the cure on the analyst in a passive, infantile way.

Patients frequently offer to co-operate with the analyst in order to speed up the magic process. They are willing to submit to various ceremonies, such as the study of certain books, or to go through some ritual which the analyst may recommend. One patient offered to take leave of absence from work for a couple of months in order to give the analysis 'a better effect'. To the same category can be referred the patient's wish to undergo analysis two hours a day, or to present at every visit one or several fine dreams, or—if one allows the patient to record his dreams—to present a whole bundle every day. In this connexion one recalls the patient's usual question at the start of the analysis: 'Is there something in particular which I can or must do?' Another magic ritual is to make notes at home about the analytic hours. It becomes a kind of sacred annal from which one can receive strength and power.

When later on it begins to dawn on the patient that the magic demands will perhaps not be realized, any analysis where such demands are encountered has arrived at a very critical point where the analyst's skill and power of resistance are put to hard tests. There are two main kinds of reaction. In one kind there may be depressive states which may be of great length and difficulty, even suicidal, and these do not necessarily announce their source from the beginning. In the second kind there are the aggressive reactions: i.e. biting and very often serious attacks against both the analyst's competence and personality and the science of psycho-analysis, in which case the traditional array of historical arguments can be produced anew: criticism of the analytic method, reference to the absence of statistics, doubts as to whether any patients at all have been cured, and so on. The source of these reactions can also in the beginning be completely hidden. Thus it is absolutely necessary, not least for these reasons, that the magic demands and expectations be traced and carefully analysed if the analysis is to be saved. They are often concealed under a pseudo-realistic front. ('After so and so many hours of analysis there ought to be some effect', etc.). The patient will feel cheated under all circumstances: he has come to the analysis with his magic demands and expectations, he does not get anything of all that he has asked for, i.e. the realization of his infantile wishes, but at best something quite different, in which at first he is not at all interested, namely adaptation to reality, maturity, and mental health. One must expect a rather long phase of working through before the patient becomes 'resigned' and renounces his original magic demands. If these are not discovered in the analysis and carefully analysed the patient can glide into a stage of resignation and disappointment, where he may come to rest in some infantile position and repress his disappointment and fury under some reaction formation, such as a feeling of friendship, loyalty, or mild compassion towards the analyst.

In my view, a number of the unsuccessful analytic cases are to be found among patients whose magic demands have been analysed and studied either not at all, or insufficiently. These reactions are *much more common and have far more dynamic force than is generally believed*. I ask myself whether they are not a regular ingredient in every analysis.

I have also begun to ponder whether the male



patient's passive, feminine transference to the male analyst does not often imply a kind of preparedness to receive the magic help to virility in a sexual way—the analyst's penis being the magic wand which is to transfer power.

Are these magic expectations necessary in the first half of the analysis in order to carry it forward? Otherwise the patient would perhaps be unable to make all the sacrifices which the analysis demands. They are perhaps necessary to help the patient over the *narcissistic* trauma which is involved in the analytical situation. The answer is difficult to find.

Some illustrative examples. A candidate well adapted to reality had at a late stage of his analysis the following experience: I had made some surmises regarding one of his first supervised cases, namely, that his patient would say something special when he left the couch and went to the door at the end of the hour and that, in a particular way, he would make difficulties about the fee. In another case I had assumed that the candidate—my patient—would find certain special characteristics in his patient. These pronouncements were of course pure guess-work on my part. When they proved to be true my analysand—the candidate—experienced this as a manifestation of my magic ability to see into the future. It crept out under strong resistance that he actually felt as though my words had directed the actions of his patients. I had, in other words, the strength power to influence events in the world. The strength of the ego-regression of this candidate was so intense that his adult ego reacted with anxiety (15). A few days later I made another prediction about one of the patients which did not come true. When the candidate related this in the analysis, he laughed with relief. He now felt that I was no longer omnipotent.

A therapeutic case, which had had a rather difficult course but which had passed on to a favourable terminal stage, indulged in fantasies of buying a fine work of art to embellish my drawing-room as an expression of his great gratitude for the successful treatment. The patient reluctantly agreed to submit this fantasy to an analytic examination. It proved to contain a purely magic idea, namely that of forcing me, by means of the placing of this work of art, to think of him every day of my life, so that he would thus enjoy my constant magic protection (in the capacity of his omnipotent father).

A candidate, a psychologist, said 'How do you do?' to one of his supervised patients at the end of an analytic hour instead of 'Good-bye', a slip of the tongue due to the candidate's neurotic transference to his patient. This was such a shock to the supervised patient that he seriously considered breaking off his analysis. After the interpretation was given that the patient had been frustrated in his

magic demands on the analyst, he admitted that he had been extremely disappointed. He had been completely dazed for one whole day after the incident. After this crisis, which is typical when a patient's magic demands are frustrated at once and under conditions similar to a shock, as in this case, the transference could be worked through in quite another manner than before. The patient quickly got contact with the way in which the analyst and his father coincided in his emotional life, and it was possible to make a successful mutative interpretation according to Strachey (35). To the patient his father had seemed weak just as the analyst now did. It appeared that the patient had regarded his father as a sick, spoilt child, but these thoughts had been so painful that they had been repressed.

Anna Freud has recently paid attention to the patient's magic ideas (11). She emphasizes that such demands are a danger to the analysis when they remain undiscovered and uninterpreted, which is not unusual. She concludes: 'It makes me wonder just how often the patient's magic belief in us remains unrevealed.'

### *Testing the Analyst*

I now wish to say something about another feature, in my opinion an important one in any analysis, and one which I believe to be an integral part of the analytic process, namely the patient's need to test his analyst and put him on trial. Berman (5) considers it therapeutically very valuable for the patient to be allowed to test the analyst. To experience how the analyst can function realistically and integrally under stress is an important therapeutic factor for the patient. Berman points out that the patient has a need to subject the analyst to an ordeal before he can experience that what the analyst represents in the way of mental health can be taken seriously. This can be compared with Silverberg's opinion (33), namely that the transference is an attempt by the patient to learn through a series of repetitions how to avoid being helpless or powerless in a situation in which he used to be so. It is thus an attempt to overcome and put right an infantile traumatic situation in the present transference situation. French (10) has a similar idea: one must give the patient repeated opportunities for a readjustment in the transference situation. Now and then the patient tries these new attitudes in life outside the consulting room and observes that they have become his second nature. This is emotional re-education.

Jekels and Bergler (22, p 346) speculated as



early as 1934 whether the patient's aggressions could be an attempt to test the capacity of the doctor's love, to what degree it can bear a burden.

The analyst can be tested in many different ways, not only and perhaps not chiefly by direct aggressions. He can for instance be tested by trying to frighten him or by refusing all co-operation, by threats of suicide or by enactments outside the analysis. Jacobson (20) says that the patient tries to blackmail the analyst by playing on his guilt feelings. This also is testing.

A usual way of testing the analyst is to try to manipulate the hours, to demand hours other than the usual ones, or to be absent for pseudo-realistic reasons. I would recall a case described by Boehm (6). He took over two opera tickets offered him by an analysand who had been his patient for one whole year. The aspect that it might be a bribe had been worked through in advance. Later it transpired that a serious attack on the analyst was involved. Through this incident the patient had attempted to force the analyst into legalizing a relationship with a prostitute and had degraded the analyst's wife to that class. This is a good example of a testing in which the analyst did not come out well; excusable of course, but not without considerable effects.

According to Greenacre (18, p. 683) there are some analysts who fail in erotic testings by their female patients. Sexual relations between male analysts and female patients are more common, she says, than one would be inclined to believe. The particular test situation into which female analysts sometimes fail is their being enticed by their patients into a motherly protective attitude.

One way of testing and provoking the analyst is, as Glover points out (17, p. 126), to complain constantly that the analysis is pointless, that the analyst is incapable, that the analysis is too expensive and too long drawn-out, etc. In my experience recurrences in a later stage of an analysis are not infrequently testings which, like enactments, can take a violent course.

A typical case of testing:

A female patient, who had been under analysis for eighteen months, was about to break her isolation for the first time for years and make a bus trip in Europe. I believed that I was within the frame of the analytic situation when, after the last visit before the journey, I off-handedly wished her much pleasure and expressed a hope that she would meet some nice men and perhaps have a little flirtation. The patient returned after her summer holidays and

related that she had had erotic adventures with a varied assortment of men, among others an Italian bath-keeper at San Remo, a Danish professional cyclist, and a French doctor. The patient, who had two daughters at home of 6 and 8 years of age, was a young, divorced woman, attractive and of good family. Before all this happened she had lived a celibate life for three years. She stated on her return that she was pregnant and designated the San Remo bath-keeper as the father of the child. As I was responsible for her adventures, because of what I had said at her departure, it was my absolute duty, the patient said, to see to it that an abortion was arranged as well as everything else in this connexion. I took the chance of keeping a clear head and refused to play any part in the patient's infantile circus.

I was lucky, and after an unprecedented fit of aggression, which lasted a week, her menstruation returned. Apart from the testing, it was from a dynamic point of view, a question of her sexually-hostile motherly superego which, in the form of stubborn obedience, attacked me on whom she had projected her pleasure ego. At the same time a masochistic experience.

For a period of six months a female patient arrived regularly between fifteen and thirty minutes late. After I had tolerated this protracted testing, the patient came thereafter very punctually.

Examples could easily be multiplied. It is important to understand the significance of the testing to get through it and to interpret it.

Unfortunately, I have no opportunity now of dealing more fully with the question of the patient's need to provoke the analyst on account of masochistic needs ('injustice collecting') (4, p. 143), his attempts to manipulate the analyst's counter-transference, for example, by displaying grossly perverse impulses or serious neurotic recurrences. This is a very important area from the practical aspect, in which the boundary-line of the testing of the analyst is indistinct. There is considerable evidence, not least in analytical periodical literature that these phenomena are overlooked by certain analysts.

### *The Question of Fees*

An important aspect of the analytical situation, perhaps a little neglected in the analytical literature, is the question of the patient's payment of the analyst for consultations. There are two schools of thought among Swedish analysts: on the one hand a stricter line, which I myself now support, on the other a more conciliatory, 'human' line, represented in literature by Fromm-Reichman (16) and implying that if the patient can prove 'valid reasons' for not



attending consultations previously agreed upon, he need not pay for them. I myself earlier belonged to this school of thought. I wish to recall Freud's attitude (13, p. 346): 'I adhere rigidly to the principle of leasing a definite hour. A certain hour of my available working-day is appointed to each patient; it is his, and he is liable for it, even if he does not make use of it. . . . No other way is practicable.' Kubie (23) says: 'If the patient were not charged for appointments which he missed, the analyst would in effect be offering him a financial inducement to escape painful sessions, since he could go off and enjoy himself and save money as well.' Kubie considers that there must be a strong, restraining factor which deters the patient from the natural temptation to avoid analytical sessions, as soon as things become difficult.

My own view on the question of fees is that during the three years in which I have applied the same strict rules, I have only had therapeutically favourable experiences of them, and I consider it to be an essential and dynamically important factor in the analytical process.

Below are some of the reasons which have persuaded me to revert to a rigorous system of payment.

(i) The patient regards the analyst as a reliable, integrated person who dares to accept the aggressions which the patient releases against this strict system of payment. The patient learns that the analyst, unlike his parents, does not become frightened by threats of being scandalized. Thus the analyst becomes a good object of identification. It appears that candidates, who themselves have had to follow these rules as analysands, find it easy to apply them to their patients, and the opposite is true of those who are accustomed to something different.

(ii) Furthermore, the patient experiences the analyst as an honest, upright person who dares to defy the general hypocrisy regarding money, which is a relief for the patient. That the analyst dares to take payment, indeed good payment, for all his appointments is regarded by the patient as a sign of healthy self-esteem and appreciation of his own time and qualifications. This becomes a good and realistic ego-ideal for the patient in contrast to his own neurotic one.

(iii) Uncompromising financial demands are among those measures which, for certain patients, are necessary to overcome in the analysis the defence against the patient's repressed, passive-masochistic tendencies. I

have had several examples of this state of affairs in my practice. Previously, when I adopted milder measures, I had difficulty in dissolving defence attitudes against such tendencies. The patient was then more easily able to retain a feeling that the analyst was dependent on him, which was an unnecessary link in his defence. The patient now experiences that he has entrusted himself to a strong person who knows what he wants, who will not allow himself to be directed or frightened, who will stand up to various kinds of provocations and testing attempts to which the patient exposes him in this connexion, who lives as he teaches. All this also counteracts the patient's illusion of being in a privileged position—the favourite child.

(iv) By a strict system of payment, the patient is not tempted to test the analyst's patience or to castrate him, or to be absent so as to avoid difficult material, which was Freud's experience, or to remain in bed and be childishly looked after by his family for the slightest cold. I know a patient who finished with one analyst with a mild system of payment because it was far too easy to telephone his cancellations. The patient totally lost respect for this kind and reasonable analyst.

(v) The analysis must involve a sacrifice, otherwise it becomes a matter of indifference in the patient's life. It is deeply rooted in the human mind that what is cheap is of little value and what is dear is valuable. On one occasion, I treated a patient for whose analysis the social services paid, and I cannot recall a worse analytic case. There was no progress whatsoever after two years of analysis. We may well ask what will happen to our patients if the National Health Service should pay the greater part of their fees. (Since 1 January, 1955, there has been in Sweden a compulsory sickness insurance system which awards patients three-quarters of certain maximum medical fees (about £2). It has not yet been decided whether compensation will be paid for psycho-analytical treatment.)

Alexander has somewhere written of a patient who could not be treated for a low fee. The patient violently abused his new, expensive analyst, but nevertheless became healthy.

(vi) A sufficiently high fee makes it more difficult for the patient to relax into a passively dependent, infantile, help-seeking attitude. Naturally a strict system of payment can be masochistically misused by the patient, just like everything else. Patients with such tendencies,

however, have as a rule previously used their money in a much worse and more destructive manner than for analysis. It can also occur that a high fee provides an outlet for the patient's otherwise destructive, masochistic tendencies. I have had a case which indicates this.

To succeed in talking the analyst into granting certain favours in respect of the fee can be and, by certain patients, has been experienced as having fooled the analyst.

(vii) A sufficiently high fee, punctually paid, is necessary to counteract the patient's guilt feelings for his aggressions against and demands on the analyst. The patient then has no chance of getting into any kind of humiliating debt of gratitude to the analyst, as he has often been to his parents. A financial favour would give cause for gratitude which binds and fetters the patient. When the analysis is over the patient can be entirely independent of his analyst without feeling a debt of gratitude. The patient also dares to be aggressive during the analysis. "Kind analysts" help to inhibit the patient's aggressions.

(viii) It is important for the analyst's own counter-transference situation that he should not, perhaps hesitatingly, agree to a low fee or accept a loss of income during his normal working hours. If this happens there is reason to ask if there does not exist an unsettled counter-transference attitude on the part of the analyst, for instance that he has guilt feelings; that he is masochistic; that he is in love with his patient; that he wants to bribe his patient to love him; that he is afraid of his patient; that he is afraid of being considered greedy. Furthermore it can be repressed aggressions against the patient which make the analyst 'kind'. He can also play the part of the good, orally generous mother. All this is of great detriment to the analyst's ability to analyse his patient. I have seen examples of how such uncontrolled counter-transference attitudes have had destructive effects on analyses.

(ix) It is not least important that the analyst be compensated for the suffering to which his patients expose him. Too low a fee or too great generosity may easily give cause for aggression against the patients which reduces the analyst's possibilities of analysing them.

### Concluding Remarks

Lastly a few words about the *termination of an analysis*. I do not believe that it is possible definitely to dissolve an analytical transference. What can be done is to help the patient so that the transference loses its emotional cathexis. Discretion and tact on the analyst's part is demanded for the achievement of this. It is my opinion that the analyst can never enter a close, natural, personal friendship with a former patient. There are too many latent possibilities of irrational transference and counter-transference reactions. I quote Greenacre (18, p. 684): '... the analytical situation ... more nearly reproduces the demands of the child for a perfectly understanding parent than *any* (my italics) parent-child relationship can possibly approach and is the only one in life in which no emotional counter-demand is to be expected.' It is the analyst who has the responsibility and must show tactful restraint from closer contact.

Unfortunately, I cannot deal in greater detail with a phase in the analytical situation which I, in common with many others, believe will have an ever-increasing importance, namely the counter-transference. By counter-transference I mean the analyst's emotional reactions to the patient's behaviour and his analytic material, above all his transference, not the analyst's neurotic transference to his patient.

Here I would only refer to a few statements which coincide with my own opinions.

Oberndorf (29) considers that many of the unsuccessful cases would reveal on closer examination incorrect counter-transference reactions. Balint and Tarachow (3) say that the psycho-analytical technique has more or less certainly entered a new phase. If the preceding phase was chiefly interested in the analysis of the transference, i.e. the patient's contribution, in the new phase interest is concentrated on the counter-transference, i.e. the analyst's contribution.

Finally, a quotation from Alexander (2, p. 691): 'I am more and more convinced that by learning how to make use of the counter-transference phenomenon in favour of therapy, we shall greatly advance our therapeutic effectiveness.' This conviction is also my own.

### BIBLIOGRAPHY

(1) ALEXANDER, FRANZ. *Fundamentals of Psychoanalysis*, pp. 108-109. (New York: W. W. Norton, 1948.)

(2) — (1954). 'Some Quantitative Aspects of Psychoanalytic Technique.' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 690-691.



- (3) BALINT, M., and TARACHOW, S. In: *The Annual Survey of Psychoanalysis*, 1.
- (4) BERGLER, EDMUND. *The Basic Neurosis*. (New York: Grune and Stratton, 1949.)
- (5) BERMAN, LEO (1949). 'Counter-transference and Attitudes of the Analyst in the Therapeutic Process.' *Psychiatry*, 12, 159-166.
- (6) BOEHM, FELIX (1923). 'Dürfen wir Gefälligkeiten von Patienten annehmen?' *Internat. Zeitschrift für Psychoanalyse*, 9, 77.
- (7) EISSLER, K. R. (1953). 'The Effect of the Structure of the Ego on the Psychoanalytic Technique.' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 1, 104-143.
- (8) FENICHEL, OTTO. *Problems of Psychoanalytic Technique*. (New York: The Psychoanalytic Quarterly, Inc., 1941.)
- (9) FERENCZI, S. (1913). 'Entwicklungsstufen des Wirklichkeitssinnes.' In: *Bausteine zur Psychoanalyse*, 1, pp. 62-83. (Wien: Internationaler Psychoanalytischer Verlag, 1927.)
- (10) FRENCH, THOMAS MORTON. 'The Transference Phenomenon.' In: Alexander and French, *Psychoanalytic Therapy*, p. 95. (New York: Ronald Press, 1946.)
- (11) FREUD, ANNA (1954). 'The Widening Scope of Indications for Psychoanalysis.' (Discussion.) *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, pp. 617-618.
- (12) FREUD, SIGMUND (1912). 'Recommendations for Physicians on the Psycho-analytic Method of Treatment.' *Coll. Papers*, 2, p. 327.
- (13) — (1913). 'Further Recommendations in the Technique of Psycho-analysis.' *Coll. Papers*, 2, pp. 344-354.
- (14) — (1912). 'The Dynamics of the Transference.' *Coll. Papers*, 2, p. 321.
- (15) — (1919). 'The Uncanny.' *Coll. Papers*, 4, p. 394.
- (16) FROMM-REICHMAN, FRIEDA. *Principles of Intensive Psychotherapy*, p. 67. (London: Allen and Unwin, 1953.)
- (17) GLOVER, EDWARD. 'The Technique of Psycho-Analysis.' (London: Baillière, Tindall and Cox, 1955.)
- (18) GREENACRE, PHYLLIS (1954). 'The Role of Transference.' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 683-684.
- (19) HENDRICK, IVES. *Facts and Theories of Psychoanalysis*, p. 209. (New York: Knopf, 1950.)
- (20) JACOBSON, EDITH (1954). 'Transference Problems in the Psychoanalytic Treatment of Severely Depressive Patients.' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 601.
- (21) JEKELS, LUDWIG. Personal communication, 1936.
- (22) — and BERGLER, EDMUND (1934). 'Übertragung und Liebe.' *Imago*, 20, 5-31. (Eng. trans.: *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 1949, 325-350.)
- (23) KUBIE, LAWRENCE S. *Practical and Theoretical Aspects of Psychoanalysis*, p. 136. (New York: International Universities Press, 1950.)
- (24) MACALPINE, IDA (1950). 'The Development of the Transference.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 19, 523.
- (25) MONCHY, RENÉ DE. Personal communications, 1951.
- (26) NUNBERG, HERMAN. *Allgemeine Neurosenlehre auf psychoanalytischer Grundlage*, pp. 297-300. (Bern-Berlin: Huber, 1932.)
- (27) — (1926). 'The Will to Recovery.' In: *Practice and Theory of Psychoanalysis*, pp. 75-88. (New York: Nervous and Mental Disease Monographs, 1948.)
- (28) — (1937). 'Psychological interrelations between physician and patient.' *Op. cit.*, pp. 174-188.
- (29) OBERNDORF, C. P. (1950). 'Unsatisfactory Results of Psychoanalytical Therapy.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 19, 392-407.
- (30) The literature pertinent to the counter-transference problem is reviewed by Douglas W. Orr in 'Transference and Countertransference: A Historical Survey.' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 1954, 646-670.
- (31) REICH, ANNIE (1951). 'On Countertransference.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 32, 28.
- (32) REIK, THEODOR. *Listening with the Third Ear*. (New York: Farrar, Straus, 1949.)
- (33) SILVERBERG, WILLIAM V. (1948). 'The Concept of Transference.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 17, 303-321.
- (34) STONE, LEO (1954). 'The Widening Scope of Indications for Psychoanalysis.' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 57.
- (35) STRACHEY, JAMES (1934). 'The Nature of the Therapeutic Action of Psycho-analysis.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 15, 126-159.
- (36) WEIGERT, EDITH (1954). 'Counter-transference and Self-Analysis of the Psycho-analyst.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 35, 244-246.

(Received 1 September, 1955.)

# TECHNICAL REMARKS ON THE HANDLING OF THE TRANSFERENCE NEUROSIS<sup>1</sup>

By

S. NACHT, PARIS

Failure in psycho-analytical treatment may come about in various ways. The commonest is when the patient decides to abandon the treatment after a longer or shorter period because it seems to him that he is not benefiting from it. Whether his decision is justified or not, in other words, whether it is determined by a reinforcement of resistances or by valid proof, matters little. The interruption of the analysis under such circumstances undeniably represents a failure for the therapist. This kind of failure can generally be attributed either to errors in evaluating the indications of psycho-analysis for the patient or to mistakes in technique.

The therapist may also decide, for these or other reasons, no longer to pursue a treatment which has been poorly launched or which holds little promise of favourable results. Such failures are indeed regrettable, but the analyst can hope to avoid them when he has enriched his own understanding and, especially, his therapeutic experience. Be that as it may, failure is expressed in either case by a rupture of the patient-therapist relationship, and hence by discontinuance of the treatment. But there are other failures, or threats of failure, which are of a different kind and undoubtedly more serious in their consequences.

In the case we shall consider here, the treatment has been following its course for a number of months or even years, and might go on indefinitely despite the fact that it apparently brings nothing to the patient. The analysis marks time, and turns in circles, without its occurring to either the therapist or the patient to bring it to an end. We recognize here what is called an 'interminable' analysis, the worst form of therapeutic failure and, deservedly, the severest reproach to psycho-analysis. I was, therefore, particularly happy to hear W. Hoffer, at the 19th International Congress of Psycho-analysis (Geneva, 1955), call attention once more

to the importance of transference neurosis. It seems to me, as I shall try to prove further on, that it is the excessive development of the transference neurosis which must be held as principally responsible for its interminable character.

Before we turn to the technical domain, it will be useful to recall briefly several theoretical points. A psycho-analytical treatment can become interminable either because the structure of the case itself renders it incurable (see Freud [1937], *Analysis Terminable and Interminable*), or because of shortcomings or errors in technique. Some theoretical considerations, corroborated by observation of facts, are necessary to clarify these two hypotheses. Thus psycho-analytic theory teaches us that the genesis as well as the evolution of a neurosis (and implicitly the result of the treatment) are determined by *quantitative* factors: by the force of instinctual tendencies on the one hand, by the force of the functions of the ego on the other. When the weight of one or the other of these factors falls below or exceeds certain limits, the neurosis—practice teaches us—runs the risk of being incurable. But within the present extent of our knowledge we have not the means to gauge with precision, to *measure* these adverse forces (and this constitutes likewise one of the major difficulties in evaluating the indication or counter-indication for analysis). Nor have we more technical means to act directly on the quantitative element in these forces. It is these facts that render us powerless before certain incurable neuroses. On the other hand, cases prove themselves curable wherever the forces in question are in a *quantitative relationship* that is maintained within certain limits, below which the therapeutic activity then succeeds in obtaining some dynamic and topic, that is to say, *qualitative*, modifications.

It is therefore only when we treat a neurosis

<sup>1</sup> Translated from the French.



belonging to this latter category that particular technical modalities are liable to influence the outcome of a treatment which, though undertaken advisedly, seems nevertheless to become interminable. When a recovery is impossible, it means that the case could not be efficiently treated by psycho-analytical therapy, that the evaluation of the relationship between the forces which underlie the conflicts has not been accurate, and especially that an irreducible disproportion exists between the instinctual destructive, aggressive forces and the constructive forces, the latter being dependent upon the capacity to love. On the other hand, I believe that the cases which are curable, though obstinate under treatment, testify essentially to an extreme difficulty in the liquidation of the *transference neurosis*.

I apologize for recalling here some well-known concepts according to which the transference neurosis, in particular, merely replaces the neurosis in the situation created by the treatment, to the extent that in certain cases the latter may appear cured, 'the new illness having replaced the old one' (Freud).

But if we recall further that the neurosis itself merely covers up an infantile neurosis, we shall easily understand how a transference neurosis, when it does not permit itself to be reduced, can block the result of a treatment because, having become a massive, global resistance, it opposes the destruction of the infantile neurosis. We are then faced with an interminable analysis. This form of transference neurosis, at least that which is tenacious and irreducible, seems to me, in the same way as I have shown elsewhere,<sup>2</sup> to be the consequence of a disturbance in the transference-counter-transference exchanges. It is in the conscious and especially in the *unconscious* exchanges established between patient and therapist that we must, in my opinion, seek the eventual causes of this troublesome complication of psycho-analytical treatment, and hence the means to avoid it.

I have been able many a time to observe that when a transference neurosis assumes this ineradicable aspect, it is because the infantile tendencies which are expressed through the patient's transference find ample satisfactions in the analytical situation, *even when classic technique is respected*. In certain cases, as we shall see later, technical modifications cannot be avoided. The transference neurosis will take on

a serious character, all the more so when it is found possible for the patient's neurotic tendencies to obtain satisfaction in the unadapted attitudes which the counter-transference dictates to the therapist without his being aware of it.

In the one case as in the other, we must be careful not to seek the sources which feed and abnormally reinforce the transference neurosis solely on the patient's side. *It is in the relational ensemble patient-analyst that the transference-neurosis when unduly prolonged draws its force.*

In a general way, as we know, every digression from the attitude of strict neutrality on the analyst's part can render this relational connexion propitious to the establishment of an inextricable analytic situation and then compromise the outcome of the treatment. This neutral attitude is a rule well known to us all. Consciously we think we respect it, but we do not always do so and are not aware of it. Here is an example that is famous, taken from Freud's own *Analysis Terminable and Interminable*: 'In the course of the analytical work, the feeling of making repeated and fruitless efforts is never so painful, never does one have so much the impression that one is preaching to empty benches, as *when one wants to urge*<sup>3</sup> women to abandon their unfulfillable desire to have a penis. . . .'

The acknowledgement of painful feelings, of fruitless efforts, in itself indicates an emotional participation which undeniably departs from the necessary neutrality of the analyst. It cannot escape the patient's notice, and the transference reactions will inevitably be influenced.

But there is more. In the phrase '*when one wants to urge* women to abandon their desire to have a penis,' we find the stamp of the analyst's evidently opposed attitude to an unconscious tendency existing in the patient, an attitude which will necessarily provoke in her the reactions that can be guessed (aggressive claims, and anxious depression centered on the analyst), indicating particularly that this attitude is felt as castrating. These reactions reproduce and once more cover over the primitive infantile neurosis by a transference neurosis liable to become ineradicable by the very fact that it is supported by the analyst's attitude.

We must ponder over these words of Freud and draw a lesson from them. They should lead us once more to *obliterate our own personal tendencies*, to be prudently wary of ourselves,

<sup>2</sup> 'Transfert et contre-transfert', in *De la Pratique à la théorie psychanalytique*. (Paris: Presses Universitaires

de France, 1949).

<sup>3</sup> Italics mine.



this being both the cause and the effect of the indispensable attitude of kindly neutrality.

Whether our tendencies in relation to the patient are positive or negative, they will always disturb the analytical situation, to the point that even our legitimate desire to relieve and cure must be curbed, as Freud himself has taught us. I mean that it ought not to preoccupy us in the least in our immediate daily work, as it may distort our interventions. Even less should it be perceptible to the patient. To use the argument of 'recovery' with the aim of making resistances yield, for example, will only reinforce them. The patient need only *feel* the therapist to be preoccupied, tensed by his desire to cure, and the reactions of opposition will at once manifest themselves. When a hostile transference develops it finds abundant fuel and, because of this, there is a risk that this form of transference neurosis may turn into a fixation.

But there is more. This attitude, apparently beneficial—at least in the analyst's intention—may be felt on the contrary as dangerous by the patient so long as he needs the neurosis. And, as a sequel to this, it may provoke in him a reinforcement of his mechanisms of defence, and therefore of his symptoms in general, especially within the psycho-analytical situation.

So long as the fear of castration, for example, has not been eliminated, or at least sufficiently appeased, to disclose the prospect of a recovery can be a source of anguish, making it necessary for the patient to preserve or even accentuate the symptoms. If the patient feels 'pushed' towards recovery by the analyst, he may build up a castrating image of him, and we shall then see the patient sink progressively and completely into a passive-masochistic attitude. He thus takes vengeance and protects himself both from the analyst and from the 'dangerous' recovery. The transference neurosis then blossoms forth at leisure. Since such reactions are the result of remarks clearly and deliberately expressed—witnessing nevertheless to the analyst's good intentions—we can understand what the aggressive tendencies, expressing themselves unconsciously and this time in a disguised manner, by the tone or even the content of the interventions, can unleash in the patient. This will more and more reinforce a sado-masochistic (vengeful and protective) position with regard to the therapist. It is in this ground of sado-masochistic exchange that the transference neurosis generally develops. In other words, what would otherwise remain in the transference fantasy

state of reconstruction becomes, through the conscious and even more the unconscious contribution of the therapist, a tangible *realization*.

I believe it to be unnecessary to seek other examples to illustrate these well-known mechanisms. They all bear witness to the danger of creating an inextricable situation, an interminable analysis, by the conscious and unconscious disregard of the rule of perfect neutrality. To respect it to the best of our ability safeguards us to a certain extent against these risks.

So we have considered until now that the attitude of the analyst, when it conforms to the strict classical technique, has, among other effects, that of avoiding the installation of a difficult transference neurosis or one that it is even impossible to liquidate.

But in certain analyses a moment arrives when the attitude of kindly neutrality, indispensable during the first period of treatment which is focused on the work of 'gaining awareness', gradually becomes more of an obstacle than a help. And after having recalled the imperious necessity of respecting the classical rule, I am led to say now that in the second period of treatment it is precisely a too rigid attitude of neutrality on the part of the therapist that may often be held responsible for the difficulty of liquidating the transference neurosis. Through my own direct experience as well as through control analyses, I have observed that it may be expedient to modify the rule of absolute neutrality to a certain extent, because in adhering to it rigidly beyond a certain point in the evolution of the treatment, the risk is taken that it may turn back against the objective pursued and anchor the patient firmly in the transference neurosis. Often the attitude of absolute neutrality actually loses all effectiveness, precisely because it is taken up purely out of routine. It brings the analyst the comfort which habit creates, but it is also the groove into which the patient settles.

That is why, when a certain amount of work has been accomplished (analysis of resistances, mechanisms of defence, movements of regression), when the points of libidinal fixation have been recognized and traumatic moments have been recalled to the memory or reconstructed over and over again, that is to say, when the work of elaboration has actually taken place, we should begin to see that the subject, virtually recovered, detaches himself progressively from the analysis, reduces his interest in the analyst more and more, while parallel with this evolution



he achieves more adapted investments outside the analytic situation.

If this movement has not taken place, it means that the liquidation of transference has met with obstacles—obstacles which will be responsible for the accentuation of the transference neurosis. In my opinion, this is what sometimes happens if the analyst allows the moment when a modification of his attitude of perfect neutrality was indispensable to pass. It happens in the course of certain treatments that the analyst feels intuitively that what had up to now been only virtual recovery tends to become real recovery. But the subject still hesitates to abandon the infantile and fantasy world which is prolonged within the analysis, and to launch out on a path where he will have to confront reality as an adult.

At this crucial point the analyst's neutrality, so necessary until now in order that the subject may reconstruct for himself a better adapted personality, can prevent it from blossoming out, or even compromise it anew. That which had been indispensable for the subject to become aware of himself can become a hindrance to the way in which he *makes himself recognized* by others, to the way he *asserts himself* elsewhere than in the 'no man's land' which constitutes after all the analytical situation.

Here is a decisive moment which the therapist must feel and catch on the wing. He must know that if he persists too long in merely interpreting the drives, as much aggressive as libidinal, only in terms of his own person, he thus offers them the possibility of expressing themselves indefinitely on a fictional, unreal plane, and unwittingly keeps the subject away from a true contact with objects.

Now it is precisely towards this contact with reality that he must be deliberately oriented, through a gradual, subtle change of attitude, expressed by interpretations which are directed more and more into channels leading away from the analysis and less and less on the enclosed world of the transference. From then on, the analyst will assert himself more, only the better to withdraw from the patient's emotional field. It is this new attitude which will be the element of *crystallization* favouring the *qualitative* transmutation of the mass of forces liberated by the process of bringing the repressed thoughts to consciousness. It is this different attitude in which the analyst affirms his own reality, which no longer lends itself to fantasy investments of the subject, and which will finally lead him toward

real investments. The time has now come to stimulate the subject to *act now* what he has learned in the analysis, to put more and more emphasis on his *present* behaviour, to keep his attention and interest constantly focused on the way in which he re-employs the healthy forces the analysis has liberated.

The patient has for a long time utilized the neutrality of the analyst as a haven of peace and quietude which has been beneficial to him, but there comes a moment when he will be tempted to use it to cover up his regressive investments anew. If the analyst is not careful, all will then happen as if the work accomplished up to this point were simply wiped out. On the contrary, if at the right moment a desirable change of attitude occurs, this can greatly facilitate the progress of the subject toward a happy liquidation of the transference.

It goes without saying that the change of which I speak must not be purely and simply confused with the 'active' attitude, formerly advanced by Ferenczi, for we must not confuse passivity with neutrality. This distinction seems to me indispensable. That is why, when I tried to define elsewhere this new attitude—more supple, more subtle, more alive—I termed it a new *presence* against which it may be useful for the patient to clash, to be in opposition, and even to try his strength, whereas the classical attitude of neutrality offers him only an image fashioned essentially out of his own projections.

These different conditions will facilitate, in my opinion, the reinforcement of the ego and, if the process of identification continues to be necessary in order to bring the evolution of the treatment to a close, at least this will be done in a less anachronistic manner.

Furthermore, this new orientation will have the advantage of closing up the sources of satisfaction which the patient finds at hand in the habitual analytical situation: *oral* satisfactions if the analyst's words are invested in this manner; *anal* if the interventions are utilized only to be preserved, retained; *aggressive-possessive* if the analyst is retained in fantasy, possessed and won away from presumed rivals; *exhibitionist* if the material brought and the work accomplished by the subject are intended to seduce the therapist, etc.

To be content to interpret these situations untiringly and endlessly with the customary neutrality is no longer enough to dissipate them. On the contrary, it sustains them. The new attitude aims precisely at stimulating the subject



to relinquish an unadapted use of the analytical situation to which he clings regardless of the many insights which the interpretations have given him.

And so the interpretations will henceforth be deliberately reduced and even abolished. The ritual of sessions (which lends itself to upholding in the patient the fantasy illusion of omnipotence and of possession practised on the analyst) will be upset by a change in their rhythm. It will be necessary to space them out, to rid them of their fatigical and unalterable character, and sometimes to substitute a sitting position for the reclining position of the patient. This will give a different character to the dialogue between patient and analyst. In short, an attempt will be made to establish relationships between patient and therapist, at once less rigid and less artificial, and to put them on a new plane, adult to adult. Thus the analytical work will take on for the patient its true significance, which is to be a *means* and not an end in itself. This the analyst will not fail to underline and to demonstrate more firmly than ever.

However, for the new attitude of the analyst to bear fruit, it is of course indispensable that it be not merely a surface veneer but a reality deeply and genuinely felt by him. This poses as always the capital question of the degree of liberty which the therapist should assume in relation to the patient, consciously or unconsciously.

If all goes well in this respect, the analyst will easily find the means of replacing the interpretations which the patient, improperly, now uses only in an infantile and regressive way, by simple interventions, direct and as brief as possible. The condensed interventions which express the substance in a few words, when used advisedly and with the necessary tact, should solicit the subject's attention and interest for everything which does not belong strictly to the analysis and divert him systematically from the analyst.

The difficulty involved in work of this kind lies above all in the tremendous risk of provoking reactions of rejection and abandonment in the patients. As in all delicate situations, technique alone is not enough to avoid this pitfall. It must be complemented by the art and skill of the practitioner.

The risks I have just mentioned lead me now to recall, in relation to the attitude of habitual neutrality, one of the drawbacks most likely to provoke difficult forms of transference neurosis.

I have just called attention to the fact that the analytical situation created by an indefinitely prolonged attitude of neutrality could anchor the patient in his transference neurosis, and this to the extent that one leaves him free beyond what is necessary to find in it renewed possibilities of infantile satisfactions, of libidinal regressions.

But in other cases, those in which the masochistic balance is much more important than usual, we see just the opposite. The same analytical situation provokes and maintains a state of frustration and libidinal dissatisfaction which feeds dangerously the masochism of the patient. The cycle frustration-aggression-passivity-auto-punishment-masochism is covered over and over again and reinforced by the neutral attitude of the analyst, which the patient feels as indifferent, if not hostile. The patient lives out more and more painfully the rôle of victim while he makes the analyst play that of tyrant. This is one of the most frequent and most difficult forms of transference neurosis, which then becomes ineradicable.

Why is this so?

If we leave aside the cases in which the treatment, for the reasons already indicated, ought not to have been undertaken, we can say: the situation of technically willed frustration in which every patient in psycho-analysis finds himself often feeds the masochism present in every neurosis to excess and intensifies it. In cases of serious masochism these masochistic satisfactions may attain such proportions that no analytic work is any longer possible. The situation may then appear hopeless, and often actually is so, because maintaining the climate of neutrality which gives rise to reactions of frustration only serves to intensify the masochism. And on the hypothesis of a reversal of the situation, in which the climate of frustration is replaced by a climate of gratification, we know that such patients, because of the very gravity of their masochism, would not be able to stand it. Either they would withdraw from the treatment (which sometimes happens) or, what is still more serious, they would develop new symptoms of self-punishment. I believe that between these two extremes—rigid maintenance of the rule of non-interference and its total abandonment to make place for a climate of gratification—intermediate solutions can and ought to be found. They imply a less rigid application of the analytical rule and ever more so of the analyst's attitude, particularly in regard to establishing



with more watchfulness and suppleness the proportion of the frustrations according to the needs revealed by the personal reactions of this or that patient, and not according to the general principles.

I would like also to call attention to certain cases where the weakened ego is marked by serious traumas, which have been caused when situations of abandonment or frustration gave rise to the fear of bodily dismemberment or castration being particularly strong and tenacious. The patient then has an urgent need for reparation, so unconquerable that only an attitude of gratification could make this form of resistance yield. Without it the analyst will constantly come up against an extreme latent aggression ever ready to be mobilized against him and to thwart his action.

It goes without saying that this attitude of gratification, even when it appears indispensable, should be adopted only with extreme caution and only after much work of interpretation and integration has been done on all the sources of aggressive manifestation which reveal a tendency to recreate a situation of abandonment.

The attitude of gratification should, of course, concern only *certain aspects of the analytical situation*. The therapist will intervene, for example, more frequently and less briefly. He will if necessary prolong the usual time of sessions. He will increase their frequency, thus giving the patient the feeling of 'receiving'.

The difficulty in this situation is that none of this will help much if it does not correspond to a *genuine* affective attitude in the therapist. I mean to say that the therapist must feel, behind the excessive aggression which is endlessly repeated by the patient and which might in the long run arouse weariness and irritation in him, an immense misery calling up in him a genuine feeling of pity. If this feeling is not there, it is to be feared that no action, no attitude that would not be genuinely felt could be really effective.

The sensitivity to frustration of patients of this type has been intensified to such an extent that it is not enough for them to imagine the possibility of the analyst's leniency toward them, as his kindly neutrality allows them to *feel* need more. It is indispensable for them to *feel* in their analyst an overture, a genuine gift, for the need of reparation (so strong in them) to cease feeding their aggressiveness, and for their aggressiveness to transform itself successfully (even if only partially) into a capacity to love.

At the risk of causing a smile, I will say therefore that it is necessary that the analyst *be* kind so that such patients finally succeed in investing him as a 'good' object.

We have obviously strayed far away from neutrality, even if it may be termed kindly. It is true that it concerns—and I insist on emphasizing this—only exceptional cases.

That taking such liberties with elementary rules of technique has its risks I am fully aware. Modifications of this kind can produce good results only if, above all, the analyst is clearly aware of all the elements of his own counter-transference, and is capable of controlling them and using them advisedly.

It is also in the counter-transference (all questions of technical modifications put aside) that we find the key to many serious transference neuroses based on sado-masochism. There certainly is an expression of aggression when the patient subjectively assigns to the analyst the rôle of tyrant—an aggression which he seems to attribute to him without cause. But one lends only to the rich. . . .

It happens, in fact, that the patient's masochism ends up by awakening some unconscious sadism in the analyst. In a case of this kind, such a sado-masochistic contact runs the risk of creating an indissoluble couple and of making the analysis interminable. Under the cloak of neutrality the sadistic tendencies may pass unnoticed, and then the reserve of the analyst, his silence, the tone, even the content of the interpretations or the choice of the moment when he gives them may become an unconscious expression of these tendencies and thus fulfil the patient's masochistic demands.

I have had occasion to observe other interminable analyses in which, on the contrary, the situation had been the reverse. The patient took advantage of the situation created by the undeviating and rigid neutrality of the analyst in order to treat him sadistically. The liberation of the aggression, which took the analyst as its object, was more and more eroticized. Such a patient can also exploit elements of counter-transference which he has felt or even observed in the analyst—his anxiety, his dependence, even his latent masochism.

In cases of this kind, the outcome of the transference neurosis, and hence that of the treatment, depends less on technical skills than on the deep attitudes of the analyst. I often think that what matters in a psycho-analysis is not so much what the analyst *says* as what he *is*.

This is even more valid when an analysis goes amiss.

### Conclusions:

I have attempted to show, in the first part of this paper, how the aim of classical technique (and more specifically the attitude of perfect neutrality which it prescribes for the psycho-analyst) is to keep the transference neurosis as much as possible from overflowing certain limits in the patient, as this is what might make it become ineradicable. The attitude of the therapist must be like a smooth surface offering no hold to an excessive transference.

Then, in the second part, I have sought to show how, when the transference neurosis has nevertheless taken on alarming proportions, we can only attempt to liquidate it precisely by deviating from the attitude of absolute neutrality. Exaggerated use—unadapted in certain cases—or a too rigid respect for this neutrality when the patient's reactions show that it maintains the transference neurosis, may justifiably be held responsible for the interminable character which the analysis may sometimes take.

I would like especially to emphasize the fact that *the transference neurosis does not arise either from a faulty manipulation of transference or from an unfortunate interference with the counter-transference*. There is no autonomy of either. *The transference neurosis is, in my opinion, the result of a particular unconscious relationship established between analyst and patient, and is made up of exchanges, of mutual reactions in which each, in one way or another, finds certain satisfactions*. Without this particular relationship the transference neurosis could not live, or perhaps even be born. The analysis would then stand a good chance of being interrupted by the action of either the patient or the analyst. It is indeed a characteristic of the transference neurosis that it seems hopeless. The protagonists of the drama cannot separate from one another because the movements of transference and counter-transference converge there and provide a certain measure of mutual satisfaction. From this comes the viability of such ties. Certainly each of the two partners brings his share to this curious 'liaison', but the responsibility rests with the analyst, because it is up to him to watch that it does not develop at all or, if it does, that it is dissolved.

Here the problem of the deep attitude of the analyst is posed in all its gravity. I would like to add a further explanation on the two other

points of my paper which touch upon the personality of the analyst.

To begin with, it goes without saying that what I have called 'presence' has nothing to do with the fact, for the analyst, of 'being present'. For the patient the analyst is always present (sometimes even too much so). His words testify to this as much as his silences. The analyst therefore has no need to adopt new attitudes to show that he is really there, even less to 'disclose' his presence. I would even say that in most cases and during long periods of treatment he should do his utmost to reduce his presence as much as possible. But certain moments arrive in the course of the analysis when the subject seems to hesitate between the pursuit of new investments, which begin to push him out of the analytical situation, and holding on or returning to those which bind him to his therapist. It is at that crucial moment that the attitude of presence is required, as I said earlier. It implies more than purely technical modifications.

Until now the analyst was, for his patient, part of a world of more or less mythical images, in which the patient relived again his fantasies, his projections, and all that was required by his needs of identification.

The analyst is, right from the start, the mirror (Freud) in which the patient can behold all his own mirages. He is, perhaps more exactly, the vacuum into which the subject projects a whole world dominated by the imaginary. But the moment comes when, if the subject is no longer to cling to this quasi-mythical world, the analysis must cease to be a closed field. The patient no longer feels before him a vacuum to be filled with every possible situation. It is important, if I may be permitted this image, that suddenly the psycho-analyst 'no longer sounds hollow'. He is seated there, he exists, he is anchored in the living reality. In short, he is such as to make all the fantasy images which the patient has tried to project on him flow back of their own accord. There is no more place for them. I will say more. It must almost seem to the patient as though *he did not understand them any more*. They belong to a world from which he has so completely withdrawn that it is as if he had forgotten it. There is no place in his interventions except for real life. And it is henceforth on this field that the subject will have to follow him. It is this attitude of 'presence' which will 'undo the myth' not only of the person of the



analyst but, through him, of the entirety of a relational world.

Then too, I would like to add a further explanation about this other deep attitude of the analyst, that of giving—I will say even of loving—which the patient must feel to be genuine kindness on his behalf. If I believe this to be absolutely necessary at certain phases of the analysis and *only* for certain patients, it is because I conceive it to be different from the 'availability' of which Shentoub spoke, as well as from this strength of the ego which shelters the analyst from 'vulnerability', as described by Held; different even from the 'emotional acceptance' so well outlined by Bouvet.<sup>4</sup>

Of course, without this profound feeling of sympathy which underlies the 'kindly neutrality' from beginning to end, the analyst-patient relationship would not be tolerable for either and no valid therapeutic work could be done.

But it seemed to me that for *certain patients*, whose particular structures I have already briefly outlined, something more was not only necessary but absolutely indispensable for the liquidation of very serious transference neuroses.

Over and above the sympathy, the lucid strength, the constant and unwavering understanding, these patients feel a need which they cannot give up at any price. It is exactly that of kindness, of love, wholly oriented towards them. This they feel as the only gift possible as a reparation for the harm they have

suffered in the course of gravely traumatic pre-oedipal relationships. The psycho-analyst is the only one able to offer it them, in his rôle of maternal substitute. Without this gift of reparation, it is not possible for them either to reconstruct a personality or to find meaning in their lives. They must find *nourishment* in this kindness and love, and assimilate them, if you like, in order that they in their turn may be able to become 'kind' for themselves and cease, at last, destroying themselves and what exists around them. This, I am more and more convinced, is the essential point. The rest, I believe, is only secondary.

I am far from unaware of all the objections which may arise from such remarks as these, and especially from the risk of error that such a therapeutic plan permits and the consequences that can follow. I know, above all, that such attitudes on the part of the analyst do not appear at his command and that they undoubtedly exceed what one can expect even from the most 'successful' didactic analysis.

It is however none the less true that it is in this aspect of the analytical relationship that there can be found, in my opinion, the explanation why some analysts may cure cases called 'hopeless' or 'impossible' by others, even though the techniques used may be of equal value.

(Received 15 November, 1955.)

<sup>4</sup> See *Colloque sur la Fin du Traitement Psychanalytique*, Séance du 19 Octobre, 1954. Société Psychanalytique de

Paris. *Revue Française de Psychanalyse*, Juillet-Septembre, 1954 et Octobre-Novembre, 1955.

# ORAL INVASION AND SELF-DEFENCE

By

RICHARD F. STERBA, M.D., DETROIT, MICHIGAN

In her paper 'Negativism and Emotional Surrender', presented at the International Congress in Amsterdam in 1951, Anna Freud pointed out that certain children go through a negativistic stage in their early development. These negativistic children refuse the slightest demand or assistance from the part of their surroundings, because they want to be independent. Such negativistic behaviour might be repeated in pre-adolescence, in adolescence, and to an extreme degree in psychosis. In the case of such negativism any approach on the part of the surrounding persons is experienced as a claim or a hostile attack.

Anna Freud enumerated the explanations given for this type of behaviour, such as early disappointment in the love object, early seduction, temptations by the object, excessive narcissism. All of these explanations she found insufficient to explain this type of negativism. Anna Freud pointed out as an important reason for the negativistic attitude that for these persons love is a loss and not a gain. Love for them means impoverishment and subjugation. In these persons there exists the misconception and fear that to love anyone means to surrender to the object to an extent which would make them lose their own identity and would transform them into the person whom they love. They would thus be 'invaded' by the love object. Anna Freud illustrated this negativism with very impressive case material. One of her cases in particular demonstrated the fear against which the negativism was established as a defence. It was that of a girl who was negativistic as a child as well as when grown up, and in treatment, with one exception, when she fell in love with a musical conductor, with whom she was absolutely 'hörig' (enthralled) so that during this period she followed him everywhere like an appendix of the love object. Here the 'invasion' by the object which is warded off in the negativistic attitude had actually taken place in a love relationship in form of enthrallment (*Hörigkeit*). Anna Freud then stated that in observing these

patients during treatment one obtains a 'dim perception of the mental process' which underlies the negativism of these patients. It is their tendency to fall back on a complete oneness with the object, which oneness, however, would not lead to an enrichment but to an invasion by the love object with a consecutive loss of the integrity of their personalities. Their negativism then has to safeguard the intactness of their own identity.

Anna Freud's paper has not been published, probably because she thought it too preliminary. In the abstract of it (2) she reported only the clinical observations in a very abbreviated form, not her suggestions as to the deepest cause of negativism. She may have wanted to wait until what she calls a 'dim perception' of the process underlying this type of negativism becomes clearer in the course of further clinical observations. But she referred to this paper when she addressed the Detroit Society in the fall of 1952, and again in the paper which she read in 1953 at the International Congress in London (1).

Anna Freud's paper furnished me with the understanding of some of the difficulties which I met during the treatment of two patients. In turn, the analytic material which these patients offer seems to corroborate Anna Freud's 'dim perception' of the process underlying the negativistic resistance which these patients showed in treatment. Both patients are females, in the late thirties; both have been in analysis for a considerable time.

The first patient was extremely difficult in respect of technique, and needed most careful handling as far as the transference was concerned. She was a single child. Her father had died in an accident, when she was only a few months old; she has no memory of him. The mother was a very dominating character, a lady in high society, of considerable wealth and greatly interested in horses. She was absolutely set in her ideas about social position, educational principles, behaviour, mainly behaviour which signifies 'belonging to society'. She had no doubts as to the right set of values, was very sure of



The attachment to her mother had not only the most important influence on the patient's love life, but also on the transference which she presented in the analysis. From the first few sessions on she developed a very deep, impressive, all-pervasive love for the analyst. A few details of her behaviour will demonstrate the extension of this transference-love. She developed an irresistible need for closeness to the analyst which expressed itself in a kind of craving for some at least indirect physical contact with me. She took every opportunity to touch objects that belonged to me, for example, my overcoat when it was hanging in the entrance to my office, or to pick up a worthless piece of paper that I had touched with my hand, etc. Sometimes the urge to touch me was almost uncontrollable. This craving for bodily closeness could without difficulty be recognized as a repetition of her infantile desire to be close to the mother. In the first part of her analysis it was an absolute necessity for her to know where I was going, when I left town. If I did not give her the possible minimum of information she was thrown into utter despair and unbearable anxiety, as if her lifeline had been cut and she was abandoned and exposed to die. She had an almost irresistible urge to follow me on my trips, and in the beginning of her treatment I had to allow her to do this a few times in order to alleviate her unbearable pain and anxiety. One is reminded of the negativistic patient of Anna Freud's who once fell in love with the conductor and followed him around like an appendage. Hand in hand with this craving for physical closeness with the analyst she showed an intense curiosity about myself, my life, my family. She made all kinds of efforts to find out about me and used all kinds of methods to satisfy this curiosity.

The material in her analysis showed that the person against whom this resistance was originally



established was the mother. The analysis established that an attempt to resist the domination by her mother was definitely made by the patient between two and three years of age. It took the form of constipation as a rebellion against the mother's anal demands. The mother tried to break the spirit of rebellion with the help of enemas and increased demands of obedience. This overpowering mother was outwardly successful. But the resistance went underground and spread into many areas. Almost everything the patient did in later life was in contrast to what her mother had intended for and expected of her. The patient remained unmarried; she chose a humble profession unworthy of the high social position of her family. She avoided the social obligations so important to her mother, she was a failure in horse shows, and she acquired political ideas which her mother abhorred. She stuck to all this with anal stubbornness. But the interpretation and working through of the anal origin of her resistive attitude, mainly in the form of rebellion against the enemas which the governess had to apply at her mother's command, did not sufficiently change it and did not bring about the expected result. The all-pervading nature of the defence, its 'massive' character, suggested that it belonged to an earlier phase of development. I had to realize that particularly for her resistance against intellectual perception an earlier than anal origin had to be postulated. This defence was established against the overwhelming oral penetration by the breast.

In almost innumerable dreams of the patient breast and penis were identified. At the same time the idea of being penetrated by the membrum virile was completely inconceivable to her; the mere thought of it threw her into a panic. One can easily understand how severely this impeded her relationship with men. Her whole sex life was distorted by this fear of being penetrated and 'filled out by the man'. But the defence against penetration did even more damage to her intellectual development. Any explanation given to her had for her the unconscious significance of being penetrated by the idea, of being pierced by the concept, of being forced into oral receptivity and submissiveness to the other person, in the last analysis to the first overwhelming object, the mother, or more specifically, her breast. I formed this opinion in analogy to Anna Freud's description and explanation of general characterological negativism. When I explained to the patient for the first time that her defence against receptivity towards ideas was due to their being identified with a breast that threatened to penetrate and invade her oral cavity and her whole personality, she tried to defend herself in her usual manner by not being able to grasp some details of the explanation. But she reacted to it after the hour in a peculiar way. She always had what is called a 'cast-iron stomach', which could stand even the most indigestible food. But for two days after the explanation her stomach

was so severely upset that she had to vomit repeatedly.

During the further course of the analysis it was possible to unearth the earliest manifestation of her resistance against the domination by her powerful mother in the form of an eating disturbance at the end of her second year. With the working through of this early manifestation her 'defensive thinking' markedly decreased.

The second patient from whose analysis I am going to report was a married woman, the mother of two children. Her neurotic difficulties were manifested mainly in the relationship to her children and in her love life, in which she was unable to find complete satisfaction. Another area in which her neurosis led to considerable difficulties was her social contacts.

I would like to describe first her social impediment. When she attended a party or had guests at her home she was at first very lively and participated vividly in the conversation; she was what one would call 'in the swing of things'. But after a while she began to feel uncomfortable, and soon had to withdraw from the conversation. She felt inferior, because she considered herself incapable of thinking correctly and effectively, became depressed, and left the party as early as possible. At home she often withdrew from the guests to her room. In the course of the analysis it was not difficult to recognize that her inhibition was a defence against aggressive thoughts and feelings which she was afraid she might express if she continued the conversation. It is of interest, in connexion with our theme, in what way her aggression was mobilized at such occasions. If a controversy arose in the conversation she felt forced inwardly to win her point at all costs. She could not afford to be beaten in an argument. She had to defend her standpoint, because for her admission of the superiority of her opponent's argument was equal to complete submission, to utter defeat, even to a complete loss of her identity. In order to avoid an obvious fight in polite society she had to withdraw from the conversation entirely. At times even the 'give and take' of the small talk at a party was too much for her because of the implications which the 'take' had for her.

Her aggressive defence, however, became very manifest in the relationship to people who were inferior to her, and to the members of her family. She had to win at all costs in any contact with them. She was constantly on guard against the possibility that someone could 'put something over on her'. Against this possibility she defended herself with the utmost violence. One can imagine what it meant to her children that she had to win all arguments with them and could not suffer disobedience and insubordination. If she was in danger of losing a point in the struggle with a merchant, for example, or the plumber, or the grocery-woman, she became so desperate that her husband had to come to her



rescue and win the case for her. Nothing can illustrate better the reason why she had to defend herself so violently against any form of 'defeat' than a dream that occurred during her analysis after she had lost a minor argument in a social conversation. In her dream 'there was the body of a person run over by a train. The face had been cut off by the wheels so that the body could not be identified. She refused to look at the bloody mess'. I need not point out the castrative meaning of this dream. In connexion with our theme its broader significance is of more importance. In the dream-picture somebody—no doubt the dreamer herself—is 'rail-roaded' into something and in this way loses 'face' and identity. To understand this danger we have to report some material from the patient's childhood.

The patient was breast fed for over a year by a kind but rather firm mother. The patient must have been endowed with insatiable oral needs. She sucked her thumb till she was 12 years old. When she was 5 years old, her mother had another child, a boy. This aroused the intense jealousy of our patient, particularly when she saw the baby nursed by the mother. She pestered her mother incessantly to let her try the breast also. Finally the mother gave in and offered her the breast, whereupon the little girl bit into the nipple so that the mother screamed in pain.

As soon as she gained command of language she developed her resistance against the will and demands of others and started to argue. She was most difficult to handle as a child because of this extreme resistance to any demands, and she remained so throughout her childhood and adolescence. When she came home for the first time from college, she happened to say 'I am sorry' on some occasion. The family was flabbergasted, for it was the first time that she had apologized for anything. She had always stubbornly refused to do so. All this gives the impression of anal stubbornness. But the most careful search for connexions of anal material with her stubbornness brought forth very little result. Her intense orality suggested another, earlier basis of her defensive attitude. It had to be assumed that her stubborn refusal to 'submit' in any form was originally established as a defence against oral penetration by the breast or the nipple, a penetration which would result in a dissolution of her personality due to the invasion by the object. In many of her dreams, too, penis and breast were identified. This identification seriously inhibited her sex-life and in consequence of this her whole femininity. There were many instances in her analysis when encouragement in the direction of femininity was answered by a dream in which she was turned into a lifeless mass of protoplasm, or into a dummy with limp limbs that had no personality of its own. The most interesting manifestation of her early defence against submission to the object was a repetitive nightmare which she remembered from earliest childhood and which continued to appear even during her analysis

till its oral invasive significance was interpreted to her. She dreamed that 'she is lying in bed when a big, almost gigantic woman approaches her and begins to tickle her, going over her whole body with both hands in rapid motions. The patient becomes completely paralysed as children become when tickled, only more so'. She wakes up in a terror; as a child she sometimes screamed for her father to help her. Although the content of the dream does not refer directly to an oral experience, it is obviously connected with experiences which belong to the earliest period in her life. It presents even in the manifest dream-picture the early handling of the child by the mother, the bathing, the drying, the powdering, the diapering, all passive experiences in which the mother's hands go very actively up and down the child's body. The defence against the wish for re-experiencing this passive pleasure in surrendering to the mother's activity turns it into a nightmare.

As far as it is permitted to take consecutive improvement as proof of the correctness of an interpretation—we know that this proof has only limited validity—I might point out that the demonstration of the oral origin of the characterological defences in both my patients brought about considerable therapeutic results. It decreased their defensive attitude to a marked degree.

As I have mentioned, Anna Freud indicated in her paper that the negativism of her patients could be understood as a defence against the invasion by the object and might be traced back to the earliest union which had for them the significance of an invasion by the love object, i.e. by the mother or her breast. It is 'self'-defence in the truest sense. Something similar seems to be the case with my two patients. With each of them the character traits which we have described seem to serve as a defence against masochistic surrender on an oral-passive level with the consecutive danger of invasion and loss of self.

We know many pleasurable psychic states—normal as well as abnormal—which are based on the early oral fusion with the only object then existing, breast and mother. They range from the everyday experience of sleep, over the oceanic feeling, to the highest bliss and elation of the unio mystica of the saint in ecstasy.

We have extensive knowledge and understanding of the positive experience of the mother-infant dual-unity. Much less is recognized of the negative aspect of this earliest relationship, although Melanie Klein had long ago pointed it out; perhaps the fact that she did this within the framework of her own concepts, which are not shared by many analysts, made her emphasis

on the negative aspect of the earliest oral experiences less acceptable. In this respect, Anna Freud's paper is in my opinion of great importance. Established within the framework of classical analysis, it seems to me to throw light on earliest negative oral attitudes, and considerable doubt on Abraham's concept of a 'pre-ambivalent' oral phase. Ambivalence seems to be our endowment from the very beginning of post-natal existence. The fear of being penetrated by the breast or nipple and filled with mother substance, so that it replaces the self, seems to be an oppositional complement to the third part of Bertram Lewin's oral triad (4), namely the wish to be devoured. It seems, therefore, that what Freud calls 'instinctual ambivalence' (3), the appearance of instinctual desires in pairs of opposites, might be already recognized at the very beginning of extra-uterine instinctual life.

At the conclusion of this paper I might present a hypothesis about early defence reaction of the self. The earlier the defence reaction is established the more totalitarian is it in character. Whereas later defences are sectional in their development and application, the earliest and most primitive defences comprise more or less the whole self. The hysterical defence against oral incorporation is more or less circumscribed and localized in a symptom like

gagging or vomiting, based on the phallic phase of libido-development to which the hysterical symptom belongs. The defence against oral surrender and invasion on an oral libido level is not localized; it comprises much wider parts of the personality and spreads out over all kinds of experiences which are only loosely connected with the oral area and activity. We thus see a difference in the result of libido- and of ego development. The primitive self, the ego-id matrix according to Hartmann, starts originally with more or less totalitarian reactions in form of massive defence. Its development goes in the direction of more sectional and independent activity and reactivity, in the direction of departmental functioning which explains the possibility of conflict-free spheres in the mature ego. The development of the libido goes in the opposite direction. It starts with independent, auto-erotic activities at the different erotogenic zones and is gradually brought more and more under the successive primary zones so that a libido-organization is established, in which the normal and optimal function of discharge is of more or less totalitarian character. In the mature person then we find massive discharge of libido in orgasm, but well departmentalized and restricted defences, in contrast to the massive defence and the relatively departmental auto-erotic activities of the infant.

#### REFERENCES

- (1) FREUD, ANNA (1953). 'About Losing and Being Lost.' Paper read at the 18th International Congress, London. (For Abstracts see: *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 35, 1954, p. 283.)
- (2) — 'A Connexion between the States of Negativism and of Emotional Surrender (Hörig-

- keit).' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 33, 265.
- (3) FREUD, S. *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality*. (London: Imago Publ. Co.)
- (4) LEWIN, BERTRAM D. *The Psychoanalysis of Elation*. (New York: W. W. Norton & Co.)

(Received 20 November, 1955.)



# A COMPARATIVE STUDY OF PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL EGO CONCEPTS<sup>1</sup>

By

EDOARDO WEISS, CHICAGO

The pre-analytical concept of the ego did not aid in the understanding of normal and pathological psychodynamics. It was Freud's discovery and study of the unconscious that paved the way towards the comprehension of the ego, which was no longer considered the only field of mental phenomena. Only through the comprehension of its relation to the id and the external world could its functions and disturbances be understood. And it was Freud himself who formulated the first theories of the ego as it could be analytically conceived.

The difficulties we encounter in our attempts to compare the concepts and formulations of Freud with those of Federn and other analysts are due to many factors. Freud's ego-psychological and metapsychological concepts developed slowly in the course of his investigations and often had to be modified in the light of the new insights he was progressively gaining. These modifications, however, were not always applied to the whole structure of the previously formulated ego-psychological concepts. Therefore some quotations from his earlier may be at variance with some of his later writings. Again, there is no agreement among analysts on the use of certain terms. Sometimes the same word is used by different authors to indicate different concepts, and conversely the same concepts are often indicated by different terms.

I must also mention another slight source of confusion which we meet with in our efforts to compare Freud's ego-psychological concepts with those of Federn. The difficulty is due to Federn's reluctance to express clearly all his deviations from some of Freud's concepts, so that his readers may be somewhat handicapped in fully grasping the difference between the two writers' views. Owing to his great deference and loyalty to Freud, Federn himself proclaimed that his new findings in the field of ego-psychology

and the psychoses were only confirmatory of Freud's theories and reflected only their extended application. He never forgot his debt to Freud, upon whose metapsychological formulations his whole original technical foundation lay as on its bedrock; but progressively he made discoveries about the ego itself to which Freud either was oblivious, or alluded brilliantly in passing but then seemed to forget or lose interest in.

The following may illustrate my point. One of Freud's main tenets concerning schizophrenia is that in this disease the libido, withdrawn from the external world of objects, is turned into ego libido, that is, into narcissism. And when Federn quoted Freud and Abraham, who spoke of the narcissistic character of schizophrenia and of Freud's classifying this disease as a narcissistic neurosis, he never uttered a word of disagreement with this view. On the contrary, he almost endeavoured to justify such a classification, pointing out that the psychoses are actually ego diseases. However, we are missing the clarifying remark in this connexion that 'narcissistic' in the Freudian sense means an excess and not a decrease of ego libido. Yet Federn considers Freud's view regarding the increase instead of the decrease of ego libido in sleep and schizophrenia as one of his few errors.

I should like to start my comparison between Freud's and Federn's concepts of the ego by quoting a sentence from Federn's book *Ego Psychology and the Psychoses*: 'Although Freud's theory of the ego and the id is well formulated, it is not this theory but the familiar phenomenon of the *ego feeling* that proves the existence of the ego' (2, p. 212).

Freud, in one of his latest writings, *An Outline of Psychoanalysis* (8, p. 15), says: 'Under the influence of the real external world which surrounds us, one portion of the id has under-

<sup>1</sup> Read in a circle of former students and friends of Dr. Paul Federn in New York, 22 October, 1955. I would like to express my appreciation to Dr. David

Grauer for calling my attention to some of the literature in this field.

gone a special development. From what was originally a cortical layer, provided with organs for receiving stimuli and with an apparatus for protection against excessive stimulation, a special organization has arisen which henceforth acts as an intermediary between the id and the external world. This region of our mental life has been given the name of ego.'

Let us keep in mind the nature of this approach to ego psychology. Freud thought the ego to be a mental structure which was developed by contact between the mental apparatus or id and the external world. In his opinion it was a differentiated part of the id, both genetically and topographically, in analogy with the 'ectoderm' (the ego) blanketing the 'endoderm' (the id). This structure develops in succession functions which enable it to deal with the external world and with the inner instinctual demands. Later, when the superego develops, the ego enters into relation with this mental structure also. These are the three classical relations of the ego.

As we shall see later, some analysts do not agree with this view of the origin of the ego. Hartmann, Kris, Loewenstein and others developed the theory of its independent development. We shall discuss their concept of ego autonomy later.

Federn approached the study of the ego from the most natural direction, basing his concept of it upon everyone's immediate subjective experience. In view of the fact that there is no reality so absolute as each person's experience of his own existence, and that the ego is the core of the personality, it seems strange that Federn's wise approach required a unique act of creativeness on his part. His concept had long since been alluded to in such classical formulas as Descartes' 'Cogito ergo sum'. Federn recaptured such original pre-scientific and pre-philosophic meanings from the pronoun 'I' and applied to them common knowledge and understanding as the basis for his studies.

As he emphasized, Descartes' formula implied 'that feeling my ego proves to me that thinking and being are mine' (1, p. 227).

To analysts who had adopted a behaviouristic approach to the study of the ego his discoveries seemed alien. The interest of most analysts was invested in the ego functions and the ego defences. Although they acknowledged that the ego was a structural dynamic part of the mental apparatus, they yet continued to study it as outside observers. Only Federn reinstated

the ego in its rightful place as the actual self-experiencing part of the bodily and mental aspects of the personality.

This self-experience, called ego sensation or ego feeling, is a coherent unity with highly mobile, flexible boundaries which have a great capacity for extension, withdrawal, and re-direction. It exists in a continuous state of struggle for integration, which requires continuous exertion to ensure mastery and control. The flexible, fluctuating inner and outer boundaries both form and embody dynamically maintained sense organs, which function to discriminate the real from the unreal and the 'I' from the 'Not-I'.

So, while Freud's approach to ego psychology is mainly extraspective, Federn's approach is introspective. The main difference between these two approaches is that Federn's theories are not based on a theoretical, but on a factual phenomenon, to wit, the actual existence of the ego feeling, the knowledge of which is not the result of any theoretical construction. Federn's ego-psychological investigations start with an accurate description of subjective experiences of healthy as well as of diseased persons. The ego feeling is subject to various disturbances which are difficult for the patient to express or describe, and are not observable and not always understandable to outsiders. It is evident that outsiders can never observe the 'Ich-Erlebnis' itself.

Even though these two approaches to the study of the ego are different, nevertheless they can lead, at least in many respects, to the same or analogous findings. In both approaches one is biologically oriented, that is, one considers goals to be attained and the means of reaching them.

At this point I should like to suggest a train of thought which leads to the conclusion that, in Freud's sense, a separate disposition for ego and id development must exist in the mental apparatus before an ego can develop. As a matter of fact, this train of thought is based on his earlier theory of the drive dualism, which he and his followers later abandoned. However, Hartmann and his co-workers came to the same conclusion on different grounds.

The development of one portion of the id, in Freud's genetic description, presupposes that there is a special goal to be attained and that this attainment is challenged or threatened by the conditions of the external world. In that earlier formulation, Freud stated this goal in his



concept of the drive-dualism. At that stage he made a distinction between the sexual drives and the ego drives, equating the latter explicitly with the self-preservative instincts. Thus, as he then formulated the drive dualism, the goal of self-preservation can be reached only by way of mastering the threatening stimuli of the external world. And this striving for mastery constituted the motivating factor for ego development. Thus, the admission of two primordial, basically different groups of drives implies a primordial disposition to the development of two separate mental structures, the id and the ego. Contact with the external world could induce an ego development only if self-preservative instincts exist prior to its development.

Let us now consider another point. We assume that during the early development of mental structure the individual has to learn how to differentiate between ego and non-ego. According to Federn, the ego feeling is the discriminating factor. In his opinion it is a matter of sensing how far the ego extends and where the non-ego begins. Federn, as we know, taught us that this sense organ is inherent in the well-cathected ego boundaries and is independent of any reality testing.

We might ask whether any ego feeling could exist before the individual develops the capacity to discriminate between ego and non-ego, whether it is this capacity which gives origin to an ego feeling. In order to clarify, we may use the expressions 'egotized span' and 'de-egotized area' to outline the result of this development. They are the English translations of Federn's terms 'vericht', invested with ego feeling, and 'enticht', divested of ego feeling. It is evident that the area of the primitive mental apparatus, which becomes specialized for contact with and appraisal of the external world, is moved to its developmental performances by the self-preservative drives which exist prior to this structuralization. If we consider ego and non-ego as a pair of opposites, then certainly no 'ego' could be conceived without its opposite 'non-ego', just as the concept of light presupposes that of darkness. But in order to experience one's own existence, it is indeed not necessary to conceptualize something which exists beyond one's self. Federn's statement that the ego feeling is the discriminating factor between ego and non-ego does not hold for the earliest state, in which no ego boundaries have yet been formed, or, in other words, when the ego boundary extends over the whole universe

or the whole universe is egotized. Federn calls this stage 'ego-cosmic'; it precedes the ego's ability to discriminate between ego and non-ego. Freud alluded to this earliest stage of the ego in *Civilization and its Discontents*, citing Ferenczi and Federn in a footnote, when he analysed Romain Rolland's 'oceanic feeling' (5, p. 11). Thus, Freud himself implied that the origin of the ego is not necessarily bound to a discriminating capacity between 'ego' and 'non-ego'. How then, we are led to ask, could the ego have been conceived of only as a highly organized outer layer of the id? In Federn's concept the ego does not come into being as a modified part of the id, but has an independent development, which he traces back to a time preceding birth. In fact, his studies induced him to postulate an ego feeling in the unborn foetus while it is swimming in the amniotic fluid. The contact of the individual, I do not say of the id, with the external world causes a successive withdrawal of the ego boundaries, which coincides with a progressive discovery of the existence of an external world. Therefore, I would modify the above-quoted statement by saying that it is not strictly the ego feeling *per se*, but the *ego boundary feeling* which is the discriminating factor between ego and non-ego.

'The ego', says Federn, 'is not merely a concept and not simply a contra-distinction to something else, be it the id or the object representations.' The ego feeling with its cathected boundaries 'enables it to distinguish between the ego as subject and the whole outer world, and also between the ego as object and all representations of objects' (2, p. 212).

We are well acquainted with the metapsychological postulate of the ego feeling, that is, with the concept of ego cathexis, its flexible extension, quality, strength, and function. Federn considered these dynamic conceptions as the 'best argument' in favour of Breuer's and Freud's general theory of mental dynamics which depends on movable or fixed cathexes. We are also well acquainted with Federn's conception of the sense of reality, which is the main function of the bodily and mental ego boundaries. The bodily and the mental ego are separate sensations; the mental ego is felt as being inside the body ego. Federn describes cases in which mental ego cathexis is employed to re-establish a defective bodily ego feeling. As we know, adequately cathected ego boundaries not only constitute the sense of reality but also convey the feeling of familiarity in regard to perceived



objects. The cognitive function itself, too, rests on the continuous and prompt ability of the ego to sense what is real and what is only a product of the mind in any single act of thinking. In his articles 'Ego Psychological Aspects of Schizophrenia' and 'The Ego in Schizophrenia' he could only sketch the dynamic conditions which lead to falsification of thoughts, to false feelings of certainty, and to errors in judgement. To make Federn's original approach to the study of the thinking process more comprehensible, more detailed expositions illustrated by various typical examples are required.

In a comparative study of ego psychologies the concept of narcissism is evidently very important. I have the impression that Freud sometimes used the word 'narcissism' in a somewhat loose way. When Freud published his classical paper, 'Narcissism: an Introduction', in 1914, he still held strongly to his earlier theory of the drive dualism. I quote a passage from this paper: '... it is impossible to suppose that a unity comparable to the ego can exist in the individual from the very start; the ego has to develop. But the auto-erotic instincts are primordial, so there must be something added to auto-erotism—some new operation in the mind—in order that narcissism may come into being' (6).

During sleep, in his opinion, the libido, which is withdrawn from the external world, regresses to primary narcissism. He also states that in sleep the libido regresses to the state of intra-uterine existence. Yet in his opinion neither ego nor narcissism exists during intra-uterine life. He defines narcissistic libido as that which is invested in the ego itself, yet he propounds that the libido regression of sleep is a regression to primary narcissism. As I have said, Federn mentions this statement of Freud as one of his few errors. Other analysts, Hartmann for instance, changed the concept of narcissism, and if one applies their broader concept, Freud's formulation of the libido regression to a state of primary narcissism no longer appears as an error. We shall return later on to a discussion of Hartmann's concepts.

As we well know, Federn asserts that during sleep and in schizophrenia the cathexis which is withdrawn from the objects of the external world does not return to the ego. Instead, the ego itself is drained of cathexis to a greater or lesser degree, depending on the depth of sleep or the profundity of the schizophrenic process. In Federn's opinion, the libido in sleep is absorbed

into the biological organization of the sleeper and as a consequence the libido reservoir is replenished. I have stated on numerous occasions that if we were to accept Freud's concept of libido regression to primary narcissism during sleep, we could no longer consider the ego as a mental structure in the Freudian sense. However, as we shall see, Hartmann's concept of narcissism is not bound to the mental structure of the mind.

In *The Ego and the Id* Freud considers the ego as 'a coherent organization of mental processes'. In Federn's opinion the ego is more than an organization of mental processes; it is the experienced reality of one's own existence as a coherent unity. Freud writes in the same book: 'The ego does not envelop the whole of the id, but only does so to the extent to which the system Pcs. forms its surface more or less as the germinal layer rests upon the ovum. The ego is not sharply separated from the id; its lower portion merges into it' (7).

Some discussion is necessary in order to point out the relation between Freud's point and Federn's concepts concerning the ego. Federn makes a distinction between consciousness of the ego feeling, which he equates with the ego, and awareness of the various specific mental contents encompassed by the ego. The coherent ego feeling itself, which extends over the pre-conscious, is permanently conscious in waking life, while only a limited span of the contents within its range becomes conscious in any given moment. The confidence of every healthy person in his ability to behave and to express himself in a coherent way rests on the extension of the ego feeling over the preconscious, which is the domain of the ego. Also according to Freud, the Pcs. is the territory over which the ego extends its activity, but Federn asserts that the feeling of 'I-ness', that is the ego feeling, is permanently conscious in its entire extension. The presence in the preconscious of the needed data conveys to the ego a feeling of confidence in its performances. In the case of stage fright the ego feels that it does not freely dispose of its preconscious data. I would like here to quote a passage published in Federn's paper 'Ego Psychological Aspects of Schizophrenia': 'Some people have a narrow mental ego. The productive genius has the greatest scope of mental contents. Convincing examples have been presented to me by writers, scientists, and musicians, but none were comparable with the story of Mozart in Prague. Two days before the



première of his "Don Juan" he had not yet started to compose the overture. His friends, the opera director, and the orchestra were in excited suspense, while the genius himself unconcernedly enjoyed a gay party. Late in the evening he wrote the music without any later correction; he said that the whole musical score suddenly and simultaneously presented itself clearly to his mind. This is the outstanding and almost unbelievable example of the enlargement of a mental ego, and also proof that the greatest and most complicated production is done unconsciously. Probably some parts of the work had previously become conscious and had returned to preconsciousness' (2, p. 223).

The point I want to emphasize is that the conscious ego feeling extends itself over the contents and productions of the preconscious, and it is precisely because of this extension that one feels at ease and confident only if the needed data become preconscious or develop in the preconscious. They are still unconscious from a descriptive point of view, but not in a systematic sense. As we know, according to Federn our field of consciousness also permanently contains expansions of the bodily ego.

The unconscious integrative activity occupies a central position in the studies of Thomas French on the integration of behaviour (3). In his approach he is dynamically and not topographically oriented. He demonstrated that the unconscious 'overdetermined' meanings of a dream always fit together into a close-knit logical structure which he calls 'cognitive structure'. This cognitive structure is, of course, not expressed in words, but is represented by substitutive, mostly symbolic, images. Therefore the logical connexion of the latent dream thoughts can be recognized only after an accurate analysis of the dream.

Do these findings contradict Freud's thesis that the dream work treats the latent dream thoughts, by means of the primary mental process, with utter disregard for logical connexions? Moreover, if we attribute the function of coherent integration only to the preconscious, which is the domain of the ego, how can we explain French's findings?

We shall better comprehend this state of affairs if we remember that, according to Freud, the dream-wish is formed in the preconscious, although it may never have reached awareness in the ego. It must be precisely here, in the preconscious, that the dream thoughts are arranged into a cognitive structure. As long as this struc-

ture remains in the preconscious the ego behaves according to it. In the case of the dream, however, the preconscious dream-wish and the pertinent thoughts, after having been integrated into a logical pattern, regress topographically to the id. In other words, they become de-egotized. Then in the id they undergo a disguise, in which they appear to the dreaming ego as a dream. I would call 'the passing of thoughts through the id' their regression from the preconscious to the id, and then their reappearance, in disguise, to the ego's awareness—in the dream and in psychoses as hallucinations. It is this 'id passage' of thoughts that is responsible for the disguise, particularly for the condensation and for the fusion of the initially preconscious dream thoughts with deeper, archaic, and inherited material. The cognitive structure which can be recognized in the analysed meanings of the dream is, in my opinion, the result of integrative processes to which the dream thoughts had been subjected in the preconscious prior to their 'id passage'.

The divergence between Freud and Federn is more pronounced in regard to the unconscious portion of the ego in the systematic sense. It is well known that Federn discovered that ego states themselves can undergo repression as do id drives. In his description, the stratification of the repressed ego states constitutes the unconscious part of the ego. This concept is new. Although Freud teaches that only id elements can be repressed by the ego, Federn on this occasion pays tribute to Freud. Speaking about the repression of ego states, he writes: 'The permanence of previous ego states extends Freud's concept of ego fixation to the field of normal psychology. Because of its influence on symptom and resistance formation, pathological fixation was recognized earlier than this normal process. But the concept of pathological ego fixation presupposes the concept of succession of ego states' (2, p. 218). Federn's discovery of repressed ego states actually explains Freud's findings concerning ego fixations. Federn did not teach that a portion of the ego merges into the id, and on the other hand he did not mention where the repressed ego states should be localized. As a matter of fact, we are accustomed to localize all repressed contents in the id, but perhaps we must make an exception for the repressed ego states if we consider the id as the reservoir of the drives.

It is worth while to select some passages of Freud's writings on ego psychology in order to



clarify the relation between his ego concepts and Federn's formulations.

Freud compares the ego to a rider holding in check the superior strength of the horse but with the difference that the 'ego uses borrowed forces' (7). In Federn's view, these forces are the ego cathexes of different qualities, the biological origin of which is still unknown. We must assume, at least in part, that a constitutional factor is responsible for the distribution of the biologically produced cathexes between the drives and the ego. This is in agreement with both Freud and Federn. However, the question of the borrowed energies with which the ego operates is an important issue that must be discussed in connexion with the concept of the ego's autonomy.

In Freud's opinion, 'The ego is first and foremost a body-ego', a view which is shared by most analysts, especially by Fenichel. This view, however, seems to be in disagreement with that of Federn, who postulates an ego-cosmic phase of the ego. As a matter of fact, he never took issue with this statement of Freud's, although his concepts imply that a mental ego precedes a bodily ego. We would rather imagine that the primordial ego has yet to discover physical and somatic qualities.

Federn fully accepted Freud's substitution of the later theory of the drive dualism for the earlier one. It was precisely this substitution by Freud which opened to Federn the way to his ego investigations. He never would have questioned Freud's earlier drive theory. In agreement with Freud's modification of the theory concerning the basic drives, Federn conceives the ego cathexis as a fusion of libido and mortido. At times he uses my term 'destrudo' for the dynamic expression of destructive tendencies. However, he says that like other authors, such as Monakow, Driesch, and Goldstein, he assumes the existence of a third source of energy, resulting from the living process of the organism, and in regard to mental activities, especially from the processes of the central nervous system (1).

As basic to such energy I. Hendrick (13) even conceived a proper 'mastery instinct'. This was suggested to him by Freud's occasional references to a *Bewältigungstrieb*, reminiscent of the ego instincts in his original formulation of the drive dualism. In Hendrick's opinion, not only the discharge of libidinous and aggressive tensions, but also the exercising of neuromuscular, thinking, perceptive, etc., functions is

pleasurable *per se*. In agreement with this view is Thomas French's concept of the 'functional readiness' of the organs which can find an outlet also in play activities. Hendrick's definition of the ego is certainly not in agreement with our concept of the ego, which we conceive as a continuous unity from its very beginning. Hendrick defines it as 'the sum of those integrations of partial functions which enable instinctual energy to be discharged adequately, without compulsiveness'. Compulsiveness is always associated, in his opinion, with an inability to exercise proficiently a function, simple or complex, which gratifies the need to master. He also maintains that 'work is not primarily motivated by sexual need or associated aggressions, but by the need for efficient use of the muscular and intellectual tools, regardless of what secondary needs—self-preservative, aggressive, or sexual—a work performance may also satisfy.' He calls 'this thesis the *work principle*, the principle that primary pleasure is sought by efficient use of the central nervous system for the performance of well-integrated ego functions which enable the individual to control or alter his environment'. Deficiency of this kind of cathexis supply which causes an impairment of certain ego functions determines personality defects. Hendrick calls them 'ego defect neuroses'. He calls the primary function of the ego, by which we perceive, appraise, and manipulate the environment, *executant functions* of the ego. The neuromuscular and intellectual functions may have a primary psychological motivation and express an instinct with the goal of mastery. Later, however, they constitute ways for libidinous and aggressive discharge.

Federn never elaborated on this kind of cathexis, and it is difficult to judge whether his concept of the third kind of energy is the same as that of Hendrick, whom he never quoted. However, Federn participated in the discussion of Hendrick's paper, 'Instinct and the Ego during Infancy', read before the New York Psychoanalytic Society, 9 April, 1940, with the remark that the contrast between libido and ego is not Freud's distinction but Hendrick's. Hendrick agreed, and said that it was not his intention to deny the libidization of the ego described by Freud, but to emphasize that the ego develops by the integration of a multitude of functions which serve the instinct to master. In our concept, the energies which power the various functions are subservient to the ego



in so far as the function themselves are invested with ego feeling (egotized). In this way integration occurs. It is precisely the addition of the coherent, unifying ego cathexis to the functional readiness of the perceptive, motor, etc., functions that confers on them the character of 'ego functions'.<sup>2</sup>

The process of identification is clearly described by Federn in terms of his ego-cathexis theory. The ego cathexis extends itself over the object or the autoplasmic substitution for it. In Federn's concept the superego is an ego state with its own boundaries, as every ego state has its own boundaries.

Not every internalized object, however, is integrated within the superego. Some identifications determine ego features which may even conflict with the demands of the superego, as appears evident in melancholic states. Hendrick (12) elaborated on such identifications as they occur in infancy, prior to the Oedipus complex and superego formation. He calls them 'ego identifications', which participate in the ego development.

The structural concepts of the personality, namely the concepts of the id, ego, and superego, are criticized by Glover (9). French, too, who avoids the term 'ego' altogether and substitutes for it 'integrative mechanism', shares the fear that these three structural concepts could lead to an anthropomorphization of the id, ego, and superego. They emphasize that these concepts represent only three functionally distinguishable aspects of the personality: namely, the instinct reservoir, where the primary process rules; the relation to reality; and the moral demands, arisen from identifications. I doubt whether any analyst could conceive, for instance, of the superego as an old man with a white beard. Nevertheless if we conceive the superego as an ego state, it may assume some personal aspect in our mind. And, as far as Federn's concept of the mental and bodily ego is concerned, we must realize that it is precisely the awareness and sensation of one's mental and bodily person that constitutes the ego, and to speak of a danger of anthropomorphization of the ego is as meaningless as it would be to speak of anthropomorphization of a real person, who is actually an *ἄνθρωπος*. The id is the only structure which cannot possibly be anthropomorphized.

Hartmann, Kris, and Loewenstein (10) say

that Freud uses the word 'ego' ambiguously. Other authors, as for instance some French analysts and Edith Jacobson (14), who wrote an important review of Federn's book *Ego Psychology and the Psychoses*—though she misunderstood some of his statements—share some of Hartmann's concepts.

In the first place, we have to become acquainted with the meaning of the word 'self' which they introduced in their theories. This word is used in quite a different sense from that used by Federn. Federn distinguished the ego as subject from the ego as object, 'self' being used for the latter. In Federn's opinion the ego as subject is commonly expressed by the pronoun 'I' and as object by the word 'self', namely when it is the object of love or hate, or the object of one's thoughts.

Hartmann and the above-mentioned psychoanalysts have chosen the word 'self' to express a completely different meaning, namely, the total personality, which includes the id, the ego, and the superego. This use of the word is linguistically correct. However, common language ignores the existence of a 'non-ego territory' in the personality. One's whole mental and bodily personality, as distinguished from the external world, is equated with the ego. But in our psycho-analytical thinking we should not adhere to this equation. At any rate, the comment of these authors on Freud's ambiguous use of the word 'ego' is that at times he uses it to indicate the whole personality, namely, the 'self' in their sense, and at times to indicate the ego as a substructure of the 'self'. Moreover, they propose to call narcissism the investment of libido in any part of the personality, be it the id, the ego, or the superego. In their formulation the counterpart of the external world is not the ego, but what they call the self. Their concept of narcissism is, therefore, broader than that of Freud and Federn. Nevertheless, Federn himself, arguing against Freud's statement that the libido regresses in sleep to primary narcissism, once distinguished 'structural narcissism' from 'biological narcissism'. Hartmann proposes to call 'ego narcissism' the libido investment in the ego. Thus, he specifies this form of self-libido, as distinguished from what we could call 'id narcissism' and 'superego narcissism'. I do not think that Federn's biological narcissism, and Hartmann's id and

<sup>2</sup> As an illustration of a function which becomes degotized see the case quoted, on p. 25, of the patient who

upon hitting a window with his fist felt that it was not he himself who was doing it, etc.



superego narcissism, should be called narcissism. Certainly Freud would not have agreed with these terms, as I will point out in a moment.

In regard to the concept of 'secondary narcissism' Hartmann and his co-workers adhere to Freud's view, that it designates that object libido which became redirected towards the ego through the process of identification with a love object. In the secondary narcissism of Freud one loves the internalized object within one's self. As we know, Federn considers as primary narcissism only the medial ego libido, which is expressed by intransitive verbs, and calls any form of reflexive libido, be it due to identification or not, secondary narcissism.

Let us now discuss Hartmann's concepts of the 'self', and of 'narcissism'. The self in his sense is primordial and exists prior to the development of the ego. Narcissism, which in his opinion is self-love, is also present before the ego comes into being. If we adopt this broader concept of narcissism, namely, the libido investment of any part of the personality, of the 'self', in Hartmann's sense, we may no longer find Freud's characterization of sleep and schizophrenia as a regression to a narcissistic state erroneous. Even though the libido which is withdrawn from the objects of the external world is not turned towards that structural part of the personality which is called the ego, nevertheless it is turned into 'narcissism' in this new sense of the word.

Could Freud have accepted these new concepts of the 'self' and of 'narcissism'? I do not believe so. In his conception the id is considered as one of the two foreign countries in respect to the ego, namely, as the inner foreign country. The outer foreign country is the external world. In fact, when contents of the repressed id force their way into consciousness, reaching the awareness of the ego, as in dreams and hallucinations, they are sensed, by the ego, as belonging to the external world and not to one's self. In Federn's view they impinge on the mental and bodily boundaries from without.

At this point I would like to make a digression to relate an observation of considerable interest. When stimuli of the unegotized id and those of the external world reach the ego's awareness, the patient will perceive the external reality and also have hallucinations. Both kinds of stimuli impinge on the ego boundaries from without, yet from two directions, from the inner foreign country and from the outer. The contents of both kinds of perceptions are sensed as real, independently of any reality

testing. I observed, however, that the ego perceives the contents of mental origin differently from the perceptions of the actual external world. Such a distinction cannot be made while dreaming, since the ego is then exposed only to dream perceptions which are derived from mental stimulation alone.

With a schizophrenic patient I succeeded in establishing this quite easily. We agreed that everything he heard was real, as he sensed it, but I proposed that he distinguish two kinds of realities, which we called reality A and reality B. Whenever he spoke about hallucinated voices I asked him whether they belonged to reality A or B, and he answered immediately that they belonged to reality B. When I spoke to him or when we heard real persons' voices, or the noise of a passing car, he immediately said, 'This is reality A.' But, unless the patient were taught to make this distinction he could not discern such a difference in the character of the stimuli.

To illustrate this point further I shall quote some passages from a young patient's reported recollections of a psychotic state which he overcame. It must be borne in mind, however, that no patient can recapture psychotic ego states retrospectively in all details. To some extent they are visualized from the reintegrated point of view. I am indebted to Dr. David Grauer for permitting me to quote the following excerpts from an autobiographical report of one of his patients. The 18-year-old patient described how he experienced the outbreak of his psychotic episode, which lasted three or four months and for which he was hospitalized in a sanatorium. Many severe episodes of depersonalization were included among the mental experiences which he reported. For instance, he once hit a window with his fist, injuring himself. Yet he did not sense that it was he himself who was doing it, but felt instead as though his hand belonged to another person.

He spent a month before recovery at the seaside with his parents. I will quote one page from his description of the situation there.

... I remember trying to explain the hallucinations as proceeding from a some "fourth dimension", a realm of spiritual beings, etc. Once I remember telling my father that I heard people talking, but when his only response was a sad shake of his head, I decided that his inability to share my experiences was due to his lack of sensitivity to these vibrations. From this description the different character of the hallucinatory perceptions from that of the perception of the actual external reality is quite evident. He continues: 'Although most of the content of my auditory hallucinations has faded from my memory, I still recall some of it. Aside from the voices in the wind and in the roar of the waves, the birds in their chirping seemed to be uttering accusations at me. The chirping of the robin sounded to me like, "You bastard, you!" or "Coward!" I had the conviction that these words had been taught to the birds by a



hypnotist who figured prominently in my delusions while in the hospital.

'Another feminine voice in the wind moaned, "Where is my son? Oh, what have you done to my son? Why did I sacrifice him for you?"

'One day while sitting in front of our cottage on a clear, sunny day, I heard overhead, as if coming from the sky, the voice of my cousin crying desperately, "Where is my father? What have you done with him?" There was a pause during which I apparently tried to communicate with the voice by silently proclaiming my innocence, to which the voice seemed to respond with heavy sarcasm, saying, "Oh yes, of course, of course!"

I will now quote the patient's description of his recovery from the psychotic episode:

'... I have been told that one day, while walking with my mother, I suddenly picked up a stick from the ground, and exclaimed with animation, "Come, let's walk faster!" My mother told me this was the first time during my illness that I manifested any sign of life and interest in my surroundings. From this moment, I am told, I began to recover my former interest. All that I recall is that one day I tried to listen to the waves speak and failed to make out a single sound. Although I was relieved, I remember also feeling a little regretful that I had lost my troupe of auditory companions. With the loss of these hallucinations I experienced a delightful feeling of relaxation. The world about me appeared more vivid and real than I had ever before observed. I felt as if I had returned to a land that I had left long, long ago.' This is a beautiful description of the return of full ego feeling.

Let us return now to the discussion of Hartmann's concept of 'narcissism'. In his article on the libidinous types, Freud characterizes the narcissistic type as that in which the very structural part, the ego, is most strongly cathected. In contradistinction to the narcissistic type he characterizes the erotic and the obsessional types as those who have the libido concentrated on the id and the superego respectively. Therefore, to call the libido investment of any of the mental structures other than the ego 'narcissism' is at variance with the myth of Narcissus and also with Freud's concept of narcissism. And to call the total personality, in contradistinction to the external world, the 'self' disregards the characterization of the id as the inner *foreign* country.

As a matter of fact, the term 'narcissism' is appropriate only when applied to the reflexive ego libido, the self-love in Federn's sense, since Narcissus fell in love with his mirrored image and suffered for not being able to possess himself as an object. In other words, he fell in love

with his ego as object. Federn prefers to speak of ego libido instead of narcissism. In my opinion, if we were to abolish the term 'narcissism' altogether we should avoid much confusion.

Apart from these terminological and conceptual considerations, we understand that the libido which is withdrawn from the external world during sleep does not necessarily invest the id. Glover (9, p. 64) says in his interpretation of Freud's concepts that the id can be conceived as a reservoir of instinctive tendencies, namely as the 'unorganized' psyche. He clearly states that the id is impersonal, that there is no ego in the id. He continues: '... It is obvious that the id, unlike the ego, is not a clinical concept; it is a concept necessary to the understanding of clinical data. ...' As we see, the id, as the reservoir of instinctual drives, cannot constitute an object for libido direction. As Freud makes clear, an investment of great amounts of libido in the id, which characterizes the erotic libidinous type, manifests itself in an increased strength of the drives with which the ego has to cope. Loving and especially being loved is the main interest of this type.

As far as the schizophrenic process is concerned, it is doubtful whether the withdrawal of the libido from objects is primary. In Federn's opinion, the schizophrenic process consists in a decrease of ego cathexis. The withdrawal of object libido may be secondary. And, as far as the fate of that amount of libido is concerned, we have no indications that it is turned towards any part of the mental structure. There are two possibilities: for example, ego cathexis may not be biologically produced in sufficient quantities; or too much of the available ego cathexis may have to be employed by the ego for the mastery of too many or too difficult tasks that have arisen. So, even if one were to accept the broader concept of narcissism, it is questionable whether in schizophrenia the 'self-libido', in Hartmann's sense, becomes increased at the expense of object love. The withdrawal of object libido seems rather to be the consequence of an increased need for ego libido, due to an ensuing deficiency of ego energies. After all, Freud himself describes an analogous process of withdrawal of object libido in the case of physical injuries. When excessive excitations penetrate the organism where the 'Reizschutz' has been injured, all available cathexes are mobilized to bind them. For this protective and defensive purpose object libido is withdrawn



to be used as counter-cathexis of the injured part of the body. And so, for difficulties arising in the ego, object cathexes have also to be made available for the increased need. After all, we must not forget that the psychoses are ego diseases.

Where does the ego cathexis originate? In Glover's interpretation of Freud's view, the id supplies both the ego and the superego with their energy for operation. This view leads to the most important theoretical and practical problems. Freud spoke of the 'borrowed' energy of the ego; it borrows from the id. This concept is in line with his theory that the ego develops from the id, that originally it was the id. In his opinion, the id continues to be the common source of energy. Let us keep in mind that, according to Freud, the id is not only the reservoir of instinctual drives, but also the common reservoir of energy for all three mental structures: for the id, the ego, and the superego. Is this view compatible with the concept of the autonomy of the ego? To what extent and in what respect is the ego autonomous?

In order to approach this problem, let us first consider the views of Hartmann and his co-workers on the origin and development of the ego. Hartmann (11) disagrees with Freud's view that the ego gradually differentiates from the id. He believes in an innate apparatus and reflexes, which cannot be originally a part of the id in the psycho-analytically accepted sense. He rather assumes a phase of development in which the id and the ego are not yet differentiated from each other. They are formed gradually and independently of each other. They are products of differentiation out of the matrix of animal instincts.

In Hartmann's formulation (11, p. 75) the 'ego' is not synonymous with 'personality' or 'individual'; it is not the same as 'subject', as opposed to 'object' of experience; it is not only 'awareness' or feeling of one's own self, 'it is a sub-structure and is defined by its functions'. The last views, especially, are in strict contrast with Federn's concept of the ego. The concept of the ego's autonomous development could have been inferred also from Freud's earlier drive dualism, as I pointed out before.

Although Hartmann gives credit to Federn for the description of many ego-pathological phenomena, he does not find his modification of the ego concept convincing, but prefers to integrate Freud's earlier formulations on narcissism into

his later views on mental structure rather than to change the main aspects of later views.

Because the ego is more than a developmental by-product of the influence of external reality on instinctual drives, having an independent origin, Hartmann speaks of an autonomous factor in ego development in the same sense that we consider the instinctual drives to be autonomous agents of development. One of the most important concepts in Hartmann's ego psychology is precisely that of the primary and secondary autonomy of the ego. The ego's adaptation to reality and its substitution of the reality principle for the pleasure principle is a learning process. As a consequence of learning and maturation, the ego develops its autonomous characteristics independently of, but similarly to, the maturation of the instinctual organization, of the libido and aggression. The physiological aspects of ego growth, such as the growth of the body and of the motor apparatus, influence the attitudes of the ego and the self-experience; the differentiation of the self from the outside world and the body organs are under the control of the ego.

As Hartmann says, no analyst has tried to give a complete list of ego functions, which would be no longer than that of id or superego functions. The person's character is attributed by Freud to the ego. Further, the defences against threatening drives are known to belong to the ego functions. Anna Freud (4) speaks of the primary enmity of the ego towards the instinctual drives. The drives, however, may express themselves through the autonomous functions of the ego; so, for instance, the function of perception may be used as an outlet by libidinal and aggressive drives.

Some attitudes or features of the ego, which develop as a defence against a conflict situation, may be maintained by the ego in conflict-free situations; for example, an over-clean and over-orderly attitude, which has arisen as a reactive defence against coprophilic tendencies, may play an important part in the ego behaviour in a situation of study and research, independently of the specific conflict which has given rise to this trait of character. In such a case Hartmann speaks of secondary autonomy.

I cannot embark here on all the elaborations which are contained in Hartmann's writings, but instead will quote Rapaport's summary of Hartmann's concept of 'primary autonomy of the ego' in his paper: 'The Autonomy of the Ego'. 'Apparatuses of perception, memory,



and motility are inborn and characteristic of the species and the biological individual, before they become expressive of conflict and experience. Memory, perception, and motility have already been existing and functioning before a conflict ever occurred. . . . It was Heinz Hartmann (1939) who gave the first systematic evaluation of the apparatuses in ego development. He labelled the autonomy of these apparatuses in ego development "primary autonomy". The functions which are at any given time outside of the range of conflict he conceptualizes as belonging to the conflict-free ego sphere. From the rôle of this primary autonomy in ego development, he concluded that our usual conception that the id pre-exists the ego is inadequate, that there must be a period in human individual development in which what will later be ego, and what will later be id, coexist, as yet undifferentiated from each other; and that it is by differentiation from an initial undifferentiated phase that both the ego and the id arise' (15).

Freud's substitution of his later drive dualism for his earlier one modified the concept of ego cathexis. As I have already said, Federn's ego psychology itself has arisen from this substitution. Even though not all analysts accepted Freud's formulation of the life and death instincts, yet they no longer considered the self-preserved drives as being powered by a cathexis of their own. Also Hartmann, Kris, and Loewenstein do not believe that the ego is equipped with drives of its own. Their concept of the ego autonomy rests on a different basis. They, like Federn, conceive the ego cathexis as being composed of libido and aggressive energy, although they do not accept Federn's term 'mortido' nor mine 'destrudo', which I proposed to designate the dynamic expression of the aggressive drive. They prefer to speak of libido and aggression. Our comment on their terminology would be that libido is, according to Freud, the dynamic expression of the sexual drives or *Eros*, and that the term analogous to aggression would be love, or *Eros*, not libido. At any rate, they are uncompromising as to the non-acceptance of the death instinct, while Federn strongly believes in it; however, they are in favour of the admission of libidinal and aggressive drives. Some aggressive tendencies can develop from frustrating experiences. According to French, no aggression can ever develop without frustration, a view which is shared also by other analysts.

Hartmann suggests that not only libido but also aggression can be neutralized. In his view, the ego cathexis contains desexualized libido and 'disaggressivized aggression'. The neutralization of these two energies would constitute a process like that of sublimation, which takes place through the mediation of the ego. It depends on the strength of the ego to what extent libido and aggression can be neutralized, these becoming the operating energies for the ego in its functions: memory, motility, thinking, etc.

Hartmann and his co-workers realize that nothing decisive can yet be said in regard to the origin of the ego cathexis, although it seems to stem mostly from the id. While Freud's second drive theory weakened the concept of the implied, although not expressed, autonomy of the ego, Hartmann reinstated it and used for it the very term 'autonomy', indicating its meaning. However, as has been pointed out, his concept of autonomy is not based on the admission of separate drives, except for his idea of the neutralization of libido and aggression. The very operation of the neutralization of these two energies constitutes, in his view, ego functions. Summarizing their concepts, we can say that the ego draws its energy resources (perhaps not exclusively) from biologically produced libido and aggression, but that it modifies them, for its autonomous use, into neutralized energies. In Federn's opinion, also, the ego cathexis consists of a fusion of libido and mortido, and as already mentioned, he also assumes that a third source of energy results from the living process of the organism, especially from the processes of the central nervous system. When libido and destrudo are not sufficiently neutralized pathological conditions ensue. So, for instance, when the mortido prevails, the ego state becomes a depressed one. Federn believes that the auto-destructive tendencies as they appear in melancholic states prove the existence of the death instinct.

We have not yet found the answer to the question whether the ego is autonomous in regard to the supply of ego cathexis. Perhaps an interesting observation of Federn gives us a clue to the right answer. He observed that excessive sexual indulgence can be responsible for a temporary decrease of ego libido. He advises the therapist to protect the latent schizophrenic or the schizophrenic patient from excessive masturbation or, in general, from excessive sexual exertion, since it lowers the supply of ego

cathexis. What can be inferred from this observation? As I mentioned in an earlier paper (16), one cannot help postulating a common reservoir of energy for both the id and the ego, and, I would add, for the superego. This idea modifies Freud's concept of the id as a common reservoir of energies. In my view, the common biological reservoir of energies does not coincide with the common reservoir of instinctual tendencies. Topographically I would localize each in different places. In the common reservoir of energies, drives are not yet formed; only later are drives formed, with object representations and goals, that is, in what I would consider the id. The drive impetus is due to the cathexis drawn from the common biological energy reservoir. In other words, the main stream of biologically produced cathexis undergoes a bifurcation, whereby one branch feeds the drives in the id, the other in the ego. The supply of cathexis for the drives would be independent of that of the ego, and vice versa. This reciprocal independence of supply would rest precisely on the bifurcation of the common stream of energies. One branch would supply the ego feeling and give power to its functions; the other would give the drives their impetus.

So the amount of supply of energy for the drives and for the ego will depend on two factors; first, on the total available amount of cathexis, which is biologically produced, and second, on the apportionment of this amount between the two branches of supply, one for the drives, and one for the ego. Therefore, the ego can suffer from an insufficient cathexis supply for the following reasons: Too small an amount of cathexis is biologically produced, so that the energetic level of the common reservoir is low; or the ego has to use up too much cathexis from its own branch for dealing with too difficult integrative tasks, unbearable conflicts, too great responsibilities, endurance of too much frustration or anxiety, etc.; and, finally, when the drives usurp too much energy from the common source, so that too little cathexis is left to be drawn by the ego. This would explain Federn's observation that excessive indulgence in sexuality may temporarily weaken the ego.

How can Hartmann's concept of the ego autonomy be related to Federn's ego psychology? Federn does not speak of the autonomy of the ego and does not discuss it as such in his writings. I do not know whether he ever expressed himself in this regard. Perhaps this concept has no place in his ego psychology. I

think that his concept of the ego, as a coherent cathexis unity with boundaries of its own, and his views about the origin of the ego, are tantamount to a concept of autonomy.

The concept of autonomy is not strictly distinguishable from that of independence. The ego has its own sources of supply of cathexis which is drawn from biological sources. True, the ego is not powered by the drives, which obtain their own cathexes; nevertheless the id may draw too much energy from the common reservoir, thus depriving the ego of sufficient energy provisions. I would call this occurrence an indirect parasitism, which may be induced or enhanced by the ego for the purpose of obtaining orgasmic pleasure. The various ego functions, such as perception, endo- and extraspection, motility, thinking, sensing of reality (which is not the same as reality testing), memory, and so forth, are certainly autonomous functions of the ego, but their efficiency rests on an adequate supply of ego cathexis.

Let us briefly examine the relations of the ego to the external world and the id. Some of the attitudes acquired by the ego in its coping with threatening drives and stimulations from the external world also play a part when the ego no longer faces the original conflicts which induced their development. We have noted that Hartmann calls them secondary autonomous factors. They play an important part in the character formation of the ego. What is now the ego's relation to accepted drives? In Freud's formulation, they obtain the preconscious cathexis, which is ego cathexis. We would say that they become egotized. They determine certain ego states and colour the ego feeling. In other words, they form ego attributes. In fact, the dispositions of different egos can be described by the tendencies which they cathect, and also by the ego's conscious attitudes and reactions to given situations, as well as by all other characteristics which developed. And so we can speak of a sadistic, masochistic, loving, hating, homo- or heterosexual ego, of a neurotic, psychotic, manic, or depressed ego, of an obsessional, hysterical, schizophrenic ego, of an immature, weak, or strong ego, and so on.

Ego cathexis has a great capacity for extension and withdrawal in regard to the external world as well as to the id. And as I mentioned before, in the process of identification the ego extends itself over objects or their autoplasmic duplicates. Freud describes the process of identification as the raising of the object within the ego.



A more accurate examination of the ego's relations with the external world, the id, and the superego is beyond the scope of this presentation. Freud became convinced that inherited factors play a rôle in ego development also. Besides, we possess very important studies concerning the influence of early environmental conditions on ego development. Observations of the reactions of children in particular reveal how a loving, neglectful, cruel, or rejecting mother influences the ego development in its quality and strength.

The ego can also influence the id in many ways. The most typical example is the mourning work after the loss of a loved object. The ego's realization that the object no longer exists mobilizes complicated efforts to detach the libido from that object in the id. There are certainly other ways by which the ego influences the id. Freud taught us that in healthy individuals the repressed Oedipus complex is destroyed; the cathexes involved are directed into different channels. We do not yet know what part the ego plays in these processes. After all, these and many others are practical therapeutic problems of the working through procedures in analysis. I do not want to discuss these issues further at this time, but only to indicate that the ensuing relations with their reciprocal influences, between the id, ego, superego, and the external world constitute an inexhaustible field of investigation.

In the case of repression the ego withdraws from the drive. When Freud includes in the therapeutic goal 'where id was there should ego be', this means that where only id cathexis was, there should also be ego investment. Accepted and egotized object libido, that is, external libidinal interests are continuously enriching the ego feeling.

However, in a modified technique that Federn uses in the treatment of certain schizophrenic patients, the therapeutic goal of classical analysis must be reversed. To use Federn's words: 'What has become the ego's territory should be returned to the id.' This is a means of easing a difficult integrative task of the weak ego.

Different egotized drives determine different ego states with their own boundaries. In Federn's opinion not only anxiety, but all feelings and emotions in general, originate from the encounter of different ego boundaries with each other—in other words, by the clash of different states. Federn includes in the ego functions anxiety and all feelings and emotions.

Before concluding my exposition I should mention another point. One of Federn's principal tenets is that the ego is from the very beginning a continuous, unitary cathexis, and that for a long period the infant's ego unity, body as well as mind, still reacts as a whole. He considers erroneous the idea that this unit is preceded by ego 'nuclei' which have to crystallize in order to form the ego. He does not mention any specific author in this connexion, but we think first of Glover (9), whose 'nuclear theory of the ego' is known, although not generally accepted, by analysts. Glover in his turn considers it a mistake to postulate a highly organized ego in the first year of life. He thinks less of a unified structure and more of scattered deposits which are later organized into ego systems. He developed his *nuclear theory of ego formation* from Freud's original idea that memory-traces are first of all laid down in separate psychic systems or focal points. Taking for granted Freud's idea of ego development from the id, he considers it easy to understand that the periphery of the id is to some extent modified by experiences of gratification and frustration; also that these experiences can be classified in terms of the main instincts or component instincts concerned. During every phase of instinctual development an 'ego nucleus' develops. Glover imagines that each of the isolated phases of development remains recorded in an appropriate 'ego nucleus', so he speaks of an oral, anal, etc., nucleus of the ego. 'In principle any organized system of memory traces and (later) ideations that contributes in the first instance to the gratification of a specific instinct or component instinct, and later to the control of the same instinct, constitutes an ego nucleus. The function of this nucleus, like the function of the total ego, is primarily to reduce tension in the mental apparatus, either by promoting discharge of libidinal and aggressive excitation or by reducing their intensity' (9, pp. 65-6).

He admits that at first there must be some confusion and overlapping of various nuclei, but a true synthesis of the various nuclear formations cannot be expected until the boundaries of the total ego are clearly established, and this does not occur, as a rule, until the later stages of anal primacy are reached, i.e. during the second half of the second year after birth.

The incompatibility of Glover's 'nuclear theory of the ego' with Federn's concept of the ego will be evident.

What can we learn from such a comparative review of all these ego psychologies as I have tried to make in this paper? We see that many ideas, often the most important ones, of one group of analysts are at variance with the conclusions of another group. This is due to a great extent to the different meanings that different authors attribute to the term 'ego'. Federn designated his ego concepts to be psycho-analytical phenomenology. But, in the opinion of some writers, they do not fit in with Freud's structural concepts of the ego, the id, and the superego.

In the study of these three structural parts of the mind Freud attempted to assign to each a specific rôle in mental functioning. Thus his description follows some distinguishing criteria of an interrelated range of functioning. Therefore, some writers feel that Federn's equalization of the ego with the ego feeling introduces a new category of description, namely, an introspective one, for which no equivalent exists in the description of the id and the unconscious portion of the superego.

The criticisms of Federn's approach, based on the assertion that his ego psychology is not psycho-analytical, lack justification. Although Federn's approach starts from the conscious ego experience, his psychology is founded on Freud's concept of the unconscious and on his psychodynamics.

As far as his introspective approach to the study of the ego is concerned, we recognize that this must and can be applied only to the ego, and its validity is not shaken by the fact that other structures cannot be studied in this way. Only through Federn's concept of the coherent ego cathexis unity can the phenomenon of ego-tization of functions as well as of mental and bodily contents be understood. Functions and contents, however strongly powered by their own cathexes, are not integrated within and felt as belonging to one's ego if they are not in addition invested with the coherent ego cathexis.

All analysts who are interested in ego psychology should come to an agreement about the use of certain terms. Some findings of different authors may be obscured not only by the different approach to ego problems, but also by the resultant terminological confusion. Perhaps we should abandon words which become unfit to express modified concepts; for instance, 'ego libido' should be substituted for 'narcissism', except, perhaps, for the reflexive form which actually describes the love of the mythical Narcissus.

In my opinion, Federn's approach to the study of the ego and his concept and definitions of the ego are the most valid. No wonder that his studies lead to the most important findings in ego psychology and the psychoses.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) FEDERN, P. 'The Ego in Schizophrenia.' *Ego Psychology and the Psychoses*. (New York: Basic Books, 1952.)
- (2) — 'The Ego Psychological Aspects of Schizophrenia.' *Ibid*.
- (3) FRENCH, T. *The Integration of Behavior*, Vols. I and II. (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1952-4.)
- (4) FREUD, A. (1936). *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence*. (London: Hogarth.)
- (5) FREUD, S. (1930). *Civilization and its Discontents*. (New York: Jonathan Cape and Harrison Smith.)
- (6) — (1914). 'On Narcissism: An Introduction.' Standard Ed., 14.
- (7) — (1923). *The Ego and the Id*. Standard Ed., 19.
- (8) — *An Outline of Psychoanalysis*. (New York: Norton, 1949.)
- (9) GLOVER, E. *Psycho-Analysis*. (London: Staples Press, 1949.)
- (10) HARTMANN, H., KRIS, E., and LOEWENSTEIN, R. M. 'Comments on the Formation of Psychic Structure.' *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, 2
- (11) — 'Comments on the Psychoanalytic Theory of the Ego.' *The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, 5.
- (12) HENDRICK, I. (1951). 'Early Development of the Ego: Identification in Infancy.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 20, 44.
- (13) — (1942). 'Instinct and Ego During Infancy.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 11, 33; also: (1943) 'Work and Pleasure Principle.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 12, 311.
- (14) JACOBSON, E. (1954). 'Federn's Contributions to Ego Psychology and Psychoses.' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 519-525.
- (15) RAPAPORT, D. 'The Autonomy of the Ego.' In *Psychoanalytic Psychiatry and Psychology*. (New York: International Universities Press, 1954, pp. 252-253.)
- (16) WEISS, E. (1953). 'Federn's Ego Psychology and its Application to Agoraphobia.' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 621.

(Received 30 November, 1955.)



# CONTRIBUTION TO THE PROBLEM OF PSYCHOPATHOLOGICAL STRATIFICATION<sup>1</sup>

By

HEINRICH RACKER, PH.D., BUENOS AIRES

## I. INTRODUCTION

The psycho-analytic method of therapy consists essentially in bringing the patient to abandon his pathological defence mechanisms and work through his old-new conflicts in a different form, more adapted to inner and outer reality. The defence mechanisms in their turn determine the psycho-pathological stratification, since the rejected situations are covered by others, whereby stratification becomes an important problem of psycho-analytic theory and technique. Owing to its complexity, we are usually content to find one or another rule or regularity in this regard. The present paper deals with such a regularity, i.e. a certain succession and connexion of psychological situations which appear from a depth-psychological point of view as stratification. This seems to recur in every case, playing a central part in the structure of personality and of neurosis.

A brief consideration of instincts, which are the deepest determinants of this stratification, may serve as an introduction. The existence of instincts is inferred from observation, and different kinds of instincts are accepted according to the various points of view. The existence of an aim of the instinct implies that the latter may be satisfied or frustrated. Frustration leads, for instance in the case of the alimentary instinct, to hunger. However, if we adhere more precisely to the facts, things take on a somewhat different appearance. The first phenomenon in the succession of the biopsychological events in question is not the drive but the lack. The search after the elimination of this lack is the second step. To put it paradoxically, we might say that frustration comes before the instinct, that hunger comes before the impulse to eat. It is senseless to express it in this way, for the terms themselves come from a certain theory, namely that hunger is the expression of the frustration of the alimentary

instinct. But the observation that first is the lack and then the impulse to overcome this lack—i.e. the instinct properly speaking—calls for an explanation of how this lack arises, how nature produces this state or experience, in the rejection of which the drives then manifest themselves. (In German we find a word that serves well to illustrate the course of events: it is the word *Notwendigkeit*, which means 'necessity' or 'need', and is thus related to 'instinct'. Taken literally it is the *Wendigkeit* (*Wendung*) *der Not*, i.e. the turning, or changing of the privation. The *Notwendigkeit*, the need, or drive, hence appears to be something aimed at turning the lack.)

How does this lack come about? It is an inherent characteristic of the organism that it 'consumes itself'; in the case of the alimentary instinct it is this fact which produces the lack. So there must be something within the organism that consumes it, there must act upon it a force or an instinct that 'eats' at it. In the case of hunger it is directly experienced in this form: hunger 'devours' us, 'gnaws', etc. Expressing this experience in psycho-analytic terms, we would say that 'oral-sadistic' impulses are at work aimed at the organism itself. It is not merely the death-instinct, for certain erotic tendencies (in this fantasy, 'oral' ones) are acting together with it on the organism as their object. In face of this experience of lack, an impulse presents itself which seeks to conserve the organism and direct these impulses outwards. In this way there originates the desire to eat, to consume external objects, and safeguard the organism itself.

In the psychological sphere the phenomenon appears to be analogous. The oral, anal, and genital desires, and the emotional needs spring from a lack. The lack, the desire to be free of it, and the satisfaction of this desire find expression in a certain determined manner within the

<sup>1</sup> Paper read in part before the Argentine Psycho-analytic Association, October 1953.

psychical apparatus: as displeasure and pleasure, as motor stimuli, etc. What I wish to refer to here, however, are the mental expressions of these happenings, above all the fantasies they provoke.

The lack usually originates, in addition to displeasure (pain), anxiety also. In nineteenth-century psychology (W. Wundt) we already find this observation, in the theory of the three dimensions of 'simple emotions'; 'tension' (one of the poles of the three dimensions of every 'emotion') is none other than an expression of anxiety. Freud's first anxiety theory is also based on the observation that a lack (frustration) produces anxiety. This is frequently to be observed, and may be explained by the unconscious perception that these erotic-destructive instincts that have taken the bio-psychological organism as their object continue to act. Correspondingly one may observe two kinds of fantasies accompanying the lack: those corresponding to the *pain* of the lack in itself and those corresponding to the *anxiety* over the persistence of the activity of these destructive instincts.

The oral lack, for example, is experienced as a being eaten, and this both as *pain* (bite, void, etc.) and as *fear* of being eaten still more. At the point where the states of lack—at this or some other level—and therewith the experiences of pain and fear acquire a certain intensity, they may become the bases of pathological phenomena, and as such they deserve special names. The *pain* that accompanies the experience of the damaged ego (independently, for the moment, of the feelings towards the object-*imago* to which the attack may be attributed), the *sadness and despair over the disaster in itself which the ego has suffered*, suggest calling it a *depressive* experience. On the other hand, the other aspect of the experience, especially the *fear of the disaster to come*, the fantasy of being attacked or damaged by something or somebody, suggests the term *paranoid* experience.

The experience of lack or frustration depends, as is well known, only partly upon real external frustrations. (What is more, it may even go together with external gratification, as is the case with envy—which 'eats us up' and is the expression of a lack—in face of the 'rich mother', for instance, who gives us something from her riches.) On the other hand, the experience of lack depends on the amount of these erotic-destructive instincts directed against the subject's own organism, or, in other words,

on the amount of individual primary masochism on the original predisposition to the experience of lack. Henceforward I shall use the terms 'lack' and 'frustration' as equivalents in this sense, namely as the experience resulting from the two factors, the outer and the inner.

Several objections or doubts will already have occurred to the reader, but I prefer to leave their discussion for later and continue here with the exposition. The pain and anxiety accompanying the state of lack provoke a series of reactions, prominent among which is the desire to eliminate these unpleasant sensations, which manifests itself, for instance, as a desire to eat. The 'oral-sadistic' impulses that act against the ego are directed outwards, towards an external object. Where this desire was preceded by the above-mentioned depressive or paranoid situation, its satisfaction is experienced as the overcoming of the aggressor or of the persecutor, as a triumph over him. Here we have an experience that we can only designate as *manic*. This designation may be more acceptable where it is a question of liberation from very intense states of lack, but a lower intensity does not, to my mind, alter the essence of this experience.

The pain experienced in the lack, the experience of (partial) destruction of the ego, then constitutes the basis of compassion towards the destroyed object of suffering over it, and the basis of the 'depressive anxieties' (M. Klein). Here again the subject suffers the pain of being himself destroyed, by identification with the destroyed object. The *fear* of being destroyed also returns, now through the projection of his own impulses to destroy (devour, etc.).

The oedipal situation in the male may serve as a first example. Masturbation forms its centre but not its beginning. Before the boy satisfies his genital impulses through masturbation, before he desires to steal the mother from the father and eliminates the latter in his unconscious masturbatory fantasies, he experienced genital *lack*, frustration. What he lacks belongs to another, the father. There are reasons to suppose that the first fantasy of the primal scene is a direct consequence of the experience of lack, that hence it is prior to masturbation, prior to the oedipal crime. This already follows from the fact that the content of the masturbation is, in this plane, taking the mother away from the father; for before thus separating his parents he had thought of them as united. The analogy with hunger may assist us once again. The feeling that something is eating at us leads



to the fantasy that 'somebody' is filling himself up at our expense. The experience of genital lack in the male seems to be likewise accompanied by the fantasy that someone is taking something away from him, which leads to the idea that the father is taking the mother away. Furthermore, the fantasy in hunger of being devoured finds its analogy in the fantasy in genital lack of being castrated or sadistically (homosexually) possessed. ('My pipe (wood and all) is burning away' was the dream of a patient who suffered intensely from genital frustration). On the genital level, then, the despair over feeling destroyed as a man would be the primary depressive experience, the fear of it would be the primary paranoid anxiety, both of these arising from the genital lack; the masturbatory fantasy of possessing the mother would be the primary manic experience. In consequence of this there appear later the worrying, mourning, and guilt feelings over the harm caused to the father and the fear of revenge. Clinical material presented later will illustrate all this.

## II. THE THESIS

I now wish, as the next step, to present, in a schematic survey, the succession and dynamics of the situations leading to the above-mentioned stratification. *The events of our psyche are not, to be sure, determined by a scheme*, but that does not mean that there do not exist certain connexions that may, for greater clarity, be presented in a scheme. I wish to stress, besides, that I am confining myself here to certain aspects of this psychopathological stratification, leaving aside a series of other important factors that influence the course of the psychical events in question. I shall later complete this simplified scheme and shall try to restore to it the life of which the theoretical exposition in some degree deprives it.

According to my observations—which rest in part upon the views of Freud, M. Klein, A. Freud, and others (see Section IV)—there exists, then, *within each of the libidinal evolutionary levels*, the following succession of situations:

(i) The early grave frustrations and traumas are suffered fundamentally as (partial) destruction or catastrophe. Inasmuch as they are lived as events that are happening or have already happened, i.e. as facts, and not as dangers, they should be designated, considering the inherent feelings of pain and despair, as *primary depressive situation*. This consists, for

example, in the experience or fantasy of emptiness, brokenness, or castration.

It might be objected, first, that such frustrations are experienced in a paranoid form, i.e. as attacks by bad objects. This is correct, but I am referring to another aspect, to the 'first tempo' of this experience: precisely the pain of the damaged ego. The paranoid experience is already a 'second tempo', owing to a rejection, a projection. It is precisely this which presupposes the existence of a foregoing situation that is rejected. Yet since the pain and the destruction of the ego are lived as coming from a bad object, the whole situation might also be termed (in so far as the two aspects are experienced together) 'primary depressive-paranoid situation'. Secondly, it might be objected that the depressive state is always connected with the ambivalence towards an object and with the harm done to it. But I think that, if it is true that the experience of the (partial) destruction of the ego provokes depression, this term also belongs to this situation.

(ii) As the next stratum, we find the *primary paranoid situation*, consisting in a libidinal bond (fixation) with a frustrating object-imago. At bottom is the (unconscious) perception of the predisposition to being frustrated = destroyed. Since those frustrations have been lived as destruction coming from the object, the bond itself becomes the danger of being destroyed (devoured, castrated, etc.). As the libidinal impulse subsists, the situation of danger becomes a situation of *persecution*. The object appears as aggressive, in this primary paranoid situation, not through the projection of the aggressiveness that it provokes, but through the projection of the aggression (pain) that the ego had originally suffered from the object. The degree of this pain—and, therewith, the object-imago—is determined by the objective frustration and the subjective predisposition to frustration, i.e. the primary masochism.

(iii) In response to this situation, the prevailing defence mechanism consists in the *identification with the persecutor*, resulting in an *inversion* of the previous situation; the ego becomes persecutor and the object persecuted. In as much as this situation contains the *triumph* over the persecutor, it may be termed the *primary manic situation*.

Faced with the danger of being devoured, violated, or killed (primary paranoid situation), the subject directs his impulses on to the per-



secutor to devour, violate, or kill him. The *identification with the persecutor takes the place of these original immediate aggressive reactions* of the subject against the irruption of the persecutor (i.e. in as much as the danger is intensified and becomes a catastrophe).

Under the term 'primary manic situation' I unite, for the moment, two situations: the inversion of the primary paranoid situation, by which the object is persecuted, and the inversion of the primary depressive situation, by which the object is destroyed, castrated, etc.

(iv) The identification with the persecutor (in the same way as the 'immediate aggressive reactions' which precede it and are latently contained in it) leads to the harming or destruction of the object. Thus there arise in the subject the *secondary depressive situation* (pain, worry, and mourning over the object, identification with it, reparation tendencies) and

(v) the *secondary paranoid situation*, in which the attacked object threatens retaliation.

(vi) From these situations there originates, as we know, the (moral) superego to which the ego submits. This superego is derived from a new identification, namely, the introjection of the attacked and ('secondary') persecuting object. Through the evolution of the ego, it acquires a more 'real' aspect, i.e. a moral one; upon its original character of victim and avenger is superimposed the forbidding and punishing character of the parents. That identification may represent, *in one aspect*, a new triumph over the persecutor, since it is now the subject itself which administers the retaliation; in this sense one may speak of a *secondary manic situation*.

(vii) The persecuted and subordinated ego is that part of the ego which is identified with the frustrating imago (with the 'primary persecutor', see (iii) above). It is to this ego and the 'primary manic tendencies' it represents that the central guilt-feelings then refer. This situation thus virtually implies the *superego depressive situation*: the ego abandoned by the moral superego.

The superego depressive situation and the secondary manic situation are, then, two aspects (or two forms of experience) of the same situation. In the first case the experience of the

attacked and abandoned ego (of the ego identified with the attacked love object) is predominant, in the second case the manic experience of the (secondary) persecutor (or superego) with which the ego has identified itself.

(viii) Faced with the 'superego depressive situation' the subject defends himself with various mechanisms, among which I will point out those which represent a return of the deep strata on a superego (moral) level. This is the case, for instance, in jealousy paranoia or in 'mania for reproaching' (*manie récriminatoire*). In these, as a first step, the patient defends himself against the superego depression by means of the projection of the superego; it may be termed *superego paranoia* (corresponding to the primary and secondary paranoid situations). As a second step, he defends himself by means of the identification with the projected superego and the projection of the 'bad' impulses, i.e. of the frustrating object introjected in the ego. We are dealing, in this second step, with an inversion of the preceding superego paranoia; it may be termed *superego mania* (corresponding, in a certain aspect, to the primary and secondary manic situations). These 'superego situations' are, in essence, the moral aspects of the 'secondary' depressive, paranoid, and manic situations.

As a first illustration of the processes described we may recall Freud's 'vision' as regards the basic process of human evolution, set forth in *Totem and Taboo*. The basic situation is the genital desire of the sons of the primitive horde. This situation, at the height of frustration its already equivalent to a castration, and, he experience of destruction converts it, within the genital plane, into a 'primary depressive situation'. The persistence of the genital desire threatens the repetition of that catastrophic experience (or the conversion of this catastrophic fantasy into actual reality) and the obstructive father becomes in this way a persecutor, and the situation a 'primary paranoid' one.<sup>2</sup> The sons respond—'one day'—to this situation, behaving towards the father in the same way, i.e. making of him an object of persecution, killing him and eating him. This triumph over the persecutor through identification with him and the inversion

<sup>2</sup> The threat of castration and the castration itself may have been real. I wish to stress here, however, the *endopsychic* aspect of the origin of castration-anxiety. As I have pointed out, just as oral frustration itself is lived as being devoured, genital frustration is lived as being castrated. This very likely holds for all analogous situations. Thus, for instance, the idea common in the

little girl of being destroyed as regards her maternal capacity springs fundamentally from the frustration of her infantile motherhood desires, being secondarily greatly increased by the fear of (and desire for) the mother's retaliation because of the girl's sadistic fantasies against the mother's womb (6).



of the preceding situations represent the 'primary manic situation'. The mourning over the destruction of the father, when love for him reawakens, represents the 'secondary depressive situation'. The fear of the murdered father's revenge is the 'secondary paranoid situation'. The psychological introjection of the prohibiting father, which then takes place with a view to checking those 'primary manic' tendencies and their consequences, leads to the formation of the moral superego. This process implies, on the one hand, a triumph over the father (the identification and equality with him), i.e. one aspect of the 'secondary manic situation', and leads, on the other hand, to the submission to him, to the guilt-feelings, i.e. to the 'superego depressive situation'.

A table may be useful at this point. The well-known scheme of the child's psychosexual evolution which at the same time serves us as a guide for the understanding of neuroses could—if my observations are correct—be completed in the following manner (system of co-ordinates):

Primary depress. sit.	Primary paranoid sit.	Primary manic sit.	Second depress. sit.	Second. paranoid sit.	Second. manic sit.	Superego depress. sit.	Defences against superego depression
Frustration peak. Trauma. Experience of destruction	Being persecuted owing to persistence of the bond with frustrating = destructive object	Defence by identification with the persecutor. Inversion of the preceding situations	Grief over destroyed object	Fear of retaliation	Defence by introjection of the 'sec. persecutor.' Origin of the superego. 'Autoplastic' inversion of the prim. manic sit.	The ego abandoned by the superego	
Genital (1st and 2nd)							
Anal ( „ „ „ )							
Oral ( „ „ „ )							

(In the first evolutionary stages there is no moral superego; the course of this line is uncertain)

The succession: depressive → paranoid → manic situation thus appears twice. In certain pathological syndromes this succession returns yet again—for the third time—on the superego-level, as I have already pointed out (superego-depression, superego-paranoia, superego-mania).

### III. FIRST EXAMPLES

The exposition of a clinical case that follows in

<sup>3</sup> Freud cites the case of a jealous man who described this situation as a sensation of 'being like Prometheus exposed to being eaten by the vulture or thrown in chains into a snake pit' (5). The patient describes with his images the sensation which his paranoid ideas of jealousy aroused in him and not the primal scene properly speak-

the next part of this paper will show in detail the stratification described. Here I wish to present two brief illustrations which offer a further view of the whole. I choose as first example *jealousy paranoia*, limiting myself to the oedipal level.

The culmination of the libidinal frustration is the experience (in reality or in fantasy) of the *primal scene*. It is equivalent to *being destroyed* (castrated) and represents, at this level, the *primary depressive situation*. Analysis of jealousy reveals this experience or fantasy as the basic situation.<sup>3</sup> The persistence of the libidinal bond with the parents (fixation) transforms this destructive experience into a constant danger (in view of its possible repetition), whereby the *parents in coitus* become *persecutors* who threaten that aggression. This is the *primary paranoid situation*.

One female analysand, for instance, as her libidinal bond with the analyst increased, felt persecuted by the parents in intercourse, transferred on to him, and experienced the (transferred) primal scene as *the annihilation of herself as a woman*. Although in this experience of destruction and persecution an important part was played by her guilt feelings, particularly on account of her masturbation, and

her need and fear of retaliation, it was clear that it was *basically* a question of the repetition of infantile *frustrations* (*primary depressive and paranoid situations*).

It may frequently be observed that it is precisely in defence against this situation (and the immediate reactions it provokes) that masturbation begins. In the latter there is an identification with *both persecutors* (in the girl, for instance, the vagina is her

ing. In equating these two, I assume that we are dealing here with a return of what was rejected (the primal scene) in the defence (the paranoid ideas). In the patient's images one may also discern the primary depressive-paranoid situation of the underlying *oral* experience: being eaten and being the victim of a deadly oral attack.

mother's and her finger the father's penis) and thus a triumph over both of them (primary manic situation). In the analytic re-experience, the aforementioned analysand defended herself against the primal scene by means of seductive and frustrating behaviour. She took refuge in a friend (male), placing the analyst, through this unfaithfulness of hers, before the primal scene and thus inverting the rôles. This behaviour, analogous to masturbation, was once again, although in a transformation, a *primary manic situation*.

The analysand's hetero- and homosexual incestuous tendencies were expressed, then, by means of these identifications with the persecuting parents in coitus. The same is found in other cases. The 'impulses to unfaithfulness', both hetero- and homosexual, whose pathological rejection lies, according to Freud, at the bottom of jealousy paranoia, are, then, the expression of these identifications ('primary manic tendencies') and therefore contain, latently, the murderous answer to the 'murderers', the parents in coitus.

On the other hand, the friend represented at the same time the father-analyst, which led her to behave towards the former in the same seductive and frustrating manner. As a consequence of this behaviour despair arose in her over the suffering she caused her friend and the fear that he might commit suicide (*secondary depressive situation*). At other moments she feared he might kill her out of revenge (*secondary paranoid situation*). She managed to master this persecutory anxiety, thereupon made the damaged object's anger her own, and performed self-aggressive acts (*secondary manic situation*, in which she takes the place of the persecutor and administers the retaliation).

The damaged and revengeful introjected object condemned her for her 'impulses to unfaithfulness', leading her at times to the *superego depression*. This situation frequently turned into a *superego paranoia*, and the analysand felt accused and condemned by the analyst. At other times she developed delirious ideas of jealousy with regard to her friend, which enabled her to free herself from the accusing superego, converting her self-reproaches into reproaches against him, through the identification with the projected superego (*superego mania*, here '*jealousy mania*').

To turn to the second example. The analysand P.—a young man whose case is set forth further on—refers one day to his phobia of spiders. He associates that spiders suck the life out of their sexual objects, and follows this with his own oral-sadistic fantasies towards women, which are indeed intense. He says that the spider must be himself. Pursuing his associations he has—with anxiety and asthma—the following fantasy. 'I see my mother offering me her breast. But at my approach the breast disappears; my mother bends over me and stifles me. . . . My mother does not give me but sucks me instead.' Correlating these associations with P.'s

case-history, it followed that, at bottom, the spider is the mother-imago which tempts and frustrates him, frustration and destruction being unconsciously equated (primary depressive situation). To be libidinally bound to a frustrating object signifies, then, the ever-present danger of being destroyed (primary paranoid situation). In the face of this situation P. defends himself by becoming a spider himself, which—in one of its aspects—represents the triumph over the frustrating object, i.e. the primary manic experience. On the other hand, it is to the fact of his being a spider—in view of the harm he does to his objects—that his secondary depressive and paranoid anxieties and his guilt-feelings refer.

These last situations find clearer expression in the following facts, which at the same time bring the primary strata to light. After many difficulties, P. managed to acquire a girl friend, a young and affectionate person. But soon he feels very depressed. He perceives that his love is lukewarm and rightly attributes his girl's sadness to this circumstance; he feels guilty of making her suffer through his lack of love. As a matter of fact, in his search for a girl friend narcissistic motives such as his desire to overcome his impotence, to be a Don Juan, etc., had played a preponderant part from the start; he had also decided in advance only to admit a passing relationship. He perceives he is 'exploiting' the girl, that she is an instrument rather than a love object. P. is aware of another possibility, that of falling in love. But this is fraught with danger; it is, in his words, 'to be exploited, to become utterly dependent, to be caught in a net, to fall into a trap'. Marriage, to him, would mean all these dangers. It can be seen, then, that P. fell into the former depressive situation in his endeavour to escape from the latter paranoid situation. This consists in being tied to an object that not only dominates and exploits him, but also—as is visible in his dreams and fantasies—devours, empties, castrates him, etc. These were and are the catastrophes (primary depression) that threaten him, should he give way to loving (primary paranoid situation). To avoid this danger he identifies himself with this object; now he does not give but takes, he is not exploited and sucked out but exploits and sucks out, etc. P. experiences this at first—on making the 'conquest'—as a triumph (primary manic situation) but is later horrified at the harm he does to the girl (secondary depression). At the same time he fears vengeance (secondary paranoid situation). In defence against these persecutions (fear of being killed, castrated, etc.), he introjects this persecutor (in the superego) and attacks himself (slight acts of self-aggression and self-castration); in this way he controls the persecutor and to the same degree triumphs over him (secondary manic situation). In the plane of the moral superego, this latter criticizes him and abandons him for his selfishness, his inability to love, and his aggressiveness, and in this way brings about the superego depression. Pro-



jecting the superego, he feels accused by others on account of this very behaviour (superego paranoia), from which he tries to escape by inverting the situation once more: he seeks to be the victim (seeking failure, illness, and suffering) by which he not only denies and at the same time atones for his guilt, but is also able to accuse the objects and Providence of being bad towards him ('mania for reproaching').

#### IV. CONNEXIONS AND SUPPLEMENTS

There are many problems connected with what I have set forth; here I can touch upon only a few of them.

I will refer in the first place to some connexions between the present exposition and already existing opinions, so as to make clear how far my views are based upon them and how far they differ. M. Klein and her co-workers have devoted special attention to depressive, paranoid, and manic states, and some of the present observations are to be found, although in another connexion or differently formulated, in their writings. This especially applies to the 'secondary depressive and paranoid situations', the contents of which very largely coincide with the experiences of the 'depressive position' and with the 'paranoid defences' against the depressive anxieties (7). One difference of approach lies in the fact that in these investigations of M. Klein's, attention is mainly directed to the 'positions', i.e. to the aggregate of psychotic anxieties and defences belonging to *certain evolutionary phases*, whereas here it is directed to a certain succession, connexion, and stratification of a series of 'situations' which appear *within each of the evolutionary phases of the libido*.

The 'situations' are described here in terms of the libido theory, but they may equally well be expressed in terms of the dual theory of the instincts. I think that the *predisposition to being destroyed*, inherent in the latter theory ('primary masochism') coincides with the *predisposition to being frustrated* inherent in the former. As the active factor complementing and utilizing these predispositions we have in one case the death instinct (which always presents itself, however, together with the life instinct) while in the other case we must, to my mind, accept the existence of 'sadistic' impulses that are originally directed against the subject's own organism. Hunger, for instance, which is experienced as being devoured, may be described as originating both from a predisposition to being destroyed and from a predisposition to

being frustrated; in either case it suggests the existence of impulses towards devouring oneself, i.e. of a destructive love towards the ego. Similarly anxiety may be described both as an ego response to the death instinct (M. Klein) and also as an ego response to the predisposition to being frustrated in one's libido. In this way the above statements may represent a bridge between the different theories of anxiety.

Now some notes on the 'primary situations'. Observation (especially of transference) shows the 'primary paranoid situation' to be basic (10). This also seems to be M. Klein's opinion, especially in her latest papers, in which she points out the persecutory character of the original experiences of frustration (9). But already reflection suggests that behind this paranoid situation, in which the persecutory 'object' is rejected, there must lie an experience in which this rejection has not taken place. This would be the situation of 'union' with the destructive object, or, in terms of the instincts, the break-through of the primary masochism. In other words, this 'primary paranoid' experience, which consists in the fantasy of a 'something' or 'somebody' that persecutes and in the fear lest this persecution attain its aim, must be preceded by the 'primary depressive' situation; for, firstly, one can only fear, to my mind, what one has, in some manner or degree, already suffered, and, secondly, there can only be a bad object-*imago* when we have lived the pain and rejected it and have fantasied the aggression suffered as something not belonging to the ego, as a non-ego, i.e. as an 'object'.

The 'primary depressive situation' designates the catastrophe in itself, the experience of destruction, or the result or final goal of the persecution (and not the persecution properly speaking). In its full effect, however, the primary depressive situation can never be observed (since it is death itself), but frequently in partial effect (frustration, trauma). Moreover, in practice it always presents itself in fusion with other situations, both with the 'primary paranoid situation' (as I have pointed out) and also with the 'secondary depressive situation', or, more precisely, as identification with the destroyed object. As far as this last situation (the sorrow over the destroyed object) is concerned, however, observation shows that the subject only destroys the object if he feels destroyed by it or threatened with destruction, i.e. that the secondary depressive situation presupposes the primary depressive or paranoid



situation. (This may sound 'philanthropic', but it seems, nevertheless, to fit the facts and it also coincides with the death instinct theory. Also envious, jealous and greedy aggression, fits of rage, sadism, etc., are preceded by states that are subjectively lived as situations of lack, i.e. as primary depressive-paranoid situations). Besides, the subject's sorrow over the destroyed object (in M. Klein's 'depressive position') is only to be conceived upon the basis of an identification with the destroyed object; but this presupposes, to my mind, *the projection of an experience in which the subject himself has felt destroyed*, i.e. it presupposes the 'primary depressive situation'.

However, the present terms for the various 'situations' are incomplete, for they only partially reflect the psychological happenings. In each situation one would have to differentiate between an attitude turned towards the ego and one turned towards the object. Thus, for instance, the paranoid attitudes towards the object seem to be accompanied by a 'pining' of a depressive character (8) with respect to the ego, in the same way as the 'depressive anxieties' about the object (7) are usually accompanied by a paranoid attitude towards the ego. Besides, the distinction between a catastrophic situation and a situation of danger, as holds good for the basic situations (i.e. the differentiation between the primary depressive situation and the primary paranoid situation), should also be drawn for the subsequent situations. Thus one should differentiate, for instance, in the primary manic situation, between the (active) persecution and the attainment of its aim; similarly, in the secondary depressive situation, between 'depressive anxiety' and depression properly speaking; etc.

The description of the 'secondary manic situation' also represents a simplification, for not every identification with the 'secondary persecutor' involves a turning of the persecution against the ego; the persecution may also turn outwards against the secondary persecutor (as happened in the 'primary mania'). Besides, even when the persecution turns inwards, the secondary persecutor usually continues to exist in fantasy outside.

The above-mentioned fusion of (depressive) situations also appears between other strata. Thus, for example, the primary and secondary paranoid situations frequently act conjointly, one covering the other; but both theoretically and technically it is of importance to bear in

mind their different origin, namely the 'primary' from the lack and the 'secondary' from the retaliation.

The mechanism of 'identification with the persecutor' which characterizes the manic situations set forth here, was suggested (although in other terms) by S. Freud (4) and by M. Klein (as 'identification with the anxiety-object' (6)), and studied by A. Freud as 'identification with the aggressor' (1). A. Freud also points out the different directions this identification takes: outwards (for instance against the aggressor), inwards (formation of the superego through identification with the aggressor), and the combination of this mechanism with the projection of guilt. The stress lies upon the identification with images of the parents who criticize or punish, although the writer also cites some examples of another type. What I wish to add or stress is: (a) The identification with the aggressor is of the utmost importance already at a deeper level, namely as identification with the 'primary persecutors', i.e. with the frustrating proto-imagos. (b) This mechanism plays, in consequence, a very large part, at this deep level, in the formation of the *ego* (in addition to its importance for the formation of the superego and its forerunners). (c) Sadism and also other tendencies, including the oedipal ones, frequently, if not always, present themselves as expressions of such identification with persecutors. (d) The main guilt-feelings refer to these tendencies (or these nuclei of the ego) and are, then—just as Freud showed for melancholia—accusations against an introjected frustrating object. (e) The identifications with the 'primary persecutors' are at the same time the essence of certain manic situations. The 'primary manic situation' should be distinguished from the 'manic defences' (M. Klein) which follow the 'depressive position' and in which the guilt and depression are denied. The primary manic situation, on the contrary (like the 'immediate aggressive reactions'), seems originally to precede certain secondary depressive and paranoid situations and gives rise to them, just as the triumphal devouring of the archfather by the sons precedes and gives rise to the mourning over him (2).

The identification with a 'bad object' constitutes the essence of melancholia (3). The identification was preceded by a relationship of the nature of object-love, and this may, normally, subsist in the unconscious. But, in view of the trauma (the 'primary depressive' experi-



ence, which has remained at bottom) this subsisting relationship of object-love represents a constant danger for the ego, and turns into a situation of persecution, i.e. the 'primary paranoid situation'.

In the present schematic exposition no mention is made of a series of very important mechanisms, particularly dissociation, idealization, denial, etc., all of which have been deeply studied by M. Klein and others; furthermore, the rôle of the good, gratifying object has only been superficially touched upon. In view of the complexity of the subject such a limitation seemed to me indicated. These and other points will be referred to in a later paper dealing with each of the strata separately and complementing theoretically and clinically the scheme here presented. In a recently published paper of a mainly clinical character (11), which utilizes the present approach, some of the processes here left aside are treated in detail.

#### V. STRATIFICATION, OR, A CLINICAL CASE

I have set forth <sup>1</sup> of the patient Peter in a previous paper, <sup>2</sup> summary thought comprehension of the case as a whole, materializing it from a general point of view (10), which I wish to limit myself to data and material that cater detail.

<sup>3</sup> above-mentioned. Peter sought psyliatrical <sup>4</sup>—which a years ago, at the age of twenty, summary set forth <sup>5</sup>ence. Since the age of three he <sup>6</sup> other ascribed from bronchial asthma. He comratified, too, of intense feelings of inferiority and of fear of life in general. His mother is a very neurotic woman, with marked paranoic features and a domineering personality. With his father—a highly successful business man—he is superficially on good terms; but, in reality, though his father allows him more freedom, Peter is very much subjected to his <sup>7</sup>roo, and has intense conflicts with him. He is an only child.

Analysis of the two principal symptoms—impotence and asthma—as also that of his most important character disturbance, the moral masochism, shows them to be different expressions of the stratification presented.

I wish first to summarize briefly what I have set forth in this respect in the paper above-mentioned, and then to present new material and some other aspects. In this summary I shall employ the terminology used in the first part of this paper.

(a) *Impotence*. Both the sexual and affective bonds were experienced as a danger both of being destroyed and of destroying. The analysis revealed the following:

Owing to the serious libidinal and affective frustrations since the oral period, any instinctive or

emotional approach involved the threat of being devoured, emptied, absorbed, killed, castrated, dominated. The frustrations themselves (basically oral) have been lived as such catastrophes (primary depressive situation). Hence to love means to run the risk of suffering the same destructions once more (primary paranoid situation).

In face of this danger Peter defended himself through identification with the persecutor, and he now wished insatiably to devour, empty, and destroy the object himself. In this manner an intense sadism appeared.

These identifications contain all the aggressions that Peter had suffered or that had threatened him in the primary depressive and primary paranoid situations, or in other words they contain all the hatred which these situations have provoked, as an attempt to free himself from the pain, through the return of the aggression suffered.

This identification with the persecutor, which on the one hand involves triumph over him ('I am not emptied, rather I am the one that empties', primary manic situation), leads, on the other hand, to the destruction of the object (secondary depressive situation) and to the danger of retaliation on the part of the object (secondary paranoid situation). The danger of being destroyed appears, then, as cause and as consequence of destroying in love.

Thus, for example, the vagina appears to him as "hungry",<sup>4</sup> at bottom, because Peter has been "devoured" by libidinal and affective hunger, suffered in his bond with his mother. His defensive identification with this persecutor involves similarly destructive desires, because of which his penis is an instrument that "devours", "cuts and breaks the walls of the vagina", and "kills the woman". Erection is equivalent to the primary manic situation, for it represents his "magic power", with which he "conjugates dangers". But "this power ends with ejaculation". "After ejaculation," says Peter, "she will absorb me, she will 'inhale' my penis and testicles. . . . I fear that my love may wound her and she will take revenge upon me" (secondary paranoid situation). The other danger derived from that identification—the secondary depressive situation—is seen, for example, in a dream in which a woman appears who becomes a skeleton on being emptied by the suckling she bears in her arms. "That is the idea I have of love," Peter added.

The same object, then, which is lived at certain times as persecutor is lived at other times as object (ambivalently) loved, and its destruction is thus mourned. It is under the impact of being completely destroyed (in the culmination of the sexual frustrations) that the object appears as completely bad, i.e. as persecutor. This which "empties" the subject is the one that fills itself at his expense, and is therefore at the same time the object filled with good things, i.e. the 'ideal' one. Analogously, the identi-

<sup>4</sup> Double inverted commas denote quotations from the analysand's own words.



fication with the persecutor turns Peter simultaneously into persecutor and ideal.

To avoid the secondary depressive and paranoid situations Peter again introjects the object that he has persecuted, and which has then become persecutor once more; thus the superego originates, to which Peter subjects his erotic-destructive impulses. This new identification is experienced on the one hand as a liberation, especially from the secondary paranoid situation. Peter turned himself into persecutor once again, pursuing (as superego) that part of the ego which is identified with the primary persecutor. As liberation, just as control over the secondary persecutor and as active realization of the persecution against the (introjected) primary persecutor, it is the 'secondary manic situation'. The following dream is an illustration of this.

*Peter, the psycho-analyst and a horse are in a room together. Peter is removing the horse's bridle. 'Are you mad?' the psycho-analyst shouts at him. But it is too late, he cannot put the bridle on again. So Peter picks it up and hits the horse with it, about the testicles in particular, trying to drive it out of the room. The horse is the sexual father who, in the fantasies accompanying the genital frustration (i.e. in the primal scene), has become Peter's persecutor. Thus the identification with him (the horse within Peter) is an aggression against his father (the psycho-analyst). "The horse can bite you," Peter associates. The patient thus fears destroying, "castrating" the psycho-analyst and suffering his retaliation. To avert these dangers he identifies himself again with the father-analyst, now trying to drive the horse out of himself and hitting it about the testicles. This is the 'secondary manic situation'.*

On the other hand, this new introjection leads to the 'superego depression' because the superego calls the ego bad (guilt feelings over that part of the ego which is identified with the primary persecutor, and need for punishment) and because that subjection leads to (partial) castration (identification with the attacked father). Peter synthesizes this saying, "So as not to kill, I wish to be impotent, castrated, killed."

Peter's mode of expression may attract attention and possibly make the impression that he is 'intellectualizing'. This is so, though in a somewhat specific manner. To begin with, Peter knows nothing about psycho-analysis. He has, on the other hand, a remarkable ability to perceive his and communication of his fantasies is, to some extent, related with certain defences and resistances. It is, particularly, a "sacrificing as a holocaust" to the analyst (in other words, a masochistic surrender or gift in defence against guilt) and it is a defence against situations which are much nearer to present reality, principally in direct relationship with the analyst. To give an example: on feeling an irritation in his throat, Peter produces many oral fantasies respecting the analyst's penis in defence

against the much more anguishing desire of asking him for a glass of water. This request has the same meaning, but it contains the danger of converting it into reality and thus repeating the (oral) crime.

(b) The *asthma* appears as a result of the same fears that produce the impotence in Peter. It is principally the 'secondary paranoid anxiety' that leads to attacks of asthma. This 'secondary paranoid situation' always arises when the 'primary manic impulses' are in some way stimulated. Thus, for example, any approach to a sexual satisfaction or any attempt to act independently arouses in Peter the fear of revenge from the object (father, mother or both), since Peter in such situations—which are always equivalent to the primary manic situation—frustrates or kills the object. As a result, a struggle comes about between the 'primary manic impulses' and their rejection (their subjection to the superego). These struggles appear as conflicts between opposing tendencies (incorporate, eat, kill, expel the object or not) or as conflicts between the subject and the object (for example, his morbid wishes to "enter"

into him through his nose or of he rejects her). I shall return to these struggles later, but I wish here to emphasize that there is found the same stage of frustration as in the impotence. There is, beside of the forticular relationship between these two symptoms (while the impotence or its psychological effects prevail, the asthma does not prevail). The struggles and anxieties underlying, pre-empting the asthma and the asthma itself appear when the identification contained in the impotence (or in the guilt-feelings) is diminished or abandoned. The nuclei of these

The following associations illustrate these affirmations: "During yesterday's session," says Peter, "I had asthma because in my fantasy of going to Tirol I dared to live. But living means love, luxury, pleasure . . . ; and being dominated by this love and vice means to kill and be killed. I cough and become stifled whenever the image of love, living and enjoyment appears. . . . (Peter breathes heavily and coughs). For instance, now I was thinking of the breast, and I was thinking that I was destroying it with my love, because I eat it, and eating means killing. I shall be killed for this. This fear of being killed is lived as "persecution by the shade that is my mother." "I can't free myself of my mother because I've killed her. That's why she, the shade, persecutes me and wishes to kill me." Seeing that in his unconscious loving is equivalent to eating, and eating to killing and being killed, Peter wishes to reject these impulses. "But there is another death as well," Peter continues, "and this one threatens me if I don't eat the breast."

These associations illustrate one of the struggles which arise between the 'manic impulses' and their rejection, which are the psychological background of his attacks of asthma. Behind his 'manic impulses' are found, as has already been shown, Peter's primary depressive and primary paranoid situations



which *reappear* in the renunciation ("death if I don't eat the breast"), while the rejection of the primary manic situation is due to the secondary depressive and secondary paranoid anxieties which follow the latter.

(c) Peter's *moral masochism*, too, is explained through the same stratification. As any satisfaction and any possession is for him equivalent to the primary manic situation, they bring with them the secondary depressive and secondary paranoid dangers. To avoid them, Peter actually or apparently submits his 'manic impulses' to the superego and seeks frustrations. In the above-mentioned paper I summed it up (referring to the oral plane) in the following words: 'Peter's masochism has its roots in this subjection to an object (forerunner of the moral superego) that desires to suck, absorb, dominate him. Suffering is sought to mitigate the object's greed and aggressiveness. The masochism constitutes a manoeuvre so as not to be sucked completely, and to be able to continue to suck. The unconscious search for the rejecting sexual object represents a defence in face of the danger of being loved, that is to say, of being destroyed by the object.'

The preceding summary should serve as a basis for understanding the material which I will now present, and in which I wish to demonstrate the stratification in greater detail.

Having in the above-mentioned paper chiefly expounded 'oral material'—which also determines the nature of the summary set forth above—so I now wish to stress other aspects, since the thesis affirms that the stratification is found in each of the libidinal levels.

At a certain period of his analysis Peter experiences his transference as a passive homosexual relationship. In his dreams the psycho-analyst's penis appears as a rifle or some other aggressive object threatening him. It also appears in a dream as a necklace, which Peter associates with a tapeworm that eats and destroys him internally. (Peter has had a tapeworm in the past; the choice of the necklace as a symbol is co-determined by Peter's line of business.) The day after he has related this dream, the meaning of which he had lived with anxiety, he brings this other dream: "You are staying at X hotel in Mar del Plata (Argentina's foremost summer resort). I go and see you and offer you a necklace for a certain sum. But you don't buy it from me, getting one from someone else instead, who was asking considerably less."

In the middle of relating his dream, he remembered that he had intended to pay me my fees that day, but he had forgotten to bring the money. I for my part associate with this the following: Peter experiences his having to pay me as being taken advantage of, or—as he had said at the previous session—as the analyst's penis "eating my entrails and testicles". In this day's dream, however, he

attempts to bargain with me, to gain (take) money from me by offering me a necklace of his, thus inverting the passive situation.

Of Peter's associations I reproduce the most important. The necklace of his dream reminds him of the session of the day before, after which the question had occurred to him whether I had homosexual tendencies and if I had ever satisfied them. He later also wondered whether to satisfy his own homosexual tendencies or not. The dream which he had at first forgotten, he had suddenly remembered at midday in the following circumstances. He had invited his girl friend home (the one referred to in his associations in the first part of this paper); she was very jolly, which made him happy too. After lunch he started to caress her, kissing and biting her, and then he allowed himself what he had never done before: *coitus a tergo*. During this *coitus* an anguishing doubt suddenly assailed him that he might have made a mistake as to the orifice, that his *coitus* might have been *per anum* rather than *per vaginam*. At the same time it seemed to him he could no longer see the anus. *It was then that he remembered the dream*, he does not know why. He immediately felt pain in the testicles and penis and at once ejaculated, without being conscious of the ejaculation; he only noticed it when he examined the sheath to ascertain whether faecal matter had adhered to it. With the imagined anal *coitus* he associated that it meant *to attack and sacrifice his girl friend*, and that he feared her hatred because of this. He thinks that the pain in his genitals is connected with this. At some time during the *coitus* he also thought that he was the girl. He remembered, besides, having gripped his girl friend's breasts hard during the *coitus a tergo*, and with this he associates a fantasy that he had during the session of the day before, namely that during the homosexual act to which he would be subjected by the psycho-analyst, the latter would press the nape of his neck with his two hands in such a way as to break it.

Now we can understand the dream. The situation of anxiety that gives rise to it is the passive anal relationship with the psycho-analyst, which Peter experiences as a grave danger (of being eaten, destroyed, castrated). In an attempt to defend himself against this situation, he inverts it: he "offers" me his necklace, that is to say, his penis. He also remembers this dream when he is about to carry out this inversion upon a substitute object. But in this new situation regarding the analyst, Peter takes advantage of him (in his dream he demands a high price of him), he 'sacrifices' him, which is rejected by the psycho-analyst who prefers another necklace which costs him less, that is to say, another penis that deprives him of (eats him) less. This rejection in which Peter's tendencies (to eat, etc.), contained in this inversion, suffer from the psycho-analyst is the superficial traumatic situation of the dream.

The above-mentioned associations also explain why Peter was afraid for so long to carry out the



fication with the persecutor turns Peter simultaneously into persecutor and ideal.

To avoid the secondary depressive and paranoid situations Peter again introjects the object that he has persecuted, and which has then become persecutor once more; thus the superego originates, to which Peter subjects his erotic-destructive impulses. This new identification is experienced on the one hand as a liberation, especially from the secondary paranoid situation. Peter turned himself into persecutor once again, pursuing (as superego) that part of the ego which is identified with the primary persecutor. As liberation, just as control over the secondary persecutor and as active realization of the persecution against the (introjected) primary persecutor, it is the 'secondary manic situation'. The following dream is an illustration of this.

*Peter, the psycho-analyst and a horse are in a room together. Peter is removing the horse's bridle. "Are you mad?" the psycho-analyst shouts at him. But it is too late, he cannot put the bridle on again. So Peter picks it up and hits the horse with it, about the testicles in particular, trying to drive it out of the room. The horse is the sexual father who, in the fantasies accompanying the genital frustration (i.e. in the primal scene), has become Peter's persecutor. Thus the identification with him (the horse within Peter) is an aggression against his father (the psycho-analyst). "The horse can bite you," Peter associates. The patient thus fears destroying, "castrating" the psycho-analyst and suffering his retaliation. To avert these dangers he identifies himself again with the father-analyst, now trying to drive the horse out of himself and hitting it about the testicles. This is the 'secondary manic situation'.*

On the other hand, this new introjection leads to the 'superego depression' because the superego calls the ego bad (guilt feelings over that part of the ego which is identified with the primary persecutor, and need for punishment) and because that subjection leads to (partial) castration (identification with the attacked father). Peter synthesizes this saying, "So as not to kill, I wish to be *impotent*, castrated, killed."

Peter's mode of expression may attract attention and possibly make the impression that he is 'intellectualizing'. This is so, though in a somewhat specific manner. To begin with, Peter knows nothing about psycho-analysis. He has, on the other hand, a remarkable ability to perceive his profound fantasies. Nevertheless, the perception and communication of his fantasies is, to some extent, related with certain defences and resistances. It is, particularly, a "sacrificing as a holocaust" to the analyst (in other words, a masochistic surrender or gift in defence against guilt) and it is a defence against situations which are much nearer to present reality, principally in direct relationship with the analyst. To give an example: on feeling an irritation in his throat, Peter produces many oral fantasies respecting the analyst's penis in defence

against the much more anguishing desire of asking him for a glass of water. This request has the same meaning, but it contains the danger of converting it into reality and thus repeating the (oral) crime.

(b) The *asthma* appears as a result of the same fears that produce the impotence in Peter. It is principally the 'secondary paranoid anxiety' that leads to attacks of asthma. This 'secondary paranoid situation' always arises when the 'primary manic impulses' are in some way stimulated. Thus, for example, any approach to a sexual satisfaction or any attempt to act independently arouses in Peter the fear of revenge from the object (father, mother or both), since Peter in such situations—which are always equivalent to the primary manic situation—frustrates or kills the object. As a result, a struggle comes about between the 'primary manic impulses' and their rejection (their subjection to the superego). These struggles appear as conflicts between opposing tendencies (incorporate, eat, kill, expel the object or not) or as conflicts between the subject and the object (for example, his mother wishes to "enter" into him through his nose or mouth and choke him; he rejects her). I shall return to these struggles later, but I wish here to emphasize that behind the asthma there is found the same situation as in the impotence. There is, besides, every particular relationship between these two symptoms (while the impotence or its psychological effect for the subject prevails, the asthma does not). The struggles and anxieties underlying the impotence and the asthma itself appear when the fear, included in the impotence (or in the asthma), is diminished or abandoned.

The following associations illustrate these affirmations: "During yesterday's session," says Peter, "I had asthma because in my fantasy of going to Tirol I dared to live. But living means love, luxury, pleasure . . .; and being dominated by this love and vice means to kill and be killed. I cough and become stifled whenever the image of love, living and enjoyment appears. . . . (Peter breathes heavily and coughs). For instance, now I was thinking of the breast, and I was thinking that I was destroying it with my love, because I eat it, and eating means killing. I shall be killed for this." This fear of being killed is lived as "persecution by the shade that is my mother." "I can't free myself of my mother because I've killed her. That's why she, the shade, persecutes me and wishes to kill me." Seeing that in his unconscious loving is equivalent to eating, and eating to killing and being killed, Peter wishes to reject these impulses. "But there is another death as well," Peter continues, "and this one threatens me if I don't eat the breast."

These associations illustrate one of the struggles which arise between the 'manic impulses' and their rejection, which are the psychological background of his attacks of asthma. Behind his 'manic impulses' are found, as has already been shown, Peter's primary depressive and primary paranoid situations



which *reappear* in the renunciation ("death if I don't eat the breast"), while the rejection of the primary manic situation is due to the secondary depressive and secondary paranoid anxieties which follow the latter.

(c) Peter's *moral masochism*, too, is explained through the same stratification. As any satisfaction and any possession is for him equivalent to the primary manic situation, they bring with them the secondary depressive and secondary paranoid dangers. To avoid them, Peter actually or apparently submits his 'manic impulses' to the superego and seeks frustrations. In the above-mentioned paper I summed it up (referring to the oral plane) in the following words: 'Peter's masochism has its roots in this subjection to an object (forerunner of the moral superego) that desires to suck, absorb, dominate him. Suffering is sought to mitigate the object's greed and aggressiveness. The masochism constitutes a manoeuvre so as not to be sucked completely, and to be able to continue to suck. The unpleasurable search for the rejecting sexual object represents a defence in face of the danger of being loved, that is to say, of being destroyed by the object.'

The preceding summary should serve as a basis for understanding the material which I will now present, and in which I wish to demonstrate the stratification in greater detail.

Having in the above-mentioned paper chiefly expounded 'oral material'—which also determines the nature of the summary set forth above—so I now wish to stress other aspects, since the thesis affirms that the stratification is found in each of the libidinal levels.

At a certain period of his analysis Peter experiences his transference as a passive homosexual relationship. In his dreams the psycho-analyst's penis appears as a rifle or some other aggressive object threatening him. It also appears in a dream as a necklace, which Peter associates with a tapeworm that eats and destroys him internally. (Peter has had a tapeworm in the past; the choice of the necklace as a symbol is co-determined by Peter's line of business.) The day after he has related this dream, the meaning of which he had lived with anxiety, he brings this other dream: "You are staying at X hotel in Mar del Plata (Argentina's foremost summer resort). I go and see you and offer you a necklace for a certain sum. But you don't buy it from me, getting one from someone else instead, who was asking considerably less."

In the middle of relating his dream, he remembered that he had intended to pay me my fees that day, but he had forgotten to bring the money. I for my part associate with this the following: Peter experiences his having to pay me as being taken advantage of, or—as he had said at the previous session—as the analyst's penis "eating my entrails and testicles". In this day's dream, however, he

attempts to bargain with me, to gain (take) money from me by offering me a necklace of his, thus inverting the passive situation.

Of Peter's associations I reproduce the most important. The necklace of his dream reminds him of the session of the day before, after which the question had occurred to him whether I had homosexual tendencies and if I had ever satisfied them. He later also wondered whether to satisfy his own homosexual tendencies or not. The dream which he had at first forgotten, he had suddenly remembered at midday in the following circumstances. He had invited his girl friend home (the one referred to in his associations in the first part of this paper); she was very jolly, which made him happy too. After lunch he started to caress her, kissing and biting her, and then he allowed himself what he had never done before: *coitus a tergo*. During this *coitus* an anguishing doubt suddenly assailed him that he might have made a mistake as to the orifice, that his *coitus* might have been *per anum* rather than *per vaginam*. At the same time it seemed to him he could no longer see the anus. *It was then that he remembered the dream*, he does not know why. He immediately felt pain in the testicles and penis and at once ejaculated, without being conscious of the ejaculation; he only noticed it when he examined the sheath to ascertain whether faecal matter had adhered to it. With the imagined anal *coitus* he associated that it meant *to attack and sacrifice his girl friend*, and that he feared her hatred because of this. He thinks that the pain in his genitals is connected with this. At some time during the *coitus* he also thought that he was the girl. He remembered, besides, having gripped his girl friend's breasts hard during the *coitus a tergo*, and with this he associates a fantasy that he had during the session of the day before, namely that during the homosexual act to which he would be subjected by the psycho-analyst, the latter would press the nape of his neck with his two hands in such a way as to break it.

Now we can understand the dream. The situation of anxiety that gives rise to it is the passive anal relationship with the psycho-analyst, which Peter experiences as a grave danger (of being eaten, destroyed, castrated). In an attempt to defend himself against this situation, he inverts it: he "offers" me his necklace, that is to say, his penis. He also remembers this dream when he is about to carry out this inversion upon a substitute object. But in this new situation regarding the analyst, Peter takes advantage of him (in his dream he demands a high price of him), he 'sacrifices' him, which is rejected by the psycho-analyst who prefers another necklace which costs him less, that is to say, another penis that deprives him of (eats him) less. This rejection which Peter's tendencies (to eat, etc.), contained in this inversion, suffer from the psycho-analyst is the superficial traumatic situation of the dream.

The above-mentioned associations also explain why Peter was afraid for so long to carry out the



coitus *a tergo* (aggressive meaning). His doing so that day was mainly due to the increased danger arising from his passive-anal bond with the psychoanalyst. Besides, his girl friend's good humour served to counteract (deny) beforehand his fantasies regarding the harmful consequences of his aggression, contained in the inversion of the passive-anal relationship.

We find thus the following stratification within this libidinal level. The basic situation is Peter's anal bond with a predominantly aggressive object. In as far as this situation comes about, that is, when the frustration (aggression) is really suffered, it gives rise to the 'primary depressive situation'; in as far as the frustration exists as a danger, the situation is lived as a persecution, whereby the 'primary paranoid situation' arises. The fact that the experience of the aggressiveness of the objects (imagos) arises in the first place from their *frustrating* conduct could already be seen in Peter's earlier associations (the oral frustration = being sucked, etc.). It is also confirmed by the conduct of the subject in his identification with this object, which expresses itself through his intense impulses to cause to suffer through provoking and frustrating desires. On speaking here of "frustration" I refer to the objective psychological occurrence; the corresponding subjective experience is that of "being loved = being destroyed" by the object, that is to say, it is the experience of a 'union' with a destructive object.

As an attempted defence against the 'primary depressive-paranoid situation' there appears (in his sexual conduct and in his above-mentioned dream) the inversion of the situation by means of identification with the persecutor, in this case the fantasy of *active* anal (homosexual) coitus. This situation involves, on the one hand, the subject freeing himself of the persecutor and triumphing over him ('primary manic situation'; Mar del Plata means "merrymaking, allowing oneself everything"). On the other hand the aggressiveness contained in it leads to the destruction of the object ("sacrificing it", secondary depressive situation), to the idea of "being hated" by this object (secondary paranoid situation), and to feeling rejected by the latter (the psychoanalyst buys the necklace from someone else); this latter already reflects the superego depressive situation. The pain felt in the genitals and the immediate and unfelt ejaculation are the result of these situations, that is, reactions to these dangers; on a moral superego plane the pain represents a self-chastisement (a subjection of the ego to the superego), in other words, a turning of the aggression against the guilty organ which in a superficial aspect belongs to the ego, in a deeper aspect to the primary persecutor (that with which, in the primary manic situation, he had identified himself). We might, then, speak of a somatization of a process of melancholia. The mechanism by means of which this turning of the aggression

against the ego takes place is as follows: the primary manic situation (Peter's fantasy of the active anal coitus) causes the secondary depressive and secondary paranoid anxieties; Peter defends himself against the latter by introjecting (as 'superego') the secondary persecutor (that threatens retaliation) and subjects himself to the retaliatory impulses of the latter (that is to say, to the 'manic impulses' projected upon the object). Hereby the 'manic impulses' are channelled towards his own ego, and thus—because of the (partial) identification with the secondary persecutor—the secondary manic situation arises (the sadistic act against the ego), which leads to the pain in the genitals and the immediate ejaculation. This is a form of (partial) self-castration to escape the danger of being (completely) castrated by the object. This process, which on one level is concerned only with instinctive impulses and reactions between the subject and the object, on another level also has, as we have seen, affective and moral meanings of guilt and punishment. In one aspect, then, the pains in Peter's testicles are the expression of the secondary manic situation, in another they are the somatization of a superego-depressive situation. This and the secondary manic situation are, then, two aspects of a single situation.

The same stratification is found on the *genital level*. In the considerations that follow we have to include the fact that we are dealing here with *two* frustrating objects, for—to mention one aspect—not only does the father forbid but the mother tempts and rejects. On the anal level, too—in as far as it is the negative oedipal level—we are dealing with two objects, and also in connexion with the breast we find two imagos in certain strata. However, up till now I have limited myself to Peter's relations with *one* (ambivalent) object because I consider them as basic. My having done so even on the anal level is explained by the fact that, in one aspect, the anal object-relationships of Peter's are but slightly modified transpositions of his oral relations with the breast.

Peter's genital desire turns into danger because, in the first place, it unites him with the object (woman, vagina) that absorbs, empties, bites, castrates, dominates, takes advantage of him and mocks him, thus becoming a persecutor. This image of the object comes superficially from the projection of these same impulses of Peter's towards the woman. But these impulses of his are, in turn, the response to an imago that has caused all these injuries by *attracting and frustrating* him, and threatens to do the same to him again.

The material which follows will illustrate and demonstrate this as well as the consequences of these fundamental situations.

During one period of his analysis, in which he intensely experienced his positive Oedipus complex in the transference, conferring on me the rôle of his father, and that of his mother on my wife (whom he



had chanced to meet), Peter relates the following. "I saw your wife again today, on taking the lift. I was afraid of her becoming aware of my desires towards her and laughing at me, or that you or both of you would laugh at me. For I am little and can't aspire to her. You both laugh at me because I have a little penis and *according as she, you, or both of you laugh, my penis becomes smaller and smaller until it disappears altogether.*" *Frustration, then, is lived as castration.* Besides, the frustration and castration are experienced as the satisfaction of his parents' sadistic impulses towards him, as a mania of his parents' at his expense. His parents' joint laughter represents (according to other associations) the primal scene. The parents' sadistic impulses are superficially, as I said, the expression of his secondary masochism, or, in other words, of his need of punishment and even of repairing and re-'pairing' (re-uniting) the injured genital parents. Nevertheless this fantasy (the secondary paranoid situation) covers a deeper one, even if identical in content: the primary paranoid situation, the expression of the primary masochism or of the frustration itself.

In the interpretation I also point out to him the transferred—childhood—character of his ideas and feelings ("myself and my penis are too little"), to which Peter reacts by remembering the hatred he felt "when my mother passed before me scantily dressed to excite me and laugh at me"; he also remembers having decided at that time to revenge himself ("they'll pay for it one day"). This revengeful fantasy consists—he does not know since when—of possessing all women and having an omnipotent penis.

At the following session he relates that he has masturbated during the night, and at the same time has had a fantasy or dream in which he was cutting his penis with a file. Later he ejaculated (in reality) and thought, "What a pity, now I can't file my penis any more." In his associations he connects this fantasy or dream with the previous session, that is, with the fantasy of revenging himself by means of his penis; "I file my penis," he says, "to prevent myself from taking revenge."

Thus we basically see his genital frustration (which culminates in the primal scene) being lived as destruction of his own male sexuality (primary depressive situation). Through this same frustration his genital bond with his mother becomes the danger of suffering castration (primary paranoid situation). As a result of this catastrophic experience (or danger) he reacts with a fantasy of sexual revenge, which in turn is rejected by him (he files his aggressive penis). We may already suppose that this fantasy represents the primary manic situation (the omnipotent penis) which, in face of certain fears, turns into a secondary manic situation (self castration, which is at the same time *castration of an introjected object*). That the revenge fantasy is the expression of his identification with a frustrating object (primary manic situation) is already suggested

by the fact that the desire to possess all women contains as much the idea "I will not love, just as I was not loved", as the intention of sadistically taking advantage of and mocking at the objects, just as he himself had felt the victim of his parents' sadism and mockery. The aggressive omnipotence which contains the manic triumph over the object is the same as his mother possessed over him. Also in the intention to attract and frustrate women contained in his Don-Juan-like revenge, and more clearly still in a series of sadistic (or sadomasochistic) fantasies, he behaves in the same way with the object as, in the basic situation, the object behaves with him. One of the principal elements of these fantasies is "*causing to suffer through desire*", i.e. to increase in various ways the object's desire and then deny satisfaction. Other sadistic contents, too, seem actively to repeat what he has passively suffered in the frustration. Thus, for example, the insistent fantasy of biting and eating breasts corresponds to his sensations in the frustration that something eats or bites him inside; his idea of killing the woman (mother) with his penis or of breaking her vagina in coitus corresponds to what he himself feels in the frustration, that is, being killed or castrated.

To sum up, the expression of the 'primary manic' situation such as we have found it in Peter's conscious, that is, the desire to possess all women and to have an omnipotent penis, is not its original expression. In the above-mentioned sadistic fantasies we are nearer the primitive content of that identification with the persecutor, and its deeper content is none other than the impulse to do actively to the object what the subject has suffered passively in the basic situation, namely, death and castration. For Peter's immediate aggressive reactions to and within the 'primary depressive-paranoid situation' are thus afterwards replaced by various identifications with the persecutors which constitute a defence against that situation and its consequences. Only now, with these identifications, does the sadism properly speaking (as distinguished from the aggressive reactions) appear to 'set in' as a tendency; it seems to correspond to the 'setting in' (fixation) of the primary paranoid situation as an internal situation. The fact that the 'primary manic tendencies' are the expression of such identifications with persecutors is best shown by the examples of the 'spider' (page 228) and of the 'horse' (page 232) as *ego-imagos* of Peter.

The destruction of the objects, which is the result both of the immediate aggressive reactions and of the identifications with the persecutors, brings on depression and persecutory anxieties. As a defence against these situations there predominates in Peter—who is subject, above all, to paranoid situations—a new introjection of the persecutor (now 'in the superego') and the attack against the 'bad ego'. An expressive illustration of all this is found in a succession of associations in which the same 'manic



impulses' appear in a double aspect, first as a 'secondary mania' (as liberation from the secondary persecution by means of autodestruction) and then as 'primary mania' (coitus which is to destroy). At one session Peter complains that he always does what he must and not what he would like to do. To my question, 'What would you do if you did what you wished?', Peter answers spontaneously, "I would throw myself from the balcony." Then he goes on, "I want to throw myself from the balcony to escape from a persecution, a mental torture. Death is rest, I would not think any more." Then I ask him why he chooses throwing himself from the balcony as his means of seeking death. Peter associates, "Perhaps because of the fear of the fall. To escape from duty. It would be falling into vice without suffering the punishment. Because in this same act would be the punishment; but a very lenient punishment. It would be death. Perhaps it would be coitus. The fall would be ejaculation. It would be a way of seeking satisfaction in coitus without fearing punishment, without fear of awakening to a different reality: without finding myself confronted with the hatred of a woman, my mother, whom I had killed by slashing her flesh. In suicide there is satisfaction without punishment. Perhaps it is entering my mother's vagina once more. To return to the place I had come from. It would be the only way of truly going back to the vagina. It would be receiving the mother, but in a passive way, without harming her, and I would be quieted." In this fantasy there fundamentally appears, then, the oedipal desire as primary manic situation (coitus = kill the frustrating mother), the consequent secondary depressive and paranoid anxieties (fears "of harming her", "of the fall", "of a woman's hatred") and the defence against this "persecution" by means of identification with the persecuting object and the realization of suicide (= coitus; secondary manic situation).

On the genital level the other frustrator is the father. In this aspect—so well known—I only wish to stress the fact that the boy's desire to castrate and kill his father is equally the expression of an identification with the oedipal father who castrates and kills the child, it might be said, by his mere existence. As Peter's associations show (page 235), he already experiences the castration in the genital frustration itself (from which the primal scene fantasy arises) and in his real genital inferiority as compared with his father. Analogously, Peter experiences in a transference fantasy that his own coitus with the mother *in itself* destroys the father. Identification with the potent, i.e. castrating father (that is to say, the inversion of the basic depressive-paranoid situation) was especially clear in his desire, and fear, of putting me in the situation of the excluded and 'injured third party' (Freud). Peter's inhibition in finding a sexual partner and his impotence are related with this meaning of coitus, which involves the primary manic situation and with that, too, the

secondary depressive and paranoid situation. "If I had sexual intercourse," says Peter, "it would be the end of the analysis: I would be independent and *would laugh at you*. . . . I should not pay you any more and you would be angry with me." Already in these words something of the manic significance of that identification with the castrating father can be seen, an identification which consists in having sexual relations: Peter's 'laughter'—the 'manic' situation—also reproduces the parents' laughter in the primal scene, which Peter lives as a mockery against him. In the anger he thinks it produces in the father-analyst can be seen one of the dangers which such identification entails (secondary paranoid situation). I have mentioned above that Peter, in having sexual relations, is killing the analyst in fantasy whom he at the same time loves (secondary depressive situation). In another stratum he runs the risk, for the same reason, of being abandoned by the analyst-father (superego depression). Similarly, success in business means for him inversion of the primary paranoid situation, inversion which on the one hand contains the manic experience but on the other hand leads to suffering over the defeated father, that is, to the secondary depressive situation. This was seen, for example, when one of the (rival) chiefs was eliminated, with Peter's acquiescence, from the business. It also produced fantasies referring to the loser's revengeful hatred (secondary paranoid situation).

Peter's impotence (and its equivalents) has the meaning, then, of (i) protecting himself against the danger of his becoming, through genital desire or loving, the victim of frustrations which are lived as coming from the parents' sadism and which are objectively the result of the interplay of real frustration and primary masochism (primary depressive-paranoid situation); (ii) protecting the parents from becoming the victim of Peter's sadism, springing from his (primary manic) identification with the persecuting objects and protecting himself in this manner from the secondary depression, and (iii) protecting himself against the danger of becoming a victim of the parents' vengeance (secondary paranoid situation). In the first and third strata the penis appears, at bottom, as the breast and the vagina as the mouth that devours and bites; in the second stratum the penis appears as the mouth, and the vagina as the breast.

There now arises the question of what mechanisms are used by Peter to protect himself from these anxieties or, in other words, of what is the process leading from these anxieties to the impotence or to the asthma, which is derived from the same danger situations. I have quoted above a series of Peter's associations referring to his suicide fantasies. These also show the *secondary manic situation* which represents one of the principal mechanisms that is to protect him against his 'secondary depressive situation' and (more directly) against his 'secondary







and takes the ego (primary persecutor) as an object of his impulses, while in the superego *depression stratum* Peter feels identified—if this expression is allowed—with the ego, and the object is the superego. Which of the two experiences preponderates very likely depends on the intensity of the preceding dissociations. The more intense these and therefore the paranoid experiences are, the more intense later will the manic element be.

## VI

Upon the object-imagos of the secondary depressive and paranoid situations there seem to be superposed little by little the 'real' imagos of the parents; instead of the objects that are destroyed and wish to destroy, that suffer and retaliate, the parents who forbid (and allow), who punish (and reward), are gradually perceived and introjected as such in the superego. In its deepest aspect, the superego is the injured (original) ego that pursues ('accuses') the 'bad object' which has been introjected in the ego, such as Freud describes it in *Mourning and Melancholia*. Thus the superego is the victim that executed his vengeance and 'accusation', just as the ego reacted in the primary paranoid-depressive situations in face of the frustrations the objects caused it to suffer.

These two aspects of his inner objects (the 'moral' and the 'pre-moral') appear in numerous expressions in Peter's material. Thus, for instance, his oral sadism (that is, one of the expressions of his 'primary manic impulses') is sometimes avenged in fantasy with the same impulses on the part of the object, whilst at other times the latter reacts with rejection and abandonment. In the second case the rejection has frequently a 'moral' character; in the first case one id answers another id. In both cases the imago of the object is the result of the projection of the superego, either from a superficial level or from a deeper one. As a rule, all the 'secondary' situations are overlaid by the corresponding moral superego situations: the secondary depressive situation, in which there predominates the affect (Peter's grief over the destroyed loved objects), is overlaid by the superego depression in which predominates the moral principle, the successor of the ambivalent affect (2) (Peter's "duty"); the secondary paranoid situation (in which the parents wish to kill Peter) is overlaid by the superego paranoia (in which "everybody points at me"). Likewise the 'secondary mania', for example, Peter's suicide fantasy was at the same time a 'superego-mania'. We have already seen the 'moral' character of this fantasy: it was "the punishment for the crime" (and not only liberation from the persecutors). By uniting in the suicide crime and punishment "both at a time", Peter not only spares himself the anxiety of waiting for punishment and thus escapes from the *superego paranoia*, but also demonstrates that he himself is the victim. Thus he denies that he is the

victimizer, *incriminates* the objects and becomes their creditor (*superego-mania*).

All his sufferings—all the expressions of his moral masochism—have likewise, in one aspect, the significance of a 'superego-mania', that is to say, of an identification with the superego, i.e. with the attacked and persecuting object, whereby the preceding situation, the superego-paranoia, is inverted. In this way Peter frees himself from the persecutor and triumphs over him, outside (projected) and, at the same time, inside (introjected in the ego). The asthma, for example, appears the moment his 'primary manic' impulses and fantasies are mobilized, by which Peter runs the risk of being absorbed and killed by the 'secondary persecutor'. But this persecutor is at the same time the accusing moral superego. Through suffering Peter not only seeks to expiate but also to *invert* and *deny* the guilt (the object is guilty and not Peter), and thus dominate the object. This was manifested, for example, in Peter's one day having the impression of the failure of these manic purposes in the transference: "I wanted you to worry about me, to have guilt feelings if things go wrong with me, if I didn't find a wife, if I have asthma; and now I see you are completely indifferent. . . . You're a wretch who doesn't even deserve my having asthma!"

In one plane Peter lets himself be stifled in a masochistic defence by the object introjected into the superego. At the same time he controls and manages this object (within his superego and projected) by means of his illness, and his reproaches are a concealed 'justicealized' execution of his 'primary manic impulses'. Besides, on a deeper plane, the object is introjected into the ego (in his bronchi) and it is Peter who, from his superego, attacks the object. Finally, the suffering is a manoeuvre so as to be able to satisfy the primary manic impulses "later" (he lets himself be eaten in part in order to be able to eat later himself), and has, then, also in this sense a 'manic' significance. One day when Peter sees the hope of a certain sexual adventure frustrated, he exclaims: "With my asthma these days I have paid a tribute in order to be able to allow myself the sexual relations later. Now I am like someone who has paid for his ticket and then cannot take the train."

To sum up: all the expressions of his 'masochistic submission to the superego' are based on the introjection of the attacked and persecuting object 'in the superego' and its subsequent introjection in the ego. In this way the ego becomes attacked and persecuting. On a deeper plane this ego is the 'primary persecutor', i.e. at bottom, the same object as was later attacked. As is well known, the secondary masochism contains, on the one hand—in the 'depressive plane'—the desire to protect, recover, and even restore the object through the turning of the aggression against the ego, tends to the expiation of guilt, etc. On the other hand—in the *paranoid-manic plane*—we find the following meanings:



(a) In so far as it is a question of the (re-)introjection of the secondary persecutor (or of the projected superego) in the superego the subject tries to free himself from him and to control him (by doing himself what the other wished, and anticipating him) which at the same time represents a triumph and a mockery over him. The execution of the self-attack also represents a realization of the 'manic impulses' against the object (primary persecutor) introjected in the ego.

(b) In so far as it is a question of the (later) introjection of the attacked object (superego) in the ego, his own manic impulses are denied, the 'bad object' is outside, which permits at the same time a certain realization of the manic impulses against it ('afterwards', through having made advance payment for them); this realization may take place in an uninhibited instinctive plane or as an accusation against the object, which may represent a 'justice-alized' sadistic act.

Summing up Peter's clinical picture and relating it with the instinct theory, three levels can be dis-

tinguished: at bottom, the 'primary depressive-paranoid situation' which corresponds to the primary masochism; then the 'primary manic situation' which corresponds to the (reactive) sadism (the deflected primary masochism); and finally—in defence against the consequent 'secondary and superego depressive and paranoid situations'—the 'secondary and superego manic situations' which correspond to the secondary masochism, in one of its aspects. I refer to the 'paranoid aspect' of the secondary masochism, i.e. to the search for suffering in order to escape from a persecution, this being carried out through the identification with the 'secondary persecutor' or with the superego persecutor. The other aspect of the secondary masochism, its 'depressive aspect', consists in the search for suffering in order to keep and preserve the object, this being carried out through the identification with the victim or with the persecuted object as is inherent in the 'secondary depressive situation' and in the 'superego depression'.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) FREUD, A. (1936). *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence*.
- (2) FREUD, S. (1923). *Totem and Taboo*.
- (3) — (1917). *Mourning and Melancholia*.
- (4) — (1920). *Beyond the Pleasure Principle*.
- (5) — (1922). *On some Neurotic Mechanisms in Jealousy, Paranoia and Homosexuality*.
- (6) KLEIN, M. *The Psycho-Analysis of Children*. (London, 1932).
- (7) — (1935). 'A Contribution to the Psychogenesis of Manic-Depressive States', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 16.
- (8) — (1940). 'Mourning and its Relation to Manic-Depressive States', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 21.
- (9) — (1948). 'On the Theory of Anxiety and Guilt', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 29.
- (10) RACKER, H. (1948). 'Sobre un caso de impotencia, asma y conducta masoquística', *Revista de Psicoanálisis*, 5.
- (11) — (1953). 'On Music', *Yearbook of Psychoanalysis*, 9.

(Received 31 January, 1956.)

# 'R'—THE ANALYST'S TOTAL RESPONSE TO HIS PATIENT'S NEEDS<sup>1</sup>

By

MARGARET LITTLE, LONDON

- I. Introduction.
- II. The Symbol 'R'.
- III. Definition of 'Total Response': 'Needs.'
- IV. Responsibility. Commitment. Feeling. Limits. 'Going all out.'
- V. Manifestation of the Analyst as a Person.
- VI. Clinical Material.
- VII. Implications for Technique.
- VIII. Summing-up.

## I. INTRODUCTION

This paper contains a number of themes each of which requires a paper to itself. In considering them together in their relatedness I am having to condense, and am risking being misunderstood, owing to the inevitable distortion and loss of clarity; at the same time I am making the one paper long and weighty. I hope to do more justice to my themes later, when I can develop them further separately.

The ideas that I am putting forward follow on from those expressed in my previous paper, 'Counter-Transference and the Patient's Response to it'. They have come to me both through analyses of my patients and through my own analysis. I will illustrate them with some material from the analysis of one patient in particular.

Most of the patients I have analysed come into the category known as 'psychopaths' and 'character disorders', some of them being quite seriously ill and disturbed people, with a great deal of psychotic anxiety. Although much of what I have to say seems to apply mostly to patients of this kind, I do not think it is in any way limited to them, but can also apply to both neurotic and psychotic patients.

## II. THE SYMBOL 'R'

In my previous paper I tried to find an agreed definition of 'counter-transference', and found that 'The term is used to mean any or all of the following:

- (a) The analyst's unconscious attitude to the patient.
- (b) Repressed elements, hitherto unanalysed, in the analyst himself which attach to the patient in the same way as the patient "transfers" to the analyst affects, etc., belonging to his parents or to the objects of his childhood; i.e. the analyst regards the patient (temporarily and varyingly) as he regarded his own parents.
- (c) Some specific attitude or mechanism with which the analyst meets the patient's transference.
- (d) The whole of the analyst's attitudes and behaviour towards his patient. This includes all the others, and any conscious attitudes as well.'

Humpty Dumpty said: 'When I use a word it means just what I choose it to mean—neither more nor less', and when Alice questioned whether you *can* make words mean so many different things, he replied 'The question is, which is to be Master—that's all.' Our difficulty here is to get one word not to mean as many different things as there are people using it.

Besides the confusion between these various meanings the term 'counter-transference' has also come to be invested with an emotional charge, which makes discussion difficult. It is obviously impossible to avoid either the confusion or the emotional charge altogether, but to reduce both to a minimum I am introducing

<sup>1</sup> Enlarged from a paper given at a Scientific Meeting of the British Psycho-Analytical Society on 18 January, 1956.



a symbol, *R*, to denote what I am talking about, defining it as '*the analyst's total response to his patient's needs, whatever the needs, and whatever the response.*'

*R*, then, includes all that is conscious, and all that is unconscious, what is unconscious consisting of what is repressed (whether normally or pathologically), and much besides that has never been conscious. In other words, it includes things belonging both to the analyst's ego, his superego, and his id. It corresponds to the fourth of the definitions quoted above.

I will use the word 'counter-transference' only to denote the second of these definitions, and it will be seen that 'counter-transference' is then *part*, only, of what I have called *R*.

### III. DEFINITION OF 'TOTAL RESPONSE': 'NEEDS'

#### (a) 'Total Response'

In using the expression 'total response' I have deliberately chosen an omnibus word, and I want to make my position clear about it. I am using it to cover everything that an analyst says, does, thinks, imagines, or feels, throughout the analysis, in relation to his patient.

Every patient who comes for analysis has certain needs, and to these his analyst responds in a variety of ways. The response is inevitable, and valuable; it is an indispensable part of the analysis, providing a large share of its driving force. It is the resultant of the balance, interplay, and fusion between the analyst's love for his patient and his hate of him.

What an analyst says and does in the analysis of patients is frequently separated out into 'interpretation' and 'behaviour' with the belief that only 'interpretation' is of any real use to the patient. Such a separation in itself is false, for the giving of an interpretation is in fact a piece of behaviour, as are its form, timing, etc. These are no less matters of behaviour than are the analyst's shaking hands with the patient, or not shaking hands, the conditions he provides (both for the patient and for himself), his silence, listening, reacting, or not reacting.

All these things are the outcome of his feelings, whether conscious or unconscious. However much he is aware of, there is always far more that is unconscious, which exerts more dynamic pressure than that exerted by what is conscious.

Limitations can be imposed to make the amount of interpretation maximal and of other kinds of behaviour minimal, but too great limitation leads to rigidity and stereotypy.

Limitations cannot be absolute, or standardized. It would not be desirable even if they could, as it would only too soon involve the negation of a basic principle—that of the value of the individual (both to himself and to society) whether that individual be the analyst or the patient.

#### (b) 'Needs'

'Needs' in this context is another omnibus word, also deliberately chosen. The ultimate need in every case, of course, is the gaining of insight with growing appreciation and apprehension of reality. But on the way to this many of these severely ill patients have other needs which have to be met; if they are not met analysis becomes impossible. The most obvious is hospitalization, but short of this there are many times when an analyst has to intervene; arrangements for care by the family doctor, control of sedative drugs, contacts with relatives or friends, control of acting out (often necessary for the patient's safety), all these may be needed, apart from the ordinary routine fixing of the conditions for the analysis such as money arrangements, times of appointment, and, of course, the initial choice of patient.

Without these things, in many cases no amount of understanding or of careful and accurate interpretation will make it possible for the analysis to be carried through. With them it may be possible, even though they may be felt by both patient and analyst as interfering and delaying; only the outcome of the analysis will show whether they really were so or not.

### IV. RESPONSIBILITY; COMMITMENT; FEELING; LIMITS; 'GOING ALL OUT'

#### (a) *The Analyst's Responsibility*

Responsibility in analysis is not a simple thing; the analyst has not only a responsibility to his patient. He has also a responsibility to himself, to psycho-analysis, and to the community. There are many responsibilities which his patient or society would like to put on him, but there are also limits to his responsibility.

For the whole of his response to his patient's needs the analyst's responsibility is 100 per cent. I have considered this statement carefully, to see whether it should be qualified or modified in any way, and cannot find that it should. The analyst's words, ideas, feelings, actions, and reactions; his decisions, his dreams, his associations, are all his own, and he must take responsibility for them even though they arise from

unconscious processes. No responsibility for them can be shared with anyone else, nor can they be delegated in any way. This seems to me to be true, unvaryingly, for every analysis.

What does vary comes within that 100 per cent responsibility; i.e. the extent to which the responsibility can be delegated or shared, and to or with whom. The decision when to delegate it, and how, are still the analyst's responsibility.

There are roughly three classes of patient, the outlines of the classes being ill-defined and variable; any one patient at different stages of the analysis may pass from one to another.

(i) Frankly psychotic patients, for whom responsibility has to be delegated to other people—doctors, nursing staff, relatives, etc.—for purely practical reasons. Suicide risk, danger to others, general irresponsibility and violent acting out are the commonest reasons.

In these cases the strain is largely carried by the patient's environment and so can be lifted temporarily from the analyst.

(ii) Plainly neurotic patients, where responsibility can be delegated to the patient himself. This depends on the presence of an intact ego and a good reality sense, for the taking of responsibility is one of the highest functions of the ego, and is closely related to stability.

These cases are least strain for an analyst, as the patient bears his own strain to a large extent. But it is important that both analyst and patient recognize that there is this sharing or delegation of responsibility, and that the ultimate responsibility throughout the analysis is on the analyst. A time comes in every analysis when the patient needs to bear his own strains, and to take over responsibility for himself, but he needs to understand what is happening, and why. In any case, owing to the conditions in which we work some such sharing or delegation is unavoidable.

(iii) Between these two groups there lies the large group of 'character disorders', 'psychopaths', and 'borderline psychotics', for all of whom any kind of delegation is extremely difficult and often impossible. It can be done temporarily as in either of the other groups, but usually only to a limited extent.

In this class of patient the therapist's responsibility can be seen most clearly, and the 'management' of the case is of great importance. This is the type of case which puts perhaps the greatest and most continuous strain on the analyst himself, for the very reason that delegation is so difficult. Patients in each of the other groups

involve it in certain phases of treatment, especially transition phases—e.g. when a psychotic leaves the mental hospital, or a neurotic is in a temporary regressed state.

There are limits to the responsibility of the analyst: no human being can carry more than a certain amount of it. It is worth while remembering that no one is under obligation to do analytic work unless he chooses, and no analyst is compelled to take on very disturbed patients. He has the right to refuse to undertake an analysis in conditions which he considers unsuitable or unsafe, and to refuse to continue if the conditions are changed for any reason after the analysis has begun.

Two other self-evident things are often forgotten, even by analysts. No analyst has to attempt the impossible and he does not have to have 100 per cent ability to understand or interpret; even in a long analysis there will be many things left at the end, un-understood by either patient or analyst.

Every patient needs at some point in the analysis to become aware of the responsibility which the analyst is taking (whether that includes the responsibility for his life, or his acting out, or not); and it is surprising how few patients have any idea that the analyst takes any real responsibility whatever in regard to them. Various writers, from Freud and Ferenczi onwards, have described the way in which the patient uses the analyst as an ego; Phyllis Greenacre puts it: 'The analyst acts like an extra function, or set of functions which is lent to the analysand for the latter's temporary use and benefit.' I think this is as true of the responsibility-function of the analyst as of anything. Stability in the analysis depends upon it, and the patient's ultimate capacity for taking his own responsibilities depends on his having a reliably responsible person with whom to identify.

#### (b) *Commitment*

The taking of responsibility involves first of all the making of an accurate assessment of the patient, as regards both superficial levels and deeper ones. This does not, of course, mean immediate recognition of all that the deeper levels contain, but that they are there, and to what extent they are contributing to the success or failure of his life and relationships, i.e. to what extent and in what kind of way he is disturbed. This knowledge has to be gradually increased, widened, and deepened until the



patient is as fully known as possible. It means, in effect, recognition of the patient *as an individual*, a person; the realities of his childhood and his present life need to be understood, as well as his fantasies. The analyst both enters and becomes part of the patient's inner world, and remains outside it and separate from it.

To do this involves a willingness to commit oneself—100 per cent at times. It is only possible to the extent to which the analyst is able to be a person himself, i.e. to have an outline, or limits, and to be able to bear loss of outline or fusion; that is, his capacity for making identifications and remaining uninvolved.

The analyst's commitment of himself is quite obvious in some respects; he undertakes to give the patient at and over certain agreed times his attention, his interest, his energy; all within the ordinary limits of human capacity. He stands committed to his words and decisions, his mistakes and failures as well as his successes.

There are occasionally other kinds of commitment which are unavoidable; I have had to give evidence, on oath, in a court of law, in the patient's hearing. This does not happen often, fortunately, but commitment of this kind occurs in cases where acting out brings the patient into conflict with the outer world, which then takes action against him. It serves to demonstrate clearly the 100 per cent degree of the commitment.

It is difficult to express what I mean by this 100 per cent commitment, beyond these more obvious things, in such a way as to make it understandable. Most analysts feel that these things are not the limits of their commitment, but I have not found a complete definition or description of it.

Freud spoke of 'evenly hovering attention', and it may be that I am really only speaking of the kind and degree of attention involved when I say that the analyst puts both what is conscious and what is unconscious in himself at his patient's service.

These have to be made available to the patient in forms that have meaning for him, and that he can use. These forms may be verbal or non-verbal. The patient's capacity for symbolization and for deductive thinking largely determine this, and these depend on what has happened to him in his early development. Different patients may need different forms, and for any one patient a form that is usable and meaningful at one time may be useless at another.

Ultimately, of course, the form has to be verbal and interpretative, but an object (apple, biscuit, rug, etc.), as Mme. Sechehaye has shown, can have an effect *like* that of an interpretation, and can be linked with verbal interpretations later, when the capacity to use symbols has been developed far enough.

The full implication of this is that the analyst goes with the patient as far into the patient's illness as it is possible for him to go. There may have to be times—moments or split seconds even—when, psychically, for the analyst nothing exists but the patient, and nothing exists of him apart from the patient. He allows the patient to enter his own inner world and become part of it. His whole psyche becomes liable to be subjected to sudden unheralded inroads, often of vast extent and long duration. He is taken possession of, his emotions are exploited; he has to be able to make all kinds of identifications with his patient, accepting a fusion with him which often involves the taking in to himself of something really mad; and *at the same time* he has to be able to remain whole and separate.

Unless the analyst is willing to commit himself, and makes that commitment clear, it is often quite impossible for a patient to commit himself to his analysis. To commit oneself means to give something, and to waive one's rights. Very deprived people cannot give anything, until they have first been given something; neither do they believe that they have any rights. It has to be made clear to them that something *is* given, that it is given willingly, and that it is part of the analysis for it to be given and, therefore, they have a right to have it.

What is given is not given out of the analyst's need to give, but out of the situation where person-with-something-to-spare meets person-with-need. It is essential that the analyst fully admits that what is 'to spare' and is given is limited; it is of the nature of a 'token' or a 'stand-in', and does not in fact really fit the patient's need (though the more nearly it can fit the better), as the deepest needs cannot really be met except by enlargement of insight and grasp of reality.

### (c) *Feeling*

This commitment, whatever its range, involves feeling. The analyst has to be willing to feel, about his patient, with his patient, and sometimes even for his patient, in the sense of supplying feelings which the patient is unable to find in himself, and in the absence of which no real

change can happen. This is so where change is feared, and the situation is controlled by the patient keeping his feelings unfelt—i.e. unconscious.

The analyst's real feeling for the patient, and his desire to help (there has to be some feeling, whether we call it sympathy, compassion, or interest, to prompt the starting and continuing of the analysis), these need to be expressed clearly and explicitly at times when they are appropriate and are actually felt, and can therefore come spontaneously and sincerely.

Very disturbed patients, and at times even less disturbed ones, cannot make accurate deductions, so that leaving these things to be deduced, or even talking about them, is meaningless; there needs to be some actual direct expression as and when (but *not* whenever) they occur. In *The House of the Dead* Dostoevsky says, 'The impression made by the reality is always stronger than that made by description', and I have found this to be particularly true in this connexion. Pretended feeling would be worse than useless, but absolute restraint of intense feeling is of no real use either—it is inhuman, and it gives a false idea of the aim of analysis to enable the patient to have and express his own feelings. It gives the impression that expression of feeling is something allowed only to children or patients, but forbidden in a 'normal' or grown-up world.

From the point of view of the analyst absolute restraint of feeling is unreal, and it can make too great a demand on him. Self-imposed limitation there must be, but this is not the same thing as absolute restraint; there is no difficulty with less intense feelings which can find their expression comparatively easily in indirect ways.

I have been talking rather of the conscious expression of feeling, whether deliberately predetermined, or on conscious impulse. 'Reacting' is something different. There are times when a reaction of quite a primitive type is not only not bad, but positively helpful. When an angry patient shakes his fist in my face, and I flinch, the reaction is in itself a reminder of reality; it quickly recalls him both to the fact that he could actually damage me and that I am only on one level the person he wants to hurt. Other reactions, not only bodily ones, can on occasion have similar effect and are not altogether to be despised; they can sometimes reach the ego in ways that are closed to interpretation, quite apart from the time factor of their speed.

It has been objected that expression of feelings by the analyst either gives too great gratification, or is a burden to the patient. In my experience, neither of these things *need* be so, though of course they *can*. Provided the necessary identification with, and separateness from, the patient are working right, such expressions of feeling tend to happen at the right times. If they are not, then any other way of treating the situation is also liable to make for difficulty.

Reactions, or expressions of the analyst's feelings, however, are not substitutes for interpretation, although they may in certain circumstances act like them. They open the way for interpretation by making the patient accessible, i.e. by establishing contact in a fresh area which has hitherto not been reached. Interpretations have to be given as well later when they can be used, otherwise the only change achieved is that of opening the way, and if interpretation does not follow it closes again, and resistance is increased.

Having one's feelings available to this extent is at times a very great strain. To feel real hate of a patient for weeks on end, or to be suddenly flooded with rage, is extremely painful, as it is accompanied by guilt; and it makes little difference whether the feelings are due to the patient's projections or whether they are objective and called forth by the patient's actual behaviour. Real damage can be done if they remain unconscious, but there is little danger if they become conscious. Recognition of them alone brings some relief, and the possibility of either direct or indirect expression. Dreams are often helpful in finding the unconscious, disallowed love or hate of one's patient.

Guilt or self-consciousness about these feelings for a patient can lead to both stereotyping, and a false separating off of 'the analyst' from the rest of the person (splitting, in other words, where it is not appropriate), with results that can be dangerous for very ill patients.

The range of feelings that can be aroused, of course, is enormous. I have spoken of rage and hate, but these follow such things as bewilderment or confusion, incomprehension, fear (of being attacked, that the patient will kill himself, of failure, etc.), guilt. Love, excitement, and pleasure can be as difficult; when a patient at last accepts an interpretation, or makes real progress; even, when from hating violently his mood and feeling change to something more friendly, a sign of relief may help him to become aware of a change which otherwise he might



deny and not recognize, and also may help him to know something of what he is arousing in someone else—again something which he would otherwise be unable to believe.

Like responsibility and commitment, feelings for a patient have their limits. The claims of other patients and of one's own life assert themselves, the material changes, and the feelings change. Unless an analyst is 'in love' with his patient there is no real risk of his feelings getting fixed, or of his having to go on and on expressing them, which is what people fear if any feeling is expressed at all.

The benefit to the patient, too, is limited in its extent. Sooner or later he has to realize that no one else can do his loving and hating for him, he has to feel on his own account and to take over the responsibility for it. But meanwhile he has had a feeling person there, and the opportunity to identify with him, both by projecting his own un-feelingness and finding the projection, and by introjecting the feeling analyst.

(d) *Limits; 'Going All Out'*

I have shown that responsibility, commitment, and feeling all have their limits; these will, of course, vary with the different types of patient treated and the individual analyst. They are of great importance as they provide points of separation.

When a limit is reached and the patient becomes aware of it, and aware of the impossibility of going beyond it even though his needs and demands go further, he becomes aware too of his separateness. If his ability to bear separation is very small, then every limit will be reached too soon, and the demand on his ego will be too great and a reaction of some kind (e.g. a piece of violent acting out, or the development of a physical illness) may follow unless the situation is very carefully handled. Limits which are within the ego's capacity, whose logic and reality are within his grasp, provide growing points and places where the ego can be strengthened.

In contrast with the limits are the 100 per cent of the responsibility, commitment, and acceptance of feeling and reaction. They correspond to the 'no-limits' of ideas and words allowed to the patient and help to make them a reality.

Some patients are so ill that their treatment cannot succeed without the expenditure of enormous effort, both extensive and intensive; in such cases the difficulty is always to get the patient to make his own effort an 'all out' one,

and it is only if he realizes that his analyst is 'going all out' on his behalf that he can find it worth while to do so himself.

V. MANIFESTATION OF THE ANALYST AS A PERSON

Each of these things, responsibility, commitment, feeling, etc., carries with it a *manifestation or affirmation of the analyst's self as a person*, a living human being with whom it is possible to have contact and relationship.

The idea of the impersonal screen or mirror has served, and still serves, a very valuable purpose in isolating the transference in neurotic patients. But it can be used defensively, even in an almost concrete, non-symbolic way at times, by either patient or analyst.

For patients dealing with psychotic anxieties, and especially those suffering from actual psychotic illness, some more direct contact with the analyst is necessary. Symbolism and deductive thinking are needed where direct contact is minimized, and both of these are defective or lacking in such patients. Their development is impaired where the realities of the patient's childhood have coincided with the phantasies which he needed to work through. When this happens projection becomes not only useless, but quite impossible.

Every patient tests his analyst constantly to find out his weak spots and limitations. He has to find out whether the same thing is true of the analyst as of himself—i.e. that the relation of ego strength to instinct-tension is inadequate. If he can prove that his analyst cannot stand anxiety, madness, helplessness either in his patient or himself—then he knows for certain that what he feels must be true; the world will fall to pieces and be shattered by his discharge of tension, whatever the form it takes; and again, since he and his analyst are the same, then they must be one and indivisible.

It is therefore of vital importance to discover that the analyst not only can bear both tension and its discharge, but that he can bear the fact that there are some things he *cannot* stand. The difference between anxiety and panic, and the difference between his own anxiety and fear of his patient's anxiety, can be seen when the analyst can fall, pick himself up, and go on again. This is where recognition of counter-transference in the literal sense of the word (second definition) is of greatest importance. It may be necessary for it to be recognized by both patient and



analyst, and denial of it by the analyst where it is present and the patient has seen it can have serious results. (Simple admission of it is enough; details are the analyst's own affair, but that there is counter-transference affecting the analysis is the patient's affair and he has the right to the acknowledgement.)

Every analyst, of course, has his own particular areas of difficulty about letting things happen, especially in himself. This relates to the whole problem of control, but it may be essential for some patients to see their analyst react or act on impulse. Remembering the biological origin of both reaction to stimulus and instinctual impulse, and that not all ego activity is immediately conscious, I think it is a mistake to regard either as intrinsically undesirable or dangerous even in an analyst's work. In any case, when an analysis is moving swiftly, and ideas follow each other in rapid succession, or mechanisms are changing, it is impossible to be always a step ahead of the patient, or always to think before speaking or acting. One finds one has said something. If the unconscious contact with the patient is good, what is said in this way usually turns out to have been right. Unconscious counter-transference is the thing that is most likely to prompt a wrong response, and the only safeguard against that is the analyst's continuous self-analysis.

The effect on the ego of conscious recognition of one or other of these things in an actual known person (as distinct from either a machine or a 'type') is to make it accessible to transference interpretations, and to other recognitions of reality. I have often found such a recognition to be a turning-point in an analysis. By means of them a human being is discovered, taken in, imaginatively eaten, digested and absorbed, and built up into the ego (not magically introjected); a person who can take responsibility, commit himself, feel and express feeling spontaneously, who can bear tension, limitation, failure, or satisfaction and success.

The patient is enabled to commit himself to his analysis; his paranoid anxiety is relieved *in a direct way*, and transference interpretations can come to mean something to him. He begins to be able to meet reality and to deal with real people instead of with his phantasms. The development of relationship becomes a possibility, with its need for bearing both fusion and separateness, and the risk of feelings being aroused in another person, or by another person.

## VI. CLINICAL MATERIAL

The material which I am using to illustrate my points consists of half a dozen episodes from an analysis. This involves compressing into the space of ten minutes things which belong to ten years; it can only give a very distorted picture, and I am aware that it is only understandable to a very limited extent.

The condensation of ten years into ten minutes is in fact quite appropriate, for my patient, Frieda, has been disorientated in time throughout the analysis, and she has used time in ways that are personal to her, and that cannot be readily understood. This disorientation has been her main regressive feature; she has had no regressive illness, and very little obvious regression in the sessions.

She was referred to me for stealing, though she did not mention it to me for over a year. She talked instead of her difficulties with her husband and children; she also had a skin rash, affecting chiefly her face, vulva, and the inner surfaces of the thighs.

Apart from her husband and me, only one of her acquaintances knew about the stealing; this was a psychiatric social worker who happened to be there when a detective came to question her. This woman saw the detective with her, arranged for the stolen things to be returned, and for Frieda to seek psychiatric help.

Frieda's childhood in Germany had been a very traumatic one. Her parents were Jewish. Her father was a very brilliant man, but vain, selfish, and megalomaniac. His magical belief that no ill could befall him led to his remaining behind when all his family emigrated, and eventually to his death in a concentration camp. Her mother is still alive—possessive to the last degree, mean, prudish, and insincere. She quarrelled with her own relatives for thirty years, and then with her husband, breaking up the marriage. She reviles him to her children, and now speaks of the marriage as always an unhappy one. She enjoys quarrelling for the sake of sentimental reconciliations.

Both parents exploited their children. Frieda was made to be responsible for the younger ones; she was expected to wait on her father, forced to do things which she might have done of her own accord, if left alone, for she was very fond of him. In return for the mother's compelling her in this way her father would punish any revolt or shortcoming by beating her with his riding crop, especially when she obstinately refused to say she was sorry for disobeying her mother. Her mother punished her by hitting her, dragging her upstairs by her long hair, and locking her in the dark broom cupboard. When she was about four years old she was 'cured' of masturbation by being put into a cold bath for fifteen minutes at a time.

Her mother never forgot her crimes, even when they had been punished, atoned for, and ostensibly forgiven; they are kept in 'cold storage' and



brought out twenty years later, in all their original intensity. She still tries to exploit Frieda emotionally.

This picture of the parents came out slowly. At first they were described as loving, ordinary people, and it was with great surprise that Frieda found she had this other picture hidden away.

Frieda was the eldest child; she was a disappointment to her parents, who wanted a son, to be called Friedl, after the father. She was breast fed for a few days only, as the milk 'dried up' when her father joked to his wife about the child resembling a friend of his rather than himself.

At school she was unhappy, being often withdrawn, confused, and in a dream state. At one school she was made the subject of a lecture from the headmaster, in front of all the staff and pupils, for taking pieces of bread to school and eating them under the desk. After leaving school she had several sexual adventures and finally married a Russian and came to England.

Her friends found her capable, gifted, cultured, generous, and warm-hearted. She is all of these, but behind a façade there was a deeply unhappy, wildly impetuous and impatient child, who could bear neither tension nor separation. Her children were extensions of her own body, as she had been of her mother's, and were unconsciously exploited as she had been.

The stealing gradually appeared as part of a much larger pattern of impulsive behaviour which brought her into various kinds of real danger; the impulsive actions happened when there was stress of any kind.

The first seven years of her analysis were characterized by failure on my part to make the transference real to her in any way or to 'help her to discover it', as she put it later. The analysis was carried out along ordinary lines, within the limits of accepted analytic technique. Many transference interpretations were given, but they were all entirely meaningless to her. The only thing was that often she would give advice or comment to her friends and acquaintances based on things I had said, and even attributing them to me. But still they had no personal meaning for her, and the changes brought about were very slight. Her condition was certainly improved; there were fewer thefts, and her relationships were a general a lot easier. We were preparing to stop, although both of us knew that the main difficulties still remained. I could sometimes get her to see where she was transferring something to her husband or one of the children, but never to me. Her emotional attachment to her mother was unchanged, and her mourning for her father never reached.

She had told me a story of a child who penetrated into a room which was forbidden, and guarded not by Bluebeard but by the Virgin Mary. The child's fingers were covered with gold which she found there, and she was punished by being cast out. My interpretations about her curiosity, whether about her own body or about me, telling her of her idea

about me as the forbidding, punishing Virgin with the hidden gold, meant nothing to her. It seemed that the key to her own locked door was lost beyond our finding.

Suddenly and dramatically the picture changed. She came one day beside herself with grief, dressed all in black, her face swollen with weeping, in real agony. Ilse had died suddenly, after an operation in Germany.

I had heard of Ilse, among many other friends; there had been nothing to distinguish her from the others. Now I found that the main part of the transference had been to her and had been kept secret, apparently because of the guilt about the homosexual feeling towards her. She had been a friend and contemporary of Frieda's parents, and had transferred her friendship to Frieda when Frieda was six years old.

For five weeks this state of acute distress continued unchanged. I showed her her guilt about Ilse's death, her anger with her, and fear of her; I showed her that she felt that Ilse had been stolen from her by me; that she was reproaching the world, her family, and me; that she wanted me to understand her grief as Ilse had understood her childhood unhappiness, and to sympathize with her.

None of this reached her; she was to all intents and purposes out of contact. Her family bore the brunt of it; she neither ate nor slept, she talked only of Ilse, who was idealized and whose photos were everywhere in the home. She saw Ilse in buses, in the street, in shops, ran after her, only to find that it was someone else. My interpretations that she wanted me magically to bring Ilse to life again and that she wanted to punish herself and her environment for her unhappiness, fell on deaf ears; nothing reached her. She could not lie down; she sat for a few minutes at a time and ranged round the room, weeping and wringing her hands.

Her life was in evident danger, either from the risk of suicide or from exhaustion; somehow I had to break through. At last I told her how painful her distress was, not only to herself and to her family, but to me. I said that no one could be near her in that state without being deeply affected; I felt sorrow with her, and for her, in her loss.

The effect of this was instantaneous, and very great. Within the hour she became calmer and cried ordinarily sadly. She began to look after her family again and a few months later had found the larger flat they had been needing for years, which up till then she had declared was impossible. In fitting it up and moving into it she found a happiness that she had never experienced before, and that has lasted and grown. Her reparative impulses came into action in a wholly new way.

I had often spoken about feelings in connexion with myself, but this had absolutely no meaning for her; only those feelings that were actually shown and expressed meant anything at all. She remembered only too clearly having told her mother that



she loved her, that she was sorry for things she had done, etc., with her tongue in her cheek; to say nothing of her mother's exaggerated expressions of a love for her father which was subsequently denied.

But I had also on two earlier occasions expressed my own feelings. The first was when I had sat listening for the hundredth time to an unending account of a quarrel with her mother about money, and also for the hundredth time had struggled to keep awake; it was boring, and as usual no interpretation would reach her, whether it was concerned with the content of her talk, the mechanisms, transference, her unconscious wishes, etc. This time I told her that I was sure that the content of her talk was not the important thing, that it was defensive, and added that I was having difficulty in staying awake as these repetitions were boring. There was a shocked and horrified silence, an outburst of aggrieved anger, and then she said she was glad I had told her. Her accounts of the quarrels were shorter and she apologized for them after that, but their meaning remained obscure. I now know that I was being to her the (dead) father whom she should have been able to tell how awful her mother was, and who should have helped her to deal in childhood with her mother's mental illness; I was also Ilse who should have been with her in all her difficulties. But if I had given this interpretation I am sure that it would only have met with the same response as all the other transference interpretations.

The second time I had been having some re-decorating done; she prided herself on knowing just how this should have been done, and had often given me advice in a very patronizing way, which I had interpreted as her wanting to control me and own my house; to tell me things instead of having me tell her. This time I had had advice all day long from one patient after another, it was the end of the day and I was tired and, instead of giving an interpretation, without thinking I said crossly 'I really don't care what you think about it.' Once again the shocked silence was followed by fury and a really sincere apology. Soon after this came the recognition that most of the good advice she gave to friends and people she met casually in the street or in shops might quite well have been resented, and that in her anxiety to control the world she was, in fact, overbearing and a busybody.

After my telling her of my feelings at the time of Ilse's death, and linking it up with those earlier times, she told me that for the first time since starting her analysis I had become a real person and that I was quite different from her mother. She had felt whenever I commented on anything she did that I was her mother, and was saying, as she had always done, 'and you are an awful person'. This I had known and had told her was a transference manifestation, but all meaning of this interpretation was denied; it, too, only meant 'and you are awful'. She called me 'Lesson 56' in the textbook. Now she could link the textbook with the women's magazines

which her mother had read and in which she found many of her fads and fancies. My feelings, being unmistakably real, were different from the counterfeited ones of her parents; they allowed her and her concerns a value which she had never had, except with Ilse. In other words, for her I had become Ilse in the moment of expressing my feelings.

From this time transference interpretations began to have meaning for her. Not only did she now often accept them when I gave them, but she frequently said 'You've told me that before, but I didn't know what it meant', and even 'I remember you saying many times . . . now I understand it,' making the application herself of something which she had previously rejected.

Soon after this, for the first time, a pattern began to show in relation to the stealing and other impulsive actions. I was able to see that they now happened only when her mother was visiting her. But they were also increasingly dangerous. One day she was run over by a car and badly hurt on her way home from analysis. I don't know how she was not killed outright. Another time a neighbour of mine asked me, 'Is that woman who runs out of your gate across the road without looking one of your patients? She's very dangerous.' Again, another day I went into a main road near my home, at a busy spot, and there was Frieda, twenty yards from a pedestrian crossing, leaping madly about among the cars, putting everyone in danger, including herself. I showed her the relation of these happenings to her mother's visits, and their suicidal and murderous character. She rejected this idea, as she rejected any idea of herself as ill, and as she had previously rejected all transference interpretations.

A few weeks later, while her mother was staying with her, she was caught travelling without paying her fare, being in a hurry and having no change. That meant being charged in the magistrate's court. I gave her a certificate, stating that she was in treatment for her impulsive behaviour and that essentially she was an honest and reliable person (which was true). This, like my expressions of feeling, made a deep impression, for I had said openly the very opposite of what her parents had said when they labelled her 'liar' and 'thief'. Her father had threatened to kill himself if he found his daughter was a thief.<sup>1a</sup>

She began to recognize her dangerous acting out, and to be afraid of it, but it still continued.

The next time her mother came she stole again, and now I said I wondered if I should not refuse to go on taking responsibility for her analysis if she had her mother there again; I had already told her several times that I considered that she was taking risks in doing so. At her mother's next visit she stole once more and I repeated what I had said.

I showed her that she had neither believed in the danger, in the reality of her illness, nor that I could have meant what I said. I assured her that I did, and that if she had her mother there again I could



not take the responsibility for her; I would interrupt her analysis.

About this time she spent several sessions telling me of the bad behaviour of a child who was visiting her. She had also told me of her little girl's disobedience, and I had asked why she could not be firm and not allow them to go on doing the same things over and over again. This was an old story, she was never able to get obedience from her children without flying into a violent rage, and frightening them into it. She let them do just what they chose, rationalizing it as being 'modern', or 'advanced', and they would stay up late at night, miss school, etc., and neither she nor her husband could do anything about it; in fact, unconsciously they encouraged it.

I asked her what would happen if I refused to let her go on telling me these stories. I was as tired of them as she was of the children's behaviour. She 'didn't know', and went on into another story. I said, 'I meant that; I'm not listening to any more of them.' She was silent, then giggled and said, 'It's *awful*. And it's *glorious*, to have you say something like that. Nobody has ever spoken to me like that before; I didn't know it could be like that. You've often told me about telling the children that I won't have them do things, but I simply didn't know how to do it.' And from then she began to be able both to accept 'no' for herself and to say it.

Now, when I told her that I would stop her analysis if she allowed her mother to come again, it reminded her of this, and of her finding it 'glorious'. For the next three days she was in a panic and confusion. When it subsided she spent some time planning how to refuse to have her mother to stay. She put her off for some weeks and then the question came up again. Would I tell her what to say? Could she let her mother come and what to say? I she would go out and sleep at a friend's house? I showed her that this was no solution and that she had to find her own way of dealing with the situation. After more panic and fury she told her mother for the first time about her analysis, and that I had forbidden the visit. This was tantamount to saying 'You are an awful person' to her mother.

Next day she had an impulse to steal apples from a neighbour's garden; just as she went to slip through the fence with her basket she stopped herself and later sent one of the children to ask for some, and was delighted and surprised to be given them.

I showed her that in seeing her mother at all she had in fact defied me, in a token way, as well as obeying me, and that her altered behaviour over the apples depended on her having been able to accept 'no' from me and to say 'no' to her mother. She had found me reliable in that I meant what I said both about this and that even if I did stop the analysis I would not be angry. She had begun to believe in the realities she had been denying. From here her feelings about her analysis changed a lot; she began really to suffer, especially at the week-

ends. One hour was not long enough, she was wanting me all the time and was living in her analysis all day long, even though she was doing her work more effectively and living her life differently. The transference became a reality for her at last.

She had difficulty in folding up the rug, in deciding whether to bring up my milk when she found the bottles on the step. These were old difficulties and she found she wanted to do quite opposite things about them; here I could show her how much of her feelings towards me had been put on to these things. She described herself as split (it was her own expression, I had not used it) and she showed me how far apart the pieces were, holding her hands about a foot apart; I reminded her that at one time part of her had been here and the other in Germany, in Ilse. She found that she wanted to look at me with 'stolen glances', and found that she had had two beliefs, one that I was her mother, the other that I was Ilse; both had been held with delusional strength and with an hallucinatory quality which she could now begin to disperse by consciously checking up with the reality. The stealing came directly into the transference, and she found herself travelling without paying her fare on her journeys to me.

About this time she came into closer contact with my hate of her than she had been before, in a way that meant something real to her. One day we had met by chance at a concert, and she found me afterwards in the musicians' room, to her great surprise: 'I didn't know *you* knew X,' she said, quite angrily, and next day discovered that she had meant 'What right have *you* to be here?' From there it became possible to show her (as I had often tried to do) how she had been trying magically to control me, and to have me with her everywhere. Much of her concert-going had been to go with me, and actually finding me there in reality had disturbed her fantasy. I showed her, too, what it would have meant *for me* to have met her often, to have come up against her possessiveness in that setting, for in her idea of herself, expressed in her behaviour and previous talk, she owned not only me, but all the concert halls—artists and composers as well.

Her recognition of her omnipotent fantasy led on to the realization that she had been expecting something unattainable and magical from her analysis. She had believed that it would make her husband, children, mother, brothers, and sister well, back in her childhood, and bring both her father and Ilse to life again. Her 'stolen glances' enabled her really to see me as a person for the first time. 'I've discovered something; it's very painful, and yet I'm so glad. I found that I know nothing about you, nothing at all. What a fool I've been, I've put all that tremendous effort into trying to make you be something you aren't. Whatever I thought I knew, however I struggled to make myself understand, reading Freud, and Melanie Klein, all that effort was so *futile*. I feel so stupid. I was trying to force you.



I'm so sorry.' I said she need not be sorry. She glared at me, and burst out furiously, 'I *will* be sorry if I want to,' and then she told me of her secret game of 'associations' in which she thought of a scent, a building, a book, etc., to 'associate' with me. Now her 'secret glances' showed her how unreal it had all been.

Next day I had a cold, and she felt it impossible to talk, as anything she said would be attacking me. She recognized that she was wanting something magical, two opposite things at once, to be there and to go away, to protect me and to destroy me. Now she had seen that no amount of analysis could make it possible. I spoke of the inner world of her imagining, and the world of outer reality; only in an inner one could it be like that, and while her inner world and mine might meet in places, they could never be the same. She was silent and, I thought, nearly asleep. She hid under the rug. When she came out she said she had been trying it out; she had thought, 'If I keep quiet I can be here, and not be here; and you go to sleep, dear, if you want to.' She felt relieved and whole, for it had worked. I told her that she had brought together the inner and outer worlds, allowing herself to have her own, and me to have mine. She had been a whole person, and separate from me.

The following day she found that she had been able to do something in an unplanned and unarranged way, and it had been good. This had never before seemed possible. And she had discovered a new sort of feeling that she did not understand; she felt gratitude towards someone she did not love, and had been able to help someone in a new way. It made her feel different both towards other people and towards herself. She had been 'arrogant' before, now she could be friendly, and could like herself. I said she had found that she could like and dislike the same person, and so need no longer split me into two and put part of me elsewhere.

Then she recalled an incident when she was 4 years old. She was out with her father and she was holding a little stick in her hand, about the size of his penis. He took it and threw it into a stream, and showed her it floating away under the bridge. He said it was her naughty temper. She could not feel that it had anything to do with her, as she had not been in a temper at the time. She now saw that she had really believed it to be his penis; she had seen it as that, and had been disappointed and angry at his taking it from her. She knew now that it was true, as I had said, that she had never been able to mourn for him, as his death 'had nothing to do with her', she had 'not caused it by being angry', and yet believed that she had.

Here we could see more clearly than before how many things in the earlier part of her analysis had been difficult because of her failure to symbolize. For example, she had often fought with herself as to whether she should bring up the milk bottles she

found on my doorstep or not. It had been utterly impossible for her to decide, and useless for me to interpret anything about it, or to tell her that it didn't matter which she did. Only now could she see that to her the milk bottles not only represented me (as I had said) but *were* me, and that she had wanted to kick them off the step, as she had been kicked by her parents, and by the car that had knocked her down. But in her delusion it meant *actually* kicking me. The rug, too, had had the same significance. At last she was free of them, someone else could fold the rug and bring up my milk. It was no longer her responsibility.

Her ambivalence became clearer. 'I hate you because I love you so much,' she said; and again: 'Damn you and blast you, and bless you, for loving you so much.'

Separateness was so far accepted; fusion or loss of identity has been more difficult. Along with the difficulty in accepting it goes the difficulty of allowing herself only to hate or only to love me, wholeheartedly, now that I am the person towards whom both are felt, instead of being the loved person while her mother is hated, or the hated one while Ilse is loved.

She described how she felt she was 'inside a capsule, and trying to get out, but altogether lost outside it'. The capsule is transparent, even invisible. She recalled, as a child of six, having drawn a circle in the sand with her foot, and danced inside it, believing herself to be invisible and feeling utterly bewildered when someone spoke of how she looked doing it. A similar thing happened years later when she ate pieces of bread in school not knowing that she could be seen.

Here at last, in her own description, is the basic delusion by which she has lived, and which has been her main defence throughout the analysis.

I linked it with an observation which I had made several times before, that I thought she had at some time witnessed the primal scene in a mirror, being screened from seeing directly. I spoke of the difficulty in understanding about a mirror unless someone is there to show the child her reflection, or unless there is some familiar and identifiable object that she can see both in the mirror and without it. She said 'You've told me before about seeing my parents in the mirror, and I've never believed it. I don't remember it—but I know which side my cot is—it's on the right side, and I *know* it. I can see a room, but all the furniture's strange—I don't know any of it.' Then she recalled hearing that in the second year of her life her father went to new employment and that for a short time the family stayed in an hotel. That was the only time she had slept in the parents' room as far as she knew, and the memory of it had been denied.

The 'capsule' represents among other things her identification with her father, the magical father whom nothing could touch. It also represents the magical invisible penis by means of which she could



remain one with her mother and with Ilse. Ilse she kept invisible—until her death shattered the 'capsule' and revealed her. My identification with Frieda in her loss and grief restored it, but with me inside it in Ilse's place.

It was this that made both mourning for her father and for Ilse possible, through the analysis of the transference which until then had been inaccessible.

For her to break the 'capsule'—to discard her delusions—has meant annihilation, both by separateness and by fusion. Only if someone from outside could break through it forcibly and safely could she emerge as a living, feeling person, and only a person with real feelings could do it by making her feelings available. Everything had to be held fixed, magically and invisibly, out of reach of the primitive destructive love-hate impulses. Now she is sitting among the ruins of a world that she has shattered, and is looking for ways of restoring it. Not restoring it by trying to bring her father and Ilse back to life, or to make her parents well and happy forty years ago and more, but doing so imaginatively by means of the new creative activities that are already at work in her, that we call sublimations.

She is happier now than she has ever been, and unhappier. Her mourning is not yet completed, but she is well on the way to it. Her home is a more reliable place for her husband and children, for she can say a thing and keep to it, she can differ from her husband without having a furious row in front of the children as she used to do, and she can allow them to be individuals. Her sex life has altered; she can now enjoy it, and have genital orgasm. The skin rash rarely troubles her and the world she lives in is becoming sane and ordinary (though there may be mad things in it), instead of it being hostile, anti-mad things in it). She knows that it is through Ilse's death that she is getting well, she has accepted her pleasure in Ilse's death, and her hate, her destructive love, and her sadness.

I have not gone into the very complicated psychopathology of this case. For my present purpose it is enough to say that her capacity to develop a reality sense had been seriously impaired; symbolization and deductive thinking were largely replaced by concrete thinking. She was unable to distinguish between real visual and auditory impressions and hallucinations, or between reality and delusion. Splitting of the ego while it was still a body ego had resulted in persistent failure to make accurate perceptions, or accurate deductions from such perceptions as she made. The consequence of this was that all her transferences were delusional, and on them were based all her relationships.

She had to be reached, through layer on layer of splitting and denial, on the level of helpless dependence and no-separateness; the level of her paranoid delusion. This, like all other delusions, was not susceptible to transference interpretation; it had to be broken down in the most direct way possible, i.e. via the analyst as an actual person.

## VII. IMPLICATIONS FOR TECHNIQUE

The growing realization that there are many patients who cannot make use of transference interpretations until some change has taken place that makes the ego accessible leads to the question what alterations in technique are necessary, and what alterations in the theory of technique.

Difficulties in getting transference interpretations accepted, the arising of sudden unpredictable tensions which often result in violent acting out—these and other things have been regarded as due to some insufficiency in the analyst: insufficient analysis, failure to deal with his own anxieties, acting-out on his part.

Verbalization, understanding, and interpretation have been regarded as all-important. But the need for 'working through' has long been recognized as a necessary process in analysis. It is important to understand what is going on during that process, and whether there is anything that can be done to help it on.

Looking at patients such as the one I have cited, we find that patients whose reality sense is seriously impaired, who cannot distinguish delusion or hallucination from reality, cannot use transference interpretations, because the transference itself is of a delusional nature. Transference interpretation calls for the use of deductive thinking, symbolization, and the acceptance of substitutes. It is not possible to transfer something that is not there to be transferred, and in these patients their early experiences have not enabled them to build up either what needs to be transferred or a picture of a person on to whom transference is possible. They are still living in the primitive world of early infancy, and their needs have to be met on that level, the level of primary narcissism and delusion.

Ways have to be found of presenting reality to these patients, many of whom cannot use it as it presents itself in their daily life.

The reality that is present, available, in every analysis is the analyst himself, his functions, his person, and his personality. It is up to him to find his own token ways of using these to meet the individual needs of his patients, to find out what is practicable, and to set his own limits in the handling of his patient's anxieties, as far as possible determining consciously what he will or will not do, but being willing to act on impulse, and on occasion to react. This is part of his acceptance of himself as he is.

In the early days of analysis no analyst had



much personal analysis, or much experience (either his own or other people's) to draw on, and in those days 'wild analysis' did in fact lead to danger situations which could not be dealt with. But conditions are different today, and the assertions that certain things are dangerous, or impede the analysis, can be tested out. Many such assertions seem to me to have the mythical or superstitious quality of superego judgments.

We have to recognize that the same paradox that we find in other areas of life is there too in analysis—that the same thing can be both bad and good, that what is most valuable can also be dangerous and useless. This is as true of transference interpretation as it is of answering questions, expression of feeling, acting on impulse, etc., by the analyst. The great need is for flexibility, reliability, and strength (as opposed to rigidity), and a willingness to use whatever resources are available.

What I have tried to show is that the results that we all hope for and expect to get can be obtained if we are willing to approach the analyst's attitude to his patient from a new angle, and to recognize some of the things that are in fact done in analysis, but often disregarded or not admitted.

My own awareness of them has been increasing. I have been evolving my way of working since 1937, before I began training as an analyst. Later, I tried to discard what I already had in favour of a more classical or less 'unorthodox' technique, and failed with a number of patients whom I still feel I would and should have been able to treat. In practice what I do varies widely from one patient to another. It is in itself an expression of the patients' individuality, and a confirmation that I am not impressing something on them that belongs not to them but to me. This approach has both advantages and disadvantages. Quantitative measurement is never possible in analysis, but the usual tests and checks can be applied, as in all our work.

The original assessment of the patient's illness can be re-evaluated in the light of his response to transference interpretations. If such interpretations are consistently felt by him to be meaningless, even if in fact he shows that they do mean something somewhere, or if, on the contrary, they are accepted but no changes in behaviour or ways of thinking follow, either of these I would regard as pathognomic of the presence of a deep split and a great deal of

paranoid anxiety; the defences against it being stronger in the second case than in the first.

This means that ways of making the ego accessible to transference interpretations have to be found. Whatever is found will have to be subjected to the usual scrutiny.

My own questions run something like this:

Why do I do or say this?

How does it relate to things in myself—conscious or unconscious?

Why to X and not to Y?

Would I do or say it to this patient in other circumstances, another day, another time?

What effect does it have, and why?

Does the bringing of new material follow?

Is there any real ego development?

Could the same results be got otherwise? Quicker? Better?

If so, how, and why? And why have I not done something different?

One cannot always answer one's own questions right away. Sometimes the answers turn out to have been wrong; sometimes there is no answer to be found except that it felt right at the time, or was the only thing one could find to say at a time when something *had* to be said. Subsequent events usually show whether it was right or not, and when one finds an analysis going on well where one has done something out of the ordinary one's confidence in one's own unconscious processes increases. One's counter-resistances seem to break down more quickly, the work goes on often at a higher tension, and the analyst's greater spontaneity helps the patient to break down his own rigidity and stereotypy.

The main difficulty lies in a general state of unexpectedness. This does not mean everything being out of control, though it often feels like it to the patient. It is rather a state in which things can happen. The risk, of course, is that there may be a sudden 'triggering off' in the patient, or in the analyst, when an unknown factor turns up. This, again, is something which can happen in any analysis, and has to be dealt with if it does.

The account which I have given of one patient's analysis, condensed as it has had to be, could be a very misleading one. The variations in technique which I have shown do not always come off. When they do, the effect is very like that of any right interpretation; there may be rejection first, and acceptance later, acceptance straight away, or there may be no immediate



effect to be seen, and it may appear later that there had been some. When they do not come off, again, as with ordinary interpretations, something may happen or not. And like ordinary interpretations, if the time is right and they are appropriate, their effect is good; if not, the effect is bad, and they are mistakes like any other mistakes. In Frieda's analysis the things I have quoted did succeed, and were not mistakes; I think they were not just lucky flukes either, for I have experienced similar things in a number of other analyses with similar results.

The purpose of these things is quite clear, and limited. It is *to make the patient's ego accessible to transference interpretation by breaking up a delusional transference.*

Interpretation does not make any impression on delusion; the only thing that does so is the presentation of reality in a way that is comparable to waking up out of a dream. That is, finding that something that has been believed to be literally true is untrue, by confrontation with what is true. This does not make ordinary interpretation redundant, nor is it a substitute for it; it does not do away with all resistance. Ordinary interpretative work has to go on before such episodes as I have described, through them, and after them, and it still remains the main part of the analysis. Without it these other things would be useless but, in cases where the transference itself is of a delusional nature, they are the only kind of thing that makes transference interpretation meaningful and usable, for it is through them that a human being can be discovered behind the interpretations.

### VIII. SUMMING UP

I have tried to show certain elements, some of which I consider essential, in the analyst's total response to his patient's needs, some ways in which they can be used directly, and the kind of effects that I have found from such direct use of them. They are things that in my opinion need to be made clear at some point in every analysis. They appear more obviously in the analysis of very disturbed patients, and less so in that of neurotics. They are there, implicit or explicit, in every good and successful analysis that is carried out, and something of them is there in every analysis that is even partly successful.

The analyst's total love and hate of his patient, which provide the motive force of his total response, contain both some things that are basic and non-variable and some that are variable. The analysis, as far as the analyst's

share in it is concerned, depends mainly upon the quality of the basic, non-variable part. This, in its turn, depends on the extent to which the analyst's world in which he lives is a sane and friendly one—i.e. on how far he has been able to deal with his own paranoid anxieties and his depression—anxieties that are inseparable from the work that he is doing. If he can rely on it, and consequently on himself, it will probably be safe for his patients to do so, and they will come to do so increasingly. If not, it will probably not only be unsafe, but also impossible for them.

It is this basic, non-variable factor that provides the stability of the analysis (again, as far as the analyst is concerned). The variable things, the unconscious counter-transferences, the day to day or hour to hour variations in the amount of strain he is bearing, his health, his outside concerns, all these tend to make for difficulty, especially if they have too wide a range of variation. These are also part of the analyst's responsibility; he has to see to it that the range of variation is not too great, and that the variations do not get fixed or unfixed again too easily. But these things, like all the others that I have referred to, can be valuable as well as harmful; they are part of the analyst's life, and they make for life and movement in analytic work.

Analysis is a living thing, and like all living things it is changing all the while. Even in the few years that it has existed we can see many changes, especially in the field of technique. Patients are treated today who would have been thought unsuitable even a few years ago; Mrs. Klein has recently reminded us that such things as analysis of children, and interpretation of transference, were once looked at askance. We cannot know what analysis will become in the future; we can only know that it will change, that we are contributing to its future, and that today's changes will look different to those who come after us.

'Counter-transference', in the various meanings of the word, is a familiar phenomenon. At first, like transference, it was regarded as something dangerous and undesirable, but nevertheless unavoidable. Nowadays it is even respectable!

But I feel that it should be a great deal more than this. We do not know enough about our responses to our patients, and have been (on the whole wisely) cautious in using them. But a very great deal of psychic energy goes into them,

whether we wish it to be so or not, and if we are to get anything like the full benefit of this energy, either for our patients or for ourselves, we have got to be willing to experiment, and even to take some risks. I am sure that experimenting by

trained and experienced analysts is essential for the further growth and development of psycho-analysis, but it needs to be done against a background of responsibility, known, and willingly taken.

#### LITERATURE

- (1) BALINT, ALICE, and BALINT, MICHAEL (1939). 'On Transference and Counter-transference.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 20.
- (2) FREUD, SIGMUND (1900). *The Interpretation of Dreams*.
- (3) ——— Papers on Technique. *Collected Papers*. Vol. II.
  - XXV (1910). 'The Future Prospects of Psycho-Analytic Therapy.'
  - XXVI (1910). 'Observations on "Wild" Psycho-Analysis.'
  - XXVIII (1912). 'The Dynamics of the Transference.'
  - XXIX (1912). 'Recommendations for Physicians on the Psycho-Analytic Method of Treatment.'
  - XXXI (1913). 'Further Recommendations in the Technique of Psycho-Analysis.'
  - XXXII (1914). 'Further Recommendations in the Technique of Psycho-Analysis.'
  - XXXIII (1915). 'Further Recommendations in the Technique of Psycho-Analysis.'
  - XXXIV (1919). 'Turnings in the Ways of Psycho-Analytic Therapy.'
- (4) FERENCZI, SANDOR. *Final Contributions to the Problems and Methods of Psycho-Analysis* (1956).
  8. (1928). 'The Elasticity of Psycho-Analytic Technique.'
  10. (1930). 'The Principles of Relaxation and Neocatharsis.'
  11. (1931). 'Child Analysis in the Analysis of Adults.'
  13. (1933). 'Confusion of Tongues between Adults and the Child.'
  21. 'Notes and Fragments.'
- III. (1931). 'Attempt at a Summary. On the Patient's Initiative. Relaxation and Education.'
- IV. 'Trauma-Analysis and Sympathy' (undated).
- (5) HILL, LEWIS B. (1955). *Psycho-Therapeutic Intervention in Schizophrenia*.
- (6) LITTLE, MARGARET (1951). 'Counter-Transference and the Patient's Response to it.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 32.
- (7) ORR, DOUGLAS W. (1954). 'Transference and Counter-transference: A Historical Survey.' *J. Am. Psychoanal. Assn.*, 2.
- (8) SECHEHAYE, MARGUERITE A. (1951). *Symbolic Realization*.
  - 'Transference in Symbolic Realization' (Read at the Geneva Congress, 1955). Abstract—*Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 37.
- (9) WINNICOTT, D. W.
  - 'Primitive Emotional Development.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 26, 1954.
  - 'Psychoses and Child Care.' *Brit. J. Med. Psychol.*, 26, 1953.
  - 'Transitional Objects and Transitional Phenomena.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 34, 1953.
  - 'Symptom Tolerance in Paediatrics.' *Proc. Royal Soc. Med.*, Aug. 1953. Vol. 46, No. 8. Section of Paediatrics.
  - 'Mind and its Relation to Psyche-Soma.' *Brit. J. Med. Psychol.*, 27, 1954.
  - 'Meta-psychological and Clinical Aspects of Regression within the Psycho-Analytical Set-up.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 36, 1955.
  - 'The Depressive Position in Normal Emotional Development.' *Brit. J. Med. Psychol.*, 28, 1955.
  - 'On Transference.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 37, 1956.

(Received 31 January, 1956.)



# PAIN

By

ERNEST JONES

A recent experience of severe pain has prompted a few reflections which seem perhaps worth communicating although they are probably not original. A moderate pain is always localized: one says 'My arm or leg hurts.' When, however, the white-heat peaks of intense pain are reached this localization disappears, and the entire self is filled with nothing but pain. When the ego is thus invaded defensive reactions enter strongly into play. There is evidently the dread of being surprised by unbearable stimuli breaking through the defensive barrier which Freud called the *Reizschutz*, the institution which played such an important part in his theory of the mind from the beginning to the end. Instinctively the whole body becomes taut and one's breath is held. Like some other 'natural' reactions, however, such as the clamour for warmth when one is shivering from shock, this attitude is not the most advantageous one. One gains more if one can relax and confine oneself to as shallow breathing as possible. The ability to do this depends on the extent to which one has been able to cope with the profound dread of destruction, which was presumably the reason for first erecting the defensive barrier in question. With pain of the lancinating type, such as the lightning stabs of trigeminal neuralgia, the same

problem does not arise, since any defensive response can only follow the pain; in bad cases one can recognize the sufferers from their attitude of constant flinching.

Another consideration emphasizes this close association between pain and fear. I refer to the attempt to correlate two commonly made observations. The first is that it is very hard to imagine severe pain or to recall in one's imagination the memory of it. One knows about it intellectually but one cannot reproduce it. The second observation is that repeated experiences of pain confer no immunity. On the contrary, one is dismayed to find that the fortitude of which one has been proud diminishes with further experiences and that one's resistance is increasingly sapped. I suggest that the former observation signifies a simple act of intense repression. Then the later experiences produce a response not only to the current stimulation but also to the half-buried memories of the earlier ones. As we know, this is the explanation of the typical hysterical 'exaggeration' when the subject is reacting to both the current situation and to older ones with which it has got associated. There is thus an identity in normal life with the abnormal reactions of the hysterics.

(Received 10 April, 1956.)

# FEELINGS OF UNREALITY

By

BRIAN BIRD, M.D., CLEVELAND\*

## Introduction

Feelings of unreality, most authorities agree, are extremely widespread and of infinite variety. They occur in acute and chronic forms, some so mild as to be scarcely noticed and some at the other extreme so severe as to be totally incapacitating. They occur commonly in schizophrenia, depressions, organic brain disease, in all types of neurosis, and in essentially normal people. Although common in psychotic patients, feelings of unreality belong to the neurotic part of the personality, not to the psychotic. In such patients they must be distinguished from somatic delusions and visceral hallucinations, which, although having a similar content, are entirely different in structure and meaning.

The most common names used to describe feelings of unreality are depersonalization, estrangement, alienation, and derealization. Some authors include in the group the condition known as *déjà vu* and its variants, such as *déjà raconté*.

Nunberg (13) was one of the first psychoanalysts to write on depersonalization, and his 1922 paper still stands as one of the best. He defines depersonalization as the state 'in which the ego and the external world appear different, changed and foreign to the patient'. He stresses the feeling of loss in all cases of unreality and equates loss of reality with loss of the ego and loss of the mother, the breast, and the penis. Nunberg's clinical cases are particularly illustrative of the disorder.

Federn (2, 3: 1926-28) says that depersonalization occurs as a result of a withdrawal of cathexis from what he calls the ego feeling (either body ego or mental ego). Cathexis of the boundaries of the body ego and mental ego is essential in distinguishing reality. The external world is perceived clearly only in so far as the body and its organs are clearly delineated. In the beginning of life the infant cathects certain functions and body parts, and only gradually extends this

process to the entire body and to the mental image of the body. If this is done imperfectly as a result of shock, the possibility exists for depersonalization under conditions of later similar shocks. Federn says further that the narcissistic cathexis, the loss of which causes depersonalization, can be demonstrated as being due to identification of the ego with the male genital, and that a disturbance of the one can therefore cause a disturbance of the other.

Oberndorf (14-19) has written perhaps more articles than anyone else on depersonalization. There are six covering the period 1933-39. Perhaps the most important finding he presents is that depersonalization is preceded by and is dependent upon eroticization of thought.

Freud (6), as several authors have pointed out, made no mention of depersonalization until late in his life (1936), when he wrote his paper 'A Disturbance of Memory on the Acropolis'. In that paper he analysed a personal experience of depersonalization which occurred during a trip to Athens in 1904. Opportunity for that trip—his first—had come about suddenly and unexpectedly and, in spite of its being the fulfilment of a long-felt wish, the prospect left him depressed rather than elated. Then, a few hours later, as he stood on the Acropolis, a strange thought came: 'So all this really *does* exist after all, just as we learned at school.' This thought, he says, represented the feeling, 'What I see here is not real!'—the unreality serving as a defence against something threatening the ego. The threat had to do with guilt caused by surpassing his father, who, through poverty, had never been able to travel. Freud's visit to Athens was wrong: it was a criticism of his father. In order to ward off this guilt, his observation of Athens was made to seem unreal; i.e. he still had not actually left home.

## A CASE OF DEPERSONALIZATION

The clinical basis for this paper centres upon an acute attack of depersonalization occurring in a

\* School of Medicine, Western Reserve University.



patient during analysis. The patient, a 15-year-old boy, had a very high intellect and, with it, a tendency to overvalue his thinking while devaluing his body. His knowledge of physical things was poor and, although he was fond of sports and activities of all kinds, he had a disregard for the safety of his body that was frightening to others. In contrast to his physical carelessness he was extremely controlled as to feelings. He set great store on being proper—never getting angry, or swearing, or cheating, or playing truant, or lying, or stealing. More than this, he curbed all his pleasures and excitement.

His original neurotic illness began a few weeks after his first ejaculation, which he produced during the summer of his thirteenth year. The illness was characterized by many mental symptoms—confusion, doubt, feelings of unreality, and ideas of reference, all accompanied by the most painful anxiety.

In analysis one of the outstanding findings was a fear of girls. He had the ordinary adolescent confusion and conflict between homosexual and heterosexual wishes, but this fear of girls and women was something very special. Not until after about a year of analysis was he able to have a real girl friend. And even then the affair was not entirely real. In the first place the girl served largely as a defence against sexual feelings directed towards me, and in the second place there was no real jealousy—he was never jealous of her interest in other boys or of their interest in her.

Then, shortly before the attack of depersonalization, he got his second girl friend. This affair was very different from the first. Instead of using this girl as a defence against his feelings for me he used his attachment to me to support him in his relationship with her, and for the first time in his memory he became truly jealous.

With the beginning of his relationship with this new girl there was an immediate change in his masturbation: whereas formerly he had masturbated almost daily, he now abstained day after day, and surprisingly his abstinence worried him—he feared there would be a dangerous accumulation of sexual feeling.

At this time, too, his fantasies took on a particular form, typified by the following: His girl would tell him that she was not intelligent enough to be worthy of his love. In reply he would say that her un-intelligence and inferiority did not matter—he loved her anyway. They would marry. He would go to war and have his arms and legs shot off. He would return, offering her a divorce, as he now was not good enough for her. But she would refuse, saying she still loved him.

When he told this fantasy, his associations led from 'girl with inferior intelligence' to 'absence of penis in girls'. His own fantasied amputations led also to thoughts of losing his penis. Here I made the interpretation that since in the fantasy he lost his

appendages after marriage, it very likely meant a fear of losing his penis to his wife. He responded by saying how horrible it would be to tell a girl you liked her. If you did this she would have the upper hand; it would be like giving something vital to her or being devoured by her. This thought led to his telling of long daydreams of being sealed in a dark cave and of being shut in a sleeping bag complete with oxygen tank, the whole thing floating in water. Associations to these fantasies were of being in his mother's womb.

Jealousy, which began mildly, increased day by day and soon was so painful that he felt he could not stand it. At school he watched how his girl smiled at other boys and how they smiled at her, and what he saw made him squirm. The patient's jealousy came to a peak on a Saturday night when his girl said she was busy and could not see him. He was lonely and worried and at bedtime was unable to sleep. At last he masturbated. The orgasm was especially strong, and this he thought was because he had not masturbated for a week. On Sunday he was even more depressed and jealous.

When he came to see me on Monday, he reported the beginning of a strange experience. Suddenly that morning at school he had become confused, mixed up, and could not understand what he saw or heard. His head and mind felt funny. 'I'd know what I heard and what I saw,' he said, 'but it didn't register. Algebra, history, music—nothing made sense. I couldn't understand a single thing—just as if I weren't I. I was in a panic. I can't describe it. I really thought I was gone. I was sure I was crazy. I was like two people, split in two. I was neutral—no feelings for anyone, and nothing got through from them to me. I was separated off from everything.'

At this point I interpreted the patient's unreality feelings as being a defence against perceiving some disturbing event; i.e. by making everything uncertain he made the disturbing event itself seem in doubt. The patient did not agree or disagree, but at once recalled that lying awake Saturday night he had heard talking in the next room to his. His thought was that if he could hear others talking, they could hear him masturbating. With the evidence of this new association I extended my interpretation by saying that in his childhood, feelings of unreality might have been a defence against disturbing sounds coming from his parents' bedroom, sounds that made him jealous and sad. The patient admitted that this might be true, for he still had great curiosity about what his parents did in their bedroom. He added, however, that in childhood not only must he have *heard* something disturbing, he must have *seen* it as well, because today it was not only the things he heard that were strange, but the things he saw.

The second day of the attack was just as bad as the first. He begged me to help him—to do some-

thing to stop it.<sup>1</sup> 'In school,' he said, 'I was afraid to ask questions for fear there was no class there, or that I had been asleep and had missed something and would ask a question already asked, or that in Latin class I would ask an algebra question, or I would stand up to speak and nothing would come, or instead of asking a question I might say, "I love you".'

Again I repeated the interpretation that making everything unreal was an attempt to deny the reality of some extremely shocking observation, that it was a defence against some terrible experience.

The patient's response was to tell a fantasy: His girl would suddenly say to him, 'I hate you!' She would say it without warning, as a complete surprise, giving him no chance to prepare for the shock. His next thought was of the night several years ago when he had his first ejaculation. For several weeks he had been masturbating up to a certain point of throbbing and excitement, and then had stopped. But on this night, when he was alone in the dark, the feeling did not die away. Instead, suddenly he lost control and felt himself wet.

As the patient spoke of ejaculation, the fright returned in its original form and he became anxious all over again. Before, although admitting he had been upset by his first ejaculation, he had always insisted he knew nothing terrible had happened—he knew the wetness was not blood or urine. Now it was different. Now he remembered with great feeling what it had been like: he had been sure that it *was* blood and that he had seriously injured his penis, but he had been afraid to look at his penis and had spent the entire night worrying.

About this experience, I said it must have been so terrifying he hoped it was not real, especially that it was not real blood or a real injury to his penis.

The next day, the third of the attack, he reported that the worst experience of all had occurred the previous evening. While swimming, he feared his bathing trunks would fall off or at least reveal his genitals, and he found it upsetting to look at the girls. They all seemed to have on suits either too loose or too tight, in both cases revealing too much of their body. He became so confused that, without even thinking, he attached himself to the most attractive girl there, literally touching her and trying to swim with her. When the girl got angry and told him to go away he was terribly hurt.

The patient's disturbance at seeing girls exposed I interpreted as probably representing his first observation of a girl's lack of a penis. The observation, I added, must have been such a shock that as a defence he doubted his eyes, just as now he doubted the reality of everything he saw.

This interpretation reminded the patient of the

many times he had had an urge to examine girls' genitals. He had never been able to say what it was he was trying to see, but now he wondered whether it was their lack of a penis that impelled him to look.

At this point the patient suddenly remembered an embarrassing and inexplicable experience of the day. In school his nose began to run, but there was nothing he could do about it since he had no handkerchief. He could feel the nasal discharge hanging from his nose, but dared not put his hand up to find out.

This incident I related to his first ejaculation. He could not touch his nose for fear of what he might find, just as when he had first ejaculated he was afraid of what he might find—that the wetness was blood and that his penis might be gone.

The patient agreed, but went on to say that when his nose was running he knew he had no handkerchief; he was certain, yet he could not help looking for one. He repeatedly went through every pocket, as if a handkerchief would turn up by magic.

At this, I reminded him of his desire to look repeatedly at girls' genitals—that this must represent a wish that a penis, like a handkerchief, would turn up by magic.

From this time on, the patient began to feel better and during the next two weeks he developed and consolidated the affair with his girl. He saw her daily and had a wonderful time, although he was afraid that she might become subservient to him, might do anything he wished. This fear made him recall one day an event from age 5 when a little girl had let him do as he wished: she had let him look at her genitals and poke at her with sticks.

As he told this incident, he became excited and confused and felt strange. He could hear everything I said, yet could not hear it—at least, he could make no sense out of it. I told him that his unreal feelings were obviously a defence against something current and that we must be coming close to some experience, some observation, which he wanted to deny by distrusting his own perceptions. He then remembered a dream from the night before: he was going home; he came to his street, then to his front walk, but when he turned in, there was no house—it had simply disappeared. He was shocked, woke up frightened, then felt relieved and happy to find that it had been only a dream.

For several days confusion in the hour continued and was marked. During this period he kissed his girl for the first time and was surprised how wonderful it was and how little it upset him. There remained, however, one peculiar aspect to their relationship: he never took his girl's side in an argument or protected her when other boys teased her; instead, he stood by, feeling stupid but unable

<sup>1</sup> As might be expected, the position of the transference during the attack was not at all clear. Depersonalization, consisting, as it does, of a basic uncertainty as to who is who and what is what, naturally involves the analyst, and he comes to represent many meanings simultaneously.

Most importantly, he represents both parents; and just as in the primal scene the parents tend to lose their separate identities and to become confusedly united, so too does the transference in depersonalization.



to interfere. He was afraid, he said, that she might not welcome his interference, that instead she might say, 'Get out!' Associations to this fear led to thoughts of his parents' bedroom—of going into it once several years before and being told to get out.

The next day when the patient entered my office he was red-faced and swearing. He said he was furious with his girl and had never been so angry before in his life. What had happened was this. A school friend told him that his girl and a boy were in a certain room alone. He went to this room, pushed his way in, and saw the girl alone with the boy. As soon as he saw her he felt terrible—he was embarrassed, hurt, and confused, and his mind was all in a whirl. He left at once, got on his bike and rushed to see me. On the way anger developed, and now it ruled everything.

After a while he calmed down and talked of minor things. Then suddenly he said he had had a funny experience that morning. He was up early to fix his bike, but couldn't find his wrench. He went to his parents' room to ask about it. His parents were lying close together, but separated quickly when he burst in, and they both told him to get out. He had had a momentary thought that they were having intercourse, but it didn't bother him, he said, and he didn't give it a second thought.

When I said that, on the contrary, he must have been terribly angry with his parents, he suddenly became angry all over again and was still angry when he left. This anger seemed to have a special quality: it was vigorous, unrestrained, unambiguous, not caused or marred by fear, it was not petty or plaintive, and seemed not to represent identification with any anger or disapproval that his parents or I might have towards him. It was what so often anger is: not just plain, justifiable, uncomplicated anger.

Depersonalization did not recur after this time. The next day the patient made no reference to his angry outburst, but when I brought it up, he discussed it readily. After the hour he had looked the girl up and told her how angry he was. She had said there was no need to be angry—that the other boy was just a casual friend who, in fact, liked the patient very much. The patient had replied, 'I like him, too, but it's awfully hard to like someone when you're so jealous.'

#### ANALYSIS OF THE CLINICAL MATERIAL

As with all such phenomena, the defensive meaning of this patient's depersonalization was rather clear; it was an attempt to repudiate conscious recognition of external events. Certain events—seen, heard, or otherwise sensed—because of their sudden appearance, magnitude, or nature, could not be tolerated by his ego. Accordingly, since it was too late to ward off the observations off, the ego did the next best thing and defended itself by instituting a state of

unreality in three ways: (i) Treating reality as if it were not real (derealization), e.g. 'At school I was afraid there was no class there'; (ii) treating the perceiving apparatus, the ego itself, as if it were not real (depersonalization proper), e.g. 'I felt as if I weren't I'; and (iii) creating a shift in the sense of time (*déjà vu*), e.g. 'I was afraid to ask a question in class because I thought it had already been asked.'

The whole thing was something like the normal expression, when suddenly confronted with the unbelievable, 'I must be seeing things.'

The kinds of observations which the patient found intolerable were also rather clear: they all had something to do with loss of objects, e.g. bathing suits, his house in a dream, his handkerchief and, of course, his penis. Two of the main objects he feared losing were his analyst and his girl friend. The analyst was important not only because of the patient's rather strong homosexual feelings for the analyst, but because the analyst was a support to his newly-engaged-upon affair with his girl. The girl herself was important because for the first time the patient had allowed himself really to get into a position where a loss would be painful.

These losses of analyst and girl, however, had not actually occurred—they were merely anticipated. Accordingly, one could say that the patient reacted to them in this way because they represented earlier events which actually had been observed and which had been overwhelming and unprepared for.

The patient's associations to his symptomatic experiences provided undeniable evidence as to some of these early events. Working backwards in point of time, his associations went at once to his first ejaculation. This initial discharge of semen came suddenly, unexpectedly, without warning; he was afraid that he was bleeding, that his penis was gone; he was afraid to look. Significantly, this first ejaculation was re-enacted immediately prior to the depersonalization. He had abstained from masturbation for one week so that when he did masturbate, the excessive amount of semen alarmed him just as he had been alarmed by the original discharge. However, although that first ejaculation was a very shocking event, his associations suggested that it was shocking because it re-awakened even earlier traumatic perceptions.

A further series of associations led directly to those early events. The two most important events were observation of female genitals, giving rise to castration anxiety, and observation

of the primal scene, giving rise to fear of loss of the mother. The relationship of depersonalization to ideas of castration and loss of the mother is paralleled by Anna Freud's remark about denial (4). 'My examples,' she says, 'suggest that the typical situations in which the ego has recourse to the mechanism of denial are those associated with ideas of castration and with the loss of love objects' (p. 190).

Depersonalization, in addition to defending the patient against the pain of observations, defended him against the danger of his own aggressive impulses. An illustration of this defence was the occasion when he entered his parents' bedroom, found them 'close together', and was told by both of them to get out. This event caused him no anger or embarrassment—it was nothing. The reason it was 'nothing' was that he derealized the entire event, thereby avoiding not only the suffering it caused but his anger as well—there was nothing to get angry at. Control of his anger in this way kept him from showing any proprietary feelings for his mother and thus protected him from retaliation by his father.

Much more could undoubtedly be discussed regarding the symptom as a defence, but there is more to be seen in another direction. Depersonalization also had in it the very impulses and observations that it contrived to contain and restrain.

The aggression in his attack was not hard to find. He tried to frighten me with it, hoping thereby to continue analysis. He also used the symptom to alarm his parents and others to whom he reported his feelings. In the swimming pool he was very aggressive, under the guise of being confused. And of most significance, as I have said before, once his real aggression came openly, the symptom was no more.

Evidence, in the symptom, of the shocking observations themselves was not hard to find. He felt changed. Something terrible had happened to him: he did not know who he was, he felt cut off and lonely. All those symptomatic states are states that would not be inappropriate if he himself were to be castrated, or had been castrated, or if he were confronted with the observation of someone castrated. Furthermore, his sense of being divided into two persons ('I am split in two') could undoubtedly represent his two parents, just as his inability to communicate his feelings to others, or to receive anything from them, could represent his denial of the primal scene.

But there is still more to the symptom and, in going further, one has to ask: If an understanding is to be had of depersonalization, which is a state of unreality, must not an attempt be made to understand reality itself? And in such an attempt particular cognizance must be taken of the origin of reality sense,

In the very beginning of life there is, of course, no reality—no outer or inner. There is only a perfectly complete narcissistic state: the embryo, the foetus, within the uterus. After birth, too, narcissism continues, and only gradually does a distinction take place between the infant and the external world. This distinction does not come about primarily through a realization of the existence of objects. Rather, according to Federn (2, 3), it comes about through, and is entirely dependent upon, the infant's recognition and delineation of the outlines, configurations, and boundaries of his own body—and, as an extension of the body, the ego. The important thing is the body, not the object. If an infant cannot tell where his body leaves off, he certainly cannot tell where an object starts. So the first thing he must do in finding out about reality is to learn how far he himself goes in every direction—to learn, as it were, all his own edges, all his tops and bottoms. The clearer his understanding of his body, the clearer will be reality.

If a sense of reality thus consists in and depends upon a recognition of the difference between the body and the outside world, particularly the mother, it follows that the opposite state, a sense of unreality, represents a partial return to an undifferentiated state when such boundaries did not exist. In my patient there was a rather marked lack of distinction between himself and his mother. For example, he did not know the difference between the meaning of masturbation and menstruation—he used the words interchangeably. Further, with the onset of his illness, his mother told him she had felt exactly as he did when she began to menstruate. And at puberty he had a fear that his breasts would grow and his penis would shrink. Even at the age of 14 this boy sat on the toilet to urinate. He thought that dogs bore pups through the anus and had intercourse through the same opening. For a long time he denied his own bowels, and once said he did not talk about them because he did not want to consider his behind part of himself.

Further evidence that depersonalization represents a wish to return to a time when the infant



and his mother are one—a return ultimately to the mother's uterus—is the finding that this patient, just before the outbreak of his attack and to some extent throughout it, had many elaborate fantasies which he himself associated with being devoured, being faeces, being a baby in his mother's body.

The wish inherent in depersonalization to give up painful reality and to unite with the mother seems innocuous enough, and should lead to a state of narcissistic pleasure. But it is not without danger. Since reality sense is reached through clearly identifying the body itself, and most importantly the penis, giving up reality and returning to the original state would involve losing the penis. Accordingly, any temptation to regress to a primary narcissistic state (and such a temptation must be present in all regressions) contains a great danger—that the penis will be lost. It is this danger, I believe, that accounts for much of the fear which boys and men have of women. Direct castration and men have of women. Direct castration fears do not satisfactorily account for every shade and meaning of this fear. An additional factor is the strength of instinctual impulses aimed at bringing about a subservient merging with the mother, a union that would dissolve phallic identity. Union on this basis, so strongly desired, is understandably most strongly feared.

Whether all phenomena involving interruption of consciousness or disturbance of reality sense have their roots in this very early stage of development, I do not know. Freud in *The Interpretation of Dreams* implies something of this sort when he says that dreams of familiarity represent a wish to return to the mother, i.e. the feeling 'I have seen this before' or 'I have been here before' can relate only to one place—the mother's genitals. In any case, it is remarkable how clearly such things are represented in a great many case reports on the subject of depersonalization. Clinically, this relationship is useful. When a patient becomes confused, does not know what is what or who is who, he is most likely close to material having to do with his mother—very commonly with the primal scene.

#### THE MECHANISM PRODUCING DEPERSONALIZATION

This patient, an adolescent boy with strong homosexual attachments, had, through analysis, been freed to some extent from those attachments so that he could now seek a girl on a heterosexual basis. This new kind of relationship to a girl, which was active, positive, and

possessive, was, however, not entirely new. Actually it was a return to the position he had once held and had given up as a part of his attempt to resolve his oedipal conflicts. In the oedipal period, instead of repressing his positive attachment to his mother, he had defended himself against it by identifying with her and by subsequently having only homosexual object attachments. He was further protected from his positive heterosexual wishes by his strong fear of girls. Because the original positive wishes towards his mother had not been destroyed by repression, or confined by it to whatever limbo is so effectively used in the case of oedipal impulses, those impulses remained strong, constantly tempting, and dangerous. Accordingly his first venture in adolescence to seek a girl in this positive way was both exciting and terrifying. The intense longing that developed placed him directly in the path of two great dangers: when they met, his girl might say (i), 'I hate you!' or (ii), 'I love you!'

In the case of the first danger, rejection, the ego carried out a pattern of repetition-compulsion, adopting in advance the identical reaction which at an earlier time appeared only after a traumatic observation had been made and a feeling of loss had been experienced. It can be postulated that in the original situation in his early childhood he had felt an intimate and secure relationship with his mother. Then, upon witnessing the primal scene—coming unexpectedly upon his mother obviously being possessed by the father—his own imagined status was shattered. At that early time his reaction must have been one of unreality, i.e. in order to heal the already inflicted wound he painted the sight with a sense of unreality. From then on, whenever, as now, he found himself in a vulnerable position, he recreated the earlier defence.

The second danger, that his girl might say 'I love you!' resulted from his strong excitement and wish to give himself up to her—and, in the process, lose his penis. His overt fear during the attack that, because of confusion, he might suddenly stand up in class and shout out 'I love you!' was a direct expression, in the symptom, of his dangerous positive feelings.

Depersonalization, the patient's defence against these two dangers, constituted a disorder in the system consciousness. The mental organ, consciousness, normally has the task of recording all inner and outer stimuli, and should have recognized in this patient at this time all the

wishes and fears mentioned above and have acted upon them. That is to say, a cathexis of consciousness should have occurred, a cathexis consisting of desexualized energy working in the service of the ego in recording observations. Instead, the entire libidinal cathexis, or a major portion of it, was displaced directly upon consciousness as if consciousness were an object. Because this displaced cathexis carried with it the full erotic and aggressive meaning of the impulses themselves, consciousness became hypercathected with sexualized libido. As a result of this hypercathexis the normal function of consciousness came under inhibition, and the system consciousness, instead of recording the impulses, attempted to represent them—to represent various shocking experiences of loss and a longing to be reunited with all lost objects, particularly with the mother. The symptom is thus to be regarded as a hysterical conversion.

Hypercathexis of consciousness with sexualized libido is, I think, the same point that Oberndorf makes repeatedly. He calls it eroticization of thought. The intense feelings attached to the original impulses seem to come through, not greatly modified. The experience of depersonalization was in this case, and usually is, a highly charged one, with intense anxiety and conflicting feelings of many kinds. It is almost as if the feelings are preserved at the expense of thought. Even those patients whose depersonalization consists in having no feelings, or dead feelings, may complain bitterly about it.

In spite of the hypercathexis of the system consciousness and the inhibition or distortion of its function, the process is remarkably selective.<sup>2</sup> Many parts of consciousness remain unaffected and there seems to be no actual interference with the sensory organs; things are heard and seen accurately.

Although depersonalization creates a partial separation from reality, the symptom actually has the opposite purpose—to prevent a break with reality. This seeming paradox is somewhat analogous to the purpose of a dream which, although seeming to disturb sleep, has the main aim of guarding the sleep. So, too, this patient's depersonalization. When people in the outer world threatened to arouse in him feelings so strong that he feared he would be destroyed, he caused these external objects to seem unreal, thereby making them less disturbing and thus allowing him to continue contact with them.

<sup>2</sup> An example of selectivity was this patient's contrasting behaviour the first day of his depersonalization.

All neurotic symptoms, of course, have this same general aim of guarding object relationships, but the mechanism is particularly striking in depersonalization.

#### PAIN AND DEPERSONALIZATION

One aspect of a symptom that sometimes produces a good deal of information is the way it ends. In the present case depersonalization disappeared dramatically following an outburst of anger, stimulated, it would seem, by observing a representation of the primal scene. It was as if, through his unequivocal expression of anger, the patient admitted to himself the reality of his parents' intercourse and the pain that the observation caused him. Having acknowledged the pain, there was then no need for denying the observation and thus no need for depersonalization.

This clinical finding suggests that a complementary relationship exists between pain and reality, viz. a true perception of pain is incompatible with feelings of unreality, and a true sense of what is real depends upon an accurate perception of pain.

The intimate relationship between pain and reality begins very early in life. Freud, in 'Instincts and their Vicissitudes' (9), points out that unpleasant sensations, whether internal or external, are all made to appear, by projection, as part of the outer world, whereas pleasant sensations are taken in and claimed for the internal organization. Reality is thus equated with painful stimuli. Hoffer (11) goes a step further. 'In addition,' he says, 'we have to think of another differentiating system in our body, that between "pain" and "not pain"'. The infant learns when communicating with the world at large (which need not yet be for it a world separated from its own self) that it has to regard the pain barrier.' Hoffer goes on to say that development of the pain barrier is a very potent safeguard against self-inflicted pain and that 'when reality testing is learned the pain barrier plays its part, and when neglected leads to traumatic experiences'.

The probability that painful rather than pleasurable sensations stimulate the first beginnings of reality testing is not hard to believe. Pleasurable sensations, having no alien quality, cannot create a line of demarcation distinguishing inner from outer, and thus cannot give rise to any concept of external reality. Unpleasant

Although in many areas he was extremely confused, he did beat at chess a boy who usually beat him.



sensations, however, have quite the opposite effect: they at once establish a line of demarcation which makes imperative a differentiation between what is on one side of the line (body or body ego) and what is on the other side (reality).

The infant, understandably, does not welcome this intrusion of painful reality and, according to Freud (7, p. 566), attempts to continue the pleasurable state by means of a wish-hallucination, or (8) to deny the painful state through a negative hallucination. It is following the failure of these hallucinations to bring gratification that the infant is faced with a new concept, the reality principle: 'what was conceived of was no longer that which was pleasant, but that which was real, even if it should be unpleasant' (Freud, 'Formulations Regarding the Two Principles in Mental Functioning' (5)).

According to Hoffer (12), the infant's attempt to transform the image of a real, painful stimulus into something unreal by means of a negative hallucination is the same mechanism which in later life is called derealization (depersonalization).

This kind of attempt to disregard the reality of pain was typical of my patient. Pain was experienced as an unpleasant sensation, but it did not have the power to protect him from injury. An example was his masturbation. He masturbated in such a destructive way that he caused numerous superficial injuries to his penis, yet these injuries, although painful, were not a barrier standing in the way of self-harm, and he continued to masturbate violently. For a long time his unresponsiveness to pain remained uninfluenced by analysis. Then a few weeks before the attack of depersonalization a significant change occurred.

One manifestation of this change was the way he rode his bicycle. Customarily he rode with a complete and dangerous recklessness. He had many accidents, and his bike was repeatedly being broken. From time to time, however, he would not ride at all. The first few times this happened, he gave the excuse that the machine was broken. However, after a few of these vacations from riding, it became clear to both of us that they had nothing to do with the bike being broken—the reason he did not ride hinged on his fear of being killed. This total abstinence was a sign of progress. But it was an all-or-none proposition. Finally, however, just prior to the attack of depersonalization he found himself, while riding, responding to a fear of danger, i.e. for the first time he tried to ride with care.

Related to the patient's defect in respect to bodily pain was his lack of jealousy. Although he had many friends, he lost them with no sense of loss. It was as if, not being jealous, he was unprotected against loss. That is, since there was no jealousy, there was no suffering; and without suffering, there was none of that protection which it is the purpose of this mental pain to provide. Jealousy, like pain, was treated as if it was unreal, and the result was a loss of the protection of the pain barrier.

With jealousy, as with pain, analysis brought about a gradual change, and small signs of suffering at the prospect of losing people began to appear. However, the first real jealousy did not occur until just two weeks before the attack of depersonalization. Then, following a temporary loss of the girl over a week-end, the symptom made its initial appearance. The entire jealous feeling came to a head when he saw his parents together in bed, and later in the day when he saw his girl alone with another boy. What happened on this latter occasion was that at last his ego—the seat of jealousy—allowed itself full and clear expression of his terrible hurt and his overwhelming anger.

Additional evidence of the pain-reality relationship was found immediately following the period of depersonalization. The patient reported that masturbation had now become an entirely different experience. Formerly, although the act was very exciting, the orgasm itself was neither exciting nor pleasurable; rather, it was unpleasant. What happened was this: as soon as he felt the orgasm beginning, he would stop masturbating entirely. Not only that—the sensation would stop, too, and his penis would feel dead as if not there or not real.

Now, however, a marked change occurred. For the first time the orgasm was pleasant; for the first time his penis stayed alive and real, as it were, right through the act. It was as if his new awareness of pain allowed him to perceive his body more accurately, especially his penis, whereupon reality became more fully cathected. Then, as a further consequence, return of his pain sense made possible the experiencing of pleasure and, in particular, sexual pleasure.

#### THE SUPEREGO IN REALITY-SENSE FORMATION

As a final step in discussing the symptom, I should like to consider its relationship to the superego.

When the patient first came to analysis, he was highly moral and seemed to have a very demand-



ing superego. However, as analysis progressed, it became increasingly evident that a large part of his restraint was based purely upon external pressure and had little to do with conscience. For example, he relied very heavily upon his girl friend's resistance to control his sexual behaviour. It was as if he had remained suspended at a point of actual castration fear and of strong identification with his parents, but without an actual repression or internalization of either of these states, and thus he had never really had available a freely acting or personal moral sense.

This reaction seemed to relate, as did his choice of symptom, to a hyperevaluation of intellect. He denied his superego, as he did his body, in favour of his intellect.<sup>3</sup> His parents did very much the same. Like many other 'intellectuals', they were unwilling to be so primitive as to admit of having a moral conscience which, through a sense of guilt, would be granted the power to control their behaviour. In its place, they brought intellectual and practical values. One should control one's behaviour, such persons contend, not because certain actions are right, but because it can be scientifically or logically proved that to behave in certain ways is beneficial and will bring best results, best health, best happiness. Truth is all; cause and effect are gods; freedom of intellect is paramount; morality is nothing but superstition; religion is pagan. And withal, in this case, as in many such others, the family were absolutely above reproach in their personal life. They forced themselves to behave well through ever-wary conscious control—a most uneconomical way of life.

This kind of reaction points to the superego's position in relation to formation of reality sense. The development of strong oedipal ties, followed by their resolution through the child's internalization of parental attitudes as the basis for the superego, is essential to reality-sense formation.

In discussing formation of the superego, Freud, in 'The Economic Problem in Masochism' (10), says the following: 'These same persons, however, whose effect persists as the power of conscience after they have ceased to be objects of libidinal impulses in the id, belong also to the real outer world. This is where they came from; their power, behind which lie concealed all the influences of the past

and of tradition, was one of the most acutely felt manifestations of reality. In virtue of their coincidence the superego, which replaces the Oedipus complex, becomes also a representative of the real outer world and is thus a model for the ego's endeavours.'

The first step in reality sense development—the original infantile demarcation of body boundaries—leads to the identification of the body as something separate from external objects, something which therefore might be called body-reality. The second step—differentiation of the ego from reality—does not come about until the superego is formed. So long as a child is fully dependent upon his parents for guidance in all things, his ego does not come under scrutiny as to its precise boundaries, and accordingly external reality is to the same degree undefined. That is to say, in any given situation it is never clear to the child—although it is not absolutely unclear either—whether a certain line of behaviour is to be carried out because it is his idea or his parents', for his pleasure or theirs, because of his control or theirs.

The same picture, of course, is commonly seen in neurotic patients who carry over an infantile remnant of this lack of ego identity, making them part of everyone they meet. This factor is most clearly seen in the 'as if' personalities described by Deutsch (1). In her 1942 paper, Deutsch says that the 'as if' syndrome bears a close relationship to depersonalization, but differs in that the 'as if' individual does not perceive the disturbance in himself. However, from her description of these patients, there is no doubt that along with defects in their ego and superego, there is a severe defect in their reality sense.

Normally the superego and reality sense develop together. It is only when oedipal conflicts come to a head that an adequate stimulus appears to force the child literally to face reality. And just as his concept of bodily reality depends upon defining anatomical and physiological boundaries, so ego reality comes about through delineating his mental entity and differentiating himself from the ego of others.

This separation, this birth of the ego, is brought about by internalizing the still-attached part of the parent's ego, much in the same way as at birth the body of the infant takes on the

with the parents who, after all, are represented by the superego.

<sup>3</sup> Denial of the superego in adolescents is described by Anna Freud in *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence* (4, p. 182) as an attempt to ward off incestuous contact



functions until then performed by his mother. As a result the child is at last free to have an object relationship in a real way. Heretofore object love has been, partially at least, a carry-over of the narcissistic state.

With this oedipal change, too, there comes a new concept of the body itself, particularly the genitals. The penis, if this reality development progresses favourably, acquires a real quality it formerly did not possess. Because it is now real, the possibility of its loss becomes real, and the castration complex comes about. So long as the penis does not exist as a mental as well as a bodily reality its loss cannot be feared. Significantly, depersonalization patients commonly have no genital feeling or their penis seems dead, non-existent, or non-reacting.

Even with the establishment of the superego, however, development of reality sense is not yet finished. There is still a final stage. That, of course, is sexual maturity. Up till puberty, although sexual feelings and wishes of all kinds exist and are acted upon, they are not real. Now, at puberty, with the establishment of ejaculation and of menstruation, all sex is given a new meaning.

My patient demonstrated, above everything else, the effect of sexual reality upon reality sense. Immediately upon his first ejaculation a great many things changed. Fantasies of all kinds which he had had for years, without much conflict, suddenly became very disturbing. For example, he had had, without shame or fear, fantasies of intercourse with his mother and of impregnating her; then, after the onset of ejaculation, these fantasies brought him real fear that something of that sort might actually take place. Unable to face these painful possibilities, he set up a reassuring sense of unreality.

In some people there seems to be a readiness to understand, accept, and profit from all the real events of life, internal or external, as if these people were prepared for them very early through excellent clarity in the knowledge and feeling of what is they and what is not they. Others, never clear about themselves, are equally unclear about reality. General experience in analysis is that when such patients finally discover themselves, particularly their body, dramatic advances in reality sense often occur; suddenly these patients become much more realistic.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) DEUTSCH, HELENE (1942). 'Some Forms of Emotional Disturbance and their Relationship to Schizophrenia.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 11.
- (2) FEDERN, PAUL (1926). 'Some Variations in Ego Feeling' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 7.
- (3) — (1928). 'Narcissism in the Structure of the Ego.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 9.
- (4) FREUD, ANNA. *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence*.
- (5) FREUD, SIGMUND. 'Formulations Regarding the Two Principles in Mental Functioning.' *C.P.*, 4. (London: Hogarth.)
- (6) — (1936). 'A Disturbance of Memory on the Acropolis.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 22, 1941.
- (7) — *The Interpretation of Dreams*. Standard Ed., 5.
- (8) — 'Metapsychological Supplement to the Theory of Dreams.' *C.P.*, 4.
- (9) — 'Instincts and Their Vicissitudes.' *C.P.*, 4.
- (10) — 'The Economic Problem in Masochism.' *C.P.*, 2.
- (11) HOFFER, WILLIE (1950). 'Oral Aggressiveness and Ego Development.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 31.
- (12) — 'Development of the Body Ego.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 5.
- (13) NUNBERG, HERMAN. 'States of Depersonalization in the Light of Libido Theory.' *Practice and Theory of Psychoanalysis*. N. & M. Dis. Mon., No. 74. New York, 1948.
- (14) OBERNDORF, C. P. (1933). 'A Theory of Depersonalization.' *Transactions of the American Neurological Assn.*
- (15) — (1934). 'Depersonalization in Relation to Erotization of Thought.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 15.
- (16) — (1935). 'The Genesis of the Feeling of Unreality.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 16.
- (17) — (1935). 'Feelings of Unreality.' *Arch. Neurol. & Psychiatry*, 36.
- (18) — (1939). 'On Retaining the Sense of Reality in States of Depersonalization.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 20.
- (19) — (1940). 'The Role of Anxiety in Depersonalization.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 21.

(Received 23 April, 1956.)

# DIFFERENTIATION OF THE PSYCHOTIC FROM THE NON-PSYCHOTIC PERSONALITIES<sup>1</sup>

By

W. R. BION, LONDON

The theme of this paper is that the differentiation of the psychotic from the non-psychotic personalities depends on a minute splitting of all that part of the personality that is concerned with awareness of internal and external reality, and the expulsion of these fragments so that they enter into or engulf their objects. I shall describe this process in some detail and shall then discuss its consequences and how they affect treatment.

The conclusions were arrived at in analytic contact with schizophrenic patients and have been tested by me in practice. I ask your attention for them because they have led to developments in my patients which are analytically significant and not to be confused, either with the remissions familiar to psychiatrists, or with that class of improvement that it is impossible to relate to the interpretations given or to any coherent body of psycho-analytic theory. I believe that the improvements I have seen deserve psycho-analytic investigation.

I owe my clarification of the obscurity that pervades the whole of a psychotic analysis mainly to three pieces of work. As they are crucial for understanding what follows I shall remind you of them. First: Freud's (2) description, referred to by me in my paper to the London Congress of 1953 (1), of the mental apparatus called into activity by the demands of the reality principle and in particular of that part of it which is concerned with the consciousness attached to the sense-organs. Second: Melanie Klein's (5) description of the phantasied sadistic attacks that the infant makes on the breast during the paranoid-schizoid phase, and third: her discovery of projective identification (7). By this mechanism the patient splits off a part of his personality and projects it into the object where it becomes installed, sometimes as a persecutor, leaving the psyche, from which it has been split off, correspondingly impoverished.

Lest it be supposed that I attribute the development of schizophrenia exclusively to certain mechanisms apart from the personality that employs them I shall enumerate now what I think are the preconditions for the mechanisms on which I wish to focus your attention. There is the environment, which I shall not discuss at this time, and the personality, which must display four essential features. These are: a preponderance of destructive impulses so great that even the impulse to love is suffused by them and turned to sadism; a hatred of reality, internal and external, which is extended to all that makes for awareness of it; a dread of imminent annihilation (7) and, finally, a premature and precipitate formation of object relations, foremost amongst which is the transference, whose thinness is in marked contrast with the tenacity with which they are maintained. The prematurity, thinness, and tenacity are pathognomonic and have an important derivation, about which I can say nothing to-day, in the conflict, never in the schizophrenic decided, between the life and death instincts.

Before I consider the mechanisms that spring from these characteristics I must dispose briefly of a few points that concern the transference. The relationship with the analyst is premature, precipitate, and intensely dependent; when under pressure of his life and death instincts, the patient broadens the contact, two concurrent streams of phenomena become manifest. First, splitting of his personality and projection of the fragments into the analyst (i.e. projective identification) becomes overactive, with consequent confusional states such as Rosenfeld (9) has described. Second, the mental and other activities by which the dominant impulse, be it of life or death instincts, strives to express itself, are at once subjected to mutilation by the temporarily subordinated impulse. Harassed by the mutilations and striving to escape the confusional states, the patient returns to the

<sup>1</sup> Paper read before the British Psycho-Analytical Society on 5 October, 1955.



restricted relationship. Oscillation between the attempt to broaden the contact and the attempt to restrict continues throughout the analysis.

To return now to the characteristics I listed as intrinsic to the schizophrenic personality. These constitute an endowment that makes it certain that the possessor of it will progress through the paranoid-schizoid and depressive positions in a manner markedly different from that of one not so endowed. The difference hinges on the fact that this combination of qualities leads to minute fragmentation of the personality, particularly of the apparatus of awareness of reality which Freud described as coming into operation at the behest of the reality principle, and quite excessive projection of these fragments of personality into external objects.

I described some aspects of these theories in my paper to the International Congress of 1953 (1) when I was speaking of the association of the depressive position with the development of verbal thought and the significance of this association for awareness of internal and external reality. In this paper I am taking up the same story only at a much earlier stage, namely at the outset of the patient's life. I am dealing with phenomena in the paranoid-schizoid position which are associated ultimately with the inchoation of verbal thought. How this should be so will, I hope, presently emerge.

The theories of Freud and Melanie Klein to which I referred earlier must now be considered in more detail. Quoting his formulation in his paper on 'Neurosis and Psychosis' in 1924, Freud defined one of the features distinguishing the neuroses from the psychoses as: 'in the former the ego, in virtue of its allegiance to reality, suppresses a part of the id (the life of instinct), whereas in the psychoses the same ego in the service of the id, withdraws itself from a part of reality' (4). I assume that when Freud speaks of the allegiance of the ego to reality he is speaking of the developments he described as taking place with the institution of the reality principle. He said, 'the new demands made a succession of adaptations necessary in the mental apparatus, which, on account of insufficient or uncertain knowledge, we can only detail very cursorily'. He then lists: the heightened significance of the sense organs directed towards the outer world and of the consciousness attached to them; attention, which he calls a special function which had to search the outer world in order that its data might be already familiar if an urgent inner

need should arise; a system of notation whose task was to deposit the results of this periodical activity of consciousness which he describes as a part of that which we call memory; judgement which had to decide whether a particular idea was true or false; the employment of motor discharge in appropriate alteration of reality and not simply in unburdening the mental apparatus of accretions of stimuli; and, finally, thought which he says made it possible to tolerate the frustration which is an inevitable accompaniment of action by virtue of its quality as an experimental way of acting. As will be seen I very much extend the function and importance of thought, but otherwise accept this classification of ego function, which Freud put forward as putative, as giving concreteness to a part of the personality with which this paper is concerned. It accords well with clinical experience and illuminates events which I should have found infinitely more obscure without it.

I would make two modifications in Freud's description to bring it into closer relation with the facts. I do not think, at least as touches those patients likely to be met with in analytic practice, that the ego is ever wholly withdrawn from reality. I would say that its contact with reality is masked by the dominance, in the patient's mind and behaviour, of an omnipotent phantasy that is intended to destroy either reality or the awareness of it, and thus to achieve a state that is neither life nor death. Since contact with reality is never entirely lost, the phenomena which we are accustomed to associate with the neuroses are never absent and serve to complicate the analysis, when sufficient progress has been made, by their presence amidst psychotic material. On this fact, that the ego retains contact with reality, depends the existence of a non-psychotic personality parallel with, but obscured by, the psychotic personality.

My second modification is that the withdrawal from reality is an illusion, not a fact, and arises from the deployment of projective identification against the mental apparatus listed by Freud. Such is the dominance of this phantasy that it is evident that it is no phantasy, but a fact, to the patient, who acts as if his perceptual apparatus could be split into minute fragments and projected into his objects.

As a result of these modifications we reach the conclusion that patients ill enough, say, to be certified as psychotic, contain in their psyche a non-psychotic part of the personality, a prey



to the various neurotic mechanisms with which psycho-analysis has made us familiar, and a psychotic part of the personality which is so far dominant that the non-psychotic part of the personality, with which it exists in negative juxtaposition, is obscured.

One concomitant of the hatred of reality that Freud remarked is the psychotic infant's phantasies of sadistic attacks on the breast which Melanie Klein described as a part of the paranoid-schizoid phase (7). I wish to emphasize that in this phase the psychotic splits his objects, and contemporaneously all that part of his personality, which would make him aware of the reality he hates, into exceedingly minute fragments, for it is this that contributes materially to the psychotic's feeling that he cannot restore his objects or his ego. As a result of these splitting attacks, all those features of the personality which should one day provide the foundation for intuitive understanding of himself and others are jeopardized at the outset. All the functions which Freud described as being, at a later stage, a developmental response to the reality principle, that is to say, consciousness of sense impressions, attention, memory, judgement, thought, have brought against them, in such inchoate forms as they may possess at the outset of life, the sadistic splitting eviscerating attacks that lead to their being minutely fragmented and then expelled from the personality to penetrate, or encyst, the objects. In the patient's phantasy the expelled particles of ego lead an independent and uncontrolled existence, either contained by or containing the external objects; they continue to exercise their functions as if the ordeal to which they have been subjected had served only to increase their number and provoke their hostility to the psyche that ejected them. In consequence the patient feels himself to be surrounded by bizarre objects whose nature I shall now describe.

Each particle is felt to consist of a real object which is encapsulated in a piece of personality that has engulfed it. The nature of this complete particle will depend partly on the character of the real object, say a gramophone, and partly on the character of the particle of personality that engulfs it. If the piece of personality is concerned with sight, the gramophone when played is felt to be watching the patient; if with hearing, then the gramophone when played is felt to be listening to the patient. The object, angered at being engulfed, swells up, so to speak, and suffuses and controls the piece of personality

that engulfs it: to that extent the particle of personality has become a thing. Since these particles are what the patient depends on for use as the prototypes of ideas—later to form the matrix from which words should spring—this suffusion of the piece of personality by the contained but controlling object leads the patient to feel that words are the actual things they name and so adds to the confusions, described by Segal, that arise because the patient equates, but does not symbolize. The fact that the patient uses these bizarre objects for achieving thought leads now to a fresh problem. If we consider that one of the patient's objects in using splitting and projective identification is to rid himself of awareness of reality it is clear that he could achieve the maximum of severance from reality with the greatest economy of effort if he could launch these destructive attacks on the link, whatever it is, that connects sense impressions with consciousness. In my paper to the 1953 International Congress (1) I showed that awareness of psychic reality depended on the development of a capacity for verbal thought the foundation of which was linked with the depressive position. It is impossible to go into this now. I refer you to Melanie Klein's 1930 paper on 'The Importance of Symbol-formation in the Development of the Ego' (6) and to the paper given to the British Psychological Society (1955) by H. Segal (10). In this, Segal demonstrates the importance of symbol formation and explores its relationship to verbal thought and the reparative drives normally associated with the depressive position. I am concerned with an earlier stage in the same story. It is my belief that the mischief that becomes much more apparent in the depressive position has in fact been initiated in the paranoid-schizoid phase when the foundations for primitive thought should be laid, but are not, because of the overaction of splitting and projective identification.

Freud attributes to thought the function of providing a means of restraint of action. But he goes on to say, 'It is probable that thinking was originally unconscious, in so far as it rose above mere ideation and turned to the relations between the object-impressions, and that it became endowed with further qualities which were perceptible to consciousness only through its connection with the memory traces of words' (2). My experiences have led me to suppose that some kind of thought, related to what we should call ideographs and sight rather than to words and hearing, exists at the outset.



This thought depends on a capacity for balanced introjection and projection of objects and, *a fortiori*, on awareness of them. This is within the capacity of the non-psychotic part of the personality, partly because of the splitting and ejection of the apparatus of awareness I have already described and partly for reasons I am coming to now.

Thanks to the operations of the non-psychotic part of the personality the patient is aware that introjection is leading to the formation of the unconscious thought of which Freud speaks as 'turned to the relations between object-impressions'. Now I believe that it is this unconscious thought which Freud describes as turned to the relations between the object-impressions which is responsible for the 'consciousness attached to' the sense impressions. I am fortified in this belief by his statement twelve years later in the paper on 'The Ego and the Id'. In this he says 'that the question "How does a thing become conscious?" could be put more advantageously thus: "How does a thing become pre-conscious?" And the answer would be: "By coming into connection with the verbal images that correspond to it"' (3). In my 1953 paper I said that verbal thought is bound up with awareness of psychic reality (1); this I also believe to be true of the early pre-verbal thought of which I am now speaking. In view of what I have already said of the psychotic's attacks on all that mental apparatus that leads to consciousness of external and internal reality, it is to be expected that the deployment of projective identification would be particularly severe against the thought, of whatsoever kind, that turned to the relations between object-impressions, for if this link could be severed, or better still never forged, then at least consciousness of reality would be destroyed even though reality itself could not be. But in fact the work of destruction is already half done as the material from which thought is forged, in the non-psychotic by balanced introjection and projection, is not available to the psychotic part of the personality, because the displacement of projection and introjection by projective identification has left him only with the bizarre objects I have described.

In fact, not only is primitive thought attacked because it links sense-impressions of reality with consciousness but, thanks to the psychotic's over-endowment with destructiveness, the splitting processes are extended to the links within the thought processes themselves. As Freud's

phrase regarding thought being turned to the relations between object-impressions implies, this primitive matrix of ideographs from which thought springs contains within itself links between one ideograph and another. All these are now attacked till finally two objects cannot be brought together in a way which leaves each object with its intrinsic qualities intact and yet able, by their conjunction, to produce a new mental object. Consequently the formation of symbols, which depends for its therapeutic effect on the ability to bring together two objects so that their resemblance is made manifest, yet their difference left unimpaired, now becomes difficult. At a still later stage the result of these splitting attacks is seen in the denial of articulation as a principle for the combining of words. This last does not mean that objects cannot be brought together; as I shall show later when speaking of agglomeration, that is by no means true. Further, since that-which-links has been not only minutely fragmented but also projected out into objects to join the other bizarre objects, the patient feels surrounded by minute links which, being impregnated now with cruelty, link objects together cruelly.

To conclude my description of the fragmentation of the ego and its expulsion into and about its objects, I shall say that I believe the processes I have described to be the central factor, in so far as such a factor can be isolated without distortion, in the differentiation of the psychotic from the non-psychotic part of the personality. It takes place at the outset of the patient's life. The sadistic attacks on the ego and on the matrix of thought, together with projective identification of the fragments, make it certain that from this point on there is an ever-widening divergence between the psychotic and non-psychotic parts of the personality until at last the gulf between them is felt to be unbridgeable.

The consequences for the patient are that he now moves, not in a world of dreams, but in a world of objects which are ordinarily the furniture of dreams. His sense impressions appear to have suffered mutilation of a kind which would be appropriate had they been attacked as the breast is felt to be attacked in the sadistic phantasies of the infant (5). The patient feels imprisoned in the state of mind he has achieved, and unable to escape from it because he feels he lacks the apparatus of awareness of reality which is both the key to escape and the freedom to which he would escape. The sense of im-



prisonment is intensified by the menacing presence of the expelled fragments within whose planetary movements he is contained. These objects, primitive yet complex, partake of qualities which in the non-psychotic personality are peculiar to matter, anal objects, senses, ideas and superego.

The diversity of such objects, dependent as it is on the sense by which they are suffused, prevents more than the cursory indication of their mode of genesis than I have given. The relation of these objects to material for ideographic thought leads the patient to confound real objects with primitive ideas and therefore to confusion when they obey the laws of natural science and not those of mental functioning. If he wishes to bring back any of these objects in an attempt at restitution of the ego, and in analysis he feels impelled to make the attempt, he has to bring them back by projective identification in reverse and by the route by which they were expelled. Whether he feels he has had one of these objects put into him by the analyst, or whether he feels he has taken it in, he feels the ingress as an assault. The extreme degree to which he has carried the splitting of objects and ego alike makes any attempt at synthesis hazardous. Furthermore, as he has rid himself of that-which-joins, his capacity for articulation, the methods available for synthesis are felt to be macilent; he can compress but cannot join, he can fuse but cannot articulate. The capacity to join is felt, as a result of its ejection, to have become, like all other expelled particles, infinitely worse than they were when ejected. Any joining that takes place is done with a vengeance, that is to say in a manner expressly contrary to the wishes of the patient at the moment. In the course of the analysis this process of compression or agglomeration loses some of its malignancy and then fresh problems arise.

I must now draw your attention to a matter that demands a paper to itself and therefore cannot be more than mentioned here. It is implicit in my description that the psychotic personality or part of the personality has used splitting and projective identification as a substitute for repression. Where the non-psychotic part of the personality resorts to repression as a means of cutting off certain trends in the mind both from consciousness and from other forms of manifestation and activity, the psychotic part of the personality has attempted to rid itself of the apparatus on which the psyche depends to

carry out the repressions; the unconscious would seem to be replaced by the world of dream furniture.

I shall now attempt a description of an actual session; it is a clinical experience based on these theories rather than the description of an experience on which the theories are based, but I hope I shall be able to indicate the material from previous sessions which led me to interpret as I did.

The patient at the time of this session, of which I describe a small part, had been coming to me for six years. He had once been as late as forty-five minutes, but had never missed a session; the sessions were never continued over time. On this morning he arrived a quarter of an hour late and lay on the couch. He spent some time turning from one side to another, ostensibly making himself comfortable. At length he said: 'I don't suppose I shall do anything today. I ought to have rung up my mother.' He paused, and then said: 'No; I thought it would be like this.' A more prolonged pause followed; then, 'Nothing but filthy things and smells', he said. 'I think I've lost my sight.' Some twenty-five minutes of our time had now passed, and at this point I made an interpretation, but before I repeat it I must discuss some previous material which will, I hope, make my intervention comprehensible.

When the patient was manoeuvring on the couch I was watching something with which I was familiar. Five years earlier he had explained that his doctor advised an operation for hernia and it was to be assumed that the discomfort caused by the hernia compelled these adjustments. It was, however, evident that more was involved than the hernia and rational activity to increase his physical comfort. I had sometimes asked him what these movements were, and to these questions his reply had been, 'Nothing'. Once he had said, 'I don't know'. I had felt that 'Nothing' was a thinly veiled invitation to me to mind my own business as well as a denial of something very bad. I continued, over the weeks and years, to watch his movements. A handkerchief was disposed near his right pocket; he arched his back—surely a sexual gesture here? A lighter fell out of his pocket. Should he pick it up? Yes. No, perhaps not. Well, yes. It was retrieved from the floor and placed by the handkerchief. Immediately a shower of coins spilled over the couch on to the floor. The patient lay still and waited. Perhaps, his gestures seemed to suggest, he had been unwise to bring



back the lighter. It had seemed to lead to the shower of coins. He waited, cautiously, furtively. And finally he made the remark I have reported. It reminded me of his descriptions, not given in any one session but produced over many months, of the tortuous manoeuvres through which he had to go before he went to the lavatory, or went down to breakfast, or telephoned to his mother. I was quite used to recalling many of the free associations which might easily be appropriate to the behaviour he displayed on this as on many other mornings. But these were now my associations, and once when I had tried to make use of such material in an interpretation that is exactly the reply he had made. One interpretation I remembered which had met with some success. I had pointed out that he felt much the same about these movements as he had about a dream he had told me—he had no ideas about the dream and he had no ideas about the movements. 'Yes', he had agreed, 'that's so'. 'And yet', I replied, 'you once had an idea about it; you thought it was the hernia.' 'That's nothing', he replied, and had then paused, almost slyly I thought, to see if I had grasped the point. So, 'Nothing is really a hernia', I said. 'No idea', he replied, 'only a hernia.' I had been left feeling that his 'no idea' was very like the 'no ideas' about the dreams or the movements, but for that session at least I could get no further. In this respect the movements and the dreams were very fair instances of mutilated attempts at co-operation, and this too was something to which I had drawn his attention.

It may have occurred to you, as it often had to me, that I was watching a series of miniature dramatic presentations, preparations for a baby's bath or feed, or a change of nappies, or a sexual seduction. More often it would be correct to say that the presentation was a conglomeration of bits out of a number of such scenes, and it was this impression that led me finally to suppose that I was watching an ideomotor activity, that is to say a means of expressing an idea without naming it. From this it was a short step to think of it as the kind of motor activity which Freud had described as characteristic of the supremacy of the pleasure principle (1). For, in so far as I was watching psychotic phenomena, the patient could not be acting in response to awareness of external reality; he was exhibiting the kind of motor discharge which Freud said under the supremacy of the pleasure principle 'had served to un-

burden the mental apparatus of accretions of stimuli, and in carrying out this task had sent innervations into the interior of the body (mien expressions of affect).' It was this impression which returned to me when the patient said, 'I don't expect I shall do anything today.' It was a remark that could refer to the likelihood of his producing any material for interpretation or, equally, to the likelihood that I would produce any interpretations. 'I ought to have rung up my mother' could mean that his failure to do so was being visited upon him by the punishment of not being able to do any analysis. It also meant that his mother would have known what to do about it—she could get associations out of him or interpretations out of me; something depended on what his mother meant to him, but on this point I was really in the dark. She had come in to the analysis as a simple working-class woman who had to go to work for the family; this view was entertained with the same degree of conviction that stamped his statements that the family were extremely wealthy. I was vouchsafed glimpses of her as a woman with such multitudinous social engagements that scant time was left her to satisfy the needs either of the patient, who was her eldest son, her eldest daughter, two years older than the patient, or the remainder of the family. She had been spoken of, if anything so inarticulate could be described as speech, as devoid of common sense or culture, though in the habit of visiting art galleries of international fame. I was left to infer that the bringing up of her children was ignorant and painstaking in the extreme. I may say that at the time of which I write I knew little more of his real mother than would be known by a person who had rid himself of his ego in the way I have described as typical of the psychotic personality. Nevertheless I had these impressions, and others which I omit, and on them I based my interpretations. The patient's responses to these interpretations were outright rejection as either quite inadmissible because wrong, or accurate but improperly arrived at in that I must have been using his mind (really his capacity for contact with reality) without his permission. It will be observed that he thereby expresses a jealous denial of my insight.

When the patient said, after a pause, that he knew it would be like this, I felt on fairly sure ground in assuming that it was I who was unlikely to do anything in that session and that his mother was some person or thing who could have enabled him to deal with me more satis-



factorily. This impression was strengthened by the next association.

If the theories I have described are correct, then, in any given situation, the patient who is ill enough, as this one was, to have achieved certification, has two main problems to solve, one appertaining to the non-psychotic part of the personality and one to the psychotic part. With this particular patient, at this particular juncture, the psychotic personality and its problems still obscured the non-psychotic personality and its problems. Nevertheless, as I hope to show, the latter were discernible in the material. The non-psychotic personality was concerned with a neurotic problem, that is to say a problem that centred on the resolution of a conflict of ideas and emotions to which the operation of the ego had given rise. But the psychotic personality was concerned with the problem of repair of the ego, and the clue to this lay in the fear that he had lost his sight. Since it was the psychotic problem that obtruded I dealt with that, taking his last association first. I told him that these filthy things and smells were what he felt he had made me do, and that he felt he had compelled me to defecate them out, including the sight he had put in to me.

The patient jerked convulsively and I saw him cautiously scanning what seemed to be the air around him. I accordingly said that he felt surrounded by bad and smelly bits of himself including his eyes which he felt he had expelled from his anus. He replied: 'I can't see.' I then told him he felt he had lost his sight and his ability to talk to his mother, or to me, when he had got rid of these abilities so as to avoid pain.

In this last interpretation I was making use of a session, many months earlier, in which the patient complained that analysis was torture, memory torture. I showed him then that when he felt pain, as evidenced in this session by the convulsive jerks, he achieved anaesthesia by getting rid of his memory and anything that could make him realize pain.

Patient: 'My head is splitting; may be my dark glasses.'

Now some five months previously I had worn dark glasses; the fact had, as far as I could tell, produced no reaction whatever from that day to this, but that becomes less surprising if we consider that I, wearing dark glasses, was felt by him as one of the objects to which I referred when describing the fate of the expelled particles of ego. I have explained that the psychotic personality seems to have to await the occurrence

of an apt event before it feels it is in possession of an ideograph suitable for use in communication with itself or with others. Reciprocally, other events, which might be supposed to have immediate significance for the non-psychotic personality, are passed by because they are felt to be significant only as ideographs serving no immediate need. In the present instance the problem created by my wearing dark glasses, in the non-psychotic part of the personality was obscured because the psychotic part of the personality was dominant; and in that part of the personality the event was merely significant as an ideograph for which it had had no immediate need. When at last the fact obtruded in analysis it had the appearance, superficially, of being perhaps some kind of delayed reaction, but such a view depends on the supposition that the association of the dark glasses was an expression of neurotic conflict in the non-psychotic part of the personality. In fact it was not a delayed expression of a conflict in the non-psychotic part of the personality but, as I shall show, the mobilization of an ideograph needed by the psychotic part of the personality for an immediate repair of an ego damaged by the excessive projective identification that I have described. Such obtrusions of fact, originally passed by in silence, must then be regarded not so much as significant because their appearance is delayed, but because they are evidence of activity in the psychotic part of the personality.

Assuming then that the dark glasses here are a verbal communication of an ideograph it becomes necessary to determine the interpretation of the ideograph. I shall have to compress, almost I fear to the point of risking incomprehensibility, the evidence in my possession. The glasses contained a hint of the baby's bottle. They were two glasses, or bottles, thus resembling the breast. They were dark because frowning and angry. They were of glass to pay him out for trying to see through them when they were breasts. They were dark because he needs darkness to spy on the parents in intercourse. They were dark because he had taken the bottle not to get milk but to see what the parents did. They were dark because he had swallowed them, and not simply the milk they had contained. And they were dark because the clear good objects had been made black and smelly inside him. All these attributes must have been achieved through the operation of the non-psychotic part of the personality. Added to these characteristics were those that I have



described as appertaining to them as part of the ego that has been expelled by projective identification, namely their hatred of him as part of himself he had rejected. Making use of these accretions of analytic experience, and still concentrating on the psychotic problem, that is to say, the need to repair the ego to meet the demands of the external situation, I said:

*Analyst.* Your sight has come back into you but splits your head; you feel it is very bad sight because of what you have done to it.

*Patient (moving in pain as if protecting his back passage).* Nothing.

*Analyst.* It seemed to be your back passage.

*Patient.* Moral strictures.

I told him that his sight, the dark glasses, were felt as a conscience that punished him, partly for getting rid of them to avoid pain, partly because he had used them to spy on me, and on his parents. I could not feel I had done justice to the compactness of the association.

It will be observed that I have not been able to offer any suggestion as to what might be stimulating these reactions in the patient. This is not surprising, for I am dealing with a psychotic problem, and since the psychotic problem as opposed to the non-psychotic problem is precisely related to the destruction of all the mental apparatus that brings awareness of stimuli from reality, the nature and even existence of such stimuli would not be discernible. However, the patient's next remark gave it.

*Patient.* The week-end; don't know if I can last it.

This is an instance of the way in which the patient felt he had repaired his capacity for contact and could therefore tell me what was going on around him. It was a phenomenon by now familiar to him and I didn't interpret it. Instead I said:

*Analyst.* You feel that you have to be able to get on without me. But to do that you feel you need to be able to see what happens around you, and even to be able to contact me; to be able to contact me at a distance, as you do your mother when you ring her up; so you tried to get your ability to see and talk back again from me.

*Patient.* Brilliant interpretation. (*With a sudden convulsion*) O God!

*Analyst.* You feel you can see and understand now, but what you see is so brilliant that it causes intense pain.

*Patient (clenching his fists and showing much tension and anxiety).* I hate you.

*Analyst.* When you see, what you see—the week-end break and the things you use darkness to spy on—fills you with hate of me and admiration.

It is my belief that at this point the restoration of the ego meant that the patient was confronted with the non-psychotic problem, the resolution of neurotic conflicts. This was supported by the reactions in the following weeks, when he would display his inability to tolerate the neurotic conflicts stimulated by reality and his attempt to solve that problem by projective identification. This would be followed by attempts to use me as his ego, anxieties about his insanity, further attempts to repair his ego and return to reality and neurosis; and so the cycle would repeat itself.

I have described this portion of a session in detail because it can be used to illustrate a number of points without burdening the reader with a number of different examples of association and interpretation. I have regretfully had to exclude some striking and dramatic material, because to include it without including a quite overwhelming mass of description of day-to-day mundane analysis with its load of sheer incomprehensibility, error, and so forth would produce an entirely misleading picture. At the same time I do not wish to leave any doubt that the approach I am describing is one which in my opinion is producing quite striking results. The change that took place in this patient during the weeks when I was able to demonstrate the interplay I have just described, was of a kind that I believe any analyst would accept as worth the name of psycho-analytic improvement. The patient's demeanour softened; his expression became much less tense. At the beginnings and ends of sessions he met my eyes and did not either evade me or, what with him had been a common event, focus beyond me as if I were the surface of a mirror before which he rehearsed some inner drama, a peculiarity that had often helped me to realize that I was not a real person to him. Unfortunately these phenomena are not easy to describe and I cannot dwell on the attempt; for I wish to draw attention to an improvement which I found, and still find with other patients, both surprising and baffling. As it touches the main theme of this paper I can deal with it by returning to the theoretical discussion that I interrupted to introduce my clinical example.

If verbal thought is that which synthesizes and articulates impressions, and is thus essential



to awareness of internal and external reality, it is to be expected that it will be subjected, on and off throughout the analysis, to destructive splitting and projective identification. I described the inception of verbal thought as appertaining to the depressive position; but the depression that is proper to this phase is itself something to which the psychotic personality objects and therefore the development of verbal thought comes under attack, its inchoate elements being expelled from the personality by projective identification whenever depression occurs. In her paper to the International Congress of 1955 Segal (11) described the manner in which the psyche deals with depression; I would refer you to that description as apposite to that part of the depressive position which I here include in the discussion of the development of verbal thought. But I have said that in the even earlier phase, the paranoid-schizoid position, thought processes that should be developing are in fact being destroyed. At this stage there is no question of verbal thought but only of inchoation of primitive thought of a pre-verbal kind. Excessive projective identification at this early stage prevents smooth introjection and assimilation of sense impressions and so denies the personality a firm base on which the inception of pre-verbal thought can proceed. Furthermore, not only is thought attacked, as itself being a link, but the factors which make for coherence in thought itself are similarly attacked so that in the end the elements of thought, the units, as it were, of which thought is made up, cannot be articulated. The growth of verbal thought is therefore compromised both by the continuing attacks I have described as typical of the depressive position, and by the fact of the long history of attacks on thought of any kind that precedes this.

The attempt to think, which is a central part of the total process of repair of the ego, involves the use of primitive pre-verbal modes which have suffered mutilation and projective identification. This means that the expelled particles of ego, and their accretions, have got to be brought back into control and therefore into the personality. Projective identification is therefore reversed and these objects are brought back by the same route as that by which they were expelled. This was expressed by a patient who said he had to use an intestine, not a brain, to think with, and emphasized the accuracy of his description by correcting me when, on a subsequent occasion, I spoke of his having taken in something by

swallowing it; the intestine does not swallow, he said. In order to bring them back, these objects have to be compressed. Owing to the hostility of the rejected function of articulation, itself now an object, the objects can only be joined inappropriately, or agglomerated. I suggested in my clinical example that the dark glasses were an instance of this kind of agglomeration of bizarre objects which were the product of projective identification of the ego. Furthermore, that owing to the patient's inability to distinguish between such objects and real objects he frequently had to wait for appropriate events to provide him with the ideograph his impulse to communicate required, and that this case was a reciprocal of this, namely an instance of the storing of an event not on account of its neurotic significance but on account of its value as an ideograph. Now this means that this particular use of dark glasses is fairly advanced. For one thing the storage of such an event for use as an ideograph approximates to Freud's description of a search for data, so that they might be already familiar, if an urgent inner need should arise, as a function of attention as one of the aspects of the ego. But it also shows, albeit in this instance in a somewhat rudimentary form, a skilful agglomeration which is successful in conveying meaning. Now the surprising, and even disconcerting, improvement of which I spoke touches this point of skilful agglomeration. For I have found not only that patients resorted more and more to ordinary verbal thought, thus showing an increased capacity for it and increased consideration for the analyst as an ordinary human being, but also that they seemed to become more and more skilful at this type of agglomerated rather than articulated speech. The whole point about civilized speech is that it greatly simplifies the thinker's or speaker's task. With that tool problems can be solved because at least they can be stated, whereas without it certain questions, no matter how important, cannot even be posed. The extraordinary thing is the *tour de force* by which primitive modes of thought are used by the patient for the statement of themes of great complexity. And I find it significant that his ability to do this improves concurrently with more welcome advances. I say more welcome because I have not yet satisfied myself that it is right to ignore the content of an association because dealing with it would keep the analyst talking at infinitely greater length than the patient. What, for example, is the correct



interpretation of the content of moral strictures? And having decided that, what is the correct procedure? For how long is one to continue the elucidation?

The particles which have to be employed share, as we have seen, the qualities of things. The patient seems to feel this as an additional obstacle to their re-entry. As these objects which are felt to have been expelled by projective identification become infinitely worse after expulsion than they were when originally expelled, the patient feels intruded upon, assaulted, and tortured by this re-entry even if willed by himself. This is shown, in the example I gave, by the convulsive movement of the patient and by his striking reaction to the 'brilliant' interpretation. But this last also shows that the senses, as part of the expelled ego, also become painfully compressed on being taken back, and this is often the explanation of the extremely painful tactile, auditory, and visual hallucinations in the grip of which he seems to labour. Depression and anxiety, being subject to the same mechanism, are similarly intensified until the patient is compelled to deal with

them by projective identification, as Segal described.

#### CONCLUSION

Experience of these theories in practice has convinced me that they have a real value and lead to improvements which even psychoanalysts may feel to deserve stern testing and scrutiny. Conversely, I do not think real progress with psychotic patients is likely to take place until due weight is given to the nature of the divergence between the psychotic and non-psychotic personality, and in particular the rôle of projective identification in the psychotic part of the personality as a substitute for regression in the neurotic part of the personality. The patient's destructive attacks on his ego and the substitution of projective identification for repression and introjection must be worked through. Further, I consider that this holds true for the severe neurotic, in whom I believe there is a psychotic personality concealed by neurosis as the neurotic personality is screened by psychosis in the psychotic, that has to be laid bare and dealt with.

#### REFERENCES

- (1) BION, W. R. (1953). 'Notes on the Theory of Schizophrenia.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 35.
- (2) FREUD, S. 'Formulations Regarding the Two Principles in Mental Functioning.' Standard Ed., 12.
- (3) — (1923). *The Ego and the Id*.
- (4) — (1924). 'Neurosis and Psychosis.'
- (5) KLEIN, M. (1928). 'Early Stages of the Oedipus Conflict.' *Contributions to Psycho-Analysis*, 1921-45.
- (6) — (1930). 'The Importance of Symbol Formation in the Development of the Ego.'
- (7) — (1946). 'Notes on Some Schizoid Mechanisms.' *Developments in Psycho-Analysis*.
- (8) KLEIN, M. *Developments in Psycho-Analysis*.
- (9) ROSENFELD, H. (1952). 'Transference-phenomena and Transference-analysis in an Acute Catatonic Schizophrenic Patient.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 33.
- (10) SEGAL, H. (1955). Paper on Symbol-formation read to the Medical Section of the British Psychological Society.
- (11) — (1956). 'Depression in the Schizophrenic.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 37.

(Received 15 October, 1956.)

## OBITUARY

### DR. ETHILDA BUDGETT-MEAKIN HERFORD

The death of Dr. Herford at the age of 84 marks the loss of one of the few remaining Members of the British Psycho-Analytical Society who took part in the activities of the small group responsible for establishing a society to study psycho-analysis in England.

Born in 1872, she was the daughter of Edward E. Meakin, for some years editor of the *Times* of Morocco, and of Sarah Anne Budgett, of an old Bristol family.

Dr. Herford was educated at the North London Collegiate School, and University College, London. As a preparation for medicine she worked for two years with a mission in the slums of Glasgow. She took a medical degree (M.B., B.S.) at the Royal Free Hospital in 1898 and 1899. After holding hospital appointments in England she went to India to do mission work, and was later Superintendent of the Victoria Hospital for Women in Calcutta. At this period of her life her main interest was in gynaecology, and she published papers on ectopic gestation and ovarian cysts.

Her marriage to Oscar Herford, a gifted violinist, took place in 1907 in Calcutta. They had three sons and a daughter, two of whom are also doctors. The family returned to live in England in 1917 and settled in Reading.

Dr. Herford's interest in psycho-analysis was aroused by the early publications of Freud, and extended through contacts with members of the staff of the Brunswick Square Clinic, founded by the late Dr. Jessie Murray and carried on subsequently by Dr. James Glover, Ella Sharpe and others. She was present at the International Psycho-Analytical Congress held at The Hague in 1920. There she met Karl Abraham and went to Berlin to work with him for a few months, and subsequently worked with Ferenczi at Budapest. On her return to Reading she gave her time to the study and treatment of functional nervous disorders by psycho-therapy and psycho-analysis in particular. She became a director of the British Hospital for Functional Nervous Disorders in Camden Town. In 1928 she published a paper in the *Journal of State Medicine* entitled 'The Infantile Mind and its Relations to Social Problems and Mental Hygiene'.

In October 1921 she was elected an Associate Member of the British Psycho-Analytical Society, Membership was granted her in 1934, and later she was appointed Hon. Physician to the Institute for the Scientific Treatment of Delinquency and the London Clinic of Psycho-Analysis.

Dr. Herford's life was characterized by an outstanding interest in human nature, and a desire to use every means available to relieve human suffering. With her husband she became a member of the Society of Friends and took an interest in organizations, local or international, which had the aim of promoting peace. A deep interest in education and the problems of young people led to an association with the late Howard Whitehouse in 1919 as a founder and governor of the very successful school at Bembridge, Isle of Wight.

Her decision to study medicine was made when this was not yet regarded as a desirable career for women, and she joined the psycho-analytical group without waiting to see if it was accepted by the medical profession as a whole, and made sacrifices to obtain psycho-analytical training with those best equipped to give it.

During the years following her admission to the British Psycho-Analytical Society she practised psycho-analysis in Reading. She attended the scientific meetings regularly and was present at almost every congress. Her attitude was always receptive, and she would take from the papers and discussions the material which appealed to her and in which she believed.

Towards the end of her life she did not spare herself the fatigue of travelling from Reading to attend scientific meetings in London, and retained her interest in the practice of psycho-analysis to the last. Her absence will be felt by all who knew her.

Her recreations were determined by her love of a simple outdoor life, and lack of interest in personal possessions. She went camping with her family to the end of her life, and died in her sleep when on holiday in a caravan by the sea which had always been for her a particular joy.

S. M. Payne.



## HILDE LEWINSKY

Hilde Lewinsky died in January 1956 after a sudden and short illness. She was only 48 years old. With her there has gone yet another of the small number of analytical colleagues connected with the Manchester Group, which dissolved after a short-lived attempt to establish a stable and fully fledged psycho-analytical branch society.

Hilde Lewinsky's interest in psychology induced her to obtain a degree in this subject at Manchester University as well as to undergo her training analysis at the same time. She read papers at the meetings of the British Psychological Society and, after finishing her analytical training in Manchester, read her membership paper at the British Psycho-Analytical Society. Subsequently she contributed to the meetings of the London Society and achieved the status of a training analyst. She read her last paper at the congress in Geneva, in 1955. In addition to her academic interests she maintained a busy analytical practice and worked in child guidance clinics. Her colleagues valued her capacity for

a logical and, if need be, practical approach, and her independence of attitude and opinion based on a seasoned conviction of the truth of Freud's teachings.

Coupled with these qualities were her many social gifts and her generous hospitality which ensured her reputation as a successful hostess. The loss engendered by her emigrating to the United States in 1952 was felt keenly in Manchester by personal friends and professional colleagues alike. We followed her new venture with some anxiety and watched her progress in the New World with relief and admiration.

Hilde Lewinsky's achievements were the more remarkable in that she had suffered from an early age from a chronic post-scarlatinal arthritis of both hip joints. As the years went by this condition became ever more crippling and painful, yet it never daunted her courageous spirit. Her untimely death has cut short her life at a moment when she had reason to look forward to a future of success and personal happiness.

E. Gostynski.

DR. LEO KAPLAN  
1876-1956

Dr. Leo Kaplan was born in Russia in 1876, left his native land in 1897, and settled in Switzerland, where he recently died. He did not belong to any psycho-analytical organization, but from 1910 onwards showed an intense and creative interest in Freud's teaching. Trained as a mathematician and physicist, he made use of his talents in relating the early theories of psycho-analysis to the philosophical teaching of his day, and as a result published before 1914 the first comprehensive treatise on psycho-analysis (*Grundzüge der Psychoanalyse*) and in 1916 *Psychoanalytische Probleme*. In both he manifested the highest standards of logical and critical thinking and a genuine understanding of

the basic problems with which the young science of psycho-analysis had become concerned.

For a time Kaplan exchanged many letters with Freud, who must have thought highly of his capabilities, and accepted his paper 'Zur Psychologie des Tragischen' for publication in the first volume of *Imago* (1914). His papers cover a wide field, including ethnology, anthropology, and sociology, and he wrote especially on Hegel, Marx, Schopenhauer, and Sartre. He influenced many continental thinkers, especially by his searching interest in psycho-analysis. There are many who will always think of him with gratitude.

Heinrich Meng.

## DENIS CARROLL

Dr. Denis Carroll, who died suddenly on 21 November, 1956, at the age of 55 years, gave early promise of a distinguished career. Educated at King's School, Chester, he proceeded to Trinity College, Cambridge, of which he was a mathematical scholar, and where he graduated with first-class honours in both parts

of the Natural Science Tripos. Elected to the Michael Foster Studentship, he worked under Professor Barcroft and published a number of physiological researches. Turning to the study of medical psychology he entered the London Hospital (qualifying, M.R.C.S. and L.R.C.P., in 1927), and at the same time registered as a

student at the Institute of Psycho-Analysis (he was elected an associate member of the British Psycho-Analytical Society in 1932, and a full member in 1936). After a period of psychiatric experience on the staff of the Maudsley Hospital, he finally turned his attention to the psychiatric aspects of delinquency, and in the spring of 1933 joined the I.S.T.D. (Institute for the Study and Treatment of Delinquency) which had only recently been formed (in 1931). Dr. Carroll took a leading part in the development of the Institute, was one of the original co-Directors of its Psychopathic Clinic, and from its inception a member of its Scientific Committee.

Soon after the outbreak of the Second World War Dr. Carroll entered the R.A.M.C. and served as psychiatrist at Dumfries Military Hospital. Later he was given the rank of lieutenant-colonel and made psychiatrist to the Western Command, where he was in charge of Northfield Military Hospital, a unit of 1,200 beds, the largest psychiatric centre.

Returning to civilian life he continued to devote the larger part of his energies to criminological work. He became consulting psychiatrist and medical director of the Portman Clinic for Delinquency, a member of the Home Office Advisory Training Board on Probation, of the Home Office Advisory Council for the Treatment of Offenders, of the Home Office Departmental Committee for Children and Young Persons, of the Council of the Medico-legal Society, and of the Joint Committee of the British Medical Association and the Magistrates' Association. Extending his work at the I.S.T.D., he became for a period Director of Research to the Institute, and at the time of his death was Chairman-elect of the Scientific Group for the Discussion of Delinquency Problems, a criminological group founded by the Institute. Throughout his association with the I.S.T.D. he engaged actively in its teaching and training courses, and played an important advisory part in the deliberations of the Council. He was also a frequent and successful broadcaster on criminological and other subjects of psychological bearing.

From the beginning of his career as a forensic psychiatrist Dr. Carroll kept close contact with colleagues in the international field. He was a member of the organizing committee of the 1st International Congress for Criminology held in Rome in October 1938, and after the war took a still more active part in organizing the 2nd Congress (Paris 1950). He did a great deal to develop

the International Society for Criminology and in 1950 was elected its President, a position he held to the time of his death. In this capacity he presided over the 3rd International Congress on Criminology in London in 1955.

A second channel of international activity lay through the United Nations Organization. In 1949 Dr. Carroll became a member of an advisory committee of experts on the prevention of crime and the treatment of offenders which was assembled by the U.N. Secretariat at Lake Success, New York. The committee was convened to draft a programme of work to be submitted to the Social Commission. The programme was subsequently approved by all the organs of the U.N., and gave rise *inter alia* to a survey of activities designed to prevent delinquency in Europe and Turkey. This survey was carried out by the I.S.T.D. with the active co-operation of Dr. Carroll. He was also appointed by the U.N. as one of the experts at the European Seminar on the medico-psychological and social examination of offenders held in Brussels in 1951, and was one of the twelve experts appointed by the U.N. at the European Seminar on Probation held in London in 1952.

Amongst other activities he was at one time medical consultant to the 'Q' camps experiment, and chairman of a committee founded to train personnel to cope with the after-effects of the war on Austrian youth. He also served for a period as Chairman of the Medical Section of the British Psychological Society, of which he was a Fellow. In spite of these many claims on his time and energies Dr. Carroll conducted throughout a busy private practice as a consulting psychiatrist and psycho-analyst.

Denis Carroll was one of that small but distinguished band of whom it can be said that they are at the same time born scientists and the salt of the medical profession. Endowed with an acute intellect, a profound scientific curiosity, and a natural turn of judgement, he submitted himself readily to the disciplines of scientific training and research. His medical qualification was in the first instance a means to the end of scientific training, but drew out in him those qualities which in time made him without question one of the most distinguished psychiatrists in Britain, to say nothing of being a pioneer, ultimately a master, of the new science of forensic psychiatry. At no time, however, did he allow his extra-mural preoccupations to dim his interest in psycho-analysis; the whole of his work was orientated in a psycho-analytical



direction. Nevertheless he was at first regarded as something of a *rara avis* in the psycho-analytical movement in Britain. At a time when most analysts followed the conventional and comparatively unexciting courses of classical analysis, he experimented freely with the treatment not only of incipient psychoses but of advanced cases, a course which compelled free adaptation of the 'chair and couch' technique employed in more uneventful mental disorders. Similarly in his treatment of criminals, he was versatile in adapting the classical technique of psycho-analysis to meet the unique transference and social exigencies which arise in outspoken cases of anti-social disorder, e.g. amongst psychopathic criminals. It is an interesting testimony to his courage, enterprise, and foresight in these directions that, although at first his more conservative colleagues may have looked askance at his readiness to adapt technique to clinical vicissitudes, modern analytical workers amongst advanced psychotics and criminals have found themselves compelled to follow in his footsteps. It is incidentally a thousand pities that he never had the time to put on record more than a tithe of his clinical and technical experiences. Early in his career he published several physiological researches in the *Journal of Physiology* and the *Biochemical Journal*; and a number of his papers on criminology appeared in the *British Journal of Delinquency*, *U.N. Reports*, and in various Criminological Congress *Proceedings*. But most of his ideas were communicated in lectures, seminars, and other teaching activities. Although these were mainly clinical in nature, his predilection for scientific work was fully and ably expressed in the committee rooms of research groups. Interestingly

enough, one of his psycho-analytic ambitions lay in the checking of research work on the subject by means of mathematical codes, an enterprise which would, of course, have depended on the standardization of psychological 'properties' as units of measurement. Here again Dr. Carroll was before his time. Psycho-analysis has not yet been subjected to mathematical discipline, and in fact the checking of psycho-analytical conclusions has now been preempted by social psychologists working in concert with formal statisticians.

Many of the qualities Denis Carroll displayed to such advantage in professional life were also apparent in private contact. To a quick and nimble wit and a darting perception which grasped the essence of human relations was added an intellect stocked with an encyclopaedic range of accurate information. Possessed of a gently ironic humour he was an incomparable raconteur; a conversation with him was invariably illumined with flashes of insight, tempered with a certain drollery of expression. To his more intimate friends he appeared as he was, a man of sweet and sensitive disposition who never failed to help those who appealed to him for assistance and many who did not so solicit him. It was these more tender qualities which accounted for the affection in which he was held alike by friends and by his patients. By his professional associates and co-workers he will be remembered also for his capacity to communicate his own scientific enthusiasms, and to encourage others in the often arduous and not always rewarding work of research. His most lasting memorial lies in the influence he exerted so unsparingly in his life's work.

Edward Glover.

#### DR. CHARLES ANDERSON

Dr. Charles Anderson, a member of the medical staff of the London Clinic of Psycho-Analysis, died on 11 November, 1956, a little over a fortnight before his 43rd birthday.

Charles Anderson was born in London on 28 November, 1913, the son of a general practitioner. He received his early education at the Roan School for Boys, and did so well that he matriculated with merit when only 14½ years of age. Six months later he became a medical student at St. Bartholomew's Hospital and qualified M.R.C.S., L.R.C.P. at the age of 20, but had to wait a year before he was granted his

diploma. He obtained the London degrees of M.B., B.S. in 1936. Unfortunately his father died soon after he qualified. His mother had started to study medicine in later life and she qualified shortly before her son. His sister, also, had qualified as a doctor some years previously. After his father's death Dr. Charles Anderson decided to postpone his ambition to specialize, and he went into general practice with his mother and sister at Finsbury Park. He worked there for several years, and was admired for his kindness, wisdom, and patience. As he was too busy during the day, he started to read at night for

the M.R.C.P. examination, which he successfully passed in 1940. Two years later he left general practice to become resident medical officer at the West London Hospital for Nervous Diseases, taking the D.P.M. of the English Royal Colleges in 1943. He then held the post of psychiatrist to the Wharnccliffe Hospital, in Sheffield, for one and a half years, after which he was appointed psychiatric specialist at Sutton Emergency Hospital, working also as honorary clinical assistant at the psychiatric out-patient department of Charing Cross Hospital. During this time he became interested in psycho-analysis. He was dissatisfied with his psychological approach to his patients, and felt the need for deeper understanding of the problems of the neurotic patients under his care. This decided him to take up psycho-analytic training in 1945. He became a qualified psycho-analyst, and an Associate Member of the British Psycho-Analytical Society in 1948 and a full Member in

1952. Since 1948 he had worked full-time in psycho-analytical practice. He was a serious and very hard worker. His colleagues appreciated his human and professional qualities, and they realized that he could be confidently trusted with the psycho-analytical treatment of very difficult neurotic and psychotic patients because of his skill, tenacity, and devotion to his work. He was always keen to learn, and his capacity for development and research was clearly shown by the number of interesting and always original papers he read at the meetings of the Psycho-Analytical Society.<sup>1</sup> During the last few years he had taken an increasing part in the training of psycho-analysts and child psychotherapists. In private life he was a devoted husband and father. His hobbies were music and gardening. He leaves a widow and two young sons: the sympathy of his friends and colleagues goes out to them in their sad loss.

#### PUBLISHED PAPERS

'Chronic Head Cases', *Lancet*, 4 July, 1942.  
'On Certain Conscious and Unconscious Homosexual Responses to Warfare', *Brit. J. med.*

*Psychol.*, 20, 1944.

'Aspects of Pathological Grief and Mourning', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 30, 1949.

#### PAPERS READ TO THE BRITISH PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY

'Notes on the Nature of Mood Swings', October, 1951.  
'Movement, Stasis and Death in Psychic Life',

December, 1953.

'Some Observations from the Analysis of a Horse-Fetishist', June, 1955.

Herbert Rosenfeld.

#### ISTVAN HOLLOS

19 April, 1872—2 February, 1957

Some weeks before his 85th birthday, Istvan Hollos died in Budapest after a long illness and much ill-fortune. Only the gravest physical and mental strain was able to break him. Up to his eightieth year he stood the tribulations of our troubled times with undiminished capacity and zest for work. I well remember the objective stoicism with which he talked of his abduction and escape in the winter of 1944-45. Together with other inhabitants of the building where he lived, he and his wife were driven barefoot through snow and ice to the embankment of the Danube, one of the sites of mass execution, where the victims—shot dead or half dead—were indiscriminately thrown into the river. By

pure chance the slaughter stopped just before it was their turn to be killed. He escaped, and after the liberation of Hungary resumed his analytical work apparently untouched by his ordeals. But the poisonous after-effects of a long undiscovered attack of urosepsis, which a mechanically successful operation could not completely dispel, and the sudden and tragic loss of his wife finally succeeded in breaking his resistance and his optimism and started his final illness.

Istvan Hollos was one of the early practitioners of psycho-analysis and one of the earliest members of the International Psycho-Analytical Association. It was as an alienist in the first decade of this century that he became interested

<sup>1</sup> He was particularly interested in the psycho-analytic approach to schizophrenia, manic-depression, and the perversions, in particular homosexuality and fetishism. For example his membership paper bore

the title: 'Notes on the Nature of Mood Swings', and his last paper to the British Psycho-Analytical Society contributed to the psychopathology of fetishism.



in the then newly emerging science of psycho-analysis. This may have answered some inner need of his own. But certainly he was driven to it by the sterility of the psychiatric work as practised in those days. The majority of doctors in institutions were engaged in administrative work, their scientific interest being mainly devoted to the forensic and legal implications of mental disorder.

When analysis had taught him the deep significance of what appears to the uninitiated as lunatic nonsense; when he had learnt to utilize this recognition in diagnosis and therapy, he found a new lease of professional life. Adverse criticism of colleagues who thought him a crank, and some even a dangerous medical extremist, did not deter him from his newly chosen path.

He was trained first by Ferenczi, later by Paul Federn. I do not feel qualified to include an appreciation of his literary work in this memorial. But I want to draw attention to one of his most outstanding publications, written in collaboration with Ferenczi, the "Contributions to the Psycho-analysis of Paralytic Disorders" (1922). In this he produced a completely new conception of the megalomaniac delusions of the sufferer from general paralysis which gave satisfactory and comprehensive explanations of the problems of this disease. He spent many years in preparing the Hungarian translation of the *Traumdeutung*. This was thorough and conscientious work. As far as this book is at all capable of translation into foreign languages, Hollos's rendering is important as a contribution towards propagating the science of psycho-analysis.

It must have been his own emotional make-up which was responsible for his interest in questions of the care of the insane. His analytical knowledge gave this bent direction and force. He gave the patient endless and devoted attention. He endeavoured to help through understanding and intensive verbal contact, rather than by flooding the patient with sedatives. He became practically a crusader for the right methods of the care of the mentally sick; so

much so that even amongst the most devoted Communist psychiatrists there were some who invited him to lecture and propagate his views on this subject, though Hollos was not a member of the Communist party and did not even pay lip-service to its political ideologies. Naturally this sort of recognition did not come from those who abandoned psycho-analysis and joined the Communist bandwagon to satisfy financial and careerist ambitions.

It is worth noting that the head of the institution, 'The Yellow House', in which Hollos's professional life began half a century ago, and in which he spent the last months of his life, did everything possible to make him unaware that he was ill and in hospital.

Hollos's life was not blessed with good luck. One of his books, *Farewell to the Yellow House*, was in its own way a real *confessio medici*. In it he candidly confessed his own medical ambitions, and equally candidly his own failings which prevented him from realizing them. This farewell was most difficult for him to bear. At the time of his official retirement, in 1927, he was still in the prime of his working life. Because he was a Jew he had to leave his position. His career as a psychiatrist was broken. I believe, however, that for this he was compensated by the recognition accorded him by his fellow psycho-analysts. After Sandor Ferenczi's death, in 1933, Hollos became president of the Hungarian Association. This he remained until the ever-growing anti-semitic discrimination legally prohibited anyone of Jewish faith or origin from being president or officer of any recognized association. With many others he again had to suffer insult and injury, but again he met this reverse with the wisdom and detachment which come from the psychological understanding of the emotional stresses and strains of man and men.

We who have survived cherish his memory as one of the pioneer workers of the science of psycho-analysis.

Lajos Levy.

#### ERNST KRIS

It is with profound regret that we have to announce the sudden death of Dr. Ernst Kris who died at his home in New York on 26

February this year. We shall include an appreciation of his work in our next issue.

W. H.

## BOOK REVIEWS

*Sigmund Freud. Four Centenary Addresses.* By Ernest Jones. (New York: Basic Books Inc.; London: Tavistock Publications, 1956. Pp. 150. \$3.75 or 18s.)

These addresses were delivered as a part of the 1956 Freud Centenary celebrations, three of them in response to invitations from the United States of America and the fourth as a B.B.C. broadcast from London.

The first is the sixth Freud Anniversary lecture to the New York Psychoanalytical Society and Institute; it is entitled 'The Nature of Genius', though Ernest Jones suggests that it could be described more exactly as 'Some of the Factors Conditioning the Workings of Certain Forms of Productive Thinking'. After briefly surveying the literature and mentioning the features of intuitive inspiration, spontaneity, and periodicity that seem to occur with all forms of genius, the author considers other features that are most characteristic of scientific production—absolute honesty of thought, originality, and power of concentration. Freud's love of truth carried with it a 'mysterious feeling for what is true' and 'a sense of the really significant'. His originality consisted less in the discovery of completely new things than in their bold and detailed investigation. He did not so much invent ideas as introduce a totally new attitude and inaugurate a new 'climate of opinion' about human nature. His capacity for concentration was well known to his family.

The moment of illumination in scientific thinking is preceded by intensive preparatory work that must be motivated by strong unconscious impulses, and there must be some 'special coincidence' between these drives and the 'objective problem'. The moment of illumination implies a high, if temporary, degree of integration of superego, ego, and id. The elation of such moments is usually followed by doubt and self-criticism, due to the re-emergence of superego-ego tensions. Freud himself pointed out that the freedom of thought of scientists in one sphere is usually counterbalanced by inhibition in some other sphere: which may explain the naïveté that can accompany intellectual capacity. Ernest Jones' personal knowledge of Freud led him to make a further contribution, first advanced in his Biography. He noticed that Freud's scepticism and imperviousness to the opinions of other people was occasionally displaced by an uncritical credulity. Contradictory objective and superstitious trends can be detected in many scientists, from Copernicus and Newton onwards. Ernest Jones' suggestion is that the receptive atti-

tude, manifested as credulity when directed to the outer world, is the essential factor in inspiration when directed to the inner world. Critical evaluation and formulation of a new hypothesis follows the intake of the creative upsurge into consciousness. Receptivity thus constitutes the indispensable feminine or passive aspect of creative productivity in thinking. This, the author notes, is 'almost a prerogative of the male sex' and a substitute for 'the gift of bodily creation bestowed on women'.

The second address, 'Our Attitude towards Greatness', delivered before the American Psychoanalytic Association in Chicago, is a natural complement to the first. Two special features influence attitudes to Freud, the 'loneliness' of his achievement and the intense though understandable unconscious 'resistance' to his insight. In general, attitudes to a great man may range through the whole gamut of attitudes of sons to fathers, positive, negative, and ambivalent. Ambivalence towards psycho-analysis is, perhaps, the most fertile source of misunderstanding and 'fabulation' of Freud legends.

The third lecture was given to a joint meeting of the American Psychiatric and American Psychoanalytic Associations and discusses 'Psychiatry Before and After Freud'. Ernest Jones' own opinion, admittedly controversial, is 'that it will take many generations to come before the full impact of Freud's work on psychiatry will be appreciated at its true value'. This opinion will be endorsed by most psycho-analysts though disputed by some psychiatrists. There is more unanimity in views on the expansion of psychiatry through the recognition of neuroses as psychological in origin, and on the development of medical psychology and psychotherapy, mental hygiene and prophylaxis. The essential, though not the only, factor in this psychological enrichment of psychiatry has been the influence of Freud, though his direct contributions to psychiatry itself were qualitative rather than quantitative, e.g. his contributions to the psycho-pathology of paranoia and melancholia. The influence of psycho-analysis on child development and guidance, on sociology, anthropology, literature, and art are briefly mentioned. Finally, Ernest Jones presents the crucial, still-unsolved dilemma of psycho-analysis, which may be summed up in the questions: How can practising analysts become specialists in other fields, and how can specialists in other fields become sufficiently versed in psycho-analysis to apply it to full advantage in their own work?

The fourth paper is the address to the general



public broadcast from London. It is an excellent non-technical summary of 'Sigmund Freud: the Man and his Achievements', most ably and suitably adapted to a wide audience.

The book ends with an Appendix, a reprint in part of a eulogy written shortly after Freud's death. This makes a fitting conclusion to the series of addresses which, in their turn, might be considered as appendices to the author's greatest memorial tribute, the Biography.

Marjorie Brierley.

*New Directions in Psycho-Analysis. The Significance of Infant Conflict in the Pattern of Adult Behaviour.* Edited by Melanie Klein, Paula Heimann, and R. E. Money-Kyrle; with a Preface by Ernest Jones. (London: Tavistock Publications, 1955. Pp. xiii + 534. 38s.)

Many modifications and variations in psycho-analytic technique have been suggested in recent years. Some of these suggested variations are controversial, even when they remain within the framework of classical analysis. This current production of the Kleinian school constitutes not merely a modification, but more, a deviation from the classical Freudian framework.

The book contains 21 essays, 11 of which are revised editions of papers which appeared in an issue of the *International Journal of Psycho-Analysis* dedicated to Melanie Klein on the occasion of her 70th birthday in March, 1952; 10 are new papers, 2 of which are by Melanie Klein herself. The papers vary from the subject of psycho-analytic theory and therapy to the psychoses and applied psycho-analysis. Naturally, in a collection of papers such as this, overlapping material cannot be avoided; unfortunately, in the present case, the repetition and overlapping is abundant. Most of the directly psycho-analytic papers are concerned with fantasies and internal objects in the first six months to first year of the infant's life; very little is said about the child's development after that time, to say nothing of the problems faced by the analyst who meets only adult patients with neurotic difficulties. All the papers emphasize the child's constant struggle with his internal objects, and his drive towards 'reparation'. The contributors clearly feel that the data they present constitute validation of Kleinian theory and therapeutic technique. In his introduction, Money-Kyrle tells us that 'the deeper understanding we owe to Melanie Klein has substantially increased the power and range of both applied and clinical analysis'.

The climate in America has not been very favourable towards the long controversial views of Melanie Klein; this present symposium, I am afraid, will not improve it. To begin with, the not

very fortunately chosen title *New Directions in Psycho-Analysis* promises a good deal more than the work itself can fulfil. Those who have followed the development of the Kleinian school will already be familiar with the papers which have appeared in print previously. All the theories on early mental life presented in this book have been discussed many times in print when those papers, or books by members of the school, were first published. Critical examinations and evaluations by analysts<sup>1</sup> have appeared in various journals; and yet the reader of the present book finds the same controversial and dubious formulations which were criticized by former writers, without any modifications. The interest of the present work, for those who have followed the Kleinian school, seems largely to lie in its consolidating in a wider range the Kleinian position in psycho-analysis, and in its collecting together for easier reference some of the more recent writings of the members of the school. Therefore since no essentially novel developments are presented, this reviewer will have little that is new to add to what has already been said about Kleinian theory and therapy.

Melanie Klein's pioneering work with children, her use of play therapy in the treatment of children, is universally accepted as an important contribution to psycho-analysis. Her observations gave important impetus to further research into the early mental development of the child; but her theoretical deductions from those observations and their extension to adult neuroses and psychoses result in the change and abandonment of many important concepts of basic Freudian theory.

According to the Kleinians, the infant's earliest partial objects (the good and bad breast) are the nucleus of the superego; this conflicts with the Freudian postulation of gradually developing stages, from the auto-erotic to the oedipal, the superego deriving only from the latter stage. According to the Kleinians, the centre of earliest infantile development is in 'internal-object-relations', an internal war of mental objects; no place is given to the interplay between environmental influence and maturational processes in the infant. Their formulations concerning internalized objects, the infant's early struggles with sadism and the anxieties provoked by this sadism; their conclusions on the origin of superego and ego formation; their view of the relationship and conflict between the ego and superego in the neuroses—their view of the psychic apparatus as a whole—are all at variance with the Freudian point of view.

Where such profound theoretical changes are suggested, strong verificatory evidence should be forthcoming. That the earliest pre-verbal period of mental development does have an important rôle in the reaction of the growing infant to his environment is taken for granted by every analyst;

<sup>1</sup> For example: Edward Glover, Edward Bibring, M. Brierley, E. R. Zetzel, etc.



this stage must be carefully investigated if we are fully to understand the child's later development. But the majority of analysts agree that these earliest months of infantile mental life are still mostly unknown territory. To this reviewer at least, the Kleinian hypothetical constructions about that period remain more or less purely hypothetical. Such data as have already been collected in observing the infant at the pre-verbal level—data about the early roots of the superego and the rôle of early developmental influence on the growth of the child—are still insufficient to validate the Kleinian constructions.

Differences in theory of course automatically entail differences in therapeutic technique, and the reader will see that the manner and content of interpretation and the analyst's manipulation of his patient are quite different in a Kleinian analysis from what we are accustomed to. Kleinian technique shows especially striking divergences from the customary practice when it comes to the treatment of adult neurotics. Kleinian theories about early infantile emotional development are applied directly to adults, and all oedipal and environmental factors, all current reality problems, are referred back to their supposed origins in the paranoid-schizoid and depressive positions; interpretations centre on early object relations and early involvements, even interpretation of the transference relationship itself. Among the very few cases of adult neurosis of the kind we are familiar with in our daily practice are the examples of patients with examination anxiety combined with sexual difficulty (Hans A. Thorner, 'Three Defenses Against Inner Persecution'). The patients' problems are explained on the basis of dangers threatening from the internal conflict among mental objects; the failure of sexual functioning is said to be a result of internal persecution by internal objects. One wonders how therapeutic success with such cases was achieved by non-Kleinian analysts, who concentrated on mechanisms dealing with oedipal fears and aggression. That there have been successful courses of treatment of the latter kind is surely a matter of our common experience. While this reviewer does not question the claim that successes have been achieved by Kleinian analysts, a pooling of experiences among Kleinian and orthodox analysts might help us to investigate more carefully the claim that Melanie Klein's work has 'increased the power and range of . . . clinical analysis'.

Hanna Segal also cites analyses of adult patients ('Psychoanalytic Approach to Aesthetics'). These patients suffer from inhibition in artistic creation. Although they suffer from sexual difficulties as well, we are told that inhibitions all stem from the inability to work through the depressive anxieties of infancy. Segal does think that the genital aspect of artistic creation is of paramount importance, but she feels that dealing with the depressive position

is a pre-condition of *both* artistic and genital functioning. However, this is surely to ignore the many other factors which influence artistic creation: general background, environmental influences, and ego strivings, besides destructive drives and regressive tendencies, cannot be neglected in the understanding of such cases. Her contribution dealing with the problem of the artist reduces it, to a single formula: the problem of overcoming the depressive position and becoming able to make reparation. Clearly the author's explanation of aesthetic inhibition is a valid explanation only if Kleinian theory as a whole is correct.

The papers of W. R. Bion, Heimann, and Rosenfeld, dealing with schizophrenia contain stimulating suggestions for further observation and research in the therapy of the psychoses. Rosenfeld ('Treatment of Schizophrenia') tries to prove the Kleinian contention that the earliest stages of development in the emotional life of the infant—his fantasies, anxieties, and defences—throw light on the fixation points of adult psychosis. He discusses the structure of the schizophrenic superego, tracing it back to the infantile persecutory superego. He also discusses the controversy among analysts as to the proper methods and approach to the acute schizophrenic patient; Rosenfeld points out that American analysts favour re-education and reassurance, a technique which he criticizes. His own technique with such patients is the closest to psycho-analysis of any described heretofore in America or abroad. While the dynamics of schizophrenia are still obscure, Rosenfeld's paper is interesting and suggestive.

In her contribution 'On Identification', Melanie Klein writes: 'The breast taken in with hatred, and therefore felt to be destructive, becomes the prototype of all bad internal objects, drives the ego to further splitting and becomes the representative of the death instinct within'. Kleinian analysts fully accept the existence of the death instinct; it is said to be present and active from birth onwards, exerting its influence on the infant's ego development, and struggles which relate to the object, giving rise to the fear of death and consequent anxiety. The conflict between the life and death instincts is said to be a basic factor in whatever pathological symptoms the patient exhibits. Concepts such as these have been controversial since the beginning and are even more so today; the majority of analysts will probably find the many remarks on the death instinct in this volume far too speculative and impossible to corroborate with clinical findings.

Dr. Jaques' observations concerning 'Social Systems as Defence against Persecutory and Depressive Anxiety' apply Kleinian propositions to collective mechanisms. As he points out, defence against psychotic anxiety is one of the primary elements which binds individuals into associative relationships. In this sense, all social institutions are unconsciously used by everyone involved as de-



fence mechanisms against paranoid and depressive states. In order to prove his case, he cites examples.

In the opinion of this reviewer there can be little doubt that mechanisms of this order can frequently be observed in collective situations, as for instance in political activity or even in sporting events. Yet one earnestly wonders whether any human society, any manifest social structure, could function solely on the basis of defences against paranoid and depressive states; it is surely libidinal ties and introjective processes which are primarily responsible for social association and cultural development. The functioning of communities as a whole, of groups within the greater communities—Freud referred to the Church and the Army as an example—cannot possibly be explained by excluding libidinal concepts or such fundamental factors as the collective ego-ideal which bind human individuals into large and useful groupings.

Money-Kyrle's attempt to derive a democratic-humanistic ethics from psycho-analytical theory ('Psycho-analysis and Ethics') turns on a distinction between two kinds of guilt; persecutory guilt, to which the Freudian superego is said to give rise, and another kind of guilt which is said to be depressive as opposed to persecutory. Those in whom the former is predominant are said to react by *propitiation*; where the latter predominates, by *reparation*. But it is very difficult to see what the difference is. This raises a more general objection to Kleinian theory; Money-Kyrle suggests that 'analysis, while diminishing the conflicts that lead to depression, increases rather than diminishes the capacity to feel guilt of a depressive kind whenever a "good" object is in any way injured or betrayed'. But, one wonders whether this sounds like an adequate description of the goal of therapy. Unless there is some equivocation here on the term 'guilt', guilt—even guilt of a depressive kind—can hardly be said to be the source of activity in a healthy person. It will not do to suggest that the problem is a merely verbal one; for if 'guilt' and 'reparation' are not the proper words, what are?

One may surely claim for Melanie Klein's work an important influence in widening the boundaries and areas in which research is now being undertaken. Those who are currently doing research on the early phases of mental life owe much to her for techniques and suggestions. Further, she may be credited with being one of the first to emphasize the importance of 'aggression' in mental development. (Ferenczi, in 1922–23, made a special point in his therapeutic practice of the ventilation of the patient's aggressive feelings and unconscious hostility.) In addition, one may deplore the undue suspicion, over and above legitimate controversy, which has greeted the contributions made by Kleinians in the past; this has occasionally led us to overlook the many valuable theoretical suggestions which have been made by Kleinians concerning early mental development. The fact that there

is no exponent of Melanie Klein's views in the United States has, in part, been the cause of this suspicion: American analysts have had no opportunity to come into personal contact with those who represent her position.

But the coldness on the part of American analysts towards Kleinian theory has a more important source than mere lack of contact with Kleinian analysts: its lack of verification, and what might be called its conceptual prodigality. While many of Melanie Klein's theoretical suggestions have been of great interest, verification for the theory as a whole has not been produced; the integration of theory and practice is not fully convincing. This reviewer would suggest that the adherents of Kleinian theory place more stress on careful, direct observation in clinical work. On the other hand, while the Kleinian school is to be praised for its attempt to construct a detailed theory to cover an area not fully explained by Freudian theory, one would like to see greater care taken in reconstructions. The editors of the present volume lead the reader to think that he will find in it a definitive statement of theory, but while certain mechanisms are discussed, and certain developmental stages (positions), one gets no sense of the Kleinian conception of the overall structure of the mind. One gets instead a continual multiplication of 'internal objects'. Surely one of the prime requisites of an adequate theory is economy of explanatory concepts—a good theory should give the simplest explanation which does justice to the facts. This requirement appears to be violated by Kleinian theorists. Their sometimes excessively complicated explanations of certain symptoms (and their explanations become the more complicated when adult behaviour, as opposed to the behaviour of very young children, is in question) make one suspect that a Freudian explanation, which would be simpler while yet doing justice to the facts, is more likely to be the correct one. Why is the simpler explanation more likely to be the correct one? Nature just seems to work that way.

Sandor Lorand.

*Dynamics of Psychotherapy*. Vol. I. *Principles*. By P. M. Symonds. (New York: Grune and Stratton, 1956. Pp. xi + 211. \$5.50.)

This volume is the first of three devoted to the *Dynamics of Psychotherapy*, and is concerned mainly with general psychodynamic principles. Psychotherapy, the author says, is concerned with the whole person and not with isolated behaviour or symptoms, and its aims are reduced to two: the gaining of inner peace and change of behaviour leading to better adaptation.

He stresses that his point of view is eclectic, and in fact gives detailed accounts of the principles involved in all the usual methods of psychotherapy, quoting chapter and verse by all the leading ex-



ponents of the different methods. His attitude to psycho-analysis is obviously ambivalent. Of Fenichel he admits that no one has approached him in the sagacity of his theoretical analysis of the natural course of neuroses, yet of psycho-analysis itself as a therapy he states that it only has more prestige than other methods and is essentially a method of investigation. However, the author certainly has examined in great detail all methods of psychotherapy, and his bringing them together in this series is valuable.

J. L. Rowley.

*Annotated Bibliography of Childhood Schizophrenia and Related Disorders.* By W. Goldfarb and M. M. Dorsen. (New York: Basic Books, 1956. Pp. vi + 170. \$2.50.)

This little book from the Henry H. H. Centre for Child Research should prove a boon to all workers in the field of child psychosis, who are already finding it difficult to keep up with the volume of literature that is being steadily poured out on this absorbing topic. The collection of 584 abstracts has an eclectic outlook and includes particulars of biological, social, psychological, and psychodynamic publications, covering a period up to 1954. Two of the fascinations of reading (in about an hour) a collection of this sort are: first, that one emerges from the experience with a feeling of professional omniscience that is very therapeutic for the battered intellectual egos of this over-productive age; and, secondly, given the vantage point of this godlike eye placed on its pinnacle of 1954, one can readily detect the fashionable trends in theory—the mysterious way in which underground intellectual movements affect widely scattered groups so that similar conclusions come to the surface at about the same time. Unfortunately one can also discern how rapidly concepts become dated and almost ludicrous. Even 'facts' are vulnerable to the vicissitudes of time, so that the 'facts' of one age seem to become the fictions of the next. The book also serves to whet our appetite for further reading, and, with time so short, helps us to discriminate between the worthwhile and the valueless. The main criticism one has to offer is that the abstracting is not first-class and does not always give us the 'bones' of an article. It could be wished that such routine matters could be taken out of the hands of enthusiastic amateurs and made the business of some experienced and competent organization like the *Excerpta Medica* which could from time to time collect and publish similar volumes on important current topics.

E. J. Anthony.

*Integrating Sociological and Psychoanalytic Concepts.* By Otto Pollak. (New York: Russell Sage Foundation, 1956. Pp. x + 284. \$4.00.)

The Russell Sage experiment in interdisciplinary

integration has taken a further step forward in this second volume, and put its chosen social concepts—family of orientation, social rôle, social interaction and culture conflict—to the test of practical experience. These operational concepts have been used within the framework of psycho-analytical theory and the crucial issue at stake has been the question of their compatibility.

Judging from the cases presented and the authors' comments, they would seem to make reasonably harmonious bedfellows, but it is unlikely that orthodox analysts or interactionists will feel as happy with the result, which may seem to them co-existence rather than co-operation. There is an old saying, with possibly a modicum of scientific truth, that what is gained on the swings may be lost on the roundabouts, a compensatory device that bedevils the most honest attempts at scientific integration. In the present context, what is gained in width is lost in depth, so that the depth psychologist may find the outcome 'superficial', while the 'situationalist' may complain of the 'relatively heavy dependence upon psycho-analytic theory' as Leonard Cottrell does in his foreword. It is the fate of middlemen to be shot at from both sides, and their only hope is to meet the needs of some middle party.

A large potential market for such synthetic views does, in fact, exist. Children's clinics in Britain generally prefer to take their analytic and situational theory in moderate doses. They would welcome any scheme, however eclectic, that provided them with useful diagnostic and therapeutic techniques. Their only grumble might be at the time involved, particularly if the cases described in this book are intended to be representative of 'average' practice. Family diagnosis, according to Dr. Pollak, consists of making clinical, genetic and dynamic assessments of every member of the child's family of orientation, combined with an interactive and institutional analysis of the family as a whole. Treatment adds father, albeit reluctantly, to the clinic's load of patients.

Dr. Pollak is not naïve on the subject of the many difficulties besetting his path. He realizes, for example, just how elusive fathers can be. His aim, nevertheless, is to treat the child in the setting of its total environment, and this he has certainly done. He also appreciates the singular attractions that dynamic theories hold for such concept-hungry workers as P.S.W.'s, who will often sell their heritage of family case work for the more engrossing delights of the unconscious. He even quotes Spiegel on the effects of bringing together concepts with differing specificities and degrees of abstraction. The less specific and more abstracted concepts are only too likely to pass unnoticed when the worker falls in love with the oedipus complex. By offering the oedipal and social situation together he hopes thus cunningly to preserve some of the old invaluable interest in the family.



The method alerts the whole clinic to the 'interlocking grip of neurosis' in the family under study, something of which the analysts themselves could be more aware, especially those that undertake to treat 'blind'. An interpretation can reverberate endlessly among scores of unseen people who stand to profit or lose by it, and whose reactions need some consideration.

There are also important sections in the book dealing with the planning and assessing of treatment. Today, when therapists are attacked on the results of therapy and their criteria of cure, it is worth paying attention to what Dr. Pollak has done about it. His criteria remain subjective, but they include the additional area of family interaction. What goes on between two people can generally be observed and assessed more objectively than what takes place inside one individual.

A good sub-title for the book would be: 'Fathers, are they really necessary in child psychology?'. Dr. Pollak could earn the gratitude of all fathers, psychiatric or non-psychiatric, by championing their cause for fuller and more significant psychological existence. In these days, when fathers are in danger of being reduced to little more than penises, it is to Dr. Pollak's undying credit that he gives them an integral rôle in the family diagnosis and treatment.

E. J. Anthony.

*Measurement of Responsibility. A Study of Work, Payment, and Individual Capacity.* By Elliot Jaques. (London: Tavistock Publications, 1956. Pp. xiii + 143. 15s.)

This book reports work done at the Glacier Metal Company, London. It was written for a wide audience and should prove stimulating to workers in several fields. Inevitably, this means that not all topics are fully discussed, and psychoanalysts, particularly those interested in applying psycho-analytic theory and developing analogous techniques to therapy for social problems, may regret that these topics are comparatively little mentioned. Special problems arose when the author left the Tavistock Institute of Human Relations for private practice as a 'social analyst', in working out means whereby his professional independence could be assured. His considerable success in doing so may be judged from his having achieved therapeutic access in the firm's payment and status problems, such as is rarely granted to consultants in British industry.

The focus of interest is on certain remarkable observations and their theoretical and practical implications. These centre round the 'time-span of discretion', the maximum time for which a worker must exercise discretion on his own account without review. When workers were asked to estimate a fair return for their own or a subordinate's job, the estimates were found to be the same, or nearly

so, for all jobs at the same time-span, irrespective of content. This is an important and novel finding, and led to the conclusion that the weight of responsibility subjectively experienced in a job, the level of work, is related solely to its time-span. Wages in a firm will be perceived as fair, and employees will exert no pressure for wage-change, when payment is the same for jobs at the same time-span and there is an acceptable relation between payment for jobs at different time-spans. The individual's relation with his job can be considered in terms of his time-span capacity, i.e. how long he can tolerate exercising discretion on his own account without review. Discrepancy between individual and job time-spans creates stress and pressure for change.

Parts I and II define the problems and outline the progress of the work. Certain conceptual points are outlined, as they arose in the work and were linked with its development. One has an impression of the author's considerable grasp of the complexities of the situation and his ability to deal with it as a social analyst. The observations are clearly described, and the empirical connexions demonstrated convincingly. This suggests a new conceptual and practical approach to work problems within industrial organizations with exciting possibilities.

Part III considers the wider implications of the findings in psychological and socio-economic terms. Much is necessarily speculative, since the basic data come almost entirely from one firm, and do not permit wide generalizations, but it is often stimulating and suggests possible elaborations or developments of social science theory and new ways of looking at practical problems. On the whole, however, this part does not seem to maintain the high quality of the earlier parts, in particular their careful treatment of data and conclusions and admirable clarity of exposition. It is at times difficult to follow the argument, and one feels that the author is on less secure and familiar ground.

The analysis in this section does, however, make it clear that these new ideas will need considerable cautious elaboration, clarification, and definition before they can be broadened for more general use. It will be a considerable task to get the concepts into correct perspective in relation to psychological, sociological, and economic facts and theories. At present, the book seems to go much too far in attaching primary importance to time-span and related phenomena as determinative and causative factors. For example, after showing that time-span and level of work have a close relation to the amount of loss the worker is expected to avoid in his use of the resources put under his discretionary control, the author goes on to make a 'fundamental redefinition of the meaning of earnings in industry. . . . The amount of money an individual employed in industry may earn is dictated by the amount of loss he is expected to avoid by his use of discretion, rather than by the amount of



value he creates' (p. 112). The word 'dictated' is to the reviewer an uncongenial, indeed, an undynamic and inaccurate way of expressing this relationship. There seems no evidence in the book to invalidate the economist's basic theory that wages, like any other price, are determined by complex market forces, summarized under the general terms supply and demand, which interact to achieve an equilibrium, which will remain stable under certain defined conditions. It would seem that this book has made a contribution to the description of such conditions, i.e. that equilibrium will not be stable so long as wages and level of work are out of accord with each other. However, this does not imply that one 'dictates' the other; both are the precipitates of complex market forces. Again the book states: 'The fixing of salary and status becomes an automatic matter if range of level of work is known: they are fixed by the level of work itself' (p. 122). Surely this begs the question of the source of any discrepancy between them. Market conditions may force a change in wages such that the existing level of both work and wages must be reconsidered and equilibrium re-established at a completely new level.

As a whole, the book makes a valuable and original contribution, though much more thought is needed before the exact nature and dynamic significance of the phenomena described can be assessed and related to existing theories. It is to be hoped that the difficulties in the exposition in the later chapters and over-enthusiasm for time-span and related notions will not discourage their serious consideration by social scientists, especially economists. This would indeed be a pity, for there is much that could help to elaborate their own theories, as they in their turn could contribute to the evaluation and further development of these new concepts.

I. E. P. Menzies.

*The Nurse and the Mental Patient. A Study in Interpersonal Relations.* By Morris S. Schwartz and Emmy Lanning Schockley. (New York: Russell Sage Foundation, 1956. Pp. 289. \$3.50.)

Recently the social context of mentally disturbed patients has been receiving increasing attention, and such books as *The Mental Hospital* by Alfred H. Stanton and Morris S. Schwartz (reviewed in this *Journal*, 1956, Pt. VI, p. 496) and *From Custodial to Therapeutic Patient Care in Mental Hospitals* by Dr. Milton Greenblatt, Dr. Richard H. York, and Dr. Esther Lucile Brown have dealt admirably with the problems involved.

In *The Nurse and the Mental Patient* the authors have maintained the already high standard set and give a most excellent account of the difficulties facing those who nurse patients in mental hospitals. Problems of actual interpersonal difficulties are lucidly and skilfully set forth, and examined in a

special way with resultant positive means towards helping severely mentally ill patients becoming available to the nurse. Indeed some of the authors' comments on interpersonal relationships, i.e. transference—counter-transference, might well be taken to heart by all analysts. The notes on the silent patient, for example, are well worth full study.

The authors are certainly obviously dedicated to their work and the only possible criticism might be that they have an undue optimism about the extent to which skilful handling alone can in fact produce structural change in the patient. Nevertheless this is an outstanding book and deserves the highest possible praise.

J. L. Rowley.

*God and Country.* By Charles Schoenfeld. New York: Philosophical Library, 1955. Pp. 119. \$3.00.)

The author starts the book with a statement that whenever man has encountered perplexing problems in regard to his fellow-men he has almost invariably been driven to the use of brute force. This in the age of the hydrogen bomb constitutes the greatest danger to the survival of the human race.

Faced with this danger, certain leading thinkers have maintained that a return to God and Church is the only way to regain social and moral values. Although the author agrees about the need of social and moral values, he questions the wisdom of a return to God and Church in the conventional sense of these terms. In fact, he subjects this proposed solution to a very critical examination.

The author confines his inquiry to modern America. In our judgement, however, his critical examination justifies a wider application. It may well be applied to the entire modern world.

As a first step to his inquiry, the author starts with a critical examination of an arbitrary definition of God, based upon the Judeo-Christian tradition, namely, that God is 'an all-powerful, all-knowing, all-feeling, rational and just, living entity who created and is vitally interested in man, who intervenes, either by himself or through intermediaries, in the life of man, and who ultimately will judge man'. After a thorough examination, he arrives at the conclusion that this definition of God 'is permeated with inconsistencies and improbabilities'.

But why is it, the author asks, that notwithstanding these 'inconsistencies and improbabilities' most people brought up in the Judeo-Christian tradition still continue unyieldingly and unhesitatingly to believe in a God of this kind? It is mainly to this inquiry that the first part of the book is devoted.

The speculative discussions of philosophers on this subject are hardly expected to furnish an adequate reply to the question, for the simple reason that with few exceptions they had no direct



empirical knowledge of the human mind, or, when they did claim to possess it, it was gleaned from the investigations of other empirical scientists. For an adequate reply to the question we must look to those who have devoted their scientific labours to the understanding of the human mind. Among these, according to the author, towers the figure of Sigmund Freud, the father of psycho-analysis. It would be indefensible, the author thinks, not to accord to his findings at least a tentative acceptance.

If we now return to the definition of God given above, we find, the author says, that it is very applicable to a parental figure. In short, belief in this definition is a symbolic activity which provides a semblance of peace in a mind which was once disturbed by a repressed infantile fear of the loss of the mother and the security she represents. When this sense of security is threatened we experience a great feeling of anxiety. This creates in us a desperate need for the God of the above definition.

It is in the light of this that man's furious and unreasoning reaction to atheism finds, at last, an adequate explanation.

From these views the author is led to conclude that it is man's emotional disabilities which have not only prevented him from abandoning the concept of God, 'but have even enlisted his intellect in its active defence'.

Again, psycho-analytic research has shown that the human mind has a tendency to depict and interpret all experience in symbolic terms. For instance, certain parts of the structure of a cathedral (viz. the entrance, the point on top of the entrance, the circular ornament below and the main chamber etc.) suggest a startling analogy to the bodily structure of a female. Certain others (viz. the spires and the cross) suggest an analogy with the male body. On the basis of this analogy it is not difficult to surmise that the church may unconsciously represent to an individual a symbolic security.

The Judeo-Christian religions exalt an attitude of unquestioning faith as the greatest virtue, and condemn lack of faith as a sin. This is another example of the use of security symbolism in religion. The author reminds his readers that this attitude of unquestioning faith has often betrayed individuals into tragic situations in life. For 'one who is used to the habit of thought inherent in religious faith (as it is too often interpreted) proves an easy prey to the lures of new and dynamic faiths such as Fascism and Communism'. It is an unquestioning attitude of belief in such dictatorial creeds that accounted for the ascendancy of Adolf Hitler. In its turn, this narrow faith is accompanied by intolerance with all its disastrous consequences.

Lastly, ritualistic prayer also may be regarded as a security symbol. The great danger confronting the modern world is that of continuing to use outdated practices and values in a situation which does not warrant their application, e.g. vain repe-

titions of prayers for the solution of a problem which really demands intensive study. The result of this misapplication is that 'an accumulating number of problems remain unsolved in the world today'.

But the security and authority symbolism does not necessarily have to take the form of belief in God. Fascism, Nazism and Communism, owing to the combination of security and authority symbolism, also provide for their adherents a similar semblance of peace of mind. Indeed, from this point of view, militant atheism (e.g. in the U.S.S.R.) may, on very good grounds, be regarded as a reaction formation, and stand self-exposed on the same grounds as the attitude of religious faith.

With these challenging observations the author turns to the discussion of the problems related to Country—the second part of the twin title of his book. Here he discusses such topics as the goals of life, education, sports, entertainment, and law as he finds these in modern America.

We shall end this brief résumé with the observation that this challenging book, with its cold, merciless logic, its formidable array of objective facts and penetrating insight into the unconscious mechanisms operative in the field of political behaviour of the modern man, has a claim on the attention of all students of the human mind. After going through it one is bound to feel that Sigmund Freud's *Future of an Illusion* was not written in vain. It still constitutes a challenge which no student of human nature can afford to ignore.

Israil Latif.

*The Child's Conception of Space.* By J. Piaget and B. Inhelder. (London: Routledge and Kegan Paul. Pp. 490. 42s.)

Psycho-analysis has robbed mankind of some of its most cherished illusions. No longer can we look back nostalgically to our 'age of innocence' before libido and its attendant aggressions have crept like serpents into the purity of our minds. The curtain of amnesia at the end of Act 1 of the Human Situation has been lifted, and the villain of the piece revealed in his true incestuous, murderous colours. However tenaciously the unanalysed may cling to their picture of the infantile idyll in the face of the most blatant evidence to the contrary, the process of disenchantment is spreading. Freudian psychology has driven the child forever from his eden.

Piagetian psychology may have a similar, if less devastating, effect on our cognitive illusions of which there are also many. In the volume under review, a monument to the prodigious industry and fabulous productivity of the author, a further attempt is made to correct several misconceptions concerning the earliest mental functioning. By the method of 'genetic analysis' Piaget explores the basic spatial ideas of the child through the course of their development and reaches some most interesting conclusions



from the epistemological point of view. Such a study is considered by him 'an indispensable part of child psychology' and the book is a convincing argument in favour of this statement. Most textbooks on child psychology, however, hardly touch upon the subject.

The notions exploded are non-genetic ones proclaiming innateness or a passive empiricism. Substituted for these is an active, or rather interactive, extraction of knowledge from the universe, founded on a dynamic relationship between the subject and his environment. The growth of knowledge regarding space follows a 'natural pattern' which appears strikingly opposed to the pedagogical one. It would seem that space, as first conceived by the child, is not a Euclidean space of straight lines and angles, but a topological entity based on qualitative factors involving such relationships as 'close to', 'separated from', 'continuous with' and so on. The child is essentially a relating rather than a measuring organism during the first stage, and it is only later that he attains to concepts of a projective and Euclidean space. This is the reverse of the historical development of geometrical thinking, so that the epistemological circle is completed when the most advanced ideas return once more to the baby's point of view, which is singularly unprejudiced. It is thinking without a preconceived frame of reference; it is perceiving with a poet's eye. The moral to this is that unless we become as sucklings we can never enter into an intellectual millenium or make original contributions.

All this (even allowing for liberal comment by the reviewer) adds up to an exciting revolution in our picture of the child's earliest world. Such ideas must affect our analytic interpretations, whose ultimate purpose is to link internal with external, reality with phantasy, and what goes on in the mind with what goes on in the body and the body's surroundings. The more one knows about the child's world, the more confidence is he going to have in our ability to understand him. This sort of book is an open invitation to child analysts and child psychotherapists to enter more fully and more assuredly into the strange world of childhood. There is also an invitation to connect the topological, projective and Euclidean spaces outside with the 'psychic' space within—the space in which dream images, 'internal objects', phantasies and hallucinated wish-fulfilments circulate endlessly.

In their preface, the authors (Piaget has an excellent collaborator in Mlle. Inhelder) apologize to us—'the indulgent readers'—for the lengthiness of the text. This reviewer, for one, could have done with some more and he looks forward to the promised volume on Euclidean measurement.

E. J. Anthony.

*Mental Health and Infant Development.* Vol. I, Papers and Discussions; Vol. II, Case Histories. Edited by Kenneth Soddy. (London: Routledge

and Kegan Paul, 1955. Pp. xix, 308; v, 289. 25s. per volume.)

This work, published in two impressive volumes, is the report on the proceedings of a Seminar on Mental Health and Infant Development held at Chichester, England, in 1952 under the auspices of the World Federation of Mental Health. The seminar which lasted three weeks, studied the first two years of infant development and those aspects of family life associated with this. Fifty-one participants from thirty different countries were brought together with an eminent teaching staff from America, Great Britain and France, drawn from anthropology, child psychiatry, psychology, pediatrics, psycho-analysis, education, psychiatric social work, public health, medicine and nursing. The programme consisted of lectures, the study of case material, films and other visual aids.

The chief value of this report seems to the reviewer to be the impression given of the complexity and extent of the problems relating to infant development. It could prove a useful and stimulating reference book for government departments and administrators.

M. Bavin.

*The Fields of Group Psychotherapy.* Edited by S. R. Slavson. (New York: Int. Universities Press Inc., 1956. 338 pp. \$6.00.)

This book is stated by its Editor to be an extension of an earlier volume, *The Practice of Group Psychotherapy* (Int. Universities Press, 1947), which dealt with the development of group psychotherapy up to 1945. The present volume, a collection of nineteen chapters by different authors, almost all American, is a co-operative presentation of the rapid development of group psychotherapeutic methods and their application in various clinical fields.

The Editor himself contributes an introductory chapter in which he outlines the advantages of selecting patients for groups on the basis of similarity of syndrome, and discusses some basic dynamics of group psychotherapy, and in particular of what Slavson calls analytic group psychotherapy, i.e. one based on modified and expanded psycho-analytic concepts. He is also the co-author of a chapter on group discussions with unmarried mothers.

T. P. Rees and M. M. Glatt, in the only contribution from Great Britain, sum up the historical developments of group therapy in mental hospitals before giving an account of the various group activities which are used at Warlingham Park. These include various types of activity groups, directive groups such as 'habit training groups', as well as more strictly psycho-therapeutic ones.

Other chapters discuss the application of group psychotherapy in psychosomatic disorders, a particularly promising field, and in such specialized fields as addiction, alcoholism, allergy, geriatrics, delinquency. Of special interest are the chapters on child guidance, family services, marriage problems. Private practice is dealt with by W. C. Hulse.



The application of group techniques in industry is also discussed. There is an interesting chapter by S. R. Slavson on the wider aspects of the subject under the title of 'Community Mental Health'. Training is discussed by S. B. Hadden, and Benjamin Kotkov contributes a chapter on research.

This is indeed an integrated book, as the Editor claims in the preface, and not merely a collection of papers concerned with group psychotherapy. It contains much information and gives an excellent review of the many applications in which group psychotherapy has already found fruitful application.

S. H. Foulkes.

*Psychiatric Research Reports of the American Psychiatric Associations.* Numbers 1 to 4. Pp. 152, 176, 93, 129 resp., 1955 and 1956. (Published by the A.P.A., Washington 6, D.C. Price of single volume \$2.)

This is a new and important venture undertaken by the A.P.A. with the assistance of Ciba Products Inc., for publication of scientific papers reporting research in progress, especially those presented at regional conferences sponsored by the Association jointly with medical schools. Reports 1 and 4 are concerned with the effects of drugs recently introduced in the treatment of psychiatric disorders and Report 4 with experimental research in psychosomatic medicine. Report 2 (Approaches to the Study of Human Personality) is of interest to the psycho-analyst. It contains a symposium dealing with E. Fromm's views on personality and with cultural, anthropological, semantic and communication approaches. Other papers deal with experimental psychodynamics, cybernetics and constitutional aspects. The symposia are well edited and very readable. They are good value for those interested in the special fields to which they contribute.

E. Stengel.

*Triebstruktur und Geisteskrankheiten* (Drive Structure and Mental Disorders). By Ernest Stumper. (Bern and Stuttgart: Hans Huber, 1956. Fr./DM 19.80. Pp. 159.)

This is the second volume of a series of publications edited by L. Szondi who applied some psycho-analytical principles to his projective psychological methods and elaborated an 'experimental drive diagnosis'. (Triebdiagnostik.) Szondi views mental illnesses as 'diseases of destiny'. He defines them as 'a familial innate and inescapable choice of solutions of instinctual conflicts made by a person'. Dr. Stumper, who is the Director of the Luxemburg mental hospital, has in this book made the attempt to apply Szondi's psychology to almost the whole of clinical psychiatry. It has its own set of symbols and measures which tend to create the misleading impression of scientific exactitude.

E. Stengel.

*Die Messung der Intelligenz Erwachsener.* (The Measurement of the Intelligence of Adults.) By David Wechsler. German Version by Anne Hardesty and Hans Lauber. (Bern and Stuttgart: Hans Huber, 1956. 3rd Ed. Fr. 24.80. Pp. 249.)

The Wechsler Bellevue Intelligence Scale for Adults, first published in 1939, has proved of great value in English speaking populations. This book presents the standardized German adaptation which should be useful not only in German speaking countries but also elsewhere in the testing of adult immigrants from those countries.

E. Stengel.

*Society and Medicine.* The New York Academy of Medicine Lectures to the Laity. No. XVII. Edited by Iago Galdston. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1955. \$3.)

This is an interesting collection of addresses for the educated lay public. It starts with a delightful essay by the late Sir James Spence about his thousand Newcastle babies and their families, a famous study which 'ended up with a picture of a community, its way of living, its culture, its attitudes towards its institutions'. Liddell's talk about the natural history of neurotic behaviour introduced the audience into the field of experimental neurosis. Other addresses dealt with the environment and heredity as overlapping influences in shaping the individual, and with changing concepts of child care.

E. Stengel.

*Group Processes.* Transactions of the First Conference, September 1954. Edited by B. Schaffner. Sponsored by the Josiah Macy Foundation. (New York: 1955. Pp. 334. \$5.50.)

Among the participants were Konrad Lorenz, Tinbergen, Howard S. Liddell, E. Erikson, Frieda Fromm-Reichmann, Margaret Mead, Fritz Redl, Stanley Cobb, I. A. Mirsky and E. Fremont-Smith. The book contains records of six most stimulating symposia centred around ethology, i.e. the biological study of animal behaviour initiated by Heinroth and established by Lorenz and Tinbergen. It is now generally accepted that these studies are of considerable importance to the science of human behaviour and especially to the psycho-analyst who shares with the ethologist the interest in the effects of earliest experiences. That, on the other hand, psycho-analysis can benefit ethology is illustrated by Helen Blauvelt researches into 'Dynamics of the mother-newborn relationship in goats' which were stimulated by René Spitz' observations in hospitalized infants. The last symposium dealt with the role of the observer in the animal experiment, which was compared with the role of the therapist in the psycho-analytical situation. This book is full of fascinating observations and ideas; it conveys both the informality and the intensity of the discussions. Everybody interested in the science of behaviour will enjoy reading it.

E. Stengel.

## ABSTRACTS

### Contents:

*The Psychoanalytic Study of the Child*, 10, 1955.

*Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association*,  
4, 1956, No. 3.

### THE PSYCHOANALYTIC STUDY OF THE CHILD (An Annual) <sup>1</sup>

10, 1955

Heinz Hartmann, M.D. (New York). 'Notes on the Theory of Sublimation.' Pp. 9-29.

The definition of neutralization as a change from an instinctual towards a non-instinctual mode of energy utilization safeguards the distinction between the sublimated cathexis of an ego function and the sublimated cathexis of its aims and objects, and opens the way to problems essential for the metapsychology of the ego and of ego-id relations.

This paper is based on the probably threefold origin of neutralized energy in the two drives and in the ego (primary ego energy). There is evidence that sublimation is a continuous process and works with a continuum of gradations of energy from the fully instinctual to the fully neutralized mode. But secondary ego autonomy, which alone ensures the stability of an ego function and its resistivity to regression and reinstinctualization, presupposes the ego's accumulation in interaction with the outer and inner world of a reservoir of neutralized energy of its own which can be shifted to points where needed, and by which it is made independent of *ad hoc* acts of neutralization. Incentives to neutralization under the pressure of the id and under direction from the ego and, later, the superego are discussed. The operation of the primary process before the establishment of an ego organization involves displacements and symbolizations which may come in the course of development to be neutralized. Self-preservation, which in man is largely an ego function, is in fact geared to the operation of neutralization. Desexualization in Freud's view is correlated with defusion of instinct. The dangers of self- or object-destruction inherent in defusion can only be counteracted, therefore, if the ability to neutralize aggression is unimpaired. Sublimation of libido and aggression provides the ego in part with energy appropriate to its special needs.

The rôle of neutralization in defensive and in non-defensive ego functions and the varieties of cathexis involved is discussed. The aggression used in

counter-cathexis in repression as well as the aggression used in ego-superego interplay exemplify partly neutralized forms still retaining unmistakable elements of 'fight'. The non-defensive ego activities may have a higher discharge value than the counter-cathexes, and the reaction formations appear to form an intermediary grade.

Furthermore the shift of energy from one ego function to another seems more easily achieved in the case of the non-defensive functions, though the defences draw to some extent on the reservoir of the shades of neutralized energy which the ego has at its disposal. The differences in degree of mobility between the various ego functions may in part correlate with the degrees of neutralization involved.

Finally the defensive nature of sublimation itself and its relation to optimal degrees of repression is discussed. The origin of sublimations in genital strivings, or in drives not directed to objects, is a question which may have the value of differential consideration in future studies where the functions and contents of sublimated activity may be related to gradations of energy neutralization.

Ernst Kris, Ph.D. 'Neutralization and Sublimation. Observations on Young Children.'

The author uses intensive observations on the 'sublimated' activity of several young children to study the problem of energy transformation. The discussion is within the context of the author's earlier formulations on the part played in the creative process on the one hand by the permanent investment of the ego with neutralized energy—now linked with Hartmann's 'reservoir'—and on the other by such transitory changes of energy distribution, neutralized or otherwise, as may occur in the course of any type of activity, the 'energy flux'.

Observations on the defences used by young children to cope with impulses to mess activated by the medium of painting activity, illustrate the interdependence of drive discharge and goal displacement and the way in which the structure of the activity itself influences the process of neutralization. While the capacity to neutralize determines the preference for the specific activity and to some extent the capacity to endure difficulties and solve problems in this particular area, the structure of the activity supplies incentives for increased neutralization. Pleasure in interesting colour contrasts, rare shading, and balanced and fantastic configurations is found

<sup>1</sup> Published by International Universities Press, New York, and Imago Publishing Co., London.



alternating with pleasure in mixing and smearing. Later representational elements take charge and phantasies become attached to shapes. The primary process is at work, though attempts or pretences at control can be noticed in the creative process. In some children the process of neutralization may be arrested at an earlier stage by premature 'completion' of the picture indicating avoidance of the danger of seduction by the medium or by obsessively dominated work. Comparative observations taken from longitudinal studies of two children, in one of whom the ability to sublimate far outran that of the other, suggest that some significant part was played by the quality of the early relationship of the two mothers to their children. Moreover, the activity to which the neutralized energy is directed is likely to be most significant to the child and the choice of sublimation most successful when this activity at the same time represents a bond with the love object. 'In Evelyn the capacity to neutralize was early developed, in Anne this general capacity did not reach a comparable stage. Most areas of her behaviour were free from instinctual outbreaks, but in none was neutralization carried as far as with Evelyn. While Evelyn soiled at 2½, in those activities in which neutralization had been achieved, the degree of neutralization seemed extraordinary.' The difference can be expressed in terms of the reservoir and the flux.

Observations in the first eighteen months of children institutionalized from birth, suggest that retardation and inhibition of activities involving higher organization of discharge, problem solving, and thinking related to action, is gross compared with the maturation of for example motor processes. The conclusion is drawn that the latter are more closely dependent on non-instinctual energies and the former on the neutralization of instinctual energy. 'The study of two interacting processes, of maturation and adaptive patterning in response to the mother's ministrations, might enable us to approach the question of how specific types and modalities of maternal care can be related to the development of the capacity for neutralization of instinctive energy in the child.'

Paul Kramer, M.D. (Chicago). 'On Discovering One's Identity.' Pp. 47-74.

The author describes the beginnings of the development of a sense of personal identity as it could be reconstructed in the analysis of a middle-aged man. The unsuccessful outcome initiated by traumatic events could be traced to a number of factors, in which the constitutional undoubtedly played a part. One of these appeared to be an inherent disproportion between the intensity of instinctual drives and the capacity for their mastery. Early frustrations, the mother's impatient attitude, discrepancies between her demands for the child's maturation and the infant's innate ability for growth,

were other factors involved. A debilitating organic illness in early infancy initiated a process of partial ego maturation at an age earlier and at a rate of speed greater than was natural to the infant. Thus, necessity instead of providing a stimulating factor becomes a traumatic influence on ego development.

The patient's symptomatology and behaviour patterns showed the influence of two mutually contradictory tendencies, the desire to unite with the mother and ensure the persistence of infantile omnipotence, and on the other hand the desire to prevent the loss of identity and the personal death involved in complete reunion with her. In consequence of the traumatic circumstances of the discovery of the child's painful separateness from the mother, an ego segment, 'the little man', was isolated from the rest of the personality. It remained the main function of this separate structure to prevent either of the above-mentioned tendencies from gaining the upper hand. The ensuing neurosis achieved this only at the cost of a crippling inhibition of the ego's freedom of movement, a far-reaching renunciation of the instinctual gratification and attacks of paralysing anxiety.

K. R. Eissler, M.D. (New York). 'An Unusual Function of an Amnesia.' Pp. 75-82.

A patient reported that she could not remember that her mother spent any time with her as a child. This apparent amnesia proved to be a negative cover memory denying the pleasurable experiences of the mother's love. It existed side by side with a clear memory of the traumatic withdrawal of the mother's care at the age of five or six.

The state of being repressed follows the operation of any defence mechanism and should be distinguished from the act of repression, a defensive operation to remove psychic content from consciousness. In this case the far-reaching effects of the defensive operation suggest that a cluster of mechanisms are at work serving to protect the psychic apparatus on a more archaic level than that on which the avoidance of displeasure and the gain of pleasure are the principal goals. The amnesia had the function not only of denying that the patient had suffered a trauma, but of supporting her belief that no trauma could occur to her. The hysteric's repetitive traumatization was totally absent. The patient lived a peaceful and successful life, but without full participation of the self, attributing her success to good luck and the operation of circumstances.

The author considers the likelihood that the activation of the defensive process leading to a childhood neurosis may stem not only, as Freud (1926) says, from anxiety over an external danger leading to repression. If, prior to the differentiation of the personality, the defensive operations arise in response to an internal danger (in the present case



the danger of stimulation *per se*), particularly serious forms of psychopathology may result. The motive for defence in the case was reflected in the symptomatology, and [in the analysis by a quantitatively greater resistance than would have been encountered if repression alone had been the operative defence.

The author therefore suggests the following regrouping of infantile anxieties.

The danger of not meeting the requirements of the reality principle, fear of loss of love and castration being the prevailing anxieties; the danger of not meeting the requirements of the pleasure principle, dread of the strength of the instincts being the prevailing anxiety; the danger of not meeting the requirements of the nirvana (constancy) principle, the fear of stimulation being paramount.

Victor H. Rosen, M.D. (New York). 'Strophosymbolia: An Intrasytemic Disturbance of the Synthetic Function of the Ego.' Pp. 83-99.

Evidence presented from the analysis of a young mathematician, who suffered from developmental difficulties affecting his ability to write and spell, indicates that his writing errors arose from oscillations between attempts to reproduce words in phonetic fashion without regard to their visual appearance or, alternatively, in ideographic fashion without regard to the sound of the word. It is suggested that phylogenetically his disturbance is similar to a transitional stage in the development of writing between ideographic forms and a syllabary alphabet with incomplete development of the concept of phonetic writing. It is suggested that the basic conflict in this case arises from the primal scene fantasy which associates father with visual activities and mother with auditory functions, and which conceives of them as incapable of producing a child except by artificial insemination. It is further suggested that secondary autonomy has been achieved in the visual and auditory perceptual functions of the ego when utilized separately, and that conflict invades these areas only in their synthetic function relating to recognizing and evoking phonetic words and images. At this point their synthetic product becomes invested with primal scene significance. The genetic origin of the disability may be due to precocious maturation of certain ego sectors involved in visual and auditory perceptual processes, so that they become involved in oedipal conflict at a crucial stage in their development. Thus they are prevented in their synthetic relationship from forming a new completely autonomous structure as they might have done had their development been somewhat delayed. An attempt is made to indicate the relationship between this disturbance of interperceptual synthesis and the enhancement of preconscious problem-solving operations in mathematics which utilize attenuated 'unsolidified' images.

Edward Liss, M.D. (New York). 'Motivations in Learning.' Pp. 100-116.

The author describes the contribution which psycho-analysis has made to latter-day views on the process of learning as they affect teacher and student. He outlines the main facts of instinctual development and object relation as well as some of the chief conflicts which influence this aspect of ego maturation.

Max Schur, M.D. (New York). 'Comments on the Metapsychology of Somatization.' Pp. 119-161.

An intensive report of the analysis of a patient suffering from chronic exudative lichenoid dermatosis is used to show how the emergence of somatic phenomena is linked to an impairment of ego function, with a prevalence of primary process thinking and failure of the process of neutralization. As the sexuality of these cases is predominantly pregenital, hence the source of extensive conflict giving rise to anxiety and aggression, it is difficult to separate the somatic manifestations of libido, aggression, and anxiety. The ego function may deviate from the normal, in the direction of neurotic response, both by the regressive evaluation of danger and by regressive reaction. Instinctual demands are experienced as dangerous and potential dangers as actual and even as traumatic. The reaction in such situations may undergo far-reaching regression and infantile types of diffuse discharge phenomena re-emerge. Regression may be carried to a preverbal, pre-ego stage of development where reaction to stimuli is in the closest sense psychosomatic, and when conscious experience is limited to the awareness of the discharge phenomena which genetically have been present before emergence of the affect. A distinction is thus made between somatization which is an anxiety equivalent, and somatization which is an anxiety concomitant. While physiological regression is always linked to the prevalence of primary process thinking, and failure of neutralization, the loss of these functions will not always result in physiological regression, the total situation of the individual and the predisposition to regressive types of anxiety being operative factors.

The author discusses similarities between symptom formation in certain dermatoses, and in hysterical conversions, some aspects of fetishism and schizophrenia. While his observations failed to find any specificity of personality structure or of conflict or defence against any one phase of sexual or of aggressive development, patients had in common a prevalence of narcissistic, pregenital elements in libido development, with tenuous object relations built around narcissistic needs, and widespread impairment of ego function, with a history of severe traumatization.



Dorothy Burlingham (London) in co-operation with Alice Goldberger (London) and Andre Lussier, Ph.D. (Montreal). 'Simultaneous Analysis of Mother and Child.' Pp. 165-186.

This study shows how the psychopathology of a mother influenced that of her child as revealed in their respective independent analyses. The conclusions, which are still incomplete, show the following types of interaction. The mother's inhibition of function (e.g. inability to breast feed) due to her unconscious anxiety had in some instances a lasting pathogenic influence on the whole life and development of the child. Her unconscious fears played the rôle of active pathogenic environmental agents. Similarly her own fantasies of emptiness or fullness not only determined the child's feeding situation and her evaluation of and reaction to his digestive disturbances, but were incorporated in his own fantasy life and determined his later feeding troubles and constipation.

The child's understanding of the mother's ambivalent overvaluation of his penis, her conflicting desires for it and hostility against it contributed to his exaggerated exhibitionism and to the equation of his body with the erect penis. His restless wriggling and crashing into walls could be accounted for in this way. The relation of the two over the child's excretory activities were in the nature of a *folie à deux* representative of sexual union.

So far as the child was under the influence of the fantasy life of the mother, analysis was able to raise his reactions to consciousness and lead to a growing independence. In so far as the mother acted out her fantasy life in the child's body care, the influence of her continued seductions outweighed the effect of the analysis. This fact is of considerable prognostic value.

Phyllis Greenacre, M.D. (New York). 'Further Considerations Regarding Fetishism.' Pp. 187-194.

The author develops the theme of her earlier paper (1953), linking the severe castration anxiety of fetishists with traumatic experiences in the period six to eighteen months and at the time of the early phallic phase. Additions concern: (1) The interrelation between different types of perversion; (2) problems of body reality and their relation to the general sense of reality; and (3) aggression and acting out in relation to the reality sense.

(1) Earliest disturbances occurring during the transition from primary to secondary process constitute an enormous stimulation of aggression and affect all the developing libidinal phases. They make for a confluence of discharge routes (1954) and culminate in the accentuation of perverse organization. This, rather than constitutional inferiority, accounts for the concurrence in overt forms of homosexual and bisexual behaviour in the fetishist.

(2) In the early stages of the development of the body ego, visual-oral aggression may remain over-strong so that the integration of visual and tactual sensory exploration, as described by Hoffer, fails to occur. Uncertainty as to what is 'me' and 'not me' affecting the 'belongingness' of the penis may be reactivated in the phallic phase under pressure of castration anxiety and affect the sense of separateness from the other sex. The fetishist's oscillation in sense of body self with quick identification with others mediated largely through vision, especially in sexual situations, causes him to suffer the distresses of castration anxiety both for himself and his partner during and in anticipation of intercourse. Fantasies and memories are expressed as body imagery and body sensations rather than as thought imagery. Fantasy life is limited and not available for intellectual pursuits.

(3) Tendencies to action and acting out are implicit in the fetishistic character, probably influenced by the suffusion of the entire body with aggressive stimulation in very early actual traumas defying defence. The very diffusion of the aggression may result in a frozen immobility with an accompanying state of psychic unreality, since the stimuli cannot be adequately responded to. Moreover, the early suffusion with aggression with its paradoxical immobility establishes a kind of reversal of reaction at a psychophysiological level which contributes to and may be the paradigm of later forms of quick denial and reversal.

Margaret Mahler, M.D., and Bertram J. Gosliner, M.D. (New York). 'On Symbiotic Child Psychosis, Genetic, Dynamic and Restitutive Aspects.' Pp. 195-212.

The processes of development leading to individuation of self and object in the second and third years of life are described, and some environmental factors noted which interfere with or assist in the fusion of good and bad images of object and self. Detailed case material is adduced where integration of the good and bad mother images, as well as clear differentiation of representations of part objects outside from part images of the self has been defective. At the point where fear of re-engulfment into a symbiosis amounting to loss of identity accumulates simultaneously with its apparent opposite, separation anxiety, the ego is overwhelmed and further progressive integration is prevented. There is regression to the stage where unneutralized libido and aggression were invested in the symbiotic system within the child's inner delusional reality. At this point the real mother ceases to exist for the child as a separate entity, and the child's world is dominated by good and bad introjects. Children described become possessed by unneutralized aggression manifesting itself in catatonic agitation and violence towards objects and their own body. In one case the introjects obtain symbolic personi-



fication in psychotic fetishistic objects, or there is exclusive preoccupation with inanimate objects which can serve the child for a frame of reference because of their predictability. In this case, material illustrates how in the second eighteen months of life the child whose ego is constitutionally vulnerable, symbiotically fixated, and now during the separation-individuation phase is additionally traumatized, may regress to the objectless autistic stage and lose contact with his precarious identity and with reality.

Rene Spitz, M.D. (New York). 'The Primal Cavity. A Contribution to the Genesis of Perception and its Role for Psychoanalytic Theory.' Pp. 215-240.

The author uses further observational and clinical material to modify and extend the reconstructions of Isakower and Lewin concerning the perceptual process in earliest infancy. The earliest precursors of perception are received in the oral cavity which is able to function as a bridge between inner receptive and outer perceptive experience. The feeding infant stares not at the mother's breast but at her face, finally uniting the tactile and visual perceptions into an undifferentiated unity. The visual elements of the dream screen are therefore related to the mother's face, notwithstanding that its other sensory elements belong with the breast. Further perceptual elements arising in the hands, the labyrinth, and the skin unite with the intra-oral sensations in a situational experience in which no part is distinguished from the other.

'According to our experimental observations, we may assume that somewhere from three to eighteen months the infant perceives mainly in images and operates mentally with the memory traces laid down by visual percepts. It is around eighteen months that verbal proficiency becomes established, enabling the infant to begin to replace in his mental operations an increasing number of visual perceptions by verbal symbols.' Normally the adult regresses from the level of symbolic function to the level of visual imagery in dreams, at which level the dream screen becomes perceivable. In states of dissociation or illness a further regression to the level of coenaesthetic perception may occur in which Isakower phenomena become available. 'The level of coenaesthetic perception belongs to the . . . experiential world of the primal cavity . . . It is to this world that man escapes when he feels threatened by pathological conditions in febrile states; also when in the waking state the ego becomes helpless through dissociation, as in toxic conditions. The method of escape has a double mechanism: the withdrawal of cathexis from the sensorium on the one hand, the hypercathexis of the body ego on the other. The particular sector of the body ego representation which seems most highly cathected is the representation of the primal cavity. This distribution of cathexis makes the experience of the Isakower

phenomenon possible.' The withdrawal of cathexis from the sensorium is itself a reinstatement of the stimulus barrier of the neonate and a precondition of the reinstatement of primary narcissism.

Bela Mittlemann, M.D. 'Motor Patterns and Genital Behaviour: Fetishism.' Pp. 241-263.

The author follows up the implications for pathology of his concept of a motor drive, more especially of the affectomotor and rhythmic phenomena described in Vol. 9 of this journal. In some infants joy patterns differ or overlap with those related to other emotions, but this is not always so. These patterns are largely congenitally determined as distinct from the rhythmic auto-erotic patterns which seem largely influenced by environment. Both phenomena may appear regressively in older children or adults during excitement and may contribute to the patterning of symptoms in disturbances of the genital function, more particularly to fetishism.

In a child manifesting foot fetishism the normal libidinal investment of feet was intensified by the vigorous jumping experiences which accompanied the feeling of joy and affected as well his own body image. These factors combined with disturbed relations in the environment to produce the symptom of foot fetishism and prolonged masturbation.

Early affectomotor and rhythmic patterns are also incorporated into adult gestures and motor behaviour during intercourse and orgasm.

Fetishistic activity frequently follows current disappointments. The infantile patterns are fused with and reinforced by a circular sequence of reactions containing dependent needs, hostility, guilt, fear of abandonment, fear of genital injury, and the defensive and restitutive use of the fetish as a reliable, controlled, and defenceless part object. The use of the latter potentially reinstates the attitudes and impulses with which the patient tried to cope.

During the period of exploratory part objects and, later, when skeletal motility dominates the functions of mastery, of integration and pleasure—then dependency needs, hostility and anxiety are readily carried over into active or passive motility and may in turn lead to genital excitement with part object choice.

The same connexions may exist in adults with motor restlessness, passive muscle erotism, and significant areas of motor inhibition.

Selma Fraiberg (Detroit). 'Some Considerations on the Introduction to Therapy in Puberty.' Pp. 264-286.

The morbid aspects of the clinical picture in puberty are counterbalanced by the tremendous forward thrust of the drives, and the impetus toward growth can work for a favourable outcome of treatment. Almost all writers on the other hand recog-



nize the adolescent's negative reactions towards treatment and the powerful initial resistances to be handled. The author considers that these characteristic problems concern chiefly the biological age of puberty, and that the analytic method and the child's approach to therapy more nearly approximate to the adult in late adolescence. The paper illustrates and discusses types of resistance met at the beginning of treatment with prepubertal and early pubertal cases, and some technical considerations which assist progress.

Lawrence S. Kubie, M.D., and Hyman A. Israel (New York). '“Say You're Sorry”.' Pp. 289-299.

The story is told of the first meeting with a deeply regressed child of five in the teaching seminar of a hospital. The regression had been sudden, of some weeks' duration, and was accompanied by partial mutism. The empathy with which the child's idiosyncratic sign language was met in the interview initiated the first turn towards health. The author discusses the episode and the subsequent treatment for the light thrown on the unconscious interplay between therapist and patient in verbal and non-verbal communication. The case illustrates the distortion of the child's symbolic function to allow the gap between the 'me' and the 'not me' to be bridged; the acutely regressed phase marked the severing of the link between the two, and the first interview and later aspects of the therapy represented successful rebridging initiated by the analyst. The author asks: What are the situations in which effective interpretative communication can be non-verbal? What are the situations in which effective communication can be approximate and general or alternatively dependent on the unique and precise word?

David Crocker, M.D. (Cleveland). 'The Study of a Problem of Aggression.' Pp. 300-335.

In the case of a thirteen-year-old boy suffering from such outbreaks of antisocial aggression as to necessitate admittance to a residential treatment centre, the development and manifestations of aggression and related disturbances of reality testing are described as they were observed during the course of a successful analysis. Acting out on a grand scale prevented progress in school and influenced the analyst to make both useful and unsuccessful technical deviations, which are described. The crucial trauma related to seductive stimulations at all phases of libidinal development, leading to a breakdown of ego-mastery and destructive and self-destructive outbursts. Another source was the rigid controlling interference with ego-mastery in all phases. In the oedipal phase the aggressive acting out was a direct representation of the primal scene excitement as well as a defence against homosexual excitement. In his fantasy of injury at conception lay the excitement which he felt

he could not master and which had injured him psychically and emotionally. This may have represented the origin of his aggression.

Eleanor W. Demarest, M.D., and Muriel Chaves Winestine, M.S. (New York). 'The Initial Phase of Concomitant Treatment of Twins.' Pp. 336-352.

The presentation indicates how the introduction of therapy upset the formerly established equilibrium between the twins and made apparent the insufficient individuation of each twin from the mother and its sibling. The effect of this on each twin's personality accounts for the marked difference in their approach to and utilization of therapy.

The mother showed a strong preference for the more active twin, Susan, and permitted Susan to thwart Ann's early attempts at making contact with the mother so that Ann eventually withdrew. Ann acquiesced in a submissive attitude to Susan and showed anxiety when she was absent.

In treatment Susan was unable to accept any situation which did not mirror her relationship with her mother or with Ann, or which threatened the equilibrium of these relationships. So long as the transference focused on her unindividuated relationship with her mother, it could not be utilized, because it was too threatening to Susan and to the mother. The assertiveness which Ann developed as a result of analysis deprived Susan of her 'puppet' and she transferred this rôle on to the therapist. Thus her maternal identifications came into the analysis and enabled her rivalry with Ann to be analysed.

Ann's wish for a place where there was no other child was an impetus to treatment. She forced the therapist into a limited rôle as provider of play material and transferred the remoteness characteristic of her relation to her mother. Though she responded with depression to deprivations, she was unable to attempt an exclusive mother-child relationship, because she had never experienced one until, having staged an attempt by telephone to separate Susan from her own analyst, she was able to escape from domination and adopt her own therapist as object.

Although Ann has individuated herself from Susan, her ego-functioning shows marked defects of differentiation and integration, while Susan's drive disturbance is apparent through lack of fusion of libidinal and aggressive elements.

Lucie Jessner, M.D., John Lamont, M.D., Robert Long, M.D., Babette Whipple, Ph.D., and Norman Prentice, M.A. (Boston). 'Emotional Impact of Nearness and Separation for the Asthmatic Child and his Mother.' Pp. 353-375.

Extensive case material illustrates the part played by emotional conflicts within the mother-child relationship in the genesis of asthmatic conditions. A partial symbiosis marks the relationship from the



side of both mother and child. The mother repeats with the child this feature of her own maternal relationship and alternately the defensive features of withdrawal and rejection. The child feels enveloped and choked by the mother's need to keep him so close and expresses this symbolically in fantasies of a womb which is both a shelter and a place where one may drown. For both mother and child the asthma may become a vehicle for the expression of feelings of protection and rejection, surrender and rebellion. The conflict is intensified when the two are together and lessened during separation. Profound regressive and oral wishes are akin to those of psychotics but with more adequate defences, frequently of a phobic kind. While the personality fails to establish independent attitudes, in other ways ego-development is continuous.

Elizabeth Gero-Heymann (New York). 'A Short Communication on a Traumatic Episode in a Child of Two Years and Seven Months.' Pp. 376-380.

A mother under analysis was able to help her daughter assimilate a traumatic experience caused by the head of her doll flying off. The child's preoccupation with penis envy of her elder brother and with her aggressive feelings towards her mother, who was frequently absent, were the operative factors in the traumatic nature of the incident. Interpretation by means of a song which the mother made up went no further than to make it clear that the child's aggressive wishes had not hurt the mother and that the mother was still loving. Though the child's anger that she had not been given a penis was clearly basic in the aggressive feelings towards the mother, these interpretations of her fear of her own magical omnipotence and of the mother's retaliation enabled her to work through unaided to a satisfactory feminine position.

Martha Wolfenstein, Ph.D. (New York). 'Mad Laughter in a Six-Year-Old Boy.' Pp. 381-394.

A schizophrenic child who lived in constant fear of being sent away by his mother who had been deserted by her husband developed a wild laughter, accompanied by rolling on the floor, which served as a substitute for tears in an effort to reverse painful emotion. It acted also as a release for aggressive and sexual feelings, particularly as the equivalent of excretory acts. He used laughter as an infant uses crying to summon a needed person as well as to excite his mother and make her angry. He thus induced her to participate in his excitement and to intensify it by hitting him.

The central theme was, however, the equation with the excretory act, which was intensely eroticized for this child. It represented that for which his mother wanted to get rid of him. By repeating excretory acts in the form of laughter, he actively precipitated the danger situation and tested its likelihood. The laughter represented a 'getting rid'

of incessant inner strain and perhaps of the introjected mother (passive-active mechanism).

The author discusses these findings in the wider context of the normal. In the series urinating, defecating, crying, laughter also may have the significance of ridding the body of bad internal things (bad impulses and painful inhibitions in the case of wit). Laughter may be the only 'excretory' act in respect of which loss of control remains permissible. The wild laughter of this child is in contrast with the normal latency situation. While the young child acts as well as speaks his 'joke', there is a reduction in the use of the body for this purpose in latency where verbal expression increases in isolation from motor activity. While this child's laughter was often initiated by highly condensed word cues, often of an anal nature, the feature is related more to the unelaborated word joking of the four-year-old than to the condensation which characterizes latency wit. In the case of the schizophrenic child the content was exclusively personal and aimed at hiding his acute immediate distress from himself. Normal latency joking works over emotional problems of preceding phases of development whose urgency has been reduced, in a way which combines the wish for concealment with a true wish to communicate. Normally the aggressive provocation of the joke is moderated by the gratification it offers to the hearer. This child's hilarity offered only provocation.

Ruth Thomas.

# JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN PSYCHO-ANALYTIC ASSOCIATION

4, 1956, No. 3

Therese F. Benedek. 'Toward the Biology of the Depressive Constellation.'

The author's theory of a depressive constellation is based upon her psycho-analytic experience with mothers and children and her research into the female sexual cycle. She suggests that each phase of the menstrual cycle is accompanied by a regression to orality. The mother of the newborn child reacts to the demands made upon her by an increase in her receptive wishes. A complex inter-relationship is established between mother and child. The satisfied infant promotes a feeling of confidence in the mother and increases her motherliness. When the child fails to be satisfied this can result in self-directed hostility, leading to the equation 'bad' mother = 'bad' self. The failure to meet the child's needs results in the frustration of the mother's receptive wishes. This may activate the hatred which was once associated with her own oral deprivation. She thus becomes the 'bad' mother in identification with her own mother as well as the 'bad' child. Well-being can only be regained by the infant's satisfaction which would represent her own gratification at her mother's breast.



The core of the depressive constellation consists of the introjected hated, frustrating mother now identified with the self which is consequently 'bad' also. The depressive core can be stimulated by regression to the oral phase which occurs during the female procreative cycle. In those women who are ambivalent owing to identification with the 'bad' mother, hormonal stimulation of the reproductive drives can mobilize the depressive constellation and lead to depression.

George L. Engel and Franz Reichsman. 'Spontaneous and Experimentally Induced Depression in an Infant with a Gastric Fistula: A Contribution to the Problem of Depression.'

This is a case report followed by discussion of an infant girl who was found at birth to be suffering from congenital atresia of the oesophagus. Cervical and gastric fistulae were established and the child discharged to her home. She was to return for a further operation later which would allow the child to swallow normally. Owing to a number of circumstances the child was neglected at home, and she had to be readmitted to hospital at the age of one year and three months. She there remained for nine months and was successfully operated upon. It was noted that a depressive withdrawal reaction appeared when the infant was confronted with a stranger. During the depression-withdrawal reaction there was a profound reduction in the secretion of hydrochloric acid and pepsin by the stomach. A number of factors are listed as being the cause of the reaction. Amongst these are: (i) the interference with the normal feeding pattern as a result of the anatomical defect; (ii) the mother's uneasiness with the abnormal child; (iii) the mother's subsequent pregnancy; (iv) the move from the grandparent's home to an isolated house in the hills.

The latter half of the paper is taken up with an examination of the relationship between depressive phenomena in infancy and those of adult life. The authors have found Benedek's formulation (see above) very helpful in understanding the child's depressive reaction. They suggest that after a period of activity which ends in exhaustion the depressive reaction supervenes. This occurs only when there is no longer any hope of resuscitation of the mother-child symbiosis. The child's failure to show anxiety instead of depression when confronted with a stranger can be attributed to the repeated past failure of the anxiety response.

The authors propose that two basic processes predispose to the nuclear psychodynamic constellation which is potentially depressogenic. The more primitive is a tendency towards biological withdrawal in the face of threatened exhaustion. The second factor is what Benedek has called the 'ambivalent core'. In depression there is not only an oral process of introjection of the object but also an inactive pre-oral, pre-object primordial

process. The active phase has the aim of restoring the lost object. The child's reaction of depression-withdrawal represented the reaction of the inactive, pre-oral phase.

Judith S. Kestenberg. 'Vicissitudes of Female Sexuality.'

This paper takes up the problem of the rôle of the vagina in early development. It begins with a discussion of the activity-passivity problem as it relates to femininity. It is suggested that, prior to the period when the vagina is recognized as a bodily organ, tension arising within the vagina is expressed as a yearning for a passive experience. The girl in pre-puberty reacts to sexual tension without being aware of its source. The influence which each libidinal phase has upon the final psychical representations of the vagina is described at length—separate sections of the paper being given over to the oral, anal, and phallic phases. At one stage according to the author vaginal sensations are projected on to the baby. This projection of vaginal sensations transforms the idea of the vagina as a devouring mouth or bad-smelling hole into that of a precious organ. In this early maternal stage of development play with dolls represents the child's mother relationship and the externalized vagina. In the conclusion Kestenberg suggests that the long period of vaginal frustration imposed upon the girl biologically facilitates the development of maternal feelings. This is accomplished by the transformation of vaginal tensions into maternal urges.

Sandor S. Feldman. 'Crying at the Happy Ending.'

'There are no tears of joy, only tears of sorrow'; Feldman ends his short paper with these words. He shows by means of numerous examples that crying at the happy ending arises from a number of causes. It may be due to delayed effect; to sad events the memory of which is awakened by a happy ending; or to guilt. A further explanation is offered, the essence of which is that in adult life the individual can no longer experience the happiness and the parental protection of childhood. Feldman points out that we cry not only over past unhappy events, but also because the happy childhood with its illusions is gone, and we cry for the sad end which is sure to come—the separation from the beloved ones.

Leon Saul and Edith Sheppard. 'An Attempt to Quantify Emotional Forces using Manifest Dreams; A Preliminary Study.'

The observation that there was a striking difference between the manifest dream content of normal subjects and hypertensive patients led the authors to undertake a systematic study of 500 dreams ob-

tained from 200 subjects. A hundred of these were normal and the other hundred suffered from hypertension. A survey revealed that the dreams of the hypertensive patients showed a higher frequency and intensity of hostility associated with anxiety than did those of the normal subjects. A scale was devised to 'measure' hostility as expressed in the manifest dream. The results obtained from the use of this scale indicated that it could discriminate between the dreams of normal subjects and hypertensive patients, i.e. from the judges' scoring there was both a greater intensity and frequency of hostility in the dreams of the hypertensives than in those of the normally tensives.

The authors emphasize that the use of the scale is of no help in arriving at the latent dream thoughts, nor can it take the place of a full understanding of the predominant unconscious conflicts present in the individual case. Nevertheless as a method of measuring emotional forces it may be a useful adjunct to more comprehensive investigation.

Philip Weissman. 'On Pregenital Compulsive Phenomena and the Repetition Compulsion.'

In this paper the question is raised whether or

not all forms of play in the pre-genital period which 'discharge unpleasure' are inevitably an expression of the repetition compulsion. The author points out that the observer must decide whether or not the play is an autonomous ego activity. Viewed in this light repetitive normal play is to be distinguished from compulsive play, which is also to be seen in very young children. This latter type of play is not conflict-free. The fact that such play is conflict-ridden indicates that it also has the function of discharge of unpleasure. The example of a young child's play given by Freud in *Beyond the Pleasure Principle* is re-examined. The author comes to the conclusion that the child's activity was not due to the repetition compulsion but was a manifestation of conflict. Pre-genital compulsive behaviour and compulsive symptoms are non-autonomous ego-activities, and are similar to the later post-latency obsessional compulsive phenomena. The presence of compulsively patterned behaviour and of compulsive symptoms in pre-genital life gives rise to a number of important clinical problems; e.g. what is the final outcome of these pre-genital compulsions in later life, and do such phenomena continue into the obsessional neurosis of the adult.

Thomas Freeman.

## NEWS, NOTES AND COMMENTS

### *Commemorative Celebrations in Paris of the Centenary of Sigmund Freud's Birth*

In November 1956 the Société Psychanalytique de Paris celebrated the centenary of Sigmund Freud's birth on the occasion of the 19th Congress of the Psychanalystes de Langues Romanes which it organized in conjunction with the Association des Psychanalystes de Belgique and the Sociétés Italienne et Suisse de Psychanalyse.

It will be remembered that Freud spent the year 1886 in Charcot's department at the Salpêtrière. The Société Psychanalytique de Paris decided to commemorate Freud's studies with Charcot in Paris by affixing a plaque in the lecture-room which bears Charcot's name.

This plaque, on which appears a medallion of Freud, was unveiled on the first day of the Congress in the presence of M. André le Trocquer, president of the Assemblée Nationale, with Professor Alajouanine, present holder of the Chaire de

Clinique des Maladies Nerveuses, presiding.

Addresses were given by Dr. Ernest Jones, honorary president of the International Psycho-Analytical Association (see below); by Madame Marie Bonaparte, honorary president of the Société Psychanalytique de Paris, who spoke of the tributes that had come from all over the world; by Dr. M. Bouvet, president of the Société Psychanalytique de Paris; and by Dr. S. Nacht, director of the Institut de Psychanalyse.

Freud's family, in the absence of Miss Anna Freud, who was indisposed, was represented by Professor Freud's son, Mr. Ernst L. Freud.

In the afternoon the Congress heard addresses given by M. Lechat in the name of the Association des Psychanalystes de Belgique, by Dr. de Saussure in the name of the Société Suisse de Psychanalyse, followed by a tribute to Freud by Dr. Francis Pasche.

In a delightfully worded speech Dr. Pasche gave



a picture of Freud's achievement and the quality of his work. In the discussion which followed a number of those taking part dwelt on the living nature of Freud's work, now an integral part of human science.

The Institut de Psychanalyse has decided to publish the speeches given at the Salpêtrière on the occasion of the inauguration of this plaque in memory of Freud's stay in Paris, as well as Dr. F. Pasche's address, in a special brochure with a preface by Dr. S. Nacht.

S. Lebovici.

*Address given by Dr. Ernest Jones, Honorary President of the International Psycho-Analytical Association, on the occasion of the unveiling of a plaque at the Salpêtrière in honour of Sigmund Freud*

The Salpêtrière School! About eighty years ago the great Charcot, the most celebrated neurologist of his time, made this name famous in every medical centre of the world. He roamed the ancient rooms of this old hospital and gave names to diseases before unknown and unnamed, as it is said our ancestor Adam did to the animals which peopled the Garden of Eden. Charcot was a keen observer, a great clinician, above all an outstanding personality. It is just this personality which impressed Freud so much. The three months the young Viennese doctor spent at the Salpêtrière were, in my opinion, a decisive turning-point in his life. By his example Charcot inspired him with the courage to consider hysteria, that disconcerting illness until then disparaged, as worthy of investigation by a man of science. Freud of course knew, before coming to Paris, about the application of hypnosis for nervous complaints. His friend Joseph Breuer had told him of the remarkable results obtained in treating his patient Anna O. by the cathartic method which was to become the seed of psycho-analysis. Freud even tried to interest Charcot in this method, but being a neurologist Charcot was little inclined to psychology. It is, however, what he saw at the Salpêtrière and the memory of it he took back to Vienna which encouraged Freud, three years later, to engage in the researches into hysteria which were to lead him to discover the fundamental laws, until then unknown, about deep human psychological phenomena.

On my first visit to the Salpêtrière, fifty years ago, I had the good fortune to meet the greatest psychopathologist of France, Pierre Janet, whom Freud had not had the opportunity to see at the time of his stay at the Salpêtrière, Janet arriving there only after Freud's departure. Therefore the work of these two learned men developed along the same lines without influencing one another.

Ladies and gentlemen, I thank you for having invited me today to this celebration in honour of these two great men: Charcot and Freud.

*The Ernest Jones Lecture 1957 of the British Psycho-Analytical Society was delivered by Margaret Mead, Ph.D., D.Sc., on 30 January, 1957, in the Barnes Hall of the Royal Society of Medicine.*

Dr. D. W. Winnicott, President of the British Psycho-Analytical Society, was in the Chair and opened the meeting with the following address:

'The British Psycho-Analytical Society welcomes you on the occasion of the eighth Ernest Jones Lecture. I shall not take up more than a few minutes of your time, but first I wish to refer to Ernest Jones himself. We enjoy having him and his family here at these lectures which are arranged as a tribute to his personality and his work.

'Well do I remember my first meeting with him, in 1923, when I went as a rather inhibited young man asking whether anything could be done about it. He alarmed me by giving me an advance list of my symptoms. That Dr. Jones was able to refer me to an analyst was entirely due to the fact that he had himself gone out to Vienna in 1905, and subsequently, had brought Freud's work back, and had established it here in London.

'I forgot to pay my consultation fee, and now at a rather late date I wish to thank him, not only for myself but also on behalf of all of us in this country who have had a chance to make use of psycho-analysis in the search for personal health. Dr. Jones' scientific contributions are widely acclaimed, but the important thing for the patient who needs treatment is the existence of the trained analyst.

'Today the Council of the Society has chosen to ask Dr. Margaret Mead, President of the World Federation for Mental Health, to honour Freud and Jones by giving us something characteristic of herself. This I am sure she will do. On re-reading some of Dr. Mead's books I have enjoyed again her clinical approach, and her freshness of outlook. In introducing this speaker I am not worried about stealing thunder from Miss Freud or Mr. Money-Kyrle, who will propose and second the vote of thanks after the lecture, because there is so much thunder. I personally value most Dr. Mead's contributions to the understanding of the infant-mother relationship. To take one example, out of the dividing of the quality of the mother's attitude and expectations into symmetrical, complementary and reciprocal (Male and Female) come ideas that can be used immediately by the student of early development who favours research through psycho-analysis. In the recent publication "Discussions on Child Development" Dr. Mead tells us that she started her career at the age of three, which puts her two years ahead of Lorenz. But perhaps we all start in infancy, at the time when we are sorting out our mothers according to whether they expect us to be symmetrical, complementary or reciprocal.

'This is all I have time to say in my tribute to this woman who has lived with, rather than



watched, the men, women, and children of her chosen areas of enquiry.'

Dr. Margaret Mead then gave her lecture entitled:

*Changing Patterns of Parent-child Relations in an Urban World*

Following the Lecture which will be published in this journal at a later date, Anna Freud, LL.D., proposed a vote of thanks to Margaret Mead:

'It is my privilege tonight to propose the vote of thanks to Margaret Mead, a task which I find easy since our guest-lecturer has charmed me, as well as the rest of her audience, with the spontaneous, refreshing and stimulating mode of her presentation.

'The object of a vote of thanks is not—as Margaret Mead suggested humorously—to put the lecturer in her place, but rather to allocate the right place in our minds to the facts and theories presented to us by her.

'As analysts who work shut up in their own rooms, laboriously creating an artificial field on which our patients can fight out their mental struggles, we have listened with envy to Margaret Mead who has taken us from the Western civilizations to the Balinese, the Samoans and the Head-hunters, showing us that her particular field of work is the world itself, in which she moves with ease.

'When watching her fascinating film of a primitive child-mother couple in the hours and days after birth, we felt that she demonstrated to us the reality which lies behind the phantasies of the early mother-relationship which we have to unearth in our patients.

'We have been given the impression that the development of the personality and the transformation of the individual infant into a social being are problems which we share with Margaret Mead. Where their solution is concerned, it is true that we work on different sides of the same picture. We concern ourselves with the inner battles which the individual has to fight out before he becomes socialized; Margaret Mead considers first and foremost the impact of the community on its members. We meet again in acknowledging the importance which all of us ascribe to the early production of mental attitudes such as fear, distrust, confidence, security, etc.

'All this does not signify that we could not quarrel with Margaret Mead over the all-important assessment of the relative strength and importance of the inner and the environmental forces which are at work. But detailed discussion of such questions can be left safely to be fought out on other less official and less festive occasions.'

Miss Freud was followed by R. E. Money-Kyrle, Ph.D., who seconded the vote of thanks with the following words: 'Before seconding the vote of

thanks, there is just one very general point I should like to make about the practical value of that kind of social anthropology of which Dr. Margaret Mead is so brilliant an exponent.

'The relations between the theoretical and the practical differ very much in different sciences. Some students prefer their work to remain "pure" a delight in itself but not a means to any end. Thus I once heard Professor Eddington commiserate with his mathematical colleagues on the fact that their work had been unexpectedly sullied by a practical application. There must be branches of astronomy where this danger hardly yet exists.

'But advances in science usually raise subsidiary questions about how the new knowledge can be used, or perhaps about how it should be used. This is most conspicuously true of sub-atomic physics. And here the grievance of the scientist is, not that his work is applied, but that he is not consulted on how it is to be applied. Nor, in fact, does his special training as a physicist, in itself, qualify him to give a better answer to these practical questions than anybody else.

'Now the point I want to make is that, in the social sciences, the theoretical and the practical questions are much less departmentalized; and for a very special reason. For whether we are concerned as psycho-analysts with an individual, or as anthropologists with a society, new knowledge throws light on where that individual or that society is going, and so automatically helps him, or it, to decide in what direction it seems desirable to go. It is, I think, this close association of theoretical with practical problems which gives these sciences a unique importance.

'As to the relations between psycho-analysis and the social sciences as a whole, I will say no more than to stress again the contributions which Dr. Ernest Jones has made to them. He was my first teacher in psycho-analysis and the first to open my eyes to its wider implications. It is, therefore, especially pleasurable to me as well as appropriate that the Ernest Jones Lecture should be given by a distinguished anthropologist.

'This is not the first time I have heard Dr. Margaret Mead, so I expected her to enliven her subject with her own vitality and brilliance. We have not, you will agree, been disappointed. I have the greatest pleasure in seconding the warmest vote of thanks.'

*Société Psychanalytique de Paris*

The following have been elected officers for 1957, the year in which the 20th Congress of the International Psycho-Analytical Association will be held in Paris.

Dr. Marc Schlumberger (*Président*), Madame le Dr. Odette Laurent-Lucas-Championnière (*Vice-Président*), Dr. Francis Pasche (*Membre Assesseur*), Dr. Pierre Marty (*Secrétaire*), Dr. Jean Mollet (*Trésorier*).



*The Logical Analysis of Psycho-analytic Concepts* was the title of a lecture by Dr. Else Frenkel-Brunswik, Lecturer in the Department of Psychology and Research Associate in the Institute of Industrial Relations in the University of California, delivered on 1 May, 1957, at the University of London. Professor C. A. Mace, D.Lit., Professor of Psychology in the University of London, was in the Chair.

#### *Changes of Address*

Mr. and Mrs. James Strachey, from 41 Gordon Square, London, W.C.1., to Lord's Wood, Marlow, Bucks.

Rudolph M. Lowenstein, M.D., President-elect (1956-57), American Psychoanalytic Association, from 1148 Fifth Avenue, New York 28, N.Y., to 1100 Madison Avenue, New York 28, N.Y.

Rene A. Spitz, M.D., 45 South Ash Street, Denver, Colorado.

Erwin Stengel, M.D., M.R.C.P., Professor of

Psychiatry, 634 Fulwood Road, Sheffield 10, Yorkshire, England.

*Sociedade Brasileira de Psicanálise (Brazilian Psychoanalytic Society, Sao Paulo).*

The following were elected officers in March 1957:

Dr. Adelheid Koch (*President*), Henrique Julio Schlomann (*Secretary*), Lygia Alcantara Amaral (*Treasurer*).

*Foundation's Fund for Research in Psychiatry* (251 Edwards Street, New Haven 11, Connecticut).

It has been announced that there will be available funds for the establishment of two or possibly three research professorships for eminent research psychiatrists in departments of psychiatry in medical schools. The closing date for applications will be 31 October, 1958.

Applications for research in psychiatry, psychology, sociology, neurophysiology, and other sciences relevant to mental health must be received on 15 October, 1957, latest.

## SCIENTIFIC PROGRAMME

of the 20th Congress of the INTERNATIONAL PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL ASSOCIATION, Paris.

28 July-1 August, 1957

#### *Sunday, 28 July*

10 a.m. to 5 p.m. Registration for the Congress at Maison de la Chimie, 28 rue Saint-Dominique, Paris, 7e.

#### *Monday, 29 July*

*Morning Session:* 9.30 a.m.-12.30 p.m.: Salle des Congrès. *General Session:* Chairman, Sacha Nacht, Paris. Opening Address by the President, Heinz Hartmann, New York.

Ernest Jones, London: 'The Birth and Death of Moses.'

Phyllis Greenacre, New York: 'Toward an Understanding of the Physical Nucleus of Defense Mechanisms.'

Margaret Mahler, New York: 'Autism and Symbiosis: Two Extreme Disturbances of Identity.'

*Interval:* Melanie Klein, London: 'On the Development of Mental Functioning.'

*Afternoon Session:* 2.30-5.30 p.m.: Salle des Congrès. *General Session:* Panel Discussion,

*Variations in Classical Technique.* Moderator: Ralph R. Greenson, Los Angeles. Main presentation: Rudolph Loewenstein, New York.

Participants: Maurice Bouvet, Paris; K. R.

Eissler, New York; Annie Reich, New York. Discussion from the floor.

#### *Tuesday, 30 July*

*Morning Session:* 9 a.m.-1 p.m.: Salle des Congrès.

*General Session:* Panel Discussion, *Contributions of Direct Child Observation to Psychoanalysis.* Moderator: Willi Hoffer, London. Main presentation: Anna Freud. Participants: E. C. M. Frijling-Schreuder, Amsterdam; Liselotte Frankl, London; D. W. Winnicott, London.

A report will be read on the work done by the Group on Longitudinal Studies (directed by the late Dr. Ernst Kris) at the Yale University Child Study Center, New Haven, Conn.

Discussion from the floor.

*Afternoon Session:* 3-6 p.m. *Section A:* Salle des Congrès. *Chairman:* Jeanne Lampl-de Groot, Amsterdam.

Edoardo Weiss, Chicago: 'Bisexuality and Ego Structure.'

Pierre Marty, Paris: 'La Relation d'Objet Allergique.'

Angel Garma, Buenos Aires: 'Peptic Ulcer and Pseudo-Peptic Ulcer.'

W. Clifford Scott, Montreal: 'Noise, Speech and Technique.'

W. D. Grodzicki, Hamburg: 'Das Technische Problem beim Agieren in der Analyse.'

There will be a ten-minute discussion following each paper.

*Section B* (Room No. 101). *Chairman:* Phyllis Greenacre, New York.

P. J. van der Leeuw, Amsterdam: 'The Pre-Oedipal Phase of the Male.'

Barbara Lantos, London: 'Two Genetic Derivations of Aggression with Reference to Sublimation and Neutralization.'

George Gero, New York: 'Sadism, Masochism and Aggression.'

Herbert A. Rosenfeld, London: 'Observation on the Psychopathology of Hypochondriasis.'

Ludwig Eidelberg, New York: 'On Narcissistic Mortification.'

There will be a ten-minute discussion following each paper.

*Section C* (Room No. 206). *Chairman:* Raymond de Saussure, Geneva.

Werner Kemper, Rio de Janeiro: 'Der Traum in seiner mehrfachen therapeutischen Auswertbarkeit.'

Heinz Kohut, Chicago: 'Psychoanalysis and Introspection.'

R. E. Money-Kyrle, London: 'The Process of Psycho-Analytical Inference.'

Margaret Little, London: 'On Delusional Transference.'

Hans Loewald, New Haven: 'Transference and the Therapeutic Action of Psychoanalysis: Metapsychological Considerations.'

There will be a ten-minute discussion following each paper.

*Wednesday, 31 July*

*Morning Session:* 9 a.m.-1 p.m.: Salle des Congrès.

*General Session: Business Meeting. Chairman:*

Heinz Hartmann, New York.

*Afternoon: Recreation.*

*Thursday, 1 August*

*Morning Session:* 9 a.m.-1 p.m.: Salle des Congrès.

*General Session:* Panel Discussion, *Neurotic Ego Distortions*. Moderator: Robert Waelder,

Philadelphia. Main presentation: Maxwell Gitelson, Chicago. Participants: W. H.

Gillespie, London; Edward Glover, London;

Maurits Katan, Cleveland; Sacha Nacht, Paris.

Discussion from the floor.

*Afternoon Session:* 3-6 p.m. *Section A:* Salle des Congrès. *Chairman:* C. F. Rycroft, London.

Paula Heimann, London: 'On Sublimation.'

Maria Langer, Buenos Aires: 'Sterility and Envy.'

W. R. Bion, London: 'On Arrogance.'

Emilio Servadio, Rome: 'Magic and the Castration Complex.'

Lajos Szekely, Stockholm: 'Angebliche Praekognition: Eine Deckerinnerung.'

Frederick S. Hacker, Los Angeles: 'Some Thoughts on Symbolism.'

There will be a ten-minute discussion following each paper.

*Section B* (Room No. 101). *Chairman:* K. R. Eissler, New York.

Horst-Eberhard Richter, Berlin: 'Beobachtungen an 12 Kindern mit chronischer Obstipation.'

Anita Bell, New York: 'Some Thoughts on Post-Partum Respiratory Experiences and Their Relationship to Prenatal Mastery, particularly in Asthmatics.'

Otakar Kucera, Praha: 'On Teething.'

Arminda A. de Pichon Riviere, Buenos Aires: 'Dentition, Walking and Talking in Relation with Depressive Infantile Position.'

Carl P. Adatto, New Orleans: 'Ego Integration Observed in Analysis of Late Adolescents.'

There will be a ten-minute discussion following each paper.

*Section C* (Room No. 206). *Chairman:* Angel Garma, Buenos Aires.

Hannah M. Segal, London: 'Notes on an Analysis of a Senile Psychosis.'

Gustav Bychowski, New York: 'The Struggle against the Introjects.'

Henry Harper Hart, Southbury, Conn.: 'Maternal Narcissism and the Oedipus Complex.'

Willy Baranger, Montevideo: 'Le Moi et la Fonction de l'Ideologie.'

Bela Mittelman, New York: 'Psychodynamics of Motility.'

There will be a ten-minute discussion following each paper.

Listed below are titles of papers which cannot be read to the Congress, but of which we have printed abstracts:

Abram Blau, New York: 'Benign Schizophrenia.'

Elisabeth Goode de Garma, Buenos Aires: 'The Predisposing Situation to Peptic Ulcer in Children.'

Lili Peller, New York: 'Daydreams and Children's Favourite Books.'

Enrique Pichon-Riviere, Buenos Aires: 'Referential Schema and Dialectical Process in Spiral as Basis of a Problem of the Psycho-Analyst.'

Arnaldo Raskovsky, Buenos Aires: 'The Organization of Prenatal Psychism.'

Robert Savitt, New York: 'On Scientific Inspiration.'

Melitta Schmideberg, New York: 'The Analytic Treatment of a Juvenile Fratricide.'

H. A. Thorner, London: 'Mourning without Relief.'

*N.B.* Simultaneous translation will be given in English, French and Spanish. Papers presented in German will be translated into English and French.



# THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

Vol. XXXVIII

1957

Part 5

## THE EROTIC INSTINCTS—A CONTRIBUTION TO THE STUDY OF INSTINCTS

By

MORTIMER OSTOW, M.D., MED.SC.D., NEW YORK

In 1905 Freud, in *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality*, gave a definitive statement of the theory of the erotic instincts. In his initial statement, Freud attempted to limit his presentation, and the formulation of theory, to the findings of the psycho-analytic method and to the assumptions justified by these findings. Freud's observations and hypotheses have stood the test of time, and there is no reason at present to continue to avoid an integration of the psycho-analytic theory of the erotic instincts with the data of current ethological research. It is the purpose of this paper to attempt such an integration by restating the theory as a fundamental biological theory, using the data of ethology as well as psycho-analysis, and providing reasonable constructions where data are lacking. The subject of the death instincts will not be treated in this presentation. It need hardly be added that this is an attempt neither to dilute nor to justify psycho-analytic theory, but rather to amplify it.

### A. DRIVING FORCES

The definition of the word instinct is itself the subject of controversy. It is especially difficult to find a definition which would apply equally well to humans and to lower animals. In the lower animals there are individual behaviour patterns and groups of behaviour patterns, each of which appears only in the service of a specific purpose. It is thus possible to assign such a behaviour pattern to a single instinct, such as the reproductive instinct, the nutritive instinct, and so forth. (Actually, among some of the higher vertebrates, instinctual techniques begin to lose some of their exquisite specificity. For example, in the herring gull, Tinbergen describes head-tossing and food begging in both courtship and the process of feeding the

young.) In man, on the other hand, there are relatively few behaviour patterns which are not used to serve more than one, and often many, purposes. Vocalization and speech, for example, may appear in the infant-mother relation, in childhood play and learning activities, in adult sexual situations, in nutritive, aggressive, and intellectual functions. In human beings, therefore, it is impossible to define an instinct uniquely in terms of any group of behaviour patterns. Freud therefore prefers to deal with objects, aims, and sources recognizable in the operation of the sexual instincts as the significant variables.

'By an "instinct" is provisionally to be understood the psychic representative of an endosomatic source of stimuli which are in continual flux, as contrasted with the "stimulus" which is set up by single excitations coming from without. The concept of instinct is thus one of those lying on the frontier between the mental and the physical. The simplest and likeliest assumption as to the nature of instincts would seem to be that in itself an instinct is without quality, and, so far as mental life is concerned, is only to be regarded as a certain amount of demand made upon the mind for work. What distinguishes the instincts from one another and endows them with specific qualities is their relation to their somatic sources and to their aims. The source of an instinct is a process of excitation occurring in an organ and the immediate aim of the instinct lies in the removal of this organic stimulus' (9, p. 46).

Tinbergen, in *The Study of Instinct*, states: 'I will tentatively define an instinct as an hierarchically organized nervous mechanism which is susceptible to certain priming, releasing and directing impulses of internal as well as external origin, and which responds to these impulses by coordinated movements that contribute to the maintenance of the individual and the species.'

Both Freud and Tinbergen note that instinctual



behaviour has an internal source and is not necessarily dependent upon an external stimulus for its evocation. I doubt whether Tinbergen had anything in mind beyond the fact that nutritive and reproductive needs appear within the central nervous system as a result of changes within the central nervous system itself, or as a result of maturational, hormonal, or metabolic changes. The appearance of these needs is rhythmic and intermittent in accordance with the intrinsic physiological needs and rhythmic functions of the organism. Freud, however, notes that the stimuli which arise from an 'endosomatic source' are in 'continual flux'. In other words, in human beings there is a constant pressure of instinctual activity; whatever fluctuations occur are fluctuations in source, aim, or object, but not in intensity. This is a fundamental difference between the *modus operandi* of human and of subhuman instincts. It is analogous to the constant genital sexual activity of the mature human, as opposed to the seasonal reproductive activity of the subhuman animal. How is this constant pressure for instinctual activity in the human sustained? Freud suggested two considerations. The first was that sexual tension, by which I believe he meant the subjective experience of being under the influence of the sexual drive, might be a direct function of the accumulation of semen in the seminal vesicles. While this suggestion has certain attractive features, he recognized that it clearly fails to cover all the facts and could certainly not be considered a complete explanation. His second explanation was that the hormonal products of the sexual endocrine glands 'are taken into the bloodstream and cause particular parts of the central nervous system to be charged with sexual tension.' Here sexual tension must refer to changes occurring within the central nervous system whether or not they are subjectively appreciated. The psychic energy made available by the action of the sexual

hormones upon the central nervous system is given the name libido. 'In thus distinguishing between libidinal and other forms of psychic energy, we are giving expression to the presumption that the sexual processes occurring in the organism are distinguished from the nutritive processes by a special chemistry.'

Following the first publication of *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* in 1905, many observations and experimental data on the activation of the sexual instincts have become available. The study of the striking effects of the hormones, especially those derived from the sexual endocrine glands, which was so promising at the turn of the century, has continued with great enthusiasm, stimulated, at least in some quarters, by the hope that it might be possible to explain the normal and pathological patterns of sexual behaviour on any but a psychic basis. The material is quite interesting to the psycho-analyst, and it is available in well-organized form in Frank Beach's book *Hormones and Behavior*. Reviewing the material at this point would contribute little to the exposition of the central theme of this presentation. Suffice it to say that among humans after the age of puberty, there is no reason to attribute fluctuations in the intensity or variations in the direction of the sexual drive to alterations in the hormonal content of the blood. In general, says Beach, it is the stereotyped, fixed, primitive components of instinctive behaviour (consummatory techniques, cf. below) which we ordinarily think of as inherited, that are most directly associated with endocrine products, while those forms of behaviour which depend upon individual experience are more remotely related. The tacit psycho-analytic assumption that, in the post-pubertal human, the psychic derivatives of the sexual instinctual drives fluctuate primarily in response to psychic forces, has not been shown to require revision.<sup>1, 2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It might be objected that the work of Benedek and Rubenstein demonstrates a dependence of human female psychic function upon hormonal fluctuations. First, final evaluation of the validity of the work waits upon its repetition by others. One source of doubt is the unconvincing nature of the interpretations which are cited in the protocols. Another is the fact that while the analysts were ignorant of the presumptive hormone levels (calculated from vaginal smears), they were, of course, aware of the sequence of the sessions, both during the course of the analysis and in retrospective evaluation. If the same frequency of correct predictions had been obtained on the basis of judgement of the contents of individual sessions, their sequential position being unknown to the predictor, the results would be much more cogent. Nevertheless, the fact that the method has limitations does not necessarily invalidate the conclusions, though it deprives them of crucial significance. Secondly, even assuming validity, it is not Benedek's contention that hormonal concentration exclusively determines psychic content, but that it colours psychic content. In other words, she believes that although endocrine function and psychic function are not connected in a one-to-one relation, some relation

can be discerned. She does not deny the separation between the two variables but asserts that the separation is not complete. 'It would be an error, however, to conclude that hormone change or even the change of sexual energy is responsible for all psychic tensions; that basic capacity for love, for motherliness, for activity and constructiveness, or the lack of these qualities, depends wholly upon the hormone regulation. In addition to the fact that the production and effect of sex hormones are influenced by all metabolic processes, there is evidence to prove that these basic attributes of the individual are present before sexual function matures and they do not cease to exist after the decline of hormone regulation. Thus, the processes which we describe in their emotional and physiologic aspects are superficial—like faint ripples on a huge body of water as compared with the constitutional basis of personality.'

<sup>2</sup> There are two purely physiological differences between human female uterine function and that of lower mammals. First, genital bleeding in the human signifies a period of *infertility*, but accompanies *fertility* in the lower mammals. Second, lower mammals do not show a menopausal cessation of reproductive



It has not been possible to ascribe to the endocrines the crucial role of the regulation of instinctual activity, nor is it possible to ascribe to the influence of hormones on muscles and glands their entire effect. A number of observations of spontaneous behaviour that could be ascribed to the effects neither of hormones nor of visceral stimuli of any kind has led to the assumption that the central nervous system itself produces impulses that can function as specific activators of instinctual behaviour. Stimulation of the central nervous system, especially within the hypothalamus and temporal lobes, has been able to evoke clearly recognizable fragments of fairly complex instinctive patterns (MacLean and Delgado, 1953). The conclusion that the central nervous system contains the basic patterns of, and the ability to initiate and regulate, instinctual behaviour is implied in Tinbergen's definition of an instinct, that it is 'an hierarchically organized nervous mechanism.' Both Beach and Tinbergen infer from the data available that hormones act directly upon central nervous mechanisms. 'It is usually postulated that complex behavioural reactions which occur without opportunity for learning, which are executed in the same manner by all members of the species, and which can be shown to be hereditary, are mediated by nervous mechanisms whose structural and functional organization is controlled more by genetic factors than by individual experience. It is certain that the structural and functional characteristics of the various endocrine glands are also genetically controlled. The final result is a set of inherited relationships between the behavioural mechanisms and the glandular products. If such is indeed the case it is not surprising that inherited behavioural mechanisms should be more directly and intimately associated with endocrine products than are other forms of response which arise only as the result of individual experience' (Beach, 1948). The idea advanced by Freud half a century ago, that hormones act upon the central nervous system, is finding increasing acceptance.

## B. PSYCHE AND BRAIN

In essence, both the constant instinctual pressure and the short term, moment to moment, and day to day fluctuations in the pattern of spontaneous behaviour (assuming that all behaviour is essentially instinctually activated) are ascribable to forces playing within the central nervous system. It is a basic assumption of psycho-analysis that in man, both overt behaviour and a significant proportion of the central nervous system processes which determine behaviour give rise to certain representations in the psychic life. The psyche is thus assumed to be a large panel on which these implicit and explicit processes are registered. It was the assumption of pre-analytic psychology that conscious intellectual processes taking place within the psyche determine, or could determine, behaviour completely. Familiarity with the data of psychopathology and, in fact, of almost all behaviour when scrutinized by the light of psycho-analysis, made this position untenable. With the extension of the psyche to include not only conscious life and intellectual processes but the unconscious as well, the latter characterized by the primary type of process, it became possible to find in the psyche not only the representations of overt behaviour and antecedent psychic events but also the stage upon which the significant forces interact. We assume, in other words, that psychic function includes all conceptual processes which determine behaviour, though we may exclude by definition neuronal processes primary to, but below the level of the concept. In other words, we do not assume that that aspect of behaviour processes which is presented for psychic scrutiny comprehends the totality of those processes, but we do believe, on the basis of the collective experience of psycho-analytic therapy, that the central nervous system processes are controlled, probably completely, by the forces to which their psychic aspects are exposed. To the psycho-analyst, then, the psyche is a region in which the behavioural processes of the central nervous system are reflected, determined, and controlled,

function as do humans (Burns, 1953). These two differences suggest that human female cyclicity is fundamentally different from that of lower mammals. The nature of the difference, it seems to me, is suggested by the following passage from Burns: 'To insure pregnancy there are many variations of the sexual heat period among the mammalian species. If pregnancy does not result, the female may after her heat have a few days of inactivity during which her reproductive organs resume their normal condition; then she will come into heat again. With some mammals this period may be repeated recurrently, a fourth, a sixth and even a tenth time, until the close of the breeding season, or it may go on for years as it does in the human female.' I am tempted to infer that the entire period of human fertility, from puberty to menopause, is homologous to a single breeding season in the lower mammals. The human menstrual cycle corresponds not to the seasonal cycle of the lower mammals, but to

the resurgence of heat during a single breeding season. The human menopause would then be homologous to the termination of the breeding season of the lower mammal. If this hypothesis is correct, it means that a physiologic epoch which in the lower mammal occupies a fraction of a year, in the human is protracted to three or four decades, the major portion of the adult period. Such protraction in the human of a considerably briefer epoch in the lower mammal is the operating principle in the phenomenon of 'retardation' of ontogenetic development and fetalization described by Bolk. René Spitz finds this suggestion consistent with Freud's supposition that the dichronic course of sexual development in the human was a phylogenetic response to the suppression of fluctuation in temperature and duration of periods of light caused by glaciation. He calls attention to the profound alterations of menstrual rhythm attendant upon abrupt passage from one climatic zone to another.



although it does not contain the total reality of these processes. Freud stated in *An Outline of Psycho-Analysis* that 'the instincts . . . originate in the somatic organization and . . . find their first mental expression in the id in forms unknown to us.' In a second chapter he added, 'they represent the somatic demands upon mental life.'

It is difficult to find a satisfactory analogy. At the present time there is a growing tendency to regulate the many separate components in large complex industrial manufacturing processes by means of electronic computing devices. Each significant variable at every point in the manufacturing process, such as the amount of each raw material, temperatures and pressures in storage and reaction chambers, concentrations of reagents, the availability of power, and so on, is measured and coded electrically and the data are then transmitted to this computing device. In the computing device the constellation of data is handled in a set fashion and the changes in the variables required for most efficient operation are computed. These alterations, in coded form, are then returned to the individual components of the manufacturing apparatus and there the proper adjustments are made. Now we may compare the actual components of the manufacturing apparatus to the anatomic substrate, the actual neural apparatus determining behaviour. The psychic apparatus is analogous to the computing apparatus mentioned above. In the psychic apparatus, as in the computing apparatus, all the data available are handled in a predetermined manner so as to yield the information necessary to perform the appropriate regulation required for most efficient achievement of the goals built into the computing apparatus. These regulatory data are then conveyed back to the neural processes as to the manufacturing apparatus, so that the proper organic changes take place in the central nervous system which will result in the execution of the appropriate behavioural operations. There is essential physical reality to the neural processes as there is essential reality to the manufacturing processes. The psychic representations of the neural processes and the electrical reports of the operations of the manufacturing processes both constitute sets of data, the physical reality of which require only trivial expenditure of material and energy. However, it is these psychic and electrical representations respectively which determine the vicissitudes of the physical processes which they represent, even though they are not those physical processes themselves.

### C. TIMING AND ACTIVATING FORCES

Let us return to the subject of the origin and energizing of instinctual behaviour and the activation of individual patterns. In the lower animals, this situation seems fairly simple, at least as we know it at present. Some patterns of instinctual behaviour

are evoked, so to speak, *ad rem*, that is, in response to a specific environmental situation. For example, patterns of escape appear as soon as the animal becomes aware of the presence of a predator. Feeding behaviour appears rhythmically either in response to internal sensory data or in response to spontaneous rhythmic changes in the central nervous system. In most animals the readiness to respond to the usual signals of the opportunity for feeding or copulation, increases with the time which has elapsed since the last feeding or copulation, respectively, within certain limits. It is this fact that makes Tinbergen say 'such an end-response consumes the specific impulses responsible for its activation.' Sexual behaviour (including nest building, migration, fighting) is determined by the procession of the seasons, with the assistance of hormonal regulation, and specific acts are 'released' by perceptible aspects of potential objects.

What about the maintenance and selection of instinctual behaviour in human beings? Freud said that the source of an instinct 'is a process of excitation occurring in an organ'. At another point he added that 'sexual excitation arises (a) as a reproduction of satisfaction experienced in connexion with other organic processes, (b) through appropriate peripheral stimulation of erotogenic zones, (c) as an expression of certain "instincts" (such as the scopophilic instinct and the instinct of cruelty) of which the origin is not yet completely intelligible.' In this sense he listed among the sources of infantile sexuality mechanical excitations, muscular activity, affective processes, intellectual work. 'It seems that the fullest provisions are made for setting in motion the process of sexual excitation—a process the nature of which has, it must be confessed, become highly obscure to us. The setting in motion of this process is first and foremost provided for in a more or less direct fashion by the excitations of the sensory surfaces—the skin and the sense organs—and, most directly of all, by the operation of stimuli on certain areas known as erotogenic zones. The decisive element in these sources of sexual excitation is no doubt the quality of the stimuli, though the factor of intensity, in the case of pain, is not a matter of complete indifference. But apart from these sources there are present in the organism contrivances which bring it about that in the case of a great number of internal processes sexual excitation arises as a concomitant effect, as soon as the intensity of these processes passes beyond certain quantitative limits. . . . It may well be that nothing of considerable importance can occur in the organism without contributing some component to the excitation of the sexual instinct.'

#### 1. THREE MODES OF INSTINCTUAL ACTIVITY

There is a significant difference in pattern between animal and human instinctual behaviour. The daily activity of the mature human consists of three



separate types of behaviour. First, there is the consistent background of daily work which is the individual's contribution to sustenance of himself, his family, and society. Second, there is the pursuit of libidinal relations with love objects. Third, there are those acts performed in response to whatever fortuitous urgent demands the environment visits upon the individual. The third category, the emergency response, shows least difference between man and animal. It is least susceptible to neurotic distortion and may be preserved when neurosis or psychosis has seriously impaired the first two. Just how the emergency reaction is evoked, and how it manages to supersede other behaviour, requires investigation, but I shall pursue it no further here. Now, with respect to the first two categories of behaviour, the human shows two chief differences from animals. The first difference is that in animals, the acquisition and defence of territory, and nest building and family maintenance, the animal activities which most closely resemble the daily work of human beings, are clearly components of the reproductive drive and therefore tend to be performed each in its proper place in the reproductive sequence. (Although one might be tempted to homologize the human activity of earning daily bread with the daily predatory and foraging activity of animals, I believe there is a fundamental difference. Modern breadwinning, in the large majority of the population, employs none of the patterns of food finding activity used by animals, and in fact, by primitive men.) Family sustenance in man is not restricted to a specific point in a reproductive sequence, but is driven at a constant rate, ideally unaffected by fluctuations in intensity and pattern of directly erotic activities. Now this sequential rigidity is a relative one, being more pronounced among the lower vertebrates, less pronounced among the higher vertebrates, and least pronounced, though not completely absent, among human beings. The second difference between animal and human instinctual behaviour is that in the case of the former, the preparatory and consummatory reproductive activities are typically initiated and executed cyclically in response to seasonal changes. This rhythm applies not only to directly genital activities but to family sustenance as well. In man, on the other hand, neither breadwinning nor erotic activities are cyclical. Again this difference is relative rather than absolute. Seasonal timing is more pronounced among females than males, and more among lower than higher vertebrates. Even in man, a residuum of instinctual sensitivity to weather and season is indicated by mood fluctuations in response to climatic and vegetational change, the annual spring tide of suicide, and by the universal affective response to natural and celestial phenomena exemplified in widespread worship of these and incorporation of them in psychotic delusions. These two characteristics of

human instinctual behaviour, namely, the relative dissociation of preparatory unconsummated (aim-inhibited) activity or work from erotic activity, and the release of both from seasonal timing, I shall try to elucidate by considering the dynamic forces and the contents of human instincts.

Let me introduce two concepts, the concept of displacement activity as used by the ethologists and the concept of mammalianization introduced by Leonard Sillman.

## 2. ANIMAL BEHAVIOUR AND HUMAN BEHAVIOUR

Before going further, I should like to make a few remarks about the application of data of animal behaviour to human behaviour. Some limitations are at once apparent. Data from animals can deal only with objectively observed behaviour, while humans yield both observational data and subjective reports. Direct comparison can be made only between the two sets of observational data, and not directly between animal behaviour and human psychic function. Second, one must not be misled by similarities to confuse convergences with true homologies. For example, a whale looks like a fish because many water-dwelling creatures tend to converge in appearance; however, closer examination of structure and function reveals that it is more closely homologous to mammals. In the field of behaviour, one may compare the speech of a man with the speech of a parrot. Yet the speech of a parrot is merely an example of a bird-call, the form of which is determined by mimicry, and, while a bird-call is a means of communication, it lacks the essential elements of consciousness of purpose and voluntary determination of content which characterize speech. On the other hand, the cry of a lonely baby and the whining of the young mammal are probably more closely homologous, since they are similar in having no specific content, are automatically evoked in situations of helpless separation from the protecting parent, and result in the return of the parent to the offspring.

It is also true that a genuine homology may be obscured by a superficial dissimilarity. For example, Lorenz and Tinbergen note that gestures of appeasement or surrender in intraspecies combat may, among birds, consist of presenting the base of the skull or the top of the head to the victor, while among wolves the neck is offered to the victor's jaws. The instinctual acts themselves are different, but study of the circumstances under which the act occurs, as well as the consequences of the act, reveals the homology.

We must not infer that a mechanism which obtains in some species exists in all others. For example, this surrender mechanism does not exist in many species whose physical characteristics, for example, fleeing ability, or solitary living conditions, make it unlikely that combatants will kill each other.



We must not be misled by exceptions to generalizations. It is quite possible that a mechanism which is fairly universal may be discarded by a few species as an evolutionary experiment.

We must not underestimate the distorting and obscuring effects of captivity and domestication. The interpretation of specific reactions may require the invoking of two or more principles simultaneously. Subvertebrate behaviour is considerably less relevant to the human being than vertebrate behaviour.

In general, the use of animal behaviour data in the study of human psychology encounters many pitfalls. At most, the observation of a given mechanism in an animal species suggests that it might be found in man as well if one can determine how to recognize it. The more universally a mechanism occurs, the more likely it is to be found among human beings. The more consistent a mechanism becomes as one ascends the evolutionary scale, the more likely it is that it will obtain in man. At most, animal observations may suggest to us what mechanisms might exist in man; they offer us plausible hypotheses; they do not themselves, without confirmatory observations on human beings, establish any truths of human psychology. Let me illustrate by returning to the instance of the surrender or appeasement gesture mentioned above. Since such a mechanism exists in a number of species, we may legitimately wonder whether it exists in man too. Lorenz suggests that bowing, removing the hat, and presenting arms are examples of human appeasement gestures. It is true that surrender rituals may differ in various cultures, but many show the characteristic of making the vanquished even more vulnerable to the victor. The great prevalence of this principle among human societies strongly supports Lorenz's thesis, even though we must then explain how an instinctual act, which among lower animals is stereotyped, may, among humans, assume any of a number of different forms. We think, in this connexion, of the affect of pity, which serves the function of inhibiting aggression, and we may speculate that this affect is the psychic component of the appeasement mechanism in the victor.

### 3. DISPLACEMENT ACTIVITY

To present the concept of displacement activity I shall quote a series of passages from Tinbergen. 'It has struck many observers that animals may, under certain circumstances, perform movements which do not belong to the motor pattern of the instinct that is motivated at the moment of observation. For instance, fighting domestic cocks may suddenly pick at the ground, as if they were feeding. Fighting European starlings may vigorously preen their feathers. Courting birds of paradise wipe their bills now and then. Herring gulls, while engaged in deadly combat, may all at once pluck

nesting material, etc. In all the observed instances the animal gives the impression of being very strongly motivated. . . . An examination of the conditions under which displacement activities usually occur led to the conclusion that, in all known cases, there is a surplus of motivation, the discharge of which through the normal paths is in some way prevented. The most usual situations are (i) conflict of two strongly activated antagonistic drives; (ii) strong motivation of a drive, usually the sexual drive, together with lack of external stimuli required for the release of the consummatory acts belonging to that drive. . . . A comparative review of displacement activities reveals that they are always innate patterns, known to us from the study of other instincts. Recognition is often difficult because the displacement activity is usually incomplete. This turns upon the intensity of motivation, for with very strong motivation the displacement act may be complete. . . . The remarkable stereotypy of displacement reactions, the fact that they resemble innate motor patterns of other instincts and the fact that they are typical for the species and do not differ from one member to another, suggests that the motivation of an instinct when prevented from discharging through its own motor pattern finds an outlet by discharge through the centre of another instinct. . . . The incompleteness of displacement activities shows that the sideways discharge meets with considerable resistance.' Tinbergen adds that such displacement activities are ritualized and then come to serve the function of signalling. We shall not permit ourselves to be deflected from the main thread of our argument by considering the many parallels between these data and those of human behaviour as seen by the psycho-analyst. We shall note that 'displacement reactions may . . . embark upon an evolutionary development of their own.' We shall also suggest that if one extrapolates signalling activities of the lower animals to speech in the human, then we are at once confronted with the idea that speech may be a displacement activity evoked by the necessity of inhibiting or limiting motor activity, an important tenet of the theory of psycho-analytic treatment. Aside from noting that displacement activities tend to become ritualized and serve a communication function, neither Tinbergen nor Lorenz mentions any consistent function of displacement activities.

### 4. MAMMALIANIZATION

We may now proceed to the second of the two concepts mentioned above. In his paper 'The Genesis of Man', Sillman stated that mammalianization, that is, the evolutionary development of the mammal, involved the erotization of the skin surfaces. I shall discuss one implication of this remark. To me it means that the feeding instinct of the infant, the nursing instinct of the mother, and the genital instincts of adults are all elements



of an erotic instinct which is continuously active from birth through reproductive involution. As applied to man, of course, this statement reduces to the assertion of infantile sexuality as it first appeared in the *Three Essays*. However, Sillman's remark draws attention to the fact that the condition is characteristic of the entire mammalian group. His statement seems to indicate that he believes that the new form of infant nutrition devised by mammals is a derivative of their adult sexual instinct. It is also possible that the sexual instinct is new in form, being derived from the feeding instinct. A third possibility is that both infant and adult sexuality are developed together as elements of a fresh instinct or a fresh form of instinctual organization which has the function of subserving all behaviour in which the participation of a second individual is required. I don't know how to decide among these possibilities. (Not only is the device for infant feeding new; there are elements of mammalian genital performance which are unique. Kinsey says that the performance of pelvic movements during coitus is characteristic only of mammals. We may suppose that skin grooming, an instinctual activity performed by parents for infants and performed also as part of adult sexual foreplay in mammals, including man, is a component of this generalized erotic instinct. Since it is a cleaning and arranging procedure, it probably comprises one aspect at least of those activities subsumed in psycho-analytic theory under the category of anal behaviour.) In any case, the essence of mammalianization consists of reorganizing instinctual behaviour so that all the activities mentioned above represent individual aspects respectively of a single generalized erotic instinct rather than constituting a number of separate independent instincts. Lorenz (1954), for example, traces the fidelity of the male wolf to the pack leader and his affection for members of the pack, as well as the subordination of the adult female to the male, back to the affection and loyalty of the immature wolf to its parent. Moreover, he derives the fidelity of the wolf dog to its master both from its filial attitude toward its parent and its social ties to its pack associates and pack leader. He is clearly describing the same phenomenon which we, in analytic terminology, consider to be transference of infantile erotic relations to adult love objects. What physiological changes are necessary to effect mammalianization are not easy to imagine. However, the fact that in displacement activities among submammalian vertebrates, fragments of behaviour from one instinct may appear during the execution of behaviour under the influence of another, suggests that relatively little reshuffling is needed to comprehend all instinctual behaviour in which another individual of the same species participates,

under a single, generalized, erotic instinct. For example, in the herring gull, food begging and head tossing, primarily a fragment of the feeding instinct of the young, appears in adult courtship and coital behaviour. Tinbergen speculates that it is possible that 'being fed satisfies the same drive as copulation'. Analysts would describe this phenomenon as the use of pregenital modalities in coital foreplay. (I am not considering predatory and escape instincts.)

##### 5. DISPLACEMENT ACTIVITY AND PSYCHIC FUNCTION<sup>3</sup>

###### *a. Instinctual Maturation and Primal Repression*

I should like to propose that in man, a further reorganization of the instincts took place with the aid of the displacement principle, namely, each subsequent pattern of instinctual behaviour in human development is facilitated by inhibition of its immediate predecessor; in other words, each subsequent pattern is a displacement activity with respect to its predecessor. Let us suppose that gratification of the erotic instinct proceeds by the series of patterns A, B, C, D, etc. This series is chronological in the sense that the earliest mode of gratification is A. At a given point in development, either the spontaneous appearance of libidinal desire or the external availability of the object will result in interaction of subject and object by method B rather than A. It is the substance of my proposal that the shift in pattern A to B is occasioned by the process of instinctual displacement described above. That is, with respect to A, B may be considered a displacement activity. At a subsequent point in development, erotic gratification will be effected by neither A nor B but by modality C. In other words, a second displacement has occurred. In general, the process of development in the human implies that the mode of erotic gratification shifts from time to time to the next in the series—each shift being an instance of instinctual displacement, in the sense that the succeeding pattern is activated by inhibition of its predecessor.

Such a theory implies that there must be some carry-over in tendency from displaced to displacing activity. Tinbergen notes this carry-over in intent in his studies on the herring gull. For example, in territorial fighting, threat gestures may suddenly be replaced by vigorous grass pulling. The grass pulling is basically an act belonging to the instinct of nest building, but the violence with which it is performed betrays its belligerent tendency. 'The conclusion therefore is that the thwarted fighting urge, or the combination of thwarted fighting urge and thwarted flight, find an outlet partly through displacement nest building and partly through true fighting activities, the latter being superimposed on the displacement activities, and directed not at the potentially dangerous opponent but at the

<sup>3</sup> The word displacement in this presentation will have only the ethological significance given above, and

not its metapsychological significance except where the latter is clearly indicated.



harmless nest material'—in other words, in the instinctual shift, tendency is retained though technique and object are replaced.

To make the step from instinctual drive, which we have to this point considered phenomenologically, to the content of human behaviour, we have to spell out the relation between the two. In my opinion, this can be done in the following way. The activation of an instinctual drive means that within the psyche a corresponding wish or group of wishes is activated. This primitive wish I consider the basic unit of psychic motivation in the sense that all psychic motivation is derived from such wishes taken either singly or in a group. When the individual permits himself to imagine that the wish is approaching gratification, he is indulging a fantasy. Such fantasies use personal or vicarious experience as raw material, and in their more developed form include defensive as well as expressive elements.

We may now illustrate our thesis by referring to the well-known series of sexual aims in psychic development. The series consists, of course, of the following elements: oral, anal, and phallic, followed during the period of latency by inhibition of aims and then, in puberty, by genital aims. Now it is my suggestion that the interest in anal aims replaces the interest in oral aims essentially because oral aims are inhibited. I should add that when I say that oral aims are replaced I mean only that they are replaced as a mode of libidinal gratification—as a mode of relating to an object—while the mouth continues its nutritive and expressive functions. Could the shift from oral to anal aims not be attributed merely to maturation of the central nervous system by means of which voluntary control of the anal apparatus is achieved? Certainly this maturation of the central nervous system is required before such a shift can occur, but I doubt whether the mere availability of new patterns is sufficient to cause them to supersede older patterns. I believe that the thwarting of the older pattern is required for the newer one to be activated. It might also be objected that this chronological and causal sequence cannot be controlling, since it is a matter of common knowledge that the phases of development overlap extensively without clear demarcation. I do not consider this point a serious objection. It is merely necessary to make it clear that the statement 'Pattern A must be inhibited before pattern B can be activated', is a dynamic rather than a chronologic relation. More rigorously, it should read, 'Pattern B is activated only to the extent that pattern A is inhibited'. Thus if interest

in oral aims is only partly or intermittently inhibited, then interest in anal aims is *pari passu* partly or intermittently activated. What is true of the transition from oral to anal aims is equally true of the transition from anal to phallic, and from phallic to genital.

Now what is the meaning of the inhibition which I have been invoking? In terms of objective description of behaviour, it means merely that a force obstructs a tendency which is set in motion. In terms of psychic function, it means that the wish which is the psychic representative of the instinctual pattern cannot be permitted gratification, in fact, that the wish cannot even rise to consciousness, which it ordinarily must do before any attempt at gratification can be made. Accordingly, the only tendencies which, in the normal adult, may become active, and the only wishes which may become conscious, are those based upon the final elements in the developmental series, namely, the genital.<sup>4</sup>

What evidence can be marshalled to support this thesis? First, let us consider whether the theory corresponds to the available facts. Since the theory is concerned with development by means of serial maturation, it is significant only to the extent that maturational series feature significantly in development. The crucial function of the series of sexual aims is now incontrovertible and any reassertion would be gratuitous. However, it should also be noted that there is a developmental series of sexual objects, and in a sense, of sexual roles (passive, reflexive, active) both of which will be discussed in greater detail below. It is clear that any theory of maturation must deal with series.

The theory also requires inhibitory forces. Displacement activities appear in lower animals when the 'discharge . . . of motivation is . . . prevented', whether by the opposition of an inhibitory drive or by the absence of suitable opportunity for gratification. Now if the phenomenon of displacement activity plays a significant role in human instinctual maturation, its evocation cannot be left to some chance external frustration. Provision must be made, as an organically determined function of the central nervous system, for the interposition of an obstructive force to effect the replacement of the earlier by the later elements in the series. Such obstructive or inhibitory forces have been described in lower animals. For example, the victorious one of a pair of fighting animals of the same species cannot proceed to a kill once the loser gives the surrender signal, in a species in which such a mechanism exists. Adults are unable to act aggres-

<sup>4</sup> In his discussion of this paper, René Spitz offered the concept of a maturational gradient, sexual aims becoming successively available and unavailable. The particular outlet which the sexual drive selects at any moment is determined by the gradient of availability of sexual aims. This suggestion casts my hypothesis into the form of a field theory rather than a dynamic

theory, with no loss in elegance and, for some purposes, possibly some gain. One must then make statements about the conditions responsible for the gradients. To my mind, not only external frustrations and opportunities, but also internal, autochthonous inhibitory forces, loaded by experience, must be taken into account.



sively to the young of their species. Lorenz describes the inhibition of food ingestion in a male fish while carrying its young in its mouth. He also describes relative inhibition of hunting among some predatory animals in their own territories. Note that these examples of inhibition are directed against aggressive tendencies. I am not aware of any instance in lower animals in which maturation proceeds by inhibition of immature forms of behaviour.<sup>5</sup> On the other hand, when we turn our attention to human behaviour, we regularly find forces which inhibit immature forms of instinctual gratification in the sense of excluding them from consciousness and preventing their execution. In the *Three Essays*, Freud says 'the order in which the various instinctual impulses come into activity seems to be phylogenetically determined; so too, does the length of time during which they are able to manifest themselves before they succumb to the effects of some freshly emerging instinctual impulse or to some typical repression.' Here Freud seems to consider the possibilities that the immature pattern is inhibited either by the appearance of the more mature pattern, or by a specific inhibitory force, repression. The hypothesis I am here defending simply relates these two possibilities in the following way: each immature instinctual impulse must succumb to inhibition, i.e. repression, before the more mature impulse can be activated. At another point, Freud says, 'Our study of the perversions has shown us that the sexual instinct has to struggle against certain mental forces which act as resistances, and of which shame and disgust are the most prominent. It is permissible to suppose that these forces play a part in restraining that instinct within limits that are regarded as normal.' Here Freud identifies the negative affects, shame and disgust, as the restraining mental forces that act as resistances to the immature expressions of the sexual instinct. Again, 'It is during this period of total or only partial latency that are built up the mental forces which are later to impede the course of the sexual instinct and, like dams, restrict its flow—disgust, feeling of shame and the claims of aesthetic and moral ideals . . . in reality this development is organically determined and fixed by heredity.' In this passage Freud indicated that the inhibitory forces do not become active until the period of latency, while my hypothesis, and indeed Freud's first statement quoted in this paragraph, require that even the very first developmental shifts, long before latency, are accompanied by, or occasioned by, inhibition.

This maturational inhibition is called, by Freud, primal repression (*Repression*, 1915): 'Now we have reason for assuming a primal repression, a first phase of repression, which consists in a denial of

entry in consciousness to the mental (ideational) presentation of the instinct. This is accompanied by a fixation: the ideational presentation in question persists unaltered from then onwards and the instinct remains attached to it. The second phase of repression, repression proper, concerns mental derivatives of the repressed instinct-presentation, or such trains of thought as, originating elsewhere, have come into associative connection with it. On account of this association, these ideas experience the same fate as that which underwent primal repression. Repression proper, therefore, is actually an after expulsion.' This statement of Freud not only asserts the existence of maturational inhibitory forces, but declares, as my hypothesis requires, that the inhibition is merely an inactivation, a blocking of the impulse, but not obliteration of it. This latter point is more clearly expressed in *Inhibition, Symptom and Anxiety*: 'An important element in the theory of repression is the view that repression is not an event that occurs once, but that it requires a permanent expenditure of energy. If this expenditure of energy were to cease, the repressed impulse, which is being fed all the time from its sources of energy, would seize the next occasion to flow along the channels from which it has been forced aside, and the repression would either fail in its purpose or would have to be repeated an indefinite number of times.' The reversibility of the inhibition is emphasized in the *New Introductory Lectures*: 'Our attitude to the phases of libidinal organization has in general altered somewhat. We used formerly to emphasize the ways in which one phase gives way to the next; nowadays we direct our attention more to the facts which indicate how much of each earlier phase persists side by side with, and behind, later organizations and obtains permanent representation in the economy of the libido and in the character of the individual. Even more important are those investigations which have shown us how frequently under pathological conditions regression to earlier phases takes place, and that certain regressions are characteristic of certain forms of illness.'

That the term repression applies both to the inactivation of the instinctual impulse and to the exclusion of its psychic representation from consciousness, is given in the following passage from *Inhibition, Symptom and Anxiety*: 'Just as the ego controls the path to action in regard to the outer world, so it controls access to consciousness. In repression it displays its power in both directions, acting in the one manner upon the instinctual impulse itself and in the other upon the psychic representative of that impulse.'

The theory of the maturational importance of displacement activity requires that the lifting of the

<sup>5</sup> For this reason, Sillman prefers to consider the displacement phenomenon a means of controlling aggression. Maturational inhibition, i.e. repression, he

relates to the phylogenetic appearance of counter-instincts (*v. infra*).



inhibition should be followed by the reappearance of the more immature patterns of instinctual gratification. The readiness of these immature forms to reappear in neurosis indeed justifies the description of neurosis as the result of partial escape from repression. The only pertinent experimental evidence I can find is the now classical series of experiments of Klüver and Bucy. Upon resecting both temporal lobes of monkeys, Klüver and Bucy observed a pronounced increase in the intensity and variety of sexual activity which seems to warrant the term 'uninhibited', and if observed in man, would probably deserve the term 'unrepressed'. In fact, it was essentially this phenomenon, since confirmed by others, that led me (1954, 1955) to propose that the temporal lobes are the site of elaboration of negative, that is, unpleasant and inhibiting, affect, which in turn activates repression in particular and defence in general.

While this correspondence between the hypothesis and the data of animal and human behaviour is a necessary condition for the validation of the hypothesis, it is far from sufficient. Let us consider the obvious alternative hypothesis. Could the process of behaviour maturation in man be ascribed to merely organic central nervous system maturation? As I noted above, organic maturation makes available newer patterns of behaviour, but it is one thing for a pattern to exist and another for it to be activated. My hypothesis deals with the successive activation of more mature forms of behaviour, and it requires organic maturation. Given an organic maturational sequence, the programme of activation of the several patterns may vary. For example, the activation of one may have no relation to the fate of its predecessor—the situation which I believe obtains in lower mammals. On the other hand, the activation of each successive pattern, after it is laid down, may be delayed until the preceding pattern is inhibited—the situation which I believe obtains in human beings. The neural equipment for a behaviour pattern may antedate the exhibition of the pattern. For example, Beach quotes a number of experiments which demonstrate that patterns of reproductive behaviour may be evoked by hormone administration considerably sooner than they would appear spontaneously. Again, female mating behaviour may be evoked in male animals by suitable external stimuli or by hormonal manipulation and, *mutatis mutandis*, male mating behaviour in females. We may infer that the neural patterns for both forms of behaviour exist in each animal, but that predominantly one set is activated under ordinary circumstances. Let us compare coital behaviour of lower animals with that of human beings. In the former case, oral and anal activities appear freely in introductory manoeuvres and in foreplay, but to our knowledge, seldom impede or modify coitus itself. In the human adult, on the other hand, while oral-oral

contact is usual, and oral-breast contact frequent, oral-genital and anal contacts are not usual in performance, though analysis discloses the universal unconscious disposition toward such activity. In man, moreover, the unconscious needs not only appear during foreplay, but often colour, distort, and occasionally impede the coitus proper. In other words, the stimulus to coitus in lower mammals may also innervate pregenital patterns of behaviour, but the execution of these patterns constitutes merely an addition to, but not a distortion of, or an obstacle to, successful coitus. On the other hand, in human beings, successful coitus requires inhibition of all but minor fragments of pregenital behaviour. (Cultural factors, of course, determine the amount and quality of pregenital residua which are tolerated in the coital situation. However, the very same cultural factors determine which pregenital wishes are subjected to primal repression. Therefore it is reasonable to suppose that those pregenital fragments which appear in adult coitus are those which were not repressed, or were imperfectly repressed. Therefore, their deflected impetus does not contribute to the activation of the coital act.) While this apparent difference may be merely the result of closer familiarity with the data of the human being than the animal, there is no evidence that in animals immature patterns of behaviour strive against a constant inhibitory force. (There are two obvious exceptions to this statement. The first is the fact that the experiments of Klüver and Bucy demonstrate that in adult primates bilateral temporal lobectomy permits forms of sexual behaviour to appear which are ordinarily not evident. This fact can as readily be considered a confirmation as an inconsistency, since the behaviour of primates is intermediate between the behaviour of man and of lower mammals. The second exception is that, as we have already observed, there are some important forms of behaviour inhibition in lower animals; but these seem all to be directed against aggressive rather than erotic behaviour. For that reason, in my opinion, we cannot directly compare the behaviour effects of brain manipulations in higher species with those in lower species; on the contrary, the differences may give some clue to the differences in behaviour organization of the several species. In general, I am inclined to believe with Sillman that phylogenetic development among mammals is to be correlated with development of temporal lobe structures, and the latter with what Sillman calls counter-instincts (instincts which oppose more primitive instincts), though I would stress the inhibiting forces, i.e. repression, rather than the instincts which they activate.)

Another way of accounting for maturational activation of patterns of instinctual behaviour is to invoke endocrine changes which are known to accompany and organize some aspects of physical development. However, our discussion of the



role of the endocrines in instinctual activation yielded only the conclusion that human behaviour is less closely regulated by hormones than the behaviour of other vertebrates; indeed, that hormones play a priming, but not an activating, role in the control of behaviour. 'The hormone is to be regarded, not as a stimulus to behaviour, nor as an organizer of the overt response, but merely as a facilitating agent which increases the reactivity of specific neuromuscular systems to stimulation' (Beach).

A good theory should not merely be consistent with existing facts and surpass other possible explanations, but it should offer some new aspect or organizing principle to the material with which it deals. My hypothesis accounts for continuity of instinctual motivation in the human. First, with respect to seasonal timing, if we take as a baseline the behaviour of the vertebrate between its seasons of reproductive activity, then we may say that the advent of the reproductive season provides an additional quantum of motivation which drives the whole series of reproductive activities. It does not seem to be a matter of redirection or of substitution, but of addition. Now freedom from seasonal regulation of reproductive activity is not limited to man. It is approached fairly closely by many other species, especially by the males. What distinguishes the human from the infrahuman more clearly is the continuity of instinctual motivation from birth to death in the former. We have no reason to assume any continuity of instinctual motivation connecting the tie of the young to the parent and the several seasonal efflorescences of sexual behaviour in animals. In the human, on the other hand, we know of only one discontinuity in erotic activity, namely, latency. However, latency is characterized not by cessation of libidinal ties, but by inhibition of drives aiming at physical contact with the instinctual object. In other words, latency is not a discontinuity in instinctual motivation. Hence we may speak of temporal continuity of instinctual motivation in man, and of discontinuity relative and variable, in animals. By what mechanism is continuity substituted for discontinuity? It is my suggestion that in man, the instinctual tie of young to parent never stops. Adult aims and objects are substituted for their infantile counterparts, but there is never a termination and resumption of the motivational impulse. The displacement phenomenon makes it possible to retain the infantile attachment while redirecting it to adult aims and objects. This relative prolongation in man of what are early ontogenetic stages in lower animals was described by Bolk and designated by him retardation with fetalization. The application of the retardation concept to metapsychology has been extensively discussed by Róheim and recently by Weyl. The acceptance of the idea that the displacement

phenomenon is significant in the ontogenetic maturation of the erotic instinct in man makes it possible to account for the continuity of libidinal motivation which is characteristic of the human being.

#### *b. Defence*

But the concept of displacement activity has still broader implications. As it is used by the ethologists, displacement activity refers to a shift of the technique of instinctual gratification. However, a similar mechanism permits a shift of object of instinctual gratification. Such shifts of object are fairly commonplace. A strongly motivated male may mount another male if a receptive female is not available. Infrequently, there are matings between individuals of different species. Occasionally inanimate objects such as sticks are used for genital stimulation. With very high motivation, the instinctual pattern may be released even in the absence of any object; such instinctual activity performed in the absence of an object is called a vacuum activity. There seems, therefore, to be a principle in the operation of the instinctual apparatus of vertebrates which permits the substitution of one of the individual elements for another among techniques and also among objects, a more remote or less suitable element being requisitioned when the desired or appropriate element is unavailable. This plainly corresponds to Freud's observation in metapsychology, that when libidinal interest in a given aim or object is obstructed by internal or external obstacles, it is displaced to the images of other aims or objects. This displacement of libidinal impulse was best described and handled by the concept of a fluid 'psychic energy'. Tinbergen uses the term 'motivational impulse' for the corresponding instinctual variable. The existence of a limited displaceability of motivational impulse in the instinctual life of lower animals and an extensive displaceability of libidinal cathexis in the human psyche seems to be a fundamental principle in the biology of instincts.

While the execution of a displacement activity in animals is ordinarily a brief, discrete process, in my hypothesis I have suggested that the process may remain dynamically active for decades. In the animal, a displacement activity is used for current, momentary adjustment; I have considered its possible function in directing instinctual activities over almost the entire lifetime of the human being. Is the concept of displacement activity useful in the human being in dealing with the current instinctual operations completed within periods of time of the order of a day? It is a fairly pervasive principle of metapsychology that psychic events of adult life are essentially repetitions of prototypes that occurred in infancy. Thus the pursuit of particular patterns of instinctual gratification in adult life is ascribable to a repetition compulsion. Every cognition of



adult life is a re-cognition. Even the psychic defences are considered to be patterned after infantile modes of gratification. And repression proper is a secondary repression reasserting a primal repression of early childhood. Therefore, if the process of displacement activity obtains in ontogenetic maturation, we may look for it in current instinctual function. If we remember that the principle of displacement activity is essentially a shift of motivational impulse from one member of a series of instinctual elements which is thwarted to another, we may consider applying it to the metapsychology of defence—for a defence is essentially a device whereby a pattern of instinctual behaviour which is acceptable to the ego is substituted for one which is rejected by the ego. To give a specific example of such an application, let us consider repression. Above, I suggested that the inhibitory force which is effective in the series of displacement activities responsible for instinctual maturation is the organic basis of primal repression. If current displacement activity is a reassertion of infantile displacement activity, and if repression proper is a reassertion of primal repression, then we may infer that repression proper or secondary repression is the current psychic inhibitory force responsible for the shift in libidinal cathexis, the shift corresponding to the current execution of instinctual displacement activity.

In summary, I suggest that the concept of displacement activity which operates in the instinctual life of vertebrates may profitably be applied, *mutatis mutandis*, to the maturation and current function of the psychic apparatus of man.

#### D. INSTINCTUAL WISHES

The phenomena of displacement activity and mammalianization not only apply to the dynamics of instinctual behaviour but can be employed to examine its contents as well. If we consider the erotic instinct to be the tendency immanent in the structure of the central nervous system of an individual to bring that individual into a definite relation, usually physical contact, with another individual of the same species for the apparent purpose of performing together a function which neither can perform alone, then we may infer that the psychic representation of the instinct is a wish on the part of the subject individual that he unite with his object.

Freud, in attempting to construct a theory of instincts which would apply to human behaviour, considered object, aim, and source (and impetus) to be the significant variables: he asserted that since the instinctual drive was not itself a psychic process, but was merely 'a demand upon the mind for work', the instinct could have no mental quality. The action of the instinct on the psychic life is to create instinct representatives which are subjectively appreciated as wishes: 'The kernel of the system

Ucs. consists of instinct-presentations whose aim is to discharge their cathexis; that is to say, they are wish-impulses' (*The Unconscious*, 1915). If the transition from instinctual need to primitive wish is actually a one-to-one translation, as I suggest, then we should find analogous elements in both, and should consider it reasonable to apply inferences about one to the other. We may discuss instinctual needs in the light of recent ethological data, and primitive wishes on the basis of the data of psychoanalysis; the two sources should be complementary.

#### 1. CONTENTS

In every primitive wish the following elements may be ascertained: representations of the subject himself, of the object, and of the contact apparatus; the role the subject will play, and the specific technique he will use to achieve gratification.

##### a. Subject

In any fantasy expressive of a wish, an image of the subject himself appears. This image of the self which appears as the subject of the wish fantasy is the basis of the 'I' in the statement of the wish, and a corresponding element designating the subject himself must be included in the neural disposition which is responsible for the instinctual pattern. This element, the subject himself, is usually taken for granted, but it is well to remember that every primitive wish and every derivative wish, fantasy, and dream is a statement of the need for contact between subject and object. Every dream expresses a wish of the dreamer, in which he participates, and every affect which appears in the dream is the affect of the dreamer.

That the psychic representation of the subject himself changes in the course of his development and so plays a significant role in determining the nature of primitive wishes and their derivative fantasies at every point of psychosexual maturation, has been observed and reported. I am not prepared to discuss the phenomenon at this time, and it is not necessary for this presentation to do more than note its existence.

##### b. Object

We are familiar, from the material of psychoanalysis, with the shift in sexual object. We know that the initial object of the infant is the mother. At a given point the father comes to occupy more and more of its libidinal interest. Later homosexual contemporaries and, ultimately, heterosexual contemporaries successively become the objects of the erotic instinct. The shift from one object to another is accompanied by repression of the psychic representation of the earlier object in sexual wishes. In the light of our previous discussion, it might be more correct to say that the shift is actually occasioned by the repression.



### c. Apparatus

We may now consider the sexual apparatus. Freud states that the 'sexual aim of the infantile instinct consists of obtaining satisfaction by means of an appropriate stimulation of the erotic zone which has been selected in one way or another.' I believe that satisfaction is used here in a subjective sense, and this statement, therefore, unfortunately, implies that the phenomenon of consciousness is an essential factor in the operation of the instincts. I would prefer to adhere to Freud's suggestion that instinctual drive be considered a neural process, but not a psychic one, though it finds psychic expression. Freud also defines the aim (in *Three Essays*) as the specific act which unites subject with object. Now in discussing sexual aims, Freud actually refers to three separate elements, namely, the anatomical apparatus by means of which subject and object come into contact, the quality of activity or passivity, which I shall call role, and the character of the instinctual act, which I shall call technique.

To recapitulate classical theory, the initial sexual apparatus consists of mouth and breast. This is subsequently replaced by the anal zone with its product, which in turn is replaced in what we call the phallic stage by the external genitalia of both sexes and, of course, ultimately, in the genital stage by penis and vagina respectively. Here again repression accompanies, or perhaps more precisely, if our theory is correct, occasions, each shift.

As we shall see below in our discussion of technique, not every instinctual act has as its immediate goal physical contact. Preliminary goals deal with establishing a remote relation, for example, seeing or showing, startling or hearing, influencing or submitting. Such goals may deal with the erotic zones, but on the other hand they may deal with physical structures which are only secondarily libidinated, or with symbolic attributes of the physical organism such as wealth, prestige, name, possessions, children, and so on. However, such omission of specific contact apparatus obtains only in preliminary wishes as opposed to consummatory wishes, and in derivatives as opposed to primitive wishes.

Of course, in every wish a pair of contact organs is specified: the organ of the subject and the organ of the object.

It is important to realize that, with respect to both the series of objects and the series of sets of sexual apparatus, neither a repressed object nor a repressed sexual apparatus is automatically excluded from playing an important role in the subject's life. Following repression of the image of the mother as the sexual object and repression of the image of the mouth as sexual apparatus, the image of the mother nevertheless appears in maternal roles and the image of the mouth continues to play a nutritive role. Repressed images of objects are merely excluded from the role of sexual object and

repressed images of sexual apparatus are merely excluded from the sphere of sexuality (though in some forms of neurosis, repression may extend to nonsexual roles of other individuals and of apparatus which was once sexual, as well). In other words, it is not the image of the object or apparatus which is repressed, but the sexual wish in which such images appear.

### d. Role

Implied in every primitive wish is the element which I call role. It corresponds closely to the grammatical notion of 'voice' and states simply whether the subject wishes to act upon the object or to be acted upon by the object, that is, whether the subject's role is to be active or passive. We should not be misled by the consequence of the wish. Thus, in the wish to seduce, the subject plays an active role, even though, if he is successful in seducing, he may be acted upon sexually by the object. Similarly, in the wish to be provoked, the subject plays a passive role, even though he may respond to provocation by acting upon the object. In some wishes, the subject acts upon himself, so playing a reflexive role. Such reflexive wishes obviously do not directly serve the erotic instinct as we have defined it above, namely, the instinct which enforces union with a second individual for the accomplishment of some purpose not attainable alone. But they may be considered to do so indirectly. For example, a reflexive wish may be used in defence against an active or passive wish which must be repressed. Thus, the wish to be punished may be replaced by a wish to punish oneself. A reflexive wish may be a preliminary step in a sequence leading to some subsequent interaction of subject and object. For example, one grooms oneself to become more attractive to a sexual object. Some wishes may be expressed in a medial form, that is, the action is intransitive, e.g. 'I wish to grow'. However, such wishes can always be transposed to more primitive, active, passive, or reflexive forms, e.g. 'I wish to possess my father's penis' or 'I wish to enlarge myself'.

### e. Technique

The concept of technique of instinctual gratification I introduced in my papers relating metapsychology to brain function (employing there the term 'strategy'). It was devised originally to account for the commonplace psycho-analytic observation that each individual has a number of favourite modes of pursuing his goals in reality and in fantasy. For example, the phobic individual favours fantasies in which topographical hazards, obstacles, and accomplishments are employed, including such concepts as high and low, inside and outside, open space and obstruction, the negotiation of gaps via bridges, and the conquering of such challenges as fire and water. The compulsive



individual favours forcing, pressing, breaking, crushing, and also sudden reversal, as his modes of accomplishing his instinctual purposes. The individual prone to depression favours tendencies of incorporation and ejection, clinging and discarding. The schizophrenic prefers projection, influence, and rebirth. Techniques such as exhibition and viewing are universal. Techniques of linkage and isolation are encountered in phobias, depression, and schizophrenia. Aggression, too, may be considered to be a technique for instinctual gratification, most prominent, for example, in sadistic and masochistic fantasies (though obviously its erotic function does not exhaust its significance, and it requires further discussion in terms of the death instinct). Even identification may be considered a mode of instinctual behaviour by which subject relates to object. It seems to me that the individual's set of favourite techniques is at least as directly related to choice of neurosis as preoccupation with one set of contact apparatus, though obviously the two are to a certain extent related, since each set of sexual contact apparatus requires the application of a specific set of techniques.

#### (i) In animal instincts

Tinbergen, describing instinctual behaviour in animals, points out that most instinctual goals are pursued by attaining a number of sub-goals, and each of these, in turn, is reached ultimately by a set of individual motor acts performed either singly or in sequence. For example, in the specific case of the three-spined stickleback, the reproductive instinct includes fighting behaviour, nest-building behaviour, mating behaviour and parental behaviour. Furthermore, fighting behaviour includes biting, threatening, chasing; building includes testing of materials, boring, gluing; mating behaviour includes zig-zag dance, leading female to nest, showing entrance, quivering, fertilizing the eggs; caring for the offspring includes fanning, rescuing eggs, and so on. Now these specific motor acts, and others like them, correspond to my idea of instinctual technique. We have only to note one difference. Each motor act in lower animals (below or including subprimate mammals) belongs to, and is used by, only one instinctual pattern for only one instinctual sub-goal. For example, fighting is often performed in one way when it is used by the reproductive instinct, and differently in defence against predators. (On the other hand, the number of types of muscular activity is limited and essentially the same basic movements appear in several motor acts, e.g. the pattern of muscular activity is basically quite similar, though easily distinguished, in showing (the female) the entrance to the nest, trembling (to induce the female to spawn) and fanning movements (to ventilate the clutch of eggs).) In man most instinctual techniques can be employed in any of the primitive wishes,

that is, in connexion with any object, any role, and any contact apparatus. As pointed out below, even techniques specifically associated with a particular contact apparatus may be applied to others. Nevertheless, the concept of instinctual technique, based upon, and devised to handle, psycho-analytic material, seems to me to correspond closely to the ethological category of ultimate motor acts executing instinctual behaviour.

Now Tinbergen describes a classification of such motor acts (suggested by Craig) into appetitive behaviour and consummatory acts. Let us consider the consummatory acts first, since they constitute a more homogeneous group. They are the acts which consummate the instinctual need, e.g. feeding, fighting, coition. They are stereotyped in pattern for the individual and for the species. They are therefore obviously executed by constitutionally provided motor patterns. I may add that since some of them (e.g. sucking, grasping) appear before the cerebrum is myelinated, and some appear inappropriately when consciousness is seriously clouded (e.g. plucking, fingering the genitals), these, or perhaps all consummatory acts, are mediated by infra-cerebral structures such as spinal cord and brain stem. I believe that this grouping of instinctual acts can be applied to the technique of the primitive wish. Note that these consummatory techniques are those which must be closely associated with the sexual contact apparatus. It is interesting that because the execution of the consummatory act terminates all other activity related to the instinctual goal or subgoal, Tinbergen says that 'such an end response consumes the specific impulses responsible for its activation'. In other words, he believes that it is not a sensory pleasure arising from consummation which terminates the instinctual activity, or any change in the contact apparatus itself, but simply that the performance of the act cancels whatever physiological force motivated the instinctual behaviour in the first place (motivation impulse).

Appetitive behaviour, as defined by Tinbergen (after Craig) includes all those acts which anticipate and prepare for actual consummation. They start with seeking the object and continue with methods of pursuit, approach, capture, attack, and so on. Now I would suggest that this group be divided into at least two categories: those that lead up to and result in discovery of an object, and those that follow the discovery and 'decision' to pursue the object. In other words, only those acts in the first group should be called appetitive, since they consist of searching and scanning in response to an 'appetite'. These acts are less stereotyped than consummatory acts, but still display considerable regularity and consistency among individuals. Stereotyped searching and attending can be evoked by stimulation of the anterior portion of the temporal lobe in animals. After separating out these preliminary appetitive acts, we are left with a whole



collection of instinctual acts which include, for example, methods of pursuit, catching, handling, positioning, and persuasion. This group of acts I would call approach or positioning acts. They are considerably less stereotyped than consummatory or appetitive acts, more complex and more modifiable in response to external circumstances.

(ii) In human wishes

Let us now apply this classification of techniques to the primitive psychic wish. Appetitive techniques in man include searching the external environment. However, scanning the memory is also an appetitive technique, only here the search is for the memory of a past object in the hope that it may facilitate current object finding. It is probably proper to include among the appetitive techniques, techniques for calling attention to oneself in preparation for a passive role in libidinal contact. Offering visual, auditory, or olfactory display to draw the attention of the object falls into this subgroup. In sublimation, such techniques are much elaborated and form the basis of advertising and public relations.

Approach or preparatory techniques, that is, those which bring subject and object together, include threat, pursuit, trapping, manipulation, deceiving, negotiation, stealing, imitation, accumulating, building, mixing, concealing, working material, and so on. They are seen in simple form in the primitive wish, not essentially different from their form in animal behaviour; they also exist in derived forms. Thus, the negotiation of topical obstacles is extended into a whole system of transportation, including the use of vehicles, channels, bridges, and so on. Manufacturing and building are also derivatives based upon instinctual techniques. Such techniques as trapping, threatening, bluffing, manipulating, compelling are usually indirectly employed, using such intermediate accessories as money, prestige, and verbal agreements. Planning and calculation, problem solving in general, are newly evolved methods of ordering the other, more primitive techniques into the most effective sequences for achievement of the goal. Testing, which in lower animals consists merely of close examination, in man becomes the whole science of measurement, experimentation, and the intrapsychic technique of imagining consequences.

The consummatory techniques are obviously closely related to the specific contact apparatus to which they apply. For example, sucking, tasting, chewing, and swallowing are available to the oral drives; the techniques of dejection, purification, the ability to recognize and separate the clean and the dirty, decoration, and possibly even primitive detection and recognition of other individuals are specific techniques available to those erotic activities which we assign to the anal drives; the techniques of penetration and receiving the penetrating object are characteristic of genital activities. Even these

have derived forms. For example, the use of tools may be considered to be an elaboration of the use of limbs and appendages. Techniques of incorporating, penetrating, receiving, are extended from their original objects, the body-contact apparatus, to sheltering structures in general. Moreover, the modes by which two organisms make contact may form the models for a host of geometrical concepts.

Judging from the fantasies which emerge during the course of psycho-analytic treatment, we see that techniques appropriate to a particular sexual apparatus are often enough assigned to another sexual apparatus. For example, the techniques of biting off and incorporating, obviously appropriate to oral fantasies, are often used in anal and genital fantasies as well. The procedure of being forcibly penetrated, obviously appropriate to passive genital fantasies, may be seen in oral and anal fantasies too.

(iii) In ego function

Further elaboration of the concept of technique reveals the manner in which elements of instinct mechanisms provide the material basis of ego function, both elementary and abstract. One of the characteristic features of human instinctual behaviour, as contrasted with that of lower animals, is its plasticity, that is, its tendency to modify primitive patterns by substituting elements from other sub-instincts and from patterns originating at other stages of development. Let us consider specifically the instinctual need to suck at the mother's breast. Now the technique of sucking in the lower mammals is largely confined to the function of infantile feeding. By contrast, in man the technique of sucking is freed from this single function in the following ways. First, it is freed from the mother as its specific object, so that breast sucking reappears in adult sexual activity. Second, it is freed from the breast as its anatomic target and the sucking of genitals, tongue, and lips appears in adult sexual activity. Third, it is no longer restricted to the mouth as executive organ, for fantasies of anal and vaginal sucking are encountered in psychoanalysis and it is a prescribed exercise of Yoga to suck up and expel water per anum through a straw by means of control of the abdominal musculature. Fourth, the technique of sucking can be applied even in the absence of an animate object; for example human beings regularly suck at foods, cigarettes, tubes. Fifth, the technique of sucking can be reproduced mechanically—that is, it may be freed even from the subject as the agent; we have sucking machines such as pumps, blowers, siphons. Sixth, a further step in freeing the technique of sucking from the primitive instinctual wishes in which it originates is the development of the *concept* of sucking, suction, or vacuum. This is an abstraction which consists of the common principle contained in all wishes to suck (or be sucked). The creation of such an abstraction provides material



for the intellectual task of predicting on the basis of general principles rather than on the basis of fortuitous experience. Its creation and use are therefore essential features of the secondary process operations of the ego. We can see in this example how materials of the ego may be derived from the autochthonous contents of the id. Finally, it is well known that each individual has characteristic modes of conceptualization; some people think topographically, some in terms of forces, some in quantitative and others in qualitative terms. These modes of conceptualization can also be understood as mental crystallizations of instinctual techniques, so that techniques determine not only content but also process of the ego. For this purpose sucking is not the most fortunate example, but it is not wholly inappropriate, since one speaks of absorbing information, and also of being absorbed in some mental occupation. A patient who was dissatisfied with his ability to memorize, visualized his brain resting on a printed page and sucking up the letters. Other infantile consummatory techniques are more readily discerned in modes of thought, e.g. incisiveness from biting, retentiveness from sphincter control, precision from cleaning, and penetration and receptiveness on the genital level. Indeed the synthetic function of ego may, in this sense, be considered a derivative of id techniques of uniting. Nunberg says, '... since the ego is derived from the id, it is probably from this very source (Eros) that it acquires its binding and productive power.'

## 2. ORGANIZATION AND STRUCTURE

We are now in a position to offer a suggestion about the form of instinctual behaviour in man. We have noted that whereas in inframammalian animals specific acts are related to specific instincts, in man and perhaps in all mammals there is a single erotic instinct which has the function of determining all behaviour requiring the participation of another individual. (Although the erotic instinct presides over all behaviour requiring the participation of another individual of the same species, its domain in man at least is not limited to two-person relations. It may activate reflexive or narcissistic behaviour in which the subject individual also plays the role of object, and it may activate sublimations in some of which no object appears.) In the service of this instinct, series of objects, sets of sexual apparatus, roles and techniques of procedure are available. In the course of development, a large number of combinations of the various objects, sets of contact apparatus, techniques and roles are formed. Each combination determines a primitive wish. 'We therefore have to conclude that the equal impulse-excitations are exceptionally "plastic", if I may use the word. One of them can step in in place of another; if satisfaction of one is denied in reality, satisfaction of another can offer full recompense. They are related

to one another like a network of communicatory canals filled with fluid, and this in spite of their subordination to the genital primacy, a condition which is not at all easily reduced to an image. Further, the component-instincts of sexuality as well as the united sexual impulse which comprises them, share a great capacity to change their object, to exchange it for another, i.e. for one more easily attainable; this capacity for displacement and readiness to accept surrogates must produce a powerful counter-effect to the effect of a frustration' (Freud, 1917, *A General Introduction to Psycho-Analysis*).

Now while we have spoken of these categories which appear in the primitive wish as though any member of one category may be associated with any members of the other categories, we find in our clinical work that in any given individual, certain sets are especially prominent. These sets are the primitive unconscious wishes with which we deal clinically. Let us consider for a moment the simplest, most infantile, most deeply repressed wishes. It is these which are most difficult to recapture in terms of actual memory in analysis and which require reconstruction. They are often incorporated into fantasies which are more or less distorted versions of actual, historical events. We do not know exactly how any given set of instinctual components becomes associated with a real life situation; nor is there any great unanimity about the relative importance of accidental occurrence and constitutional predisposition in determining which specific sets of components become important. It is credible either that a set of instinctual components determined constitutionally should find an appropriately expressive set of external circumstances, or that a particularly forceful impression should combine instinctual components into such a set and render the combination permanent and important. My point is that I believe that this is the level at which constitutional and environmental factors combine in such a way that the execution of an instinctual drive becomes identical with the repetition of an infantile wish or fantasy. In other words, it seems to me that the formal unit of instinctual behaviour in man is the primitive infantile wish, which is merely the psychic expression of the specific set of instinctual components. The wish is the paper currency of the psychic world, the manipulation of which determines the fate of the organic instinctual drives which we may compare to the precious metal transferred hither and thither in subterranean vaults. Instinctual drives have no more direct representation in the psychic life. 'An instinct can never be an object of consciousness —only the idea that represents the instinct. Even in the unconscious, moreover, it can only be represented by the idea. If the instinct did not attach itself to an idea or manifest itself as an affective state, we could know nothing about it' (Freud, *The Unconscious*, 1915).



It is for this reason that instinctual pressure results in repetition compulsion. Each wish or fantasy becomes a paradigm after which the individual attempts to model his subsequent experience. In any given individual, a complete picture of the instinctual life can be given by a catalogue of primitive, unconscious wishes. 'Every human being has acquired, by the combined operation of inherent disposition and of external influences in childhood, a special individuality in the exercise of his capacity to love—that is, in the conditions which he sets up for loving, in the impulses he gratifies by it, and in the aims he sets out to achieve in it. This forms a cliché or stereotype in him, so to speak, (or even several) which perpetually repeats and reproduces itself as life goes on, in so far as external circumstances and the nature of the accessible love-objects permits and is indeed itself to some extent modifiable, by later impressions' (Freud, *The Dynamics of Transference*, 1912).

We assume the existence of a series of unconscious primitive wishes, each evoked at its appropriate phase of maturation. The maturational processes which rouse each to initial activity include repressive forces directed against its predecessor. It remains active only so long as its predecessor remains repressed—and it itself suffers repression—at the proper developmental point—with activation of its successor in the series. In the adult, we may envisage a series of primitive wishes, or more precisely, a series of groups of primitive wishes, in linear arrangement of which only the last group—namely, heterosexual-genital, extra-familial wishes and fantasies, can become conscious. However, the linear disposition is in dynamic equilibrium. Repression does not mean permanent or even complete inactivation.

I suspect that a discussion of all possible forms of this dynamic equilibrium among primitive wishes and repressive forces must necessarily encompass all the variations of normal and abnormal dynamic psychology. For this presentation, the following brief sketch will suffice.

#### a. Objects

The series of libidinal objects which appear in the series of unconscious, basic wishes culminates with the consciously acknowledged, heterosexual love-object. The tendency, despite repression, to establish relations with homosexual objects, and to revive childhood experiences with parental objects by transferring their characteristics to the current object, presses upward continually. At best, this tendency causes fluctuations in the nature and intensity of the individual's relation with the love-object. At worst, it destroys the relation or makes it a source of misery to one or both partners. The attempt to balance the conscious love for the acknowledged heterosexual object against these disturbing forces occupies some proportion of each

person's daily psychic activity, and usually of overt behaviour as well. This feature of psychic life is more susceptible to neurotic impairment than the ability to work and the capacity to respond to urgent, external demands.

A young man with a compulsive neurosis is unable to marry or even to carry a relation with a girl to a point of developing any real feeling for her, although his bachelor life is lonesome and he is strongly attracted to women sexually. He disdains marriage because he is unwilling to assume responsibility for a wife and children. After seeing a young woman two or three times he develops obsessive fears that he might infect her venereally (even though he abstains from intercourse) or that she will be hurt as a result of his neglect. He prefers to obtain sexual gratification commercially and to restrict emotional ties to servants. Moreover, his feeling about his mother fluctuates between indignation at being expected to visit her and sad longing when he stays away. His relations with male friends are also superficial and transitory and his feelings about his father fluctuate just as do his feelings about his mother. It is clear that this man is unable to avoid distorting the images of the young ladies whom he dates by superimposing upon them the childhood image of his mother, or similarly to avoid distorting the images of his male friends by superimposing on them the childhood image of his father. However, I believe that it is equally true that his repeated and persistent though unsuccessful efforts to establish affective relations with his contemporaries are driven by the instinctual force resident in the repressed primitive wishes about mother and father. Thus, in this case, the repressed primitive wish activates the libidinal efforts with contemporaries and at the same time, because the repression is not complete, frustrates these efforts by permitting the image of the repressed object to distort the image of the current object.

#### b. Techniques

The techniques for instinctual gratification are not repressed. In fact, during latency the process of education consists essentially of developing the constitutionally provided techniques for instinctual gratification to the point where speedy, skilful, efficient performance becomes possible in a large number of fields of human endeavour. Because these techniques are not repressed, and because they are elements of the most primitive and oldest wishes, their employment in dreams, symptoms, conscious fantasies and daily work permits a partial relief of instinctual pressure. These techniques are among the most readily available clues the psycho-analyst has, but the advantage of their ready availability is diminished by the fact that they generally betray neither the object nor the contact apparatus with which they are associated in the unconscious wish.



As a result of repression, the repressed object or apparatus in the wish may be replaced by another object or apparatus which has at least two properties: the property of being appropriate to the technique employed in the wish; and the property of being associatively connected on an unconscious or conscious level, or more usually both, with the repressed element. Substitute representations, including symbols, must possess these two properties. Thus a hazardous sexual achievement may be represented in dream, symptom, or sublimation, as the negotiation of a difficult task in terms of some technique not intrinsically sexual (that is, not consummatory), for example, the negotiation of heights, bodies of water, and so on. In a *New York Times* editorial (31 May, 1953) entitled 'Unconquered Goddess', the writer concludes, 'Mount Everest is the last natural citadel—and the most formidable. . . . Col. John Hunt, who headed this year's expedition, has a story to tell. It will be an epic that is bound to thrill millions who followed his struggle. The heroine will be that towering icy queen, with almost vertical rocky slopes, that to us is Mount Everest, to Tibetans "Goddess of the World": the heroes will be men of the stoutest heart who have proved that . . . the stuff that made great soldiers and great adventurers still lives.' In neurotics, sexual anxiety may appear subjectively as anxiety appropriate to the technique selected to convey the instinctual need, and mild non-sexual anxiety evoked by actual technical difficulties—for example, exposure to heights, closed spaces, and so on—may be vigorously reinforced by sexual anxieties of unconscious origin so as to produce phobias. In terms of this discussion, a sublimation is an activity driven by instinctual forces in which the technique is preserved and the contact apparatus either eliminated, substituted, or modified. For example, in the case of mountain climbing, in the mind of the editorial writer at least, climbing is the technique for establishing an erotic contact with the love-object, specific references to the genitals, the breast, or the womb being eliminated. Such sublimations are responsible for setting the force of the libidinal instincts at the service of society so that a large proportion of this instinctual force is devoted to daily work. Work activities in general are less susceptible to neurotic impairment than libidinal relations but more susceptible than emergency responses.

In the case of the compulsive young man, his neurosis impaired his daily work slightly—not nearly so much as it impaired his libidinal relations. (His work was much impaired when he had a business partner, and he felt that his decisions could ruin his partner and starve the latter's family. Dissolving the partnership resulted in a marked improvement of working ability.) In fact, the bidding, buying, selling, and trading against competitors gave him considerable gratification even

though, or perhaps because, there was no consistent libidinal object. The analytic material, of course, disclosed the libidinal significance of the activity. The aggressive techniques of forcing, squeezing, depriving, destroying, accumulating, appeared distinctly in fantasies about his work, as in libidinal fantasies and in fact, these techniques provided the links with which the relations between the two could be demonstrated in symbol, dream, and symptom. Because the techniques are not repressed they can carry a good portion of the instinctual drive and can afford a significant and fairly consistent measure of gratification, though alone they are not able to exhaust the instinctual force.

#### c. Apparatus

The only consciously admissible consummatory contact organs in many adults are the genitals of both partners. Other combinations are occasionally acknowledged and indulged. When repressive forces are not able to hold in complete check the combinations of contact apparatus which appear in unconscious wishes, these combinations may tend to distort the coital function by imposing on the genitals techniques more appropriate to other organs. The problem of controlling these instinctual forces may be more or less difficult and complicates libidinal activities at best. This is one of the favourite sites for the first signs of neurosis. The obsessive concern of the patient described, about infecting and being infected venereally in intercourse, betrays the anal distortion of genital function, i.e. injury by contamination. For this man, semen and vaginal fluid are at worst infectious, and at best soiling substances which can cause disease by contact. Despite the fact that the patient is dealing with genitals, he behaves as though the contact is anal, and this illusion impairs the consummatory act and with it the entire libidinal relation.

#### d. Role

It is common to encounter sets of wishes in which active, passive, and reflexive forms exist side by side, so that one may be used as a defence against another. Such active, passive, and reflexive sets may be constructed with the assistance of the devices of projection and identification and also with the assistance of autoerotic behaviour. Anxiety may terminate the attempt to gratify passive wishes and substitute active or reflexive wishes, while guilt may terminate the attempt to gratify active wishes and substitute passive or reflexive wishes. In different societies one of these roles may be more acceptable than the other two, and the attempt to restrain the less acceptable forms may interfere in libidinal activities: it is often a point of low resistance for the manifestation of neurosis. In the case of the compulsive man, there is so much anxiety and shame about passive wishes which are insistent



because of their infantile origin, and which offer surcease from the guilt evoked by hostile wishes, that he refuses to acknowledge them even in the most derived and innocuous forms. He will not, for example, admit that he is eager to be admired and loved by the girls he dates. Narcissistic wishes, on the other hand, are easily indulged. The fact that the wishes of both the infant and the female are passive, makes this man reject a passive role under any circumstances. Tinbergen observes that passivity, which he calls 'submissiveness', is common to the attitude of the grown juvenile bird who has not yet left the nest and to the attitude of the sexually receptive female. In both cases the submissiveness has the function of appeasing the aggression of the male parent.

In brief, the capacity of the adult human being to devote a large proportion of his daily energies to constructive work flows from his ability to obtain partial instinctual fulfilment by indulging the technique of a primitive wish even in the absence of the contact apparatus. Those instinctually driven activities which are concerned with libidinal ties to a love-object pursue complete gratification by means of shifts in object, to a lesser extent in role and also in contact apparatus. This facility of shifting elements in the instinctual pattern is peculiarly human, and, together with the freedom from seasonal triggering, a freedom accomplished by repression and displacement, distinguishes human from animal erotic instinctual behaviour.

#### E. SUMMARY

I have attempted to review the theory of the erotic instincts and to include some original thoughts and some of the data of ethology. After describing displacement behaviour in vertebrates and proposing the existence of a unitary erotic instinct in mammals, comprising all instinctual behaviour in which a second individual of the same species participates, I

have suggested that, in man, the progressive evolution in maturational sequence of patterns of instinctual behaviour is facilitated by the displacement phenomenon activated by an inhibition such as primary repression. A consequence of this type of maturation is that not only do the infantile patterns continue in an unremitting state of activity, but the adult patterns which supersede them and which are forced into action by the repression of the infantile forces remain constantly active so that instinctual behaviour in man is freed from the seasonal fluctuations which dominate the instinctual behaviour of the lower animals.

I have proposed further that instinctual drives and the primitive, unconscious wishes in which they are conceptualized contain the following elements: subject, object, contact apparatus, role and technique. Of these, the concept of technique is original, and it is discussed in detail. It refers essentially to the specific method by which the instinctual fulfilment is to be achieved. The combination of technique, role, and contact apparatus corresponds to instinctual aim in current terminology. It is peculiar to human instinctual organization that any of the series of elements in each category may be combined with any others in the other categories, depending on constitutional endowment and the individual's experience. Because of this tremendous variability in form and because of the consistency of activation, human instinctual behaviour is not limited to rigid patterns evoked intermittently by internal needs or to responses to external demands, but rather maintains a constant pressure leading to numberless varieties of constructive work and libidinal co-operation.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) BEACH, FRANK A. *Hormones and Behavior*. (New York: Hoeber, 1948.)
- (2) BENEDEK, W. T. *Studies in Psychosomatic Medicine: Psychosexual Functions in Women*. (New York: Ronald, 1952.)
- (3) BOLK, L. *Das Problem der Menschwerdung*. (Jena, 1926.)
- (4) BURNS, E. *Sex Life of Wild Animals*. (New York: Rinehart, 1953.)
- (5) FORD, C. S., and BEACH, FRANK A. *Patterns of Sexual Behavior*. (New York: Harper, 1951.)
- (6) FREUD, S. 'Dynamics of the Transference', *Collected Papers*, 1912, 2.
- (7) — 'The Unconscious', *Collected Papers*, 1915, 4.
- (8) — *An Outline of Psychoanalysis*. (New York: Norton, 1942.)
- (9) — (1905). *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality*. (London: Imago Publishing Co., 1949.)
- (10) — (1913). *Totem and Taboo*. (New York: Norton, 1952.)
- (11) KLÜVER, H., and BUCY, P. C. 'Preliminary Analysis of Functions of the Temporal Lobe in Monkeys', *Arch. of Neurol. Psychiat.* (Chicago), 42 Dec. 1939, pp. 979-1000.
- (12) LORENZ, K. *King Solomon's Ring*. (New York: Crowell, 1952.)
- (13) — *Man Meets Dog*. (London: Methuen, 1954.)

(14) MACLEAN and DELGADO, J. M. R. 'Electrical and Chemical Stimulation of Frontotemporal Portion of Limbic System in the Waking Animal', *EEG Clin. Neurol.*, **5**, 1953, pp. 91-100.

(15) NUNBERG, H. 'Synthetic Function of the Ego.' In *Practice and Theory of Psychoanalysis*. (New York: Nervous and Mental Disease Monographs, 1948.)

(16) RÓHEIM, G. *Psychoanalysis and Anthropology*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1950.)

(17) SCHREINER, L., and KLING, A. 'Effects of Castration in Hypersexual Behavior Induced by Rhinencephalic Injury in Cat'. *Arch. Neurol.*

*Psychiat. (Chicago)*, **72**, 1954, pp. 180-186.

(18) SILLMAN, L. 'The Genesis of Man', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, **34**, Part III, 1953.

(19) TINBERGEN, N. *The Study of Instinct*. (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1951.)

(20) ——— *Social Behaviour in Animals*. (London: Methuen, 1953.)

(21) ——— *The Herring Gull's World*. (London: Collins, 1953.)

(22) WEYL, S. 'Retardation and Psychoanalysis.' Read before the N.Y. Psychoanalytic Society, 1955.

(Received 16 October, 1956)



# THE PRECOGNITIVE CULTURAL INGREDIENTS OF SCHIZOPHRENIA

By

JAMES CLARK MOLONEY, BIRMINGHAM, MICHIGAN

In the earliest eras of human existence, man never considered himself distinct from the world around him. He never felt separated from the ground upon which he walked, or from the trees that brushed against him. He was at one with the wind that lashed his hair and the rain that wet his skin. He was mountain and he was himself. He was one with the sky overhead, with the ocean that rolled against the beaches, with the rocks that mounted on the reefs. He and nature were confluent. His past and his future were contemporaneous with the air he breathed. For him there was only today.

The rocks, the trees, the rivers, the mountains, the caverns, the oceans, and the hummocks of earth were alive, invested by man with a human spirit. Even the animals were human. In this world the lowly snake could come to represent a king, a god.

When the soft yellow haze of summer hung lazily over the plains and valleys, ancient man lived a life of serenity (6). It was turbulence that frightened him, and the intensity of his terror varied with the degree to which his world was disturbed. Earthquakes, avalanches, volcanoes, eclipses, floods, tidal waves were terrifying not only because they were severe but because they were unexpected, and to primitive man even these scourges of nature were human.

Not only did the violent upheavals of nature frighten the early man, but the day's minor changes aroused his uneasiness.

Fear, as in modern man, might be sudden in its onset, or a drawn-out matter—drawn out into a chronic state of tension. To define this latter state, I know no better word than 'suspense'. Suspense is unique. It is so unendurable that in the end it impels one to some sort of action. Man must either flee the source of his suspense or of his fear, or destroy the situation that frightens him.

The source of fear may not actually endanger life. An eclipse of the sun occurring at midday terrified primitive man. The gloom of night slowly and stealthily creeping over the damp earth created fears of lower voltage—created suspense. The primitives greeted night as if it were a horrific living being.

It is not my intention to catalogue all the kinds of supposed danger that beset earliest man. I am concerned here with those features of the sun, of fire, of light, and of darkness, that he considered hostile to his interests. And, to be sure, not all aspects of the sun, fire, and light were looked upon as threats to man. Often the sun was envisioned as a friendly agent.

Not in primitive times alone, but even today, the sun is a mother figure. Since World War II, Amaterasu, the sun goddess of Japan, has been known to most of us (11, p. 417). The earliest dwellers in Japan, the Ainu, worshipped a female sun (2, p. 63). Perhaps it is the sun's warmth that is its desired element, and the gender assigned to it is not intrinsically important. When warmth is the quality most cherished, the sun is actually a female, a mother figure, no matter though folklore and religion invest it with a male title and picture it as a male figure.

Vegetation and warmth are always associated in the minds of men. Lush tropical verdure is attributed to the heat of the equatorial sun. I take the following from a recent article by A. J. Levin (20): 'The relationship between . . . *Sodeh*—field—and . . . *Shodaim*—breasts—is rather clearly indicated. . . . The fact that the breasts and the fields are linguistically related is historical fact, since in the course of man's development the products of the field replace the milk of the breast as a principal source of food in the early childhood stage.'

There are so many literary allusions to the sun's rôle as a promoter and provider of vegetation usable as food that this needs little attention

here. The sun, Bacchus, and Ceres are mentioned in the same breath, and those of us who have eked out a frigid existence in the uttermost reaches of the north temperate or south temperate zones are aware of the sun's importance as the provider of warmth, green plants, nutrition—and hope.

There have always been sun-seekers who follow the sun, and have no tolerance for the miasmic glooms that sadden the foggy areas of earth's surface. The weak, the sick, the maimed—even people who are simply exhausted—seek to lie in the sun's embrace. Such pursuit of the sun doggedly persists even though it is known that, for some human beings, the rays of the sun are harmful.

The analogy of the sun with a mother is inescapable. Unfortunately, however, sunlight is not always available, and as the mother's breast often fails, so also may the sun. And this is frightening. It is not difficult to imagine the predicament of the helpless hungry infant unable to procure milk from his mother's breast. The more frightened he becomes the more he needs to be nourished—the more he needs the reassuring tender caress of his mother. The absent sun is needed for precisely the same reason; to dispel suspense—the suspense incurred by the threat of abandonment.

Babies resort to fantastic devices to alleviate the anxiety arising from the absence of the mother's breast. It seems evident that the oral incorporation of the depriving breast is a preferred method. Obviously the baby does not actually devour the frustrating breast. When denied nourishment or love, it becomes furious and attacks the breast with the toothless gums if teeth are as yet absent. Perhaps rage—excited by fear—is never present without the impulse to bite. Before the development of the conscious ego and its more accurate measuring devices, this biting leaves its mark in the form of an early memory of a mistaken feeling of having devoured the object of the rage. This is cannibalism.

Such a cannibalistic attempt to dispel suspense may be attended by a feeling of being larger than the object devoured. This feeling is representable by the phenomenon of micropsia. The object 'eaten' is now contained within the cannibal, surrounded by his body. In a fantastic sense it is now subject to the cannibal's will. No longer is the breast an elusive outside object that frightens not only because it is unobtainable, but also because of the

ferocity of the reflex reactionary rages occasioned by its absence. Where there is no oral inter-relational harmony with the breast, the cannibal, by devouring the breast and depositing it in the prison of the colonic labyrinth, develops the illusion of an anal autonomy. The breast is a metonymy for the mother; so oral incorporation comes to mean the introjection of the mother.

This sounds fantastic. But I hope to illustrate the point so adequately that no doubts will remain in the most sceptical mind.

There are two methods by which the child attempts to rid himself of the suspense occasioned by an unresponsive mother. At times he devours the mother; at times he allows himself to be devoured by her. Perhaps because he is used to being devoured by the mother, he prefers this way of escaping from anxiety. In this special relationship between the two—i.e. when he feels he is being devoured by her—the infant entertains a feeling of smallness compared with the mother, who seems gigantic. Such a relationship with the mother's size is analogous to the phenomenon of macropsia.

It is not for us here to determine why some individuals feel larger than their mother, and thus are able to devour her, while others feel smaller, and thus are able to be eaten by her. I would hazard a guess, however, that the cannibalized mother is a 'willy-nilly' mother who actually makes very little impression upon her offspring except for the psychic residue left by her absence. The big, devouring mother, on the other hand, never fails to impress her child with her mammoth size and power and the consistency of her demands upon him. In each instance the impact with the mother takes place before the ego is well enough developed for the child to evaluate and integrate the mother's actual meaningfulness to him.

Many readers will doubt whether any human being is accustomed to being eaten up by the mother. However, I will defer till later in this article the proof that some individuals allay anxiety by a fantasy of being devoured by the mother figure.

The destiny that befalls the mother befalls the sun also. The sun in some circumstances was devoured by the primitives, and in others the primitives were devoured by the sun.

Either position, that of devouring the sun or of being devoured by it, presupposes the absence of the ego boundaries. This is characteristic of primitive existence. Early man's



coevality with his natural environment has already been described (21, p. 2). From this, one might conclude that modern man does not suffer from an undefined self, and that he at all times knows himself to be distinct from the objects and persons in the world around him. This is a naive assumption.

\* \* \*

Skin contact with the mother, particularly with a motherly mother, advances the development of the skin ego. An accurate and objectively correct memory picture of the skin surfaces—in substance, an accurate memory picture of the body boundaries—is indispensable to the development of a sense of reality. To promote the proper memory picture of the body boundaries, the mother should stimulate all the baby's skin, not merely those areas (such as mouth, anus, vagina, urethra) which, owing to their physiological functions, call forth specific and exaggerated maternal attention. All the baby's body surfaces should be stimulated, fondled, and caressed by a relaxed, motherly mother. The very young baby should be held against the mother's bare skin; for there is perhaps no other way in which the reality of the mother's body is so accurately and consistently registered by the child. Consistent contact with the mother's body provides, through the sensory end-organs of the baby's skin, a valuable and unchanging picture of her actual texture. So important is the skin ego—the memorable skin schema—that everything possible should be done to develop it.

Still speaking of our own culture, let us indicate what may occur in connexion with the baby's other senses, in order to emphasize the importance of consistent skin contact between mother and infant. In the case of the visual sense, the light rays striking the rods and cones of the child's retina are neither the mother herself, nor even a properly consistent fetishistic substitute for her. When the light rays are reflected upon the baby's retina the child may be confronted with a confusing variety of mothers: bare-headed or hatted, rouged or unrouged, clothed or naked—some so extremely different from previous images that the baby may not even recognize them as being the same person he has previously seen. Moreover, the source of light may alter the mother's appearance. She may be presented to the child's eye as an effulgent being one moment, a silhouette the next.

Thus, through the visual sense alone, the baby draws a constantly varying, potentially inconsistent, and hence incomplete fetishistic representation of his mother.

The same situation exists in the case of the olfactory sense. The sensory end-organs in the mucous membrane of the infant's nose may be presented, as in the case of the retina, with fragmentary and conflicting fetishes for the mother, since only the odours which emanate from her, not the mother herself, are actually present at the mucous membrane surface. The baby may feel that he is surrounded by a swarm of mothers: the 'B.O.' mother, the 'Yardley' mother, the 'Palmolive' mother, the 'Pears' mother, confusing in the inconsistency of their various smells.

Once again, through the auditory sense, according to the changes wrought by the mother's varying emotions and even her clothing, the baby may draw from the sounds of her voice and dress another confusing series of impressions, other fetishistic representations of a variety of mothers: the angry-voiced, the contrite and dulcet-toned, the silent wool-clad, the rustling taffeta-clad, the crackling starched cotton-clad. The sounds may be distant or near-at-hand or an angry outburst at 50 feet, followed by contrite murmurs in the baby's ear.

If the mother is not a breast-feeder, even the taste of her, as conceptualized by the baby's formula, may change with every feeding.

Whether the mother is represented to the baby through eye, ear, or nose, if he is not also in frequent contact with the mother's skin, he does not experience the real mother. However, when the skin of the infant is thoroughly stimulated by contact with the motherly mother's own body (and not merely by a ray of light, an odour, or a sound wave), there is a consistency and reality in the relationship which undoubtedly advances the adequate development of the child's body schema memory. The texture and temperature of the mother's skin varies little from one contact to another. Because of a skin-to-skin relationship with the mother which is consistent and real, rather than fetishistic and full of vagaries, the baby's sense of reality, his efficient skin ego, develops properly.

However, this ideal relationship between mother and child is seldom found. Frankly, there is nothing that the child can do actually to materialize the hallucination of the absent or physically removed mother in a concrete or



tangible way at his eyes, ears or nose (unless it is to smell his own faeces in connexion with coprophagia or coprophagic fantasies as outlined by Spitz (27). However, the child *can* implement the hallucinations of the absent mother at the skin merely by some sort of self-caressing. It is not surprising that the absent mother induces two major types of self-caressing and self-fondling that are more universally represented than others. I allude to thumb-sucking, in which the child's own thumb becomes a substitute for his mother's breast, and to infantile masturbation.

It is not at all strange that masturbation should play an important part in self-mothering or self-fondling, because the exquisiteness of the genital sensation and the accessibility of the genital organ forms an excellent preconscious substitute for maternal satisfaction, the need for which is occasioned by the mother's absence.

During early infancy when the sensory channels are unevenly and inadequately stimulated the nascent ego is fragmented. Each ego-fragment becomes invested with an autonomy that is conceived as being holistic by the part of the memory process representing the autonomous fragment. In considering fragmentation we might think of vision ego, smell ego, hearing ego, taste ego, or feeling ego.

In these circumstances, since the ego is not knit into a structured whole, there is no memory-represented structured whole. Consequently, distortions and fragmentations occur in the memory body schema, and one fragment can become a representative for the whole or for another part of the ego. The eye ego, for instance, can represent the mouth ego; such terms as 'I devoured her with my eyes', and other similar phrases abound in all languages and demonstrate the widespread nature of this psychic phenomenon.

Using the skin as a self-mothering, self-caressing device provides a pattern for the process of materializing the mother. It is clear from information gained from schizophrenics that most of these individuals can make a flash contact with or become momentarily aware of the significant outside person, object, or situation and then quickly identify with their own inner significant object, person, or situation, so that the real, external thing becomes practically non-existent. To fend off anticipation of another dreadful experience (such as loss of the mother) which might occur if an actual relationship were established with

another person, the individual *becomes* the other person as well as being himself. He meets the situation in a flash by a repetitive employment of the same antidote that was used during the helpless days of his infancy to neutralize the baleful dependence upon his mother when he first discovered her frightening unpredictability. The antidote, in fact, is in keeping with our traditional understanding of psychodynamics and actually represents the biograph of the individual's first effective method of meeting and dealing with maternal rejection. He duplicates a longitudinal section of his history after the initial part of the picture is vitalized by contact with some meaningful person.

All analysts have seen patients fight off transference by some typical and personalized self-indulgence. During the analytic hour this self-indulgence may be represented by smoking, massaging the forehead, rubbing the arms, wringing the hands, leg-wriggling, and so on. Outside the hour the transference may be opposed by precipitation through an acting-out of the original narcissistic devices. These devices may be represented by increased drinking, masturbation, sexual promiscuity, excessive eating, excessive smoking, and so forth.

Although I shall not enumerate all the processes by which I have arrived at these concepts, it is my opinion that the actual presence of a relaxed, motherly mother is necessary to provide the general skin-massage that is all-important to the development of a skin-ego or body-schema. From this general fondling the baby develops a proper memory image of his body surfaces, which in turn affords him an accurate picture of that which is not a part of himself. A proper memory image and adequate skin-ego provide him with an accurate knowledge of spatial relationships. Without it he will resort to the earlier narcissistic techniques of replacing the mother with a part of himself.

In this connection Piaget says: 'The hereditary factors of the first group are structural and are connected with the constitution of our nervous system and of our sensory organs. Thus we perceive certain physical radiations, but not all of them, and matter only of a certain size, etc. Now these known structural factors influence the building up of our most fundamental concepts. For instance, our intuition of space is certainly conditioned by them, even if, by means of thought, we succeed in working out trans-intuitive and purely deductive types of space' (23).



To elaborate, it can also be said that there is no doubt that individuals can 'caress' their own ears by their own efforts. They may talk, hum, or whistle to themselves, enhancing the narcissistic effectiveness of such endeavour with appropriate daydreams. This is perhaps no different in its basic intent of providing security from caressing of one's own skin. We might concede that humming, whistling, or singing to oneself provides an ear-caress, an ear-comforting such as was originally provided by the mother. In fact, one of my patients, whenever she was in a difficult situation that caused her to desire the presence and assistance of her efficient mother, would hum Brahms' *Lullaby*. Her mother had sung it to her as far back as she could remember; now *she* was both mother and child—the mother who sang the lullaby and the child sung to by the mother. In her time of need she played both parts.

As has been implied above, this ear-indulgence of humming to oneself occurs when an especially suited or predisposed personality is confronted with a situation that calls forth a need for the mother who is not there. The predisposed individual plays the part of the needed mother by humming to himself. It might just as well have been a need to taste food or alcohol, to inhale tobacco smoke, to massage his own forehead, to scratch his own itching, to smell perfumes (or his own faeces), or to masturbate. These actions all have the same significance—the need to mother oneself for security's sake. It is not surprising that a hummer who has lost himself in a tune is at times just as embarrassing and annoying to similarly disposed rigid individuals as a masturbator who masturbates in public.

\* \* \*

The foregoing remarks on self-indulgence are intended to indicate a trend. In this paper, however, I am anxious to indicate the similarity or connexion between cannibalism and seeing the light of the sun, and/or being seen by the sun.

As I have said, in those individuals who have not enjoyed a warm and intimate skin relationship with a motherly mother's skin, distortions in the reports of the four senses develop as a consequence. When the sensory end-organs of the skin of the entire body are not adequately stimulated, of the four senses actually in use undoubtedly the sense of sight offers the most important avenue of linkage between the mother and her child.

In fact, if the infant's skin is not caressed and touched by the mother's skin, the eye may assume astounding properties. For instance, if the child utilizes a phantasy of devouring the elusive mother and still has no skin contact with her, the devouring is accomplished by the eyes. Because the eyes are more stimulated than any of the other senses, they become involved in the gestalt and in the memory of the act of incorporating the mother.

In my opinion, the fact that the senses are still dissociated and are not integrated by the skin sense, offers a real problem for the infant in his attempts at maturation and homeostasis. This is particularly significant when we realize that the baby is incapable of gaining security through looking at the mother during the earliest days of his life, because he is blind, or, more accurately, has not yet learned to focus.

At any rate, the capacity to use the eyes to devour the mother can be and has been employed against the sun. The person who attempts to devour the sun must feel himself larger than the sun. This artificial emotion stems from the dissociation of the senses and from a consequent distortion of the feelings stored as memories, and brings about a situation analogous to micropsia.

But before turning to the matter of eating the sun or being eaten by it, it is necessary to know a little more about the mother-child relationship. We must understand quite thoroughly the concept of the mother as a cosmos before we can understand the concept expressed by the phantasy of eating up the sun. It is not enough to dispense with the transitions with a wave of the hand by saying that the cannibalized sun is analogous to the mother's cannibalized breast. We must also understand the intermediary dynamics of the relationship of mother to infant which clarify the psychic evaluation of the sun as a breast. Piaget says: 'Verbal or cogitative intelligence is based on practical or sensorimotor intelligence which in turn depends on acquired and recombined habits and associations. These presuppose, furthermore, the system of reflexes whose connexion with the organism's anatomical and morphological structure is apparent. A certain continuity exists, therefore, between intelligence and the purely biological processes of morphogenesis and adaptation to the environment' (23).

The term cosmos may confuse some readers, because it usually connotes majestic spaces,



comets, stars, interplanetary systems, the universe, and even the fourth dimension. However, there are tangible concrete reasons for including the concept of the cosmos as a mother in human evaluations. To quote Freud:

'A child's first erotic object is the mother's breast that feeds him, and love in its beginnings attaches itself to the satisfaction of the need for food. To start with, the child certainly makes no distinction between the breast and his own body; when the breast has to be separated from his body and shifted to the "outside" because he so often finds it absent, it carries with it, now that it is an "object", part of the original narcissistic cathexis. This first object subsequently becomes completed into the whole person of the child's mother, who not only feeds him but also looks after him and thus arouses in him many other physical sensations pleasant and unpleasant. By her care of the child's body she becomes his first seducer. In these two relations lies the root of a mother's importance, unique, without parallel, laid down unalterably for a whole lifetime, as the first and strongest love-object and as a prototype of all later love relations—for both sexes' (12, pp. 89-90).

It is evident, from the welter of evidence already accumulated, that the infant at first is incapable of distinguishing his mother from himself. If the mother for any reason whatsoever causes any type of consistent disturbance to her newborn, she paralyzes the infant's outgoing efforts, obstructs his maturational emancipation from herself, and prevents him from developing clear-cut ego-boundaries.

When the mother does not provide the proper dosage of maternal love, fails, in short, to provide the proper maternal climate, the maternal aspects of the primary unit (mother-child) become psychically adherent to the child's body. The mother is not, as it were, peeled off from the child's skin. The resultant memory of the skin picture is, in certain areas, that of the earliest relationship with the mother—a memory of the time when the child did not consider his mother as distinct from himself.

As I have pointed out, such a maternal disturbance of the child's skin memory occurred before the development of the conscious aspects of the ego. Using the term 'maternal disturbance' implies a much stronger and perhaps even a more sinister meaning than 'lack of proper maternal dosage' (31, p. 67). If the mother is mature and is not agitated by an

adverse reality, she will neither neglect the infant's needs nor smother it with unwanted attentions. She will supply the proper dosage of mother-love, her motivation springing from her heart rather than from her mind. A proper mother permits her newborn to attempt new skills. After a period of trial the child may fail to accomplish the task he has set for himself. A proper mother will watch for a signal that he wants some help from her. When signalled, she will come to his aid. This is an example of correct maternal dosage. The mother neither neglects the child nor smothers his efforts to learn for himself.

If these observations seem repetitive, I would defend the repetition on the grounds of my concern that the reader becomes fully convinced of the dynamic aspects of the process of normal maturation, and normal emancipation from the mother. In normal maturation the child becomes aware that he is 'self' and that his mother is 'not self'. I shall elaborate later on the fact that, more accurately speaking, anything that has been once experienced is never again exactly and completely 'not self'.

When a maternal disturbance occurs before the advent of consciousness, the child develops serious defects in his feelings about what is 'self' and what is 'not self'. The 'not self' (mother), if regarded as unassailable and incapable of being controlled or influenced, is still felt to be in some way a part of the self or at least not wholly 'not self'. It may be conceived as beside the self—as witness the expression, 'I am beside myself'. The memory of the skin surfaces under faulty maternal conditions contains intermingled 'self' and 'not self' elements. The 'not self' is not peeled off from the 'self'. Because these actions are preverbal and even preconscious, this memory area becomes practically inaccessible. Through continuing growth the development of memory representations of mother systems by-passes the defective skin memory system. And, unfortunately, the proper skin ego is seldom recaptured and reconstructed into its proper relationship with other body memory elements that go to make up the total memory system. Because of the disturbance in the memory skin-ego representatives, defective spatial relationships with outside objects also occur.

There is another reason why spatial relationships with things in the outer world are defective. For ultimate clarification, the dynamics of this



other reason will have to be developed step by step. Some of these steps are analogous to or parallel with the steps or procedures that occur in depersonalization. Before experiencing the depersonalization, the predisposed individual exhibits herself to another person. In the case that I have in mind, the woman, a model, exhibited herself to a man. Then she would make a flash contact with the man she had elected to become the voyeur of her body. At that precise moment she became the man who gazed at her, as well as being the woman gazed at by the man. She usually preferred to exhibit her buttocks. This trend of events always culminated with the woman feeling depersonalized. This depersonalization is important to remember, in order to understand one particular aspect of the concept of the cosmic mother.

To prepare the foundation better for an understanding of these dynamics, I will describe an analogous situation that occurred in the case of the son of one of my patients. The mother, my patient, was quite schizoid, though her schizoid trends were not of institutional magnitude. She preferred her own company. In privacy she nursed herself with the 'milk' of her own daydreams. She resented intrusions upon them. She gave perfunctory attention to her duties, completing them as soon as possible so that she could go back to her self-nursing through the employment of masturbation and fantasy. She did not want her little son around because he interrupted the formation of her fantasies.

Early in infancy the son recognized her rejection of him. It was noted that when he was five months old, even though he was a breast-feeder, he would put his thumb in his mouth whenever the mother took him into her arms. From my own observations of other similar situations, I assume that the baby, even at this tender age, became a mother to himself through his thumbsucking activity. He became the mother who put the breast (thumb) into his mouth and also the baby who sucked on the breast (thumb). He had a world all to himself. This act of self-mothering occurred whenever the real mother picked him up, to short-circuit his mother out of existence. He became a mother to himself. It is obvious that at this time in the child's life he had not differentiated his mother from himself. The mother existed at his own skin; there was no space intervening between himself and her, or at least between himself and herself in his psychic reality, in his

psychic evaluation of the mother-child primary unit.

\* \* \*

In the current and past considerations of the concept of the cosmic mother, it seems obvious that the subject of mensuration of the outer world has not been given sufficient attention. There are many comparisons that warrant further study, such as larger than, smaller than, nearer than, farther than, lighter than, heavier than, blacker than, earlier than, later than, etc. The comparison considered in this frame of reference must be a standard, that is, it must be a standard in so far as the individual is considered. It is a standard for comparison. It is a fixed point or orientation point that is used by the individual for the purpose of testing an unknown so that he may arrive at a more accurate knowledge of either the intrinsic or borrowed nature of that unknown.

Therefore a standard must be established in the memory that can be utilized in making a comparison. Is an object farther away, or is it much smaller? Is a person early for a meeting, late for a meeting, or on time, or he is earlier than John Brown, or later than Tom Smith? To solve these seemingly simple problems, it is necessary to consider the mind at birth. The mind at birth is a blank slate. There are then no standards that can be used for making comparisons, because the existence of standards has not been experienced and they have not been retained as memorable situations. In the precognitive mind the ability to measure has not been established because there are no standards to be used as comparisons. The differentiation of what is 'self' from what is 'not self' has not yet occurred. Consciousness with its better integration provides means for making measurements. Because of the consciousness, reason can be employed to evaluate time and space interrelationships. Using a concept that had been previously taken into the mind, the consciousness can establish by the intellectual process what is larger or smaller than the self. The intellectual process can determine whether the individual is late or early for an appointment.

However, this does not mean that these space and time evaluations will receive from the emotions an approval of the answer given by the intellect. This is important because it means, and this has been affirmatively established, that a person can think one way about something and feel another way about the same thing. A



person can intellectually know that he is physically larger than his father, but at the same time the information from his emotions will establish the opposite state of affairs, will establish that he is smaller than the father. This situation of knowing one thing and feeling another is applicable to the mind after it has established the means of evaluating the environment and after it has established consciousness.

However, before the original standards or concepts have been stored in the memory, having been imprinted upon the blank state of the cerebral cortex, there is a precognitive existence that represents a togetherness with the mother. If this existence is traumatized, a paralysis of the maturative expansiveness of the individual may result. Because the trauma occurs precognitively, the individual is not provided with the means, with the instruments for the measurement of the adversary—the mother. The reactions primed by the mother are not discriminations; they are rather a reflex holistic type of response. Because of the absence of the necessary tools for measuring time and space relationships, the mother is emotionally felt to exist in some special kind of juxtaposition to the baby, the kind of juxtaposition being determined by the predominant nature of the relationship which was congealed or solidified in the baby's memory by the traumatic experience. The baby is trapped in a gestalt in which all the significant agents and presences are represented, and the trap contains a natural tendency toward immutability and can be set in action or sprung by either one or all of the agents or presences that are meaningful in the gestalt.

In consequence of the gestalt that is precipitated before the advent of cognition, there persist emotional feelings towards the outer world, that are now calibrated by the measuring devices of consciousness. Even if these tools are present, the feeling tone toward the world might be one of frustration, fear, and/or anger. These feelings, which are for the most part linked in some sort of inseparable unity, are present even though the intellect reports that there is no need to feel frustrated, frightened, angry. It is a matter of feeling tone, and this feeling tone takes precedence over the intellect. It is the same feeling that the individual entertained as a baby toward the mother. The feeling that was hostile precognitively, and may well have been associated with fanciful notions of mastery through oral incorporation, is hostile

post-cognitively. In the post-cognitive era, the continuity of mother becomes invested in the world that is at one's skin or at one's fingertips. Special variations in the relationship with the mother might feature an eye, an ear, a skin, a smell, or a taste dominance. The dominance, regardless of its type, is a perpetuation of the precognitive featured relationship with the traumatizing mother.

After the world at the fingertips has become the continuity of precognitive mother, the world becomes the cosmic mother. Special features of this cosmic mother might again be featured, as the featuring took place in the precognitive era. If the eyes are precognitively featured as the important connecting links with the precognitive mother, then the sun, the source of light, will become meaningful as one of the cosmic mother's most significant aspects. Attempts at controlling the sun will follow the same patterns by which the individual attempted eye control of the mother. And, as we shall see, this attempt at eye control of the mother, cosmic mother, the sun, might lead, in those individuals who are existentialistic because of the absence of reconstructed ego boundaries, to the delusion that they have devoured the sun.

The ancient concept of participation (17, 9, 10), naturally involving ideas of animism, employed the psychic processes of projection and displacement. Because of the projection of animal deglutition upon astronomical phenomena, that physiological process is recoverable in the ancient myths that deal with the swallowing of the sun.

The absence of the sun struck terror into the hearts of the ancients. To rid themselves of this, they needed to account for nocturnal and eclipse absences of the sun. Accordingly, they subjected the sun's absence to a kind of ritualistic compulsive doing and undoing. To provide peace of mind the absence of the sun was accounted for and congealed into a myth and thereby 'controlled'. The ancients 'superiorized' the sun. They believed that they could predict its course and its destiny. They accounted for its absence by believing that it was devoured by an animal, a god, or a human being. The sun reappeared in the sky each morning after having seared its way out of the animal's entrails.

Róheim (24, p. 164) cites an Eskimo tale in which the hero (in my estimation, the sun) disappears down the open mouth of an ice-



covered bear (the darkness of night). When the hero emerges from the bear, he is hairless and scalpless. This, in my view, refers to the baldness of the early morning sun, which is without rays (hair). Referring to W. Jockelson's *The Koryak*, Róheim says: 'A Koryak myth relates the tricks played by Miti (his wife) on Creator. She lay down on the ground spreading her legs upward. She thrust her head into the snow and grew so large that she obstructed the way. Creator went right into her anus as if it were a house. While in her anus he became bald-headed' (24, p. 165). This myth, to Róheim, has phallic significance. To my mind, however, in the light of the concept of the sun's being regarded as *Creator* in many early religions, this myth is an indication of the entry of the sun into the alimentary tract (anus) of the wife, here symbolizing the darkness of night. Note, again, that upon reappearance through the supposed moving of the bowels of darkness, the creator or sun is bald, or ray-less, like the sun at dawning.

Róheim further relates: 'Kamakaju in Ysabel cuts himself out of the inside of a kingfish and when he gets out he says "Where am I?" At that moment *the sun rises in the east*, and tells Kamakaju, "Don't get into my way or you will be burnt." He follows the sun up to the sky and he teaches the sun's children to eat cooked food' (24, p. 165). The implication seems clear that the kingfish represents darkness, and there is an equation of the hero with the sun, since they emerge simultaneously. Especially in the light of this equation, I find an alimentary significance—the sun devouring, or being devoured—in the reference to food.

I offer a substitute interpretation for the one Róheim places upon the Chilcotin and Shuswap myth of Little Dog: 'Little Dog [sun], warned by his wife not to go in a certain direction, disobeys and is swallowed [here an oral implication] by a moose [the darkness of night] standing in the middle of the water. Little Dog makes a fire [sun's fire or light] inside, cuts the animal's heart out and eats it, thus killing the moose [i.e. the mother (darkness) dies when the sun gets out]' (24, p. 165). There is also, in the myth, a reference to Little Dog's approaching a stone door which shuts and opens, which I interpret as a reference to alternating day and night, or sunlight and darkness (24, p. 165).

The Ainu tell the story of the devil that planned to eat the sun. 'When God created the world the evil one did all he could to

frustrate His designs, especially with regard to human beings. Now, after all things were made, the devil perceived that men could not possibly live without the light- and warmth-giving sun. He therefore made up his mind to destroy that beautiful and useful work of creation, and thereby injure men. So he got up early one morning, long before the sun had risen, with the intention of swallowing it. But God knew of his designs, and made a crow to circumvent them. When the sun was rising the evil one opened his mouth to swallow it; but the crow, who was lying in wait, flew down his throat, and so saved it. Hence the crows, remembering the benefits they once conferred upon the human race, have an idea that they may do just as they like with men, and live upon the food they provide for the sustenance of themselves and families' (2, pp. 68-9).

Maui, a Polynesian of heroic proportions, trapped and beat the sun until it was crippled. 'Maui "observed that the time between the sun's rising and setting was very short, and he said to his brothers, "Let us tie the sun, that it may not go so fast, that man may have time to provide food for himself." But his brothers said, "Man cannot go near to the sun on account of the heat." Maui said, "You have seen the many acts that I have performed. I have taken the form of a bird, and again resumed that of a man, while you have ever had the form of men. And now, my brothers, I can do what I propose, and even greater acts than this." His brothers consented, and commenced to plait ropes. . . . When these had been made Maui took his weapon, made of the jaw-bone of his progenitor . . . and his brothers took their weapons and the ropes, and they . . . journeyed till they had got near where the sun came up. Maui, addressing his brothers, said, "Beware you do not surprise and unnecessarily startle the sun; but let his head and shoulders be fully within the noose, and be ready when I call to pull the opposite ends of the ropes. When the sun is caught, I will rise and beat him. But let the ropes be securely fastened that he may be held for some time. And, O young men! do not heed his cry of pain. Then we will let him go."'

"The sun came up like blazing fire, and when his head and shoulders had entered the noose Maui encouraged his brothers to action by saying, "Now pull." They did so, and the sun drew his limbs together with a twitch. Maui rushed at him with his weapon, and scarce had the sun time to call before Maui was belabouring



him, and continued to do so for some time. When they let him go he went away crippled, and in the anguish of his pain he uttered another of his names, Tama-nui-a-te-ra (great child of the sun), and said, 'Why am I so beaten by you, O man? I will have my revenge on you for having dared to beat the great child of the sun.' He departed on his way, but was unable to travel so fast as before." (7, pp. 45-6).

In more than one myth the sun escapes from the belly of night or of Hades by his own aggressive action. This latter idea is presented in many of the myths described by Róheim, and in this Zulu myth unearthed by me:

'A . . . very curious conception of the spirit-world is found in the Zulu tale of *Unamana Bosele*. Two children and afterwards their mother were swallowed by an elephant. "When she reached the elephant's stomach, she saw large forests and great rivers, and many high lands; on one side there were many rocks; and there were many people who had built their villages there; and many dogs and many cattle; all was there inside the elephant; she saw, too, her own children sitting there."

'In short, as Tylor points out, it is a description of the *Zulu Hades*. . . . Instead of being released by a deliverer from outside, the woman cuts her way out of the elephant after feeding, with her children, on his internal organs. . . . And it came to pass, after a long time, that the elephant died' (32, pp. 198-9).

In my opinion this mother represents the sun. The elephant represents darkness, and its inside the gastro-intestinal tract of darkness. The elephant dies because darkness dies with the dawn of a new day. It dies when the sun escapes because it is the night, the darkness that disappears with the break of day.

The records contain other instances in which a mythological character has been swallowed by some type of animal. In these instances baldness and light play a prominent part. In relating these particular myths in which the swallowing of the central character is featured, the story of Jonah is described. Jonah was swallowed by a huge fish after he was tossed into the sea. Jonah was comfortable inside the fish because its stomach was large and there was a huge diamond (sun) in it that gave light. Later Jonah was transferred to another fish whose stomach was small and crowded with little fish. This fish vomited Jonah on to dry land (19, pp. 556-7).

And another sun myth is as follows: "... pre-

sently the Sun would bring it to pass by taking flesh in the womb of a virgin in the village of Gaucheta [Colombia, South America], causing her to conceive by the rays of the sun while she yet remained a virgin. These tidings were proclaimed through the region. And it so happened that the head man of the village named had two virgin daughters, each desirous that the miracle should become accomplished in her. These then began going out from their father's dwellings and garden-enclosure every morning at the first peep of dawn; and mounting one of the numerous hills about the village, in the direction of the sunrise, they disposed themselves in such a way that the first rays of the sun would be free to shine upon them. This going on for a number of days, it was granted the demon by divine permission (whose judgments are incomprehensible) that things should come to pass as he had planned, and in such fashion that one of the daughters became pregnant, as she declared, by the sun. Nine months and she brought into the world a large and valuable *hacuata*, which in their language is an emerald. The woman took this, and, wrapping it in cotton, placed it between her breasts, where she kept it a number of days, at the end of which time it was transformed into a living creature: all by order of the demon. The child was named Goranchacho, and he was reared in the household of the head man, his grandfather, until he was some twenty-four years of age." Then he proceeded in triumphant procession to the capital of the nation, and was celebrated throughout the provinces as the "Child of the Sun" (5, pp. 309-10). Freud comments on a similar set of dynamics (13, p. 291).

Other evidences of animism derived from the primitives' observation of human physiology are to be met with in historical, mythological, and religious records. The ancients knew that if something is swallowed by the body, it must of a necessity reappear again on the outside of the body. If the sun does not reappear as a result of its having burned its way out of the entrails of darkness, it reappears outside the body of darkness as a defecation or as a birth.

The following also refers to the animistic concept of the gastro-intestinal tract as darkness. But in this instance the sun passes under the earth. "... that the sun crosses a vast sea to reach the east was also known to the Armenians. . . . It is on this journey that the sun shines on the Armenian world of the dead as he did on



the Babylonian Aralu and on the Egyptian and Greek Hades. The following extract from an Armenian collection of folklore unites the sun's relation to Hades and to the subterranean ocean: "And at sunset the sun is the *portion* of the dead. It enters the sea and, passing under the earth, emerges in the morning at the other side" (1, pp. 49-50).

To be sure, abstract connotations of devouring in general and in particular of the sun being eaten up by the darkness are rife in the annals of mythology. I make no attempt to exhaust this aspect of the legendary records on animism. To illustrate the point in question, however, more examples are cited.

'... its obvious explanation is identification with Khnum, the guardian of the waters coming from the lower world and master of Hades. The sun at night-time is lost in Khnum's dark realm and unites with him' (22, p. 28).

'... the sun may also be thought to hide himself in the body of the heavenly cow during the night; so that he enters her mouth at evening and is born again from her womb in the morning' (22, p. 36).

The sinister aspects of the bowels of night are even synonymous with the dead aspects of filth and decay. 'As everyone in the spiritual world has garments in accordance with his intelligence, that is, in accordance with truths which are the source of intelligence, so those in the hells, because they have no truths, appear clothed in garments, but in *ragged, squalid, and filthy garments*. . . ' (30, p. 99).

'... we hear now of hell [which is the channel of night as derived from the animistic concept of the gastro-intestinal tract]: The *Atharvaveda* tells of it as the Nāraka Loka (in contrast with the Svarga Loka, the place of Yama), the abode of female goblins and sorceresses, the place of blind or black darkness. It is described in slight detail in its horror in that Veda (v. 19) and fully in the *Satapatha Brahmana* (XI. vi. I), where Bhrgu, son of Varuna, sees a vision of men cutting up men and men eating men . . . ' (18, p. 100).

And again the familiar theme is encountered: 'Yudhisthira, the only one of the Pāndavas to attain alive to heaven, was submitted to a final test before being permitted to join his brothers and the other heroes of old. Through illusion he was caused to see the tortures of the damned, for "hell must necessarily be seen by all kings" (*Mahabharata*, xviii. 27 ff). Passing through the repellent horrors of decay, Yudhis-

thira stands aghast at the torments which he beholds' (18, Pl. VIII).

I do not want to burden the reader with repetitions, but I wish to repeat that darkness, hell, and the insides of the gastro-intestinal tract are identical. Illustration after illustration of this theme is recoverable from the records (3, p. 365; 30, p. 390; 22, p. 39; 2, pp. 68-9).

One significant myth, dealing with the animistic concept of night as a colon, was recovered from Ainu records.

'Another legend . . . tells us that when the dogs [of Hell, Hades, Nether World] on one occasion discovered in the world of the departed a ghost [sun representative] from the upper world, they set up a great howling. Upon this the inhabitants, including the father and mother of the ghost, made offerings to *inao*, and set the refuse of their food outside the east end [where the sun rises] of the hut for the ghost to eat. He was very angry at having such dregs offered to him, and endeavoured to knock it all away; but the filthy stuff only flew into his bosom, and he could not get rid of it, try how he might. It was only after he emerged into the upper world of living men that the refuse offered him could be got rid of' (2, p. 572).

Rather than become involved in any argument about what constitutes a religion and what a schizophrenic delusion, I content myself with describing certain schizophrenic *processes* that are analogous to the sun-devouring myth material of the ancients. These instances are excerpted from my own files and from biographical material occurring in various cultural records.

A patient believed that there was a searing white-hot ball in his chest. Its periphery was a contracting iron that contained the gaseous interior, threatening to *expand and to break its* restraining membrane. At times the patient believed that this ball occupied his brain.

He was never certain how the ball got into him. But he did recount an instance when he was poisoned by an exposure to the sun. And, as a matter of fact, he often experienced distress after he had been out in the sun. The distress did not occur immediately. Sometimes the reaction was delayed for several days.

The patient believed that the searing ball within his body was the sun! At times he believed that the metal covering was not only cooled by his own body fluids, but that the cooling body fluids made the outer metal membrane contract. On other occasions his



interiorized sun was surrounded by either a mailed fist, or a fist without mail. The first was discipline that controlled and contained the white fire ball, the sun. The interiorized sun, the interiorized white fire ball, were his rampageous emotional feelings that threatened to break their bonds.

At times the sun was like a red ball, like the sun on a horizon. At other times, the incorporated red ball was like the electric light, an accoutrement of his nursery that could be shattered or could not be shattered. Even any contact with a realistic pain source developed within him the sensation of a searing white-hot ball.

Feodor Moor, early in the nineteenth century, was a captive in Japan. Later, on return to Russia, in desperation he shot himself through the chest. When he was found 'his body was opened, and in the breast were found two pieces of lead, with which, instead of balls, he had loaded the musket. He had left on a table in his apartment, a paper containing the following singular expressions: "That life had become insupportable to him, and that, at certain times, he could even fancy he had *swallowed the sun*"' (14, pp. 216-17).

Feodor Moor's delusion that he had devoured the sun is particularly pertinent to this study. Moor, with his master, Captain Vassily Golownin, was imprisoned by the Japanese. This imprisonment was a retaliation for the Russian raid on the Kurile island of Eetooroop conducted several years before by Davidoff and Chwostoff as ordered by Nicholas Petrovich Resanoff. Resanoff, the Russian emperor's chamberlain and plenipotentiary over the Russian possessions in the north-east and north-west Pacific, humiliated by Japan's 'closed-door' policy, had avenged himself upon the small and defenceless island.

Captain Vassily Golownin was a decent sort of fellow, and Moor at first was not only subordinate but subservient to him. Later a schism developed. Moor avoided Golownin and became exceedingly sycophantic in his attitude toward the Japanese.

That the Japanese enclosed both Golownin and Moor in wicker-like baskets stimulates conjecture. The Japanese in substance consumed or devoured the two men. For months they were contained within the 'entrails' of

Japan. At long last, Moor became schizophrenic.

In his schizophrenic state he developed the delusion that he had swallowed the sun. Japan is the 'land of the rising sun!' Moor actually developed the delusion that he had swallowed Japan, that he had swallowed the sun. Of course this delusion was not in keeping with the actual fact, the ego-alien fact, the ego-threatening fact that, devoured, he was being held prisoner by the sun of Japan. This reversal has been described by William Silverberg as a schizophrenic manoeuvre.

Van Gogh also ate up the sun. That he had done so is evidenced in his paintings. In one painting, *The Sower*, the predominant reference is to the sun that makes things grow.

'In a . . . letter he wrote that he had had a strenuous week of painting *among the corn in the full sun* and had made a sketch of a sower. He also described the colour—a ploughed field of violet, a sower in blue and white and over all a yellow sky with a blazing *sun . . .*' (25, p. 158).

And then, in a companion piece called *The Reaper*, Van Gogh in his own words characterizes *The Reaper* as the devil that eats up the sun and the sun's product.

' . . . he [Van Gogh] took his easel and canvas, walked down the long road to the station, climbed the hill past the Catholic Church, and sat down in the yellow cornfield, opposite the cemetery.

'About noon, when the fiery sun was beating down upon his head, a rush of blackbirds suddenly came out of the sky. They filled the air, darkened the sun, covered Vincent in a thick blanket of night, flew into his hair, his eyes, his nose, his mouth, buried him in a black cloud of night, airless, flapping wings.

'Vincent went on working. He painted the birds above the yellow field of corn. He did not know how long he wielded his brush, but when he saw that he had finished, he wrote *Crows Above a Cornfield*<sup>1</sup> in one corner . . . ' (29, pp. 482-3).

Van Gogh was frustrated in devouring the sun, and devoured parcels and fragments (black birds) of the night instead.

'Van Gogh resolved his dilemma by painting the sower and then eased his anxiety and sense of guilt by means of another picture which he called *The Reaper*. This canvas shows a

last Van Gogh painting was entitled *Crows over the Wheat Fields*.

<sup>1</sup> According to 'Van Gogh Paintings and Drawings', a Special Loan Exhibition, The Metropolitan Museum of Art, The Art Institute of Chicago, 1949-1950, the



little reaper in a yellow wheatfield under a sizzling sun. He tried for an all-over effect of "sulphur". Regarding this paper, he wrote, "I am struggling with a canvas, a 'Reaper'. The study is all yellow, terribly thickly painted, but the subject was fine and simple. For I see in this reaper a vague figure fighting like a devil in the midst of the heat to get to the end of his task. I see in this figure the image of death in the sense that humanity might be the corn he is reaping. So it is—if you like—the opposite of the 'Sower' I tried to do before. But there is something sad in this death—it goes its way in broad daylight with a sun flooding everything with a light of pure gold" (25, p. 158). Van Gogh symbolized his eating up the sun by devouring his paints (16, p. 264). Like Feodor Moor, he too shot himself through the chest and died from his wound (16, p. 264).

It is not necessary to posit the existence of land bridges to explain the significance of the crows that attacked Van Gogh and that of the crows that attacked the devil in the Ainu land. It is indicated by some of his paintings that Van Gogh possessed a smattering of knowledge about Japan. But it is indeed unlikely that he knew anything at all about the Ainu crow-sun-devil myth. More than likely, his 'crows' were schizophrenic 'blackouts'—analogous to the splinters of night darkness that are banished by the sun.

And from another famous report from literary records, one that greatly interested Freud, the following statement is taken:

'By the way, even today the sun looks different to me than before my illness. Her rays pale before me if, turned towards her, I speak with a loud voice. I can look into the sun unperturbed and am dazzled only very little, whereas in days of health, I, like other people, would have found it impossible to look into the sun for minutes on end' (26, p. 126).

It is characteristic of many people to sneeze if they look too long at the sun. It is as if staring at the sun produced a violent ejecting sneezing. In sneezing, the sneezer closes his eyes, blotting out the sun. The closing of the eyes is part of the reflex.

The following will sound like a sweeping generalization. Nonetheless, I have clinical evidence to support my claim that some aspects of sneezing are a part of the infantile colic story (28).

Sneezing at the sun betrays in certain patients the concept of having been 'poisoned';

'poisoned' by a maternocentric mother. Being touched by 'poisonous' warm fingers of the mother and 'poisonous' warm rays (hands) of the sun are analogous (*see illustration*). American . . . the sun was not drawn as an ellipse, but rather like a disc with two flattened poles.



The sun hieroglyph was in use as early as 3200 B.C. when hieroglyphic writing was introduced, and a short time later the hieroglyph for horizon occurs.

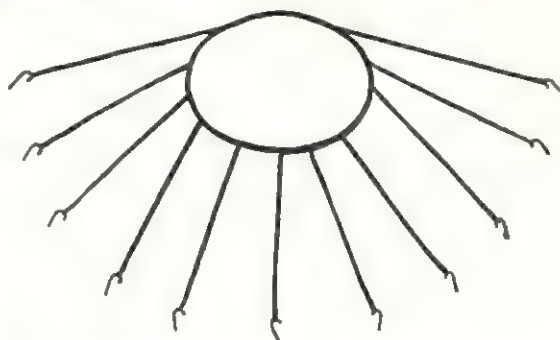


But the name of King Akhenaten and of his city, Akhet-aton, were not coined until c. 1370 B.C., and therefore the hieroglyph of the horizon is infinitely earlier than the name of a town composed of it.



The Egyptians *always* draw the sun as a flattened disc and thus make no difference when it is just above the horizon or when it is at the zenith. When they show the rays of the sun the beams are drawn as lines emanating from all sides of the disc except the upper third of the circumference, and these rays usually end in hands seen in profile. Sometimes they hold the sign of Life,

but when they are empty they still have the connotation of 'giving'.



(This information received from Bernard Bothmer, Department of Egyptian Art, Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, Mass., in a personal communication.)

internists refer to the latter as a clinical entity dubbed 'sun poisoning'. The maternal climate and the sun climate are indigestible. The mother and, consequently, the sun are 'ambivalent'. The mother pretends to feed wholesome milk to her child, but because of the mother's agitation, her maternocentricity, this wholesome milk turns out to be 'poison'.

The sneeze rejects the sun, the cosmic mother. The rejection is the symbolic opisthotonus that pushes away the mother. The mother symbolized

by the sun is reacted against by the angry loneliness that comes to be resident in the areas involved in the totality of the picture of infantile colic. This material will be given more specific attention in a paper yet to be published entitled 'The Life Cycles of the Sun God'. According to Dr. Ann Stewart (28), eosinophile increase, spasms of the bronchioles and colon, hives, eczema, conjunctivitis, and turgescence of the mucous membranes of the nose are constituents of infantile colic, of 'excessive crying in infants'. The chest, throat and larynx are involved in the act of crying or the preparedness for crying (4).

The sneezing at the sun is a rejection of intimacy, of love with the mother, the sun, the cosmic mother. Sneezing is a forecast of the 'sun poisoning' that occurs in the person who needs to reject further poisoning by anticipating the avoidance of love, of intimacy.

Once a patient of mine tried to stare down the sun. For his efforts, he burned a hole in his retina. His lens acted as a magnifying glass and focused the rays of the sun on his retina in such a way that a hole was burned in this membrane.

Ferenczi concerned himself with parental aspects of the sun. He believed the sun to be a father figure. In many ways the sun is often a maternal substitute. It is my opinion that when the sun is paternalistic, the paternalism cloaks an underlying maternalism. Ferenczi says: 'For a neurotic whom I analysed the soothing effect of the sunbath depended for the most part on his tremendous father-transference. For him the sun was a father symbol, which he gladly let shine upon him and warm him; it had in addition an exhibitionistic significance' (8, p. 365).

It is not always the mouth that angrily devours the sun. Sometimes the skin is enraged by the sun's caresses, and devours the sun.

One patient, a woman from the Ozarks, came into money, married, and lived with her husband in Grosse Pointe, Michigan. Each winter she went to Florida. For the first four weeks that she basked in the sub-tropical sun, nothing happened to her skin. However, during the last two weeks of her winter vacation she could not tolerate even a short exposure to the sun. During that time when she exposed her lithe body to the sun's warmth, her skin broke out. Ugly, weeping, angry-looking lesions covered her from head to foot. After returning to Michigan and for weeks after the final expo-

sure to the Florida sun her skin broke out into weeping raw areas interspersed with patches of giant urticaria.

During the summers she visited her husband's family home on Saranac Lake. For the first month and a half at Saranac she tolerated the sun. When it was time for her to return to Grosse Pointe, she broke out in a rash.

As with her own mother's behaviour during the precognitive period of her infancy, the sun was a mother who at first seduced her by warm caresses and then suddenly and finally abandoned her to her own resources. Her skin reacted with rage to this abandonment.

#### CONCLUSION

Under optimum conditions the rhythms and especially the precognitive rhythms of the child are respected by the mature infantocentric mother. The mother exercises and stimulates the whole of the child's skin. She does not limit her attentions to the mouth, or to the urogenital region of the body. She carries the baby on her own body, permitting it to clasp her and nurse on her and actively to feel her as well as to be felt and caressed by her. This skin attention by the mother focuses experiences derived from the other senses upon the near-at-hand mother. The smell of the mother, the mother noises, the sight of the mother, the touch of the mother are centralized as originating in this special human being that is felt by the skin.

With the physical presence of a permissive mother at the baby's skin, the maturative process is not only promoted but integrated. All precepts are afforded an equal, simultaneous stimulation and contemporaneous relatedness of the five different perceptual impresses from the mother body. Because the rhythms of the baby are respected by this intimate maternal climate, and because it remains in a more or less continuous contiguity with the mother, the baby is introduced to the world instead of the world being thrust in fragmentary fashion at the baby.

This type of precognitive relatedness with the mature mother advances or subsumes a continuity in his social experiences. The continuous presence of the mother in physical contact with the baby reduces to a minimum those devastating frustrations that incur shock responses, fragmentation of previous gains in the inchoate ego integration, and the indiscriminate paralysis of efforts at expansive reaching out for the exploration of new areas in the world of



reality. Previous to cognition the infant is one with the mother. This oneness requires an unhampered serenity and mutuality for the eventual and proper liquidation of the infantile physical and psychic togetherness. It is intended by nature that the infant should grow away from the mother. It is intended that he should attain an identity of his own that is not at its adult level slavishly addicted to or slavishly rebellious towards the mother person. This normal maturation implies a development of a sense of reality that is not hampered by parataxic orientations in the solution of any of the contemporaneous problematic situations that present themselves.

The individual reared in this optimum maternal climate feels his age for every level of development. He knows where and when he is actually independent. This is a feeling tone, a something inside himself that is a proper measure of himself and of the significant other

person. In his association with others, he feels neither slavishly dependent nor slavishly independent. He feels that he is neither king nor slave, unless he actually is one.

Further, with the primary unit properly divided into self elements separate and distinct from mother elements, the ego boundaries approximate the actual body boundaries. He is able to distinguish self from what is not self, or at least the functional limits of the body and mind of the self. Because of this ability that is a function of a proper body memory physically, intellectually, and emotionally, he does not form magical identifications with other people. The separation of the primary unit is not in a constant state of flux, of rejoining and separating of the self elements and mother elements. In this normal development, things are not as important as persons—and things are actually what they are and not what fancy makes of them.

#### REFERENCES

- (1) ANANIKIAN, MARDIROH H. 'Armenian Mythology.' In *The Mythology of All Races* (see No. 15), 7.
- (2) BATCHELOR, JOHN. *The Ainu and their Folk Lore*. (London: Religious Tract Society, 1901.)
- (3) BROWNE, LEWIS. *The World's Great Scriptures*. (New York: Macmillan, 1946.)
- (4) BULL, NINA. *The Attitude Theory of Emotion*. (New York: Nervous and Mental Disease Monographs No. 81, 1951.)
- (5) CAMPBELL, JOSEPH. *The Hero with a Thousand Faces*. (New York: Pantheon Books, 1949.)
- (6) COLLIER, JOHN. 'The Nature of Man.' In *Merrill-Palmer Quarterly* (Detroit), Spring, 1955.
- (7) DIXON, ROLAND B. 'Oceanic.' In *The Mythology of All Races* (see No. 15), 9.
- (8) FERENCZI, SANDOR. *Further Contributions to the Theory and Technique of Psycho-Analysis*. (London: Hogarth, 1926.)
- (9) FRANKFORT, HENRI. *Kingship and the Gods*. (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1948.)
- (10) ——. *Ancient Egyptian Religion*. (New York: Columbia Univ. Press, 1949.)
- (11) FRAZER, SIR J. G. *The Golden Bough*, Vol. i (*The Magic Art and the Evolution of Kings*, Vol. 1). (New York: Macmillan, 1935.)
- (12) FREUD, S. *An Outline of Psycho-Analysis*. (New York: Norton, 1949.)
- (13) ——. *Collected Papers*, Vol. 5. (London: Hogarth, 1950.)
- (14) GOLOWNIN, VASSILY. *Narrative of My Captivity in Japan*. (London: Schulze and Dean, 1818.)
- (15) GRAY, LOUIS HERBERT, et al. (ed.). *The Mythology of All Races*. (Boston: Marshall Jones, 1918.)
- (16) HOLSTIJN, A. J. WESTERMAN. 'The Psychological Development of Vincent van Gogh'. *American Imago*, 13, No. 3, 1951.
- (17) KAHLER, ERICH. *Man the Measure*. (New York: Pantheon, 1943.)
- (18) KEITH, A. BERRIEDALE. 'Indian Mythology.' In *The Mythology of All Races* (see No. 15), Vol. 6, Part 1.
- (19) LEACH, MARIA (ed.). *The Standard Dictionary of Folklore*, Vol. 2. (New York: Funk and Wagnalls, 1950.)
- (20) LEVIN, A. J. 'Oedipus and Samson and the Rejected Hero-Child'. *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 38, 1957.
- (21) MALINOWSKI, BRONISLAW. *Magic, Science, and Religion*. (Boston: Beacon Press, 1948.)
- (22) MAX MULLER, F., 'Egyptian Mythology.' In *The Mythology of All Races* (see No. 15), Vol. 12, Part 1.
- (23) PIAGET, J. *The Origins of Intelligence in Children*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1952.)
- (24) RÓHEIM, GÉZA. 'Fire in the Dragon'. *American Imago*, 7, No. 2, 1950.
- (25) SCHNIER, JACQUES. 'The Blazing Sun'. *American Imago*, 7, No. 2, 1950.
- (26) SCHREBER, D. P. *Memoirs of my Nervous Illness*. (London: Dawson, 1955.)
- (27) SPITZ, RENÉ A. 'Autoeroticism: Some Empirical Findings and Hypotheses on Three of its Manifestations in the First Year of Life'. *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 3/4, 1949, pp. 85-120.
- (28) STEWART, ANN. 'Excessive Crying in

Infants—A Family Disease'. *Transactions of the Sixth Conference on the Problems of Early Infancy*. (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation, 1952.)

(29) STONE, IRVING. *Lust for Life*. (New York: Modern Library, 1939.)

(30) SWEDENBORG, EMANUEL. *Heaven and its Wonders and Hell*. (New York: Swedenborg Foundation, 1946.)

(31) SYLVESTER, EMMY. *Transactions of the First Conference on the Problems of Early Infancy*. (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation, 1947.)

(32) WERNER, ALICE. 'African Mythology.' In *The Mythology of All Races* (see No. 15), Vol. 7, Part 2.

(Received 15 July, 1956.)



# THE PSYCHO-ANALYTIC TREATMENT OF ULCERATIVE COLITIS

By

MELITTA SPERLING, M.D., NEW YORK

## INTRODUCTION

The disease medically known as non-specific idiopathic ulcerative colitis hardly appears to be a classical subject for psycho-analytic investigation or treatment, and it is not surprising that psycho-analytic interest in it is relatively recent (1, 8, 5). The disease, still clinically puzzling to internists, is characterized by bloody diarrhoea and abdominal spasms, follows a chronic or acute course often with high fever, and is sometimes fatal. At first glance, this description seems to preclude considering ulcerative colitis as a psychiatric disorder. It has, however, certain features, particularly the onset and the spontaneous exacerbations and remissions, that are definitely related to certain significant life situations. This relationship attracted psychiatric attention some twenty-five years ago (4, 11, 12).

The life situations that precede the onset of ulcerative colitis seem to resemble those that precede another baffling disorder—the group of schizophrenias. There appears to be a similarity in the circumstances under which the break with reality occurs in schizophrenia and the somatic break occurs in ulcerative colitis. Many important questions are suggested by this similarity. Why does one person react with a psychotic break and another with a somatic break? Why is the somatic break specifically ulcerative colitis? What precipitating factors in the onset of schizophrenia and ulcerative colitis are of determining importance? Is there a similarity in the personality structure of patients with these two disorders, and consequently a similarity in the dynamics of their reactions to traumatic experiences? If so, other questions arise. What is the significant factor—specific experiences or constitutional and hereditary conditions?

Because projective tests of patients with ulcerative colitis almost invariably point to a latent psychosis, there is a resistance to—one might say, a fear of—utilizing psycho-analytic

techniques in such cases. The tacit assumption is that it is dangerous to remove the somatic symptoms, since by so doing an underlying psychosis will be exposed. On the basis of this assumption, it would appear that a case of ulcerative colitis cannot be treated psycho-analytically without running the risk of precipitating a psychotic break. My experience does not support this conclusion. On the contrary, I have found it possible, in psycho-analytic treatment of the ulcerative colitis patient, to analyse the patient's defences without the fear or the expectation that he will be overwhelmed by the impulses against which these defences were set up. I reported in 1946 on cases of ulcerative colitis in children cured by psycho-analytic treatment, and have followed these cases up to the present time—that is, for a decade and more (8). I do not know of any cases cured by other methods. At least, none have been reported in the literature.

I am not concerned with whether or not ulcerative colitis in adults can be favourably influenced by psychotherapy; undoubtedly it can. The questions I raise here are: Is ulcerative colitis a curable disease? If so, by what means is it curable? I present the case of a young adult patient with severe ulcerative colitis as a contribution towards an answer to these questions. Psycho-analytic treatment not only effected a cure of the ulcerative colitis in this patient, but also prevented him from developing a psychotic break, which in a certain early phase of treatment appeared imminent and inevitable.

## CASE HISTORY

The patient, a young man of nineteen, was referred to me for psycho-analytic treatment because of an acute exacerbation of a non-specific ulcerative colitis. He had had his first attack at the age of fourteen. During the following five years, despite continual medical care (which included a rigid diet), he had had frequent attacks of increasing severity. During this period, he also had severe insomnia and feelings of discomfort with people, especially in



crowded places such as stores and subways. He felt that people were looking at him and talking about his nose, which he considered very large. He was more at ease in the company of another person than alone.

The patient's father died when he was fourteen, and shortly thereafter he developed ulcerative colitis. A marked change in his personality took place during the following year. His nose suddenly began to grow and he was markedly concerned about it. He thought of undergoing plastic surgery, but was fearful of the outcome and worried that he might not like himself afterwards.

The patient is the youngest of four children. He and his brother, Bernie, eleven years his senior, live with the mother. Another brother and the sister, both older, are married. After the father's death, Bernie played a very significant rôle in the patient's life. The brothers shared a room. Bernie was very close to the patient; he was interested in his welfare and also supported him financially. Bernie did not appear to have much interest in girls, although he went out with them occasionally. When the patient was nineteen, Bernie became seriously attached to a girl and considered marriage. The patient was shocked; he could not understand what his brother saw in this girl, for to his mind she was 'just nothing'. He suffered an acute exacerbation of the ulcerative colitis at this time and accepted referral to me.

In treatment, the earliest interpretations given to the patient dealt with his resentment against his brother whom he was losing to the girl. The exacerbation of the ulcerative colitis symptoms and his disturbed behaviour were interpreted as a reaction to the anxiety of separation from his brother. Early in the psycho-analysis the patient had, at my suggestion, abandoned the strict diet he had been observing for five years. He had gained weight, and his colitis symptoms had subsided. When the date for the brother's wedding was set, however, the patient had a recurrence of the bloody diarrhoea and became disturbed. He expressed fears that he would not be able to attend the wedding, that he would have a nervous breakdown, that he might collapse while walking down the aisle and disrupt the ceremony. It was very obvious that he could not tolerate the idea of losing the relationship he had with his brother. The analysis, at this time, dealt with his inability to separate himself from his brother.

In accordance with my concepts established in previous work, the cramps and the diarrhoea were interpreted to him as representing his magical omnipotent way of giving up his brother by devaluing him to faeces (6). What he could not achieve in reality was thus accomplished in the somatic symptoms as if he were saying that, having made his brother worthless, he could now give him up. The anal-sadistic control over a frustrating love

object operates in this way in ulcerative colitis. The passive experience of losing the love object, unacceptable to the patient, is thus transformed into the somatic, active pushing out of the love object. The accompanying rage and pain are completely denied and are released in the somatic symptoms. The more intense the rage and fury, the more severe are the somatic symptoms, especially cramps and frequency of bowel movements.

As the patient's ulcerative colitis symptoms subsided and his total behaviour improved, he began to complain about girls. He felt that girls had an advantage over boys. Boys had to make overtures to girls, and had to give 'something' to them. 'Women get money from their husbands and then henpeck them', he said. He thought girls did not like him, but actually he provoked and annoyed them. He quarrelled with his future sister-in-law, and felt that his brother had no time for him because of her. Gradually his real fears relating to women came to the fore—that if he had intercourse he might get venereal disease or impregnate a girl. He told me that he had always been envious of his sister and had never got on with her because she did not have to work when she lived at home, and now had a husband to support her. His fear of losing his penis in the vagina was so intense that in speaking about it he trembled and felt goose pimples all over his body. He greatly feared the 'hole', as he called the vagina. In this phase of the analysis, the patient discussed his childhood. He felt that he had been very different as a child—happy, outgoing, and rather mischievous. He had had many friends and had liked girls until he entered high school. Then everything changed. The 'kids' in his high school were very tough and he couldn't cope with them. It was at the start of high school that he developed a severe attack of ulcerative colitis which subsequently became chronic. He remembered having had diarrhoea earlier in his life, at six or seven years of age, and that on many occasions, when he had bellyaches in school, his sister would come to take him home.

At this time in the treatment, the diarrhoea and bleeding from the rectum had stopped, but he complained of a new symptom, which worried him greatly. His penis was bleeding. He had a habit of lying on his belly and pushing his penis forcibly into the mattress, and he thought that this was how he had injured his penis. He would never touch his penis with his hands. He appeared to be more disturbed at being looked at than he had been, and his feelings that people were making remarks about the size of his nose also became more pronounced. He had dizzy spells and a feeling that he was losing his reason. He gave the impression of being on the verge of a psychotic break.

At this point, it became necessary to interpret to him immediately the self-destructive aspects of this behaviour and the unconscious motivations for it: he was trying to damage himself; it was as if he



wanted to get rid of his penis, and was afraid to touch it because of his destructive impulses. He became very anxious, repeatedly asking, 'Can I do it? Can it come off?' but added, 'Don't tell me this, I don't want to know.' I also pointed out to him that he could not relinquish his brother to his rival, the brother's fiancée. The effect of these interpretations was immediate and remarkable—all his symptoms subsided.

The brother's wedding, which the patient attended, went off surprisingly well. After the couple left for their honeymoon, however, the patient again started to complain about dizziness and nausea, especially in the mornings on the subway, and he frequently had to change trains. (Formerly he had made the trip with his brother.) This behaviour was interpreted to him as the expression of his wish to become sick, to stay at home, and to force his mother and brother to take care of him; furthermore, he felt resentful and frustrated with the analyst whom he held responsible for his deprivation. To get sick and to lose the job also meant to stop the analysis.

Immediately after this interpretation he remembered a dream he had had the previous night. In the dream he had stopped his analysis and had gone back to the very first doctor who had treated him. He was still sick, and the doctor sent him back to me. The feeling in the dream was that I was the only one who could cure him. The background for this dream follows: after the brother left home, and stopped supporting him, the patient had taken a night job in addition to his regular one, in order to make enough money to finance his treatment. It was apparent to me that he was undertaking too much; that he was arranging a reality situation which would justify his resentment of the analyst. I accordingly offered to reduce his fee so that he could give up the night job and still have some money left for himself. He accepted my offer, but shortly afterwards he had a return of the colitis symptoms and complained that he felt very weak and dizzy at work.

This dream indicated a change in the transference relationship which, in its full significance and implications, could be understood only later in the treatment. The fact that I had reduced his fee substantially was taken by the patient as an indication of my personal interest in him. I had put myself into the rôle of the mother and brother, and he repeated with me, in the transference, the behaviour that characterized his relationship with these two important figures in his life. The patient measured his ability to control his mother and brother by the degree to which he was able to affect them with his illness.

A period of intensification of symptoms and generally disturbed behaviour followed this dream and the episode of reducing the fee. A new somatic complaint, bleeding haemorrhoids, was added to the already impressive list. During this period, he remembered a 'funny' dream. He came to my office

and I was cleaning his teeth. I found five thousand cavities for which I was treating him. In the dream, he said that he goes to the dentist twice a year and usually has three cavities. For the treatment of five thousand cavities he would have to feel indebted to me for a lifetime. He wanted to go to his doctor for a rectal examination, but I didn't like his doctor, and sent him to someone I had suggested. In association to the dream, the patient said that he had planned to make an appointment with the proctologist who had previously examined him. He remembered that once a pretty young nurse had given him an enema, before a sigmoidoscopy, and that it was both embarrassing and exciting to him. He also thought of the pain caused by the doctor's rectal examination when he had haemorrhoids. The symbolism of the numbers two and three had been discussed on a previous occasion, in connexion with dream material. When I interpreted to him that the five thousand cavities which I found, in addition to expressing his feelings about the fantastic findings in analysis, might also represent a bisexual symbol—namely, two and three and three zeros—he immediately recalled a story which he had read in the newspaper the evening preceding the dream, about a man who had been transformed into a woman through an operation. This dream also expressed his feeling about the reduction of fee and the number of sessions, and his unwillingness to be indebted to me. The unconscious significance of the bleeding from the rectum as an indication of his femininity (menstruation, birth, competition with his sister-in-law, he having a child instead of her) had already been discussed with him. I pointed it out to him again in connexion with this dream.

He now looked and felt ill and his symptoms, especially the bleeding, were acutely intensified. When I interpreted to him that he was now trying to have a somatic break because he had been prevented from having a nervous breakdown which, according to him, might have stopped his brother's marriage, he replied that this was certainly a much better way. At least it was not so obvious and, after all, he was still working although he didn't know how he managed it. He actually began to plead with me not to interfere—'Maybe I really am sicker than you think. How do you know? Maybe I don't have what others have and I can't do it.' (He had come to me because he knew one patient with ulcerative colitis who had been cured by me.)

He did not come for his next session because, as I was informed by a telephone message, he had been hospitalized for severe bleeding. When I visited him at the hospital, he looked at me and said that he was sorry about what had happened. I did not have to do much interpreting. He appeared to understand very well what had happened and the reasons for it. By this time, I too realized more fully the significance of the dream of changing doctors, and was able to utilize this understanding in handling



the patient. I explained to him calmly and simply, that he had apparently lost trust in me because, according to his feelings, I had acted like his mother and brother, and not as the unshakable and always reliable analyst, as he had expected. He said that he knew I would not give him up, and that if I had, this would have meant the end for him. He realized that at the cost of illness he had got his way and forced his brother not only to assume the responsibility for the expense of the hospitalization, but also to move back into the house. The proctologist had prevailed upon the brother to do this by explaining that his removal from the house had made the patient sick.

The importance of the transference relationship in the treatment of a patient with ulcerative colitis prompts me to discuss more fully the episode described above and the technique for handling it. The patient, at the time and also later in the analysis, unmistakably indicated that the reduction of his fee had shaken his confidence in me and had made me in reality a weak mother figure. He felt that I did what other doctors had done in such a situation, namely given in to him and treated him on a realistic basis. In this way I had made myself a vulnerable figure, someone he could treat like his mother and could no longer rely on with complete trust. In the treatment of such a patient it seems to me of the utmost importance that the patient at all times conceive of the analyst as the person who expects him to control his own impulses and knows that he can do so, knows that he does not *have* to release them instantly in the somatic symptoms or in equivalent behaviour. In this situation I should have reduced the number of sessions, rather than the fee. Reducing the fee meant to the patient that I did not believe that he could be left to his own devices, and that I, like his mother and brother, feared that he would get sick. He acted according to the formula, 'If you don't think I can control myself, I'll prove you're right.' This was amply substantiated later in his analysis, when he would tell me with genuine feeling that I was part of him, that is, of his mind, and that he could not forget what I had done for him. He explained that I had withstood his sadistic onslaughts which were his way of testing my conviction that he could stop his somatic symptoms just as he could control his behaviour.

The patient left the hospital the day after I visited him, although his doctor had suggested additional blood transfusions and a longer stay. He resumed analytic treatment and his physical condition improved rather rapidly. There was also a definite change in his behaviour and in the quality of his transference feelings after the hospital incident, which could not be attributed merely to the fact that he had achieved gratification of his unconscious needs.

At this stage of the analysis, conflicting feelings about his mother were brought to the fore. She

annoyed him very much, she was tactless in exposing him to others, she made demands upon him. On the other hand, she was really the only person who cared for him and paid attention to him, especially when he was sick. At such times, his mother would stay up all night with him, listen to his moaning and complaints, worry about him and indulge him. I pointed out that this was, in some respects, like the analysis, in which I also listened to his complaints; but instead of worrying and indulging him, I interpreted his behaviour, and thus I was only depriving him. Later in the analysis, he told me that he had often been well aware that he used to complain in an attempt to annoy and worry me in the same way that he did with his mother. From her he would get sympathy when he did this. He also explained to me that this was why he had to be so observant of my facial expressions when he was sitting facing me during the session, and had to be very observant of the shade or tone of my voice when he was on the couch. Sometimes he would turn around suddenly, as if to catch me unawares to see whether I reacted in the way he wanted me to, like his mother. At the same time, he was worried that I might react in this way. His mother's anxiety at such times was to him like a signal to 'get sick'; it meant that she did not expect him to be able to control himself. Each time he convinced himself that I was not disturbed by his behaviour and yet was interested in him and not indifferent, it had a marked therapeutic effect. He needed my confidence in his ability to control his destructiveness in order to regain, or rather to develop, confidence in himself.

The patient now began to complain about the crowded conditions in the house. Since his brother moved back, he had to share a room with his mother. Many things about his mother annoyed him—that he was the baby in the house, and that his mother, particularly, still regarded him as a baby. With his physical condition improved, and bereft of a rationalization for his inability to mix with people, he began to worry about girls. He expressed the feeling that he didn't know which was worse—to be sick or to worry about girls. His feelings that girls were trying to seduce him and to tease him were interpreted to him as his wish to be seduced, to be passive and to be given something by a woman, but not to give anything himself. In this context he dreamed that his mother was cleaning up the 'mess' caused by his diarrhoea and bleeding, while he felt dizzy and weak, and threw himself into bed. The association to this dream was overhearing his brother and sister-in-law in intercourse, and a detachment in order not to be aware of it. Brother and sister-in-law in intercourse were the re-enactment of his original primal scene anxiety, and his reaction to it as a child with a loss of control, in diarrhoea.

He brought forth ideas that his mother had not wanted him as a baby, and he blamed her for his



illness. He had been an incubator baby and he had fantasied that his mother had left him in the hospital and had forgotten about him until she was notified to come for him. 'I know better now, but this is how I used to think.' Dreams about his mother in which he was running away from somebody with her revealed that he wanted to be with his mother, to be indulged by her and to receive something from her. The analyst is the somebody from whom he is running away because she interferes with this relationship. To have a girl friend meant to him to give up mother and to become a man. Complaints about his mother were ambivalently expressed as a wish to be her child, the sick patient, and a wish to separate himself from her. He was aware of his mother's desire for him to remain a 'baby'. In the three months following his hospitalization, he improved remarkably in health, rising in weight from 100 to 150 pounds; his mother complained that he was getting fat and healthy and had no concern about anyone and paid no attention to her.

As the analysis uncovered his deeply repressed rage, he expressed fears that his temper would lead him to kill somebody. He would say, 'I feel like killing the first guy.' In speaking about his resentment towards his mother because she demanded money from him, he said, 'How else can I get this anger out of me except by diarrhoea?' 'My mind is drifting away.' He would get frightened like a child and speculated that he was better off with diarrhoea; at least he could 'get even with them right away'. The immediacy and urgency of the psychosomatic reaction is well illustrated here. It is as if the patient feels that postponement of acting out of his feelings is beyond control. He has the costly choice between getting sick or losing control, which equals 'going crazy'. The patient was given this interpretation of his wish to surrender to anything in order to avoid the conscious awareness of such urgent impulses and painful feelings.

By this time, the ulcerative colitis symptoms and the haemorrhoids had cleared up, but a new somatic symptom—headaches—appeared. The patient now had headaches on the way to the analyst, when waiting for her, and at the beginning of his sessions. He dreamed that he and the analyst discussed his difficulties. In the dream we had got to the bottom of the whole thing. He was cured and didn't have to come for regular sessions. The dream was interpreted to him as follows: he wanted to be through with the analyst who interfered with the gratification of his unconscious wishes by exposing them, and thus prevented him from fulfilling them in symptoms. The analyst's head (skill) was the part which interfered most, so that was where he was attacking her. He was killing her off symbolically in his headache.

He now had severe headaches in reaction to frustrating experiences and sometimes to dreams. He had a dream in which the proctologist was an analyst; he came to the patient's office, where he got into bed with him for the treatment. This went on for months until the patient finally quit. The doctor said that he was a very sick boy and that it was foolish of him to quit. But he didn't want the doctor to come to his place because people could see him and they would think that he (the patient) was crazy. The proctologist, who had actually manipulated him anally, was a condensation of his brother, with whom my patient had been in bed, and of the analyst with whom the patient wanted to be in bed, and whom he made into a man. After the dream of the proctologist he had a dream in which a girl was brushing up against him. This was a wet dream and was followed by a dream in which he was with his sister and a 'coloured fellow' followed her. He suggested that she ask the coloured fellow about his intentions. She cried and said that he wanted to attack her sexually. Her brother finally got rid of the coloured fellow. The patient's sexual desire had switched from his brother, Bernie, to his sister. He readily understood that he was the 'coloured fellow' in the dream. There was one dream shortly after this one to which he had a particularly strong reaction. In this dream, two women were engaged in homosexual lovemaking. The older one was working with her mouth on the younger one, 'almost killing her'. In the dream, he called a policeman to stop them. In telling the dream he breathed very heavily and said, 'I am scared even now.' In association, he related that he had eaten peanut butter the night before the dream. He laughed about the way in which he had pronounced 'pea-nut', and after a while added, 'I'd kill myself if I ever had such impulses.' He was preoccupied with the abnormalities of women. 'They are all abnormal sexually', he would tell me. 'They are so aggressive.' Yet he was coming closer to an awareness of his own sexual abnormality.

Feelings of depersonalization increased at times now that immediate somatic acting out of his unconscious fantasies was curtailed, and he would say, 'I don't care, I feel like I am in another world.' After the interpretation of the headache as a reaction to intense unconscious frustration and as representative of instantaneous killing of the frustrating object, the headaches disappeared (7). In the course of the analysis, the struggle for immediate fulfilment and its somatic acting out had changed in method and locale from the bowel to the head, the head being a more appropriate place for it after all.<sup>1</sup> Again when he overheard his brother and sister-in-law in intercourse, he felt nothing at first and then got

<sup>1</sup> The occurrence of headaches as an alternative symptom, together with a change in feeling and overt behaviour in ulcerative colitis patients, has been confirmed recently by George G. Engel. Cf.: 'Studies of

Ulcerative Colitis: III.—The Nature of the Psychologic Processes', *American Journal of Medicine*, pp. 231-256, August 1955.



extremely frightened. In the ulcerative colitis he had acted out his rage instantaneously without awareness. Now, however, he perceived the fear of experiencing the full impact of his feelings, lest he be overwhelmed by them and do something irrevocably destructive.

The precipitating factors leading to the ulcerative colitis after his father's death were reconstructed and understood by the patient in the analysis. He had linked the onset of the ulcerative colitis to a party which he had attended when he was about fourteen years old, and at which he thought that he drank too much. This party was after his father's death, when his balance was already precarious and his course was set in the direction of feminine identification and unconscious passive sexual surrender to the mother and brother. Mother and father had always quarrelled, and the mother had used the patient as a solace in an unhappy marriage. She had been overaffectionate with the boy, hugging and kissing him and calling him sweet names. He had always sided with mother against father. When the father suddenly died, the patient's unconscious guilt feeling precluded identification with the father because this would have meant putting himself in his place, and possessing mother as a man. Since he could not be a man, he had to remain a child or be a woman. In his brother, Bernie, the patient revived his father. 'He is a father to me', he would tell me. However, he did not rebel against the brother, but submitted passively. He was by nature a rebellious and aggressive, highly strung boy, and it was at the time of his father's death and his submissive relationship to the brother that the change in his personality took place. It was also then that he developed the ulcerative colitis. At the party, he had to drink so that he would not be aware that he did not act like the other boys, and that he was competing with a girl for the attention of his friend, for whom he then had a strong unconscious homosexual attachment.

The patient expressed belated understanding for this period in his life, recalling his feelings when he was teased and baited by the boys in high school. He knew that he was not a coward, and yet he behaved like one. He recalled the rage which he felt and yet he let himself be treated like a girl. 'If I could only do over that period of my life, I'd show them', he said. 'I want their blood. I could kill them.' In the symptom of bleeding his blood had flowed, while it actually was meant to be the blood of the attackers. On a deeper level, however, he had accepted the female rôle and wanted to be treated as a girl. This too was expressed in the bleeding.

At this point in the analysis he confessed that he had occasionally engaged in the practice of cutting hairs around his anus with a razor blade. This had caused profuse bleeding from the haemorrhoids and had necessitated the hospitalization discussed earlier in the paper. The interpretation that I had given in the hospital, that he wished to commit suicide, was

even clearer now. I had also interpreted to him at an earlier phase of treatment that through the haemorrhoids he had expressed his pregnancy and childbirth fantasies with the swelling, pain, and bleeding. Following this interpretation, he had had a dream in which he was in the hospital and a nurse was squeezing his haemorrhoids. He would have preferred that to what I was doing, namely squeezing his mind with analytic interpretations. The proctologist had advised haemorrhoidectomy. To the patient, this had symbolized Caesarean section. The bleeding from the penis, also self-inflicted, had symbolized castration. Now the haemorrhoids had disappeared, as had the pain and swelling, without an operation. He had no ulcerative colitis symptoms, no cramps, no diarrhoea. He had put on weight and felt stronger and better than he ever had in his life. And he still had his penis intact.

At this time in the treatment, he began to talk again about the nose operation. Actually, the wish for rhinoplasty was a recurrent theme in the analysis. I pointed out to him that he wanted an operation, and that it could be performed on the anus or the nose, but that it was really a displacement from the penis to the nose. He said that the only thing that prevented him from going ahead with surgery was the fear that he might not like the new nose. The wish for this operation was really the hope that a transformation into a girl could, in some way, be effected without the loss of the penis. He had a dream in which he was in my office and he experienced pain in his penis. He asked me to pull out a hair which was causing the pain. In the dream, I was preparing surgical instruments and he was afraid that I wanted to cut off his penis. The feeling in this dream was that this was his last session with me and that he would be cured; it fulfilled his expectation that the psycho-analysis would transform him into a girl, and that I would perform this operation on him. In connexion with the patient's wish to be a girl, now becoming apparent to him, he had a series of dreams in which he was buying girls' dresses. In one dream he tried on a beautiful evening gown. He had never acted out in reality his transvestist tendencies. He had always envied his sister. When she had a rhinoplasty he had decided that he would have one too. Shortly before he came to me for treatment he had made arrangements for the operation, but he had then become acutely disturbed and had had a severe exacerbation of the ulcerative colitis.

The patient was under psycho-analytic treatment with me for two years. The analysis was discontinued by mutual agreement, with the understanding that I would see him whenever he needed me. He had postponed the rhinoplasty until the end of the analysis, but now wished to undergo it. We had discussed his motives for rhinoplastic surgery carefully and I felt that I should not object to it, since he wanted my approval. Actually, although his nose



was large it was not, to my way of thinking, a disfigurement. He presented himself to me after the operation, and he looked well and seemed pleased and happy.

Treatment ended two years ago, and the patient has now been completely free of the ulcerative colitis symptoms for three and a half years. It will be recalled that he had constantly had these symptoms, with frequent and severe exacerbations, during the five years prior to entering psycho-analytic treatment. However, freedom from the symptoms of ulcerative colitis is not and should not be considered a proof of cure, even if it extends over a period of ten or twelve years, as has happened in some of the cases I have treated. I consider the change in the total personality of the patient and in his mode of living a more reliable indicator of the results of treatment. The patient, in the course of the analysis, in situations to which he had previously reacted with an exacerbation of the ulcerative colitis, no longer produced these symptoms; instead, he developed new ones—headaches. This process was an indication that the unconscious fantasies underlying the syndrome of ulcerative colitis had been made conscious and had been devaluated by the analysis. The ulcerative colitis symptoms proper (abdominal spasms and bloody diarrhoea) had permanently cleared up in the first half-year of the analysis. Towards the end of the first year the patient had started to date girls and had sexual relations with several girls. In his first attempt at intercourse, with a girl who was very kind and helpful to him, he reacted with panic at the sight of the vagina. He lost his erection, and when he regained it because he knew she wanted to have intercourse, he hid his penis from her. 'She was so pretty with her clothes on', he said to me.

There has been a basic change in the patient's relationship with his mother. He does not want her to caress him and call him pet names any more. He has even assumed some responsibility for her, and he considers this a very significant development. His brother, Bernie, now lives in a different state. After Bernie moved, the patient lived for a while with his married sister and his mother, but after a short time he decided to live with friends in his old neighbourhood. At the close of the analysis he felt that he was now ready for military service from which he had been twice deferred while undergoing treatment. He was found to be in good health and was inducted into the Army. At the re-examination, which included X-rays after barium enema and sigmoidoscopy, the final comment upon his condition was, 'This is not the same fellow we examined two years ago.'

#### COMMENTS ON THE DYNAMICS OF THE CASE AND OF THE TREATMENT

The use of the psycho-analytic technique, as demonstrated in the treatment of this patient

with ulcerative colitis, was predicated upon my conviction: (i) That the patient can and should be made aware of the impulses which are released gradually from the unconscious in the process of devaluating the somatic symptoms; and (ii) that, through the support of and relationship with the analyst, the patient can learn to tolerate and to cope with these impulses consciously and can give up the psychosomatic symptoms without developing psychotic reactions. Only a psychoanalyst who has gone through such an experience with an ulcerative colitis patient, and has convinced himself that the patient can relinquish his somatic symptoms when he has a real motive to do so, will be able to analyse and to effect a cure of such a patient. It seems to me that any other form of psychotherapy not only does not cure such a patient but actually militates against recovery. This is so because non-interpretative psychotherapy only reinforces the patient's feeling that his illness is beyond his understanding and control and that he can become a victim of it at any moment. The psychotherapist who fears to arouse the repressed impulses from the unconscious is faced with the dilemma of not adequately treating and not curing the patient in order to avoid the risk of releasing the psychotic elements inherent in the illness.

It follows from the views expressed above that the anaclitic type of psychotherapy (3) is inadvisable because it encourages the regressive tendencies of the patient and makes him inaccessible to psycho-analytic treatment later, in the sense that it has been described in the case material presented here. Anaclitic practices, such as the therapist preparing and administering meals to the patient, being available to the patient at all times, and relaxing controls with no limits set and with a minimum taxing of the patient, represent a repetition in the therapy of the grave mistakes made in the earlier life of the patient. Again, the patient is accepted and rewarded when sick and rejected when well, this time by the doctor, just as he had been by his environment, especially the mother.

Some analysts believe that it is advisable to postpone psycho-analytic interpretations until the patient loses his somatic symptoms. This view, in effect, says: 'When you are sick I'll be good to you and spare you, and when you are better I'll give you interpretation and painful reality, where you will discover the truth about yourself.' In this type of treatment, the patient, who is already fighting a losing battle against his infantile strivings, is only encouraged to regress.



Where is the motive for reality and health in this indulgent and narcissistically gratifying type of treatment? The reward is tremendous when the therapist, like the mother, gratifies the 'sick' wishes of the patient. There can be no growth in this type of psychotherapy, only a shift in dependence from mother to therapist. This was precisely what happened with my patient when I reduced his fee. This gesture, instead of reassuring him, provoked intense anxiety and resentment, because it meant to him that I wanted his lifelong dependence upon me and his compliance with my wishes, as did his mother and brother. The acute aggravation of his condition and the veiled suicidal attempt (bleeding from the cut haemorrhoid) was his rebellion against the analyst.

Psycho-analysis does not reward the dependence of the patient in the way that the mother or mother-substitute did originally, and as the therapist does in the anaclitic form of psychotherapy. Psycho-analysis, rather, helps the patient to form a new object-relationship with his analyst, and the analyst's support enables the patient to tolerate his pregenital impulses consciously without being overwhelmed by them (as in a psychotic break), and thus restores to the patient the energies for later sublimation (10). The choice does not have to be between 'sick' and 'crazy'. It is possible to prevent a psychotic break in the treatment of a patient with ulcerative colitis by a genuine separation of the patient from the object to which he has been tied in his illness. For the analyst to assume the rôle of an omnipotent parent is very dangerous, because it means to play in with the patient's need for omnipotence, and his need for projecting the responsibility for his behaviour upon the analyst.

It is my belief that psycho-analytic treatment prevented a psychotic break in my patient at the time of his brother's marriage. When the love object, the brother, had abandoned him, the patient felt that he was losing his motivation for playing along as the sick person. In the ulcerative colitis, the patient could gratify his passive and feminine wishes. He could play the rôle of the girl for his brother and that of the little child for his mother. At the same time, he could release his aggressive and destructive impulses instantly in the spasms and diarrhoea. At the time of his father's death, the patient was

suddenly forced to restrain his ill temper against his brother in order to assure himself of his brother's love. He actually had to give up his personality in order to create this relationship with his brother. When it was no longer worth while to repress the aggression, since he had lost the love object (when the brother got married), the patient alternated between devaluation and elimination of his brother in an exacerbation of the somatic symptoms, and giving way to his disappointment by relinquishing reality. This is a critical phase in the life of such a patient when, through the loss of the love object, the psychosomatic object-relationship which served to maintain the psychic equilibrium is suddenly altered.

In the ulcerative colitis and the haemorrhoids he had acted out somatically his wish to be a girl and to engage in her functions—swelling, bleeding, and expelling. Strong castration wishes were acted out in injury to the penis and displaced on to the nose. He was somatically acting out his anal birth fantasies by excreting faeces and blood through the anus. Diarrhoea and bleeding were also the ways in which he was separating himself from his mother (the original love object) as if he were squeezing her out, instead of her squeezing him out, as she did when he was born. Thus he was reversing and undoing the trauma of birth. Such wishes and fantasies had to be denied, since their breakthrough into consciousness could have led to frank psychotic behaviour.

The patient's fear of loss of control and of being overwhelmed by his perverse impulses, engendered his feelings of depersonalization. In the psychosomatic object-relationship, the ambivalently loved object was over-evaluated and became indispensable to the patient in reality, while devaluation and separation took place in the somatic symptoms. On several occasions in this patient's life, when he felt abandoned and was ready to give way to his rage and disregard for the disappointing love object, the psychosomatic object-relationship came very close to changing into a psychotic object-relationship (9). It was particularly in this area that immediate psycho-analytic intervention proved most successful and prevented the patient from having a psychotic break. The outcome refutes the still prevalent idea that psycho-analysis is inadvisable in such a case.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

(1) DANIELS, G. E. (1940). 'Treatment of Ulcerative Colitis Associated with Hysterical

Depression.' *Psychosom. Med.*, 2, 276.

(2) ENGEL, GEORGE E. 'Studies of Ulcerative



Colitis: III, The Nature of the Psychologic Processes.' *Amer. J. Med.*, August 1955, 231-256.

(3) MARGOLIN, S. G. (1952). 'Symposium on Psychotherapy in Medical and Surgical Hospitals,' American Psychoanalytic Association (1951); (abstract) *Bull. of Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 8, 170.

(4) MURRAY, C. D. (1930). 'Psychogenic Factors in the Etiology of Ulcerative and Bloody Diarrhea.' *Am. J. med. Sci.*, 180, 289.

(5) MUSHATT, C. 'Psychological Aspects of Non-specific Ulcerative Colitis,' *Recent Developments in Psychosomatic Medicine*. (London: Pitman; 1954, Ch. 19, p. 345.)

(6) SPERLING, M. (1948). 'Diarrhoea: A Specific Somatic Equivalent of an Unconscious Emotional Conflict.' *Psychosom. Med.*, 10, No. 6.

(7) — (1952). 'A Psychoanalytic Study of

Migraine and Psychogenic Headache.' *Psychoanal. Rev.*, 39.

(8) — (1946). 'Psychoanalytic Study of Ulcerative Colitis in Children.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 15, 302.

(9) — (1955). 'Psychosis and Psychosomatic Illness.' *Int. J. Psycho-anal.*, 36.

(10) — 'Psychotherapeutic Techniques in Psychosomatic Medicine.' *Specialized Techniques in Psychotherapy*. (New York: Basic Books, 1952, 279.)

(11) SULLIVAN, A. J., and CHANDLER, C. A. (1931-32). 'Ulcerative Colitis of Psychogenic Origin.' *Yale J. Biolog. Med.*, 4, 799.

(12) WITTKOWER, E. (1938). 'Ulcerative Colitis, Personality Studies.' *Brit. med. J.*, 2, 1356.

(Received 16 April, 1956.)

## TWO TYPES OF PREOEDIPAL CHARACTER DISORDERS

By

ISIDOR SILBERMANN, M.D., NEW YORK

Two groups of preoedipal character distortions are to be considered here: (a) those with autistic tendencies; and (b) those with symbiotic tendencies. Using the ego as our point of departure, these two groups of preoedipal character disturbances are contrasted with Kanner's autistic infantile and Mahler's symbiotic infantile psychoses.

All the disorders referred to have their source in the ego nucleus. Nevertheless, its involvement in these infantile psychoses is quite different from that in the preoedipal character disorders.

It may be assumed that the ego nucleus has its origin in the innate aversion to stimuli, that is in the stimulus-barrier. Since stimuli cannot be reacted to in the absence of perception, and since we must therefore assume that the stimulus-barrier is dependent on perception, we must postulate, *a priori*, the existence of a primordial perceptive system. Further, we must postulate in the ego-nucleus the retention of primordial reactions to stimuli, in the form of residual memory traces.

Without such postulations, the development and growth of the ego nucleus become vague concepts that cannot be manipulated for constructive purposes. They are, however, definitive realities, as real as the ego nucleus itself, whose many functions were systematized at some early period of human development and then transmitted from generation to generation as the matrix of the ego, or, according to Hartmann, as the autonomous part of the ego.

The ego nucleus includes many autonomous factors which encompass the faculty of perception, the aversion to stimuli, the primordial memory, and the functions of primitive differentiation and synthesis, and of self-preservation, as well as the inhibitory functions. It also comprises the basic function of transforming, taming, and binding the drive energies. Freud's concept of delibidinization has reference to these processes. Hartmann, Kris, and Loewenstein speak of the neutralization of the drives.

Freud was the first to conceive of the ego

nucleus as historically determined, embracing, in the form of autonomous factors, the experiences and reactions of our progenitors, the subsequent trends of development, and the primal congenital ego variations.

The development of the ego proper depends on (i) the innate autonomous factors, (ii) the instinctual drives, and (iii) reality. The energy for the activation and continuous functioning of all these factors is derived from the instinctual drives, which for this purpose must be transformed, bound, and tamed, or neutralized.

If the activation and growth of these autonomous factors depend on the neutralization of the drives, then we must assume that neutralization, which is the process of transformation, taming, and binding the drive energies, is one of the earliest tasks of the ego nucleus. Thus if a disturbance of its anlage appears, the process of neutralization will be found wanting and in consequence will cause a defect in the developing ego nucleus, and *ipso facto* in the ego itself.

To neutralize, then, means to render innocuous the undesirable and potentially toxic properties of a substance. In the case of the ego nucleus it means to deprive the drives of their id attributes. The transformed and tamed drives, however, do not become undifferentiated. They do not reappear as identical neutral energies. Rather, they retain specific propensities. In the ego, for instance, we find tamed and sublimated libido as the organizing force, the synthesizing power in various forms, the energy responsible for the secondary process, particularly at that point where conflicting elements must be reconciled (Nunberg).

To formulate this concept in another way, tamed and transformed—neutralized—aggression appears in the ego in the guise of differentiation, abstraction, censorship, inhibitory function, and defences.

The primitive ego nucleus with its many diversified functions affords much room for disturbances of various kinds. There are innumerable permutations and combinations which



may result from improper functioning, faulty distribution of energy, inadequate or inefficient neutralization of the drives, inadequate synthesis, and defects in the anlage of the motor and sensory apparatus. Developmental disturbances of the drives might also tend to bring about difficulties in the necessary process of transforming, taming, and binding the id drives. These inadequacies in the structure may, according to Anna Freud, explain many childhood illnesses which cannot be predicated solely on the assumption of failure in object relationships due to a rejecting mother figure.

A properly developing ego nucleus guarantees, so to speak, proper neutralization and the development of a healthy ego; a defective ego nucleus produces the reverse. It causes an invasion of the ego by an excessive amount of untamed and untransformed id drives, resulting in a distortion of the personality, with consequent faulty adjustment and adaptation, failure of discrimination, inadequate conceptual development, and so on. It is a vicious circle, for the defective ego nucleus creates a defective ego, and a defective ego must fail in its destined aim to bring the autonomous functions of the nucleus under its control. This failure, in turn, must retard the growth of the ego.

The *sine qua non* for the very life of the foetus is its parasite-host relationship, its intrauterine symbiotic and anaclitic clinging to the mother (H. Deutsch). After birth, which forcibly interrupts this unity, the early infantile phase is characterized by vague and primitive perceptions, wild and seemingly aimless and futile motions, and crude, indiscriminate defensive reflex actions in the form of violent eruptions which could easily cause an overflow of discharge reactions and affect motor storms. If not relieved, they may lead to organismic distress, semi-stupor, or even death (cf. Greenacre, Mahler, and Ribble).

The newborn infant needs complementation for survival, which is achieved by the psychological rapport between the nursing mother and the child or, we might say, by a continuation of symbiosis (Mahler). The power of the enormous symbiotic wave which arises at birth does not lose its strength immediately after birth, but continues its impact far beyond childhood, an impact which at times may become overwhelming. It is a reasonable assumption that the infant could not survive the trauma of birth if the intrauterine real symbiosis were not replaced by an extrauterine social symbiosis.

It is difficult for any individual to overcome his symbiotic tendencies. Great effort at maturation is required for the child ultimately to become independent in all directions. Without external stimuli, he would prefer not to extend his horizons, not to withdraw from the protective maternal fold. The conscious perceptual system, according to Freud, must be progressively cathected in order that the self may be developed and supported step by step.

The child must span the tremendous gap between himself and the outer world, for which purpose he uses his mother as a kind of extended arm. Out of his symbiotic unity with her, he slowly proceeds from the limited mouth- and body-ego to the almost unlimited establishment of his developing and maturing ego (W. Hoffer).

This transition is often slowed down by the reactions and attitudes of some mothers who feel that the baby's body belongs to them (Anna Freud and Dorothy Burlingham). In such instances the recognition of a non-ego is delayed, the child remains imprisoned in a delimited sphere, continuing in an undifferentiated state for a prolonged period of time, and presenting a low stimulus tolerance. Should he, however, successfully avoid these pitfalls, his ego will gradually develop into a system for dealing with various stimuli through new techniques of testing and adaptation. This development is brought about by energies made increasingly available to meet ever-changing demands for unimpeded functioning.

During the period of secession from the mother-child unity, children are extremely vulnerable, particularly those with serious pathology of their somatopsychic symbiosis (A. Freud, Greenacre, Hoffer, Mahler, B. Rank, and Spitz).

Since we know that a prolonged infantile symbiosis also plays a considerable role in primitive groups (Mary O'Neal Hawkins' observations of the Navajo), it may be conjectured that symbiosis is most powerful when man and society are young, but gradually loses potency as each grows older.

Assuming that symbiosis is an expression of the Eros, we may infer that its unifying force operates in the foreground at the beginning of life, but as the years advance slowly fades into the background.

The mother-child bond may be pathological for various reasons, such as inherent structural defects of the ego nucleus, delayed maturation,



environmental damage, pathology of the mother, or the like.

If pathology is the result of only a minor deviation in the nuclear function, indicated by too prolonged clinging to, or too abrupt severance from the mother, environmental influences may partially compensate for this and lead to at least some measure of normal development (Anna Freud, Hartmann, and Kris). On the other hand, a minor deficiency may be severely aggravated by inadequate maternal care or a pathological mother.

A major ego nucleus defect, however, predisposes a child to remain disturbed—either estranged in his relationships, or over-persistent in his symbiotic cravings—a point well illustrated by Kanner's Autistic Infantile and Mahler's Symbiotic Infantile Psychoses.

The Kanner child has no affective awareness. He never seems to have perceived the mother emotionally as the representative of the outside world, nor does he respond to other objects in the world around him. He is withdrawn and remains severed and alone. B. Rank and MacNaughton describe him as having a feather-weight quality, lacking body contours and body substance. He does not seem able to overcome the separation from the mother, and the trauma of severance initiated by the birth seems to persist. His instinctual drives are apparently unchanged, only slightly transformed and tamed. Thus they cannot be utilized for the proper functioning of the ego nucleus, or in consequence for the development of the ego.

The Mahler child shows a marked mother-infant relationship, but does not advance to the stage of object libidinal cathexis of the mother. In Hoffer's words, the child is unable to replace 'the milieu interne by the psychological object'. L. Bender speaks of these children as melting in one's arms. They are mostly 'cry-babies', oversensitive infants, whose brittle egos are easily cracked by separation anxiety.

The autistic psychotic child remains a stranger to his mother. But the symbiotic psychotic child continues as a parasite. Since his ego nucleus seems less severely damaged, the trauma of birth is more successfully coped with, and his drives, particularly the aggressive drives, are somewhat more favourably manipulated. However, the functions of neutralization, differentiation, and synthesis show obvious defects, and thus serious ego distortions are foreshadowed.

These defects and distortions are likely to bring about disturbances in the proper fusion

of the aggressive and libidinal drives. We encounter in such individuals certain confusions as to love and hate, sexuality, identity, the perceptive and reasoning processes, and the cathexis of the self and of objects (Edith Jacobson).

It seems clear, from this point of view, that the bisexual conflict is not the immediate cause of the psychotic breakdown (as Mahler assumed), but is one of the consequences of a structural defect of the ego nucleus. Another consequence of this defect is the ambivalence which is so outstanding a feature of these patients.

It is appropriate now to describe two types of patients who present severe and sometimes frustrating problems in our psycho-analytic work. The analyst not infrequently encounters patients whose progress, after some degree of forward movement, reaches a plateau and remains inert over long periods. Such patients are not necessarily psychotic, but show odd features which may tempt one to make inaccurate diagnoses, such as borderline case, dormant simple schizophrenia, even pseudo-schizophrenic neurosis, unclear mixed neurosis, psychopathy, and so on.

These patients may manifest acute anxiety, phobias, obsessive-compulsive symptoms and character traits, and bisexual confusion which vaguely suggests what Greenacre has termed 'bodily hallucinations of a bisexual nature', and depressions, passivity, and marked ambivalence. They either crave attachments which they cannot quite manage to achieve or sustain, because their attempts are half-hearted and unrealistic, or they antagonize the very people they wish to attract. They are cognizant of the fragile nature of their relationships, and they are frequently aware of the ambivalence of their attitudes, which are in part full of longing, in part hostile. They are also aware of their sexual disturbances, which may appear as tendencies toward perversions, homosexual inclinations, ill-conceived identifications, sadistic and masochistic desires, impotence, and so on.

There is an impression of vagueness, as if a thick layer of insulation surrounds them. Somehow they appear unfinished, infantile, and emotionally immature. While frequently successful in their occupations, and at times even outstanding, they betray the presence of effective barriers in their thinking, in their ability to advance from the concrete to the abstract, from the personal to the general.

Nothing seems to have validity unless they can



relate it directly to themselves. They resemble spiders who are unable to move freely except within the confines of the webs they themselves have spun. There are no hallucinations, delusions, ataxic, chaotic thinking, or disruptive functions. Sublimations seem more pseudo than real, and are similar to the character traits—not autonomous in the sense of Hartmann's secondary autonomy, but clearly defensive in nature. The ego shows clearly delineated defensive measures solidly cast in cemented character traits.

A deficiency of synthesis as well as of differentiation is visible. In consequence, we are confronted with inadequate integration into the gestalt. This inadequacy manifests itself also in the failure to incorporate the various ego parts into a functional unit (Hartmann), or to phrase it differently, into the 'gestalt of the ego'. It is considered normal to be possessed of one personality instead of many. The reasoning, the defensive, the social, and the organizing ego are not intended to lead independent lives, but must be synthesized into a workable whole. These patients seem somehow to be composed of isolated parts, reminding one of an orchestra whose individual instruments, though played beautifully, are not integrated into one harmonious whole.

People like these apparently were born with an ill-equipped, undeveloped, inadequately prepared ego nucleus, which makes them unduly sensitive to environmental influences. They face life as though they were in a state of semi-liquidity and have no choice after birth but to flow into the maternal mould. Since their disturbance is not too stormy, it can be compensated, and they may be piloted into calmer channels if they are fortunate enough to be the children of parents who are able to handle them wisely, and with whom they can identify successfully. If, however, their lives are encircled by clinging, possessive, infantile-symbiotic or indifferent, sadistic, infantile, self-centred mothers, this deficiency is likely to be augmented.

These patients may be divided into the two major classes of preoedipal character disorders being dealt with here. The two groups, though possessing many features in common, are actually unlike. Because they bear resemblance to the two infantile psychotic types, I have labelled them: (a) preoedipal character disorders with autistic tendencies, and (b) preoedipal character disorders with symbiotic tendencies.

A patient from each group is described in the

following section, viewed from the vantage point of the ego. Both cases were severely traumatized in early childhood. However, one responded by withdrawal and limited interest in his environment, the other by too intensive and prolonged dependency. Both patients showed much faulty object-cathexis.

I. The first type, the character disorder with autistic tendencies, is exemplified by a brilliant young student who came to analysis because of depression, inability to concentrate, and failure to achieve or sustain any genuine attachment for people or objects.

Investigation disclosed an abundance of obsessive-compulsive symptoms and character traits, sadistic and masochistic as well as oral and anal fantasies, hypochondriacal fears, mild phobias, and homosexual and feminine cravings. His masturbatory fantasies centred around beatings and enemas, with painful and pleasurable extension of his body. He felt that his penis was rudimentary and he himself passive and feminine. To others, however, he wished to appear tough and vulgar.

Regarding his relationships with people, ever since childhood he had lived a quasi-tangential existence, precariously on the verge of social contact with people. He felt himself to be a lonely person, with only shallow ties. From time to time he would make timid excursions into the outer world, but, alas, these half-adventures inevitably ended in failure. At such times he appeared eager yet cynical, arrogant and aggressive. He had erected an impenetrable wall of isolation about himself. While he did not feel persecuted, considering no one hostile to him except himself, he fantasied that he was unwanted by the more fortunate ones.

The patient was still an infant when his father became seriously ill and died. The mother occupied herself exclusively with the business of providing for her distressed family, and surrendered her infant son completely to the care of his grandmother. At first the child rebelled, his rebellion taking the form of restlessness and crying. Soon, however, he changed into a passive, remote, and seemingly undemanding baby.

The grandmother forced food, toilet training, and enemas upon him. She handled him roughly and did not permit him to play with other children. She surrounded herself as well as him with a thick layer of insulation designed to render futile any attempt he might make to become part of the world. His mother was home only at night while he was asleep, and the atmosphere was like that of an underground dwelling—devoid of sunshine, warmth, or gaiety. He soon feared people, he feared the human touch lest harm come to him, he feared sleep because dreaded nightmares came to haunt him.



In school he was always a good student, well-behaved but shy and fearful, a passive rebel and an effeminate boy. Yet from time to time he would unexpectedly lunge out of his shell to strike another child. He felt neither personal hatred nor enmity, but was driven by a retaliatory passion against the world at large, as he himself expressed it. This impersonal hostility remained with him until maturity. In college he selected non-competitive pursuits, put reason to work, and kept his feelings under lock and key. Given to mechanical thinking unimpeded by any personal emotional involvements, he was able to maintain this tightrope equipoise as long as his attitude was not challenged.

At an early age anal fantasies of enemas and beatings erupted. He imagined himself overpowered by his mother who, with endless ingenuity, forced variously sized enemas into him. In turn, he fancied himself employing the same devices on other children, outdoing his mother in violence and his grandmother in aggression.

His dearest wish was to be left alone, for in his mind seclusion represented security. His own words portray his symbiotic longing, as he tries to describe the reasons for his withdrawal from life: "I want to live in darkness and seclusion. Then no light will hurt me, no harm will come to me. I belonged from birth to the untouchables. I was isolated and neglected, and treated with viciousness; and I'm destined to bear the curse of my life, to be a stranger to the rest of the world. There is just one thing for me to do. I can only wither away since I am cut off from the real and the giving."

The patient was a sad-looking person, shy and fearful, who glanced at others only through the corners of his eyes. None the less, he was keen minded and argumentative. As a child he watched children at play, but always on the fringe, never as a participant. As a grown-up, too, he remained on the periphery, viewing people with the eyes of a forlorn child peering through a Christmas window. When invited to join in, he would run away, trembling with fear. Although he longed to change, he seemed unable to shake off his inhibiting fetters. In other words, he could not visualize himself as accepting, acceptable, or accepted.

He envied people and begrudged them their good fortune. He persisted in his uninterrupted pattern of severance, and although he had proved himself a brilliant student, he began to neglect his studies and was ultimately dismissed from college. At work he was so uncooperative and obstructive that he was discharged, and in his analysis he was endlessly provocative, as though he aimed at being punished and rejected. Although he was obviously well educated and artistic, the impression he left with people was that of an ineffectual, unsubstantial, vague kind of personality, unpleasantly aloof.

He was apparently unable to advance to an adequate level of integration. For instance, when

he thought of a woman, her breasts and buttocks would be sharply defined, while other parts of her body remained blurred. Also, he never entered into any undertaking as a whole, but only piecemeal, attacking each step as he came to it. It was impossible for him to plan or even visualize the whole procedure from the outset. This weakness, however, was easily concealed from others, since his work performance in its end result was generally satisfactory.

During the course of his analysis he often felt compelled to make remarks which he himself recognized as being silly and unrealistic, to the effect that he was surrounded by enemies, or that he was unable to trust his mother, or his analyst. Although he said he knew he was being irrational, he still found it necessary and proper to guard himself against unpleasant surprises by freeing himself of any and all emotional involvements. Aimless existence was his chosen destiny. He said he was aware that he ought to change from his 'old self'. Yet he wanted somehow to remain unaltered, to retain the familiar intonation of his voice, the processes and content of his thinking, etc. In relation to the rest of the world, he preferred to remain the outsider whose ideas roamed freely in the sphere of the simple, the limited, and the not too definite. He preferred to remain antagonistic to the world, to his family, to the analyst's knowledge, as well as to the analyst's attempts 'to stuff things down my throat'.

Interpretations, he said, made him sick. They provoked trembling and suspiciousness. At the same time, he expressed great delight with his analysis to which, he assured me, he was eager to contribute as much as he possibly could. There was constant vacillation between the wish to be a full participant and the urge to hold himself aloof. Whenever he became cognizant of the desire to advance, he would at once retreat.

Immaturity and infantile attitudes enchanted him, and he found no real enjoyment in making progress. He preferred masturbation to intercourse, boasting, 'It's so easy and pleasant to masturbate to the tune of enemas'.

For quite a while his analysis represented to him the state of being gorged with huge amounts of enema fluid which made him feel replete and satisfied, yet fearful and imperilled at the same time.

Similarly, the patient's profuse reading and study merely served to help him accumulate more and more knowledge which remained, as it were, in the 'rectum of his brain'. This unrelated and useless mass of knowledge was not synthesized or integrated, but lodged, compartmentalized, in the back room of his mind. His studies were a mixture of pleasure and pain, like his enemas, and like his analysis.

He was in a constant state of bewilderment,



utterly unable to determine whether what his mother, or his teachers, or his analyst, or anyone offered him was to be considered good or bad. Hence he craved and he feared simultaneously. The maternal breast was visualized with confusion and despair, never appreciated as something gently and affectionately inserted in his mouth, but rather as something like an enema thrust violently into his anus. There was total confusion about these two portals of entry. Thus good food, a symbol of love, became obnoxious and poisonous.

For short periods he would feel that the analyst resembled a giving and propitious mother whose words were soothing and enriching. Before long, however, he would convert the analyst's words into suspicious, hostile statements. Gentleness merged into attack. He felt that instead of comforting sweet milk, freezing anal food was being given him. He recalled how his grandmother forced food down his throat ruthlessly, stuffing him as if she were a witch intent on ultimately devouring him.

In dreams he repeatedly saw the figure of a child compelled to submit to an enema. The tube broke and the damaged portion was pressed into his mouth, stopping his breath. In many dreams he saw himself in great danger. Once he dreamed he was swimming in a pool surrounded by sea lions which suddenly attacked and destroyed each other. In this dream he himself was a kind of sea animal who, though he remained unharmed, could not extricate himself from the bloody water and the filthy mess.

Not only was he a vivid night dreamer, but he also had prolific daydreams. These centred mostly around his preoedipal wishes and his oral and anal sadistic desires and frustrations. His defences were rigid and limited, and they were firmly embedded in obsessive-compulsive oral and anal character traits. He was replete with ambivalence, betraying bisexual confusion, pregenital sexuality, excessively concrete thinking, and a totally immature personality.

There is no doubt that this young man's ego development showed a patent flaw. Since it is a feature of the immature ego state not to possess a proper sense of proportion and to be incapable of evaluating and judging correctly, it is not surprising that everything in which his emotions were involved was out of focus. Many years ago I described similar phenomena during the period of ego reconstruction in patients recovering from coma.

II. The case that illustrates a preoedipal character disorder with symbiotic tendencies is represented by a man of 34 who had been plagued by phobias of various kinds for many years, and was unable to ride on trains, cars, boats and the like. He also presented numerous obsessive-compulsive features, hypochondriacal symptoms, depressed moods, and acute anxieties

concerning his potency, health, sexual identity, and so on.

He was markedly ambivalent, submissive, shy, and over-flaccid in his relationships. On the other hand, he was not unaggressive in his studies and work. At college he had been an outstanding student and was highly esteemed in his professional work. Although he had many acquaintances, his relations with them were casual or at best tenuous. His friends often complained about his childishness and recognized in him some lack of 'rhyme and reason'.

He seemed to be joined to his mother by an elastic band which permitted him a certain freedom, but drew him back whenever he attempted to stretch its tether too far. Panic would then drive him quickly to close protective shelter. The mother controlled his life by deciding what was good and what was bad for him. He could not have any wishes of his own. As a youngster, he had not been permitted to play with other children, or to ride a bike, or travel on a train or in an automobile because of the possible danger. Later on he was allowed to make use of a trolley car, but only after his mother had given him her blessing and muttered her admonitions and magic formulas.

He was kept under constant surveillance. His temperature, pulse, breathing, eating, and bowel habits were scrutinized as if he were in perpetual danger. His mother maintained that he always looked sickly and pale. She would put him to bed even when there was nothing really wrong, immolating him in blankets and hot water bottles until he felt he was melting away and losing his identity. She persisted in bathing him through his adolescence, subjecting him to sexual stimulation and seduction. He was her exclusive property, to such an extreme extent that she considered her second child an unwelcome intruder who had been thrust upon her against her will.

In school the patient never rebelled or protested but was always ingratiating. Since he was too timid ever to be intrusive, he was universally well liked. In fact, he was intolerably the good boy, the picture of a well-behaved, shy, unaggressive, model child, who by some trick of nature had emerged a boy instead of a girl, as he himself put it.

Since his father was a somewhat crude person, the mother felt even more justified in hovering protectively over her son. She considered it necessary, until he was almost 16 years old, to sleep in the same bed with him, her body in close proximity to his. Tortured by the desire to have intercourse with her, he would press his erect penis against her buttocks. Incidentally, like the previous patient, he too grew up under the relentlessly protective pressure of laxatives and enemas.

The patient remained unmarried because he felt his mother would languish if he left her, and also



because he never felt secure enough to tear himself away from her grip. Women were attracted to him because of his gentleness and unaggressiveness, and many wanted to marry him. He escaped from their toils, however, most skilfully, returning each time to Mama. In his sexual relationships he was passive and impatient, an ever-seeking and unsatiated Casanova.

This patient was a tender, friendly, submissive 'goody-goody' who felt dependent and in need of direction and support. He rarely argued, but was usually quick to agree. He was considerate and faithful to his friends. He found it extremely difficult to be alone, and in his need for people he clung to them as to a lifeline. Aggression against anyone was alien to him. Yet in spite of all these virtues, there was an intangible something in the interplay between him and his world that gave the impression of unreadiness, insulation and unnaturalness; and more of a forced than a spontaneous charm. He, like the other patient, was aware of being out of tune and claimed he was most eager to change his ways and free himself of his symptoms.

He described his mother as an immature person, eternally possessive, one who had never given him a chance to grow up as an independent human being. He was not able to break through the protective symbiotic net in which he was caught and which prevented him from becoming integrated into a mature person. He showed a marked tendency to concrete thinking, and was given to magic beliefs, superstitions, and generalizations. He was ambivalent and bisexually confused, and possessed many oral and anal characteristics.

At first glance, both cases might suggest obsessive-compulsive character disorders. However, closer observation shows our two patients to be people with strange and faulty object relationships and with inadequate personality integration. Patient number one was severed and alien—a constant seeker after loneliness, an ardent preserver of his tangential existence and his antagonistic isolation. Patient number two was a clinging, immature 'tentacle character', who dared not leave the maternal fold and free himself from his mother's magic power, and who in like vein aimed to remain a termless patient forever nursed by his analyst. Patient number one seemed daringly to challenge the world, rejecting all closeness and attachment. Patient number two submitted endlessly to people whose energies apparently propelled him to better functioning.

The *autistic character disorder*, symbiotically starved, may be likened to an immoderate anal system; the *symbiotic character disorder*, sym-

biotically overfed, to a large open-mouthed stomach eager to receive and never filled to satisfaction. Or, in 'libido-stage' language, patient number one seems to be a faecal mass, unworthy, lifeless, and detached, like his dead father; whereas patient number two is swallowed up by his mother into whose 'innards' he fits as into a mould. (The 'as if' cases reported by H. Deutsch do not tally with the descriptions of the patients depicted above.)

The analysis of the autistic-like patient was far less rewarding to the analyst than to the analysand. Although he improved, his total structure underwent no markedly perceptible alteration. Reconstruction of his childhood was inadequate. Because of his diffusion, a systematic development could not be achieved. His masochism prevented his being successful, and his aggressions converted favourable factors into destructive and disturbing elements.

The symbiotic-like patient, on the other hand, with his passive, yielding attitudes presented much less difficulty, and the results obtained were much more favourable in all respects. However, he too could not totally free himself of his clinging mechanism. Although his overt symptoms disappeared, they left a residual shadow. From time to time he obsessively brooded about them. His pathological defence mechanism remained for a long time securely anchored in his character traits.

The persistence of these patients in their pathology, their cathectic fidelity (to use Freud's term), their inability to part with anything belonging to them, the adhesiveness of their libido (as Freud reported in *Analysis Terminable and Interminable*), their clinging to their symptoms and irrational behaviour, and to their dependence and isolation, are apparently due to an abnormal utilization of the libidinal drive which, improperly tamed, transformed, and bound, retains too much id quality, thus causing a disturbance of the synthesizing functions of the ego. These patients seem to fear that relinquishing anything belonging to them, including symptoms, might lead to a disintegration of their painfully maintained selves.

In summarizing, I shall try to differentiate the two main groups, the infantile psychoses on the one hand, and the preoedipal character disorders on the other.

We may surmise that in both infantile psychoses there is a marked defect in the ego nucleus with failure in the necessary process of transforming, taming, and controlling the id



properties of the drives. As a consequence, the drives are precariously and insufficiently 'de-id-ed'. As previously pointed out, I hold that the task of initiating the process of neutralization is one of the most fundamental, and one of the earliest functions of the ego nucleus.

In the autistic psychotic child the nucleus apparently has very little 'de-id-ed' energy at its disposal. This causes the aggressive destructive forces of the id to become dominant and persist after birth in their unmodified role. It would seem as if the libido, having found its position hopeless and untenable, had surrendered it. The child remains severed from his environment, and if maternal care is not imposed upon him, he withers away into semistupor and even death. His ego does not develop to any extent, nor does it show any power against the downward thrust of the aggressive drive.

For the symbiotic psychotic child we may assume a somewhat less disturbed and disabling condition. Libido is available in greater proportions, tamed, transformed, and bound to a larger degree, thus balancing to some extent the potency of the aggressive drive. However, since insufficient amounts of drive energies are thoroughly neutralized, the formation of the ego nucleus is abortive, and its functions weak and unstable. Although the birth trauma carries less disaster, the newborn child needs an abundant supply of maternal libido for its growth; and it can continue to thrive only if the intrauterine parasite-host relationship is replaced by extrauterine long-lasting symbiosis of mother and child.

A successful contest between the libidinal and aggressive drives, a state of equilibrium, adequate regulation and fusion—these cannot be achieved without a well-functioning ego nucleus, which, however, cannot develop without proper neutralization of the instinctual drives. Therefore to deprive a part of the drives of their id quality and transform and prepare them for the ego functions is essential at a very early stage of life. We may surmise that one of the first steps in the formation of the ego nucleus is precisely this process of neutralization or transformation of the drives.

This process, I assume, has its origin in the sexual drive. Thus, if there is a defect in libido endowment or its anlage, neutralization or the process of 'de-id-ing' must be defective if it does not fail altogether. One might imagine that for this process to secure its initial impetus a part of the sexual drive is transformed, if the

analogy is permissible, into a kind of psychic enzyme which after its formation keeps the process going. The assumption would appear to be justified that the transformation and taming of the aggressive drive must be undertaken initially and that its modification must be of greater scope and intensity than the alterations of the sexual drive. This assumption is based on the very nature of the aggressive drive.

It may be said that these pathological pictures of defects in the ego nucleus imply a chain reaction, commencing with libido defects and disturbances. Expressed somewhat differently, a dysfunction of the sexual drive precipitates the basic trouble.

Regarding the second main group, the preoedipal character disorders with autistic or symbiotic tendencies, we might assume a disturbance of the ego nucleus only in the sense of a *deficiency* due to a delay, in whole or in part, in the process of transforming, taming, and binding the id drives. These children at birth are not quite ready, and have not yet attained sufficiently adequate maturation of the ego nucleus to cope successfully with life's excitations. Their equilibrium is too precarious, and too labile.

We may further say that the infantile psychotic child, being constitutionally damaged, does not possess the wherewithal to create an ego capable of functioning, whereas the preoedipal character disorder child, being equipped merely with an immature and developmentally delayed ego nucleus, will, if unfavourably exposed, develop an immature and incompetent ego.

Translating our concepts into physical terms, we might say that the normal infant has achieved a state of semi-solidity. The character disorder child, however, is in a state of semi-liquidity.

The character disorder child with his still 'fluid psychic substance' flows into the proffered mould and assumes the form and shape of his parents, particularly his mother, and pathologically identifies and surrenders to the love object (A. Freud). His development and psychic configuration will depend for ego complementation on the care-giving person.

Schematically expressed, where the mother's personality plays into the hands of his aggressive drives, he will become an autistic character, or conversely a symbiotic character, where the libidinal forces are favoured. In other words, if the mother's aggressions are added to his, the precarious balance will tend toward the aggressive autistic position. If she adds her own

clinging symbiotic tendencies to his, a symbiotic distortion will result.

We may anticipate that this type of disturbed child, if wisely dealt with by a loving, balanced,

and mature mother, will stand a good chance of attaining, even though belatedly, a reasonable degree of maturation and a state of relative well-being.

#### REFERENCES

- (1) BENDER, L. 'Childhood Schizophrenia', *Amer. J. Orthopsych.*, 17, 1947.
- (2) DEUTSCH, H. *Psychology of Women*. (New York: Grune and Stratton.)
- (3) — 'Über einen Typus der Pseudo-affektivität (Als-Ob)', *Int. Z. f. Psychoanal.*, 20, 1934.
- (4) FREUD, ANNA. 'Negativism and Emotional Surrender' (Abstracts), *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 33, p. 265, 1951.
- (5) — 'The Mutual Influence in the Development of the Ego and Id', *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 7, 1952.
- (6) — and BURLINGHAM, D. *Infants without Family*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1944.)
- (7) FREUD, S. *Coll. Papers*, Vol. 2.
- (8) — 'Analysis Terminable and Interminable', *Coll. Papers*, Vol. 5.
- (9) — *A General Introduction to Psychoanalysis*.
- (10) — *The Origins of Psychoanalysis*. (London, 1950.)
- (11) — *The Ego and the Id*.
- (12) GREENACRE, P. 'The Biological Economy of Birth', *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 1.
- (13) — Quotation in Mahler's paper, *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 7, p. 294.
- (14) HARTMANN, H. 'Ich Psychologie und Anpassungs Problem', *Int. Z. f. Psychoanal. u. Imago*, 27, 1939.
- (15) — 'The Psychoanalytic Theory of Instinctual Drives', *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 17, 1948.
- (16) — 'Comments on the Psychoanalytic Theory of the Ego', *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 5.
- (17) — 'Psychoanalysis and Developmental Psychology', *ibid.*, 5.
- (18) — 'Mutual Influences in the Development of the Ego and Id', *ibid.*, 7.
- (19) — KRIS, E., and LOEWENSTEIN, R. 'Comments on the Formation of the Psychic Structure', *ibid.*, 2.
- (20) —, —, — 'Notes on the Theory of Aggression', *ibid.*, 3 and 4.
- (21) HOFFER, W. 'Mouth-Hand and Ego Integration', *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 7.
- (22) — 'Development of the Body Ego', *ibid.*, 5.
- (23) — 'Mutual Influences in the Development of the Ego and Id, Earliest Stages', *ibid.*, 7.
- (24) JACOBSON, EDITH. 'Contribution to the Metapsychology of Cyclothymic Depression.' *Affective Disorders*. Ed. Phyllis Greenacre. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1953.)
- (25) KANNER, L. 'Autistic Disturbances of Affective Contact', *Amer. J. Orthopsych.*, 12, 1942.
- (26) — 'Early Infantile Automatism', *Amer. J. Orthopsych.*, 19, 1949.
- (27) KRIS, E. 'Development and Problems of Child Psychology', *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 5.
- (28) NUNBERG, H. *Principles of Psychoanalysis*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1955.)
- (29) — 'Synthetic Function of the Ego', *Practice and Theory of Psychoanalysis*, 1948.
- (30) RANK, B., and MACNAUGHTON, D. 'A Clinical Contribution to Early Ego Development', *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 5.
- (31) RIBBLE, M. 'Disorganizing Factors in Infantile Personality', *Amer. J. Psych.*, 98.
- (32) SCHOENBERGER-MAHLER, M. 'On Child Psychosis and Schizophrenia; Autistic and Symbiotic Infantile Psychoses', *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 7.
- (33) SILBERMANN, I. 'The Psychical Experiences during Shocks in Shock Therapy', *Int. J. Psychoanal.*, 21, 1940.
- (34) SPITZ, R. 'Anaclitic Depression', *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 2, 1947.

(Received 26 October, 1955)



## OBITUARY

ERNST KRIS

1900-1957

In the early hours of 27 February Ernst Kris died at his home in New York, leaving behind his wife, Dr. Marianne Kris, and two children, a graduate and a student of medicine. His distinction in two fields, that of the history of art as well as that of psycho-analysis, has been recognized far beyond the closer circle of his professional associates. Both the New York Psychoanalytic Society and the American Psychoanalytic Association had conferred on him their Honorary Membership, honours which he shared with but a very few.

Kris came to psycho-analysis in circumstances remarkable and characteristic enough to be worthy of record. Born and brought up in Vienna, he studied art history and became a custodian of the *Kunsthistorisches Museum*, the Austrian State Museum for Art in that city. He had turned towards the study of art and its history very early, indeed in adolescence, when for months he was laid up because of juvenile rheumatism, which also affected his heart. When back at secondary school, World War I caused the population of the city to feel all the hardships of scarcity; and the fuel shortage necessitated the closing of schools during the weeks of frost (*Kälteferien*). Young Kris used this spell of idleness to trespass into the University and its History of Art Department, where Professor Julius von Schlosser carried on his seminar discussions with his students, whose numbers were few because of the call-up. Kris's keen participation and outstanding knowledge aroused Professor Schlosser's lasting interest. But Kris caused the Professor some embarrassment when it became known that he had not yet reached matriculation age and was not even an undergraduate.

Ernst Kris graduated as doctor of philosophy, and in the 1920s entered the Austrian State service by becoming custodian of the *Kunsthistorisches Museum*. There he earned distinction as a connoisseur of goldsmith's work and as the author of the standard treatise on Renaissance intaglios and cameos. Prior to these

publications he had compiled, in collaboration with F. Eichler, the museum's catalogue of its famous collection of cameos and intaglios, and in consequence he was called upon to catalogue a similar collection at the Metropolitan Museum of Art in New York.

While working among the treasures of the *Kunsthistorisches Museum*, indefatigably as he did throughout his life, and destined to become a teacher at the University, Kris had come into personal contact with Professor Freud; thus it was that, years later, he became a psychoanalyst himself. The beginning of this transformation was a romantic one. Kris had fallen in love; and that with a student of medicine whose father, Dr. Oscar Rie, happened to be an old friend of Freud's and pædiatrician to his children. (For all the relevant details about the two men, see Ernest Jones, *The Life and Work of Sigmund Freud*, Vol. 1.) It was through Marianne Rie that Ernst Kris was introduced to Freud to advise him on his collection of cameos and intaglios. We know from the *Seven Rings* how fond Freud was of these relief-carvings in stone.

Some time after, a personal analysis at the Vienna Institute of Psycho-Analysis was arranged, and in 1927 the door was open for associate membership. Later in the 1930s, Ernst Kris had become absorbed by our science to such a degree that, jointly with Dr. Robert Wælder, Freud entrusted him with the editorship of *Imago, Zeitschrift für die Anwendung der Psychoanalyse auf die Natur- und Geisteswissenschaften*.

By this time Kris thought of himself as a research worker in the field of the history of art and æsthetics rather than as a future clinician and teacher of psycho-analysis. His professional set-up was ideally fitted to the now accepted conception of how to apply psycho-analysis fruitfully and safely to the human sciences and vice versa. The idea of being expertly trained in both fields strongly appealed to Kris, though for a short while, and perhaps also in anticipation

of the political changes in Central Europe, he toyed with the idea of starting all over again and studying medicine as well. He combined in himself the gift of searching for and depending on detailed, minute observation—a gift not always recognized and appreciated by his colleagues—and yet never losing sight of the entirety in which the parts are embodied. To bridge and master the gap between the two, a gap created by our sensory apparatus rather than a real one, was—as I see it—the main driving force in his thinking and his ambitions. It is this feature, if not compulsion, in Ernst Kris's method of working that makes the study of his writings so instructive, if somewhat toilsome at times, because of a liking for occasional pyrotechnics, but safe from hurried and complaisant generalizations. Or as his friend, Professor E. H. Gombrich of London University, put it: 'Kris abhorred the oversimplifications of the confident vulgarizers.' Kris was a vehement, assertive, but very cautious thinker, inclined rather to have his doubts about man's reliability in mastering the problems he chooses to face. Belief in the finality of any scientific investigation or mental achievement was unknown or unacceptable to him. He had little inclination for the speculative approach; in his thought and writings he usually started from a surface phenomenon, and did not necessarily look into it for a deeper and final meaning; he rather studied the circumstances under which the phenomenon came to be noticed; and after having more or less established these he went on to trace it backwards and also sideways, trying to make intelligible something of its origin and its multiple function. He had in my experience, which goes back to the start of his psycho-analytic career, a special liking for picking on minute details; he sometimes seemed officious when he did so. But who else could have had the patience and devotion to compile his standard works on goldsmiths' work and cameos? He did not stop after having looked for the detail; he wanted to see it in the total context of its past and present functions. Was there not something genuinely psycho-analytic in Kris's approach? Thus, what fascinated us, who saw his star rising, was his methodological shrewdness, which only much later became matched with and balanced by dispassionateness and sedateness, the fruit of much clinical work, experience, and listening to others.

His writings of this period he himself looked

upon as 'applied' psycho-analysis. These and some more recent ones, forming the bridge to 'pure psychology', have been published in his *Psychoanalytic Explorations in Art*. In this book his erudition, his basic solidity, and to a certain degree his fearless, adventurous searching into the little known and the unknown, find ample proof.

When the crucial ten years or so of apprenticeship in psycho-analysis had passed (no training regulations are likely ever to shorten this period), and when Ernst Kris could feel at home in the technique of psycho-analysis, the Austrian *Anschluss* took place and soon afterwards he and his family settled in London. Here, in co-operation with Professor Freud, Anna Freud, Edward Bibring, and Marie Bonaparte he edited the first volumes of the London edition of Freud's *Gesammelte Werke* and also the *Internationale Zeitschrift für Psychoanalyse und Imago*. No newcomer in the English-speaking world, and speaking English almost to perfection, he soon felt familiar in the new surroundings. To those less fortunate he proved a helpful friend.

On the outbreak of World War II he became engaged, through the British Broadcasting Corporation, in the scientific analysis of German propaganda, and he continued this work for a while after his arrival at New York in July 1940. Several of the publications of himself and his co-workers testify to his contribution to the war effort.

In the United States psycho-analysis was about to take an upward course without precedent. Its popularity grew far beyond expectation; its applicability was hardly a problem any more; it had penetrated many walks of life. Yet even so, its scientific future seemed for a while in jeopardy. In these circumstances and so soon after Freud's death, the counsel of those who through personal contact with him knew of Freud's conception of psycho-analysis as a science was welcome and proved inspiring. Ernst Kris gradually became one of the main exponents of modern Ego Psychology. He won great prestige as a theoretician, a discussant, and a teacher in the strongest, most numerous and representative Component Society of the International Psycho-Analytical Association.

It is not important or even possible to delineate the personal contribution Ernst Kris made to those aspects of Ego Psychology which, having their roots in Freud's later



thoughts, germinated at first from the ingenuity of Heinz Hartmann. However, to achieve what in the crucial years of the post-war period was achieved by Hartmann, Kris and Loewenstein, a very high degree of concord must have been at the bottom of this memorable alliance. It is a healthy sign of the working arrangements among these three men, that after they had done the spade-work, each of them pursued the kind of task which appealed most to his individuality. As the result of his own work three achievements stand out in Ernst Kris's later pursuits: his Introduction to Freud's *The Origins of Psycho-Analysis*; his research project at the Child Study Centre of Yale University School of Medicine; and finally his prominence as a teacher of psycho-analysis at the New York Institute of Psycho-Analysis, together with his activities at the scientific conventions of the American Psychoanalytic Association.

Kris's Introduction to Freud's letters to Wilhelm Fliess and his treatise on 'The Significance of Freud's Earliest Discoveries' show him as a master of historical research. Only a very few of his contemporaries could have lived up to the occasion offered by those exciting documents, the Fliess letters of Sigmund Freud. Sensitivity to historical events is a rare gift. Many aim at too great objectivity; others achieve too little when interpreting intentions read into the past. The task was best entrusted to one who, in addition to his familiarity with the persons concerned, had acquired in an allied field some of the skill and responsibility needed for the appreciation of objects of historical significance. Had Ernst Kris contributed nothing else to psycho-analysis, his Introduction to the *Origins* has caused him to deserve our admiration and thanks for all time.

That he should become actively engaged in observing small children and studying them in personal contact would have sounded incredible some twenty or so years ago. Yet, his critical, methodological, and now very mature mind enabled him to do this when the opportunity offered itself. Dr. Milton J. E. Senn, Professor of Paediatrics at Yale, invited him to conduct a research programme of Kris's own choice. He was appointed Clinical Professor at the University's Child Study Center, the same, where, in times now past, Arnold Gesell had carried out his behaviouristic studies of child development. For some time it had been anticipated that longitudinal studies of development combined with clinical child analytic work

would be helpful and promising in the achievement of an approximation of observable facts with reconstructive thought. This approach had become one of Kris's preoccupations since he sensed that the roots of Ego Psychology can as well be studied and scrutinized during the crucial years of early ego development and ego differentiation. His methodological mind, which remained unbiased by any preconception as to what the results should be, elaborated a far-reaching research programme, which was to expand over a number of years; provision had been made to meet some of the hazards of such long-drawn-out work. Kris could not without hesitation have assumed that psycho-analytic research work such as he was ready to do could easily be pursued within the setting of a University. He must have satisfied himself that the peculiar requirements of psycho-analytic 'action research' as contrasted with 'pure research' could and would be met within the set-up provided by the University authorities. His decision must surely have been reinforced by the knowledge that he would have a team of enthusiastic and grateful co-workers at his side. Research problems of this magnitude are too general and pressing to be dependent on the life of a single man, however outstanding he may be in his methodological approach. It cannot therefore be imagined that the time and effort spent so far will be lost as a result of the passing of Ernst Kris. His co-workers will assuredly have already found ways of carrying on the work.

Men who think and know much are usually expected to give much. If put to the test this expectation proves unjustified to such a degree that we do not even take much notice of this failure of human nature. This does not apply to Ernst Kris. His search for knowledge, and his desire to thresh out ideas which seemed to oppose each other, dominated his object-relationships. He was a great and clever talker, and a most generous and rewarding one. He liked those who came to listen and still more those who liked fencing with problems and problem solutions. In our profession he was one of those who could tolerate the existence of facts which as yet have not found an explanation. That he became an inspiring and passionate teacher during the last ten years of his short life was the good fortune of himself and his students. It is therefore with no surprise that we learn of the consternation, sadness, and frustration which his untimely death has caused

among his colleagues and students. For them the loss of so inspiring and generous a teacher will be a challenge, and they will certainly try to live for and with the ideas which led our

greatly mourned friend and colleague deeper and deeper into the unconquered regions of Freud's psycho-analysis.

W. Hoffer

## CLINICAL ESSAY PRIZE

Members and Associate Members of the International Psycho-Analytical Association are reminded that competitors for the Clinical Essay Prize must send in their work to the Hon. Scientific Secretary of the Institute of Psycho-Analysis, 63 New Cavendish Street, London, W.1, by 31 May of the year in which they wish to enter the competition.

The conditions governing the competition are the following:

A prize of (not exceeding) 30 guineas is offered.

### *Requirements for the Essay*

The essay shall consist of a clinical record of a case investigated by psycho-analytical methods. It should illustrate clearly the events and changes in the mental life of the patient and their relation to external environment. In awarding the prize, the Judges will pay attention to acuity of observation and the clarity with which the facts are stated. If the writer wishes to draw theoretical conclusions, he must bear in mind the necessity of making the evidence for such conclusions carry conviction.

It is recommended that the length of the essay should not exceed 20,000 words.

### *Date of Sending in Essays: Language: Format, etc.*

Essays must be submitted on or before the 31st day of May in any year, in the English language. They must be typescript on quarto paper with ample left-hand margin. They must be in triplicate and be sent to the Hon. Scientific Secretary of the Institute. All copies of essays submitted become *ipso facto* the property of the Institute (or its successor) while it has the appointment of the Trustees for the Prize Fund.

### *No Award*

If no essay of merit worthy of a prize is submitted in any year, no award shall be made for that year.

### *Joint Award*

In the event of the Judges regarding the essays of two or more competitors as of equal merit, they may divide the prize money into equal parts and award it to such competitors jointly.

### *Eligibility*

Any person of either sex, who is not a member or a past-member of the Board of the Institute, shall be eligible for the competition.

### *Tenure*

The prize shall be given to the writer of the best essay in the opinion of the Judges submitted in any year, but the prize may be awarded to the same person twice, provided that he submits a second essay of sufficient merit in a later competition, and that the prize shall not be awarded more than twice to the same person.

### *Title*

The competitor to whom the prize is awarded in any year may be called the Clinical Prizeman for that year.

### *Copyright*

The copyright of any essay to which a prize is awarded shall become the property of the Institute. Should the author wish to quote it in whole or in part, the Institute shall not unreasonably withhold its consent. The Institute shall not publish in England or abroad, whether in English or in translation, the whole or any part of such essay during the author's life-time without his consent in writing. Other persons who may wish to quote extracts from any prize essay shall obtain the written consent both of the Institute or its successors, and, during his life-time, of the author.

CHARLES RYCROFT

Honorary Scientific Secretary,  
Institute of Psycho-Analysis,  
63 New Cavendish Street,  
London, W.1.



## BOOK REVIEWS

*Learning and Instinct in Animals.* By W. H. Thorpe. (London: Methuen, 1956. Pp. vii + 493. 55s.)

In accordance with the general trend in biology modern studies of animal behaviour are directed to an understanding of the ways in which organisms normally live in their natural habitats, and to establishing the means which enable them to behave as they do. This more total or 'holistic' study of the living animal in relation to its environment has now become generally known as 'ethology'. 'From the philosophical point of view, the central problem of ethology is the relation between purposiveness and directiveness, and it looks at times as if this is the same as the relation between learning and instinct.' For the ethologist the question is, 'How much, if any, of the animal's behaviour is purposive and what is the relation of this behaviour to the rest?' The problems involved are so numerous that most workers in this vast field still tend to concentrate on one line of approach, e.g. psychologists on learning, or zoologists on instincts. The outstanding merit of this book is that it is a study of the integration of acquired and innate behaviour. One of the author's major objects 'has been to point out to psychologists and learning theorists on the one hand and to zoologists and physiologists on the other how dependent each is, or ought to be, on the work and viewpoint of the other'. Moreover, the author is convinced that 'both subjective and objective concepts are necessary in the scientific study of life' and that a balanced combination of subjective and objective concepts is the only hope for a complete biology and a sound biological philosophy.

The book is divided into three parts that can be read independently. Part I, 'Some General Concepts', discusses first the relation between 'Directiveness and Purposiveness' and then 'The Nature of Drive and its Place in the Theory of Instinct'. Part II is devoted to 'Learning' from its most lowly form of 'Habituation' to the higher levels of 'Insight and Perception', concluding with a review of theories relating to 'The Mechanisms of Learning'. Parts I and II form a detailed and constructively critical review of relevant theories and provide psycho-analysts with a comprehensive survey of ethology not hitherto available. Technical terms are defined and each chapter closes with a summary.

Part III, comprising more than half the book, gives examples of 'The Learning Abilities of the Main Animal Groups', ranging from Protozoa to Mammals. These chapters make fascinating reading and it is, on the whole, an advantage that the author gives most space to insects and birds, the groups on

which his own major researches have been prosecuted. The chapter on 'Mammals' is all too short but this group has not, as yet, been so fully studied by ethologists. In a brief concluding chapter the author gives his answer to the question, 'What, if any, is the significant over-all conclusion arising from the great and growing activity of students of behaviour during the past fifty years?' His estimate of human behaviour is that it is much less sharply differentiated from animal behaviour than has been supposed; 'And if and in so far as it proves true that the concept of purpose is necessary in the description of animal behaviour, another important similarity will have been established. In any event, it seems that ethology is already confirming the conclusions of other biological disciplines, and in doing this it may in due course provide many facts which will assist human beings in the better ordering of their social relations.' It may also provide data for a more adequate theory of knowledge and favour a 'Philosophy of Organism'. 'Science in order to progress must also philosophize and must enter upon a thorough criticism of its own foundations.' Moreover, 'to assume that studies of animal behaviour imply any decrease in the stature of man would be a view of the utmost naiveté . . . if only because of the existence of Science itself, man displays emergent qualities far transcending those of the highest animal . . . there are also in him vast further potentialities yet to be realised'.

The reader may be surprised by the parallelism between the ethological and psycho-analytic approaches and by the convergence of some of their respective conclusions. Although the findings of ethology may prove helpful to psycho-analysis it would be a grave error for analysts to forsake their own specific technique and perspectives. Nevertheless, the impression will arise that the psychosociology which is the great desideratum of our present human condition might well be termed human ethology.

Only a sample of the many points of interest raised by this book can be mentioned here. More than one psycho-analyst has already suggested that ethology may aid in clarifying some of the puzzles of infantile development. There is much in Parts I and II that is relevant to ego psychology and much too that might be helpful in converting our 'mythology' of instinct into a more generally acceptable theory. For instance, it may help in settling the vexed question of the status of 'self-preservation'. While 'internal drive' is considered to be the most fundamental part of the concept of instinct it is not equated with physiological need alone but involves some degree of



inherited co-ordination and some, more or less rigid, inherited action patterns and releasing mechanisms. Perception is held to be 'an active organising process . . . a process in time rather than an instantaneous event' and 'a basic characteristic of the drive of the living animal'. It is concluded that there is now 'substantial and precise evidence for a general drive in a number of animals, and that this can be looked upon as an indication of a primary motivation which to some extent, however slight, is superior to the governing centres of any of the instincts or of their combinations, and finds its most characteristic expression in exploratory behaviour in all its various forms. It is closely linked with the ideas of "expectancy" and "purpose"'. These conclusions suggest that self-preservation and adaptation to environment may be primordially synonymous and that they are now essentially ego functions whose success is dependent upon the adequacy of external reality-sense developed through perceptual experience. We are more accustomed to think of 'curiosity' as closely linked with the sexual instincts but this linkage could be secondary, a libidization of a more primitive exploratory drive due to the idiosyncrasies of our specifically human 'infantile sexuality'.

A distinction is drawn between preparatory or 'appetitive' and terminal or 'consummatory' behaviour. For the author the play of animals is not merely 'practice' but appetitive behaviour under conditions in which the consummatory act need not or cannot be achieved. 'Thus true play is to be expected where appetitive behaviour becomes emancipated from the restriction imposed by the necessity of attaining a specific goal . . . the process of freeing appetitive behaviour from the primary needs increases perception of and mastery over the environment, and must have been one of the first and perhaps the most important of the behaviour changes which made possible the development of social life in the vertebrates, and indeed ultimately the mental and spiritual life of man himself.'

In the reviewer's opinion this book is the most outstanding and scholarly contribution yet made in the field of Ethology, a field in which psycho-analysts will find it rewarding to take a lively interest.

M. Brierley.

*Beyond Laughter.* By Martin Grotjahn. (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1956. Pp. 285. \$6.00.)

Grotjahn tries to deal with the deeper symbolism of the 'laughable' in jokes, the comical, humorous, caricature, farce, comedy, fairytale figures, etc.; Freud, while being mainly concerned with the function of jokes, did not give the symbolic meaning of jokes the attention he gave to the symbols used in dreams. But it is the deeper symbolism which connects the laughable with the creative unconscious. Hence the book often takes us to the borderland

between the joke and art which, in a way, lies 'beyond laughter'.

The author found in his clinical work that an interpretation given in the form of a joke was sometimes more easily understood than if given in a more direct manner. He hopes that the non-analytic reader, too, will be readier to meet his own unconscious if it is presented to him in the guise of a joke. Thus reading this book becomes a somewhat unsettling experience. While we still laugh about a light-hearted joke or caricature, the author suddenly reveals the anguish hidden behind the laughter. Nor is this technique conducive to coherent argument. It is as a source book of creative experiences that the book will succeed, and not so much as a textbook on psycho-analytical aesthetics. It reminds one of Groddeck's incomparable excursions into the deep unconscious, laughing yet dead serious and implying important theoretical progress. Particularly rewarding, to my mind, is the author's attempt to establish the connexion of laughter with the personality as a whole, particularly with its aggressive components. For instance, in the typical Jewish jokes the aggression is directed against the self, hence non-Jewish narrators will not easily succeed in telling them. Women, generally, are not accepted as witty, at least in our civilization, because their wittiness is felt as castrating aggression; while women among themselves will resort to other forms of attack. The aggression of a joke renounces physical acting out. Hence practical jokes and 'kidding' lack an essential element of the witty. Kidding in particular is thinly disguised homosexual aggression, for this reason the kidder cannot tolerate retaliation which would force him into an openly passive rôle. Indeed laughter greeting the success of a practical joke is nearer to sneering than to spontaneous reaction. (In my view, laughter represents a primitive undifferentiated type of motility which prevents purposeful behaviour; the superego condones the aggression in the joke because it cannot—at least for the time being—lead to acting out in consciously controlled motility.)

The witty personality is fundamentally a sadist who needs the laughter of his friends to overcome his social anxieties; otherwise he is a lonely figure. The book reproduces a striking photograph of the 'comedian' W. C. Fields, portraying the 'quite unwitty dignity' of Queen Victoria in her lonely widowhood. Fields adopts a stiffly erect attitude; we laugh as we discover that he balances on his head a candleholder in place of a crown. Grotjahn suggests that the comedian, on a deeper level, also expresses his own enforced loneliness, and so once again makes us feel the tragedy 'beyond laughter'.

The humorist, on the other hand, is a masochist at heart; for this reason he fails to act under the frustration of external reality. Grotjahn does not fully share Freud's high esteem for humour; certainly the humorist may gain inner independence, but through



his impassivity he will lose in the world of reality. Yet when all is lost and nothing is to gain by being active, as in the case of 'Galgenhumor' or the persecution of Jews, the impassive detachment of the humorist turns defeat into a victory of the human spirit over calamity.

The comedian too accepts defeat and castration by representing the vanquished father figure. Laughing, the son can enjoy his victory without guilt feelings. But there may be more to it; the truly great clown, his face painted a chalky white, also stands for the acceptance of mortality and ultimate wisdom. In another of its impressive illustrations, the book shows a photograph of the comedian Emmett Kelly which has an almost surrealist quality. He poses, a decrepit clown, between a strapping bathing beauty and a relaxed young sportsman. 'He has no act and no action; he may sit motionless through the turmoil of a three-ring circus... Once in a while he may get up, reach for a broom, and slowly, carefully, forlornly—and successfully—sweep away a ray of light. He seems calmly to express in Gestalt and existence the old wisdom: Life must be lived. That is all...'

As the book takes us through our paces, we are made to face psychic truths which normally are not only 'beyond laughter', but which would be unbearable without it.

Anton Ehrenzweig.

*The Neuroses in Clinical Practice.* By Henry P. Laughlin. (Philadelphia and London: W. B. Saunders, 1956. Pp. 802. 87s. 6d.)

This book is an attempt at a textbook presentation of the neuroses from the psychodynamic point of view. The author set about his task very thoroughly and submitted most of the chapters to one or another of fifty-six senior psycho-analysts and psychiatrists. The book is nevertheless a highly personal product reflecting the author's didactic enthusiasm and his strong leanings towards systematization and simplification. It has some of the virtues and most of the vices of popular medical textbooks which offer complicated subjects chewed up in easily digestible form. The author, who is Assistant Clinical Professor of Psychiatry at Washington University, is fond of technical terms and invents new ones on the slightest provocation. He lists twenty-one phobias each named after the feared object, thus beating most clinical psychiatrists of half a century ago. All symptoms and personality traits are regarded as defence mechanisms, of which he enumerates twenty-two. In his endeavour to explain 'gain through illness' he has created two linguistic monstrosities, 'endogain' and 'epigain', the former standing for unconscious, the latter for conscious gain. He proposes the term 'soteria' for the opposite of phobia; poses the term 'soteria' for the opposite of phobia; poses the term 'soteria' for the opposite of phobia; i.e. an excessive sense of security. Accordingly, the object to which this feeling is attached is the 'soteria

object'. Another and rather picturesque new term is 'King David's reaction' or 'the royal Anger', of which a positive and negative form is described. This is a feeling arising from 'a defensive process through which condemnation and hatred of consciously disowned aspects of oneself become consciously experienced as dislike for another person'. Some of the author's formulations are sadly lacking in sophistication.

In dissociation there is a division of the mind into two or more parts', etc. His obsession with systematization gets away with him when he lists twenty-one sources and stimuli of depersonalisation rather thoughtlessly. Nine categories of amnesia ordered according to several principles are enumerated. He revives the unfortunate term 'traumatic neurosis', which has been given up by most psychiatrists and neurologists, having caused no end of confusion in the past. To the author, 'trauma' in this context means physical or psychic injury. Combat exhaustion is included in this group, as well as 'brain washing', with Cardinal Mindszenty as the prime example. Melanie Klein's concepts are accepted uncritically and referred to largely in footnotes. The book concludes with a long glossary of psychiatric terms, with some purely neurological ones thrown in. Some of the items are in need of correction; the definition of 'dementia' is quite obsolete; psychiatry is not a 'basic medical science', etc.

This book was apparently meant to be the product of a marriage between psycho-analysis and clinical psychiatry. If this match has not been an entire success it is perhaps because the two particular representatives chosen are somewhat lacking in breeding.

A. Stengel.

*Discussions on Child Development.* Vols. I and II. The Proceedings of the First and Second Meetings of the World Health Organization Study Group on the Psychobiological Development of the Child. Geneva, 1953, and London, 1954. Pp. 240 and 271. 25s. and 28s. (London: Tavistock Publications, 1956.)

Before attempting to review these volumes one should make clear what is their nature, and this may best be done by quoting some of Prof. Hargreaves' preface to the first volume. 'This volume, and others which will follow it, give an account of an activity of the World Health Organization—the Research Study Group on the Psychobiological Development of the Child.' An Expert Committee on Mental Health recommended that it was desirable that the Mental Health Programme should concentrate especially on the psychiatry of childhood. It emphasized the fact that others apart from psychiatrists must be called on to contribute in this field and mentioned specifically the anthropologist, the sociologist and the social and



developmental psychologist'. 'The aim of the Group was to bring together once a year for four or five years, during a period of a week, a small number of internationally eminent workers in the different disciplines which study different aspects of the psychobiological development of the child.' 'It was not originally intended that the proceedings of the meetings should be published; but the mimeographed transcript which was produced for the benefit of the members evoked such interest in those outside the group who read it that many requests for copies began to be received.' Hence the present volumes, in which the original transcript has been reduced to about a third.

The Study Group consisted of Bowlby (representing psycho-analysis), Fremont-Smith and Struthers (research promotion, the former being Chairman), Hargreaves (psychiatry), Inhelder, Piaget, Zazzo (psychology), Lorenz (ethology), Mead (cultural anthropology), Melin, Monnier, Rémond, Grey Walter (electro-physiology), and Tanner (human biology). In addition, Carothers and Krapf representing psychiatry and Odier representing psycho-analysis were present as guests for the meeting in 1953 reported in the first volume; Bindra, Buckle, Howard Liddell and Whiting for the 1954 meeting.

We could proceed to detail the fourteen prepared contributions presented in these two volumes, but that would give a misleading impression of the unusual qualities of these proceedings, which are due not so much to the great interest that many of them possess as to the free discussion that followed each paper, and the interaction and mutual influence of some of the outstanding personalities and intellects that were engaged. Among these the one who showed himself most completely master of the technique of the informal discussion group, and the readiest with relevant and highly stimulating *obiter dicta*, seems to have been Konrad Lorenz, who was never at a loss for some apt illustration from the animal world in which he is so much at home. The main psycho-analytic contributions came from Bowlby, who gave a succinct summary of psycho-analytic instinct theory in the first volume, and in the second led a discussion on the film 'A Two Year Old Goes to Hospital'. Some of Piaget's researches into the intellectual development of children were presented by Inhelder and to a lesser extent by Piaget himself. Various pieces of experimental work with animals were discussed by Bindra and Liddell in the second volume and stimulated interesting discussion without perhaps carrying much conviction of their relevance to the main topic. Grey Walter presented work on electroencephalography of childhood and also demonstrated some of his mechanical models and explained their relationship to conditioned reflex and learning theory. Whiting described cross-cultural work on identification and superego development in relation to differing methods of upbringing. The kind of difficulties of communication that may

arise in such a group discussion is illustrated by the following exchange :

*Bowlby*: . . . The superego is rather complicated and contains more than one variable.

*Grey Walter*: Can you measure the superego ?

*Bowlby*: You cannot.

*Grey Walter*: Then what is the point of discussing it ?

These volumes are full of stimulating observations and contain much brilliant extempore discussion and so are very well worth reading, but naturally they do not present their subject-matter systematically. Finally, a warm tribute is due to Dr. Tanner and Prof. Inhelder for the excellent editing which must have been done to transform a verbatim transcript into such a readable and enjoyable form.

W. H. Gillespie.

*Emotional Problems of Early Childhood*. Edited by Gerald Caplan. (New York: Basic Books Inc.; London: Tavistock Publications, 1955. Pp. xiv + 544. \$7.50 or 42s.)

This volume consists of a selection from the papers presented at the International Institute of Child Psychiatry held at Toronto in August 1954.

The clinical studies and research reports have been arranged under three main sections:

1. Preventive Aspects of Child Psychiatry.
2. The Relation of Physical and Emotional Factors and Problems of Hospitalization.
3. Problems of Psychosis in Early Childhood.

Section 1. Prophylaxis is one of the dominant themes throughout the book; it is stated, developed and illustrated in the first case report which forms the opening chapter. This is an account of how a mother and her four-year-old son were enabled to deal in a more healthy way with their serious emotional problems, the aftermath of the father's suicide. The boy was identified as a potential psychiatric casualty at a routine mental health screening procedure to which all the incoming primary school children were subjected at intake. The term 'preventive intervention' is used to describe the therapeutic work carried out in this instance, which was directed at altering the nascent, maladaptive emotional response patterns, so as to prevent them from becoming firmly established. Scope for work of this kind exists at all stages of the child's development and a positive mental health programme must make adequate provision for it. Only in this way will appropriate psychiatric services be available in the community for its children from birth onwards.

The other clinical case studies and research reports in this section deal with various aspects of preventive psychiatric work.

Section 2. The relation and interplay of physical and emotional factors in the causation of psychosomatic and other disabilities are considered. The conditions studied include psychogenic and suspected



deafness and a group of psychosomatic diseases including peptic ulcer, ulcerative colitis, and coeliac disease. Researches on the effects of maternal deprivation, and reactions of children and families to hospitalization, follow.

Section 3. Affective, autistic, and schizophrenic states are described and discussed. Views as to the aetiology of childhood schizophrenia differ, but there is now general agreement that the earlier the diagnosis is established and treatment instituted, the better are the prospects of recovery or amelioration. The old 'wait and see' attitude, born of therapeutic nihilism, can no longer be justified. As regards prognosis, most workers concur that this is improved where unhealthy attitudes in the parents can be modified, and changes thus effected in the emotional climate of the home.

It can be said, in brief, that this section forms a valuable contribution to the literature of child psychoses.

This book bears testimony to the fact that psychoanalysis has contributed greatly to our understanding of the aetiological factors involved in producing the emotional disorders of childhood as well as to our psychotherapeutic approach. The field of study is now expanding to include the family and the community and there is increasing emphasis on prevention.

The editing of the volume has been most ably accomplished by Dr. Gerald Caplan, who is also responsible for the conference discussion summaries which conclude the clinical case studies.

Workers in the field of child psychiatry and therapy will welcome this instructive and stimulating book; it can also be read with profit by all concerned with the promotion of mental health in the young.

J. J. M. Jacobs.

*Conceptions of Modern Psychiatry: the First William Alanson White Memorial Lectures.* By Harry Stack Sullivan. (London: Tavistock Publications, 1955. Pp. xiii + 298. \$32.)

This is the first English edition of the White Memorial lectures delivered by Sullivan to a small audience of psychiatrists and allied workers in 1939.

Although the theoretical conceptions presented in this series of five two-hour lectures are based on the work of Freud, Meyer, and White, the author's originality and independence of thought is in evidence throughout. The wealth of new formulations, together with the reformulations of old concepts, the author's passion for coining new words and his peculiar use of existing psychiatric terms, make the reviewer's task a difficult one. Brief mention will be made here of the central point of Sullivan's theory, which is based on the belief that 'Psychiatry is the study of interpersonal relations'... 'A personality can never be isolated from the complex of intercan never be isolated from the complex of interpersonal relations in which the person lives and has

his being.' This theme occurs again and again until the reader feels that for Sullivan individuality had ceased to exist. In his preoccupation to understand processes of 'acculturation', social and environmental modes of interaction, he seems to have come to disregard the individual's internal world and to ignore the rôle of unconscious fantasies as well as projective and introjective mechanisms. This is all the more surprising because of his interest and obviously great skill in dealing with schizophrenic patients. Admittedly he states that he is only concerned with 'the early fruits of Freud's genius'. His divergence from accepted analytical concepts, however, goes deeper than that. To give a further example, in his description of child development, infantile sexuality is never mentioned. In spite of this, Sullivan's early interest in psycho-analysis is clearly reflected in the general framework of his approach and especially in the stress placed on the value of transference interpretation in the therapeutic situation.

In view of the limited time which the author allowed himself to present his personal views on almost the whole of the psychiatric field, it is to be expected that many theoretical points remain only sketchily developed. The occasional inadequacy of the presentation is well compensated by the inclusion of a 'Critical Appraisal of the Theory', written by Patrick Mullahy.

A. Limentani.

*Magic and Schizophrenia.* By Géza Róheim. Edited by W. Münsterberger. (New York: International Universities Press, 1955. P. viii + 230. \$4.50.)

This book is an attempt to contrast and correlate magic as manifested on the one hand in various myths and primitive customs, and on the other in the phantasy of a schizophrenic patient.

The first part is a description of numerous magical customs and rituals in primitive peoples, many of which have, or appear to have, an oral basis. The author stresses the importance of what he calls the oral trauma, i.e. the original frustration of separation from the breast. Magic is used as an omnipotent denial of dependence, in the service of identification with the omnipotent external world and as a revolt against the superego, i.e. the internalized parents. The author stresses the acting out of various omnipotent destructive phantasies against the mother's body and the magical ways of being reunited with the mother. He also draws attention to the way that magic is used to master reality.

The second part of the book is concerned with the phantasies of a male schizophrenic patient observed for eighteen months in a mental hospital. Although the material recorded is extremely interesting, no attempt was made to analyse the patient, and hence it was not possible to obtain confirmation of the



author's speculations about the meaning of the patient's material.

However, he does make many valuable and stimulating suggestions, and concludes that the patient's difficulties were primarily related to loss of the breast and his reactions to it; viz. Oral phantasies and anxieties, body destructive phantasies, the talion form of these phantasies, and phantasies of omnipotence and identification.

The author concurs with Schmideberg's theory that schizophrenia is a flight to the good internalized object. His final conclusion is that in schizophrenia and primitive magic there is an object-directed cathexis, followed by withdrawal and secondary narcissism and finally a return to the object. In folk customs the magic is ego-syntonic, in schizophrenia not so.

One main criticism of his interpretations and conclusions is that he pays practically no attention to projective mechanisms which are very evident in the patient's material, and indeed in all schizophrenics.

The problems of ego-splitting, projection into and confusion with the object, concretization of thought, symbolization, etc., are on the whole ignored, although an attempt is made to show how words are treated as concrete objects.

Also the author, although referring occasionally to internalized objects, does not discuss either their relationship to the ego or their function within the ego or superego.

An account of the actual analysis of the patient would have carried more conviction and perhaps, given more understanding of the patient's use of magic than it does in the mere recording of the patient's productions.

H. S. Klein.

*Psychiatry, the Press and the Public.* Problems in Communication, edited by Wilfred Bloomberg *et al.* (Washington, American Psychiatric Association, 1956. Pp. 66. \$1.00.)

This easily readable and well organized booklet is a report of a conference conducted by the American Psychiatric Association in co-operation with the National Association of Science Writers and the Niemann Foundation for Journalism. It is concerned with the problems of communicating psychological subject-matter to the public. The spirit of understanding and of critical co-operation shown by the various contributors offers an excellent example for other workers in this field.

Major consideration was given to depicting and understanding some of the problems involved. Semantic and cognitive factors were examined. Emotional factors were correctly stressed. Perhaps the psychological professions should inquire more into their motivations for ignoring their responsibility in communicating to the public; writers might wonder why they need so often to distort and sensationalize

the material. There may be answers other than the logical commonsense ones. And the emotional difficulties of the public upon getting psychological data are considered. More might be asked of the aims, present and future, in communicating on these matters with the public.

The contributors have largely avoided imitating Dr. Gregg's definition of '... a zealot as a person who redoubles his efforts when he has lost sight of his aim'. In this beginning, they have made a refreshing approach by constructively focusing on the problems.

Marvin Brook.

*Neuropharmacology. Transactions of the First Conference, May 26, 27 and 28, 1954.* Edited by Harold A. Abramson. (New York: Josiah Macy Jr. Foundation, 1955. Pp. 210. \$4.25.)

This is a record of a conference devoted to the neurophysiology of some emotional changes produced by drugs. Among various problems the physiological concomitants of anxiety produced by injection of certain drugs were studied experimentally, with special reference to cerebral circulation. The changes of electrical activity in relation to anaesthesia were another subject of research. Among the participants in the symposium were psycho-analysts (Grinker, Gerard, Mirsky). This book testifies to the seriousness with which the multidimensional and interdisciplinary approach is being pursued in the United States. Although symposia such as this have so far achieved no more than to throw into relief the difficulties of a synthesis, they are bound to prove fruitful by improving mutual understanding between all those concerned with research into mental functions.

E. Stengel.

*Sexual Behaviour in American Society.* An Appraisal of the First Two Kinsey Reports. Edited by Jerome Himmelfoch and Sylvia Fleis Fava. (New York: Norton, 1955. Pp. 446. \$5.00.)

The Kinsey Reports, whatever their merits and faults, have made a tremendous impact on the lay public and a considerable impression on the experts. This book contains a selection of critical reviews of high standard from the methodological, sociological, psycho-analytical, psychiatric, anthropological, legal and religious points of view. Most of the thirty-eight articles had been published previously in various journals, and the Society for the Study of Social Problems deserves gratitude for presenting them together. The psycho-analytical standpoint is ably expressed by Kubie and Eisenbud. This book is indispensable for everybody who consults the Kinsey Reports.

E. Stengel.



# THE INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

Vol. XXXVIII

1957

Part 6

## CHANGING PATTERNS OF PARENT-CHILD RELATIONS IN AN URBAN CULTURE<sup>1</sup>

By

MARGARET MEAD

It gives me great pleasure to acknowledge the honour of being asked to give the Ernest Jones Lecture for 1957, as a recognition of the long and fruitful cooperation between cultural anthropology and psycho-analysis. Throughout the last thirty years the two approaches to the study of human behaviour have enriched each other in a variety of ways, as psycho-analysis has provided theoretical bases for the interpretation of human behaviour and cultural studies have made it possible to prune psycho-analytic theory of the inevitable provincialisms of theory based on observations made exclusively within the Euro-American tradition (1). Because both fields are young and growing, they have also been able to take advantage of other developments in the behavioural sciences, such as the approaches of Gestalt psychology (28), of learning theory (12, 3), of studies in normal child development (47), as, for instance, those of Piaget in Geneva (51), and of Gesell and Ilg in the United States (31, 36). The development of child analysis as a special field also meant a stepping up of the degree of relevance which each discipline found in the other, and the development of modern methods of anthropological field work, particularly in the field called 'culture and personality'—itself a product of earlier cooperation—has meant that more detailed observations in both fields were available for comparative study. The older reliance by anthropologists upon psycho-analytic theory

based upon reconstructions from the cases of adult patients and by psycho-analysts upon anthropological reconstructions of the nature of early man and of contemporary primitive man, which stimulated Freud and his contemporaries, has given place to precise observations of the actual behaviour of children, during childhood, and of actual primitive peoples, carefully observed in their own habitats. The work of Erik Erikson (13) has been the most conspicuous example of a distinguished combination of the results of actual experience of anthropological field work, the practice of child analysis, and the study of normal children.

The years since World War II have brought a series of new behavioural approaches which have given a fresh impetus to these cooperative efforts; I should like to single out especially work on mother-child relationships at delivery and during the first year of life, particularly the work of Bowlby (9), Spitz (48), Aubry (41), Escalona (14), Jackson (27), Bakwin (2), and Mirsky (37), as well as the earlier work of Margaret Fries (23); the contributions which have been made to our understanding of circular relationships in human behaviour by the model introduced by cybernetics and general systems theory (6; 15, 16, 17, 18, *passim*; 20; 56); the contributions resulting from coordination between the work of the modern ethologists (19; 25; 29; 30; 45; 53; 54, etc.) and psycho-analytic and anthropological studies of behaviour; and

<sup>1</sup> The Ernest Jones Lecture 1957. This lecture was delivered, without a manuscript, before the British Psycho-Analytical Society in the Barnes Hall of the Royal Society of Medicine, London, on 30 January, 1957, and was tape-recorded. However, because of the film which was shown, the lecture had to be drastically rewritten, and I have taken the liberty of adding two pieces of material—the work of Dr. Mavis Gunther (24), which

was only brought to my attention after the publication of a summary of my lecture in *The Lancet* (35), and filming of the birth of a reindeer in the new Norwegian film of Lapland, *Sammi Jaki* (26), excerpts from which were shown on British TV in the spring of 1957. A report of this Ernest Jones Lecture was published on page 301, Part 3-4 of this volume.

the emerging development of a new field of micro-behavioural analysis under the leadership of Bateson and Birdwhistell and their collaborators (4, 7).

It seemed appropriate to choose as the topic of this lecture a problem which would draw upon both the more traditional and the more recent developments in this long cooperation, that of parent-child relationships, particularly because this would also give me an opportunity to re-introduce some questions relating to human evolution in the light of our newer evolutionary theories of the relationship between evolution and behaviour (46).

Furthermore, it is in this field that psychoanalysts, anthropologists, and students of child development have been most willing to make recommendations for changes in our own traditional behaviour which might facilitate the development of a more desirable character structure in members of our own culture. Recent developments in practice in children's hospitals, changes in methods of child feeding—'self-demand' or 'self-regulation'—the practice known in the United States as 'rooming in', which permits the new mother to keep her baby with her in the hospital, and the greater role of the father during the early weeks of his child's life, have been the contributions of the last two decades, just as new methods of education in the knowledge of sex, and recognition of the child's ambivalence, of the importance of unconscious factors in the ability to learn, and of the harm that could be done by too restrictive parental practices or by discontinuities within the educative process were the contributions of psycho-analysis and of cultural findings during earlier decades. Because educators, therapists, and the designers of social institutions must always act as quickly as possible for the benefit of the actual living pupils, patients, and populations whom they are attempting to teach, cure, and plan for, there has been a recurrent danger that tentative findings would be put into practice too hurriedly or too uncritically. A continuing obligation of self-review is placed upon those of us who do believe in the relevancy of our work in the preventive and constructive fields of mental health (34).

Parent-child relationships during the early months have assumed an extra importance as mass methods of education—the radio, television and compulsory early school attendance—all invade the childhood years, even within the home, and as the actual period during which

parents have an opportunity to create optimum conditions of growth for their children becomes steadily briefer. Mass methods of obstetrical and pediatric care at birth, especially in the United States but increasingly in other countries as well, were invading the neo-natal period, separating the parturient mother from her husband and other children and from the newborn itself, and enforcing methods of feeding and care which did not take into account the delicate circular relationships between each mother and each child, between the parents, and within the family group. The period of infancy, as a period when irreversible damage could be done and, equally, as a period within which the groundwork of trust could be firmly laid, has, understandably, become a focus of anxiety for parents and practitioners, as fashions have shifted rapidly so that the latest newborn might benefit from the newest theoretical formulation, and the subject of bitter controversy. It is a period also in which violent all-or-none reactions—so familiar to students of the primary process—are likely to cluster, and in which we therefore have a peculiarly difficult task in attempting to introduce our increasing and changing insights in such a way that the corrections will result not in a pendulum swing to the extreme opposite position but in a spiral movement, with the new position retaining the insights while correcting the errors of the earlier one.

In the present context I am using the word 'urban' to characterize all those parts of the modern world which participate in industrialized society because, although people may still live in the country and raise their own food, the conditions of a modern economy are such that there are essential differences between life in any part of this world and the life of early man, during the many thousands of years when our species-specific behaviour was becoming stabilized. In urban societies people no longer live in small primary groups where the stranger is a rare phenomenon, infants are no longer entirely dependent upon being breast-fed, and men are not bound to their households through their immediate food-getting—as opposed to more remote money-getting—activities. The modern world is one in which many of the day-to-day relationships are with strangers—bus drivers, vendors, clerks—relationships which are segmented and official. As we learn more about the species-specific biological behaviour of man, developed when he lived in small, self-contained,



prevailing monogamous groups, it is important to make use of these new insights in ways which are appropriate to the very different world which man has now built by relying upon his capacity to learn and to transmit what he has learned.

I shall take for special consideration first the establishment of the nurturing relationship in what has been called 'the nursing couple', with all of its variations through the use of wet nurses, foster parents, artificial feeding, precise nutritional assessments based on assaying the food and the infant's response in weight, and the involvement of the male parent in the actual feeding and associated care of the child.

In order to make this as vivid as possible, I want first to show you a film made, in 1938, by Gregory Bateson and myself among the Iatmul of New Guinea: 'First Five Days in the Life of a New Guinea Baby' (5). In the film you will see the establishment of a mother-child relationship from the moment immediately after birth, before the cord was cut, and during the next four days. Anthropologists share with psychoanalysts the difficulties which lie in the inaccessibility of their subjects to observation; films and tape recordings are the modern technical devices which can overcome this difficulty both for purposes of immediate communication and as a way of providing materials which can be critically reviewed and restudied in the light of developing theories.

When the film begins, you see the new mother seated in a little wood where sudden birth pains had overtaken her when her husband had sent her hurrying on an errand. The neonate, cord uncut, lies near her, and an old neighbour woman, hastily summoned, has brought water in a bamboo from the river and a shell to cut the cord. The mother ties the cord, cuts it with the shell, places the placenta carefully in an empty coconut shell, and tosses the newborn vertically and horizontally and then over on to an old grass skirt, where he first lies, crying vigorously, stretching and spreading his fingers and toes. The mother stands up while the attending old woman pours the cold river water over her. She then leans down to scrape the blood from her legs. Meanwhile the wet-nurse—another neighbour who has a baby young enough to qualify her as a neo-natal wet nurse because she is observing the same food taboos—sits holding her own child, smoking a cigar, and brushing insects away from the newborn. Then the wet nurse gathers up the baby, the mother picks up the placenta, and the procession—new mother, wet nurse, and the wet nurse's five-year-old daughter carrying her infant sibling, with her two-year-old brother tagging along,

marches into the village, passing the father of the baby, who was debarred from being present at the birth not from rigid religious taboo but by shame, as he sits with his two young siblings, holding his older child, about four. The group settle down under a house (raised high on piles with an upper floor for the wet season), the mother binds her abdomen with bark, and the wet-nurse suckles the newborn. She places her nipple gently in the newborn's mouth and then, while its sucking proceeds vigorously, takes back her own child and jiggles it with one arm while keeping her nipple steady in the mouth of the newborn. The newborn's hands move, search-wise, in the direction of the breast and gradually relax. Then the newborn infant is covered with wet clay by the mother, his nose is shaped with warmed fingers, and he is placed in the hollow formed by her crossed legs. As the women wear only two narrow grass aprons and the infant is unclothed, the whole relationship of the infant to the bodies of mother and wet nurse is outlined—the baby a pale rose colour against their dark skins.

The film then shows the baby's breast-feeding by his mother on the subsequent four days, and the rhythmic accompaniment to his sucking made by the movement of her great toe. From the first he is handled by being held up and out, away from the mother's body, supported under one armpit and at the side of the head by her thumb and finger. He is stood up on the ground when bathed, and on the fifth day—cord fallen off, breast-feeding established, ready for the cold bath which now replaces the bath of warm swamp water—he is already firmly established in a world in which he will spend the day on his mother's lap or arm.

This situation of a natural birth without complications, in which the mother, with very little help, cares for her own baby and breast-feeds it in happy rhythmic relation to its eager, seeking, sucking behaviour, is the type which has served as a model in the minds of those who are seeking to judge maternal care, filial response and our present institutional care of infants. True, the image of 'natural childbirth' conjured up by those who have never witnessed a birth in a primitive society fails to allow for the already high degree of stylization: the way the cord is tied, the disposal of the placenta, the presence of the wet nurse, her qualifications decided upon by a system of lactation taboos, the patterned baths of wet clay and of warm and cold water, the bark which the mother bound around her waist, the toss she gave the baby in the air, up and sideways, and the way she shaped its nose with fingers warmed on a leaf laid on a glowing log.

Where ethologists have shown the extreme detail in which some response on the part of the



infant evokes a corresponding and appropriate response in the mother, and a chain of interlocking appropriate maternal and filial responses is released and coordinated, anthropologists have documented the enormous variety in the practice of childbirth even among the simplest peoples. But among each people these activities are patterned, and participation in the pattern supplies a culturally predetermined sequence within which the child and the mother *either live or die*. For this is the essence of the primitive situation. Lacking any of the devices and practices of medicine and care, the birth situation among the !atmul is far closer to that which we must assume for the early ancestors of man, when breast-feeding was the only known method of feeding a child and lactation by some other woman of a group was the first possible supplement to the capacity for lactation of the mother herself.

In judgements of maternal care, a great deal has been heard about 'the rejecting mother' who, because of her own conflicts and anxieties, her rejection of the feminine role or of the sex of her child, etc., 'rejects' her child and so is unable to breast-feed it or even to feed it artificially with sufficient relaxation so that it can trust her and thrive. Anthropologists supplied the information that every primitive woman somehow produced some milk to feed her child, that women who had been so ill with fever that they lost their milk for weeks regained it, and that women who had not had children could, by adopting a vigorously sucking baby, produce milk. All this appeared to reinforce the verdict that the sources of failure in breast-feeding were located in the mother, in defects of psychic functioning, psychosomatic but not somatic in character.

Parallel work by Margaret Fries (23) had focused on the infant in the hospital at birth, and her division of the newborn on the basis of a series of tests, which included suckling behaviour under interruption and frustration, into quiet, too quiet, and active babies placed the emphasis on the innate biological disposition of the infant, to which maternal behaviour should be adjusted. This demand for adjustment on the part of the mother was reiterated in the work of Margaret Ribble (39), which derived from that of Fries, on 'the rights of infants', again returning the onus of failure to the mother. More recently, Arthur Mirsky (37) has suggested that there are 'rejecting babies'—infants so constituted at birth that they actively reject the

feeding situation and arouse reactive rejections in the mother. This shifted the onus back to the infant with the possibility that the source of the failure might lie in the child, but the very phrase 'rejecting baby', although providing a needed corrective for the blanket explanation of the 'rejecting mother', still contained an element of blame.

Detailed studies of maternal-child behaviour in animals, especially the work of Helen Blauvelt (8) and of Mavis Gunther (24), both stimulated by modern ethological studies, by focusing upon the 'biological adequacy' of the responses of mother and child, within a sequence, have now added a new perspective, if seen within the framework of human evolution. The paradigm for this kind of behaviour is admirably given in the Norwegian film, *Sammi Jaki* (26). Here we see the reindeer delivering during a period when the herd is pressing towards the sea, where birth would occur under better conditions, nuzzling the infant to get on its own feet, lying down beside it once it is strong enough to suckle, stimulating it to great activity on its feet, and meanwhile listening, restless and anxious, to the sounds of the departing herd. If the infant is strong enough to follow the herd, all is well. But it will avail nothing for the mother to stay with the calf, and so lose the herd with which her survival lies. So she stands, in nicely calculated conflict. Helen Blauvelt's studies of newborn sheep and goats show in detail that the period in which the mother will wait for the infant to get established on its feet is sharply limited; after a given number of hours, during which she has bleated and licked the newborn, she no longer recognizes it as hers. The reindeer film throws into relief the situation for wilder animals where the newborn must move on their own feet or else must selectively be left to die by parents who have no choice. *Turi's Book of Lapland* (55) points the parallel to the human situation.

In primitive human groups, both prehistoric and contemporary, we have to reckon with forms of maternal and filial behaviour in which the concept of biological adequacy has to be related to the conditions of life and of optimum survival. It has been too often assumed that the mother's anxiety, when her infant failed to breast-feed satisfactorily, was a biologically *inadequate* response. A good mother, it has been argued, will respond to the weak, poor feeder with increased attention and love. It would, I believe, be more correct to say that the good *nurse* will so respond. In this situation the



nurse, free from the same, precise maternal type of resonance to the child's behaviour, can put all her energies into compensating for the weakness of the child. But I want to advance the hypothesis that the biological mother—to the extent that she is asked to make a biological response, i.e. to provide milk adequate in quantity and quality and to evoke feeding behaviour from her infant, to the extent that her behaviour may be said to have biological roots—has the possibility of *two* 'biologically adequate' responses, one leading to life and the other to death. For the child who sucks well and thrives on her milk, she has more milk and less anxiety. But when a child fails to thrive, her anxiety rises and, as clinical experience has shown, her milk supply falls, the infant receives less food, and a 'vicious circle' is set up. Under primitive conditions, unless culturally patterned practices of wet nursing and adoption have been set up, such a child will die. So the child whom the mother is able to feed, the child who is able to feed from that mother, will live. The very existence of the lactating-anxiety cycle was a kind of guarantee that in the neo-natal period there would be rigid selection for the most suitable children, without an excessive expenditure of scarce energy on attempting to rear a child with a lesser hold on life. In the same way, genetic defects in maternal behaviour would tend to be held at a minimum. The survival possibilities of a society could be calculated in the numbers of compatible nursing couples in a population, corrected for the presence of supplementary institutions—wet nurses, the use of artificial foods, and so on.

With each addition to the cultural repertoire for the preservation of infants by means other than lactation by their biological mothers, this primary situation would become less determinative. The mother's anxiety over the child which failed to thrive would be lessened by the knowledge that other means were available, a recourse not open to the animal mother in a domestic herd, who does not know that the shepherd or herdsman may load her stumbling offspring into a cart or sled. The possible relaxation of the deep and, according to this hypothesis, biological anxiety cycle of nursing failure in mother and offspring, whenever alternative methods of feeding the child are available, would explain the seemingly contradictory statistical finding that infant mortality declines with the invention of bottle feeding but that the countries with a very low infant mor-

talidity—like Holland—have more breast feeding and a lower infant death rate than does the United States.

Mavis Gunther (24), directing research on breast feeding in the Obstetric Hospital, University College Hospital, London, in which the lactation behaviour of 150 'nursing couples' was studied in detail, believes that she has isolated biologically given elements in the establishment of suckling in human infants comparable to the internal releasing mechanisms of the ethologists: in the response of the infant, first, to a stimulation of the lips, easy to provide, and, second, within three days after birth, to a filling of the 'mouth right to the palate and the dorsum of the tongue' by the nipple, which is dependent upon the length—specifically the protractility—of the nipple and also upon the infant not displaying certain feeding and breathing behaviour which interferes with this stimulation. In her sample of 150 nursing couples, 25 per cent of the mothers had nipples of too little protractility to meet this assumed instinctive need of the infant, and a few of the infants showed innate apathy, breathing difficulties, too small mouths, and so on, which interfered with the establishment of breast feeding and could not be attributed to any physical defect in the mother's breast. A device has been developed to wear during pregnancy for elongating the mother's nipples.

We have now, in this single situation, illuminated by thirty years of research, a paradigm of the relationships between innate dispositions and the characterological consequences when they are combined with the cultural arrangements of any society. We have recently witnessed attempts to restore more 'natural' parental situations—assumed to be those which are supported by our biological inheritance. Attempts to induce mothers to breast-feed, irrespective of early failure and of failure of the infant to thrive, have produced their own train of new anxieties in which the diminution of the mother's milk, under conditions of anxiety induced by failure, is overlaid by the interpretation of this biologically *adequate* behaviour—seen in terms of evolution and of the need for selective survival under primitive conditions—as a sign of inadequate mothering. In so doing we have failed to take into account the fact that the history of human civilization has been the history of artificially supplementing physical defects, keeping alive the prematurely born and the aged, supplying spectacles, hearing aids, and



false teeth, keeping alive the congenitally diabetic with insulin, and so on. With each new advance in medicine or technology, another group of surviving, functioning individuals is added to the population and we come closer to the ideal that every infant who is born shall live, even at the cost of institutionalization of the extreme defectives. It is within this culture, where individual human life is valued and the weakest receive more attention than the strongest, that present-day mothers—and fathers—must function, where defects in their psychodynamic functioning are revealed and do harm to themselves and others. Instead of attempting to return to biological mechanisms which are only too biologically adequate, functioning as they do to ensure the immediate or premature death of large proportions of a population, the task would seem to be to clarify our theories so that we may prevent the release of these ancient biological responses from obscuring the appropriate tasks of twentieth century parents. At the same time, studies such as those of Mavis Gunther should make it possible for us to compensate for and to supplement, in detailed and specific ways, the specific defects or abnormalities which interfere with a body-dependent function like breast feeding.

Psycho-analysis has long recognized that man's basic biological equipment is very old and that the processes of education are often heavily at odds with biological propensities. It would seem that the inclusion of an explicit recognition of the extent to which our capacity to save life is at variance with our innate ability to select lives to save would deepen the theoretical discussion of all these problems.

Yet making allowance for the inappropriateness of some of the older biologically given responses need not blind us to possibilities of invoking biological responses which are perhaps far older than our specifically human history. Recent clinical observations have been reported on the capacity of infants a few days old to move a distance as great as fifteen or eighteen inches towards their mother on a flat surface. The method of locomotion is said to be something like that of a worm, involving a twisting of the whole body. These movements have not yet been systematically studied; we do not know what the stimulus is which evoked the movement—whether the odour of the mother's body or the specific odour of the milk, etc. Looked at in biological perspective, this ability of the newborn to orient itself and to move in the

direction of the source of food is dramatically illustrated in the definiteness with which newborn turtles, having thrust their way up through the sand, make for the sea (38), or in the response of young mammals, whose four-legged, handless mothers can only guide them with muzzles and cries. But with the emergence of hands, the mother—ape or human—is able to grasp and manipulate her baby, and the infant's ability to move towards its mother would be of survival value only in the very rare instance where the mother became unconscious after delivery and the infant by moving towards her could rouse her.

The ability of human children to select a balanced diet is another example of a biological capacity very seldom exercised within human history (11). (The display by caged white rats, exposed to man-synthesized or distilled vitamins and minerals, of a capacity to select constructively among them is a complementary example of a biologically given type of behaviour which could never have been given as full expression in the wild (40).) Human beings exposed to drinking fountains, one containing and the other lacking an essential and 'tasteless' mineral, will drift towards the mineral one (40).

The new position of the father in the middle and upper classes in the United States, the United Kingdom, and Northern Europe—with the father's greater care of the young infant arising originally from the absence of servants and spare female relatives and from the restricted housing conditions of the modern, post-World-War-II home—may also exploit a biological given behaviour potential which has not been used for a long time. In very primitive societies it is not unusual to find fathers taking a good deal of care of small infants. So among some Australian aborigines, the father, after his morning hunt has been successful, will carry the young infant while the mother gathers vegetable foods. However, no complex society, so far as I have been able to ascertain, no complicated society with a written tradition has ever expected the man of stature and education to care for a baby. Mothers, nurses, female relatives, children, even eunuchs, but not fathers, had the physical care of young infants. So it has been possible to say that there seemed to be no instinctive basis for fatherhood comparable to the instinctive bases of maternal behaviour. Fathers were rewarded for caring for their young by the sexual and domestic services of the children's mother; elaborate social sanctions



for paternity, expressed in pride, prestige, or the validation of male status, and so on, had to be used, or unmarried men might be refused full citizenship or hunting and fishing licences. But post-World-War-II experience suggests that this new type of paternal behaviour, which is being pursued with such enthusiasm on both continents, may be drawing upon an instinctive response to a small creature—not necessarily identified as own child—of one's own species. Ethology provides us with many instances of the way in which the male, who pays no attention to his own offspring as such, may respond to the cry of distress of any infant of the same species. So, after many thousands of years in which this potential response of the male to handling a small infant—it is apparently necessary for it to be only a few weeks old to establish the effect—has been held in abeyance, possibly wisely, it now emerges at a period when the development of artificial feeding has loosened the dependence of the infant on the mother. It is too early to say what the effects will be—the diminution of that part of male creativity which was complementary to female creativity in childbearing, an alteration in character structure when infants are reared by both sexes, a greater equalization between husband and wife as the husband no longer has to act out, towards his wife, the cherishing behaviour which he learned from his mother but for which he had no other form of expression. But it is an example of the possible use of a biological potential which has been allowed to lie unused through many centuries of civilization.

In a somewhat similar way, the ability of women who have not borne children to lactate if they adopt a sufficiently vigorous infant, which, when I first reported this (32), was greeted with complete disbelief, has now been well established as occurring in several primitive societies. Although this would provide a way in which an adopting mother could establish a physical tie with her child, the use of any such device at present would collide with our sense of the importance of oral and nutritional satisfaction for developing trust in the young infant. The primitive adopting mother could tolerate the infant's cries, supplemented by milk from other mothers, while she established her milk supply by drinking the juice of many young coconuts; but this would be hard for the psychodynamically oriented pediatrician to tolerate.

Next, I want to come to the question of the

kind of early experience that is best for children who, from their earliest days, will encounter strangers. Infants, wherever they have been observed, go through a period when they suddenly discriminate between the known and the unknown person. The Arapesh of New Guinea call this 'the time when human beings appear in the pupils of the child's eyes'. When people lived in small self-contained groups, everyone the child encountered was either a well-known person or else someone whom not only he but also the mother or relative in whose arms he was carried feared and rejected as an enemy. The closeness of his tie to the person in whose arm he was held was both his guarantee of safety and the medium through which he learned how dangerous enemies were.

In Bali, the mother smiles and bows as she greets with surface expressions of respect the stranger or the person of higher caste from another village, but the baby in her arms screams with terror. One can judge from the baby's behaviour how violently it is reacting to a kinesthetically experienced fear which the mother expresses neither verbally nor in her face or posture. When I was in Bali, I read for the first time Miss Freud's *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence* (21), and, going over it in the light of Balinese behaviour around me, I felt that a fourth kind of fear should be added to her list of three: the fear which is communicated kinesthetically to the very young infant. Later, I was delighted to find Miss Freud's descriptions of this kind of fear as experienced by an infant through a parent's fear of bombing (22).

It is significant that the individual traditionally educated Balinese seldom survived being taken away from Bali, and that even leaving his own village was frightening. But moving in a group—as an orchestra, a dance troop, a whole village going to present tribute to a distant raja—they manage with great ease. In New York, in 1952, the Balinese dancers were reported to 'triple up' three in a chair or a bed, taking comfort from the kinesthetic closeness of the others. On the other hand, Samoans, who have been reared in large families and taken care of by many relatives, with no intense ties to mother or father, adapt easily when they go abroad as individuals.

We have not yet developed a method of bringing up our children so that they can journey easily, alone if necessary, to Hong Kong or Nigeria or the moon, tolerating with-



out fear strangers who look, speak, move, and smell very different. In a situation where the mother must take the child day by day to market, to the clinic, on the bus, on the underground, among strangers, the present tendency to advise very close ties between mother and child is doubtfully the best. Wider experiences in the arms of many individuals known in different degrees of intimacy, if possible of different races, may be a much better preparation.

In conclusion, I want to discuss very briefly another aspect of the urban world—the incongruity among all its parts. The house, the motor car, the street, the box the baby's food comes in, the bottle in which the milk is delivered, the book on the table and the pillow on the bed are in shape and colour and design extraordinarily unrelated to each other. In primitive societies, where change is very slow, or among traditional peasant peoples, where costume, crockery, and the shapes of roofs have not changed for generations, each part of the visible and sensible world reinforces each other part. Where the style is kindness, the occasional bad-tempered mother nevertheless lives beneath a kind roof. The shapes of pots, the light of the fire, the tones in other people's voices, the way the road winds around the house, all say to the child, 'You are safe'. The idiosyncrasy or failure of a particular mother or father is muted and made less important; the surrounding environment helps to highlight the moments when they are kind (33). And each child has a chance to learn from different parts of his experience. Some children will learn more from the shape of the roof, as they lie on their backs looking up at the thatch, others from the feel of the pot in their hands, still others from the cadence of voices, but as these things are all part of a whole, shaped and polished, ground down and tuned up through the generations until they fit and express to the child the particular view of the world within which it is safe and able to mature, there is a great deal more leeway in what can go wrong without doing irrevocable harm. Even extreme psychotic behaviour can be absorbed in such a setting, as people take quick precautions against a man with a spear in his hand, 'who will be all right tomorrow'. An occasional child may bear a scar from such an experience but, by and large, the familiar group seems able to take up the shock because they were all there together, each part supports each other part, nothing is so unexpected, so broken off that it cannot be dealt with.

Just as this is true of the shape of a roof, the shape of a pot, the line of an arrow, so it is also true of the way the child experiences the natural world. Whether the moon is calendrical and tells you when the fish will come over the reef, or whether the marks on the moon are an old woman beating bark cloth or a goddess who has just been swallowed by a demon, whatever the moon is, everyone agrees about it, and the child's experience of the moon and the way in which people see the moon are integrated, so that the child's need to order the natural world through perception is reinforced and supported and given symbolic form by the whole society. As we have reason to believe that the need to perceive the natural world is as deep a human need as is the need for strong, warm, meaningful interpersonal relations, the child in a coherent culture was safer (10).

But to-day most of our children are growing up in a world where the people who built the urban society believed that it was a violation of what they called 'nature'. 'Nature' is what one's fathers had as opposed to what one's sons invent—I think this is a fair definition. A plough and a sailing ship are natural; a horse and cart was a great deal more natural than an automobile was; at the moment an automobile is more natural than an airplane, and an ordinary airplane is more natural than a jet plane. At present we live in an endless progression of rejection of the next change in energy relationships in the world, and as a result we tend to break and fragment our world and to build in a way that is ugly and forbidding those parts of the world which we regard as unnatural. Different peoples, of course, do this differently. I was very struck, I remember, in World War II with the efforts that post-card makers in Britain made to domesticate tanks. There were some perfectly charming post-cards showing tanks in the middle of wheat fields, with poppies in the field or a lark sitting on the tank, an attempt somehow to absorb into a domestic and meaningful picture this invasive thing that was tearing up the landscape. But by and large we haven't succeeded very well, and our children are growing up in a world where every line, almost every brick, says to them that man is not related to the universe in any reasonable way whatever, that he is violating it, exploiting it, extracting from it, and that he is being unnatural. He is eating reinforced bread instead of beautiful, pure, natural bread.

This particular breach in our whole cultural



tradition is something our children are experiencing, and the protection that was once given them by the coherence between the landscape and the human manufactured environment is gone. This is a new hazard against which we have to protect them. As we explore further and explore in a variety of ways, as we explore the living world and learn more about the particular detailed propensities of living creatures, particularly of human living creatures, as we learn more about our own origins and the probable conditions under which men once lived and under which we were shaped biologically in the past, as we learn more about the possibilities of life in different sorts of societies, as we learn more from the study of individuals here—both from the study of adult patients to whom something sorrowful has been

done and from the study of small children to whom something sorrowful is being done, so that we can study it contemporaneously—and as we learn more in the field of education about the possible needs of the child for the understanding of the universe and for relating his internally perceived reality to the externally perceived reality, we have a continuing task of moulding these new insights and new researches together into a cultural expectation that will use accurately and not unfairly, not making too great demands and not misplacing their potentialities, the biologically given in our nature, as we imaginatively create out of our ability as human beings to build culture those conditions which will supplement and expand and, in many cases, use hitherto unused biological propensities and potentialities of mankind.

## REFERENCES

- (1) ALEXANDER, F., and ROSS, H. (Eds.) (1952). *Dynamic Psychiatry*. (Chicago: Univ. of Chicago Press.)
- (2) BAKWIN, H. (1944). 'Psychogenic Fever in Infants.' *Amer. J. Dis. Child.*, 67, 176-181.
- (3) BATESON, G. (1942). 'Social Planning and the Concept of Deutero Learning.' In *Science, Philosophy and Religion*, Second Symposium. (New York: Conference on Science, Philosophy and Religion, pp. 81-97.)
- (4) — et al. [1958]. *The Natural History of an Interview*. (In preparation.)
- (5) — and MEAD, M. [n.d.]. *First Five Days in the Life of a New Guinea Baby*. (Film, 2 reels, 22 min., sound.) (New York: New York Univ. Film Library.)
- (6) BERTALANFFY, L. VON (1952). *Problems of Life*. (New York: Wiley.)
- (7) BIRDWHISTELL, RAY E. [1954]. *Introduction to Kinesics, An Annotation System for Analysis of Body Motion and Gesture*. (Louisville, Ky.: Univ. of Louisville.)
- (8) BLAUVELT, HELEN (1955, 1956, 1957). Contributions to *Group Processes*. Cf. Schaffner, B. (Ed.).
- (9) BOWLBY, J. (1951). *Maternal Care and Mental Health*. WHO Monograph No. 2. (Geneva: World Health Organization.) (Abridged version: *Child Care and the Growth of Love*. London: Penguin Books, 1953.)
- (10) COBB, E. [n.d.]. *Ecology of Imagination in Childhood*. MS.
- (11) DAVIS, E. S. (1928). 'The Food Consumption of Rural School Children.' In *Massachusetts Agricultural Experiment Station Bulletin*, 241, 97-241.
- (12) DOLLARD, J., and MILLER, N. E. (1950). *Personality and Psychotherapy, An Analysis in Terms of Learning, Thinking and Culture*. (New York: McGraw-Hill.)
- (13) ERIKSON, ERIK H. (1950). *Childhood and Society*. (New York: Norton.)
- (14) ESCALONA, S., and LEITCH, M. [n.d.]. *Eight Infants: Tension Manifestations in Response to Perceptual Stimulation*. (Film.) (New York: New York Univ. Film Library.)
- (15) FOERSTER, H. VON, et al. (Eds.) (1951). *Cybernetics, Transactions of the Seventh Conference*, 2, 3, 4 October, 1950, New York. (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr. Foundation.)
- (16) — (1952). *Cybernetics, Transactions of the Eighth Conference*, 15, 16 March, 1951, New York. (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation.)
- (17) — (1953). *Cybernetics, Transactions of the Ninth Conference*, 20, 21 March, 1952, New York. (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundations.)
- (18) — (1955). *Cybernetics, Transactions of the Tenth Conference*, 22, 23, 24 April, 1953, Princeton, N.J. (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation.)
- (19) FORD, C. S., and BEACH, F. A. (1951). *Patterns of Sexual Behavior*. (New York: Harper; Paul Hoeber.)
- (20) FRANK, L. K., et al. (1948). 'Teleological Mechanisms.' *Annals of New York Acad. Sci.*, 50, 178-278.
- (21) FREUD, A. (1937). *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence*.
- (22) — and BURLINGHAM, D. T. (1943). *War and Children*. (New York: Medical War Books.)
- (23) FRIES, M., and WOLF, P. J. [n.d.]. *Series of Studies on Integrated Environment: the Interaction between Child and Environment*. (Five films.) (New York: New York Univ. Film Library.)
- (24) GUNTHER, M. (1955). 'Instinct and the Nursing Couple.' *Lancet*, 19 March, 575-578.

- (25) HESS, E. H. (1955). *Contributions to Group Processes*. Cf. Schaffner, B. (Ed.).
- (26) HØST, P. [n.d.]. *Sammi Jaki*. (Film.) (Oslo: ABC Films.)
- (27) JACKSON, E. B. (1950). 'Pediatric and Psychiatric Aspects of the Yale Rooming-in Project.' *Connecticut State Medical Journal*, 14, No. 7, 616.
- (28) KOFFKA, K. (1935). *Principles of Gestalt Psychology*. (New York: Harcourt Brace.)
- (29) LIDDELL, H. S. (1955, 1956, 1957). *Contributions to Group Processes*. Cf. Schaffner, B. (Ed.).
- (30) LORENZ, K. (1950). 'The Comparative Method in Studying Innate Behaviour Patterns.' In *Physiological Mechanisms in Animal Behaviour*, Proc. Soc. for Exp. Biol. Symposium, No. 4, J. F. Danielli and R. Brown (Eds.). (Cambridge: Cambridge Univ. Press.)
- (31) MEAD, M. (1947). 'On the Implications for Anthropology of the Gesell-Ilg Approach to Maturation.' *Amer. Anthropologist*, 49, No. 1, 69-77.
- (32) — (1949). *Male and Female*. (New York: Morrow.)
- (33) — (1953). 'Introduction.' In Collins, R., *The Lost and the Found*. (New York: Woman's Press.)
- (34) — (1954). 'Some Theoretical Considerations on the Problem of Mother-Child Separation.' *Amer. J. Orthopsychiatry*, 24, No. 3, 471-483.
- (35) — (1957). 'Mother and Child.' *Lancet*, VI, No. 6, 9 February, 317.
- (36) — and MACGREGOR, F. C. (1951). *Growth and Culture*. (New York: Putnams.)
- (37) MIRSKY, I. A., MILLER, R., and STEIN, M. (1953). 'Relation of Adrenocortical Activity and Adaptive Behavior.' *Psychosomatic Medicine*, 15, Nov.-Dec.
- (38) RANK, A. J. (1956). *Among the Head-hunters*. (Film.)
- (39) RIBBLE, M. (1943). *The Rights of Infants*. (New York: Columbia Univ. Press.)
- (40) RICHTER, C. P. (1943). 'The Self-Selection of Diets.' In *Essays in Honor of Herbert M. Evans*. (Berkeley: Univ. California Press, pp. 499-506.)
- (41) ROUDINESCO (AUBREY), J., and APPELL, G. [n.d.]. *Monique (Maternal Deprivation in Young Children)*. (Film, 2 reels, 22 min., sound.) (Paris: Association pour la Santé de l'Enfance.)
- (42) SCHAFFNER, B. (Ed.) (1955). *Group Processes. Transactions of the First Conference*, 26, 27, 28, 29 and 30 September, 1954, Ithaca, New York. (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation.)
- (43) — (1956). *Group Processes, Transactions of the Second Conference*, 9, 10, 11 and 12 October, 1955, Princeton, N.J. (New York: Josiah Macy, Jr., Foundation.)
- (44) — (1957). *Group Processes, Transactions of the Third Conference*. (In press.)
- (45) SCOTT, J. (Ed.) (1950). 'Methodology and Techniques for the Study of Animal Societies.' *Annals New York Acad. Sci.*, 51, Art. 6.
- (46) SIMPSON, G., and ROE, A. [n.d.]. *Evolution and Behavior*. (New Haven: Yale Univ. Press.) (In press.)
- (47) SODDY, K. (Ed.) (1955). *Mental Health and Infant Development*, 2 vols. (London: Routledge.)
- (48) SPITZ, R., and WOLF, K. A. [n.d.]. *Grief—A Peril in Infancy*. (Film, 3 reels, 35 min., silent.) (New York: New York Univ. Film Library.)
- (49) — [n.d.]. *Mother-Child Relations*. (Film, 2 reels, 22 min., silent.) (New York: New York Univ. Film Library.)
- (50) — [n.d.]. *The Smiling Response*. (Film, silent.) (New York: New York Univ. Film Library.)
- (51) TANNER, J., and INHELDER, B. (Eds.) (1957). *Discussions on Child Development, Psycho-biological Development of the Child*, Vols. I and II. (London: Tavistock; New York: Int. Univ. Press.)
- (52) — [n.d.]. *Discussions on Child Development, Psycho-biological Development of the Child*, Vols. III and IV. (In press.)
- (53) THORPE, W. H. (1956). *Learning and Instinct in Animals*. (London: Methuen.)
- (54) TINBERGEN, N. (1951). *The Study of Instinct*. (London and New York: Oxford Univ. Press.)
- (55) TURI, J. (1931). *Turi's Book of Lapland*. (New York and London: Harper.)
- (56) WALTER, W. GREY (1953). *The Living Brain*. (New York: Norton.)



# ON IDENTIFICATION \*

By

ROY R. GRINKER, M.D., CHICAGO

## I

The subject of identification is almost co-extensive with the entire field of psychodynamics, for it involves consideration of the processes of instinctual drives, the mechanisms of early socialization, and the intra-psychic and interpersonal behaviour and conflicts of the human being. Previous consideration of the participation of early physiological patterns in psychological development (12) naturally led me to the question: How do the periodic cycles of infantile metabolism influence developing ego patterns, and how do these obtain their content from relationships with representatives of the external world? The subject of identification, therefore, becomes an extension of biological theory. On the other hand, identifications develop from transactions between the maturing child and other persons transmitting the symbol systems of societies and cultures; and personality interacts with other personalities to form social and cultural systems. Therefore, identifications constitute theoretical bridges between biology and personality, and between personalities and social groups.

Recently, social psychiatrists and sociologists have been allocating bridging functions to social roles as systems of communications and expectations in transactions among human beings (Spiegel, 20). They constitute a description of behaviour gross enough to be defined through a period of time, but limited to what may be available or permitted in a specific social system. As communications occupying varying time spans, they are derived from unconscious attitudes based on past learning and are governed by motivations which have their origin in a multiplicity of internal identifications that may never, or at least not directly, be revealed in behaviour. Although the regulative mechanisms of role systems are concerned with complementarity between actors in any social

system, without which there is tension, roles are determined by multi-levelled internal processes of thinking and feeling, all of which, comprising mentation, are richer, more complicated and faster moving than the available social roles.

Identifications that determine characteristics of the component parts of personality and, in compound, delineate the self are expressed not only in role performance, that is in the dimensions of words or action, but also internally in conscious or unconscious communications among the various processes of the mental apparatus. Some are then expressed in whatever social roles are available after filtering devices have been passed through; others, in conflict with each other, are neutralized, or locked in, or delayed for later expression. The formalized content of social roles represents but a small part of the internalized action system, much of which is in conflict or at least not in conformity with the main or observable self.

There is futility in attempting to define my subject in advance, since the purpose of this presentation is essentially one of definition of processes culminating in identification. Furthermore, there is little agreement on meaning among the countless people using the term. Therefore, I shall tentatively give you the usual definition so that you may know in general what I am considering.

Identification usually connotes an unconscious state of 'having become in part or total the same' in that a person thinks, feels, and acts after the fashion (or as he thinks it is) of the one who is taken as a model. As you will soon discern, this is not my definition. My discussion of identification in general, to follow, will not end in a simple declarative definition, but will give you a notion of the areas of knowledge and ignorance about the way in which content of symbol systems of personalities, society, and culture are acquired for utilization and propaga-

\* From the Institute for Psychosomatic and Psychiatric Research and Training of the Michael Reese Hospital, Chicago, Illinois. Presidential Address, read before the Illinois Psychiatric Society on 16 May, 1956.

tion. The end result may be your total confusion; but at least I hope that definitive questions will be raised in your minds.

The material of this presentation consists of a brief review of the literature, a few interspersed clinical vignettes to document an empirical foundation, data from six weeks of constant observations of infant Sue beginning at the fourth week of life, and some final theoretical conclusions.

## II

The literature on identification is diffusely scattered, and it is difficult to determine the exact origin of many of our existing concepts. I shall, however, attempt to indicate in capsule form our present state of knowledge as derived from a variety of fields.

An analogy can be made between identifications and certain security operations in more primitive organisms. Stunkard (22) pointed out that in some animals the quest for security results in greater dependence on other species, with the abandonment of their own potentialities for growth. This frequently leads to regressive evolution, demonstrated by a simplification of structure after the adoption of safer, passive, more inert forms of living. Highly organized social forms of life maximize security at the cost of restricted lives of its members. This is particularly exemplified in parasites who become dependent, inert, and physiologically regressed. Although identification is an important part of psychological development, under certain circumstances and in excessive quantities it may be analogous to a parasitic security operation. Too great an identification with others or conformity with their values may produce a rigidly stable, other-directed or clinging, phobic type of personality with restriction of potential creativity and little freedom for self-realization.

Engel and Reichsman (3) have made a major contribution to the problem of identification in their psychosomatic studies of Monica, an infant with an oesophageal atresia and a gastrostomy. During the earliest months of life when objects were not differentiated from self and mental representations were not yet formed, the infant was only an *incorporative* being. At this time acid secretion in the stomach occurred mainly in relationship to the feeding-wakeful state. Later, object- and self-representations became differentiated, and Monica's stomach secreted acid either in response to food or when in the proximity of human beings with whom she had a

pleasurable transaction. She seemed to *introject* these objects psychologically, using an alimentary model, as she developed mental representations of them. After self- and object-representations were clearly discriminated, qualities of the real object or their representations were acquired by Monica without alteration of gastric secretion. This, Engel and Reichsman call identification. Under conditions of stress, such as in the transference situations during psycho-analysis, when the boundaries of the self become regressively blurred, it is suggested that the processes of incorporation and introjection may be revived and earlier identifications reactivated.

Therese Benedek (1) states: 'Birth is a traumatic separation for both mother and child. Their relationship is re-established through the processes of alimentation. Through the rhythmic repetition of hunger and satiation, the biologic unity is replaced by psychologic communications through introjections and projections. The newborn eventually learns that the source of need is inside and the object of gratification is outside. At the same time, the infant is the object of the mother's receptive needs. She feels 'whole' with him and 'empty' without him. This attitude, plus the exaggerated charge of the mother's incorporating fantasies during lactation, indicate that the mother during the post-partum period as well as during pregnancy responds to the increased demands on her with an increased wish to receive. These emotions originate in the biological regression of motherhood; they indicate that the post-partum symbiosis is oral-alimentary, for both infant and mother.'

I might state parenthetically that the puerperal biological regression of the mother with its psychological implications may be based on the functions of the placental and other foetal endocrine systems. These support not only the child but also the mother. As a result, maternal diabetes and rheumatoid arthritis are often alleviated during pregnancy, the pituitary may become partially atrophied from disuse, and the lack of maternal adrenocortical hormone may make the sick mother worse after delivery. Although the need of the mother for the child is biological and temporary, it may be expressed psychologically for an extended time.

'Through memory traces of alimentary experiences, the infant introjects the "good-feeding mother = good-satiated-self"; and the "bad-frustrating mother" = "bad-frustrated (hungry, painful) self." Introjection of memory



images of the good mother produces confidence, hope and increasing capacity for tolerance to frustration. At the same time, the mother develops confidence in her own motherliness; her gratification is projected on to the child. These are repetitive, reciprocal, transactional processes of identifications and projections through which primary object relationship and primary self representation are established.

'Failures in gratifications in the child result in crying fits, i.e. in sudden total regression to the undifferentiated phase in which mother as object does not exist. In the process of calming down, the infant projects part of the aggressive motor excitement on to the mother, and by this the infant develops hatred for the object he needs to establish his "self" again. As the calming-down process continues, the aggressive impulses disappear via introjection, and the equation "bad mother = bad self" becomes established within the psychic organization. This introject constitutes the ambivalent core of the personality and represents the fundamental, alimentary origin of the depressive constellation.'

Turning to the strictly psycho-analytic literature, we find that, although it is voluminous, its contents are sparse, repeating monotonously the early contributions of Freud. The elements of identification in psycho-analytic theory may be abstracted under the headings of: (i) gratification, (ii) defences as they contribute to the development of mental functions and learning, and (iii) pathological identifications.

(i) Fenichel (5, 6) summarizes psycho-analytic theory as follows: the ego develops and changes its characteristics by acquisition of qualities perceived in external objects. The formula may be schematized as follows: drives originating in the body make demands on the ego, which searches for gratification. Eventually the idea of the *gratifying* object becomes integrated as an endopsychic representative of the object in the ego. This idea develops precedence and power over other ideas and exerts organizing, selective, and formative influences over a wide range of psychic processes (19). As a result, the subject is no longer fully interested in the external object. The ego alters its form by identification to become like the object, and libido is desexualized with its object now the altered ego. The ego becomes a precipitant of lost object cathexes—a record of past object choices (8, 9). This spares repression of the drives because the instinctual demands of the id are no longer aimed at the outer world.

(ii) Anna Freud (7) includes identification among the processes of *defence* against either internal or external stress. In the so-called identification with an aggressor who cannot be combated with impunity, the characteristics of the aggressor are introjected and identification ensues, making the person as aggressive as the one he fears. Projection of one's own needs results in altruism. The subject gives to and cares for another and receives gratification by identification with the recipient. However, this is more than a defence, for in psychological terms such role reversal (putting one's self in the other's place) is a learning process, increasing the strength and stability of the child's ego. It diminishes the dependence of the child on others and increases his sensitivity, enriches his inner life and facilitates socialization (15). Harry Lee formulates defensive or secondary identification as follows: When the mother employs negatively toned technics of teaching, the child introjects the anxiety-arousing aspects of the mother and represses his objectional expressions.

(iii) Jacobson (14) states that one of the major processes in infantile development is the building up of stable object representations in the ego. When the self becomes differentiated from the outer world, self-representations develop from pleasurable and unpleasurable inner experiences which are constantly changing, and are fused and confused with object images. Frustrations throw the child on its own resources and stimulate progressive identification with the parent. (By this, Jacobson probably means internalization of object-subject transaction.) Healthy and realistic object- and self-representations are thus built. Object libido may be used for further self-representations as the child becomes less dependent on the object and can obtain narcissistic satisfaction in his own behaviour. This, in turn, increases his capacity to love others. However, frustrations which mobilize intense aggressive reactions result in feelings of inferiority and self-criticism when the hated object is internalized.

Early infantile identifications are essentially magical, based on unconscious fantasies or the temporary belief of being one with or becoming the object regardless of reality. In psychotic states, normal object relationships disintegrate and magical mechanisms of identification reappear, sometimes to be enacted in animistic collective rituals. Normally, they find some expression in the ego-ideal and the superego. The core of the latter consists of idealized



parental images blended with archaic aggrandized images of the self. There is normally an awareness of this unrealistic element in the superego, which is reflected in the recognition of the discrepancies between ego and superego standards.

The most advanced type of psychological work in the field of identification comes from Piaget (17) in his work on imitation in childhood where he contrasts two processes which he terms assimilation (meaning identification) and adjustment. He states: 'Equilibrium consists in preserving the living aspects of the past by continual accommodation to the manifold and irreducible present.' Assimilation, especially affective, remains unconscious when it does not combine with accommodation to form an equilibrium. This seems to mean that something is imitated and then assimilated, but is useful only if it is available for adjustment to external, real, and novel situations. He considers that there is no need to imply repressive forces or censorship, because a split between assimilation and accommodation prevents symbolic thought and dreams from having access to reality. Representative thought consists in stages of development of imitation, symbolic play and cognitive representations which are interrelated, and their evolution is dependent on gradual establishment of assimilation and accommodation. The interplay between these two polar functions allows a recall of the past in the light of the present, tending to equilibrium or adaptation.

We now turn to some modern sociological concepts, the leading exponent of which is Parsons (16). He states that the family functions as a small social group in which the child's dependence needs may be temporarily gratified and from which he may be gradually emancipated. The principal stages in the development of personality, particularly on its emotional side, leave residues which constitute a stratification of the structure of the personality itself with reference to its own developmental history. As the child grows, he becomes differentiated into systems of action during separate phase patterns of socialization. Every stage of development or socialization of the child requires learning 'which is never only a triggering off of hereditary patterns'.

In the phase of oral dependence, the infant internalizes the mother's image and her concept of him as a recipient of care. In each process of social internalization there is not only an image of the object but also a mirror image of the object's attitude. Thus, personality structure is

primarily organized from internalizations of systems of social objects. Personality does not develop by modification of instincts or drives but by differentiation of internalized object systems by binary fission. Parsons postulates an embryological scheme of fission from the single-celled mother-child symbiosis to a sixteen-celled genital maturity.

Personality establishment is an internalized object which regulates the orientation of the individual by defining for the self the relevant aspects of that object with stability over time and, with all, a range of adaptability to changing conditions. What is internalized is always a reciprocal interaction pattern of matched or complementary expectations. Those who play a part in socialization and internalization must participate with a subject on his own terms and for his own needs but also play an authentic role in a wider system. This constitutes the leverage and definition for the internalization of the next role for the developing child. The formula is permissiveness, support in spite of failure, denial of reciprocity, and reward for achievement on a supraordinate level. Harry Lee puts this concept in other words but considers that, when the mother gives up interest in certain zonal pleasures, the child renounces primary identification, increases auto-erotic activity, and becomes interested in participation with the mother in the next zone. He conserves a share of the valued object for narcissistic supplies at the expense of limiting free expression. The balance between denial of reciprocity and positive reward leads to the establishment of a stable system of expectations in the child. This constitutes internalization of the parent-mother in her role as the source of care, and identification of that aspect of her with the self that has stood in a meaningful relationship.

Internalization creates appropriate attitudes towards family role figures, capable of generalizations and substitutions. Later identifications, after the primary one with the mother, are more complicated because of the multiple role relationships among various members of the family or, for that matter, towards each. To each, a new set of values is attached. Identification becomes a process of internalization of any common collective we-categorization and, with it, the common values of the collectivity.

### III

For the purposes of this discussion I should like to define identifications not as processes, but



as their results. Thus, introjection, as a psychological analogue of the biological prototype of incorporation, leads to internalization of subject-object transactions with many nuances of their behavioural patterns.

Generally, we have adopted from psychoanalytic theory concepts of allocation of specific psychological functions and assigned them a topological position as id, ego, superego, and ego-ideal. Unfortunately, they have been anthropomorphized and dealt with as structures although they only exist as symbols of function usable for the development of systems of analysis or as scientific models. These symbols are 'observer-defined' rather than recognizable as genetic 'system-properties'.

To the *id* we have allocated the sum total of undifferentiated potential forces linked to the body in unexplained ways, energized by it and in turn influencing it. As a potential, it affects behaviour and mentation only by its driving capacities. The derivative psychological component of the *id* is a differentiated function whose activities are termed the 'primary processes'. This *id* communicates internally in pictorial symbols but can be, or has been, capable of conscious communication at higher levels when its information becomes attached to word symbols. Thus, even the psychological *id* is a product of constitutional potential plus life experiences, changing with motivation and growth.

The *ego* develops out of growth and differentiation of potential patterns of the *id*, and it is associated with varying degrees of consciousness (conscious or preconscious). Its multiple specific patterns are derived from internal and external bodily experiences, but content is a reflection of transactions with the outer world. As a product of growth, the *ego* becomes the pacemaker of further psychological growth and the regulator of psychological homeostasis.

To the *superego* we relegate the functions of automatic control of socially and culturally defined roles. Its contents and specific patterns of severity, permissiveness, corruptness, etc. are derived from transactional experience, which to some degree are modifiable long after maturity. The *superego* is not always a memory of experience with an authoritative figure as it existed in reality. Its origin is not at the resolution of the Oedipus complex but in neonatal experiences with the mother even before a 'self' is well defined, for its content lies within poorly defined boundaries, sometimes experi-

enced as inside and sometimes outside. Only later after the development of self-esteem does the *superego* become sufficiently differentiated, as it secretes further experience, to function as a warning mechanism signalling future danger.

To the *ego ideal* is allocated the function of striving for future gratification with pride in self as the reward and shame as the penalty (11). Its patterned process seems to be derived from experiences during metabolically oriented infancy when only need-gratifications exist. Frustration of unequivocal gratification facilitates growth and increases capacity to learn and develop. A modicum of success instils confidence, hope, and further aspirations. Thus, the *ego-ideal* receives its content from experiences in early life and only later becomes differentiated as an allocated function.

The resultant *self* is thus composed of many identifications distributed by our system of analysis into several categories to which are allocated general functional attributes and specific contents. The internal interactions and communications among them are manifold and rich compared to the stereotype of available behaviour patterns and verbal syntax.

Without specifying the later functional allocation, a large matrix of influences determines what is included in identifications. Among these are the genic constitution, strength of the instincts, antenatal experiences, birth trauma, neonatal metabolic patterns and feeding experiences, maternal influences, other siblings, father, later life experiences, etc. These many variables, and others not mentioned or not known, constitute a field in which identifications occur, for which *timing* or level of maturation is probably the most significant single variable.

When we consider the fact that the developing child has different needs and hence perceives special qualities of its environment which it introjects, we also touch on the problem of varying sensitivity to deprivation. As Bowlby (2) puts it, experiences occurring at critical plastic periods of phases of development have effects different from those at later more rigid periods. Since basic needs are considered instinctual, the ethologists have been helpful in formulating scientific concepts of instincts. Tinbergen (23) has conceived of primitive social responses evoked by simple perceptive stimuli as built-in ready-made responses awaiting innate releaser mechanisms (I.R.M.). Once these responses are released, further learning occurs by association with more differentiated stimuli. Thus infants,



with all due reference to hereditary differences, have a readiness to respond with a love relation to a parental figure. Later love relations are influenced by the character of the earliest, as for example a gosling if prepared early will follow the human experimenter and not a goose. Likewise human beings persist in attaching themselves to people similar to their first loves. The point of all this is to show that identifications require more than a mother-child relationship, but a readiness to respond, a specific timing and an appropriate releasing stimulus. In this enlarged field of latent forces which we call instinctual, imprinting through experiences at critical early periods is long-lasting.

#### IV

I think that we are now able to define our concepts concerning the processes which lead to identification more adequately and to raise some significant questions concerning them. Identification is an end-result of transactions between a subject, who may be any human individual, and an object, who may be any other human individual. In general, we use the terms subject and object, referring to the components of transactions. It should be clear that the object, whose transactional processes with the subject are internalized, furnishes to the subject not only personalized qualities and attributes, but also signs and symbols of a particular culture, the knowledge of the institutionalized and instrumental roles of the particular society and expressive roles characterized by a specific sex.

The self and objects are never isolated but always in relationship. Others are seen in the light of our own needs, and we view ourselves according to the opinion of others. Neither the 'I' nor the 'you', the 'we' or the 'others', can be torn apart. Identification is a transactional memory residue, always composed of subject and object. To consider that the ego is ever a rigid boundary between self and not-self is erroneous, since it is also composed of learned patterns involving self and others. As a filtering boundary process, it is shifting and permeable like any biological membrane. The time of the transaction between subject and object in terms of the developmental phases of the subject, what the object has to offer and what the subject needs, determines the 'partness' or 'wholeness' of the identification. For example, the neonate in the nursing stage sees, feels, smells, and tastes only *part* of the mother. For the infant at this

time these perceptions are *all* of the mother. Therefore, what is actually part of the object is really the whole object from the frame of reference of the child and unconsciously remains so. Later, the overt personality or character of the object is viewed by the subject as an assemblage of qualities, some parts of which are needful, useful, or dangerous and with which identification may result or is avoided by a counter-identification (8). In this process, the whole of the object is broken down into specific parts from the frame of reference of the child. What is partialized is not the personality of the subject or the internalized object, but the transaction between what the subject is able to view in the outer world with whatever perceptive tools are matured, and the parts or whole of the object that it needs, is always a fragment of the whole.

Our next definition relates to the processes by which identification occurs. It seems universally accepted that the processes leading to internalization are derived from the biological prototype of incorporation which serves the purposes of ingesting life-maintaining nutrition. Only later is the mouth and tongue apparatus concerned with primary active explorations and mastery of the neonatal environment. Incorporation refers literally to the taking in through the mouth of fluid substances in infancy and should not be used to refer to a material symbol of an introjected object.

Although sucking is an innately patterned process evoked by stimulation of the lips and buccal mucosa, there is a small and quickly mastered learned component. The neonate's sucking pattern is not at first automatic, but requires repeated stimulation and sometimes an initial squirt of milk on to the nasopharyngeal wall, before the lips are pressed and sucking movements begin. As late as four weeks of age, this learned pattern may be temporarily lost during periods of greedy excitement, and then air is taken in simultaneously, resulting in choking, coughing, and rapid distension of the stomach. Furthermore, between the fourth and sixth week of life, satiation is not signalled only by a cessation of sucking, but also by an active ejection of the nipple by a forced protrusion of the tongue and still later by a sidewise turning away of the head (the rudimentary gesture for 'no'). New or distasteful foods administered by spoon may be quickly spat out by tongue protrusion. At six to eight weeks, mouth-play consists of in-and-out tongue movements over the lips, and at eight to ten weeks blathering



speech sounds are made by projections of the tongue over the lips. Thus, it becomes quite apparent that the biological prototype of incorporation is very quickly mixed with another prototype, that of ejection, riddance, or what later might be called projection in a psychological sense.

At first, incorporation results in the assimilation of external sources of nutritional supply at a time when such objects are not yet differentiated according to their relationship to the child boundaries. It is not able, in fact, to differentiate self from not-self, and it also gains temporary satisfaction by sucking at its own lips and fingers. From an anthropomorphic view of the neonate at this stage, its reactions may be interpreted as if they were pleasurable, unpleasurable, needful, greedy, etc. It seems plausible that these early transactional alimentary cyclic experiences have a role in patterning the later mental representations of the outer world. But any psychological representation of this process cannot be isolated from the concept of instincts or drives, for the very process of search for nutritive substance indicates an instinctual need. An attempt to derive internalization entirely from differentiation of objects within the subject is as unwarranted as the opposite of explaining identification as only an instinctual process.

Mouth functions, in the service of incorporation and ejection, have an important influence on early learning and on differentiation of the psychological system (11). They reappear during periods of regression (sleep, coma, brain damage, schizophrenia, etc.). We conceive of introjection as a psychological process akin to incorporation. In the earliest months of life, such introjection is associated with the physical manifestations of salivation which I have observed many times in Sue and, according to Engel, of increased gastric secretion. Introjection is a process by which object-representations and self-representations are created in the mental apparatus, independent of the primitive incorporative process although derived from it.

## V

Imitation as an early process of learning may easily be observed in many infants, in children of all ages, and in adults. It is a transient and evanescent process associated either with adoration, or hostility to a significant object, and is often conscious and intentional. Exaggerated unconscious imitation in adult life is usually superimposed on an earlier identification. A

middle-aged man suffered from depression beginning when he attained success in business which his henpecked, passive salesman father could not achieve. In the course of therapy, he became aware that he wore the same colour in suits and shirts, affected the same mannerisms, enjoyed only the same baseball team, etc., as had his father. But behind this caricature of detailed imitation was the introjected patterned relationship with his weak passive father (ego), driven on by another identification with his dominant mother (superego).

During the process of psycho-analysis I have often heard patients whose reaction formations, substitutions, sublimations and many other kinds of defences have been penetrated, express the following evaluations of themselves: 'I am worthless', 'I am an ugly, bad and greedy monster', 'I am an empty hollow shell with nothing to give anyone outside of me'. These are not simple intellectual expressions but are accompanied by intense affective experiences. Often they are associated with bodily distressful sensations. How does this sense of inner badness, emptiness and weakness come about? It is probably derived from early unpleasurable experiences from which the sense of pain and the feeling of badness became localized inside the potential ego boundaries.

One patient had a psychotic mother who often maniacally raved at home or sometimes disappeared mysteriously into a sanatorium. Another was underfed through the use of a deficient formula and cried incessantly in starvation long before her diet was corrected. Another was physically and emotionally circumscribed and constricted by an extremely neurotic mother who permitted little early independence or even freedom of motion.

These patients, like many others, came for treatment because of irrational feelings of shame and guilt, but, in spite of prolonged psycho-analytic therapy, the underlying personality processes and physiological concomitants remained fixed as 'bad self'. Their growth and change could only be helped by learning with great difficulty other concepts of self, and object *in relation* to self, which in adult life were still only *illusions that attempted to cover up* the poignancy of early disappointments.

I have observed several so-called 'borderline' cases as they became temporarily psychotic and then gradually became re-integrated. The psychosis usually developed abruptly with very little warning. Then they behaved like angry



and frightened undomesticated animals indulging in cannibalistic and soiling behaviour. Gratification in lying curled up, in being dirty and unresponsive except to their own fantasies was accompanied by infantile fears of a strange confusing world. As this behaviour was abandoned and the patients seemed more adult—they dressed, ate naturally, maintained cleanliness and responded verbally—they identified the surrounding patients, nurses and physicians as actors who played parts corresponding to their most painful memories and only occasionally to some pleasant ones. Despite the actual kind and understanding roles of the nurses and doctors, they were constantly misinterpreted so that a 'corrective emotional experience' was ineffective. This is the most important point I wish to make here: that such a patient cannot understand a good human environment because his earliest transactions have imprinted 'badness' on him which is constantly in flux with those outside of him. Bad self cannot understand a good not-self until stronger boundaries are reconstituted and illusions accepted. Thus, even after a psychotic regression, primary identifications usually remain immutable.

I should like to present one of several examples of how the primary child-mother transactions at the time when psychological boundaries have either not been established or are very tenuous, affect personality (13). A boy who had celiac disease from birth to the age of eight had great difficulty in mastering the separation from the solicitous mother and resisted each step in psychological growth. The crowning blow occurred at the discovery of her pregnancy when he was four years old. During analysis, the following fantasy developed. 'I was out walking with my girl friend (who has a plump protruding abdomen), when a gunman approached us and threatened to shoot the girl. I stepped between them, and the man shot and hit me in the belly.' While recounting this story, the patient suddenly began writhing with severe abdominal pain and had to leave the room. In addition, the metabolic pattern of old: ingestion of food, abdominal pain, and distention followed by painful diarrhoea, was repetitively experienced in greedy approach to a girl, attempts to gorge himself in the relationship, discovery of her perfidy, followed by painful depression. At the same time, the actual mother and the sibling were completely ignored and treated as non-existent. His hostility to the mother's abdomen was experienced within his own belly, guilt and

depression followed, and, after a quiescent period, hunger for relationship and striving for mastery forced him to repeat the pattern anew. Here we see a pathological exaggeration of how a single early series of metabolic experiences imprint themselves on the psychological template through introjection of mother-child transactions. All aspects of psychological organization are involved: ego, ego-ideal, and superego. The same fundamental processes have been observed in many patients far less ill, those without metabolic disturbances in infancy and without a pregnancy as the target of attack.

It has been stated frequently in psychoanalytic literature that mourning consists in piecemeal digestion of the introjected lost object, as if that introjection occurred after the loss. At the same time, it is clear that pathological mourning like melancholia is found in persons whose loved objects have been narcissistically chosen, i.e. in their own projected images. A boy of eleven, closely attached to his mother through her neurotic and then actual malignant illness, experienced the death of the mother without mourning. Yet his primary identification was with her and revealed itself in many poorly covered feminine attitudes. The subject-object attitudes were preserved in him—he need not mourn her loss or suffer its pain. Yet compulsively he wooed and had sexual relationship only with sick girls whom he then ran from with guilt and depression. In these cases the object is not introjected, but the patterned relationships of the old introjects are re-animated—not only as a shadow on the ego toward which aggression is directed but also in the sadistic superego which represents another part of the same internalized transactional system.

Let us take an example of introjection leading to a life of suffering from guilt feelings and to constant acting-out of restitution. At the height of his oedipal feelings, when he was sneaking looks at his mother's body and feeling her naked back under her dress, a patient lost his father. The mother made the little boy of five a husband in miniature, even permitting him to take a superior position to her second husband. The patient all his life avoided success and continued to lose, share, or return all his earnings so that he was continually bankrupt. He constantly had a weight of guilt, like a yoke across his shoulders, bowing down his back. He could permit himself no pleasure in work, play, or family life, and acted, felt, and spoke as if he had killed the father and must suffer the



consequences. Here the introjected object influenced a pattern apart from most of his character structure. As such, it could be treated and attenuated, since the self-representation apart from this oppressive guilt-producing introject was reasonably realistic.

Since Piers (18) has called attention to the frequency of shame-anxiety, we have been able to detect such cases more frequently (13). There are many patients whose corrupt patterns of behaviour are accompanied by reactions of shame, especially for the actual or possible discovery of their acts or thoughts. Yet, when the reactions of shame are thoroughly understood, it can be discerned that they have been burdensome impositions upon the personality. When the underlying orientation, which is frequently that of greed, is exposed, the patient then often blandly asks, 'Why shouldn't I take or have as much as I want?'

## VI

I have presented these brief statements about some types of patients in order to raise what I think are fundamental questions regarding identification. What identifications result in personality attributes that seem to feel at one with self and are relatively fixed? What identifications seem apart from the main psychological process as foreign bodies, as dissociated parts of the self or as allocated extra-ego functions creating tensions of guilt or shame?

The psychological system of the developing child may be viewed as having at least three significant dimensions—the inside, the outside, and the potential boundary processes between them. In the physiological sphere, there is a constant exchange between inside and outside through anatomical apertures and semi-permeable membranes, yet there is no sharp anatomical boundary (11). Air moves in and out of the tracheo-bronchial tree. Fluids move freely between tissues and preformed vascular and lymph spaces. The tongue propels food inside the mouth to evoke pharyngeal reflexes or protrudes rejected food in primitive spitting or extrusion functions. Since very early in the neonate's development there is no sharp differentiation of the psychological from the somatic, we may assume on the basis of observation and reconstruction that somatic experiences, conditioned and learned patterned responses affect the developing psychological functions. Also adverse circumstances such as pyloric

spasm, celiac syndromes, colic, partial or total starvation, overfeeding, dehydration, nasal obstructions interfering with nursing by forcing interruption for respiration, etc., all have a profound influence on developing psychological patterns. Some have their origin, as does the degree of hunger, within the child's constitution. Others are derived from the actions of the mother or her surrogates. No matter where a factor originates, it influences the other, and the transactional process spirals.

All through this early developmental pattern, the in-and-out processes go on. Introjection and projection are like the rhythms of an alternating electric current, the sum of which, within limits, constitutes an unstable equilibrium. The needed, the not-needed—the good, the bad—the satisfying, the not-satisfying—the pleasurable, the unpleasurable—are respectively inside and outside. Reversal of the curve is never abrupt at its limits, so that the good and the bad are simultaneously inside and outside. Furthermore, repetitiously throughout life the projected is constantly being reintrojected as a patterned process although the objects may change.

## VII

Now we may pose more detailed questions and attempt to answer them according to the available evidence, which is far from complete.

(i) How are the patterned processes of the external human environment internalized to form identifications? The answer to this is usually according to the oral pattern and its transactional experiences. But I have stated before, 'The more we have learned about the structure and function of the mouth in the human organism, the more dissatisfaction there is with our current psycho-analytic formulations. Some things are clear. In psychology we have considered mouth functions too literally. We have neglected to evaluate other systems of mastery, perception, and sensuality, and we have considered mouth functions as isolated. For psychological purposes, it would be better if we paid less attention to the mouth as a single area of action and considered the potentialities of the entire organism as a projection of many surfaces, not a surface. All inner processes enter into transactional relationship with the environment on the surfaces of the body, where they can be experienced (11).' This, of course, still holds true and applies particularly to developmental processes beyond the earliest weeks of life.

There are many systems of relationship



between the neonate and the external environment that are not included when we talk about the oral pattern. Many of them are unconscious and never become conscious and may be significant not only by their presence, but also by their absence. Such relationships between mother and child as are mediated through vision, near or far, through tactile skin sensations which help define the borders of the self between the mother and the child in the sphere of audition which assists also in determining what is in and out, and, finally, the tension with which the child is held or manipulated by the mother, affecting its deep sensibilities. How do we reconcile these manifold transactions between the neonate and its mother with the oral pattern of incorporation which seems to lead to the process of psychological introjection which forms identifications? This is an extremely difficult question to answer, especially since very little information is available from direct observation or by reconstructive analysis. Spitz (21) includes, among the primary perceptions that contribute to earliest psychological experience, the hand, labyrinth, and outer skin which combine and cannot be distinguished from intra-oral sensations. Later, distance perceptions such as vision and, still later, language assume greater importance. My own observations indicate that they become significant even in the second month, for Sue focused only on the eyes of her mother as early as eight weeks. At ten weeks, she became startled by her own blathering, as if discovering that sounds ordinarily heard outside could come from inside.

Certainly there are many aspects of ego and of ego-ideal or superego that include elements of vision, audition, smell, and touch. They are, however, rarely isolated in the early weeks of life, but seem always to attain some connexion or relationship with the primary oral processes. They are significant, but they are rarely dominant in the process of identification. As silent associations, they become integrated in the total representation of the pattern. Yet, like the cortical homunculus, the hand-mouth representations seem to be overwhelmingly most significant.

(ii) What is introjected? We may say that this is always a patterned relationship between the subject and the object. The primary motivation is cyclic, corresponding to the alimentary cycle, in which drives, seeking for aim-gratification, repeat themselves in a compulsive manner, just as hunger-satiation recurs many

times during the neonate's first days. The patterned relationships, however, develop not only from instinctual need plus gratification, but also include nuances of frustrations leading to suffering and pain, influencing the introjected pattern identified as within the self to be as painful or as pleasurable as the child's early experiences. Thus, the frustrating mother is, as it were, what the subject experiences within himself, and the self becomes like the bad mother.

(iii) After introjection, where is the pattern located or, we might say, allocated? The Freudian theory postulates certain topological aspects of the mind consisting of ego, superego, ego-ideal, and id. These are processes located internally in various degrees of harmony and conflict with each other. They are non-conscious automatic processes, subserving functions not requiring attention, strain, or reflection. Thus, they are favourable for the self to attend to the business of current reality with an economy of energy. The cost of such allocative functions may be a rigid repetition, which is difficult to alter by new learning, and a predisposition to neurotic conflict. Hence, basic personality attitudes follow a repetition compulsion which is only with difficulty changed.

Form and content are developed through various influences. The form is prescribed by the strength and quality of the instinct; that is, by physical, chemical, endocrinological and metabolic influences, some of which are constitutional. On the other hand, the content is derived from early experiences with other persons, modifiable to some extent by learning and ever-assembling new patterns which develop around the nuclear form and content.

What introjects develop into aspects of the ego, what into the superego and ego-ideal? It is only when the boundaries become blurred, either through psychoses, regressive phenomena, or in the regression during psycho-analytic therapy that we see each of them in semi-pure culture. When we do, we observe some connexion between the degree of aggressiveness and the quality of the superego, some relationship between libidinal qualities and the ego-ideal, and a connexion between the ego boundaries of the self with the degree of boundary-making functions that the mother exerts or permits on the child.

(iv) What happens after allocation? The primary patterned template receives content from further experiences through many perceptive systems, extending in space from direct tactile or mucosal stimulation to distant sym-



bolic communication. The infant is able to experience those influences that modify the primary introjects after the ripening of new tools of perception within the organism. Nevertheless, the original template remains as a permanent structure.

(v) What is the effect of various introjections on the role behaviour in society and culture? Tenable theory indicates that introjections are developed through experience with external objects whose images are transferred to become part of the self. There is no decision-making in this process of allocation and no longing for the lost good objects. In later life, when boundaries have already been formed, introjection of the object is no longer easily possible. The subject may search for a new object which can only be found when reality testing has matured. In this sense, then, various coded social roles represent systems of expectations from substitute objects (20).

Now we may ask, how does the patterned template of the primary introjects help the person to fit into various social roles? The end result of the primary introjects determines the capacities of the individuals to perform the social role. In this sense, the intervening variables between personality and society are implicit identifications which are integrated and synthesized, later to be activated on appropriate occasions. However, the degree of integration and synthesis determines the strength of silent ungratified implicit roles which impede the success of socialization. Social equilibrium, then, which is an idealized state of role complementarity, is related to a dominant identification, but there are many internalized roles that are not satisfied at the moment and produce or initiate cyclic responses which require a rapid shifting or changing of explicit roles. If such dysequilibrium occurs, it may lead to an internal disturbance, producing or threatening anxiety or depression, and a new equilibrium will have to be found, either immediately in the acting-out individual or later in the repetition compulsion of the more silently neurotic person.

### VIII

It may be conjectured that the human personality system has common qualities of 'structure' that characterize its formal attributes. Anterior to these are innate needs, and drives which energize goal-seeking behaviour (motivations). Original undifferentiated behaviours within the child-mother metabolic transactions

are patterned during inner-outer experiences into specific forms of relationships differentiated on a *quantitative* axis. Contents of *qualities* are allocated later and continue throughout life, developing and changing in response to a wide variety of experiences, channelled inward at first by contact and later by distance-perceptive systems, and channelled outward by several effector systems.

I suggest that the basic groundwork or template of personality is developed early by transactional identifications before differentiation of personality into special psychological 'structures' or sub-systems. The identical early transactional processes leading to identification may contribute basic patterns to *each* of the psychological sub-systems to be differentiated later by our observations of their specific functions. Once isolated, further accretions of content depend on the maturation of mechanisms of perception and motor control in relationships with significant persons.

Some of the modern students of personality usually utilize the psycho-analytic model which is more concerned with opposition of instinctual drives and reality, resulting in defences and symptoms, than with cohesive, integrating, organizing, or homeostatic principles. Like the biologists who are attempting to augment the stability or homeostatic principle with concepts which include growth, learning, and evolution, psycho-analysts are now separating a conflict-free sphere of the ego concerned with development and learning using so-called 'neutralized energy'. Theoretically and operationally we have fused the concepts of ego processes with the total personality or what social scientists call the personality system. We need a term to apply to a supra-ordinate process which functions in integrating the sub-systems, including the many identifications that constitute the ego, ego-ideal, and superego, and in organizing behaviour into available social roles.

The most suitable available term is the self, which is a synthetic compound of many identifications. Erikson (4) uses the term self-identity which, as a gestalt composed of many identifications, is greater than its parts. It is attained when the multiple identifications have permitted satisfactory interaction with family roles and when society recognizes the subject as a person. There is then self-realization and mutual recognition between self and the others.

Finally, we come to the question regarding the means of testing our current hypotheses

concerning the many aspects of identification that remain unclear. Extending from earliest neonatal suckling to ever-changing role-playing all through life, many disciplines can contribute to the understanding of identification: biology, psychology, psycho-analysis, and sociology. Whether a unified theory will ever develop cannot be foretold. What is needed first is a decoding of meanings, confused by the sacred terminology within each field, so that isomorphic hypotheses can be examined by several opera-

tions. Perhaps the limits of psycho-analytic reconstructions may be breached by appropriate child observations, animal experimentation, or more significant psychological tests. Needless to say, the developing human infant cannot answer unless we pose our questions properly. Yet, answers to questions concerning introjection, internalization, or identification, whichever term one desires, are the stanchions on which a long series of intersystem bridges can be built.

## REFERENCES

- (1) BENEDEK, T. 'Toward the Biology of a Depressive Constellation', *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 4, 389, 1956.
- (2) BOWLBY, J. In Tanner's *Prospects in Psychiatric Research*. (Oxford: Blackwell Scientific Publications, 1955.)
- (3) ENGEL, G., and REICHSMAN, F. 'Incorporation, Introjection and Identification.' Unpublished material.
- (4) ERIKSON, E. H. 'The Problem of Ego Identity', *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 4, 56, 1956.
- (5) FENICHEL, O. (1926). 'Identification', *Coll. Papers*, Vol. 1.
- (6) FENICHEL, H., and RAPOPORT, D. *The Collected Papers of Otto Fenichel*. (New York: Norton, 1953.)
- (7) FREUD, A. (1936). *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defense*. (New York: Int. University Press, 1946.)
- (8) FREUD, S. *Group Psychology and the Analysis of the Ego*.
- (9) ——— *The Ego and the Id*.
- (10) GREENSON, R. 'The Struggle Against Identification', *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 200, 1954.
- (11) GRINKER, R. R. *Psychosomatic Research* (New York: Norton, 1953.)
- (12) ——— 'The Effect of Infantile Disease on Ego Patterns', *Amer. Journ. Psych.*, 110, 290, 1953.
- (13) ——— 'Growth, Inertia and Shame', *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 36, 1, 1955.
- (14) JACOBSON, E. 'Contributions to the Metapsychology of Psychotic Identifications', *J. Amer. Psychoanal. Assoc.*, 2, 239, 1954.
- (15) MORENO, J. L. 'The Discovery of the Spontaneous Man with Special Emphasis upon the Technique of Role Reversal', *Group Psychotherapy*, 8, 103, 1955.
- (16) PARSONS, T., and BALES, R. F. *Family, Socialization and Interaction Process*. (Glencoe, Ill.: Free Press, 1955.)
- (17) PIAGET, J. *Play, Dreams and Imitation in Childhood*. (New York: Norton, 1951.)
- (18) PIERS, G. *Shame and Guilt*. (Springfield: Thomas, 1954.)
- (19) RAPOPORT, D. *Organization and Pathology of Thought* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1951.)
- (20) SPIEGEL, J. P. In: *Toward a Unified Theory of Human Behaviour* (ed.: R. R. Grinker; New York: Basic Books, 1956).
- (21) SPITZ, R. 'The Primal Cavity', *Psychoanal. Study of Child*, 10, 215, 1955.
- (22) STUNKARD, H. W. 'Freedom, Bondage and the Welfare State', *Science*, 121, 811, 1955.
- (23) TINBERGEN, N. *The Study of Instincts*. (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1951.)

(Received 4 June, 1956)



# NOTES ON SYMBOL FORMATION<sup>1</sup>

By

HANNA SEGAL, LONDON

The understanding and interpretation of unconscious symbolism is one of the main tools of the psychologist. Often he is faced with the task of understanding and recognizing the meaning not only of a particular symbol but also of the whole process of symbol formation. This applies particularly to work with patients who show a disturbance or inhibition in the formation or free use of symbols, as for instance, psychotic or schizoid patients.

To give a very elementary example from two patients. One—whom I will call A—was a schizophrenic in a mental hospital. He was once asked by his doctor why it was that since his illness he had stopped playing the violin. He replied with some violence: 'Why? do you expect me to masturbate in public?'

Another patient, B, dreamt one night that he and a young girl were playing a violin duet. He had associations to fiddling, masturbating, etc., from which it emerged clearly that the violin represented his genital and playing the violin represented a masturbation phantasy of a relation with the girl.

Here then are two patients who apparently use the same symbols in the same situation—a violin representing the male genital, and playing the violin representing masturbation. The way in which the symbols function, however, is very different. For A, the violin had become so completely equated with his genital that to touch it in public became impossible. For B, playing the violin in his waking life was an important sublimation. We might say that the main difference between them is that for A the symbolic meaning of the violin was conscious, for B unconscious. I do not think, however, that this was the most important difference between the two patients. In the case of B, the fact that the meaning of the dream became completely conscious had in no way prevented him from using his violin. In A, on the other hand, there were

many symbols operating in his unconscious in the same way in which the violin was used on the conscious level.

Taking another example—this time from a schizophrenic patient in an analytical situation: One session, in the first weeks of his analysis, he came in blushing and giggling, and throughout the session would not talk to me. Subsequently we found out that previous to this hour he had been attending an occupational therapy class in which he was doing carpentry, making a stool. The reason for his silence, blushing, and giggling was that he could not bring himself to talk to me about the work he was doing. For him, the wooden stool on which he was working, the word 'stool' which he would have to use in connexion with it, and the stool he passed in the lavatory were so completely felt as one and the same thing that he was unable to talk to me about it. His subsequent analysis revealed that this equation of the three 'stools', the word, the chair, and the faeces, was at the time completely unconscious. All he was consciously aware of was that he was embarrassed and could not talk to me.

The main difference between the first and second patient quoted in their use of the violin as the symbol for the male genital was not that in the one case the symbol was conscious and in the other unconscious, but that in the first case it was felt to *be* the genital, and in the second to *represent* it.

According to Ernest Jones's (2) definition, the violin of A, the schizophrenic, would be considered a symbol. Similarly in the dream of B. But it would not be a symbol in B's waking life when it was used in sublimation.

In his paper written in 1916 (2), Jones differentiated unconscious symbolism from other forms of 'indirect representation', and made the following statements about true unconscious symbolism:

<sup>1</sup> Paper read at the meeting of the Medical Section, the British Psychological Society, in May 1955, based on

an earlier paper presented at a Symposium on Symbolism at St. Anne's House, London, in November 1954.

- (i) A symbol represents what has been repressed from consciousness, and the whole process of symbolization is carried on unconsciously.
- (ii) All symbols represent ideas of 'the self and of immediate blood relations and of the phenomena of birth, life and death'.
- (iii) A symbol has a constant meaning. Many symbols can be used to represent the same repressed idea, but a given symbol has a constant meaning which is universal.
- (iv) Symbolism arises as the result of intrapsychic conflict between the 'repressing tendencies and the repressed'. Further: 'Only what is repressed is symbolized; only what is repressed needs to be symbolized'.

He further distinguishes between sublimation and symbolization. 'Symbols,' he says, 'arise when the affect investing the symbolized idea has not, as far as the symbol is concerned, proved capable of that modification in quality which is denoted by the term sublimation.'

Summarizing Jones's points, one might say that when a desire has to be given up because of conflict and repressed, it may express itself in a symbolical way, and the object of the desire which had to be given up can be replaced by a symbol.

Further analytical work, and particularly play analysis with young children, has fully confirmed some main points of Jones's formulation. The child's first interests and impulses are directed to his parents' bodies and his own, and it is those objects and impulses existing in the unconscious which give rise to all further interests by way of symbolization. Jones's statement, however, that symbols are formed where there is no sublimation soon gave rise to disagreement. In fact, Jones himself as well as Freud wrote many interesting papers analysing the content of works of art. In 1923, in her paper on infant analysis (3), Melanie Klein did not agree with this view on the relation between symbolization and sublimation. She tried to show that children's play—a sublimated activity—is a symbolic expression of anxieties and wishes.

We might consider it as a question of terminology, and accept Jones's view that we should call symbols only those substitutes which replace the object without any change of affect. On the other hand, there are very great advantages in extending the definition to cover symbols used in sublimation. In the first place the wider

definition corresponds better to common linguistic usage. Jones's concept excludes most of that which is called 'symbol' in other sciences and in everyday language. Secondly, and I shall elaborate this point later, there seems to be a continuous development from the primitive symbols as described by Jones to the symbols used in self-expression, communication, discovery, creation, etc. Thirdly, it is difficult to establish a connexion between the early primitive desires and processes in the mind and the later development of the individual, unless the wider concept of symbolism is admitted. In the analytical view, the child's interest in the external world is determined by a series of displacements of affect and interests from the earliest to ever new objects. And, indeed, how could such a displacement be achieved otherwise than by way of symbolization?

In 1930, Melanie Klein (3) raised the problem of inhibition in symbol formation. She described an autistic little boy of four, Dick, who could not talk or play; he showed no affection or anxiety, and took no interest in his surroundings apart from door-handles, stations, and trains, which seemed to fascinate him. His analysis revealed that the child was terrified of his aggression towards his mother's body, and of her body which he felt had turned bad because of his attacks on it; because of the strength of his anxieties he had erected powerful defences against his phantasies about her. There resulted a paralysis of his fantasy life and of symbol formation. He had not endowed the world around him with any symbolic meaning and therefore took no interest in it. Melanie Klein came to the conclusion that if symbolization does not occur, the whole development of the ego is arrested.

If we accept this view it follows that the processes of symbolization require a new and more careful study. To begin with, I find it helpful, following C. Morris (4), to consider symbolizing as a *three-term* relation, i.e. a relation between the thing symbolized, the thing functioning as a symbol, and a *person* for whom the one represents the other. In psychological terms, symbolism would be a relation between the ego, the object, and the symbol.

Symbol formation is an activity of the ego attempting to deal with the anxieties stirred by its relation to the object. That is primarily the fear of bad objects and the fear of the loss or inaccessibility of good objects. Disturbances in the ego's relation to objects are reflected in



disturbances of symbol formation. In particular, disturbances in differentiation between ego and object lead to disturbances in differentiation between the symbol and the object symbolized and therefore to concrete thinking characteristic of psychoses.

Symbol formation starts very early, probably as early as object relations, but changes its character and functions with the changes in the character of the ego and object relations. Not only the actual content of the symbol, but the very way in which symbols are formed and used seem to me to reflect very precisely the ego's state of development and its way of dealing with its objects. If symbolism is seen as a three-term relation, problems of symbol formation must always be examined in the context of the ego's relation with its objects.

I shall try to describe briefly some basic attitudes of the ego to the objects, and the way in which I think they influence the processes of symbol formation and the functioning of symbolism. My description is based here on Melanie Klein's (3) concept of the paranoid schizoid position and of the depressive position. According to her, the oral stage of development falls into two phases, the earlier being the point of fixation of the schizophrenic group of illnesses, the later that of the manic-depressive. In my description, which will of necessity be very schematic, I shall select only those points which are directly relevant to the problem of symbol formation.

The chief characteristics of the infant's first object relations are the following. The object is seen as split into an ideally good and a wholly bad one. The aim of the ego is total union with the ideal object and total annihilation of the bad one, as well as of the bad parts of the self. Omnipotent thinking is paramount and reality sense intermittent and precarious. The concept of absence hardly exists. Whenever the state of union with the ideal object is not fulfilled, what is experienced is not absence; the ego feels assailed by the counterpart of the good object—the bad object, or objects. It is the time of the hallucinatory wish-fulfilment, described by Freud, when the thought creates objects which are then felt to be available. According to Melanie Klein, it is also the time of the bad hallucinosis when, if the ideal conditions are not fulfilled, the bad object is equally hallucinated and felt as real.

A leading defence mechanism in this phase is projective identification. In projective identi-

cation, the subject in phantasy projects large parts of himself into the object, and the object becomes identified with the parts of the self that it is felt to contain. Similarly, internal objects are projected outside and identified with parts of the external world which come to represent them. These first projections and identifications are the beginning of the process of symbol formation.

The early symbols, however, are not felt by the ego to be symbols or substitutes, but to be the original object itself. They are so different from symbols formed later that I think they deserve a name of their own. In my paper of 1950 (7) I suggested the term 'equation'. This word, however, differentiates them too much from the word 'symbol' and I would like to alter it here to 'symbolic equation'.

The symbolic equation between the original object and the symbol in the internal and the external world is, I think, the basis of the schizophrenic's concrete thinking where substitutes for the original objects, or parts of the self, can be used quite freely, but, as in the two examples of schizophrenic patients which I quoted, they are hardly different from the original object: they are felt and treated as though they were identical with it. This non-differentiation between the thing symbolized and the symbol is part of a disturbance in the relation between the ego and the object. Parts of the ego and internal objects are projected into an object and identified with it. The differentiation between the self and the object is obscured. Then, since a part of the ego is confused with the object, the symbol—which is a creation and a function of the ego—becomes, in turn, confused with the object which is symbolized.

Where such symbolic equations are formed in relation to bad objects, an attempt is made to deal with them as with the original object, that is by total annihilation and scotomization. In Melanie Klein's paper quoted above (3), it seemed as though Dick had formed no symbolic relations to the external world. The paper was written very early on in Dick's analysis, and I wonder, on the basis of my own experience with schizophrenics, whether it did not, perhaps, subsequently transpire that Dick had formed numerous symbolic equations in the external world. If so, then these would have carried the full anxiety experienced in relation to the original persecutory or guilt-producing object: his mother's body, so that he had had to deal with them by annihilation, that is by total withdrawal of interest. Some of the symbols which



he had formed as his analysis progressed, and he started to show an interest in certain objects in the consulting room, seemed to have had the characteristics of such symbolic equations. For instance, when he saw some pencil shavings he said: 'Poor Mrs. Klein'. To him the shavings were Mrs. Klein cut into bits.

This was the case in the analysis of my patient Edward (7). At one stage in the analysis a certain degree of symbol formation on a symbolic equation basis had occurred, so that some anxiety was displaced from the person of his analyst, felt as a bad internal object, on to substitutes in the external world. Thereupon the numerous persecutors in the external world were dealt with by scotomization. That phase of his analysis, which lasted several months, was characterized by an extreme narrowing of his interests in the external world. At that point also his vocabulary became very poor. He forbade himself and me the use of many words which he felt had the power to produce hallucinations and therefore had to be abolished. This is strikingly similar to the behaviour of a Paraguayan tribe, the Abipones, who cannot tolerate anything that reminds them of the dead. When a member of the tribe dies, all words having any affinity with the names of the deceased are immediately dropped from the vocabulary. In consequence, their language is most difficult to learn, as it is full of blocks and neologisms replacing forbidden words.

The development of the ego and the changes in the ego's relation to its objects are gradual, and so is the change from the early symbols, which I called symbolic equations, to the fully formed symbols in the depressive position. It is therefore only for the sake of clarity that I shall make here a very sharp differentiation between the ego's relations in the paranoid-schizoid position and in the depressive position respectively, and an equally sharp differentiation between the symbolic equations and the symbols which are formed during and after the depressive position.

When the depressive position has been reached, the main characteristic of object relation is that the object is felt as a whole object. In connexion with this there is a greater degree of awareness and differentiation of the separateness between the ego and the object. At the same time, since the object is recognized as a whole, ambivalence is more fully experienced. The ego in this phase is struggling with its ambivalence and its relation to the object is characterized by

guilt, fear of loss or actual experience of loss and mourning, and a striving to re-create the object. At the same time, processes of introjection become more pronounced than those of projection, in keeping with the striving to retain the object inside as well as to repair, restore and re-create it.

In favourable circumstances of normal development, after repeated experiences of loss, recovery, and re-creation, a good object is securely established in the ego. Three changes in relation to the object, as the ego develops and integrates, affect fundamentally the ego's reality sense. With an increased awareness of ambivalence, the lessening of the intensity of projection, and the growing differentiation between the self and the object, there is a growing sense of reality both internal and external. The internal world becomes differentiated from the external world. Omnipotent thinking, characteristic of the earlier phase, gradually gives way to more realistic thinking. Simultaneously, and as part of the same process, there is a certain modification of the primary instinctual aims. Earlier on, the aim was to possess the object totally if felt as good, or to annihilate it totally if felt as bad. With the recognition that the good and the bad objects are one, both these instinctual aims are gradually modified. The ego is increasingly concerned with saving the object from its aggression and possessiveness. And this implies a certain degree of inhibition of the direct instinctual aims, both aggressive and libidinal.

This situation is a powerful stimulus for the creation of symbols, and symbols acquire new functions which change their character. The symbol is needed to displace aggression from the original object, and in that way to lessen the guilt and the fear of loss. The symbol is here not an equivalent of the original object, since the aim of the displacement is to save the object, and the guilt experienced in relation to it is far less than that due to an attack on the original object. The symbols are also created in the *internal* world as a means of restoring, re-creating, recapturing and owning again the original object. But in keeping with the increased reality sense, they are now felt as created by the ego and therefore never completely equated with the original object.

Freud (1) postulates that a modification of instinctual aims is the basic pre-condition of sublimation. In my view the formation of symbols in the depressive position necessitates



some inhibition of direct instinctual aims in relation to the original object and therefore the symbols become available for sublimation. The symbols, created internally, can then be re-projected into the external world, endowing it with symbolic meaning.

The capacity to experience loss and the wish to re-create the object within oneself gives the individual the unconscious freedom in the use of symbols. And as the symbol is acknowledged as a creation of the subject, unlike the symbolic equation, it can be freely used by the subject.

When a substitute in the external world is used as a symbol it may be used more freely than the original object, since it is not fully identified with it. Insofar, however, as it is distinguished from the original object it is also recognized as an object in itself. Its own properties are recognized, respected, and used, because no confusion with the original object blurs the characteristics of the new object used as a symbol.

In an analysis we can sometimes follow very clearly the changes in the symbolic relations in the patient's attitude to his faeces. On the schizoid level the patient expects his faeces to be the ideal breast; if he cannot maintain this idealization his faeces become persecutory, they are ejected as a bitten-up, destroyed and persecuting breast. If the patient tries to symbolize his faeces in the external world the symbols in the external world are felt to be faeces—persecutors. No sublimation of anal activities can occur under these conditions.

On the depressive level, the feeling is that the introjected breast has been destroyed by the ego and can be re-created by the ego. The faeces may then be felt as something created by the ego out of the object and can be valued as a symbol of the breast and at the same time as a good product of the ego's own creativity.

When this symbolic relation to faeces and other body products has been established a projection can occur on to substances in the external world such as paint, plasticine, clay, etc., which can then be used for sublimation.

When this stage of development has been achieved, it is of course not irreversible. If the anxieties are too strong, a regression to a paranoid-schizoid position can occur at any stage of the individual's development and projective identification may be resorted to as a defence against anxiety. Then symbols which have been developed and have been functioning as symbols in sublimation, revert to concrete symbolic equations. This is mainly due to the fact that in

massive projective identification the ego becomes again confused with the object, the symbol becomes confused with the thing symbolized and therefore turns into an equation.

In the example of the schizophrenic patient A quoted at the beginning of this paper, there was a breakdown of an already established sublimation. Prior to his schizophrenic breakdown, the violin had been functioning as a symbol and used for purposes of sublimation. It had only become concretely equated to the penis at the time of his illness. Words which had certainly developed at the time when the ego is relatively mature, become equated with the objects that they should represent, and become experienced as concrete objects when projective identification occurs with the resulting confusion between the symbols created by the ego: the word, or even the thought, and the object that they were to symbolize.

I should like at this point to summarize what I mean by the terms 'symbolic equation' and 'symbol' respectively, and the conditions under which they arise. In the symbolic equation, the symbol-substitute is felt to be the original object. The substitute's own properties are not recognized or admitted. The symbolic equation is used to deny the absence of the ideal object, or to control a persecuting one. It belongs to the earliest stages of development.

The symbol proper, available for sublimation and furthering the development of the ego, is felt to represent the object; its own characteristics are recognized, respected, and used. It arises when depressive feelings predominate over the paranoid-schizoid ones, when separation from the object, ambivalence, guilt, and loss can be experienced and tolerated. The symbol is used not to deny but to overcome loss. When the mechanism of projective identification is used as a defence against depressive anxieties, symbols already formed and functioning as symbols may revert to symbolic equations.

Symbol formation governs the capacity to communicate, since all communication is made by means of symbols. When schizoid disturbances in object relations occur, the capacity to communicate is similarly disturbed: first because the differentiation between the subject and the object is blurred, secondly because the *means* of communication are lacking since symbols are felt in a concrete fashion and are therefore unavailable for purposes of communication. One of the ever-recurring difficulties in the analysis of psychotic patients is this difficulty of



communication. Words, for instance, whether the analyst's or the patient's, are felt to be objects or actions, and cannot be easily used for purposes of communication.

Symbols are needed not only in communication with the external world, but also in internal communication. Indeed, it could be asked what is meant when we speak of people being well in touch with their unconscious. It is not that they have consciously primitive phantasies, like those which become evident in their analyses, but merely that they have some awareness of their own impulses and feelings. However, I think that we mean more than this; we mean that they have actual *communication* with their unconscious phantasies. And this, like any other form of communication, can only be done with the help of symbols. So that in people who are 'well in touch with themselves' there is a constant free symbol-formation, whereby they can be consciously aware and in control of *symbolic expressions* of the underlying primitive phantasies. The difficulty of dealing with schizophrenic and schizoid patients lies not only in that they cannot communicate with us, but even more in that they cannot communicate with themselves. Any part of their ego may be split off from any other part with no communication available between them.

The capacity to communicate with oneself by using symbols is, I think, the basis of verbal thinking—which is the capacity to communicate with oneself by means of words. Not all internal communication is verbal thinking, but all verbal thinking is an internal communication by means of symbols—words.

An important aspect of internal communication is the integration of earlier desires, anxieties, and phantasies into the later stages of development by symbolization. For instance, in the fully developed genital function, all the earlier aims—anal, urethral, oral—may be symbolically expressed and fulfilled, a point beautifully described in Ferenczi's *Thalassa*.

And this takes me to the last point of my paper. I think that one of the important tasks performed by the ego in the depressive position is that of dealing not with depressive anxieties alone, but also with unresolved earlier conflicts. A new achievement belonging to the depressive position; the capacity to symbolize and in that way to lessen anxiety and resolve conflict, is used in order to deal with the *earlier* unresolved conflicts by symbolizing them. Anxieties, which could not be dealt with earlier on, because of the

extreme concreteness of the experience with the object and the object-substitutes in symbolic equations, can gradually be dealt with by the more integrated ego by symbolization, and in that way they can be integrated. In the depressive position and later, symbols are formed not only of the whole destroyed and re-created object characteristic of the depressive position, but also of the split object—extremely good and extremely bad—and not only of the whole object but also of part-objects. Some of the paranoid and ideal object relations and anxieties may be symbolized as part of the integrative process in the depressive position.

The fairy tale is an example in point. It deals basically with the witch and the fairy godmother, Prince Charming, the ogre, etc., and has in it a great deal of schizophrenic content. It is, however, a highly integrated product, an artistic creation which very fully symbolizes the child's early anxieties and wishes. I should like to illustrate the function of the fairy tale by some material from the analysis of an adolescent schizophrenic. This girl had been hallucinated and openly schizophrenic since the age of four. She had, however, a great many depressive features and there were in her life phases of relatively greater integration. In these phases, when she felt less persecuted, and, as she told me, could experience some longing for her parents, she used to write fairy tales. In the bad phases, the bad figures of her fairy tales came to life and persecuted her. One day, after many weeks of silence, when she was obviously hallucinated in a very persecutory way she suddenly turned round to me and asked with great fear 'What are the Lancashire witches?' I had never heard of the Lancashire witches, she had never mentioned them before, but I knew that she herself came from Lancashire. After some interpretations she told me that when she was about 11 (she had at that time actually a whole year free of hallucinations), she had written a fairy tale about Lancashire witches. The phase of her analysis following this session has been very revealing. It turned out that the Lancashire witches represented both herself and her mother. The anxiety situation went right back to early childhood, when she saw herself and her mother as devouring one another or devouring father. When a greater degree of integration was achieved and she established a more realistic relation to her parents, the earlier situation was dealt with by symbol formation: by writing the fairy tale about the Lancashire witches. In the



subsequent deterioration of her health, the early persecutory situation recurred with concrete intensity but in a new form. The fairy tale came to life: the Lancashire witches—the fairy-tale figures which she had created, had become a concrete external reality. In the consulting room it was quite clear how this concretization of the fairy tale depended on projective identification. She turned to me and asked me about the Lancashire witches. She expected me to know who they were. In fact, she thought that I was a Lancashire witch. She had unconsciously phantasied that she had put into me the part of herself which had invented the Lancashire witches, and she had lost contact with this part. She lost all sense of reality in this projection and all memory that she had created this symbol, the 'Lancashire witches'. Her symbol became confused with me, an actual external object, and so became for her a concrete external reality—I had turned into a Lancashire witch.

The way in which the maturing ego, in the process of working through the depressive position, deals with the early object relations, is

of paramount importance. Some integration and whole object relations can be achieved in the depressive position, accompanied by the splitting off of earlier ego experiences. In this situation, something like a pocket of schizophrenia exists isolated in the ego and is a constant threat to stability. At worst, a mental breakdown occurs and earlier anxieties and split-off symbolic equations invade the ego. At best, a relatively mature but restricted ego can develop and function.

However, if the ego in the depressive position is strong enough and capable of dealing with anxieties, much more of the earlier situations can be integrated into the ego and dealt with by way of symbolization, enriching the ego with the whole wealth of the earlier experiences.

The word 'symbol' comes from the Greek term for throwing together, bringing together, integrating. The process of symbol formation is, I think, a continuous process of bringing together and integrating the internal with the external, the subject with the object, and the earlier experiences with the later ones.

## REFERENCES

- (1) FREUD, S. *The Ego and the Id*.
- (2) JONES, ERNEST (1916). 'The Theory of Symbolism.' *Papers on Psycho-Analysis*.
- (3) KLEIN, MELANIE (1930). 'On the Importance of Symbol Formation in the Development of the Ego.' *Contributions to Psycho-Analysis, 1921-45*.
- (4) MORRIS, C. 'Foundations of the Theory of Signs.' *International Encyclopedia of Unified Science*, 2.
- (5) RODRIGUEZ, E. 'Notes on Symbolism.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 37.
- (6) \*RYCROFT, C. 'Symbolism and its Relation to Primary and Secondary Processes.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 37.
- (7) SEGAL, H. (1950). 'Some Aspects of the Analysis of a Schizophrenic.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 31.
- (8) — (1952). 'A Psycho-Analytic Contribution to Aesthetics.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 33.
- (9) — (1955). 'Depression in the Schizophrenic.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 36.

(Received 30 November, 1955.)

\* No reference is made in this paper to these two contributions, as the three papers were written and read almost concurrently.

# THE AWARDED OF A PENIS AS COMPENSATION FOR RAPE

## A DEMONSTRATION OF THE CLINICAL RELEVANCE OF THE PSYCHO-ANALYTIC STUDY OF CULTURAL DATA

By

GEORGE DEVEREUX, PH.D., NEW YORK, N.Y.

It is proposed to discuss a previously unreported infantile-mythological theory of the female penis fantasy.

The Lapiths were a legendary horse-taming tribe, whose epic combat with the Centaurs is frequently mentioned in Greek literature, especially in connection with the legend of Theseus.

One of the most important Lapith chiefs was Kaineus, who—like Teiresias—had once also been a woman, at which time he bore the name of Kainis, which is the feminine form of Kaineus. Kainis was raped by Poseidon, who then offered to make restitution for this act by granting any request which she cared to make. Kainis chose to ask that she might be changed into a man and made invulnerable, so that no one might again be able to rape her. Her wish was granted and she became the man Kaineus.

The chieftain Kaineus, however, became noted for his impiety. He refused to worship anything except his spear.

Zeus, incensed by such impiety, incited the Centaurs to assault Kaineus during the battle which erupted at Peirithous' wedding, after a Centaur almost *raped* the bride. They had to kill invulnerable Kaineus by hitting him on the head with fir logs, driving him into the ground like a stake and then piling the logs on top of him until Kaineus suffocated. A sandy winged bird—identified by Mopsus as Kaineus' soul—then flew away from the pile of logs. When Kaineus' corpse was about to be buried, it was found that it was that of a woman. This suggests that—like some primitive 'kings'—Kaineus was a woman in disguise; a hypothesis possibly strengthened by the fact that Kaineus was one of the Argonauts—a group which also included one other masculine female: Atalanta of Calydon, whose father had wanted a son and not a daughter. The hammering of Kaineus

into the ground suggests the well-known equation: body = phallus, as well as the equation: girl = phallus (12).

Professor Rose, an eminent classical scholar, suggests that this spear-worship may represent some local Thessalian aniconic cult (18). This comment does not preclude the possibility of offering also a psycho-analytic interpretation of Kainis' story and subsequent conduct.

The notion that woman 'acquires' a penis through having intercourse is not new and has been previously reported in the literature. By contrast, we know of no report of the fantasy that a woman may acquire a penis to *compensate* her for having been raped, deflowered, and penetrated by a father figure; three acts which easily arouse anxiety.<sup>1</sup> In this particular instance the raped girl also asks for specific protection against further penetration and re-feminization (re-castration) by becoming invulnerable. There remains, of course, the possible resurgence of passive-submissive feminine wishes, which may find expression in the male by means of passive homosexual impulses. Kainis' explicitly phallic position—the exclusive and impious worship of her own spear = penis—may be interpreted as a defence against possible passive-homosexual urges.

The worship of her spear, and Kainis = Kaineus' 'impiety' alike also reflect the urge to retaliate. After having been 'wounded' and penetrated, 'he' worships only 'his' spear—a weapon exclusively intended for piercing the foe. (The sword is described in the *Iliad* chiefly as a cutting, rather than as a piercing, weapon.) Directly related to his urge is an obvious 'identification with the enemy'. The pierced girl becomes the piercing warrior; the person subjected to violence begins to inflict violence upon others.

<sup>1</sup> Defloration anxiety was discussed in detail by Freud (13), Yates (19) and Devereux (5). Penetration

anxiety—the anxiety about being pierced—was described by Bonaparte (2).



The identification with the enemy is also made explicit by the specification that Kaineus was noted for his impiety—his refusal to worship the Gods. It does not appear too far-fetched to suggest that the Gods lost something of their glamour and majesty for a girl who was raped by one of them. This interpretation, however, is far from complete. The violence, injustice, and exploitiveness of the Greek Gods did not prevent the Greeks from worshipping them. Being Gods (parents), they had the right to do as they pleased (8), without being accountable to mere mortals—children.

What seems to account for Kainis = Kaineus' impiety is, we suspect, not her rape, but the fact that she had consorted with a God sexually—i.e. in a manner incompatible with the normal relationship obtaining between child and adult. Throughout Greek mythology, we note that persons who cohabited with the Gods were either elevated to a near-divine status, or else enjoyed near-divine privileges . . . or discomforts; witness, for the latter, Hera's extraordinary jealousy of, and hostility toward, Zeus' paramour, Io. A similarly privileged status is also assigned to mortals who have one divine parent, who, *inter alia*, is in a position to intercede for them, as Achilles' mother intercedes for him with Zeus in the *Iliad*. The privileged position of such *theogenitai* is repeatedly referred to, e.g., in the *Iliad*. Agamemnon feels that Achilles can 'get away' with things, because his mother is a goddess. Odysseus and Diomedes ridicule the Trojan spy Dolon's presumption in believing that, even if the Trojans won and, as Hector promised, rewarded him for his share in such a hypothetical victory by giving him Achilles' horses, he could actually drive these horses, which only a person of divine ancestry like Achilles can do.

We are therefore inclined to suggest that the avoidance of incest has, on the side of the parents, an additional strong motivation in the realization that a child who cohabits with his or her parent is thereby placed in a position of near-equality, and would cease to be submissive and obedient (as Kainis = Kaineus became impious—*pietas* meaning dutifulness) and challenge parental authority, by identifying with them. There is even clinical evidence to support this view. Bender and Blau (1) found that children who cohabit with adults acquire an altogether premature poise.

We also believe that this myth casts some light upon the nature of narcissism and of regression

from the oedipal to the phallic stage. We note that Kaineus worshipped only his spear = phallus. It is permissible to suggest that, in this instance, Kaineus' worshipping of his spear presupposes a kind of splitting off of the phallus from the total body image, and its quasi-animistic personification, which should not be confused with Greenacre's concept of 'phallic awe'. (15) In this context it is of some interest that the writer concluded, on the basis of Mohave Indian data only (3), that in early masturbatory activities the penis is experienced and manipulated as though it were a 'foreign body'. It is possible to offer a dynamic interpretation of this manner of experiencing the phallus, at the time when diffuse and polymorphous sexuality becomes more concentrated and more localized in the genitalia. In this connexion it is significant that, according to an extremely ticklish patient, all his ticklishness disappears once his penis becomes erect. 'It is as though all skin-sensitiveness became concentrated in the penis; diffuse and moderate ticklishness being transformed into highly localized and extremely intense sexual sensations.' This patient subsequently remarked that his whole penis, and not just the glans, was highly sensitive—in fact, he suspected that circumcision had made his glans slightly less sensitive than it would have been otherwise, and felt that this explained the fact that his entire penis was about equally sensitive everywhere. He also evolved the view that the decreased sensitiveness of the circumcised glans led to a prolongation of coitus, and concluded that the true beneficiary of circumcision practices was the woman. This view may be related to Nurnberg's (17) supposition that circumcisers are women. (Compare the obscure passage in the Old Testament, which seems to imply that Moses was circumcised by his wife and the legend that castration was invented by Semiramis.)

If the inference that, at the phallic stage, the erect penis is experienced as a 'foreign body' is correct, a new 'dimension' may be added to Greenacre's well-known view that the belatedness of the discovery of the female genitalia is due to the fact that, unlike the penis, they can not be seen (14). Our hypothesis introduces the supplementary view that, precisely because the penis is a kind of 'limb', its sensations tend to be more localized and, when they first occur in an intense form, are more easily experienced as 'extraneous' to the body than are the erotic sensations of the internal female genitalia, whose



excitement is more likely to be 'echoed' by the entire body.

This inference leads us back—somewhat circuitously—to the problem of Kaineus = Kainis' identification with the enemy, i.e. with Poseidon, in the sense that 'his' spear represents not only 'his' own phallus, but also the phallus of Poseidon, i.e. the self-same phallus which had raped, deflowered, and penetrated her. Thus, in the very act of seemingly rejecting this violent phallus, Kainis = Kaineus appropriates it and worships it. This view is entirely compatible with Freud's thesis that in attempted rape part of the woman's self is on the side of the rapist. It leads one to suspect that, at least in some cases of 'penis awe', the phallus which inspires awe is viewed and 'experienced' narcissistically, as a split-off part of the woman's own body image, to which it 'belongs' by identification with the sexual partner, and by its incorporation *via* the vagina. This 'oralization of the vagina' is the counterpart of the 'vaginalization of the mouth and of the anus' which we described elsewhere (6). The 're-integration' of this 'acquired penis' into the girl's body image may, in turn, be responsible—partly at least—for the unconscious equation 'girl = phallus' discussed by Fenichel (12).

#### METHODOLOGICAL POSTSCRIPT

Needless to say, there exists no reason for assuming that Kainis = Kaineus was a real person, or that, if she was a real person, her reported experiences and attitudes are authentic ones. We simply imply that myths frequently represent the projection of ego-dystonic insights, which are at once too powerful to be repressed and too painful to be applied to oneself. The 'mythopoeic position' appears to be the following: 'This is the truth, but it happened not to me, but to someone else; it applies not to me, but to someone else.' Such inventions are accepted by the listeners, and are transmitted to future generations because the listener's unconscious echoes the latent content of the

myth (4) while the manifest content of the myth—the fact that it *is* a myth—enables the listener *not* to apply the insight to himself.

It is extremely likely that many hitherto unformulated psycho-analytic facts may ultimately be derived from the study of myths, beliefs, and the like; such facts seldom if ever make an appearance in the psycho-analytic chamber, precisely because culture, in providing myths or beliefs for the 'cold storage' of certain fantasies and insights, keeps them out of 'private circulation'. This view is quite in accordance with the thesis proposed elsewhere (11) that culture provides a set of standard defences against, and solutions for, 'type-conflicts' characteristic of a given cultural milieu.

Early psycho-analytic studies of mythology and folklore had as their purpose the demonstration of the presence of fantasies and mechanisms, discovered in the course of psycho-analytic therapy, also in man's cultural productions and endeavours. It is our belief that the time has come for a new orientation in the psycho-analytic study of culture, including mythology: it is suggested that the study of cultural phenomena, *in terms of the most strictly classical psycho-analytic frame of reference*,<sup>2</sup> is certain to yield new types of unconscious fantasies and other therapeutically relevant insights which—once recognized in their cultural form and setting—can then be more easily identified in, and verified by means of, clinical data (10). Thus, a series of new fantasies were derived from a strictly classical psycho-analytic study of various sets of cultural data (e.g. 5, 7, 9) some of which have subsequently been identified in clinical contexts too by other workers (16). In brief, we feel that the psycho-analytic exploration of *cultural material* will, in the long run, appreciably broaden and expand also our *clinical* horizons. Were it otherwise, the great clinician Freud would not have wasted his time on writing books and papers on problems of society and culture.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

(1) BENDER, L., and BLAU, A. 'Reaction of Children to Sexual Relations with Adults.' *Am. J. Orthopsychiatry*, 7, 1937.

(2) BONAPARTE, MARIE. *Female Sexuality*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1953.)

<sup>2</sup> This specification is of the utmost importance. The entire so-called 'culturalist orientation' of the 'neo-Freudians' is unsatisfactory both anthropologically and psycho-analytically. The 'neo-Freudian' thesis that the data and the frame of reference of anthropology 'require' a modification of the classical psycho-analytic

frame of reference is fallacious and simply shows that the 'culturalist neo-Freudian' has no *real* grasp of the problems of culture and anthropology . . . problems which can best be solved by means of the classical psycho-analytic frame of reference.



- (3) DEVEREUX, G. *Mohave Field Notes*, 1932-1933 (MS.).
- (4) — 'Mohave Coyote Tales.' *J. Am. Folklore*, 61, 1948.
- (5) — 'The Psychology of Feminine Genital Bleeding.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 31, 1950.
- (6) — 'Cultural and Characterological Traits of the Mohave Related to the Anal Stage of Psychosexual Development.' *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 20, 1951.
- (7) — 'Why Oedipus Killed Laius.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 34, 1953.
- (8) — 'Charismatic Leadership and Crisis' (in) Muensterberger, Warner (ed.). *Psychoanalysis and the Social Sciences IV*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1955.)
- (9) — *A Study of Abortion in Primitive Societies*. (New York: Julian Press, 1955.)
- (10) — 'Anthropological Data Suggesting Unexplored Unconscious Attitudes toward and in Unwed Mothers.' *Arch. Criminal Psychodynamics*, 1, 1955.
- (11) — 'Normal and Abnormal: The Key Problem of Psychiatric Anthropology' (in) *Some Uses of Anthropology: Theoretical and Applied* (Washington, D.C.: Anthropological Soc. of Washington, 1956.)
- (12) FENICHEL, O. 'The Symbolic Equation: Girl = Phallus.' *Coll. Papers*, 2. (New York: Norton, 1954; London: Routledge.)
- (13) FREUD, S. 'The Taboo of Virginity.' *Coll. Papers*, 4.
- (14) GREENACRE, PHYLLIS. *Trauma, Growth, and Personality*. (New York: Norton, 1952.)
- (15) — 'Penis Awe and its Relation to Penis Envy' (in) Loewenstein, R. M. (ed.): *Drives, Affects, Behavior*. (New York: Int. Univ. Press, 1953.)
- (16) HEIMAN, M. 'Psychosocial Influences in Functional Uterine Bleeding.' *Obstetrics and Gynecology*, 7, 1956.
- (17) NUNBERG, HERMAN. 'Circumcision and Problems of Bisexuality.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 28, 1948.
- (18) ROSE, H. J. *A Handbook of Greek Mythology*. (London: Methuen, 1929.)
- (19) YATES, S. L. 'An Investigation of the Psychological Factors in Virginity and Ritual Defloration.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 11, 1930.

# THE TIBETAN LAMAIST RITUAL: CHÖD

By

JACQUES SCHNIER,<sup>1</sup> SAN FRANCISCO

Our ever-growing knowledge of id-processes and ego-psychology discloses that the highest achievements of the human mind result from strivings for mastery of unconscious impulses. Among these achievements, such as art, philosophy and religion, there are to be found the same attempts at a solution of inner conflicts and appeasement of urgent drives as are found in those valueless patterns we refer to as hysterical or obsessional behaviour. Even outwardly, there is a marked resemblance between certain features of these social and non-social patterns. In *Obsessive Acts and Religious Practices* (1907) Freud examined and elucidated the similarities for at least these two specific patterns of behaviour.

In the obsessional neurosis, the ceremonial of the person concerned is the most tangible aspect upon which psycho-analytic work can be focused. The results of this work provide us with invaluable information regarding the mental process of which the strange and unprofitable behaviour is the outcome. Because ritual is so much like the ceremonial of the obsessional neurosis, Theodor Reik (10) took it as the starting-point for his analysis of religion. By means of this analysis he endeavoured to expose in a detailed manner the motives which led to the origin of a number of ritualistic religious patterns and to disclose the paths and transformations taken in their development. In his investigation he found it profitable to focus attention on the characteristic feature of action in ritual rather than the commands, prohibitions, dogmas, and complicated sentiment which later become religion's chief contents.

With a similar point of view in mind I have undertaken to investigate the Tibetan Lamaist ritual *chöd* (*gchod*), which is an extraordinary bizarre ordeal practised by novices as well as monks on the way up the Lamaist religious ladder to enlightenment. The result of this investigation broadly confirms the underlying mental processes, defence mechanisms and repressive forces as uncovered by previous

psycho-analytic studies of ritual. But the feature that should be of particular interest to psycho-analysts is the fact that some of the unconscious factors and defensive measures appear to be quite transparent in the interpretations given to this ritual in the Lamaist religious system itself. And, as in psycho-analytic therapy, the novice apparently climbs another rung towards mental freedom only when he himself grasps its true significance.

The following description of *chöd* is from the eye-witness accounts of Alexandra David-Neel, a French Buddhist scholar of considerable attainment who has spent many years in Tibet critically observing, studying, and practising the religious system of that country (1). According to Mme. David-Neel, *chöd* can be thought of as a Christian mystery play presented by one actor who is also his own single audience. It usually takes place at night in a cemetery or lonely wild site—a setting which is not hard to find in Tibet—and preference is given to a place associated with a terrible legend or some tragic event which has recently happened. The object of the performance is for the participant to work himself into a mental state where he begins to see himself surrounded by demons of the occult world who proceed to play unexpected and utterly fantastic rôles. The more readily he can hallucinate these demons, the more effective are the results of the ordeal.

Before performing *chöd*, the apprentice must first learn his part by heart. Then he must practise the ritual dance—an integral part of the performance—in which the step patterns form special geometrical figures. He also learns to turn on one foot, to stamp, and to leap while keeping time with his liturgical recitations. Finally, he must learn to handle, according to a fixed formula, the *dorje* (thunderbolt) and the *phurba* (magic dagger), and to beat rhythmically the *damaru* (small drum made of top half of two human skulls) and to blow the *kangling* (*rkang gling*, trumpet made from a human femur). The Lama teacher who directs the preparation or lessons is sort of a ballet master. And the dancers, his apprentices, are young ascetics emaciated by their austere practices, clad in ragged robes, their faces unwashed and their eyes gleaming with ecstatic light.

The long mystic preliminary preparation also includes a phase in which the apprentice 'tramples

<sup>1</sup> Professor of Sculptural Design, Art Department, University of California, Berkeley.



down 'all passions and crucifies his selfishness. But the essential part of the entire training is the preparation for the dreadful lonely banquet which comes at the end of the ritual and at which the apprentice offers his own body to be devoured by the hungry demons. This mystic banquet can be briefly described as follows: The participant blows his *kangling*, calling the hungry demons to the feast he intends to lay before them. A feminine deity, who is considered to personify his own will, is hallucinated as springing from the top of his head and standing before him, sword in hand. Then, while troops of ghouls crowd round for the feast, the goddess severs his limbs, skins him, and rips open his belly. The bowels fall out, the blood flows like a river, and the monsters ravenously bite here and there (1, p. 150).

All the while, as the demons masticate noisily, the performer excites and urges them with the following ritualistic words of unreserved surrender: 'For ages, in the course of renewed births, I have borrowed from countless living beings—at the cost of their welfare and life—food, clothing, all kinds of services to sustain my body, to keep it joyful in comfort and to defend it against death. To-day I pay my debt, offering for destruction this body which I have held so dear. I give my flesh to the hungry, my blood to the thirsty, my skin to clothe those who are naked, my bones as fuel to those who suffer from cold. I give my happiness to the unhappy ones. I give my breath to bring back the dying to life. Shame on me if I shrink from giving myself! Shame on you, wretched and demon beings, if you do not dare to prey upon it!' (1). (In major Tibetan rituals the *yogin* (officiant) usually includes a vow, *lus hbul ba*; Sanskrit: *atmanam niryatayāmi*, in which he offers his self, his ego, to the Buddha.) The vision of the gruesome banquet then vanishes and the laughter and cries of the ghouls die away. A complete loneliness in the gloomy landscape follows the weird orgy and the ecstatic condition aroused in the performer by his dramatic sacrifice gradually subsides.

This act of the ritual is called the 'red meal'. It is followed by the 'black meal', whose mystic significance is disclosed only to those who have received initiation and training of unusually high degree. Now the novice must imagine that he has become a small heap of charred human bones that emerges from a lake of black mud. This is the mud of misery, of moral defilement and of harmful deeds in which he has co-operated during the course of numberless lives, whose origin is lost in the night of time. He must also realize that the very idea of sacrifice is but an illusion, an offshoot of his blind conceit or pride. The fact is, he has *nothing* to give away because he is *nothing* (1).

Some lamas undertake tours to perform *chöd* near one hundred and eight lakes and one hundred and eight cemeteries; this is in accordance with the number of beads of their rosaries. They may devote years to this exercise of the ritual, wandering, not

only over Tibet, but also in India, Nepal, and China. Others may retire to solitary places for daily celebration of *chöd* for shorter or longer periods of time.

Before proceeding to any interpretation of this ritual it is appropriate to explain briefly the position of *chöd* in the orthodox, official Tibetan system of religious training, and to outline briefly this religious system itself. By most Occidentals, this system is called Lamaism, the name deriving from *bla-ma*, the Tibetan word for monk or superior one. Actually, the Tibetans call their system simply 'The Religion' or 'Buddha's Religion'. But Lamaism, as I shall continue to call the Tibetan religious system, is far from being a pure form of Buddhism. More correctly speaking, Lamaism is a fusion of an indigenous, primitive, shamanistic nature worship called Bön, and Mahayana Buddhism, with a strong overlay of Hindu-Buddhist Tantrism. This latter religion is a form of aboriginal nature-worship of India, combined with Hindu mysticism and, more or less, presented in the terminology of Mahayana Buddhism (7). Thus, it should not be surprising to find that although Lamaism is considered as Buddha's religion it contains many beliefs and practices which are in direct opposition to those as taught in early Hinayana Buddhism as well as in the later Mahayana system. Though Lamaism has been subjected to a long series of reforms and changes since its introduction into Tibet from India in the seventh century A.D., it continues to retain many obvious features inherited from the early demon and nature cults. On the other hand, Buddhistic teachings constitute more than a mere flavour in Lamaism; notwithstanding the strong Bön elements, Buddhism is definitely one of its major ingredients. It is this fact, as will be shown later, that should make certain of the Lamaist practices of more than passing interest for the psycho-analyst.

The ritual *chöd* itself is part of an esoteric training procedure not followed by all the young monks, of whom there are thousands in the monasteries. Usually, many of these latter lack initiative; they listlessly attend the various classes in the monastic colleges, or, as Mme. David-Neel describes, they just vegetate in a sort of sanctimonious ignorance (1). In contrast to these, the future participant in the *chöd* ritual is an independent, venturesome, self-determined individual. Rather than follow the easy-going existence of the *gompas* (*dgompa*: monasteries), he chooses, instead, to come to direct grips with the forces of his mind. For this purpose, he carefully chooses a lama or guru (Sanskrit: spiritual father and guide) who can guide him along the path to enlightenment. In certain instances, this may require his moving to some far distant hermitage in an isolated region in order to be near his guru, and in so doing, he may cut himself off from the material assistance of his relatives and friends, who, in Tibet, are ever ready to support generously one who puts on the monk's robes.

It is the contemplation of the workings of his mind



that keeps a novice in such lonely retreats day after day or year after year. To do this he must cultivate from the beginning the power to assume the attitude of a calm and detached observer of his thoughts, and to avoid imagining things. When imagination is prescribed in contemplative meditation or practices such as *chöd*, it is only to demonstrate (by conscious creation of perceptions and sensations) the illusory nature of those unconsciously determined perceptions and sensations which are accepted as real but which are really imaginary. He is instructed to observe the acts he performs, the awakening within himself of sensations, attractions, and repulsions, and to endeavour to discover their causes, then the causes of these causes, and so on. He must also be capable of mastery over certain impulsive inclinations and fleeting appetites, that is to say, he must develop the ability to avoid what we would call 'acting out'. Eventually he is able to erase from his mind, as they appear, all those mental functionings not based on reality, until a time comes when unprofitable reasoning ceases because it has been replaced by direct perception.

Using Buddhist figurative speech, the objective of the participant may be described as follows: to calm down the storms of the mind, raised by thought-creating theories and speculations, in order that the ocean of the mind may become tranquil and smooth, without a single ripple disturbing its surface. It is in this faultlessly smooth mirror that things are reflected without their image becoming distorted. The importance of this undistorted mental image is attested by the teachings attributed to the Buddha: 'He who knows and sees things as they really are makes an end of *dukkha* (sorrow)' (*Udana VII*).

Original Buddhist practice is clearly the cultivation of that faculty which makes it its business to see things in their own light rather than in that of our mind's providing; to listen to what the fact has to say about itself rather than what we have to say about the fact. As we shall see, however, the methods as encompassed by the *chöd* ritual are drastically at variance with those propounded by early Buddhism. Actually, early Buddhism listed 'faith in efficacy of religious rites' as one of the ten bonds or hindrances which prevent human beings from attaining salvation. The discarding of belief in the value of ritualistic, sacramental, and other ceremonies was considered indispensable before starting on the path of enlightenment. This is called 'entering the stream.'

Some Buddhist concepts are so like those of psycho-analysis that a few words about this similarity are in order. Of first importance in both systems is the high regard assigned to mental analysis as a means of understanding and taming the passions. In Buddhism the conquest of mind by man is frequently compared with his conquest of the mighty elephant. According to what we know to-day of the power of the mind's instinctual forces, the comparison is an apt one. Like psycho-analytic thought,

Buddhist thought was also pre-eminently devoted to reality. Speculations were regarded not only as profitless but as actually harmful. Among these were the contemplation of metaphysical matters and the nature of the hereafter. Buddhism, like psycho-analysis, taught that what is needed to solve the problems of life is not moral estimates (*māyā*: illusion), but more knowledge (*vijjā*: wisdom). *Nirvana* meant simply the state of mental tranquillity. It was to be achieved by the 'dying out' in the mind of the fires of the three cardinal sins: the fires of *raja* (passion), *dosa* (hatred) and *moha* (folly or illusion). Only in this life and world, and by oneself, was it to be obtained. There is nothing in Buddhist scriptures that conceives of Nirvana as a dying out of the soul, as we see it explained in a number of Occidental discussions (3).

Like psycho-analysis, Buddhism supports no concept of a God. The *Dhammapada*, which is part of the *Khuddaka Nikaya*, is a Buddhist manual or guide to enlightenment. It has four hundred and twenty-three stanzas set in twenty-six chapters, yet it contains no single reference to a saviour or supreme being, nor does it make any reference to an immortal individual soul. In fact, we may think of the whole course of Buddha's thought as being nothing but a perpetual pointing out that a soul, a true *attā* [*atman*], fact', writes Ferdinand Lessing, 'that Buddhism denies the existence of a soul in any sense in which we understand it. The ensemble of phenomena which lead to the assumption of a soul substance or substratum is attributed in Buddhism to some sort of actualism, a complicated dynamic interplay of conscious and subconscious forces, *dhammas*, a term which has been translated by "elements", states "of consciousness", "essence", [but which I prefer to call by] the colourless expression "data"' (9). The anti-*attā* arguments of Buddhism are mainly and consistently directed against the notion of a soul as a persistent, unchanging, blissful, transmigrating, superphenomenal being, as well as the concept of soul as residence of the supreme *ātman* or world-soul. Herein the Buddhist differs from the Vedāntist, who seeks to realize identity with *atman*, that is, identity with the world soul and himself or *ātman—tat tvam asi* (that art thou). In fact, in Buddhism there is no sense of union with the Divine One, or any other One, implied or felt (2).

Enlightenment according to Buddhist scriptures is the replacement of profitless reasoning by direct perception. 'It is only by passing beyond all imaginings that a man is called a tranquil *muni*' (*Majjhima Nikaya III*). An almost exact parallel to this idea is found in Freud's statement regarding the reality-adjusted personality: 'Only for the most select and most balanced minds does it seem possible to guard the perceived picture of external reality against the distortion to which it is otherwise subjected in its transit through the psychic individuality of the one perceiving it' (5). In another context he states, 'The



shadows of thought in the mind dim the new perceptions' (6). A comparative study of ancient Buddhism and modern psycho-analytic thought discloses many other similar concepts of the mind's workings. It is for this reason that Buddhism can be considered the first and, perhaps the only great religion-psychology of the past whose goal, although, granted, not its methods, paralleled those of present-day psycho-analytic thought.

Both systems aim at the differentiation between the real and the unreal, the elimination of anxiety and fear, the seeking after knowledge, and the attainment of mental tranquillity. The existence of these similarities has already been recognized, but, to my knowledge, the first psycho-analyst to do so, was Joseph C. Thompson, who in 1927 under the pseudonym of 'Joe Tom Sun' published his observations in an article, *Psychology and Primitive Buddhism* (11). His unpublished notes contain an additional wealth of pertinent observations on this subject.

Returning once more to the investigation of *chöd* we find that the training methods as followed by different *gurus* vary considerably. Like artists' techniques, no two seem to be alike. Some *gurus* tend more towards mysticism than others, and at one extreme are those who should be called *sngagspas* (magicians) rather than 'wise men'. If a lama or guru is a follower of what is called the 'short path' he may even avoid all lengthy explanations of the scriptures or demonstrations of truth and error. Instead, he encourages his disciple to deliberately seek fear-evoking situations as a means of overcoming the very feelings of fear.

Conquering the fear of demons can be used as an illustration of this last point. There is hardly a country that can compete with Tibet as to the number, the variety, and the weirdness of its folklore regarding ghosts and demons. To judge by popular belief, the evil demons far outnumber the human population. Mme. Alexandra David-Neel reports the case of a young novice, with whom she was acquainted, who was instructed by his master to go to a solitary gloomy ravine supposed to be haunted by evil, non-human beings. He was told to tie himself to a tree or rock and at night call on the ferocious *towos*, demons, who in Tibetan paintings are shown eating the brains of victims. He was to challenge them and, no matter how terrified he might feel, he was commanded to resist the temptation of untying his bonds and running away. He was to remain bound to his post until sunrise (1).

According to Mme. David-Neel, this is very common practice, the first step of the novice up the mystic ladder. Eventually he may reach the upper rung, where, upon imagining monstrous forms, he is able to reflect, 'All these are non-existent; mind evokes them out of the void and can dissolve them into void.'

When we examine the wording of the novice's liturgy referring to the 'red meal', we notice the

following outstanding features: (1) The novice is paying back a debt by offering his body for destruction. He offers his flesh to the hungry, his blood to the thirsty, his skin to clothe those who are naked, and his breath to bring back the dying to life. He does all this because formerly he had borrowed from others; and it would not seem too farfetched to assume that what he has borrowed in phantasy is just that which he is returning. 2) There is a strong emphasis on cannibalism; the body is to be ripped apart, disembowelled and devoured. 3) The chief demon-devourer, who cuts off his head, is a female monster—a personification of the novice's own will. 4) There is an immediacy or urgency in the novice's supplication that he be devoured; 'Shame on you', he cries to the demons, 'if you refuse to dismember and prey on me.'

Now it is these four features of the *chöd* ritual which are also found, though in different forms, in the classical manifestations of oral-sadistic impulses—stronger or fainter unconscious traces of which probably exist in all human beings. One of our most convincing sources of information on this class of impulses is from the observations and analysis of children. Melanie Klein (8), as well as a host of other workers, have reported extensively on this stage of libido development. It is ushered in with the appearance of the first teeth about the latter half of the first year, and represents the child's impulses to bite and devour its mother; first her breast and then her body. It wants to get at what it considers the good things inside her.

During this period the child's dominant aim seems to be to possess itself of the contents of the mother's body and to destroy her by every weapon his sadism can command—biting, ripping, tearing, and cutting. In attacking its mother's insides, it fantasies it is attacking many other objects as well—siblings, faeces, the father's penis, etc. This does not apply exclusively to emotionally disturbed children. The analysis of normal children shows them to be dominated by similar impulses as well. And even our analysis of grown-ups demonstrates that in the oral-sadistic stage the individual passed through a cannibalistic phase associated with a wealth of similar fantasies. These fantasies, although centred around devouring the mother, are not solely concerned with gratification of the primitive need for nourishment; they also serve to gratify the child's innate destructive impulses (8).

Because of the child's omnipotence of thought, it confuses its imaginary attacks with real ones. Then, with the development of its rudimentary superego—its inner conscience, built up of identifications with its parents—it begins to develop anxiety about its destructive wishes. To cope with this situation it sets up defences; for example, by means of the defence mechanism of projection it attributes its own oral-sadistic impulses to others. This tends to lessen its sense of guilt but, in turn, results in the dread of being devoured and destroyed by these others—by



its mother, father, or more frequently, by symbols of its parents in the form of demons.

Projection, of course, is just one of several mechanisms available to the ego for defending itself against anxieties arising from oral-sadistic impulses (4). It can also defend itself by reaction-formation or by phobia—by developing an aversion for food or the activities associated with eating. The use of this particular defence mechanism is illustrated by a young woman with overpowering unconscious oral-sadistic impulses who repeatedly described during her consultations with me how she would become ill from experiencing the sounds of her parents eating, especially from the sounds they made when drinking soup. She herself had pronounced eating anomalies which manifested themselves in low appetite, difficulties with swallowing, and feelings that people were staring at her when she ate. The physical result of all this was a thin, under-weight figure lacking in the common feminine configurations. Her discomfort was especially pronounced when eating in restaurants with her parents as was frequently necessary on the many trips they took away from home. On such occasions she had a marked fear lest people were watching her. This made it difficult for her to swallow food. When she did, she frequently became ill and vomited, or after each bite she would feel herself compelled to spit it out immediately into a napkin. As a child, she could not get home fast enough from school to have her dinner and to go to bed, where, in the dark, she revelled in sadistic fantasies dealing with gruesome aggressive attacks on people.

A dramatic acting-out of oral-sadistic impulses on the actual body of a person—in this case, a dead person—is seen in the Tibetan practice called *Rolang*. The *sngagspa* shuts himself alone with the corpse in a dark room. To animate the body he lies on it, mouth to mouth, and while holding it in his arms, continuously repeats mentally, a magic formula. After a certain time the corpse begins to move. It stands up and tries to escape. Now the body struggles more fiercely; it leaps and jumps to extraordinary heights, dragging the sorcerer with it. All the while he keeps his mouth pressed to that of the animated body while continuing to repeat the magic words. At last the tongue of the corpse protrudes from its mouth. This is the crucial moment. The sorcerer seizes the tongue between his teeth and bites it off; the corpse collapses immediately. Any failure on the sorcerer's part to control the body, once he has awakened it, means certain death for him. A Tibetan who had practised *Rolang* described most vividly how the corpse slowly gained in strength until he was unable to prevent the agitation of the jumping monster. He strained his muscles to the utmost to hold it until the critical moment arrived. And during the entire ordeal his thoughts were occupied with the idea that if he failed to conquer the corpse, the horrible being would kill him (1).

Because of the similarity between the ideas ex-

pressed in the 'red meal' of *chöd* and those observed in children and adults in analysis, we might be inclined to apply our psycho-analytic knowledge to interpret the underlying meaning of this part of the ritual. Thus, on the basis of these similarities we might explain the ritual as the participant's defence against his own oral-sadistic impulses (the verb *gchöd pa* means: to hack, to cut into pieces). The action would then be an attempt to master these impulses by projecting them on to the hallucinated demons who in turn are consciously encouraged to attack the participant. Specifically, the feminine deity who springs from the top of his head (a figment of his own thinking, so to speak) and stands before him, sword in hand, would symbolize his mother against whom his oral-sadistic impulses were originally directed. The sword would refer to her as possessing a penis—a childhood fantasy (later repressed into the unconscious) that is as widespread as the use of fire. And the plea that the demons hurry would represent the urgency for relief from his pangs of conscience. But it is not necessary to depend solely on the method of analogy to interpret *chöd*; the Tibetan lamas themselves apparently understand, at least in part, the underlying meaning of the ritual. This is best illustrated by referring to Mme. David-Neel's description of a *chöd* ceremony at which she was an eye-witness.

In Northern Tibet a herdsman had died and preparations were being made by his family and friends for his funeral. After much chanting, beating of drums, ringing of bells, and copious eating and drinking by all present, the dead body was carried to a ledge on a lonely mountain top. There it was cut into pieces and left as alms for the vultures. That night a *trapa* (novice monk) of a neighbouring lama-guru selected the place for performing *chöd*. But unknown to the novice, Mme. David-Neel had also climbed to the place and thus was able secretly to observe the ritual performance of the lean, sickly ascetic. With his *kangling* in his left hand and his *damaru* lifted high in his right, he beat an aggressive staccato. In a challenging voice he exclaimed, 'I, self, the gods and the demons.' Then he began the ritualistic dance, reciting the while, 'I trample down the demons of pride, the demons of anger, the demons of lust, the demons of stupidity.' The stamping of the ground was accompanied by ritual exclamations which grew louder and louder until the last one was thundered out in a deafening tone. After looking at the pieces of the corpse scattered on the ground he seized his *kangling* and blew loudly a number of times. Then he entered his crude cotton tent.

Within the tent the *trapa*'s indistinct mutterings and moanings were followed by shouted passages from his liturgy: 'I pay my debts. As I have been feeding upon you, so feed upon me. Come ye hungry ones, in this banquet my flesh will transform itself into the very object of your craving; eat! eat!'



Then the excited monk jumped up so hastily that his head knocked against the low roof of his tent, which caused it to fall in on him. He struggled for a while under the cloth, and eventually emerged with the distorted face of a madman, howling convulsively and gesturing as if in actual physical pain. By working himself into a hypnoid state he seemed to be actually experiencing the teeth of the invisible demons in his body. Finally, in staggering around in the dark, he stumbled on one of the tent pegs and fell heavily to the ground, where he remained immobile as if he had fainted.

Mme. David-Neel became so concerned about the young monk—she feared he might seriously injure himself—that she decided to return and inform the lama what was happening to his disciple. There, in the lama's cave, she described what had transpired on the mountain top. She warned him that the trapa might gravely injure his health, or that he might be driven to madness by the terror of his experiences. She exclaimed: 'He really appeared to feel himself being eaten alive.'

To this the lama calmly answered, 'No doubt he is, but he does not yet understand that he himself is the eater. Maybe he will learn that later on.' Then he added, 'It is hard to free oneself from delusion, to blot out the mirage of the imaginary world and to liberate one's mind from fanciful beliefs. Enlightenment is a precious gem and must be bought at a high price. Methods to reach *tharpa* (supreme liberation) are many. You may follow another way, less coarse than that suited for the man you now pity, but I am certain that your way must be just as hard as that of

my disciple. If it is easy, it is the wrong way.'

Those monks who finally achieve understanding of the underlying meaning of *chöd* eventually dispense with the rite altogether. Its different phases may be called to mind in the course of silent meditation, but soon even this exercise may be omitted. Some enlightened *gomchens* (*sgomchen*: great meditator), however, may meet at intervals to celebrate *chöd* together. But then the weird, dismal rite changes its character and becomes a mystic feast in which the exalting monks rejoice over their complete freedom. Under the starry sky in the majestic wilds of the high Tibetan plateaus, Mme. David-Neel had the opportunity of observing a group of these freed monks as they danced to the music of their *damarus* and *kanglings*. On their faces shone the joy of having conquered the 'burning thirst' and of having trampled down the fantasies and fears that 'keep the mind feverish'. Then they sank in endless meditations that kept them late after dawn sitting crosslegged, the body erect, the gaze cast down, motionless like stone images.

To what extent these monks have uncovered the repressed and actually freed themselves from the severity of their superego—their inner conscience—according to psycho-analytic standards of emancipation, is difficult to tell. It would require an extensive psycho-analytic study of many of these *gomchens*, preferably by psycho-analytic workers versed in the Tibetan language, in order to evaluate the actual effectiveness of their system. But it is not too far-fetched to think that some day such a study may be made.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) DAVID-NEEL, ALEXANDRA. *With Mystics and Magicians in Tibet*. (London, 1931.)
  - (2) DAVIDS, MRS. RHYS. *Buddhist Psychology*. (London, 1914.)
  - (3) RHYS DAVIDS, T. W. 'Buddhism.' *Encyclopedia Britannica*, 13th ed. (1926).
  - (4) FREUD, ANNA. *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defence*. (New York, 1946.)
  - (5) FREUD, SIGMUND. *Psychopathology of Everyday Life*. (New York, 1915.)
  - (6) —. *Introductory Lectures in Psycho-analysis*. (London, 1929.)
  - (7) HUMPHREYS, CHRISTMAS. *Buddhism*. (London, 1951.)
  - (8) KLEIN, MELANIE. *Contributions to Psychoanalysis*. (London, 1947.)
  - (9) LESSING, FERDINAND D. 'Calling the Soul: A Lamaist Ritual.' *Semitic and Oriental Studies*, Univ. of Calif. Publications in Semitic Philology, 11, 1951, pp. 263–284.
  - (10) REIK, THEODOR. *Ritual, Psycho-analytic Studies*. (London, 1931.)
  - (11) JOE TOM SUN (THOMPSON, JOSEPH C). 'Psychology of Primitive Buddhism.' *Psychoanalytic Review*, 11, 1924, pp. 39–47.
- (George W. Digby in his *Meaning and Symbol*, London, 1955, refers to *chöd* in his interesting interpretation of the dismemberment and disembowelled features in the sculpture of Henry Moore.)

(Received 11 May, 1956.)

# THE MEANING OF BARRIE'S 'MARY ROSE'<sup>1</sup>

By

MARIETTA KARPE, M.S.S.

AND

RICHARD KARPE, M.D., WEST HARTFORD, CONNECTICUT

In the 18-year period from 1902 to 1920, James Matthew Barrie, best known as the creator of *Peter Pan*, wrote 20 plays, which fall into two basically different categories. Among them are pleasant, witty, and successful plays such as *What Every Woman Knows*, realistic both in their stories and in their characterization. On the other hand, there are a number of plays, obviously very dear to the author's heart, which are whimsical, magic and fantastic, such as *Peter Pan*, *Dear Brutus*, and *Mary Rose*. Barrie himself said that he wrote his magical plays with his left hand and his realistic plays with his right.

*Mary Rose* (3), the last of his successful plays, was first produced in 1920. Its story is a strange one, very puzzling not only to the audience and the actors, but even to the author himself. It is, in brief, as follows: a young married couple, Mary Rose and Simon, go on vacation to the Outer Hebrides, leaving their little son Harry behind with a nurse. While they are visiting a small island which is supposed to have magical powers, Mary Rose disappears without a trace, thus repeating an earlier disappearance at the age of 12, when she was on a fishing trip with her father and an intensive relationship developed between them. The first time she returned after 20 days, not realizing that she had been away, and her family never discussed the incident with her. The second time, she returns unexpectedly 25 years later, unchanged in appearance and unaware of her long absence. She looks for her son, expecting him to still be a baby, but in fact he ran away from home at the age of 12 to become a sailor, and later settled in Australia. Mary Rose dies soon after her return, but her ghost keeps haunting the house in search of her son Harry. Three years later, Harry comes back and meets the ghost. She does not recognize him, and is at first hostile until he takes her on his lap. She then becomes infantile and asks his permission to go out and play. He wants to help her find peace, but does not know

how. Finally he succeeds in putting her to rest and returns to Australia, finding the meeting with her ghost very disappointing.

Barrie received many enquiries about the deeper meaning of this play, and asked his secretary, Lady Cynthia Asquith (1), as she records in her recent book: 'I wish you could tell me what it means and settle the matter once and for all.' But she too could not tell, and says in her book that she preferred to leave the play unexplained.

We are still more puzzled when we find that this play ended a period of 29 years of intensive productivity, during which time Barrie wrote 27 plays, almost all highly successful. When *Mary Rose* was first performed he was aged sixty, and in good health; no important external changes happened in his life thereafter, and though he lived for seventeen more years, he was unable to write anything except children's plays, staged at private performances. Not that he did not try. He began another play called *Shall We Join the Ladies?* shortly after *Mary Rose*, but completed only the first act. There followed a lag of productivity and occasional depressions, until in 1931 he wrote another ghost story, *Farewell Miss Julie Logan* (4), and three years later the ill-fated full-length play *Boy David* (2). The free flow of his creativity seemed cut off after the writing of *Mary Rose*.

The play is obviously one about mothers and their sons, about life and death and the revival of the dead, and the problem: Should the dead return? Can they ever find a place again in the world of the living? The wish to revive a deceased person, so prominent in Barrie's magical plays, is the reaction to the loss by death of a loved one we were not ready to give up. We often find that the deceased comes back in dreams for a long time after death, and in children's games death wishes can be acted out without much guilt feeling because in the game the dead can be revived again, and so nothing really tragic happens after all. The tragic loss of a love object seems able to become a stimulating factor for an artist's or a child's creativity, as the revival in

<sup>1</sup> First presented at the meeting of the Western New England Psychoanalytic Society at New Haven, Conn., on 12 November, 1955.



fantasy of a lost object is one way of mastering that loss.

Dennis Mackail (8), in his comprehensive biography of Barrie (p. 546), writes: 'Audiences wept, sniffed, swallowed and choked, without ever being able to explain what had reduced them to this state. (But), . . . nobody knew (the meaning). The players certainly didn't, and the author had told everything by this time and had nothing more to say. . . . He didn't know where his heroine had been, or why she had been taken, or the reason for her return. He didn't know where ghosts come from, nor the meaning, even for the purposes of this story, of life and death.'

This play poses many questions which neither Barrie nor his audiences could answer; but an investigation of its author's life-history reveals valuable clues to the unconscious meaning of the play and its dynamic function at this time in Barrie's life. Barrie was born in Kirriemuir, a small Scottish town, the ninth of ten children and the third son in the family of a poor weaver. When he was three years and two months old, the last child, his youngest sister, was born. In his autobiographical book *Margaret Ogilvy* (6) Barrie tells us that he has a complete amnesia for the first six years of his life: 'It is all guess-work for six years.' We thus have no direct description of little James's reaction to his sister's birth, but we can guess from the unusually intensive relationship which later developed with his mother that he must have felt very deeply her pre-occupation with the new baby.

At the age of six a tragic event occurred which had a deep and lasting influence on Barrie's whole life. He then had two older brothers, the oldest, Alexander, already grown up, and an adolescent brother David, a gifted and good-looking boy, destined to become a minister and much loved by the mother. When David was killed in an accident on the eve of his fourteenth birthday, while at a school headed by his older brother, the mother went into a deep depression. For many days she stayed in bed in a darkened room, her face to the wall, refusing food and paying no attention to her children, until little six-year-old James succeeded in arousing her interest in him again. From then on James took it upon himself to cheer his bereaved mother, and these attempts provide his first childhood memories. He recalls in his autobiography (6) how he sat in his mother's room, trying to entertain her by standing on his head or by similar childish tricks, and counting how often she laughed. He devoted a great deal of his boyish efforts and energies to cheering his mother by letting her talk about herself, and, almost like a psychotherapist, encouraged her to talk of her own childhood, her father whom she had adored, and her early hopes and experiences. This intensive relationship continued for the next 28 years until her death, even though James never completely succeeded in making her forget David, to whom she was

always talking in whispers as if he were constantly with her. Barrie's mother also remained on intimate terms with other dead persons, a fact which must have been of great importance to him. When one of his sisters, after the death of her fiancé, decided to marry the dead man's brother, her mother begged the dead man's forgiveness, asking him to understand how sad and lonely is the life of a friendless girl.

Barrie had a good capacity for making friends and keeping them. His circle of friends included people of all ages, both male and female, and especially a number of small boys. Though he could be socially quite charming, he was given to periods of deep depression during which he refused to see anyone and cut himself off from all contacts.

In 1894, one year before his mother's death, he married a young and beautiful actress, Mary Ansell, in spite of his often expressed preference for older and motherly women. The marriage remained childless and in 1909 ended in divorce.

In 1896, a year after his mother's death, he wrote the autobiographical book *Margaret Ogilvy, by her Son James Barrie* (6), a deeply emotional tribute to her, and from then on we see the beginning of the trend of thought which crystallized many years later in the strange story of Mary Rose. The basic idea goes back to 1902, when he published *The Little White Bird* (5), a collection of short stories which are fantastic answers to the question: 'Where do I come from?' In the chapter called 'Nightpiece', the author tells David, a little boy of five, what happened on the night of his birth. He tells how he, the author, walked the streets all night with David's father waiting for David's mother to have her baby, and surprisingly enough their thoughts turn to death and to ghosts. 'The only ghosts, I believe,' he writes, 'who creep into this world, are dead young mothers, returned to see how their children fare. There is no other inducement great enough to bring the departed back. . . . [But] what is saddest about [these] ghosts is that they may not know their child. They expect him to be just as he was when they left him, and they are easily bewildered, and search for him from room to room, and hate the unknown boy he has become.' In this quotation we have already in a nutshell the synopsis of *Mary Rose*. The death fantasy here expressed in connection with birth might have had its origin in the experience of the birth of the younger sister.

Frank Swinnerton, in his book *Georgian Scene* (9), writes that it was a standing joke in the Barrie family that in every one of his heroines Barrie painted but another portrait of his mother. It is not difficult to find her image once more in Mary Rose, who returns from death after twenty-five years, since his mother had died twenty-five years before the completion of the play. But even this analogy leaves many questions unanswered. Barrie's mother at death was an old woman, while Mary Rose is still



young when she disappears. Furthermore, Mary Rose at first does not die, but only disappears, to return unchanged after twenty-five years, as young and attractive as at her disappearance. This gives us the clue that the mother whom he really mourned and longed for and constantly revived in all his heroines was not that mother as an old woman, but his early image of her when he was a little boy. Mary Rose's little son Harry in the play is two years and nine months old when his mother disappears. Barrie was only five months older at the birth of his little sister Margaret, when he in a manner lost the mother because of her preoccupation with the new baby. This might explain why Mary Rose remains young and does not really die, because she represents a memory of Barrie's own young mother and her disappearance from his view when the new baby was born, when she too did not really die but got lost for him.

But while the events of Barrie's early childhood must necessarily remain 'guesswork', as he puts it, we have a detailed description of the events which led up to the completion of *Mary Rose* and the unproductive years which followed, in Lady Cynthia Asquith's *Portrait of Barrie* (1). Lady Cynthia met Barrie during World War I, becoming in 1918 what he later called his 'private private secretary'; she worked for him until his death, and he became practically a member of her family. Lady Cynthia was married and the mother of two small sons, a fact which might have contributed much to the friendship, since Barrie always loved little boys and needed their proximity. He also became friendly with Lady Cynthia's mother, Lady Wemyss, an older and motherly woman. Lady Cynthia describes the days of depression and gloom when nothing could cheer him, with one exception: if she presented to him some trouble of her own, he immediately became interested in her problem and forgot his own sadness, obviously a repetition of his old tendency to cheer his grieving mother.

Lady Cynthia Asquith was distressed by the fact that Barrie's creative ability vanished after *Mary Rose*, and she blamed herself for this failure, suggesting that signs of bewilderment she might have shown when he shared with her his ideas about new plays and new characters might have discouraged the sensitive writer. But her self-blame seems only partly justified, and even so, not in the way she suggests. It seems more probable that Barrie's need to revive his mother lessened because of his newly-found friendship with his secretary, her mother, and her sons. His acceptance as a member of the Asquith family satisfied his need for his dead mother to such an extent that, for the time at least, he no longer needed to revive her.

In *Mary Rose*, his last successful play, his former need to console mothers for the death of their sons

seems reversed. The play expresses rather the son's desire for the dead mother's return and his disappointment when this wish is really fulfilled. It also portrays the reversal of the mother-son relationship to a father-daughter relationship, when in the last act Mary Rose sits on her grown-up son's lap and asks his permission to go out and play, a reversal which actually took place at a very early age in Barrie's relationship to his own mother.

While these early experiences contribute significantly to the psychogenesis of the conflicts expressed in the play, another important event occurred about the time when the story of Mary Rose ripened into a stage production. In 1917 Barrie's former wife, who had divorced him in 1909 to marry another playwright, Gilbert Cannan, was again concerned in divorce proceedings. Rumours appeared in the press<sup>2</sup> that Barrie was considering reconciliation with his wife. Though Barrie said nothing publicly to this effect, there is no question that they saw each other again, and very probably the idea of re-marriage entered his mind. A proof of his strong emotional attachment to his former wife, whose first name incidentally was Mary, is seen in the fact that when Cannan ceased supporting her and was finally hospitalized with a paranoid condition, Barrie resumed her financial support and continued this until his death. He even remembered her generously in his will.

But even if he did not consciously consider re-marriage, there is strong evidence that Mary attempted to come closer to him again. Lady Cynthia Asquith recalls in her book (1) an incident in the summer of 1923, when Mary Cannan took up residence in the small town of Broadway, five miles from Stanway, Barrie's summer home, with the declared intention of resuming their friendship. This was three years after the production of *Mary Rose*, but the subject of 'the second chance' was already in his mind in 1917, when he wrote *Dear Brutus*. He then rejected the second chance, saying that it could not work, and that one only repeats one's mistakes a second time, thus showing a deep intuitive insight into the inability of most people to free themselves from early-established behaviour patterns.

But Barrie still loved Mary, and the temptation to try again was apparently great. During this crucial time he met Cynthia Asquith and engaged her as his private secretary, possibly as a way out of the conflict into which he was thrown by Mary's reappearance on the scene. As a result of this conflict the story of Mary Rose crystallized, of the young wife who comes back from the enchanted island after 25 years. Some dates are interesting in this connection: He completed the play in 1919, 25 years after his marriage to Mary Ansell. The play was first produced in 1920, 25 years after his mother's death. While the relationship to his mother supplies the

<sup>2</sup> *The Cleveland Plain Dealer*, 9 December, 1917.



psychogenesis of his conflicts, that to his wife provides the psychodynamics.

Significant also is the author's choice of age for certain of the characters when important events take place. Mary Rose is 12 years old when she first disappears, and her son Harry is also 12 when he runs away from home 'to become a sailor' or, as we might assume, to look for his mother. The pre-adolescent girl who disappears when alone with her father on a fishing trip, while a very intensive relationship develops between them, reminds us of Wendy in *Peter Pan*, also pre-adolescent, of Peter Pan himself, who is approximately the same age, and of Barrie's brother David, who died when he was almost 14 and therefore 'never grew up'. (7).

The final disappearance of Mary Rose takes place when her little boy Harry is two years and nine months old, and, as she says in the play, '... and he says such beautiful things to me about loving me. Oh, rowan, do you think he means them?' So we see that Mary Rose disappears both times when a strong incestuous relationship, first to her father and then to her son, threatens to become overwhelming. In contrast, when after 25 years she returns, expecting to resume her relationship to her baby, her husband, and her parents where it left off, it has all become meaningless and empty. She is nothing but a ghost, and Harry does not consider it worth his while to give up his life in Australia for this little ghost who once was his mother, and whom he once desperately

needed and sorely mourned, but who cannot give him anything when she returns.

In summary, *Mary Rose* fulfilled in Barrie's life an important dynamic function: it helped him to reject the idea of remarriage, and it liberated him temporarily from his lifelong struggle with his mother's youthful image. This became possible because of the meaningful relationship which he established to his secretary and her family. Unfortunately, however, this had an adverse effect on his productivity. As his longing for his mother lessened, his imagination and ability for creative writing also decreased, and the spring of his productivity dried up for nine years. He lapsed into silence with occasional depression for several years, and the old ghosts finally came back again in *Farewell Miss Julie Logan* (4) and *Boy David* (2). His attempt to free himself from the ghosts of his childhood proved unsuccessful. Should the dead come back from their graves? Where do they go when they die? Where are the children before they are born? The eternal questions of life and death. Barrie's gallant attempt at solving them in his magical, illogical, and philosophical way did not succeed, and he died discouraged, a lonely old man, in spite of his many friendships.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) ASQUITH, CYNTHIA. *Portrait of Barrie*. (New York: Dutton, 1955.)
- (2) BARRIE, JAMES MATTHEW. *Boy David*. (New York: Scribner, 1938.)
- (3) ——. *Plays*. In one volume. (New York: Scribner, 1953.)
- (4) ——. *Farewell Miss Julie Logan*. (New York: Scribner, 1935.)
- (5) ——. *The Little White Bird*. (New York: Scribner, 1930.)
- (6) ——. *Margaret Ogilvy*. (New York: Scribner, 1946.)
- (7) KARPE, MARIETTA. 'The Origins of Peter Pan.' *Psychoanal. Review*, 43, 1956.
- (8) MACKAIL, DENNIS. *Barrie, The Story of J.M.B.* (New York: Scribner, 1941.)
- (9) SWINNERTON, FRANK. *The Georgian Scene*. (New York: Farrar and Rinehart, 1934.)

(Received 25 June, 1956.)

# LISTENING TO CLICHÉS AND INDIVIDUAL WORDS<sup>1</sup>

By

ADRIAN STOKES, LONDON

Words are highly coloured and clichés are like patches of scarlet, the careless expenditure of which may irritate the eye.

You are invited this evening to surrender to the mere glow of words and phrases, a relaxing that will surely be the opposite to the usual call on our attention whereby we want to separate words, in the interest of abstract meaning, from the voluminous bodies that surround them. The words that denote ideas, and thus the ideas, are not only magnetized by particular associations but tend to bring physical being in their train. The word 'idea' means an image, is derived from the Greek 'to see': but for once we shall be encouraged to embrace an expression such as the one of 'entertaining a rough idea'. Also art conveys meaning of every kind in grossly sensuous terms: one of my points will be that art is an inevitable extension of the role of language, inevitable because instinct will suffer only a partial divorce from sensuous expression. Words bear witness.

Let the verb 'to express' provide a starting-point. The basic sense is 'to squeeze out': hence the facile and pompous clichés: 'to express concern', 'to express appreciation'. We would not speak as a rule of expressing love. When we want to express concern or appreciation we may not wish to imply that concern or consideration has to be squeezed out of us. Nevertheless that is what we say, probably because it is what in part we feel. It seems to me that those who readily—no, inevitably—employ some such ready-made yet equivocal expression, are showing their insensitiveness to words because what I can only call a static supply of ambivalent feeling compels it. Of course I am not implying that the true meaning of 'to express' should always be to the fore; but I am wondering why the cliché that employs the word is 'to express concern' though not 'to express love'. A supplementary explanation might point to euphony and to the emphasis that euphony or

other arrangements of sound contrive. I shall say something about it in a moment.

To continue with 'express'. It means also 'definite', 'special', as in 'express train': so, when we 'express concern' on some formal occasion, we brazenly suggest, in managing to squeeze out solicitude, that our offering is most valuable and special. This will be polite enough but only, it seems to me, if there exists small reason for us to harbour concern.

To what originally does the squeezing out refer? Nursing mothers sometimes must 'express their milk'—that is the medical phrase—to help the flow: they have to squeeze it out. They are subsequently squeezed out by their feeding babies. We too, as a rule, have in mind something good when we speak of expressing ourselves. But if the words that express judgement derive sometimes from 'the milk of human kindness' they lend themselves as well to the nurture of all feeling and often possess an acid taste. Nevertheless, we may now relish fully the felicity of that trade name, 'Express Dairy', offering plentiful milk expressed from cows, expressly delivered at the door. Words must feed us: advertisers know it well. The script writer generally avoids the explosive cliché except as a quotation: he invents new luxurious phrases. This feeding comes from a distance, under the aegis of an unseen organization that reflects, it may be, a now misty aspect of the primal mother. However, an agent who would 'suck up' to us will need to present himself to our developed ego. Without any certainty I take this very vulgar phrase to refer to fellatio.

Freud remarked the dream-like condensation where a single word has been used for, say, dark as well as for light. It is curious to realize—though, doubtless immediately apparent to foreigners, stimulating their indignation—that 'to go fast' and 'to hold fast' exemplify opposite meanings of the same word; the same word, not different roots with the same sound.

<sup>1</sup> Read to the Imago Group, London, 9 October, 1956.



Even with the help of puns that harp on antithetical meanings, we wonder little at such coincidence. Many words, particularly adjectives, have gradually reversed their sense. There are various reasons for it. You need only experience often enough the Italian waiter's *vengo subito*—'I come immediately, even suddenly'—to comprehend why in English, 'presently' and 'soon' no longer mean 'now' as formerly they did, as did 'anon' also and 'by and by'. Travesty occurs as well owing to adjectival euphemism. Thus the substitution of 'stout' for 'fat' has started 'stout' on the down-grade. Not a philologist, I speak with no authority whatever on the varying sense of words, often jostled by the introduction of new terms, a very abstruse subject. A change from active to passive and *vice versa* is easily understood, owing to the equivocal compounds in the formation of many English words. 'Troublesome' once meant troubled, 'unquestionable' uninquisitive. I am delighted to find that 'amorous' once meant worthy of love. Similar changes suggest a growing cynicism or experience. 'Plausible' meant worthy of praise, 'pert' skilful, 'pretence' any claim whatsoever, 'parsimonious' frugal, 'severity' discipline, 'sly' dexterous, 'curiosity' scrupulousness or taste, 'wilfully' with good will. It might be of interest to the historian as well as to the psycho-analyst that 'retribution' has meant simple payment uncharged with emotion; and 'remorse' compassion; 'to doubt' could also mean to dread. Such variation, of course, has not been in one direction only.

I do not know whether words of other languages are as richly striped with harmonics. A little acquaintance with early Italian, of far simpler origin than English, leads me in that case to think not. Such harmonics are the stuff of poetry, and I am inclined to believe that on occasion there is more poetry in Shakespeare today than when he lived; in Chaucer too, in all poets who are not contemporary. When we read in Chapman's Homer:

As when of frequent bees  
Swarms rise out of rocks

we are not aware as a rule that 'frequent' could in his time have easily signified 'numerous'. Shakespeare wrote with what seems to us a very generous yet most precise poetry:

The quality and hair of our attempt  
Brooks no division.

But there is evidence that 'hair' was a not un-

common synonym for texture or character. The state of Elizabethan English was Shakespeare's opportunity. But when he wrote 'Wherein of antres vast and deserts idle', the word 'idle' probably meant in ordinary speech, barren or empty. Nor must I forget Chaucer's beautiful 'The sweet jargon of birds'. Yes, we comprehend an essence of poetry when different, even opposite, senses in one word may signify in active harmony. But what are we to make of the Elizabethan use of the word 'owe', meaning both 'to owe' and 'to own'? In *King John* Shakespeare employs in consecutive lines the two opposed senses of the word. I do not think it would be rash to suppose that in alliance with the condensation dear to the id, the eternal vigilance of ambivalent feeling underlies and mingles with all the many other reasons for reversal of meaning, more apparent in those words where an anterior sense survives in some degree. Thus 'fond' once meant 'foolish', a not unknown usage even now. It is more startling to discover that the inevitable but frigid word 'nice' first meant ignorant or stupid and then wanton, loose-mannered, lascivious; that a possible derivation of 'dear' is from the Anglo-Saxon *derian*, to hate (cf. 'his dearest enemy'); that 'daft' is the same as deft or suitable, that 'smug' meant trim, elegant, even beautiful; on the other hand, that 'a frill' may be derived from the still-existing sense of the word that means pertaining to the mesentery or intestine, a history that would recall the process of reaction-formation. 'Phlegmatic' comes from the Greek for to burn, 'an anecdote' meant something which at all costs must not be published, 'hussy' meant a housewife, 'anathema' a thank-offering, 'sad' once indicated satiety, then resoluteness, 'prestige' illusion or imposture, 'school' derives from leisure, and 'to vegetate' is by derivation 'to enliven'; 'play' once meant brisk action, 'sacred' not only blessed but accursed, 'secure' careless; 'silly' meant innocent; hence 'ninny'. 'Innocent', of course, means not hurting; and it follows that one sense of the word used to be not far from 'unfortunate'. Nevertheless, it is psychologically just that the innocent man should be he who has not been aggressive. Since he who does not hurt, were there such a being, cannot himself be hurt psychically, 'innocence' has come to contain another secondary sense of 'untouched', 'unhurt'. The root of 'naughty' means a nothingness. The word's evolution provides an image for the process of the death instinct, for



the aggression arising from its active state. Many phrases more certainly bear witness to unconscious working. There is that strange phrase 'bowels of compassion' which indicates perhaps clearer than any dream a long-lost feeling of beneficent bestowal in the act of defaecation. On the other hand there are similar phrases, equally loaded with feeling, for which it would be hard to find as direct a psycho-analytic counterpart. For instance, 'to wring a person's withers'.

I want to examine various slang synonyms for 'psychotic': potty, balmy, crackers, nuts, gone off his rocker. I take them to be pithy terms not without interest to the cultured psychiatrist. Tonight we are listening to individual words with the attention that the psycho-analyst gives to the words of a patient in a particular context. There are often interfering factors: notwithstanding, to say that some one has gone off his rocker may be extremely expressive. We have been discussing a few id connotations of ordinary words. The slang terms for 'psychotic', however, refer solely, it seems to me, to a state of the ego in accord with the rough distinction between neurosis and psychosis whereby the latter is defined in terms of the emergence of primitive ego states. Now, we shall find that the mature ego of popular phrase, of slang, of words in general, is forcibly conceived in physical and bodily terms. 'Insane' itself means primarily unwell, physically unwell, as does 'unwell'. Similarly 'ecstasy' means 'out of standing'. This does not suggest lying down, but a development so to speak of the phrase 'on tiptoe of expectation', an expectation now gratified, as by orgasm. Parallel meaning appears in 'on tenterhooks', i.e., extremely anxious, literally 'stretched on hooks'; and in 'off the hooks', i.e., psychotic, crumpled up. We gather from this last phrase that psychosis is conceived as an unstrung condition without, as it were, shape, in spite of many taut symptoms. Mania, for instance, exhibits an ecstatic, on tip-toe, state, yet it is by no means ill-defined by the slang word 'balmy', i.e., yielding a soft, fragrant smell or vapour, indistinct or else shapeless as smoke. We are given to understand that the ecstasies of mania lack body, and that body here means a regular as well as substantial shape, an almost Hellenic conception. 'Potty' has a similar connotation, for there is reason to think that it means melted down, as in the phrase 'gone to pot'. I would add in parenthesis that no derivations are known for jug and mug. They may derive from a female's name, such as Jane, Margaret. When we

speak of a friend's face as 'a mug', we are referring to the not unpleasant congeries of receptive organs on the front of his head.

Sanity, then, is associated by popular language with the precision of a strong body. 'Imbecile' means weak in strength, leaning on a staff, 'bacillus'. 'Ecstasy', out of standing, meant madness to the Greeks. If we contrast with 'balmy' and 'potty'—schoolboys used to call something very easy, 'potty'—if we contrast the expression, 'nuts', one that is more cheerful, as it were, but to the same effect as 'cracked' or 'crazy', which means dismembered, we note the suggestion this time of disparate physical pieces, each hard and rounded, maybe, yet unconnected. 'Crackers' probably possesses the same schizophrenic connotation. The old greeting 'Hail' simply means 'Be Whole'. It is ironic that never had anyone else so often been thus adjured as was Hitler, by name and at his own command.

I think a key to all other popular expressions for psychosis is the phrase 'to go off one's rocker'. It implies that the human mechanism, when sane, is capable of inclining towards the outside world and towards the inside world in a sliding, well-ordered manner, retaining the ego's axis. But once you come 'off your rocker', 'off your head', 'off the rails', you are then 'deranged', you have 'lost your bearings' and 'balance', you have become deeply 'out of sorts'. One should compare also the expression 'touched' for psychotic, in reference to the traumatic experience that has ripped away the rind of the ego which is now touched 'on the raw'. Slang—even more, legal jargon—sometimes employs an older sense of a word. The expression 'touched' for mad, calls to mind that an old sense of 'entire' was 'untouched'.

But of anxiety, guilt, fantasy, one hears little in these ego expressions, since their terms are safely physical. Many phrases suggest that the ego is a rather delicate mechanism, easily 'thrown out' if a 'screw is loose', though it can possess 'a rough exterior' and a 'heart of gold'. This substantial entity is apt to 'contract a chill': it may have to 'face the music' or be 'faced with ruin': it may need to show a 'bold front' when a task 'confronts it'. But it is also a recipient country on which an emotion or an idea 'suddenly dawns' like a tropical sun. In all these phrases—and this is the point I want to make—some shapeliness is presumed as characteristic of the ego and of its objects. We are reminded of the Gestalt theory of perception. The more simple and precise the shape, the



greater the ego's power of decisiveness. It avoids the 'aching void' and 'hollow tones', has a preference for what is 'fair and square', a 'square meal', a 'round oath', a 'square' or 'straight deal', often for the 'straight and narrow path', for someone who is a 'brick' (i.e., rectangular); it 'frames an excuse', i.e., forms excuse into a rectangle, is sometimes not averse to 'hard facts' and 'getting down to bed-rock', but will occasionally 'knock the bottom' out of something or speak 'from the bottom of the heart'. These occasions, 'it goes without saying', may be 'few and far between', but that is 'neither here nor there'. I don't know whether you find 'the plot thickens', that is to say, whether I succeed in 'licking anything into shape'; but the 'sum and substance' of what I am trying to say should now be an 'open secret', and 'that's flat'. The 'long and short of it' is—'not to put too fine a point on it'—that we must 'fall to with a will', accept, if need be, 'rough justice' instead of allowing ourselves to be 'down and out'. We must 'keep our end up', 'entertain high hopes', 'pursue our purpose' through 'thick and thin'. Some may think it 'crass (i.e., thick) 'stupidity', a 'palpable lie'. But no. 'It stands to reason' and it is by reason that one 'knows where one stands'.

My object in thus absurdly stringing these clichés together is to stress to you that particularly in matters which refer primarily to the activities of the ego and superego, expressions are paramount that convey not only simple shape but direction, texture, and stance. Man, we are told, is 'fearfully and wonderfully made', that is to say I take it, a compound of hate and love but shaped none the less. Even from death, from dissolution, we borrow finality, definition, as of the contour of a silhouette, in 'deadly precision' and 'deadly earnest'. A tincture of death seems often to colour numerical matters: precision or finality themselves suggest that our days are numbered. We speak of a 'dead certainty'. I do not wish to depose that the invention of zero has argued for a death instinct, but I would affirm that much popular phraseology suggests that the simplest conception of death provides one standard for any construction whether of the intellect or of the imagination, be it a work of art, a philosophical system, or a machine. Any estimation or judgement will aim at the decisiveness that has been already attributed to the incidence of death.

The static, of course, or what approaches to

the static, can the more easily be *measured*, at any rate by the senses. Thus we read in huge white letters on some roads: 'Dead Slow', a command issued in the interests of survival. There is a Bergsonian meaning whereby the intellect, in contrast with the so-called flux of instinctual life, transposes that flux to form, as far as possible with 'deadly precision', a construction that rivals perhaps the one of ordered stone. This reminds me of the verb 'to calculate' which is derived from the Latin word meaning a pebble, once used for calculations.

And now for a brief time I want you to listen to some words, employing a rather different attention: as well as to the content I want you to listen to the sound. Many phrases become clichés because their sound is very appropriate to their sense: indeed, that must ever be the case to some degree. I think all such felicity has common character, a combination of qualities present in what we name the Form in art; common, in fact, I hazard to guess, in all notable expressiveness, first, of course, as I have said, in language itself. Innumerable examples offer themselves. I will therefore take the cliché: 'odd assortment'. You will perhaps agree that the phrase progresses and settles acoustically after the sandwiching of the transmuted o of 'odd' in the middle of 'assortment', a settlement consonant with the sense; more than consonant, for it vivifies, even creates, the sense. 'Assortment' has a clipped, crisp suggestion that encircles a vague meaning. It is tense and strong, and the word 'odd' with a subsidiary sense of 'unique' or 'single', levers up 'assortment', as it were, into a lean arc like the span of a bridge that curves over the multitudinous objects covered by the sense of 'assortment'. 'Odd assortment', perhaps you too feel the tense span, a single object embracing many. Anyway, you will agree that the phrase pretends to a certain precision while pointing to ill-defined objects. Thus, even when we refer to chaos, we tend to have the sense of a definite and independent and shaped object, just as we do in the case of a work of art. And again, as with the work of art, we are drawn into the orbit of this independent object, or swamped by it. More truly, though, if the right qualities are present, we lend ourselves so as to be one with them. It is my belief that in any felicitous use of words to which we can lend ourselves, not only our awareness of a denoted object *qua* object is heightened, though, as I have said, the object is chaos itself, but that the oceanic feeling comes into play,



demanding in addition an entirely different kind of object-relationship. In naming a thing we seek not only to demonstrate, to define it, to give it the full status of an object with definite limits, but also to taste, to absorb, to drink it in, so that the whole world stands qualified by that experience. Such, it seems to me, is comprehension, in part, at any rate, an aesthetic act. Accuracy, it seems, involves, rather paradoxically, a mistiness, often ludicrous or equivocal, in regard to the corporeal suggestiveness of words. But I shouldn't say 'we': I do not refer, of course, to the scientist when he is acting as a scientist, or to many uses of words which would, if they could, ignore the values of this process. One aim of the more cumbersome scientific terms is to keep the denoted object at a proper distance from the ego: and the object itself must be denied, were it possible, the aesthetic seduction of an evocative shape. (Aesthetic experience is here regarded as the occlusion of significance within the mind by means of sensuous symbols so combined as to allow of their assimilation to primary objects that have been introjected. Not only symbolic representation but sometimes strong traces of concrete thinking have a part in aesthetic form.) It is difficult to know whether exposition, at any rate, will be notably successful without the aid of a little art; and in the matter of a little art I am thinking less of what is called presentation, more of a care for sounds, particularly the avoidance of reiteration, of weak copulatives; instead, an attachment to a variation and progression of vowel sounds. As well as from sense with brevity, clarity derives from sound. One wishes it otherwise; unfortunately words have so long been at the service of basic object-relationships, however practical their usage.

I would like to examine the phrase, 'deliberate falsehood' or 'to have a sneaking sympathy with someone': but I shall now leave the subtle matter of sound-with-sense in order to provide you with more phrases that point easily to psycho-analytic mechanisms.

'Comparisons are odorous' wrote Shakespeare. We say: 'Comparisons are odious', i.e., hateful. Many phrases and words recall anal-erotism and reaction-formation. The old phrase, 'It all goes down Gutter Lane', refers to a glutton. Now, Gutter Lane in London was once inhabited chiefly by the gold- and silversmiths. It is surely very neat that 'to wash one's hands of something' means to disown, as does 'to start with a clean sheet'. Blue, of course, is the

colour opposite to that of excrement. Hence 'true blue' means unstained, and anything that should fall from a blue sky, for instance, a 'bolt from the blue', is doubly unexpected. On the other hand, 'a fit of the blues' perhaps refers to a depression over loss of good excrements. It is similarly unpleasant 'to be cleaned out' of money, very different from being 'hard up' whereby a constipated hold is largely maintained on what we have: when retention becomes impossible, the situation may 'cost a pretty penny'. We spend money at other times 'like water' or 'make a pile', a 'pot of money'. At a nearby target we 'take a pot-shot'. Among the vulgar names for money are 'filthy lucre', 'filthy pelf'. We infer possibly the strong presence of the sadistic component in that rather unkind phrase, 'the odour of sanctity', in 'browed off' or in 'bundle of resentment', a phrase of immense vividness. 'Flogging a penny' introduces a masochistic element. Another phrase is, 'gutted by fire', and we speak, perhaps unexpectedly, of someone 'smacking of the soil'. Very likely the exclamation: 'Oh fudge', in its perpetuation, belongs to this category.

I turn now to the oral position. It is odd that to 'take to one's bosom' means to marry: it goes to show that breast feeding is the fount of all good things, though it would be a cardinal mistake to regard a girl only as a 'peach'. Advertisements, of course, and in their wake, much popular culture with an intensified feeding rôle, will represent her thus. The probable root of the word 'bachelor' suggests an attendant upon cows. One may wonder how far the power to prolong a love relation, in the cherishing of the partner, is more the work of the good internal mother than a sublimation of genital love itself. There follows after the marriage a 'sumptuous feast' and a great deal of 'chronicling of small beer', 'crying over spilt milk', 'eating of humble pie', 'wholesome respect', it is to be hoped, 'upsetting the apple-cart', 'taking the cake', 'making no bones about it', (i.e., swallowing), the failure 'to mince matters', the easier for digestion, 'Dead Sea fruit', 'the opening of the flood-gates of affection', 'thirsting for someone's blood', 'sucking someone's brains'. Still, 'the apple of one's eye' may persist as such, especially if she brings 'an apple-pie order', and if there has been no question of 'stolen fruit'.

More interesting is evidence from certain words and phrases of oral sadism and masochism: 'nagging' which means 'gnawing' has



been remarked: also 'to fret' means to gnaw. I am thinking of 'to kiss the gunner's daughter', an old nautical phrase, meaning to be flogged, of names of various instruments of torture and of execution such as the 'Iron Maiden of Nuremberg' or the Elizabethan expression 'to kiss the scavenger's daughter'. We have here references to the fantasied oral counter-attack, to a very early conception, of the bad mother. She it is who shows herself a 'whited sepulchre' concealing a wealth of badness within, providing a more frightening conception, perhaps, even than the castrating father who in the course of time as partner to the 'whited sepulchre', sits on the step, a 'wolf in sheep's clothing'. 'A whited sepulchre' is surely the antithesis to the inevitable phrase for a cathedral or for any vast and stalwart building, that is to say, 'a venerable pile'.

When we were at the breast it did for most of us 'a world of good'. I wish I knew what we mean when we say something or somebody, as likely as not a person greatly cherished, is 'gone for good'. Glancing once more at the word 'express' and its derivatives, we can see that the embarrassing cliché, 'organ of the press', beloved by smaller provincial newspapers, provides equation of nipple with penis. If 'Adam's apple' shows the introjected breast in physical guise, it does not portend the comfortable enjoyment of the good object as we find it in the phrase 'like a giant refreshed', or as when we say we feel 'a different person'. In demonstration of the mechanisms of introjection, we know 'in our heart of hearts' that there are 'wheels within wheels'. We take 'a leaf out of someone's book' or 'turn over a new leaf' as if we ourselves and our objects resembled many distinct pages. The psycho-analytic view considers that 'the iron entered the soul' at a very early age. The cliché, 'the inner man', used to refer to the soul and now means the belly. Words may tend to become more abstract, but in this case the underlying compulsion towards the embodiment of thought has naively reasserted itself as it does in most slang. 'Guts' is of course used for courage, as is the parallel 'pluck' which means the lights or pluckings from butcher's meat. Undeveloped symbolism, or lack of symbolism, continues to function in the huge symbolic structure of language. As long ago as 1920, in this Journal, Ernest Jones, quoting Ferenczi, pointed to the concrete thinking implicit in obscene words and indeed in many homely terms. Anthropologists refer to numerous

societies wherein even a person's name is equated with him in a manner far more complete than we ourselves experience. The progress of language has on the whole been analytic, the disentangling into sentences of the many references contained in a word which was itself ideally suited for perhaps only one kind of occasion. Generalized or abstract terms and a simplified grammar have been evolved from a multitude of unique references. All the same, after thousands of years, words keep a graphic character: the poetic image, that is to say, the corporeal image, tinges all our bare, our would-be, prose. The power of abstraction is not only great but indispensable for understanding: nevertheless any substance that is *not* a body can be called 'a foreign body': the phrase seems inevitable in some contexts. Words are symbols. Prime symbols are of parts of the body and perhaps of whole bodies too. Developed symbolism merely retains that origin, whereas art, being a symbolic exercise in the creation of symbolic structures, insists upon it.

I wish I could say something about the strange phrase, 'much of a muchness' and 'by word of mouth' or 'eggs is eggs'. This last phrase is said to be a corruption of the mathematics demonstrator's conclusion: ' $X$  is  $X$ '. But why does the phrase continue to please anyone; is it an amplification as well as a satirical comment upon the prim satisfactions of logic? And why do we go on using such a phrase as 'cooking someone's goose for him' when we have no idea of a manifest meaning in this phrase to indicate the circumventing of that person? Doubtless it was coined for a particular occasion or, like many clichés, refers primarily to the process of some trade or to a custom. An origin can usually be cited, but what concerns us is a phrase's persistence, the strength of the currency and perhaps its sudden failure. Again, I wish I felt I understood fully the extraordinary phrase: 'he was beside himself with rage'. 'Beside' retains the original meaning of near to, on the same level: it has come to mean also 'apart from' as in: 'that is beside the point'. I think the two meanings coalesce, that the thing beside the point sits bluntly next to it, the position of the ego when one is beside oneself with rage. Rage has become the point, projected as a bad object and now sitting in the ego's place; a bad object perhaps hardly to be distinguished, in view of projective identification, from the outer object against which rage is sent. The situation is possibly the one of an identification between

destructive elements, inside and out, enacted outside, just as to be beside oneself with joy is further witness to the oceanic feeling. To be always 'beside oneself' is, of course, to be 'out of one's wits', to lack those cohesive units found in 'a man of parts' (very different from those of 'nuts'); to have lost the ego inside, the distinctiveness from objects, to be mad. A similar expression is 'abject terror' which means literally the opposite of 'entire terror,' since 'abject' signifies 'cast out', 'rejected'. We can be wiser than the objecting lexicographers. What has been cast out is doubtless the defence system of the ego and superego, so that terror, and the object that provokes it, embrace, to the neglect of the ego. 'Blank despair' may be similar. It is interesting that extreme despair is thought of as blank, i.e., white, unrelieved by the active marks of other mental states. One is reminded that white was the Imperial Chinese colour for mourning. Another cliché is 'blank amazement'.

I do not feel that anything I have said can be regarded as conclusive: but surely, in a far more intense study of words, a very rich field of investigation would be discovered, immediately to hand and so far almost untouched. Were it so, we might welcome in no very distant future a dictionary of some thousands of words and phrases and grammatical mistakes viewed psycho-analytically.

I will end with a sample of the numerous references to genital activity of one kind or another. In the rueful saying: 'a pretty kettle of fish', one divines the bad vagina seething with castrating phalli, a very different state from the one of being 'hand in glove'. 'A feather in the cap' may well be the means of 'warming the cockles of the heart'. A cockle is a boat: the phrase describes the genital act 'in a nutshell'. The word 'zest' is derived from a root that means to make a cleft, the same Greek root as the one of the word 'schizoid'. With zest one 'sows wild oats' before 'putting all one's eggs in one basket'. But 'to play the giddy goat' 'up to the hilt' may be a 'game that is not worth the candle', especially if one should find oneself

'in a cleft stick'. It would be better 'to draw in one's horns' or 'to hand on the torch'. If one fails in 'screwing up courage to the sticking point', it will be the only thing to do, though adopting a position even more unpleasant than when being 'fooled to the top of one's bent' (bent means bendableness). It is to be hoped that one does not 'cut off one's nose to spite one's face': but it is impossible fully to discuss now the 'ins and outs' of the matter.

Such phrases would be immediately interpreted—or most of them—in any public house, and I must apologize for their vulgarity. There are homosexual and sadistic references, however, which would not be admitted. Thus, 'to put a spoke into someone's wheel', 'to spike someone's guns' or even 'to go for him bald-headed' or 'to be cross as two sticks'. Helped by this last punning phrase, we may wonder whether one meaning of the Sign of the Cross may refer to submission of the son's penis to the upright penis of the father. There is an Australian bush expression: 'Don't give me the raw prawn' which means, and perhaps explains, our vaguer cliché: 'Don't try to put anything over on me'. A vivid phrase is 'to pay through the nose', i.e., to be forced to part with the precious semen, far more precious than the anal product. The interesting point is that the slang term for money, 'rhino', will have derived from the Greek word for nose, *rhinos*. In this case the psycho-analyst can easily supply the derivation, whereas the Oxford Dictionary is unwilling to make a suggestion.

Finally, to show how widespread are genital references, I will instance the phrase 'to open up a country'. The concealed meaning is clear enough: what may escape the enquirer is the vividness. For, if he searches for the derivation of the verb 'to open' he finds that the first sense is to draw up a curtain for entering. That is perhaps a dull note on which to finish, yet suitable enough if thereby I indicate once more that I have scarcely moved the edge of the veil that overlies a vast and, indeed, unending, subject.

(Received 1st November, 1956.)



# JUSTICE, AGGRESSION AND EROS

By

F. R. BIENENFELD, LONDON

In an earlier publication (4) the attempt was made to apply Freud's discoveries to the problems of justice and law in order to demonstrate that psychological trends which can be observed in infancy form the whole framework of every legal system. They do so by repeating in the relations between citizens in society the attitude of brothers and sisters to each other, and in the relations of subject to ruler the attitude of every child towards his parents.

The application of psycho-analytical thought to the field of law is rare in the literature of psycho-analysis, but by no means unknown. In his excellent book *Man, Morals and Society* (10), Flügel quotes essays and books by analysts such as F. Alexander (2, 3), Theodor Reik (50), Hesnard and Laforgue (26), all of whom discussed the idea of justice. It is remarkable, however, and has some bearing on the present theme, that nearly all analysts and other psychologists (49a) who deal with the problem of justice confine themselves to an enquiry into criminal law and the consciousness of guilt. It would appear as if the legal system consisted mainly of criminal law, and justice were therefore based on the desire and the obligation of the ruler to punish, and on the wishes of the subjects either to get rid of feelings of guilt or to satisfy their impulse to vengeance.

It is not the purpose of this paper to draw attention to the disregard by psychologists and analysts of an aspect of justice whose driving force created sections of law which are at least as vital for the survival of society and of individuals as is criminal law. This disregard and the reason for it is a problem in itself, which will not be discussed at present. In this paper, after attention has been drawn to the existence of parts of the legal system which are not based on aggression, an unusual method of investigation is suggested. Up to now psycho-analysts have verified that Freud's discoveries and the methods and observations of psycho-analysis are able to shed light on facts and developments

in the sphere of what in German, in contrast to natural science, is called 'Geisteswissenschaften,' such as sociology, political economy, the theory of art and of law (in the latter field mainly criminal law), and I myself used the same method in my book on Justice. Now another course of investigation is proposed: the existence of undeniable facts manifest in the legal systems may lead to conclusions in respect of problems on which the theory of psycho-analysis has not yet arrived at a definite view. In other words, an attempt will be made to contribute to the ego-psychology in psycho-analysis, starting from the fact that there are in being in all legal systems sections whose very existence permits of conclusions as to the driving force and the origin of the impulses which created them.

Every legal system is designed to obtain security for the individual in society, and for this end employs two methods: one in which aggression on the part of the ruler is apparent and where the laws serve mainly, though never exclusively, to achieve this end by force, by giving vent to feelings of aggression and vengeance. This part of the legal system comprises primarily criminal law and military law. The first is directed against the wrong-doer, the internal enemy of society; the second establishes the rules for the organization and operation of the aggressive forces of the community against the enemy without, who is either threatening its very existence or is an obstacle to its desire for greater glory or power. The other method used by all legal systems seeks to achieve its end by providing the subjects with the resources necessary for their existence, and not by aggression, punishment, or threats. This domain of law embraces social laws, such as social insurance, benefits for the unemployed, rationing in times of scarcity, compensation for industrial accidents where payment is made *without taking into account* the guilt either of the employer or of the worker. They thereby create rights and liabilities without

the imputation of fault, and play an outstanding part in the private law on torts, and even more in public law (5). There is a third section of the legal system in which these two elements are mixed, and it is hardly possible to distinguish whether its purpose is the defence of security by aggression and vengeance or by the means inherent in social laws. To this section belongs, for instance, civil law, with its rules governing contracts, compensation, and the making of restitution or reparation in case of broken contracts or of accidents arising from negligence (10).

It is outside the scope of this paper to explain the schemes of private or public law (4, 56, 37); it is relevant only to state that there is a vast domain of law in which punishment and aggression are of no significance, and whose purpose is to establish security by providing or distributing what is indispensable for the survival of the protected. It is permissible to assume that the very existence of such essential sections of law, which aim at security by means of support, must be based on fundamental impulses, on a certain trend in human nature which has its source in drives apparent in infancy, and in the behaviour of the parents towards those drives normally displayed after the birth of the child.

There is one fundamental objection which could be raised to this assumption. It could be maintained that social laws—the social insurance laws, the laws permitting the formation, and recognizing the legal personality, of Trade Unions, the laws regulating unemployment benefits, workmen's compensation, old age pensions, and free education—are all of recent origin. It could be pointed out that the Trade Union Movement started in the 1830s and took eighty years to be legalized, that the first social insurance laws in Europe were enacted in Germany on the initiative of Bismarck in the 1880s, that it was only recently that the Beveridge Report introduced the British Health Service, or that the idea of free elementary education was proposed by Pestalozzi no earlier than the end of the eighteenth century. If this objection were upheld it would follow that since the desire to guarantee the survival and well-being of the masses by means of support arose in a particular period of Western history, and that since the impulses which created the whole domain of social laws have been a driving force only in recent times—for the last 100 or 150 years approximately—they could not be considered to

represent a permanent and inherent feature of human nature. The appearance of these impulses would be due to historical incidents, although it would be difficult to explain whence the impulses originated and from what psychological source they gathered their enormous momentum.

The objection would not, however, be a valid one, for it fails to recognize the true course of history. For in all periods of history—in early times even more conspicuously than in our own day—security and survival through social institutions, regulations, or customs have always been the dominant aim of every legal system, and have everywhere formed one of its most essential parts in the West as well as the East. Anthropologists agree (27, 43, 44) that in primitive societies it was the prerogative and the sacred duty of the ruler, whether matriarch or patriarch, to distribute among his subjects whatever goods were available for the community and had been acquired by hunting, by war, or, after the end of the nomadic period, by cattle-breeding or agriculture. This did not follow from the principle of equality; the ruler could retain a large part as his own share and apportion more to his advisers or to magicians than to the bulk of his subjects. Every family, however, had to get a share to secure survival. If the ruler was not able to fend off starvation, this was attributed to the failure of his *mana*, and he was removed because he was unable to fulfil his chief obligation. Responsibility for the security and survival of the members of the tribe by means of support was the subject of an unchangeable and holy law, and was more important than the protection of individual possessions or even than defence against external enemies. This prime responsibility of the ruler has continued to form an essential part of every legal system in all those primitive societies which still exist to-day. The claim of every member to receive the means of survival by distribution of the common stock was his sacred natural right at that stage, and corresponded to the sacred duty of the king and all heads of families.

This natural right to a minimum of subsistence sufficient for survival continued to be recognized, after the dissolution of primitive societies, in all periods of history and in every legal or economic system. A few examples chosen at random may suffice to support this statement. In ancient Egypt, the cradle of civilization, the dreams of the Pharaoh, as reported in the Bible, of the seven well-favoured



and the seven fat-fleshed kine, and of the seven rank and the seven thin ears of corn, testify that even his sleep was haunted by his duty to keep his subjects alive by collecting and storing reserves of food against a period of famine. He was forced by his conscience excitedly to seek an interpretation of the dreams from all his priests and magicians. The proper interpretation offered by Joseph was so important that the Pharaoh made him second-in-command in Egypt because only in this way could the royal *mana* which was the source of life for his subjects be retained. In Rome (17, 47), in the time of the Empire, it was *panem et circenses* which the emperor had to provide, thereby affording the means for bodily survival of the poor and unemployed, and caring for their pleasures. Furthermore, the whole social system of Rome was based on patronage in the sense that an aristocracy destined by birth or fate to lead ought to be rich and powerful, and had the inescapable moral and legal obligation to guarantee the existence of those dependent on them. The mighty personage was bound to protect and maintain his clients, servants, freedmen or slaves, who, in turn, owed him allegiance, handed over to him their earnings, enabled him to live in accordance with his rank, and even more important, to support all of them. Even if they were allowed to retain the fruits of their labour, their possessions still legally belonged to the master. In China (39, 40, 41, 4, p. 179 f.) the head of the family, however numerous its members were and even if they lived far away from his home, was responsible for their well-being and entitled to dispose of their assets—a legal and moral principle which formed the basis of Chinese society for many thousands of years. The divine emperor was the father of his people in the same way as the head of the family distributed and dispensed the means of livelihood for all its members. In medieval times feudalism (1, 46, 55), at least in theory, resembled a pyramid, the king being the highest liege lord who entrusted fiefs to the vassals. The vassals, in turn, supplied the knights in their service with property which guaranteed their standard of living and enabled them to support all those dependent on them, and, by this system, to safeguard the maintenance of the masses. Later on, after the towns had gained in importance, every independent townsman usually belonged to a guild (23), which had to help him in times of need and scarcity of work, while he himself had the same

duty towards his subordinate journeymen and their families.

In fact, it is not the appearance of Trade Unions, old-age and unemployment benefits, and all the measures for support and survival which is surprising, and they were not introduced as a result of a sudden outbreak of humane feeling. What is surprising is the disappearance of all such institutions during some 100 to 150 years from the middle of the eighteenth century up to the end of the nineteenth. This disappearance was really due to a historical incident—the Industrial Revolution, which, in spite of all the advantages it brought about in the long run, caused in its initial stages panic, disorder, and economic chaos which all of us who were born and educated during this period felt in our youth to be the 'natural' state of society, whereas, in fact, the conditions were highly exceptional. In a panic the most self-evident desires may temporarily vanish, and only after its termination are feelings resuscitated and measures in harmony with them once more taken. Thus, after the chaos caused by the Industrial Revolution in the economic and legal sphere had been overcome—frequently by political revolutions and upheavals—the basic and eternal task of every government, that of guaranteeing the rights of the subject to survival by means of support, was re-established.

Since a vital part of the legal system in every period of history, past or present, has been dedicated to the welfare and survival of the subject with the aim of realizing security by support, and not by aggression, the psychological sources of the existence and practice of such laws must be deeply rooted in human nature—in experiences and typical situations which all human beings have to undergo in early childhood. The whole problem is closely connected with that of the psychological origin of law and justice in general, both of which are of an even more universal and eternal character.

In earliest infancy situations can be observed which are bound to give rise to direction by the mother and to conduct by the child in harmony with that direction. From birth onwards two overriding urges are prevalent in every child: for sleep and for food. The security the child enjoyed in its mother's womb and the seclusion from the outside world is preserved as far as possible by sleep for twenty out of the twenty-four hours during the first four weeks after birth (19). This is interrupted, apart from cleaning after urination and defaecation, only



by the necessity to receive food. The mother usually recognizes both desires, that for sleep and that for food, as natural and legitimate. She therefore takes care of the security and survival of the child by protecting his sleep and by producing and giving milk for feeding from her breast or, failing this, by bottle feeding.

The human child is not able to take food without the mother's assistance. When placed by her in a position to take her breast he is often reluctant on the first occasion and has to be induced by gentle force (19, 28, 45). But even if he responds readily to the invitation to take the nipple, he must first be brought into the position for sucking without, or even against, his will. By sucking, his need and his desire for food will be satisfied. Sucking, moreover, offers the first satisfaction of the erotic drive with the help of a body outside his own by bringing the erotogenous zone of the lips in contact with the erotogenous zone of the nipple (20, 63 f.). The feelings of the infant during and after sucking are usually pleasant, as may be seen from the few expressions it is able to display, or even from some activities during sucking which cannot be explained except as symptoms of love. The act of sucking is very complex (20, 28, 42, 45), and the description given of it therefore inadequate. Nevertheless, it may be stated that, in the majority of cases, the *first demand, or admonition, or advice*—howsoever it may be called—*received in life is one imposed by the mother on the infant for the purpose of his survival and accepted by him.* He does not yet respond to a law; he responds, however, to what may be described as a precursor of law.

The feelings for justice and law show five characteristic components which are only partly present when breast-feeding takes place for the first time. They all, however, make their appearance soon afterwards. These basic components are (29): first, law must express a demand or at least an advice by the ruler as to how to behave, and should have the effect of evoking a corresponding reaction by the ruled. (Authors who deny the element of command in law (34, 7a, 18) do so from a strictly legal standpoint, and do not intend to explain the psychological source which led to the establishment of justice and law. The 'doctrine of pure law' (34, 7a) which excludes all sociological and psychological elements from the *notion* of law does not deny that commands play an outstanding part in the *origin of the feelings* for law.) Secondly, inseparable from justice and law is a

certain amount of threatening, and, if threats have not the desired effect of overcoming resistance, a certain amount of force. Thirdly, law must be of a permanent character; if not practised in typical situations repeatedly, consistently, and in accordance with fixed principles as a matter of course, actions or decisions of the ruler are based on isolated considerations, that is on discretion and not on law. Fourthly, the psyche of both ruler and subject must be pervaded by a strong feeling that what the ruled ought to receive, be it benefits or penalties, is *due* to him, although the two may not be in agreement as to *what* is due. Finally, in law and justice there must be two parties, the ruler who dispenses them, and the ruled who voluntarily or by constraint accepts them. These five psychological components of the feeling for justice and law—the demand to behave, force, permanent rules, the granting and receiving of what is due, and the presence of two parties, ruler and ruled—are all apparent in the situation of suckling.

The first element, the admonition or demand to behave in a prescribed manner, is inherent in the mother's action of bringing the suckling into the appropriate position without his will—which action in itself means the application of a certain amount of force—and, following this, in the invitation to take the nipple. If the child happens to be reluctant to do so, particularly on the first occasion, the mother forces it into his mouth, and if he sometimes falls asleep during sucking without having fed sufficiently, she may awaken him by a tender tap (45). In this she resorts again to the second element of law, to force, gentle though it is. In the first few weeks or months after birth the mother may even interrupt the child's sleep for the act of feeding (45) and then again gentle force is exercised to overcome apathy or reluctance. The suckling, too, having been brought into the position to suck without his will, experiences in a vague way the influence of force, and may experience in the same vague way the first inkling of the advantage of giving way and obeying which in spite of initial unpleasantness leads to, and ends in, the enjoyable act of sucking.

These two elements of the feeling for justice which are present from the very beginning in the act of sucking do not, however, bring any law into existence on the first occasion, because other essential components are still lacking. They too soon make their appearance through



the regular repetition of the event. When the child is fed six times a day during the first four weeks and four times during the next months in a more or less regular rhythm (9, 14) necessitated by the refilling of the breast and by the temporary disappearance of hunger, sucking becomes an established institution for many months, that is, for what is an eternity in the life of the new-born child. The concerted actions of mother and child create by their natural repetition the first rule of, and rule in, life which is imposed by the mother and accepted by the child in the sure expectation that the rule will be permanently applied in the future.

Nearly all philosophers of law past and present agree that another fundamental element of justice consists in the obligation of the ruler to give to everyone his due, corresponding with the demand of every subject to receive his due: according to the old maxim of Simonides (24) *suum cuique* is the essence of justice. Unfortunately, this tenet is of a merely formal character and contains no statement of *what* is due. The merit of my book *Rediscovery of Justice* (4, 198 sq.) may have been its attempt to clarify the minimum content of what is due to every human being as his natural right in our present age. It is not proposed to discuss the problem that rulers and ruled are frequently at loggerheads as to *what* is due. For the present purpose it is sufficient to state that the ruler's feeling of being under an obligation to grant everyone his due and the corresponding feeling on the subject's part of being entitled to receive his due constitute a feature of justice which is never absent. In the situation of sucking it is present in the mother's mind from the very beginning; she feels it is due to her child that he be fed by her and that it is her duty to grant him his due. This does not imply that mothers do not have unconscious and sometimes even conscious drives of aggression against the child or unconscious wishes for his death (11, 14, 16, 30, 32, 33, 36, 37, 38, 52). These aggressive urges, opposed as they are to the urge to feed, are frequently responsible for the mother's incapacity to feed in spite of her conscious desire to do so, and may lead to serious mental disturbances. Even in cases, however, where aggressive impulses lead to the employment of wet-nurses or to bottle feeding, the mother finds consolation in her belief that she has given the child, *albeit* by substitution, what is due to him.

The suckling himself, in spite of the fact that he has not yet developed an ego (25), has in

any case a feeling of what is due to him, perhaps an even stronger feeling than in later life, since in the earliest period all emotions are much stronger and are not restricted or regulated by reason. This feeling is apparent and expressed in distinct protests—hunger cries as Gesell calls them (19) when occasionally the child's expectation of being fed at the accustomed time is disappointed.

Lastly, even at this stage, there are two parties involved in the rule. The mother is alive to her rôle as a ruler in the business of sucking; she is conscious of her duty to guide the child, if necessary by gentle force, and of her obligation to grant him his due. Unconsciously she may feel that there is no other person present but herself, because the child is still a part of her, her own flesh and blood, and not yet separate from her (12, 49); consciously she has to admit that he has desires and a destiny of his own. The child, though not an ego during the first period and not distinguishing between himself and the outer world (25, 13), identifies himself with the mother, with her good or bad breast, by the processes of projection and introjection (26a, 31, 36, 37, 38). There are therefore in his vague conception of the events two persons present: he is the omnipotent ruler in his identification with the guiding power of the mother, and at the same time he is the ruled as to his emotions.

Nevertheless, although all the elements of law and justice are apparent in the rules established for sucking, it may well be asked whether and why these rules for survival by support are the *earliest* rules to come into force. The aggressive impulses of the suckling, as Sigmund Freud, Anna Freud, and Melanie Klein emphasize (12, 14, 15, 16, 36, 37, 38), are tremendously powerful. Why, therefore, are not criminal laws, the very core of which is aggression, the first and basic laws to come into existence, the more so as in the life of every human being aggression precedes love?

The answer is that two periods in the functioning of aggression during the first year of life must be carefully differentiated. One is that of resistance against unpleasant demands of the mother; these demands are made at a later period of infancy, mainly at the time of weaning and cleanliness training. They meet with resistance from the child, frequently give rise to tantrums, and owing to their unpleasant character and the sacrifices they entail, strengthen the impulse of aggression against the mother.



At the same time the mother's aggressive impulses may also be increased by the necessity to break down the infant's resistance. It is this kind of aggression on the child's part which is combated by counter-measures and often by punishment. Its appearance and its subsequent suppression by the mother are the main source of criminal law. This aggression, however, provokes rules several months *after* the rules for sucking—and thereby the earliest law for survival—have been firmly established.

The other and earlier period of aggression sets in immediately after birth, and is based on a comprehensible biological instinct. The infant has to go through new, dangerous, and highly unpleasant experiences at the beginning of life, such as the trauma of birth, the terrifying changes in temperature, light, noises, disturbances of breathing, and many others. All these events are ascribed by the suckling (and by adults in primitive societies) in a vague way to hostile forces outside and inside himself, which at this stage means the same thing. The child's aggressive urge at this earliest period aims at removing his anxiety and at finding instinctively security by counter-attacks or by outbursts of fury against imagined attacks of an imagined enemy (42). Crying and tantrums, which are expressions of his aggression, are his only means of calling for protection and security; they are cries for help, support, and survival. They are understood as such by the mother, and do not usually incur even gentle punishment. On the contrary, the mother normally does everything she can to discover and eliminate the cause of the unpleasure which led to tantrums and prolonged crying. She rocks the child to assure him of the presence of a protective power and to replace his feelings of extreme discomfort by pleasurable experiences. She gives him extra warmth if she thinks his fury is caused by cold. It is highly probable, as Melanie Klein and her followers have impressively described (26a, 30, 31, 36, 37, 38), that the suckling nonetheless sees in the same mother who represents his only bridge to the outside world also the cause of his torments, and that he may desire to destroy her. His actions to this end are, however, not taken seriously, and even if they are recognized as attacks, are generally thought to be somewhat tragicomic. They do not normally call forth at this early stage any aggressive or punitive measures on the mother's part. The child is left free to urinate or defaecate as he wants, and to make his futile attempts to

bite or to destroy. None of these activities leads to countermeasures or gives rise to the creation of rules. Their result is frequently to induce actions on the mother's part which again, like sucking, aim at protecting the child against real or imaginary dangers threatening a helpless being. Though parental attitudes show many variations (7), suppression of aggression on the child's part rarely leads to the introduction of rules at the earliest stage and accordingly does not produce criminal law at this period. Removal of anxiety, security by means of help and support are at this period normally the ruler's main aim and the subject of the first rules and the earliest laws.

Ernest Jones in his basic investigation into 'Fear, Guilt and Hate' (32) has illuminated the problem of guilt by demonstrating that a pre-ideational anxiety (*Urangst*) exists from the very beginning of life and creates different phases of guilt feeling in the course of early development. His observations and conclusions are not intended to deal with the aim and attitude of the mother or with the urge for reparation, and they appear to be compatible with the description given above. Melanie Klein and others (30, 31, 36, 37, 38, 52), though emphasizing the process of introjection of the good mother at the earliest stage, stress simultaneously, and even more emphatically, the enormous importance of an impulse to make reparation which is created by the intense feeling of the suckling three months after birth and subsequently to have hurt and destroyed the mother by his aggressive drive; thus he wants to repair and revive her. No criticism (6, 10, 21, 56) of her observations is intended; it may be indicated, however, that, even if fully accepted, they may lead to divergent conclusions.

If the urge to make reparation for damage caused constituted an essential and effective force of the human mind at the earliest stage, and if its impetus were so conspicuous, it would have been bound to build up an essential part of all legal systems, as the aggressive urge did in forming criminal law or the impulse to support in creating social law. In fact, an impulse to make reparation is hardly apparent in any law. At present, it is true, the restoration of the defeated enemy is an object of international politics. The attitude of the victorious Powers is not, however, based on a desire to make reparation; its main result is the renunciation of reparations which victors have felt entitled to demand throughout the course of history. It



is a matter of interpretation whether the custom of some primitive tribes of mourning over the foes they have killed and the sacrifices to the spirits of slain enemies could be attributed to an impulse to make reparation, or rather to the urge to console these spirits and avert their vengeance. There is, of course, in every legal system an important part—the law of Torts—dedicated to the regulation of reparation, compensation, and restitution. This part, however, was not created by the desire of the perpetrator of the faulty action to *make* restitution, but, on the contrary, by the desire of the victim to *receive* restitution—and this desire alone is really a fundamental psychological urge, as is shown by the illuminating observations of Kelsen (35) and Roechlin (53).

Only small traces, if any, of an urge to *make* reparation can be found in legal institutions. The conclusion is therefore permissible that the strength of an early and basic urge of this kind in infancy, which would have led, by necessity, to corresponding universal legal concepts seems to have been somewhat exaggerated.

The further undeniable fact that in the development of legal tenets guilt was set up as a condition of responsibility on the demand of those who suffered damage, and not on that of those who caused it, also permits some doubt as to the validity of the hypothesis that a feeling of guilt pervades the mind of an infant three to six months after birth to such an extent that the urge to make reparation is dominant. Normally a feeling of guilt arises only when a rule has been violated (49a, p. 344). 'There is no morality' as P. Schilder (54) convincingly stated, 'which is not superimposed by an executive power. Law and morals are, therefore, identified at this stage of development.' At this earliest stage it may happen that rules are imposed on the suckling by an aggressive tendency on the part of the mother (7, 20, 34, 36, 45), as is the case when punctuality of sucking at regular intervals is required too strictly and the child is left hungry for a time in spite of his hunger cries. Mothers may also frequently become impatient and thereby show their disapproval of certain behaviour on the part of the suckling (7). Owing to the empathy between mother and child (49) the suckling may feel in a vague way that his behaviour is disapproved of by the mother (11, 12, 45). If the mother frequently disapproves, the child may realize that a rule was imposed upon him and that he has broken the rule. As a result a rudiment of guilt feeling

may arise; even so, there is a difference between the rules given for sucking and those which give vent to some aggression on the part of the mother. In the act of sucking there is normally a concerted and organized action of mother and child which leads to the satisfaction of them both. The child accepts the rule joyfully, while rules created by the aggression of the mother evoke his resistance and do not usually at this stage lead to counter-measures to break that resistance. It is doubtful whether the breaking of a rule which is not accepted and does not lead to actions on the ruler's part for its realization can create a feeling of guilt causing an urge for reparation. It is conceivable and probable that a rudiment of guilt feeling exists in the psyche of the suckling; it is not proved, however, and not probable, that this rudiment could create an overwhelming urge to make reparation.

These considerations lead directly to the last problem to be discussed, namely the origin and the influence of the superego or of conscience, which is responsible for the establishment of morals, law and justice (11, 14, 15, 33, 36, 38, 48). The superego—or a precursor of the superego (9, p. 102)—comes into existence earlier than was originally taught. The ego is not apparent at the very beginning of life (11, 12, 25); it gains in strength during the first year after birth in continuous close connexion with the superego. From the outset the suckling identifies himself with the mother by the processes of introjection and projection. He takes over, therefore, the rulings of the good mother who cares for his survival by support and protects him against dangers; by identification the benign image of the good mother and her advice becomes a fundamental part of his superego. At the same time he ascribes his sufferings to the bad mother who also has tremendous power, and thereby another part of his superego is something of a devil. There is, nevertheless, a difference between the two parts or elements of the superego; the benign ego-ideal enforces pleasant rules in the very first weeks after birth; the cruel superego—at this stage—does not create effective rules. Several months later prohibitive rules are effectively imposed upon the infant during weaning or cleanliness training or, maybe, by restricting auto-erotic satisfaction. The influence of the father also increases, and matriarchy which so far has governed the life of the infant is partly replaced by patriarchy with its much harder rules. As Freud stated,

the Oedipus complex by the prohibitions connected with it creates, and contributes to, the formation of the cruel side of the superego (14, 15, 33, 48). The fundamental fact, however, remains and should be kept in mind that the benign part of the ego-ideal of the mother creates effective rules first and retains its basic influence in the later life of the individual and of society. In prayer the cries for help of the suckling repeat themselves and reappear in the silent invocations even of the agnostic in moments of despair which, against his will, are directed to a supreme benevolent Power.

To sum up and to conclude: the superego comes into existence at the same time as the ego. The infant incorporates the benign mother as part of himself, and accepts her rules and advice as his ego-ideal. Several months afterwards he takes over as another part of his superego under protests and resistance the severe rules imposed on him, whose infringement may lead to punishment. Like the ego, both parts of the superego form, after many difficulties have been overcome, a unity which is very frequently unhomogeneous and unhar-

monious (33, 33a, 48). Law and justice due to the superego owe their origin and strength to Eros and aggression (11, 14, 15, 16, 33, 33a, 38, 48). Eros, however, created the *first* effective rules, and for this reason a most vital part of the legal and social order is based on his influence. Morals too are composed of two elements (14, 15, 16, 33, 48): that which calls for cruel measures against oneself, against one's fellow-men and against enemies, and the other which demands selflessness, love, sacrifice for others, and pity for oneself. In spite of all wars, all persecutions, all famines, of the atomic bomb, of the suppression of natural rights in many places and at all periods, security by means of support has, nevertheless, been established to such an extent that in unhappy Europe alone the population has increased from about 100 million in 1900 to 250 million to-day, and the population of the world to about 2,500 million. Eros thereby shows his overwhelming power, even though the momentum of his impetus may frequently lead to increased unhappiness for many. The reappearance of social laws is but a symptom of the strength of Eros.

#### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1) ADAMS, G. B. 'Feudalism.' *Encyclopedia Britannica* (edition of 1946), 10, 964 sq.
- (2) ALEXANDER, F. 'Remarks about the Relation of Inferiority Feelings to Guilt Feelings.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 19, 1938.
- (3) — and HEALY, WM. *Roots of Crime*. (New York: Knopf, 1935.)
- (4) BIENENFELD, F. R. *Rediscovery of Justice*. (London: Allen & Unwin, 1947.)
- (5) — *Die Haftungen ohne Verschulden*. (Berlin-Wien: Springer, 1933.)
- (6) BRIERLEY, M. *Trends in Psycho-Analysis*. (London: Hogarth, 1951.)
- (7) COLEMAN, R. W., KRIS, E., and PROVENCE, S. 'The Study of Variations of Early Parental Attitudes.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child.*, 8, 20 sq.
- (7a) EBENSTEIN, W. *The Pure Theory of Law*. (Madison: Univ. Wisconsin Press, 1944.)
- (8) EHRENZWEIG, ALBERT A. *Psychoanalysis of Negligence*, North-Western Univ. Law Rev. 47.
- (9) FENICHEL, O. *The Psychoanalytic Theory of Neuroses*.
- (10) FLUGEL, J. C., *Man, Morals and Society*. (London, 1945; Penguin ed., 1955.)
- (11) FREUD, ANNA (1949). 'Aggression in Relation to Emotional Development.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 3.
- (12) — (1954). 'Psychoanalysis and Education,' *ibid.*, 9.
- (13) — (1953). 'Some Remarks on Infant Observation,' *ibid.*, 8.
- (14) FREUD, S. *Beyond the Pleasure Principle*, Standard Ed., 18.
- (15) — *Group Psychology and the Analysis of the Ego*, *ibid.*, 18.
- (16) — *Civilisation and its Discontents*.
- (17) FRIEDLÄNDER, L. *Sittengeschichte Roms*, 1. (Leipzig, 1901.)
- (18) FRIEDMANN, W. *Legal Theory*, 3rd ed. (London: Stevens, 1953.)
- (19) GESELL, A. *Infant and Child in the Culture of Today*.
- (20) GLOVER, E. *On the Early Development of the Mind*, 1. (London: Imago Publ. Co., 1956.)
- (21) — (1945) 'Examination of the Klein System of Child Psychology.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 1.
- (22) GRODDECK, G. *The Book of the It*. (London: Vision Press, 1950.)
- (23) GROSS, CHARLES. 'Guild.' *Encyclopedia Britannica*, edition of 1946, 10.
- (24) HAMBURGER, M. *The Awakening of Western Legal Thought*. (London: Allen & Unwin, 1942.)
- (25) HARTMANN, H. (1956). 'Notes on the Reality Principle.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child.*, 11.
- (26) HESNARD, A., and LAFORGUE, R. 'Les Processus d'autopunition.' *Rev. Française de Psychoanal.*, 4.



- (26a) HEIMAN, P. 'Introjection and Projection' (in) M. Klein. *Developments in Psycho-analysis*.
- (27) HOCART, A. M. *Kingship*. (London: Watts, 1941.)
- (28) HOFFER, W. (1949). 'Mouth, Hand, and Ego-Integration.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 3.
- (29) HOLLAND, E. T. *The Elements of Jurisprudence*, 13th ed. (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1924.)
- (30) ISAACS, S. *Childhood and After*. (London: Kegan Paul, 1948.)
- (31) — and HEIMANN, P. 'Regression' (in) M. Klein. *Developments in Psycho-Analysis*.
- (32) JONES, ERNEST (1929). 'Fear, Guilt and Hate.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 10.
- (33) — (1926). 'The Origin and Structure of the Super-Ego.' *Int. J. Psycho-Anal.*, 7, 303 sq.
- (33a) — 'The Genesis of the Super-Ego' (in) *Papers on Psycho-Analysis*.
- (34) Kelsen, H. *General Theory of Law and State*, 1945.
- (35) — *Society and Nature*. (London: Kegan Paul, 1946.)
- (36) KLEIN, MELANIE. 'The Early Development of Conscience in the Child' (in) S. Lorand, *Psychoanalysis To-day*. (London: Allen & Unwin, 1948.)
- (37) — 'On the Theory of Anxiety and Guilt' (in) *Developments in Psychoanalysis*. (London: Hogarth, 1952.)
- (38) — and RIVIERE, JOAN. *Love, Hate and Reparation*. (London: Hogarth, 1953.)
- (39) LANG, O. *Chinese Family and Society*. (New Haven: Yale U.P., 1946.)
- (40) LEVY, M. T. *The Family Revolution in Modern China*. (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard Univ. Press, 1949.)
- (41) LIN YUTANG. *The Importance of Living*. (London: Heinemann, 1938.)
- (42) McDougall, WILLIAM. *An Outline of Psychology*, 13th ed. (London: Methuen, 1949.)
- (43) MALINOWSKI, B. *Crime and Custom in Savage Society*. (London: Kegan Paul, 1932.)
- (44) — *The Foundation of Faith and Morals*.
- (45) MIDDLEMORE, M. P. *The Nursing Couple*. (London: Cassell, 1941.)
- (46) MITTEIS, H. *Der Staat des Hohen Mittelalters*, 2nd ed., 1944. Boehlaus Nachf.
- (47) MOMMSEN, TH. 'Die Römische Clientel' (in) *Römische Forschungen*, 1864, 1.
- (48) MONEY-KYRLE, R. E. *Psychoanalysis and Politics*. (London: Duckworth, 1951.)
- (49) OLDEN, CH. 'On Adult Empathy with Children.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 8, 153.
- (49a) PIAGET, J. *The Moral Judgment of the Child*. (London: Routledge, 1932.)
- (50) REIK, TH. *Geständniszwang und Strafbedürfnis*. (Vienna: Psychoanal. Verlag, 1925.)
- (51) RIVIERE, JOAN, and KLEIN, MELANIE. *Love, Hate and Reparation*. (London: Hogarth, 1953.)
- (52) — 'General Introduction' in: Melanie Klein and others, *Developments in Psycho-analysis*. (London: Hogarth, 1952.)
- (53) ROECHLIN, G. 'Loss and Restitution.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 8, 1953.
- (54) SCHILDER, P. 'Problems of Crime' in: S. Lorand, *Psychoanalysis To-day*. (London: Allen & Unwin, 1948.)
- (55) STEPHENSON, C. *Mediaeval Feudalism*. (New York: Cornell Univ. Press, 1942.)
- (56) ZETZEL, E. R. 'An Approach to the Relation between Concept and Contact in Psycho-analytic Theory.' *Psychoanal. Study of the Child*, 11, 1956.

(Received 15 December, 1956.)

## BOOK REVIEWS

*On the Early Development of Mind.* By E. Glover, M.D. Selected Papers on Psycho-analysis: Vol. I. (London: Imago Publishing Company Ltd., 1956. Pp. 483. 45s.)

In his preface to this first volume of selected papers, Dr. Glover once again proclaims his scientific credo: he will not accept any theory that is not consonant with clinical observations, respectful of psycho-biological probability and continuous with the basic concepts of psycho-analysis. Once again, he thunders against the 'hypothetical reconstructions' of early development and 'the moulding of theory in accordance with individual speculations'. He is (and perhaps this is a national characteristic) a fundamentalist, however much he may talk of 'breaking new ground' or tease the student for his 'virginal' reaction to theory or for 'a tendency to regard it like the Ark of the Covenant as a sacred untouchable structure'.

He openly hopes for the victory of the orthodox side (ambivalent though he feels towards it) because 'Freudian principles are still vital to the development of psycho-analysis'. The general impression conveyed is one of a deep and abiding devotion to psycho-analysis as conceived by Freud and a desire to see it develop through evolution and not revolution. He seems only too ready to observe that there is nothing new under the psycho-analytical sun. What is new is not true or else it is old. He remarks on the frequent bursts of exultation on the part of newcomers over apparently fundamental discoveries ('a little more reading may, however, lead to the rather dashing realization that the discovery is one of Freud's accepted observations') and he recommends them to 'constant browsing in his (i.e. Freud's) earlier works before proceeding to publish discoveries'. He insists that 'since the death of Freud in 1939 no advances of importance have been made in the field of psycho-analysis in Great Britain', and that 'a survey of so-called progress in psycho-analysis during the past twenty years shows conclusively that it still consists for the most part of giving body to the skeletal structure set up by Freud'. Conclusively to whom? one might ask.

The articles in the book are uneven in quality and content. They are general articles, classificatory articles, and metapsychology. The general articles have to do with the past and present of psycho-analysis, the training of its practitioners, and the hopes and fears the author entertains for its future. Here he is at his best, the doyen of all training analysts. He describes the many and varied defences

against the psychological approach and he warns against the obsessional therapist, the most dangerous of all, who always seeks to preserve the *status quo* and who, despite his talent for 'archaic psychic dialects' is liable to exact toll for his gift in the form of refractory results. He is also, alas, antipathetic to the average psychiatrist who 'has neither the education nor the cultural background necessary for psycho-analytical research'. May we not claim to-day an increasing number of psychiatrists who are scientifically literate, or are we confusing, as the author thinks, science with magic? He reminds us of the exhortative, persuasive and sometimes negative, organically-minded physicians, who once 'drew the dyspeptic spinster's teeth, removed the unconscious homosexual's appendix, scoured the conversion hysteric's uterus, purged the latent paranoid hypochondriac's bowels, and injected all and sundry with vaccines or glandular extracts'. To-day, when Harley Street again resounds to 'a hum of admonition punctuated by firm slamming of doors', with the endocrinologist standing on the very pinnacle of psychiatry, this amounts almost to blasphemy! At his worst, he becomes over-systematic and classificatory, and reading becomes tedious. It seems very doubtful to me whether his elaborate classifications will ever lead to any useful end. Psychiatrists will find the book too analytical and analysts too precise for their vague diagnostic purposes.

Looking back at his earlier essays in metapsychology, Dr. Glover comments on their naiveté but includes them for their historical interest. His main theoretical contributions are on orality in its many different forms (it is interesting to observe how fascinated is this gifted verbalizer with the oral stage of development) and the justly famous nuclear theory of ego development. 'One of our enthusiastic and skilled laboratory psychologists' (colleagues in the medical section of the B.P.S. may not recognize the celebrity in this guise) is quoted as saying 'all that the Goldman-Eisler study has done is to confirm in a very impressive manner Abraham and Glover's original observation of a correlation' (regarding the oral character). What analyst to-day would not be prepared to die for such scientific approval? However, Dr. Glover is not so flattered that he cannot castigate Professor Eysenck for his lack of a close acquaintance with the text of the original papers or with the works of Jung (who had a prior claim to the introversion-extraversion typology).

It is surprising how closely the historical development of the author's thought reflects that of psycho-analysis, so that in these pages we can live through



many of the trials and tribulations that punctuated the early days of the movement. A fine example of his critical sensitivity is offered to us by the reproduction of two reviews of the same book (Freud's *Hemmung*) separated by a gap of twelve years. The first gives a fairly subdued account of the book's scope and the climate of analytical opinion in which it was engendered. The second review is much more authoritative, and whilst praising the 'remarkable book' and Freud's capacity to revise his own theory, severely analyses its 'disjointedness', which was attributed to the 'old-fashioned nature' of the clinical material, the 'old-fashioned classification' of phobias, and to the neglect of the projective-introjective mechanisms, to which Glover, by this time, was deeply committed.

If the content has changed only slightly over the years, the style has changed hardly at all, and in this case the style is very much the man, pointed, tight and pungent. One can hardly forbear from quoting the many felicities of expression that adorn these pages, viz. 'a tendency to drowsiness during the dog-days of an analysis' (what analyst cannot recall some of these when he lay becalmed in the doldrums of a stubborn resistance?) and again, when speaking, almost rhapsodically, of the babe at the breast with its 'mystifying appreciation of two domes each like a face with an eye in the middle (? the source of the Cyclops legend) . . . a circumambient whiteness, a cosmic vantage point of brown. . . . (This is not psycho-biology; this is poetry!) . . . At times when the nipple is cracked there is mingled with milk a taste of blood.' What a picture of infantile savagery and barbarism do those last three words succeed in conjuring up!

His mastery of language is displayed especially in his attack upon concepts or opponents. For example, of the part-object he writes 'a specious but totally misleading concept . . . which has debauched so much of recent psycho-analytical thinking'; of counter-transference, 'towards which, indeed, there has been recently manifested a degree of almost fetishistic over-estimation'; of restitution, 'devotees to restitution-psychology, of whom there are not a few in this country, should note that Freud himself is the Father of Restitution-psychology'. Against opponents he is ruthless. His favourite target remains the 'neo-Jungianism', which is described as 'a pseudo-mystical type of religious psycho-biology'. At times his pen runs away with him, and the style becomes manneristic and slightly ludicrous, as for example when he talks of 'a sub-ludicrous, and as for example when he talks of 'a sub-ludicrous, acute inflammation of all his relations to reality'; or the 'sudden pallor of character indicates an internal drenching psychic hæmorrhage'.

His picture of child analysis is clearly influenced by this same militant viewpoint. Nothing worthy while has been happening in the study of the child, apart from some beginnings in the psychology of the preconscious; twelve volumes of the *Psycho-*

*analytical Study of the Child* are thus committed to oblivion. With regard to child development his views give rise to a certain uneasiness. He seems caught up in verbal concepts. He describes normal development in terms of a psychosis-neurosis pattern—normal psychosis and normal neurosis. The child is sequentially schizophrenic, with or without melancholic elements, paranoid, obsessional, and finally hysterical. Any accentuation of anxiety may lead to an abnormal (clinical) neurosis or psychosis. The reasons why these psychotic reactions have not been recognized (even by Freud) is that we are prone to think of psychosis in adult clinical terms, because we are reluctant to reactivate the memory in ourselves, and because we have sentimental feelings about the child. It is this sort of thesis and argument that the clinical psychiatrist finds incomprehensible and 'maddening' (probably an infantile psychotic reaction but not, mark you, the reanimation of a 'position'). We have all been 'larval psychotics' since infancy, and that is why we turn out to be so normal; the catch-phrase to all this is: 'no adult normality without an infantile "psychosis"'. The psychiatrist may bite his fingernails, but we know what Dr. Glover thinks of the psychiatrist.

Finally, a word about the title, which is a bit misleading. I have already met one irate reader who purchased the book on the strength of its title and then felt she had been sold a pup in that 'mind' for her was in no way synonymous with the psycho-analytical mental apparatus. While sharing her view about this, I have advised her to read it diligently and experience the same pleasure and enlightenment gained by the reviewer. I cannot refrain, however, from adding one deliberate misquotation from Tennyson, which provides, I feel, an appropriate comment on some aspects of the book.

'The old order changeth, giving place to new,  
And Freud fulfils himself in many ways  
Lest one good custom should corrupt the world.'  
E. J. Anthony.

*The Trickster.* By Paul Radin, with commentaries by Karl Kerényi and C. G. Jung. (London: Routledge, 1956. Pp. xi + 211. 21s.)

This book by the American anthropologist, Paul Radin, is of importance to psycho-analysts. It describes the American Indian version of one of the most basic of all human myths—the myth of the trickster. The trickster is a primitive being with a dual character—he is sly and stupid at the same time. His slyness shows in his playing pranks and cunning tricks on others. His stupidity expresses itself in jesting and buffoonery which causes him to look ridiculous and to be laughed at. This character appears in myths of all types; he is epitomized by Hermes in Greek mythology and by Till Eulenspiegel in the Middle Ages. He is the Court Jester, the in-



fantile cunning and funny character. He encourages the whole of nature to laugh at his antics, but at the same time is engaged in sly and destructive pursuits.

In the North American Indian myth—particularly that of the Winnebago tribe described by Dr. Radin—the trickster takes the form of a grotesque individual, possessing huge digestive organs and huge sexual organs; he combines some of the characteristics of a human being with added characteristics of animals and of a god. He has no conscious control over his activities. He has a massive appetite—both oral and sexual—but this insatiable appetite is never satisfied in any of the stories. He is actively concerned with trying to play sly and cunning tricks upon others, to fool them and dupe them, but his tricks usually recoil upon himself so that he appears as a mere buffoon and a butt of jokes and laughing.

At the same time, along with his sly cunning and his jesting buffoonery, the trickster attempts to create goodness in the world. He is both creator and destroyer, and his activities finally result in his becoming a being not unlike a man. He is so split that his left hand does not know what his right hand is doing; he carries out his destructive and his creative activities simultaneously without one part being aware of what the other is doing. This combination of creativity and of sly destructiveness, Dr. Kerényi points out in his commentary, is very familiar in mythology. It is not unlike, for example, the relationship between Prometheus and Epimetheus—Prometheus the creator of man and the giver of fire; Epimetheus his brother, the fool, the stupid one who marries Pandora and brings trouble (and hope) to the world.

Psycho-analysts will recognize the play of some of the most primitive unconscious phantasies in this myth, and herein lies the significance of the book. Splitting is described in its most deeply unconscious forms. There is the operation of the life instinct and the death instinct side by side; appetite is voracious and insatiable. The Trickster's use of slyness and cunning on the one hand, and stupidity on the other, as a means of maintaining the separateness of good and bad objects, and omnipotent control over them, contain revealing parallels to Mrs. Klein's descriptions of paranoid infantile anxieties.

The myth itself is well described by Dr. Radin, and Dr. Kerényi's comparisons with Greek and medieval mythology are most enlightening.

Elliott Jaques.

*Sex in Christianity and Psycho-analysis.* By William Graham Cole. (London: Allen & Unwin, 1957. Pp. xiv + 329. 21s.)

This book by an American Protestant minister is unlikely to interest psycho-analysts. Competent, readable, and unprovocative in the manner of the *Reader's Digest*, it will appeal to those who prefer ready answers to pointed questions.

Mr. Cole's method is to give digests of the views on sex held by some eminent Christians from St. Paul to the present day, which he follows by digests of the views of Freud and some other psycho-analysts. In the final chapter he attempts 'a critical reconstruction of Christian interpretations of sex'.

H. J. Home.

*The Object Relations Technique.* By Herbert Phillipson. Foreword by J. D. Sutherland. (London: Tavistock Publications, 1955. Pp. 224. 21s. Text together with the 12 plates of Test Material 3 gns. Test Material only 52s. 6d.)

The book, which explains this projective test devised by Mr. Phillipson and his colleagues, is dedicated to Henry A. Murray, the explorer of personality. This is an acknowledgement of the fact that the new technique had its origins in Murray's Thematic Apperception Test—the 'T.A.T.' The T.A.T. consists of four series of pictures, one for boys, one for girls, one for men, and one for women, about which the subject is asked to tell stories. There are human figures in most of these pictures and their sex and age are usually recognizable; the situations in which they are shown are more or less ambiguous; the drawings are mostly in the style of popular illustrated story-magazines.

The Object Relations Technique (O.R.T.) has a similar purpose, but differs from the T.A.T. in many respects. It consists only of 12 plates and one blank card which may be given to subjects of both sexes and a very wide range of ages. There are three sets of four cards, each set presenting one person, two and three persons, and a larger group. In the first set, the drawing is in light shading and the environmental setting is not defined; in the second, the shading is dark, almost black, with the environmental setting clearly defined, and in the third, the figures appear in a detailed environmental setting with the outlines lightly sketched and with different colours introduced.

The human forms in the first and second set of the O.R.T. are for the most part presented so that their sex, age, and race cannot be determined from the drawing; they bear a vague resemblance to the statues of Mr. Henry Moore and some other contemporary sculptors; those in the third set are only a little less ambiguous. This ambiguity is, in fact, the outstanding advantage of the test. The subject, asked to describe the situation in the picture and make up a brief story about it, is almost obliged to begin by finding identities for the characters. The ambiguous picture stimulates a special type of day-dream which can, of course, be studied psycho-analytically.

Extreme ambiguity is, of course, a quality of the Rorschach Test. It has been shown that the use of shading in creating a Rorschach response is an expression of anxiety, and there is some evidence that



the use of colour in that context indicates the degree and kind of emotional response to the environment. The human forms in the O.R.T. lead the subject to talk about people, and his reactions to the darkness, the lighter shading, and the colours provide clues to his emotional state.

The idea of combining these valuable features of the Rorschach and the T.A.T. was a brilliant one, and Mr. Phillipson and his team have put it most successfully into practice. His artists, Miss Elizabeth Carlisle and Madame Olga Dormondie, are to be congratulated. The drawings, while not intended to be works of art, are pleasing and would probably not be disturbing to the vast majority of psychiatric patients.

The simplicity of the pictures should enable the investigator to apply statistics to the material without too much difficulty; a start has been made by Mr. Phillipson himself, who gives some normative data for 50 psychiatric out-patients, as well as by Mrs. O'Kelly, some of whose findings for 40 normal adolescent girls are quoted. The technique, like its better-known predecessors, is, however, primarily a means of studying mental processes and not a measuring instrument. Many possible uses of it suggest themselves; in psychiatry it may prove valuable in the differential diagnosis of psychotic, neurotic, and organic conditions; in anthropology it could be used for cross-cultural comparisons. Much research will have to be done before we can fairly estimate the value of this promising method. It is hoped that this will not deter clinical psychologists and research workers from using the technique in their own explorations of personality.

The technique has a sound empirical foundation, but it is also based upon the theory of internal objects as developed by Fairbairn and Eziel and upon some modern hypotheses relating perception to personality as a whole, for instance those of Bruner. These theoretical views Mr. Phillipson strives to integrate into a theory of his own which is then most ingeniously and industriously applied to actual O.R.T. material. Consequently his book contains much that is controversial. It is very difficult to discuss this complex subject fairly in a review. A couple of quotations will serve to indicate Mr. Phillipson's point of view:—

- (1) 'This conclusion, that the process of perception is primarily determined by, and therefore understandable in terms of personal relationships, implies that it should be possible to develop concepts in these terms to characterize, for example, an individual's perception and interpretation of a social situation, a T.A.T. picture or a Rorschach ink blot.'
- (2) 'Stated more generally: in any sequence of behaviour in a given stimulus situation (e.g. specific social situation, a T.A.T. picture or Rorschach ink-blot presentation) an individual will select from the perceptual field, and struc-

ture what he selects, to fit with unconscious object relationships which in early life were phantasied to satisfy a primitive need. At the same time he will characterize what he sees in terms of object-relationships which have been built up in order to guard against the consequences he fears might result from his unconscious wishes.'

Those who wish to use this admirable standard means of tapping phantasy-material will find some useful information in Mr. Phillipson's text. This material can be interpreted and analysed in many different ways and from various theoretical standpoints.

Victor B. Kanter.

*Migration and Mental Disease.* By Benjamin Malzberg and Everett S. Lee. Social Science Research Council. (New York: 1956. Pp. x + 142. \$1.50.)

This research was carried out under the aegis of the Committee on Migration Differentials. It is a study of first admissions to psychiatric hospitals in New York during 1939–1941. The results are very striking indeed: during that period, admissions were markedly higher for migrants than for non-migrants, regardless of sex and colour. This was true for all psychoses including those of old age. The differential was even more marked for recent than for earlier migrants. The authors warn against rash interpretations. Although their data suggest that rates of mental illness are higher for migrants than for non-migrants, a number of reservations have to be made before drawing such a conclusion. Admission to hospital is not a reliable index of the incidence of mental illness among a special section of a population. This study is a model of its kind, especially through the absence of special pleading in favour of a particular etiological factor.

E. Stengel.

*Rorschach Location and Scoring Manual.* By Leonard Small. (New York and London: Grune and Stratton, 1956. Pp. 214.)

This is a well-prepared and comprehensive manual which covers the commoner Rorschach responses. It is really a mechanical aid to Rorschach scoring, even though the authors stress that it should not be used as such. It is conveniently thumb-indexed, and if one uses Rorschach's test in the conventional way, should be a great asset. Like all mechanical aids, however, its use may detract from the more spontaneous psycho-analytic assessment of Rorschach responses. For those who work with Rorschach, and find scoring manuals useful, this book should have a great appeal. It is certainly beautifully prepared and generously laid out.

Joseph Sandler.

✓ *Fundamental Statistics in Psychology and Education.* By J. P. Guilford. 3rd rev. ed. (New York



and London: McGraw-Hill Book Company Inc., 1956. Pp. xi + 565. \$6.25 or 47s.)

Guilford has occupied a well-deserved position among students of psychology and education for many years. His *Psychometric Methods* (1936) has been followed by the present volume, now in its third edition.

Professor Guilford is a born teacher, and his subject is a difficult one. He has always managed to convey the most difficult of statistical concepts without demanding too much in the way of mathematical training from the student. His textbook provides a balanced account of the various statistical procedures in common use, and the new edition includes Bartlett's test of homogeneity of variance, and some of the non-parametric tests of significance which will certainly be finding a useful application in psychometric work. One may however criticize Guilford on the ground that he tends to be a trifle too conservative and wedded to the older psychometric methods. But this does not detract from the excellence of the volume.

Joseph Sandler.

*Annual Review of Psychology.* Paul R. Farnsworth and Quinn McNemar (eds.). Vol. 7. (Stanford, California: Annual Reviews Inc., 1956. Pp. 448. \$7.00.)

This is, as usual, a goldmine of information, and the present volume is perhaps the best of those published to date. The sixteen chapters cover the usual range of psychological topics, and include abnormalities of behaviour, psychotherapy, counselling, and a new chapter on gerontology.

With the growth of psycho-analytic psychology as distinct from psycho-analytic psychopathology and therapy, the research psycho-analyst will find this book useful as a reference source to psychological material which can be integrated into a psycho-analytic mode of thought. It is a pity that most of the authors seem to equate progress in psychology with the increased application of psychometric methods. Theories as such are given scant attention in the discussion, but this is a consequence of the necessity for condensation.

It is to be hoped that in forthcoming editions psycho-analytic psychology will find a chapter of its own. Nevertheless this book is a valuable asset to research workers who want to scan and trace relevant new contributions with speed and ease.

Joseph Sandler.

*Perversions, Psychodynamics and Therapy.* Edited by Sandor Lorand, M.D. Associate Editor, Michael Balint, M.D. (New York: Random House, 1956, \$7.)

This is a symposium consisting of articles written by seventeen distinguished workers in the field representing several different countries, all of whom accept Freud's basic formulations on perversion. All except two of the contributors are psychoanalysts. In the introduction it is stated that the book is intended to offer a summary of current views on perversion, and that promise has been admirably fulfilled. Despite the fact that the contributors are by no means homogeneous in their opinions, the work has been well articulated, so that there are no confusing contradictions.

The subdivision into sections is a helpful one in that it enables the reader more easily to look up what he needs at any given time. Each contributor has an individual slant upon the subject; e.g. Balint's concept of perversions as being attempts to escape from the two main demands of mature genitality; (1) accepting as real the intense need in ourselves for periodic regressions in the form of heterosexual coitus, and (2) accepting the necessity of the work of conquest (by which he means the winning of the object for genital partnership). General theory is presented by Gillespie in a clear and systematic way. Muensterberger deals with cultural aspects of perversion and states that what often seem to be contradictions are actually culture-bound adaptations, rooted in the interaction between physiological, psychological, and environmental forces, following Freud's allusion to this phenomenon in a paper written as early as 1908. Feldman stresses the importance of traumatic situations in forcing the gratification of an originally heterosexual impulse through the *détour* of homosexuality.

Bychowski discusses the relationship between homosexuality and psychosis. He refers to the personality structure of drug addicts, many of whom show homosexuality, but the group is far from being a homogeneous one. Bacon, in discussing the development of female homosexuality, confirms with examples Freud's formulation that the child is impelled to repeat actively any experience which he had been forced in the past to suffer passively. The sections on sado-masochism, male exhibitionism, and fetishism are very helpful. Finally, the section on therapy is valuable.

It would be invidious to make comparisons between the various papers, all of which preserve a uniformly high standard. What one tends to do, however, is to concentrate upon those articles which provide the answer to the particular clinical and theoretical problems with which one is at present confronted. Following this preamble, I should like to underline the practical importance and value of Lorand's article on the therapy of perversions, which is the last chapter of a worthy book.

A. H. Williams.



## ABSTRACTS

### Contents:

*Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association*,  
4, 1956, No. 4.

*The Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 25, 1956, No. 4.

*Bulletin d'Activités, Association des Psychanalystes  
de Belgique*, Nos. 26-28.

### JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN PSYCHO- ANALYTIC ASSOCIATION 4, 1956, No. 4.

Robert Waelder. 'Freud and the History of  
Science.'

The development of the scientific attitude led to a situation where enquiry into topics which were incapable of objective verification was considered 'unscientific'. Such subjects were the concern of religion, metaphysics, and the like. The cleavage between the humanities and science was further accentuated by the tendency to differentiate between the so-called 'higher' and 'lower' manifestations of human life. By destroying the artificial divisions which existed between each and every aspect of thought and behaviour Freud bridged the gap between the humanities and science. Freud combined a powerful imagination with an equally exacting scientific conscience. The former enabled him to be free in his thinking and the latter demanded a test of theory in the process of his analytical work.

Little has been added to psycho-analysis since Freud. Waelder suggests that there are valid reasons to account for this relative stagnation of post-Freud psycho-analysis. The long period of training, the small number of cases which any psycho-analyst treats, the difficulty of pooling clinical experience, and the obstacles which impede the dissemination of this material are only several of the factors involved. A comparison is made with the abrupt ending of Greek mathematics about 200 B.C. In this case breakdown of the oral tradition and the absence of a symbolic notation are regarded as two of the basic causes. In a similar way psycho-analysis is dependent on personal contact and the oral tradition. The development of psycho-analysis might be greatly accelerated if there was developed a language or a system of concepts which would make it possible to describe personality structure with a high degree of specificity so that it could be correctly and quickly understood by all.

Karl A. Menninger. 'Freud and American Psychiatry.'

This paper begins with an interesting and vivid account of the early years of American psycho-analysis and of the men who laid the foundations for its future growth. Psycho-analysis changed American psychiatry from a predominantly diagnostic system to a therapeutic science. This occurred because of the understanding which psycho-analysis imparted to the clinical phenomena encountered in psychiatric work. The acceptance of the need for personal analysis became in time the keystone of the psycho-analytic movement. The author believes that it was Freud's inherent optimism which appealed to the idealism of American doctors; it was a new way of helping people and building a better world.

Ernest Jones. 'Our Attitude toward Greatness.'

Jones begins by drawing attention to the outstanding features of Freud's achievement. First there was the loneliness of the task, and second the enormous resistance which was generated as a reaction to the insights which he had won. The opposition to Freud's discoveries was essentially different to the opposition encountered even by such figures as Copernicus and Darwin. In the case of psycho-analysis the opposition was internal and itself unconscious. It was therefore inaccessible to the usual influences which change people's attitudes and opinions.

Our attitude toward greatness is determined basically by the various attitudes which a son may have, consciously and unconsciously, towards his father. Opinions which have been expressed about Freud and his work reflect the vicissitudes of the father-son relationship. Openly negative, positive, and ambivalent feelings have been uttered by numerous writers in psychology, neurology, sociology, and literature. Examples of such opinions and their relevance to psycho-analysis are discussed.

Martin Grotjahn. 'A Letter by Sigmund Freud with Recollections of his Adolescence.'

This letter by Freud is of particular interest. Its contents throw light on the motives which lay behind Freud's choosing the house in which he was to live for forty-seven years.

Ernst Kris. 'The Personal Myth: A Problem in Psychoanalytic Technique.'

Excerpts from the analyses of three patients are presented in this paper to illustrate why in certain

cases the personal history assumes the importance of a treasured possession. Such autobiographies have a double function. They are defensive inasmuch as they prevent wishes and affects from becoming conscious. They are also heir to important phantasies of early childhood. The repressed phantasy is a variation of the 'family romance'.

In the latter part of the paper the obsessional quality of the patients is referred to. Those features of the personality arising from anal-sadistic trends are outlined. The author then discusses the prematurity of ego development which is assumed to be characteristic of obsessional neurotics. Kris points out that it is not only prohibitions which are internalized in early childhood. It is his impression that the first noticeable manifestation of prematurity of all ego functions related to internalization is originally linked to the early development of memory. The matrix of the memory function is the re-finding of the needed and later beloved object. Memory functions can be distinguished according to their degree of autonomy. One set, with high autonomy, are those concerned with the ability to acquire, retain, and recall. A memory function with low autonomy is that concerned with the self, i.e. autobiographical memories. The usefulness of this distinction is illustrated by the selective character of the infantile amnesia. It (the amnesia) includes the experiences of the self, but does not include the impact of reality testing, skills, conceptualization or information acquired during the same period of time. Where the self is concerned, where memory is autobiographical, autonomy in the broadest sense is never fully achieved, distorting influences never cease to play their part, and recollections remain connected with needs and affects.

Thomas Freeman.

*THE PSYCHO-ANALYTIC QUARTERLY*  
25, 1956, No. 4.

William G. Niederland. 'River Symbolism. Part I.'

This paper contains a general survey of river symbolism in most of its aspects—as a male and a female symbol, as a symbol of the body, of the breast, of healing, etc. The author stresses particularly the condensation of symbolism around the process of birth, and emphasizes the fluid components of the earliest experiences, which enter into the Isakower phenomenon and the dream screen. The suckling wakes first with a desire for food, and Niederland believes that in dreams of flowing water an oral component may be discerned below the urinary. Drowning, or 'going under', as an aspect of drinking, may be the nearest representation of death which the unconscious can muster. The author believes of dreams of rivers what Friedman believes of dreams of bridges, that they tend to occur

at crucial intervals in analysis, broaching new material of a deeply repressed kind.

Morris W. Brody. 'Clinical Manifestations of Ambivalence.'

The term ambivalence loses meaning when applied to every psychopathological bipolarity. In this paper ambivalence (of love and hate) is regarded as a psychic striving with narcissistic and hedonistic aims; its origin and mode of functioning are discussed. It is most intense in the infant who has been subjected to gross oral and anal deprivations, as a result of which he can form relationships only with part-objects. The ambivalent person is so painfully dependent that he cannot express or feel his hatred of frustration; instead he reacts with further helplessness. This behaviour enables him both to externalize his problem and to achieve a magical omnipotence. He therefore lacks a realistic frame of reference for appraising reality. As a result it becomes as though he neither loved nor hated. Whenever the ambivalent person believes himself to be hated he withdraws love as a magical manoeuvre to compel the object to bestow love.

Ernest A. Rappaport. 'The Management of an Erotized Transference.'

An erotized transference is one in which the patient expects the analyst to behave like a parent in reality without this wish being ego-dystonic. The gnawing hunger of these patients, ultimately for the mother, is too urgent easily to allow of the analysis becoming a learning experience. Such patients have had parents with whom they could establish no real contact. The only contact they have known is that of argument and brawl; and this they try to re-establish with the analyst, thinly disguised, if the analyst is of the opposite sex, in stormy demands for genital contact.

None the less, they can still be influenced by corrective emotional experience provided the analyst is completely sincere. He must bring into the open the patient's subtle attempts to manipulate him, indicate that he can stand an analytic failure, and show the patient the feelings of inferiority behind the defence of antagonism. The term 'erotized transference' is Blitzstein's, and his advice is several times quoted with respect.

Gustav Bychowski. 'General Aspects and Implications of Introjection.'

Introjection is for the author the ego's way of internalizing all aspects of reality in order to adapt to it. He describes some applications of this concept in fields other than psycho-analysis. For example the innate images postulated by the ethologists may in this way be equated with introjects, since every instinctual drive operates in relation to an inherited Gestalt, formed from the summation of an infinite series of experiences. Such an idea of imagery



corresponding to the apperception of reality as inherent in the ego of both man and animals had been postulated previously in the philosophy of Leibniz. Bychowski concludes with some historical examples of the cultural externalization of introjects in various societies with its consequences.

Eric Berne. 'The Psychological Structure of Space with Some Remarks on Robinson Crusoe.'

An interest in space or spaces may usually be classified according to the instinctual drive it chiefly represents. Mental or physical interest in exploration, measurement, or utilization are sublimations, respectively, of oral incorporative, anal obsessive, and phallic intrusive and erective attitudes. Clinical evidence is presented to demonstrate that, in one case, exploration pursued as an end in itself appeared to follow an orderly psychosexual sequence, with an initially predominating oral incorporative component. Such systematic explorers as Sven Hedin and the patient here studied are believed to proceed through a sequence of sublimated pregenital activities. Robinson Crusoe shows an intense oral fixation, and for this reason his explorations were incomplete and inefficient. The psychological organization of space is a highly individual process, but there are universally basic factors, as shown by the literature on the subject and by experiences in group therapy.

(Author's summary.)

Marcel Heiman. 'The Relationship between Man and Dog.'

The dog is for civilized man what the totem animal was for the primitive, a protector against the fear of death, which is first experienced as separation anxiety. Since separation anxiety gives rise to an increase in the cannibalistic drives the dog is also in that sense a protector. The similarity of the psychic apparatus of dog and man facilitates the maintenance of equilibrium by identification and projection. The dog is also of service, especially to women, in sublimating pre-oedipal (and oedipal) drives. Thus the dog is an important aid in sublimating unconscious forces incompatible with civilization.

John Klauber.

# BULLETIN D'ACTIVITÉS, ASSOCIATION DES PSYCHANALYSTES DE BELGIQUE

No. 26.

F. Duyckaert, in relation to Freud's Centenary, compares psycho-analysis and modern rationalism from a methodological point of view. S. Nacht discusses 'life or death instinct', and expresses the opinion that the auto-destructive trends are related to the early conditions of life and may be cured. They are not acted out with the unconscious goal of

leading the individual back to an undifferentiated state.

The rôle of identification in the analytical process is discussed by J. Lampl-de Groot, who thinks that the psycho-analyst has to provide his patient with satisfactory identifications and that this is not inconsistent with neutrality. In the same way, P. Luquet writes about some non-verbal factors of recovery in the psycho-analytical cure, and includes the introjection of the objectivity, the understanding mind, and the kindness of the psycho-analyst.

F. Lechat presents a detailed paper on the consequences of early object relations on adulthood, especially of the loss of the fundamental object. According to him the following process takes place:

- (i) Aggressive trends are directed toward the object.
- (ii) The aggressive trends become jammed by fear.
- (iii) The feeling arises that all contact may be dangerous both for the object and the subject, and anxiety is always latent.
- (iv) The individual refrains from winning or accepting another's affection. Both love and aggression are blocked and he is only able to discharge by pseudo-love and pseudo-aggressiveness toward pseudo-objects.

Beside the above-mentioned papers, Bulletin No. 26 contains an excerpt from A. Freud's 'Some Remarks on the Observation of Newborns', notes on the 'Integration of Behaviour' by T. M. French, and a summary of Glover's inquiry on psycho-analytical technique.

No. 27

List of Contents:

- S. Lebovici et R. Diatkine: *Les obsessions chez l'enfant.*  
 P. Marty: *La relation d'objet allergique.*  
 S. A. Shentoub: *Quelques remarques concernant la structuration dynamique des mécanismes obsessionnels.*  
 D. Luminet: *Thérapie brève de l'asthme bronchique.*

No. 28

List of Contents:

- R. Spitz: *Dépression infantile et syndrome d'adaptation.*  
 G. Zilboorg: *Aux frontières de la Psychanalyse.*  
 K. Victorius: *Le Moïse de Michel-Ange de Sigmund Freud.*  
 S. A. Shentoub: *De quelques problèmes dans l'homosexualité masculine active.*  
 R. Held: *Difficultés de l'analyse de certaines résistances intellectuelles.*  
 N. N. Dracoulides: *La complexualité de Platon.*  
 A. J. Siegman: *La sentimentalité, une défense hystérique.*  
 F. Lechat: *Autour du principe de plaisir.*

## NEWS, NOTES AND COMMENTS

### 20TH CONGRESS OF THE INTERNATIONAL PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL ASSOCIATION

This international gathering of psycho-analysts took place in Paris from 28 July to 1 August, 1957, and a full report will shortly be published in the *Bulletin*. Our French colleagues deserve our thanks for the splendid work of organization and for the hospitality they extended to the members and guests of the International Congress. The Congress was opened by the President, Dr. Heinz Hartmann, who with this Congress brought to a close his third term of office. Dr. Ernest Jones, our Honorary President, was the first speaker, and over 700 members and guests gave him an ovation before and after his paper. The majority of the papers read, including two of the three Panel Discussions, will be published in Volume 39 of this Journal during 1958.

### OFFICERS OF THE INTERNATIONAL PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL ASSOCIATION

The 20th Congress of the International Psycho-Analytical Association elected the following officers for the period of two years: *President*: Dr. W. H. Gillespie (London); *Immediate Past President*: Dr. Heinz Hartmann (New York); *Honorary Vice-President*: Mme. Marie Bonaparte; *Vice-Presidents*: Miss Anna Freud (London), Dr. Maxwell Gitelson (Chicago), Dr. Willi Hoffer (London), Dr. Jean Lampl-de Groot (Amsterdam), Dr. S. Nacht (Paris), Dr. Raymond de Saussure (Geneva); *Hon. Treasurer*: Dr. Phyllis Greenacre (New York); *Hon. Secretary* (appointed by the President, Dr. W. H. Gillespie): Miss Pearl King (63 New Cavendish Street, London, W.1, England).

### 21st CONGRESS OF THE INTERNATIONAL PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL ASSOCIATION

This Congress will be held in the summer of 1959 at Copenhagen, Denmark. The President, Dr. W. H. Gillespie, has appointed the Programme Committee, with Dr. W. Hoffer as Chairman and Dr. Paula Heimann as Hon. Secretary. Communications should be addressed to Dr. Paula Heimann, Hon. Secretary, 32 Eamont Court, Eamont Street, London, N.W.8, England.

### SOCIÉTÉ PSYCHANALYTIQUE DE PARIS

The Institute of Psycho-Analysis in Paris announces a Postgraduate Course to be held in Paris during 1958. It is hoped that twenty-five participants will meet and discuss present-day

problems of psycho-analytic theory, clinic and technique; adult and child cases will be discussed in smaller groups and in great detail. Enquiries should be addressed to: Dr. S. Nacht, Directeur de l'Institut de Psychanalyse, 187 rue Saint-Jacques, Paris.

### CHARLES FREDERICK MENNINGER AWARD

The American Psychoanalytic Association at its annual meeting in Chicago on 12 May, 1957, conferred the first Charles Frederick Menninger Award on Dr. Charles Fisher. Dr. Fisher is on the staff of the Mount Sinai Hospital, New York, and is a training analyst of the New York Psychoanalytic Institute.

The Award was established a year ago by Dr. Karl A. Menninger and Dr. William C. Menninger, of the Menninger Foundation, as a memorial to their father, who was the founder of the original Menninger Sanitarium at Topeka, Kansas. The Award is to be given annually for original research in psycho-analysis. The members of the Award Committee are five former Presidents of the Association: Dr. Leo H. Bartemeier of Baltimore, Maryland; Dr. Maxwell Gitelson of Chicago, Illinois; Dr. M. Ralph Kaufman of New York City; Dr. Robert P. Knight of Stockbridge, Massachusetts; and Dr. Karl A. Menninger of Topeka, Kansas. Dr. Fisher received the Award in recognition of experimental work on the role of primary modes of perception in dream formation. In a series of carefully controlled experiments he was able to verify some of the basic theoretical principles originally postulated by Freud in his work on dreams. The work was carried on in the Department of Psychiatry of the Mount Sinai Hospital and was made possible through the assistance of the Foundations' Fund for Research in Psychiatry.

The papers in which the result of this work is presented were published in the *Journal of the American Psychoanalytic Association*: 'Dreams and Perception', 2, 1954, 389-445; 'Dreams, Images, and Perception', 4, 1956, 5-48

### PROFESSOR HEINRICH MENG, M.D.

Widely acclaimed by his colleagues, co-workers, and patients, Dr. Heinrich Meng celebrated this summer his seventieth birthday. Dr. Meng was highly thought of by Freud and became closely associated with the late Dr. Paul Federn, with whom he edited well-known encyclopedias on



general medicine as well as on psycho-analysis. To-day Dr. Meng is considered the outstanding representative of psycho-analysis in the German-speaking countries of Europe. Dr. E. Blum, one of the oldest members of the Swiss Psycho-Analytical Society, expresses his and his colleagues' appreciation of Dr. Meng in a special issue of the Swiss periodical, *Der Psychologe*.

#### THE ERNST KRIS MEMORIAL MEETING

The New York Psychoanalytic Society and Institute and the Western New England Psychoanalytic Society arranged the Ernst Kris Memorial Meeting at the Academy of Medicine, New York City, on 24 September, 1957. Chairman of the afternoon session was Dr. Ruth Loveland, President of the New York Institute; Dr. Lawrence S. Kubie introduced Dr. Phyllis Greenacre, who presented her Memorial Lecture entitled 'The Family Romance of the Artist'. Dr. Leo Stone, Dr. David Beres, and Dr. Robert C. Bak spoke as discussants. This was followed by a paper based on Dr. Kris' Discussions of Case Presentations in the Gifted Adolescents Research Project, and presented by Dr. Leo S. Loomie, Dr. Victor H. Rosen, and Dr. Martin H. Stein. Dr. Mary O'Neil Hawkins acted as Moderator, and Dr. Bertram D. Lewin, Dr. Annie Reich and Dr. Margaret S. Mahler as discussants. After the recess, a paper, 'Influence of Early Mother-Child Interaction on Identification Processes as Observed in a Longitudinal Study' was presented by Dr. Samuel Ritvo and Dr. Albert J. Solnit. Dr. Charles Brenner was Moderator, and Dr. Rudolph M. Loewenstein, Dr. Jacob A. Arlow, and Dr. Robert P. Knight discussed the paper.

In the evening session, with Dr. Robert C. Bak in the chair, Dr. Heinz Hartmann introduced Miss Anna Freud, who gave her Memorial Address on 'Problems of Development', the discussion being opened by Dr. René A. Spitz.

#### ANNA FREUD, LL.D., IN WORCESTER MASS.

A lecture entitled 'Adolescence', by Dr. Anna Freud, was delivered before the Child Guidance Association under the chairmanship of Dr. Joseph Weinreb on 18 September, 1957. This was followed by sessions on two subsequent days in which clinical problems and those of management arising from the therapeutic work with children were discussed. In addition to Dr. Anna Freud the following were the main speakers; Dr. Grete L. Bibring (Boston), Dr. Anna Katan (Cleveland), Dr. Marianne Kris (New York and Yale University), Mrs. Berta Bornstein (New York), Dr. Elizabeth Geleerd-Loewenstein (New York), Dr. Anna Maenchen (San Francisco), Mrs. Beata Rank (Boston), Dr. Milton Senn (Professor of Paediatrics, Yale University), Dr. Janeway (Professor of Paediatrics, Harvard School of Medicine), Mrs. Edna Furman

(Cleveland), Dr. Sally Provence (Yale), Dr. Joseph Weinreb (Clark University), Miss Polly Deweese. The final lecture, concluding the scientific sessions, was delivered by Dr. Anna Freud on 'Termination of Treatment'.

A statue of Professor Freud, the work of the sculptor Nemo, was unveiled in the presence of Dr. Anna Freud, the speakers on this occasion being Professor Jefferson for Clark University, Dr. R. M. Loewenstein, President of the American Psychoanalytic Association, and Dr. Grete L. Bibring on behalf of the Boston Psychoanalytic Society. This was followed by a formal lecture delivered by Dr. David Rapaport (Stockbridge) on: 'Psychoanalysis and Developmental Psychology'.

#### VIENNA PSYCHO-ANALYTICAL SOCIETY

Dr. Alfred Winterstein has been elected Honorary President of the Vienna Psycho-Analytical Society; Dr. Wilhelm Solms, Dozent at the University Clinic of Neurology and Psychiatry, has been elected President.

#### DR. ABRAM KARDINER

On 30 June, 1957, Dr. Abram Kardiner retired from his post as Director of the Columbia Psychoanalytic Clinic for Training and Research, and accepted an appointment as Lecturer in the Department of Psychiatry. Dr. George E. Daniels was appointed Director of the Columbia Psychoanalytic Clinic.

#### ARGENTINE PSYCHOANALYTIC ASSOCIATION

The following List of Authorities applies for the period April, 1957 to March, 1958: Dr. Angel Garma, President; Dr. Heinrich Racker, Secretary; Dr. Jorge M. Mom, Treasurer; Dr. Leon Grinberg, Publishing Director; Dr. Mauricio Abadi, Voter; Dr. Arnaldo Raskovsky, Voter.

#### CHANGE OF ADDRESS

Los Angeles Institute of Psychoanalysis and the Los Angeles Psychoanalytic Society have opened new offices at 344 North Bedford Drive, Beverly Hills, California.

K. R. Eissler, M.D., 300 Central Park West, New York, 24, N.Y.

Ruth S. Eissler, M.D., 300 Central Park West, New York 24, N.Y.

Miguel Prados, M.D., Suite 48, 1390 Sherbrooke St. West, Montreal, Que., Canada.

#### THE PSYCHOANALYTIC REVIEW

The *Psychoanalytic Review*, An Educational American Journal of Psychoanalysis, was founded by William A. White and S. E. Jelliffe in 1913. Now in its forty-fourth year of existence, it announces cessation of publication before the end of the present year.

### BERLINER PSYCHOANALYTISCHES INSTITUT

The Institute announces its training programme for the winter term 1957-58. Eleven series of lectures and seminars are listed.

### FOUNDATIONS' FUND FOR RESEARCH IN PSYCHIATRY

The Foundations' Fund for Research in Psy-

chiatry wishes to announce that 1 February, 1958, is the next deadline for the submission of applications for research fellowships in psychiatry, psychology, sociology, neurophysiology, and other sciences relevant to mental health. Interested persons and departments are invited to write for details to: Foundations' Fund for Research in Psychiatry, 251 Edwards Street, New Haven 11, Connecticut, U.S.A.

## THE PSYCHOANALYTIC FOUNDATION

The Psychoanalytic Foundation, Incorporated, is accepting applications for grants to advance the science of psychoanalysis as outlined in the works of Sigmund Freud; to conduct research in the theory, practice and application of psychoanalysis and to make voluntary grants of fellowships, scholarships and professorships in furtherance of any of these purposes. For further information write to Dr. Peter B. Neubauer, Secretary, 117 East 80th Street, New York 21, New York.

## LETTER TO THE EDITOR

### CONCEPT OF PROBABILITY AND ESP

SIR,

In connection with the recent discussion on Extra-Sensory Perception (ESP) I would like to draw attention to some aspects of the concept of probability, for it is indeed on this concept that the believers in ESP rest their claims. In this communication, neither the data nor their interpretation are of primary interest to me.

Let me at once grant the proponents of ESP their main point; the evidence they present *cannot* be explained by chance. Then what? What meaning can we attach to the statement that the findings are due to non-chance? The matter is not as simple as the proponents of ESP would have us believe. They imply that since the evidence cannot be explained as non-chance, it must be explained on the basis of some lawful causality. This however is a basic error in logic.

The thinking of P. W. Bridgman on this question is of singular interest to all those concerned with ESP.<sup>1</sup> I will quote the essential points he makes.

"We have to ask what we mean when we say 'this event was not chance.' Since we have already made an attempt to tell what we mean when we say 'this event *was* chance', we might be tempted to think that our new question is trivial and that its answer is implied in the answer we have already given. I think, however, and this is perhaps the crux of this note, that this is by no means the case. 'Was chance' and 'was not chance' are not simply related to each other as two terms in tradi-

tional Aristotelian logic, subject to the rule of the excluded middle. . . .

'There is a deep-seated difference between the way in which positive and negative probability arguments are fruitfully applied in practice to concrete situations, to which we have seen that the concept of probability does not rigorously apply at all. If the situation is a positive one, which we can characterize by saying "Here we have the play of chance", then we can draw fruitful conclusions from the mere statement, without going further. This is shown by countless examples, as in the tables of a life insurance company, or the kinetic theory of gases, or the theory of the atomic nucleus with its calculation of the best construction for a hydrogen bomb by the Monte Carlo method. But if the situation is a negative one, characterized by saying "Here we do *not* have the play of chance" we have something radically different. Here we are compelled to go further, and fruitful application is not achieved until we succeed in exhibiting the regularity that we suspect. . . . ESP, with its statement of non-chance, but with its utter failure to exhibit any regularities or to perform a single repeatable experiment, is the only instance of which I am aware in which a serious claim has been made that non-chance should be capitalized simply because it is non-chance.'

I am, etc.,

LEO ANGELO SPIEGEL, M.D.

40 East 83rd Street,  
New York 28, N.Y.

<sup>1</sup> F. W. Bridgman. 'Probability, Logic, and ESP', *Science*, 6 January, 1956, 123, pp. 16-17.



## PUBLICATIONS RECEIVED

(Appearance in this list does not preclude subsequent review.)

*The Criminal, the Judge and the Public: a Psychological Analysis.* By Franz Alexander and Hugo Staub. Revised edition. (Glencoe, Illinois: Free Press and Falcon's Wing Press, 1956. Pp. xxii + 239. \$4.00.)

*Psychiatric Research Reports of the American Psychiatric Association.* No. 6: *Application of Basic Science Techniques to Psychiatric Research.* (Washington, D.C.: American Psychiatric Association, 1957. Pp. 211. \$2.00.) No. 7: *Stress; Experimental Psychology; Child Psychiatry.* (Washington, D.C.: American Psychiatric Association, 1957. Pp. 88. \$2.00.)

*Le Psychodrame analytique chez l'enfant.* By Didier Anzieu. (Paris: Presses Universitaires, 1956. Pp. 183. Frs. 720.)

*The Doctor, his Patient and the Illness.* By Michael Balint. (London: Pitman Medical Publishing Co., 1957. Pp. x + 355. 40s.)

*Problems of Human Pleasure and Behaviour.* By Michael Balint. (London: Hogarth, 1957. Pp. 300. 25s.)

*Juvenile Delinquency Proneness. A Study of the Kvaraceus Scale.* By Joseph K. Balogh and Charles J. Rumage. (Washington: Public Affairs Press, 1956. Pp. 35. \$1.00.)

*Psychotherapy of the Adolescent.* Edited by Benjamin Harris Balser. (New York: International Universities Press, 1957. Pp. 270. \$5.00.)

*Human Relations in International Affairs. A Guide to Significant Interpretation and Research.* By Seymour W. Beardsley and Alvin G. Edgell. (Washington: Public Affairs Press, 1956. Pp. vi + 40. \$1.00.)

*Being Lived by My Life: a Sort of Autobiography.* By Charles Berg. (London: Allen and Unwin, 1957. Pp. 256. 21s.)

*The Psychology of Learning.* By B. R. Bugelski. (New York: Henry Holt; London: Methuen, 1956 and 1957. Pp. xiii + 523. 50s.)

*Variations in Sexual Behaviour.* By Frank S. Caprio. (London: John Calder, 1957. Pp. xxxi + 344. 30s.)

*Sex in Christianity and Psychoanalysis.* By William Graham Cole. (London: Allen and Unwin, 1957. Pp. xiv + 329. 21s.)

*Perspectives in Personality Theory.* Edited by Henry P. David and Helmut von Bracken. (London: Tavistock Publications; New York: Basic Books, 1957. Pp. xii + 435. 38s. or \$6.50.)

*From Medicine Man to Freud: an Anthology.*

Edited by Jan Ehrenwald. (New York: Dell Publishing Co., 1956. Pp. 416. 50c.)

*Neurotic Interaction in Marriage.* Edited by Victor W. Eisenstein. (London: Tavistock Publications, 1956. Pp. xv + 352. 30s.)

*Psychoanalytic Study of the Child.* Vol. XI. Edited by Ruth S. Eissler et al. (New York: International Universities Press; London: Imago Publishing Co., 1956. Pp. 470. 45s. or \$8.50.)

*The Dupont Theory. The Theory of Gravitation in Mental Fields.* By John Evelyn. (London: Faval Press, 1957. Pp. 29. 10s. 6d.)

*The Dynamics of Anxiety and Hysteria.* By H. J. Eysenck. (London: Routledge, 1957. Pp. xiv + 312. Illus. 32s.)

*Annual Review of Psychology.* Vol. 8. Edited by Paul R. Farnsworth. Palo Alto, California: Annual Reviews Inc., 1957. Pp. ix + 502. \$7.50.)

*Instinct in Man.* By Ronald Fletcher. (London: Allen and Unwin, 1957. Pp. 348. 40s.)

*Progress in Psychotherapy 1956.* Edited by Frieda Fromm-Reichmann and J. Moreno. (New York: Grune and Stratton, 1956. Pp. xii + 352. \$8.50.)

*Medicine in a Changing Society. Lectures to the Laity, No. XVIII.* By Iago Galdston. (New York: International Universities Press, 1956. Pp. x + 166. \$3.00.)

*Mental Acts. Their Content and their Objects.* By Peter Geach. (London: Routledge, 1957. Pp. x + 136. 12s. 6d.)

*Beyond Laughter.* By Martin Grotjahn. (New York and London: McGraw-Hill, 1957. Pp. xvi + 285. 45s.)

*Towards a Measure of Man. The Frontiers of Normal Adjustment.* By Paul Halmos. (London: Routledge, 1957. Pp. viii + 250. 28s.)

*The Psychology of Perception.* By D. W. Hamlyn. (London: Routledge, 1957. Pp. vii + 120. 12s. 6d.)

*Lehrbuch der Psychiatrie.* Vols. 1 and 2. By Hans Hoff. (Basel and Stuttgart: Benno Schwabe, 1956. Pp. xv + 922. Sw. Fr. 56.)

*Sigmund Freud: Life and Work.* Vol. III. *The Last Phase, 1919-39.* By Ernest Jones. (London: Hogarth, 1957. Pp. xvi + 536. Illus. 35s.)

*Collected Works of Carl Gustav Jung.* Vol. 5. *Symbols of Transformation; An Analysis of the Prelude to a Case of Schizophrenia.* (London: Routledge, 1956. Pp. xxix + 567. 35s.)

*The Idiom of Contemporary Thought.* By Craw-

- ford Knox. (London: Chapman and Hall, 1956. Pp. x + 206. 18s.)
- Der Wahnsinn im Lichte alter und neuer Psychopathologie.* By Kurt Kolle. (Stuttgart: Georg Thieme, 1957. Pp. 56. DM. 4.80.)
- La Psychanalyse.* Vol. 2. *Mélanges Cliniques.* Edited by Jacques Lacan. (Paris: Société Française de Psychanalyse and Presses Universitaires de France, 1956. Pp. 323. Fr. 960.)
- The Person in Psychology: Reality or Abstraction.* By Paul Lafitte. (London: Routledge, 1957. Pp. x + 233. 25s.)
- Methodische Probleme der klinischen Psychotherapie.* By Dietrich Langen. (Stuttgart: Georg Thieme, 1956. Pp. viii + 120. DM. 10.50.)
- Fantasías Eternas a la Luz del Psicoanálisis.* By Marie Langer. (Buenos Aires: Editorial Nova, 1957. Pp. 157.)
- Straight to the Heart.* By George Lawton. (New York: International Universities Press, 1957. Pp. xxiv + 347. \$5.00.)
- Interpersonal Diagnosis of Personality. A Functional Theory and Methodology for Personality Evaluation.* By Timothy Leary. (New York: Ronald Press, 1957. Pp. xix + 518. \$12.00.)
- Die Störungen der Schriftsprache (Agraphie und Alexie).* By A. Leischner. (Stuttgart: Georg Thieme, 1957. Pp. viii + 283. DM. 30.)
- Perversions, Psychodynamics and Therapy.* Edited by Sandor Lorand and Michael Balint. (New York: Random House, 1956. Pp. xii + 307. \$5.00.)
- Eduard Mörike: the Man and the Poet.* By Margaret Mare. (London: Methuen, 1957. Pp. x + 278. Illus. 25s.)
- Experiment in Depth: A Study of the Work of Jung, Eliot and Tynbee.* By P. W. Martin. (London: Routledge, 1955. Pp. 275. 25s.)
- L'Inconscient dans l'oeuvre et la vie de Racine.* By Charles Mauron. (Aix-en-Provence: Publications des Annales de la Faculté des Lettres d'Aix-en-Provence, 1957. Pp. 352. Fr. 1,300.)
- Remotivating the Mental Patient.* By Otto von Mering and Stanley H. King. (New York: Russell Sage Foundation, 1957. Pp. 216. \$3.00.)
- Nostalgia: a Psychoanalytic Study of Marcel Proust.* By Milton L. Miller. (London: Gollancz, 1957. Pp. xii + 306. 21s.)
- The Character of Man.* By Emmanuel Mounier. (London: Rockliff, 1956. Pp. x + 341. 42s.)
- La Psychanalyse d'aujourd'hui.* Vols. I and II. By S. Nacht et al. Preface by Ernest Jones. (Paris: Presses Universitaires, 1956. Pp. 867. Fr. 1,400.)
- Religious Factors in Mental Illness.* By Wayne E. Oates. (London: Allen and Unwin, 1957. Pp. xv + 239. 16s.)
- Anxiety and Magic Thinking.* By Charles Odier. Transl. by M. L. Schoelly and M. J. Sherfey. (New York: International Universities Press, 1956. Pp. xii + 302. \$5.00.)
- Experimental Psychology and Other Essays.* By I. P. Pavlov. (New York: Philosophical Library, 1957. Pp. 653. \$7.50.)
- Art and Psychoanalysis.* Edited by William Phillips. (New York: Criterion Books, 1957. Pp. xxiv + 552. \$8.50.)
- Myth and Guilt. The Crime and Punishment of Mankind.* By Theodor Reik. (New York: Braziller, 1957. Pp. xiii + 432. \$5.75.)
- Schizophrenia: Somatic Aspects.* Edited by Derek Richter. (London and New York: Pergamon Press, 1957. Pp. viii + 181. 50s.)
- Selected Contributions to Psycho-Analysis.* By John Rickman. Compiled by W. Clifford M. Scott. (London: Hogarth, 1957. Pp. 411. 30s.)
- Freudiana.* By A. A. Roback. (Cambridge, Mass.: Sci-art Publishers, 1957. Pp. 240. Illus. \$5.00.)
- Dance in Psychotherapy.* By Elizabeth Rosen. (New York: Bureau of Publications, Teachers College, Columbia University, 1957. Pp. xx + 178. \$4.50.)
- Being and Nothingness: an Essay on Phenomenological Ontology.* By Jean-Paul Sartre. (London: Methuen, 1957. Pp. lxvii + 636. 50s.)
- Group Processes.* Transactions of the 2nd Conference, October, 1955. Edited by Bertram Schaffner. (New York: Josiah Macy Jr. Foundation, 1956. Pp. 255. \$3.50.)
- Nonparametric Statistics for the Behavioral Sciences.* By Sidney Siegel. (New York and London: McGraw-Hill, 1956. Pp. xvii + 312. 49s. or \$6.50.)
- Psychology in the Soviet Union.* Edited by Brian Simon. (London: Routledge, 1957. Pp. viii + 305. 32s.)
- Personality, Stress and Tuberculosis.* Edited by Phineas J. Sparer. (New York: International Universities Press, 1956. Pp. xviii + 629. \$12.50.)
- The Road to Inner Freedom: the Ethics.* By Baruch Spinoza. Edited by Dagobert D. Runes. (New York: Philosophical Library, 1957. Pp. 215. \$3.00.)
- Structural Psychology: De Humani Mentis Fabrica.* By D. and K. Stanley-Jones. (Bristol: Wright, 1957. Pp. vi + 179. 21s.)
- The Unconscious Motives of War: a Psycho-Analytical Contribution.* By Alix Strachey. (London: Allen and Unwin, 1957. Pp. 283. 25s.)
- Dynamics of Psychotherapy: the Psychology of Personality Change.* Vol. II. *Process.* By Percival M. Symonds. (New York: Grune and Stratton, 1957. Pp. xlv + 398. \$6.50.)
- Pain and Pleasure.* By Thomas Szasz. (New York: Basic Books; and London: Tavistock Publications, 1957. Pp. xvi + 302. \$5.50 or 30s.)
- Heilwege der Tiefenpsychologie.* Edited by L. Szondi. (Bern and Stuttgart: Hans Huber, 1956. Pp. 188. Sw. Fr. 18.0.)



*La Table Ronde.* (Paris: Plon. No. 108. December, 1956. Pp. 217. Fr. 300.)

*Discussions on Child Development.* Vol. 2 of the Proceedings of the Second Meeting of the World Health Organization Study Group on the Psychobiological Development of the Child, London, 1954. Edited by J. M. Tanner and Barbel Inhelder. (London: Tavistock Publications, 1956. Pp. 271. 28s.)

*The Three Faces of Eve.* By Corbett H. Thigpen and Hervey M. Cleckley. (New York and London: McGraw-Hill, 1957. Pp. ix + 308. \$4.50.)

*The Dispossessed.* By Geoffrey Wagner. (London: Ward Lock, 1957. Pp. 206. 10s.)

*A Short History of Psychotherapy, in Theory and Practice.* By Nigel Walker. (London: Routledge, 1957. Pp. xii + 188. Illus. 25s.)

*Hospital Treatment of Alcoholism.* By Robert S. Wallerstein *et al.* (New York: Basic Books, 1957. Pp. 212. \$5.00.)

*The Psychology of Economics.* By Walter A.

Weisskopf. (London: Routledge, 1955. Pp. viii + 266. 25s.)

*Comparative Psychology of Mental Development.* By Heinz Werner. Revised edition. (New York: International Universities Press, 1957. 2nd imp. Pp. xii + 564. \$6.00.)

*The Child and the Family. First Relationships.* By D. W. Winnicott. (London: Tavistock Publications, 1957. Pp. 147. 12s. 6d.)

*The Child and the Outside World. Studies in Developing Relationships.* By D. W. Winnicott. (London: Tavistock Publications, 1957. Pp. 190. 16s.)

*Disaster. A Psychological Essay.* By Martha Wolfenstein. (London: Routledge, 1957. Pp. xvi + 231. 23s.)

*Hamlet's Mouse Trap: a Psychoanalytic Study of the Drama.* By Arthur Wormhoudt. (New York: Philosophical Library, 1956. Pp. 221. \$3.50.)

*Family and Kinship in East London.* By Michael Young and Peter Willmott. (London: Routledge, 1957. Pp. xix + 232. 25s.)

## INTERNATIONAL CONGRESS 1959

The 21st Congress of the International Psycho-Analytical Association will be held under the auspices of the Danish Psycho-Analytical Society in Copenhagen late in July or early in August 1959.

The London Section of the Programme Committee has just started the planning of the Scientific Programme. Members of the International Psycho-Analytical Association who intend to offer a paper are requested to inform the Hon. Secretary, Programme Committee, of the subject of their contribution. There will be a discussion of a pre-published paper; its title will be announced in the near future.

DR. W. HOFFER,  
*Chairman, Programme Committee.*

DR. PAULA HEIMANN,  
*Hon. Secretary, Programme Committee,*  
32 Eamont Court, Eamont Street,  
London, N.W.8.

# INDEX

- Acidity, and ulcers, 78-9  
Acting out: of beating fantasy, 23; in Chöd ritual, 404; and commitment, 243; in traumatic neurosis, 20  
Agglomeration, of 'particle' objects, 270, 274  
Aggression(s): and analyst testing, 192; and depersonalization, 260; and displacement, 313; and ego cathexis, 219; and fees, 193, 194; a gratification technique, 318; and hate, 138; inhibition by analyst, 186, 194; justice and Eros (Bienenfeld), 419-27; neutralized, 350, 357; as object, 229; and *pavor nocturnus*, 151; in primates, 101-2, 103; religion and O.N., 89; and sado-masochistic analytic relations, 198, 201; and submissiveness, 323; superego, in peptic ulcer (Garma), 73-81; and ulcerative colitis, 348; unmodified, 357  
Aim(s): of instincts, 139, 223, 323; of psycho-analysis, 167, 171-2, 175-8; serial sexual, 312; subject-object union, 317  
Alexander, F.: re alimentary wishes and ulcers, 78, 79, 80; on counter-transference and therapy, 194  
Ambivalence: in Abraham's 'pre-ambivalent oral phase', 208; and ego nuclear defect, 352; and reversal of meaning, 413-4  
Anaclitic: clinging, 351; psychotherapy and ulcerative colitis, 347-8  
Analysis (see also Psycho-Analysis): interminable, 196, 198, 202; living, 253-4; micro-behavioural, 370; self-, 246; termination, 177, 178; therapeutic and border-training, 177-8, 180; of traumatic elements in borderline case (Hayman), 9-21; of unconscious beating fantasy in woman (Lester), 22-31  
Analyst(s): emotional stress on, 187; human feelings, 186; -patient relationship and transference neurosis, 197, 202-3; testing of, 190, 191-2; total response to patient's needs, 'R' (Little), 240-54  
Analytic(al) situation: chess model of, 169-72; comments on (Haak), 183-95; dissolution of, 175; implications of restriction to, 168-9; 'no man's land', 199; and transference, 155  
Anthropology: and psycho-analysis, 369-70; and tribal responsibility, 420  
Anxiety(ies): and breast deprivation, 326; depressive, 224, 229, 230; an ego function, 221; and ego instincts, 139; re infancy, 370; and 'lack', 224; lactating, 373; and libidinal dependence, 149, 150; *pavor nocturnus*, 150-3; psychotic, 245, 246; and rôle, 322; shame-, 387; and symbolization, 396-7  
Aristotle, on dreams, 94, 96  
Artemidorus of Daldis (Dream Book), 92-6  
Autistic character, 350, 353, 356-8  
Autonomic discharge and trauma, 9, 10, 20  
Autonomous: behaviour, 155; functions of ego, 220; innate factors, 350; trauma, 151  
Autonomy: ego, 142, 144, 210, 218-9, 220; of ego-fragments, 328  
Beach, F., *Hormones and Behaviour*, 306-7, 314, 315  
Beating fantasy (Lester), 22-31  
Behaviour: animal and human, 309-10, 323; appetitive and consummatory, 318-9; immature, 312-6, 323; modern researches on, 369-70; psycho-analytic view of, 307-8; three modes, 308-9  
Benedek, T., on oral-alimentary symbiosis, 380  
Berman, L., on testing analyst, 191  
Body(ily): and depersonalization, 260-1, 263, 264-5; -ego, 211, 214; and skin contact, 327-9; and symbiosis, 351  
Brain and psyche, 307-8  
Cancer, significance of death from, 164-5  
Cannibalism, 326; and Chöd ritual, 405; and cosmic mother, 329  
Case histories (clinical illustrations, etc.): analyst-inhibited aggression, 186; analyst-testing, 192; 'bad' primary identifications, 385-7; Barrie's life story, 409-11; beating fantasy, 23-31; 'borderline' Ann, 10-19; character, autistic and symbiotic, 353-6; compulsive male, 321, 322; defensive Catholic, 83-7; depersonalization, 256-9; dying patient (Sandford), 158-65; Edward (symbolic equation), 394; exhibitionist, 331; films, 'First five days New Guinea baby', 371, 'Sammi Jaki' (reindeer birth), 372; Freda ('R'), 246-51; gastric ulcer, 73-5, 79; hospitalized TB (correspondence), 33-47; Lancashire witches, 396; Monica (introjection), 380; Mozart and Don Juan, 212-3; oral-sadistic woman, 406; psychopathological stratification, 227-8, 228-9, 231-9; reactions to smugness, 2-3, 3-5, 5, 6, 7; rejected son, 311; reparative repetition, 153-4; schizophrenic 'interplay', 270-3; schizophrenic processes and sum-myths, 336-8; self-defence against oral invasion, 204-7; smug patients, 6, 7; Sue (infant), 380, 385, 388; telepathic dreamer, 56-7; ticklish man, 399; ulcerative colitis, 341-7; veiled transference, 184-5; violin-genital symbolists A and B, 391; worm-eating warbler, PSI incident, 52-6  
Castration: and depersonalization, 259-60, 265; dreams, 96; fear and need for reparation, 201; a functional reality (primates), 102; and Oedipus complex, 152; and primary depression, 225  
Cathexis(es): defective object and self, 352, 353, 356; in depersonalization, 262; displaceability of libidinal, 315, 316; ego, 211, 214, 215, 217-18, 219-21, 222; of food, 73; in sleep and schizophrenia, 212, 217; in smugness, 6, 8; specific objects, 149  
Catholic Church, attitude to sin and scrupulosity, 87-8, 89  
Chance, M.R.A. and Mead, A.P., on sexual and social life in primates, 101-2  
Character: disorders, 242; modern definition of, 143; preoedipal (Silbermann), 350-8  
Chöd, Tibetan Lamaist ritual (Schnier), 402-7  
Choice and aim, 171-3, 177  
Clichés and individual words, listening to (Stokes), 412-18  
Coitus: animal and human, 314; and circumcision, 399; neurosis and, 322  
Commitment, analyst's, 242-3  
Communication: in Athens, 107; faulty, 178; and neurosis, 83; and orality, 112; and symbol formation, 395-6  
Conditioned response, 146  
Conflict(s): actual, in peptic ulcer (Garma), 73-81; bisexual, 352; concept of, 144; and conflict-free situations, 218; and displacement activity, 310; life-death (schizophrenia), 266; re-activation of infantile, 183; resolution via symbolization, 396; social, in primates, 100-3  
Continuity of instinct motivation, 306, 315, 323  
Correspondence, psycho-analytic psychotherapy by (Alston), 32-50  
Couch and regression, 187-8  
Counter-transference: defined part 'R' (total response), 241; and fees and non-success, 194; and interpretation, 183; manipulation, 192; and modification of technique, 201; and prolonged transference neurosis, 197-8; recognition of, 171, 245-6, 253-4; traps, 186



- Culture(al): data, clinical relevance of psycho-analytic study of (Devereux), 398-401; ingredients of schizophrenia (Moloney), 325-40; and organic function, 113-14; urban, parent-child relations in (Mead), 369-78
- Death instinct, 138, 139, 140, 142, 144: erotic-destructive, 223, 229, 230; Hartmann v. Federn, 219; libidinization of, 165; and 'naughty', 413-14; in schizophrenic, 266
- Defence(s): in correspondence therapy, 48-9; depersonalization, 259, 260, 261; and displacement, 315-16; ego functions, 218; negativism, 204; responses to pain, 255; and social institutions (Novey), 82-91; against trauma, 9-10, 19, 20, 147, 148, 153, 154
- Demons: in Chöd ritual, 403, 405, 406; and dreams, 95
- Denial: and depersonalization, 260, 263; of superego, 264; and trauma, 9, 19
- Dependence: libidinal and transference, 148, 149, 150, 154-6; love-, in gastric ulcer, 75, 78, 80-1; oedipal, 150-3; psycho-analysis and, 348; pubertal, 153-4
- Depersonalization, 256-65, 331, 248
- Depressive: position (situation), 224, 225, 226, 267, 268, 274; and symbol formation and sublimation, 394-7
- Descartes and Federn, 210
- Deutsch, H., on 'as if' and depersonalization, 264
- Devereux, G., on latency amongst Mohaves, 99
- Dickens, C., on TB boy, 164
- Discussion on PSI hypothesis, etc. (Brenner, Eisenbud, Brunswick, Servadio), 51-7
- Displacement activity, 310, 311-16, 323
- Dreams (individual): children's, 151; Emperor Hadrian's, 94; oedipal and incestuous, 95-6; Pharaoh's, 420-1; pink pig and ship, explosions, 40-3; of smug patients, 3, 7; of stomach ulcer patient, 74, 75; telepathic-precognitive, 56, 57; trauma repetitions, 19, 20; up and down (O.N.), 59-60; wolf-man's, 152
- Dreams (theory): and dreamer, 316; Freud on, 141; 'id passage' in, 213; interpretation in Talmud (Lorand), 92-7; and *pavor nocturnus*, 150-1; in traumatic neurosis, 10, 19, 20
- Drive(s): -dualism, 210-11, 212, 214, 218; and ego, 218-21; instinctual, and ego psychology (Novey), 137-45; and 'lack', 223-5
- Driving forces, 305-7
- Education, mass methods of, 370
- Ego: analyst as patient's, 242; *Anlage*, 137, 140, 144, 350; aspect of transference (Stern), 146-57; concepts (Weiss), 209-22; descriptions of, 414-15; evolution of and primates, 100, 103; and gratification techniques, 319-20; -id matrix, 208; ideal, 383, 425-6; identity, 264-5; and latency, 98-9; nucleus, 350-2, 353, 356-7; in neurosis and psychosis, 267; and object splitting, 268, 269, 270, 274-5; pattern and content, 383; and primary and secondary experiences, 224-7, 229-30; and psycho-analysis, 170, 173-8, 187, 188, 201; psychology and re-evaluation instinctual drives (Novey), 137-45; and rage, 417; skin, 327-9, 330; and superego in smugness, 5, 8; and symbol formation, 392-3, 394, 397; and transference interpretation, 246, 251-3; and trauma, 9, 10, 19, 20; and unreality, 259
- Einstein, A.: on means and goals, 171; on science and values, 175; on scientific thinking, 169
- Elation and smugness, 6-7
- Endocrines and instinct activation, 306-7, 314-15
- Energy(ies): borrowed, 214, 218; common reservoir, 218, 220; non-instinctual or self-preservative, 137, 138, 139, 142, 144-5
- Eros, 137, 140, 142, 144-5: justice, aggression and (Bienenfeld), 419-27
- Erotic instincts (Ostow), 305-24
- Ethology: appetite and consummation, 318-19; and human behaviour, 308, 309-11, 311-12, 369, 372; and instinct, 305-7, 323, 383-4; and passivity, 323
- Experiences (situations): aesthetic, 416; depressive paranoid, manic and table of strata, 224-7; traumatic and pain barrier, 262-3
- 'Express', basic sense and cliché, 412
- Fantasies (phantasies): devouring, 326; infantile as paradigm, 320-1; and 'lack', 224-5; new, from cultural data, 398, 400; persecutory, 229; symbolic communication, 396
- Farrington, B., on science, 167
- Father: and 'cruel' superego, 425-6; modern and primitive, 374-5
- Fear: kinaesthetic (mother-infant), 375; and oral 'lack', 224; and pain, 255; in primitive man, 325
- Federn, P.: on body delineation, 260; on depersonalization, 256; ego concepts compared Freud, 209-22
- Feeling(s): analyst's, 243-5; ego, 209-12, 220, 221; of unreality (Bird), 256-65
- Fees, question of, 192-4
- Femininity and beating fantasies, 30
- Fenichel, O.: on character, 143; on identification, 381; on social institutions, 82
- Ferenczi, S., on latency period, 99
- Fixation: on frustrating object-*imago*, 225; and stratification, 213; and transference, 146, 150, 156
- Free Association, deformations of, 190
- French, T.: on functional readiness, 214; and unconscious integrative activity, 213
- Freud, Anna: on denial, 260; and ego psychology, 141, 351, 352, 357; and identification, 230, 381; on infant fears, 375; on latency and ego development, 98; on magic belief, 191; on negativism as defence, 204, 207, 208
- Freud, S.: Acropolis unreality, 256; on beating fantasies, 22; on dreams in antiquity, 92, 97; on ego, 209-22; on erotic instincts, 305-6, 308, 313, 317, 320; on fees, 193; on instinct theory, 138-41; joint parricide, Irish legend as proof of (Veszy-Wagner), 117-20; on latency period, 98, 99; on mother-object, 330; on nature of analysis, 177; on neurosis and psychosis, 267; on neutrality, 185; on pain and reality, 262, 263; on precondition of sublimation, 394-5; on primal repression, 313; on psycho-analysis and medicine, 172, 178; on religion and O.N., 88-9, 90; on superego formation, 264; on transference, 146, 188, 321; on transference neurosis, 197; on trauma, 9, 147, 148; on unconscious thought and consciousness, 269; on *Weltanschauung*, 166; on wolf-man's dream, 152
- Frustration: and anxiety, 224; and gratification in analysis, 200-1; and instinct, 223; and libidinal situation, 225-7, 229
- Genital: frustration and gastric ulcer, 75, 77; references, 418
- Gitelson, M., on 'cure', 175
- Glover, E.: on analyst's difficulties and post-analytic transferences, 187; on analyst testing, 192; on counter-transference traps, 186; on the id, 217; nuclear theory of ego and Federn's unitary cathexis, 221; on transference detection, 184
- Goal: of psycho-analysis, intermediate and final, 175-6, 180; of wishes, 317, 318
- Goethe, on science, 167
- 'Going all out', 245
- Gratification: and frustration in analysis, 200-1; techniques of instinctual, 317-20, 321-2, 323
- Greenacre, P.: on analyst-analysis and loan function, 242; on analyst testing, 192
- Grotjahn, M., on correspondence therapy, 32-3, 49



- Guilt: analyst's, 192, 244; Freud's Acropolis, 256; and hunger, 5, 8; and law, 424-5; patient's, 194; plural, 117, 119; and primary and secondary situations, 225, 226, 227, 230
- Halliday, J. L., on Thomas Carlyle, 75, 79
- Hallucination: and 'id passage', 213; negative and depersonalization, 263; and self-mothering, 327-8; and trauma, 147, 148, 149
- Hartmann, H.: ego concepts, 215-16, 217, 218-19, 220, 350, 351, 353; on social reality, 82
- Hendrick, I., mastery instinct, 214-15
- Hermann, I., on latency period, 100
- Hero: -child, the rejected (Levin), 105-16; son-, 117
- Hoffer, W.: on ego development, 351, 352; on negative hallucination, 263; on 'pain' and 'not pain', 262
- Homeostasis, and trauma, 147, 148
- Hostility: expressed *via* smugness, 7; to the smug, 1, 2
- Hunger and guilt, 5, 8
- Id: and ego development, 209-10, 211, 212, 350-1, 356-7; and ego stratification, 213; and energy reservoir, 220; inner foreign country, 216, 217; primary process and symbols, 383; undifferentiated ego-, 141, 142, 144-5
- Identification(s): on (Grinker), 379-90; analyst-patient, 243, 244; and ego cathexis, 215, 220; with enemy, 398-9; as gratification technique, 318, 322; pathological, 357; with persecutor, 230-1; projective, 266-70, 274-5; and psychopathological stratification, 224-7; and rage, 417; with sated nursling, 7; and symbol formation, 393
- Imitation and identification, 385
- Incest: and impiety, 399; in Irish legend, 118, 119; -taboo secondary, 113
- Incorporation, 384-5
- Incubation and dreams, 93, 94
- Industrial Revolution and social responsibility, 421
- Infantile sexuality and mammalianization, 310-11
- Influence (psycho-analytic) or treatment?, 178
- Inhibition: of instinctual drives, 394-5; maturational, 312-15, 323; in symbol formation, 392; and trauma, 9, 10, 19
- Instincts, erotic (Ostow), 305-24
- Instinctual: activity and endocrines, 306-7, 308-9; behaviour, timing and activation, 308-16; drives, re-evaluation of and modern ego psychology (Novey), 137-45; and ego development, 350, 356-8; and identification, 385; wishes, 316-23
- Integration: and depressive position, 396-7; and dream-work, 213; and ego, 214-15
- Intelligence: as deflection of function, 112, 113-14; and force, 107, 109
- 'Interests', ego, 139, 145
- Interpretation(s): bases of, 183; and behaviour, 241; and feeling, 244; and 'interminable' transference neurosis, 199, 200; myth-, 113-14; query re schizophrenic, 274-5; as technique, 170, 171; timing, 186; transference, 246, 251-3
- Introjection: and internalization subject-object transactions, 382; of patterned subject-object relationships, 388-9; and projection, 387
- Jacobson, E., on identification, 381-2
- Jocasta, 108-9, 110
- Jones, E.: on guilt, 424; on sexual instinct, 141; on symbolism, 393-4
- Justice, aggression and Eros (Bienenfeld), 419-27
- Kanner, L., autistic infantile psychosis, 352
- Keating, G., *History of Ireland*, 118-19
- Klein, M.: depressive anxieties, 224, 229-31; on inhibition in symbol formation, 392; and negative aspect mother-infant relation, 207; and paranoid-schizoid phase, 267, 268; on reparation, 424
- Kubie, L. S., on fees, 193
- Lampl, H., on latency period, 100
- Lampl-de Groot, J., on ego development, 98
- Langer, S., on 'outgrowing', 175
- Latency period: and continuity and displacement, 315; and internalization, 153; and maturational inhibition, 313; origin of man and (Székely), 98-104
- Law: criminal (and military), 419, 423-4; infantile precursors and five components of, 421-3, 424-5; social, 419-21, 426
- Legend, Irish and joint parricide (Veszy-Wagner), 117-20
- Letters (therapy), 33-4, 44-7, 49-50
- Levels (phases): libidinal evolutionary, 225-7; positions and situations, 229-31
- Lewin, B., on immortal superego fusion, 164-5
- Libido: ego-, 217, 222; and neutralization, 357; theory, 138-41, 143
- Lilith and erotic dreams, 95
- Macalpine, I., on classical technique, 176, 187
- Macropsia, 326
- Magical demands (patient-analyst), 187-91
- Mahler, Schoenberger-, M., symbiotic infantile psychosis, 352
- Malinowski, B., on myth as primitive reality, 105
- Mammalianization, 309, 310-11
- Man, origin of and latency period (Székely), 98-104
- 'Mary Rose', meaning of Barrie's (Karpe, M. & R.), 408-11
- Masochism: and fees, 193-4; individual primary, 224, 229; and neutrality, 200
- Mastery instinct, 214-15
- Masturbation: and depersonalization, 263; infantile, 328; and oedipal situation, 224-5
- Mating behaviour (primates), 100-1
- Maturation, 149, 152, 155-6: delayed, 351, 357, 358; of ego, 218; emotional, 171, 179; and identifications, 383; instinctual and primal repression, 311-15, 321, 323; normal, 330, 338-9; sexual and reality sense, 265
- Meaning: antithetical and reversal of, 412-13; of Barrie's 'Mary Rose' (Karpe, M. & R.), 408-11
- Medusa, 108-9
- Memory: and body schema, 328, 339; defective skin, 330; and pain, 255; primordial and ego nucleus, 350
- Micropsia, 329
- Mother: 'bad' internalized (peptic ulcer), 73, 75, 79-80; Barrie's heroines, 409; and biological adequacy, 372-3; -child relations, 329-31, 338-9, 369, 371-3, 375-6, 386; -child symbiosis, 148, 149, 152, 165, 351-2, 356-8, 380; and depersonalization, 260, 261; -earth, 111; -infant dual-unity, 207; initial object, 316, 317; rejection by (exposure myths), 105, 106, 107, 109, 113; skin contact with, 327-9; -suckling and origins of law, 421-3, 424-5; sun as, 325-6
- Myth(s): about analyst, 187, 189; Clothra, 118-19; exposure (Oedipus and Samson), 105-16; Kaineus and Centaurs, 398-400; projection of ego dystonic insights, 400; sun, 108-9, 332-5, 336-8; Zeus and Titans, 117
- Nacht, S., objection to primary ego autonomy, 142-3
- Narcissism: and ego instincts, 138, 139; and ego psychologies, 212, 215, 216-17, 222; and patient's needs, 251; 'phallic awe' and oralization of vagina, 399-40; and reality sense, 260-1; and schizophrenia, 209; secondary, 216; and smugness, 7
- Nature and the 'unnatural', 376-7
- Needs, analyst's total response to patient's (Little), 240-54
- Negativism, 204
- Neurosis(es): choice of, 318; and ego defect, 214; and immature behaviour, 313-14; sites for, 322; transference, 36, 48-9, 175, 187, (Nacht) 196-203; trauma theory of, 147; traumatic, theory and clinical features, 9, 10, 19, 20; utilization of social institutions as defence technique in (Novey), 82-91



- Neutrality: analytic, 186; and transference neurosis, 197-201, 202-3
- Neutralization: of drives, 350-1, 352, 357; of libido and aggression, 219; trauma, 9
- Nightmares, 95
- Nunberg, H.: on depersonalization, 256; on will to recovery, 188-9
- Nursing couple, 371-3
- Oberndorf, C.P.: on depersonalization, 256; erotization of thought, 262
- Object-relations(ships): and depersonalization, 259-61, 262; in depressive position, 394, 396-7; faulty, 356; hetero-homo fluctuations, 321; and libidinal dependence, 149; new and psychosomatic, 348; schizophrenic, 266-70, 274-5; in smug, 7; social institutions and neurotic defence, 83; and symbol formation, 393; and wish contents, 316
- Oedipus: and Irish heroes, 118; and Samson (Levin), 105-16
- Oedipus(al) conflict (situation, etc.): dreams, 95-6; and latency period, 98, 99; masturbation and primary experiences, 224-5; preliminary in primates, 102; and reality-sense, 264; and religion, 89, 90; and superego, 383, 425-6; and transference, 146, 150-3
- Omens and dreams, 95
- Omnipotence: in analytical situation, 188, 189; phantasy (schizophrenic), 267; and ulcerative colitis, 348
- Oppenheimer, J. R., on progress, 167-8
- Oral: -digestive superego aggressions and actual conflicts in peptic ulcer patients (Garma), 73-81; incorporation, 326; invasion and self-defence (Sterba), 204-8; 'lack', 224; pattern of internalization, 387-8; sadism and Chöd ritual, 405, 406-7; -sadistic impulses, 224, 225; satiety, 7-8
- Pain, (Ernest Jones), 255; and depersonalization, 262-3; of 'lack', 224
- Paranoid-schizoid phase (situation, position), 224, 225, 226, 267, 268, 274, 393
- Parent-child relations, changing patterns of in an urban culture (Mead, Ernest Jones Lecture), 369-78
- Parricide: joint, Irish legend as proof of Freud's theory of (Veszy-Wagner), 117-20; and oedipal crime, 111
- Parsons, T., on social internalization and personality development, 382
- Pavor nocturnus*, 150-3
- Penis, award as compensation for rape (Devereux), 398-401
- Persecution, 224-7, 229
- Personality(ies): of analyst, 202-3; development, 171; differentiation of psychotic from non-psychotic (Bion), 266-75; and dream interpretation, 96; ego core of, 210; and identifications, 387, 389; inadequately integrated, 353, 356; structural concepts and, 215; 'total' or 'ego', 215
- Piaget, J.: on assimilation and adjustment, 382; on continuity of intelligence and biological processes, 329; and normal child development, 369; on structure and concept, 328
- Praying for dreams, 94-5
- Precipitating factor of peptic ulcer, 75-6, 78
- Precognitive: cultural ingredients of schizophrenia (Moloney), 325-40; telepathic-dream (Brunswick, Servadio), 56, 57
- Preconscious: and ego-feeling, 212-13; thought and object-impression linkage, 269
- Preoedipal character disorders (Silbermann), 350-8
- Primal: herd hypothesis and ape behaviour, 102; repression, 311-15; scene, 19, 152, 155, 260-61, 262
- Primates, mating behaviour, social life and psychodynamics, 100-103
- Probability (and PSI), 52, 53, 55
- Projection: and introjection, 268-9, 387; and primary and secondary situations, 230; and sublimation, 395
- Prophecy and dreams, 93, 94, 97
- PSI hypothesis, facts, coincidence and (Brenner), 52-3; comments on (Eisenbud), 54-6
- Psyche and brain, 307-8
- Psycho-analysis (see also Analysis): and anthropology, 369-70; and behaviour, 307-8; and Buddhist concepts, 404-5; classical routine, 183; and gastric ulcer, 80; and law, 419; and medicine, 172-4; and retention of religious belief, 89-90; science and, 166-7, 167-8
- Psycho-analytic(al): ego concepts, comparative study of (Weiss), 209-22; psychotherapy by correspondence (Alston), 32-50; study of cultural data, clinical relevance of (Devereux), 398-401; treatment, theory of (Szasz), 166-82; treatment of ulcerative colitis (Sperling), 341-9
- Psychodynamics of primate behaviour, 102-3
- Psychoneurosis(es) and trauma, 9-10, 20
- Psychosis(es): ego diseases, 218; Kanner's autistic infantile and Mahler's symbiotic, 352; and pre-oedipal character disorders, 356-8; and trauma, 9
- Psychotic: personalities, differentiation from non-psychotic (Bion), 266-75; slang synonyms, 414
- Puberty and dependence, 153-4
- 'R', analyst's total response to patient's needs (Little), 240-54
- Rangell, L.: on correspondence therapy, 49; on oral factors in poise, 7
- Rank, O., on exposure myths, 105
- Rapaport, D., on Hartmann's 'primary autonomy', 218-19
- Rape, penis as compensation for (Devereux), 398-401
- Rapoport, A., on judgment and choice, 172
- Reaction-formation and trauma, 10, 19
- Reality (sense): and depersonalization, 260-1, 262; and ego cathexis, 211-12; and ego development, 350; impairment of and technique, 251-3; and maturation, 338-9; and pain, 262-3; schizophrenic and, 266-9; and skin contact, 327; superego and, 263-5
- Re-duplication in myths, 117
- Re-education, 191
- Regression: and couch, 187-8; and depersonalization, 260-1; in dreams, 213; oral-digestive, 73, 79; puerperal, 380; in sleep, 212; and trauma, 9, 10, 19
- Reich, A., on narcissistic object relations, 7
- Rejection: and culture, 105, 106, 113-15; mother and baby, 372; and sneezing, 337-8
- Religion: Lamaism and Buddhism, 403; and O.N., 88-90, 402
- Reparation and law, 424-5
- Repetition: and displacement activity, 315-16; and infantile wish paradigm, 321; symptomatic, in kingship customs, 118; in transference, 146, 153-6; and trauma mastery, 9, 10, 19, 20
- Repression: and object relations, 321, 322; and pain, 255; primal, 311-15, 323; and pseudo-ulcer, 75; and splitting, 270, 275; and trauma, 10, 19
- Responsibility: analyst's, 241-2, 253-4; guilt and law, 425; for tribal security, 420-1
- Ritual: Chöd, Tibetan Lamaist (Schnier), 402-7; socially approved and neurotic, 89
- Roheim, G., Eskimo and Polynesian tales (sun myths), 332-4
- Rôle: social, 379, 382; of subject in wishes, 317, 320, 322-3
- Rule(s): and aims, 171-2, 179; nature and function of 169-71; pedantic adherence to, 190
- Sadism in schizophrenia, 266
- Sado-masochism and transference neurosis, 198, 201
- Samson, Oedipus and (Levin), 105-16
- Satiety, sleep and smugness, 5, 6, 8
- Schizophrenia: analogies to sun-devouring myths, 335-8; and ego libido, 209, 212, 217; and gratification tech-



- Schizophrenia:—continued**  
 nique, 318; intrinsic characteristics, 266; precognitive ingredients of (Moloney), 325-40; splitting in, 268; and symbolic equations, 393, 396-7; and ulcerative colitis, 341
- Science and psycho-analysis, 166-7, 167-9**
- Scientific attitude as final goal psycho-analysis, 175-8**
- Security: and identification, 380; and law, 419-21; in primitive societies, 376; survival by support, 421-3, 426**
- Segal, H., on symbol formation and depression, 268, 274**
- Self: affirmation of analyst's, 245-6; -defence against oral invasion (Sterba), 204-8; -experience, 210, 212, 218; 'I' or total personality?, 215-16; and identifications, 383, 389; -mothering, 328-9; and not-self, 330, 339; and object transactions, 384-5; -preservation, 137-40, 142, 211; in wish content, 316**
- Sexual (contact) apparatus, 316, 317, 321, 322**
- Sharpe, E., on unaltered dreams and past experiences, 10**
- Sillman, L.: concept of mammalianization, 309, 310-11; displacement and aggression, 313**
- Simmel, E., on self-preservation, 142**
- Skin: contact with mother, 327-9, 338; erotization of, 310**
- Sleep: ecstasy and immortality, 104-5; ego libido and, 209, 212; infantile disturbances of, 150-1; satiety and smugness, 5, 6, 8**
- Smugness (Arloff), 1-8**
- Social (cultural): attitudes to exposure, 105, 106, 112-15; institutions and defence technique (Novey), 82-91; life of primates, 101-2; rôles and primary introjects, 389**
- Sphinx, 108, 109, 110, 112, 119**
- Splitting, 268, 269, 270, 274**
- Stratification: of ego states, 213; psychopathological, problem of (Racker), 223-39**
- Stunkard, H. W., on security quest, 380**
- Sublimation: as appetitive technique, 319; definition of, 323; pseudo, 353; and symbolism, 392**
- Sucking: innate and learned components, 385; plasticity of technique, 319-20; situation and origins of law, 421-3**
- Sun: a cosmic mother figure, 325, 329, 332; -myths, 108-9, 332-5, 336-8**
- Superego: aggressions in peptic ulcer (Garma), 73-81; depressive situation, 226-7; and ego cathexis, 215; and ego in smugness, 5, 8; immortal, 164-5; and latency period, 98, 99; and neonatal experiences, 383; origins, 425-6; and reality sense, 263-5; and speech and writing, 50**
- Suspense, 325, 326**
- Symbiosis, 148, 149, 152, 165, 351-2, 356-8, 380**
- Symbol(s): breast-field-soil, 109; dream (Artemidorus and Talmud), 93, 95-6; necessary properties of, 322; and psychodynamic root identities, 108; serpent, 112; sun and darkness, 108-9; words, 417**
- Symbol formation, 268, 269; notes on (Segal), 391-7**
- Symbolic: character, 350, 355, 356-8; equation, 393-5; thinking, 146-8**
- Symbolism: body origins, and art, 417; and physiological accents, 107-8; in traumatic dreams, 20; of ulcer symptoms, 79; wider concept of, 392**
- Table of psychological stratification, 227**
- Talmud, dream interpretation in (Lorand), 92-7**
- Technique: and aims, 171-2; changes in and need for experiment, 251-4; and counter-transference, 194; defence, in neurosis (Novey), 82-91; delusional, 253; final goal inherent in, 176-8; of instinctual gratification, 317-20, 321-2, 323; interpretations, 170, 171; primary model, 169, 173, 179; query re schizophrenic, 274-5; and therapy, 167; transference, 155-6; transference neurosis (Nacht), 196-203**
- Terms: confusion re counter-transference, 240; no agreement on, 209, 222**
- Testing: of analyst, 190, 191-2, 245; of identification hypotheses, 389-90; reality, 262-3**
- Thought in schizophrenic, 268-9, 274, 393**
- Tinbergen, N.: on appetition and consummation, 317; on displacement activity, 310, 311-12; on instinct, 305-6, 307, 383-4; on submissiveness, 323; and threat situation, 103**
- Transference: contamination, 186; delusional, 251, 253; ego aspect of (Stern), 146-57; in gastric ulcer, 80-1; liquidation of, 199; and 'mirror' analyst, 245; post-analytic, 187; and primary paranoid situation, 229; and re-education, 191; in schizophrenia, 266-7; and self-indulgence, 328; in the smug, 6; in traumatic neurosis, 20; in ulcerative colitis, 347, 348; veiled, 183-6**
- Transference neurosis: in correspondence therapy, 48; dissolution as end-point, 175; handling of (Nacht), 196-203; test of skill, 187**
- Trauma: birth, 348, 351, 352, 357; and culture, 105, 113; early, 224, 229; mastery, 9, 10, 19, 20; narcissistic (analytic situation), 191; precognitive, 332; primary (shock) and psychic, 147, 148; and transference, 146-9, 157**
- Traumatic elements in borderline case (Hayman), 9-21**
- Treatment (therapy): by correspondence (Alston), 32-50; failure of, 196-7; method of, 223; of ulcerative colitis (Sperling), 341-9; or understanding, 167-8**
- Taylor, E. B.: on exposure myths, 105; on Herakles myth, 111**
- Ulcerative colitis, psycho-analytic treatment of (Sperling), 341-9**
- Unreality, feelings of (Bird), 256-65**
- Urban culture, parent-child relations in (Mead, Ernest Jones Lecture), 369-78**
- Weiss, E., on drives, 142**
- Wish(es): contents, 316-20; and drive activation, 312; organization and structure, 320-3; 'sick', 348**
- Wish-fulfilment: and dreams, 92-4, 97; failure of, 150; transference expectations of, 154, 187-91**
- Words: individual and clichés, listening to (Stokes), 412-18; in schizophrenia, 268**
- 'Will to recovery', 187-91**
- Work: activities, 322, 323; principle, 214**
- Working through, 251**
- Worm-eating warbler, 52-6**
- Zuckerman, S., on mammalian mating behaviour and social life, 100, 101-2**

